

Novel by
Z.K Mnguni



FOREVA YENA

You and me till the end



NOVELSGURU.COM

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

FOREVA YENA

By: Z.K Mnguni

INTRODUCTION.

My name is Khwezilokusa Ngcobo and I'm 20 years old, I live with both my parents Mbalenhle and Mthokozisi Ngcobo. I won't say I grew up in a huge mansion and being babied like a princess, that's not me. I grew up in a Village in KZN and I have been living one tough life.

Before we stayed in the beautiful two house, we used to stay in a shack next to a River and my mother and father worked their asses trying to provide a better life for me.

We applied for the house which was being given away by the government and by God's grace we got the house.

We moved in immediately since we couldn't stand staying in that shack, when we thought our lives were getting better mom lost her job.

Dad had to work in extra hours and mom had to take a lot of jobs around the village and I also had to take care of me.

I grew up and when I was doing grade 8 I had to get a Job to help at home, it was really hard juggling school and work but since I was smart I came up with lot of smart ideas and I was able to do the work.

A year later the company my father worked for got shut down meaning my father didn't have a Job, he was sad and began to drawn himself with alcohol which led to him being an alcoholic.

NOVELSGURU.COM

He would come home demanding food and he would take the money my mom and I worked hard for.

He wasn't making life any easier for us, years passed and I finished with my high school passed my matric with 6

distinction, I told you I was smart.

I applied for varsity but it was too late and I had to spend the whole year at home, I got myself jobs, I would baby sit, wash peoples clothes, clean their houses in order to earn money.

My life changed the following year when I got notified that I got accepted at the University of Johannesburg, I was really happy so was my mother, I told her that I was going to study really hard and get a Job then buy her and dad a huge house. All that sounded nice to say, what I did not know is that going to Johannesburg would change my life completely.

in that huge transformation I had in Johannesburg I found myself falling in love with this guys named...cut cut cut I'm giving out a lot of details now.

Grab some popcorn because I sure do have a long story telling I need to do, it's gonna be a hella long and bumpy ride.

Should I continue?

Invite your friends/[mention them below](http://NOVELSCURU.COM). Share the post to your timeline/groups

100+ reaction and I'm dropping the first insert.

FOREVA YENA

Insert 1

KHWEZILOKUSA.

It's a beautiful sunny day at the village and everyone is getting ready to attend a traditional wedding hosted by the Ndlovu family.

These ceremonies are the one that bring people closer together, women from every household would spare some of their time to come help at the ceremony in cooking and making traditional beer.

Boy and men would also gather to come help where needed, it's really a good thing to see people getting closer together like this, and I love my village.

I arrived here a little bit early than anyone else because mother insisted, she is really close with the Ndlovu family.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I helped in the kitchen and we got done cooking, I'm really trying to avoid drama here in the kitchen.

My mother walks up to me and she smiles before kissing me on

the cheek.

Mom: thank you for agreeing to come help mtanami (my child)

It's not like I had much of a choice.

Khwezi: its okay mom no need to thank me

Mom: can you serve the ladies from the church who just arrived some tea and muffins Khwezi: okay

She smiles and walks off, I wipe my hands with a kitchen cloth and I pour some water in the kettle. I took out some muffins from the bucket and I placed them on the plate.

Sakhile walks inside the house he is dressed in a white vest and has shorts on. He greets the elders and smiles when he sees me, we have known each other ever since we were children.

Sakhile: you look busy

Khwezi: yeah your family is working my ass

He laughs.

Sakhile: they shouldn't be making my future wife work like this

Khwezi: future wife? You being delusional

Sakhile: trust me imma make you my wife

He has been asking me out since high school and I keep denying.

Sakhile: I have been wanting to talk to you, you know Khwezi: talk about what?

The kettle goes off and I pour the water inside a teapot and I placed everything needed for making tea into different other containers.

Sakhile: we can't talk now but maybe after the ceremony

He is right we can't talk now, I got a lot on my plate right now.

Khwezi: that's fine with me Sakhile: great then

Khwezi: I have got to go before these ladies chop my head off

NOVELSGURU.COM

He laughs and walks away, Sihle rolls her eyes at me, she has a thing for Sakhile but he doesn't so she thinks it's best to hate on me, I honestly don't care about her.

I went and served the ladies some tea and muffins.

"Mbali you have raised a respectful and beautiful girl" one of the ladies says, me and my mother smile looking at each other.

I left the elders and I went back to the kitchen, I decided to go home so I can get dressed since the ceremony will start any moment.

I took off the apron and I went home, I got there and I found the whole place messed up with pots scattered on the floor.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I sigh that only means one thing.

Dad: princess ka baba

That's my father, he is drunk and he smells.

Khwezi: hey dad, what happened here?

Dad: I was looking for something to eat but I couldn't find it

Khwezi: but you know we didn't cook

Dad: hhayi suka make me something to eat I'm really hungry

He said hugging me and kissing my forehead, I giggle he might be a drunkard but he is still my father and I love him whole heartedly.

Khwezi: okay go and sit down, I will make you something Dad: thank you darling

He went to the living room, it's not that big but there is a couch and television.

I made my father a sandwich and added some sausages since his gonna ask for some meat, I made him some and I took it to him.

Dad: ntombazane ka baba (daddy's girl)

He smiled taking the food and eating, I shook my head with a smile on my face and I went to my room.

I bathed and I got dressed into a black long body hugging dress, I put on beads around my neck and some on my wrist.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I looked pretty, I wore my sandals and I went downstairs, my father whistles.

Dad: look at you looking like a princess

Khwezi: baba it's nothing that much just a dead and beads Dad: umuhle Mtananmi never forget that

Khwezi: Ngyabonga baba

Dad: you can live I will manage alone and clean up the mess I made Khwezi: thank you, I'm already late bye

I went out and rushed back to the Ndlovu household, I'm used to walking so I don't mind.

I got there and the ceremony already started, the groom's side of the family was already there and here I am lost in the crowd.

I stood with the girls as I watch the wedding taking place, it was really a beautiful thing to watch.

I was busy clapping hands and smiling when my eyes caught this beautiful light skinned guy standing with some guys who looked almost like him.

He was standing there dressed in his attire and he had this intimidating look, I wonder who it is.

I continued to mind my own business.

It got late and the wedding had ended, people were now leaving as some stayed to enjoy themselves with alcohol.

I was busy washing dishes with the other ladies when this gorgeous light skinned woman came to me, she really looks beautiful.

Her: sorry to disturb but I have been looking for my son's do you know where they are?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I don't even know who she's talking about.

Khwezi: no ma'am I don't

Her: can you please go look for them in that randovel and tell them it's time to leave

She points at the randovel, I mean can't she go there herself since she kinda has a clue where her sons are at, but I will go anyways.

Khwezi: sure

I smiled and I wiped my hands, I went to the Randovel I was hold to go to, I knocked but nobody answered.

I just got inside, when I got in and a group of guys were seated having some drinks while having a light convo filled with laughter.

NOVELSGURU.COM

They stop laughing when they saw me, I melted, such yummy guys...

Guy1: and then? Who said you should come in?

I look at him and rolled my eyes.

Khwezi: your mother is looking for y'all, she said it's time to leave

Guy3: shit!! We are in deep shit

He said getting up from the chair he was seated on.



NOVELSGURU.COM

"Usendleleni sis" this guy's said behind me in a very deep voice, I didn't even realize I was standing at the door.

I turned and looked at him, it's the light skinned guy I was drooling over at the ceremony.

My knees got weak.

Khwezi: s...sorry

That all I could say, I moved and he walked in, I immediately left the room.

**.
. .
.**

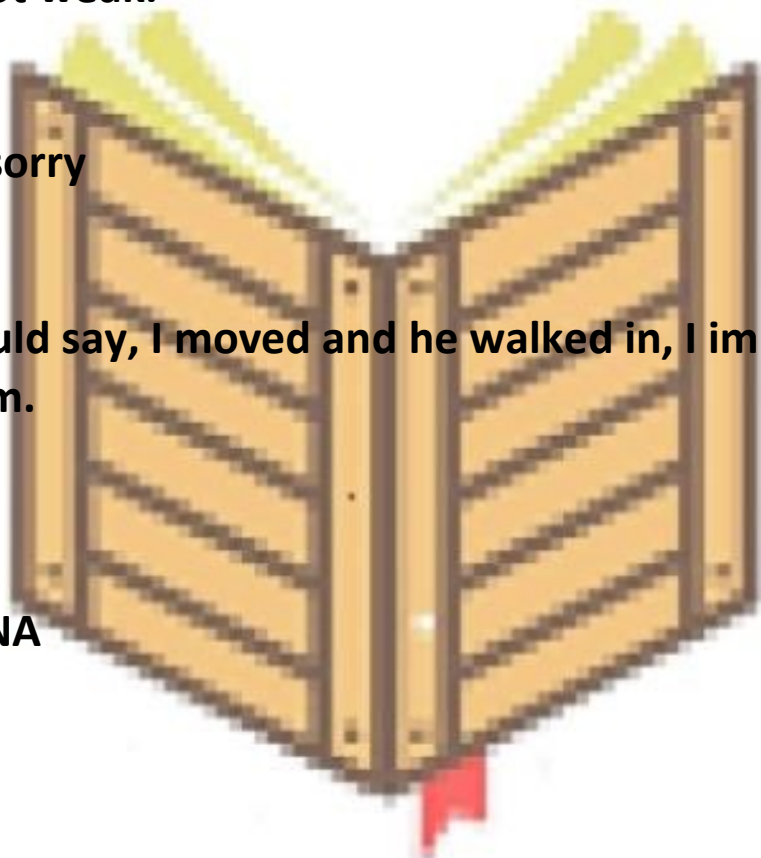
FOREVA YENA

Insert 2

NOVELSGURU.COM

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I was woken up by my alarm, I switch it off and I cover myself with a blanket once again.

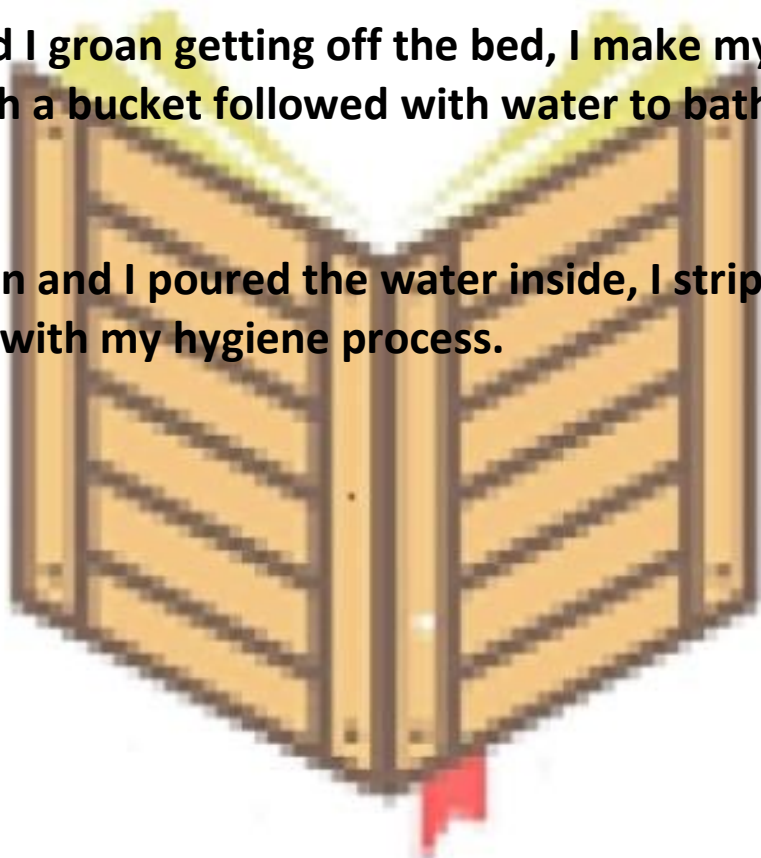


I'm a women who loves her sleep, my mother walks in and she removes the blanket.

Mom: you lazy child, wake up and get ready the bus to Johannesburg will be here in an hour you know nobody here goes there so this is the only transport you will be getting

She says and I groan getting off the bed, I make my bed and she walks in with a bucket followed with water to bath.

I took a Basin and I poured the water inside, I stripped naked and started with my hygiene process.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I dried and lotioned my body when I got done, I wonder how Jozi is going to be for me I mean I have never been there before.

I decided to wear my thorn jeans and a black crop top, I wore a deemed jean jacket and some sandals.

I combed my afro hair and I started packing everything I'm going to need.

I went out to the kitchen and mom was busy packing a scaftin for me, I smile.

Khwezi: koda mamawamii I love you

Mom: ohh so when you see so much food you start talking about loving me, I'm hurt

I laugh, she's being a drama queen.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: hawu mom you know I love you, plus I'm going to miss you cooking Mom: I bet you will because I'm a very good cooker

Khwezi: don't push it mom, don't push it

**Mom: ohh the house is gonna feel so empty without you
Khwezi: I know mama and I will miss you guys so much Mom:
you mean you gonna miss your drunkard dad**

I sigh, here it goes again, she's gonna start preaching and reminding me of the bad things dad does when he is drunk.

I don't blame her for complaining but she doesn't have to address my dad that way.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: mom he is my dad and I love him, this is just a phase it's gonna pass, it won't always be like this

I say with a smile and dad walks in singing his song while carrying a bottle of black label in his hand.

Dad: angi'sona isidakwa ngihlushwa ukoma...

He sings while doing a little move which made me laugh and smile at his idiot self.

Khwezi: you see his just thirsty that's all Mom: then tell him to drink WATER instead

She said the water part out loud and I laugh, i went to my father and helped him to sit down.

Dad: you look beautiful where are you going?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Did he forget that I'm leaving?

Khwezi: I'm leaving for Jozi remember?

Dad: Jozi? What you going to do there? I mean your family is

here? I'm also hungry

I shake my head with a smile on my face, God I love my father.

Khwezi: I got accepted at a university and I'm going there to learn

Dad: that's good thing to hear my child, when you get there don't pay attention to those boys cause they gonna play like a football

Khwezi: I know dad



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: study hard my child and make daddy proud Khwezi: I will make you proud dad

Dad: make me some food now I'm starving

He set back and he closes his eyes sleeping, I get up and I make him something nice to eat.

I served him and he smiles, I'm gonna miss that smile and those little chats we would have when he is drunk.

Mom: the bus will be here any moment

There was a knock on the door.

Khwezi: I will get it

I went to the door, I opened it only to find Sakhile stand g there with a smile on his face.

NOVELSGURU.COM

What is he doing here?

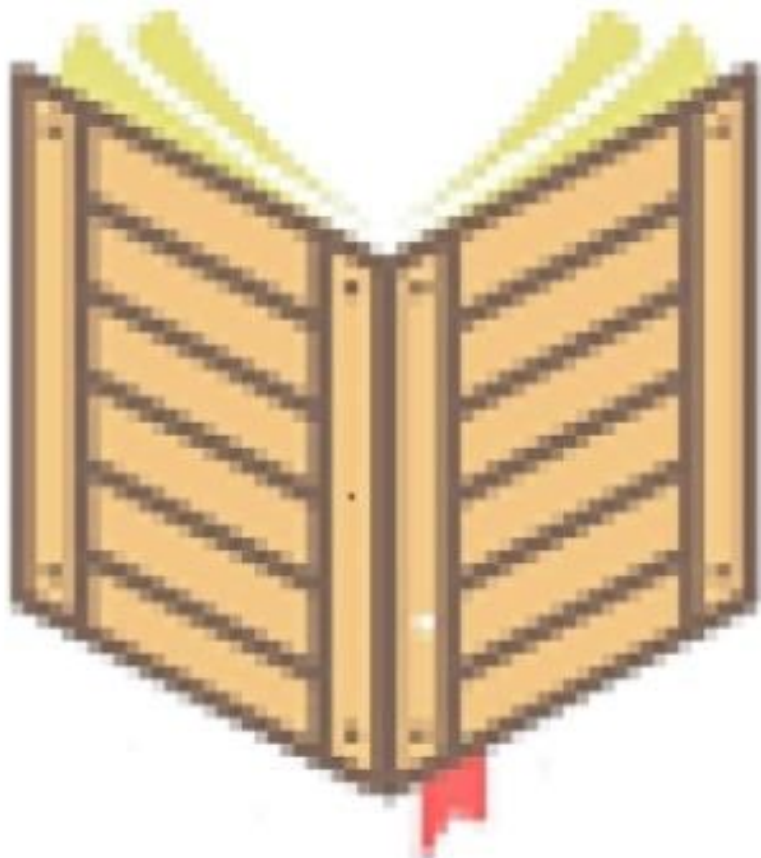
Khwezi: Sakhile? What brings you here? Sakhile: that's how you gonna greet me now?

Khwezi: sorry I'm just in a rush and I'm about to leave Sakhile: I

thought you was gonna come see me so we can talk

Why should I be the one to come to him and make it look like I'm some desperate bitch, I mean he who wanted to talk to me should have come to me instead.

Khwezi: I forgot and it's was late



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: Khwezi ubani kanti osemnyango? (Who's at the door?)

Khwezi: uSakhile mama but he was about to leave Sakhile: I'm not leaving without you

Khwezi: uyahlanya wena, can you just go please Sakhile: no I will...

Mom shows up, she really likes Sakhile for some reason I don't know.

Mom: Sakhile my boy, what bring you here? Why you standing at the door come inside

Sakhile: no need for me to come in I'm just here to pick Khwezi up since I'm heading to Jozi for a business meeting

I roll my eyes, this guys and the nerve he has.

Khwezi: my transport is already on the way so thanks I will be fine.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: ohh thank you my son, I don't know what we would be without you, Khwezi go and take you bags

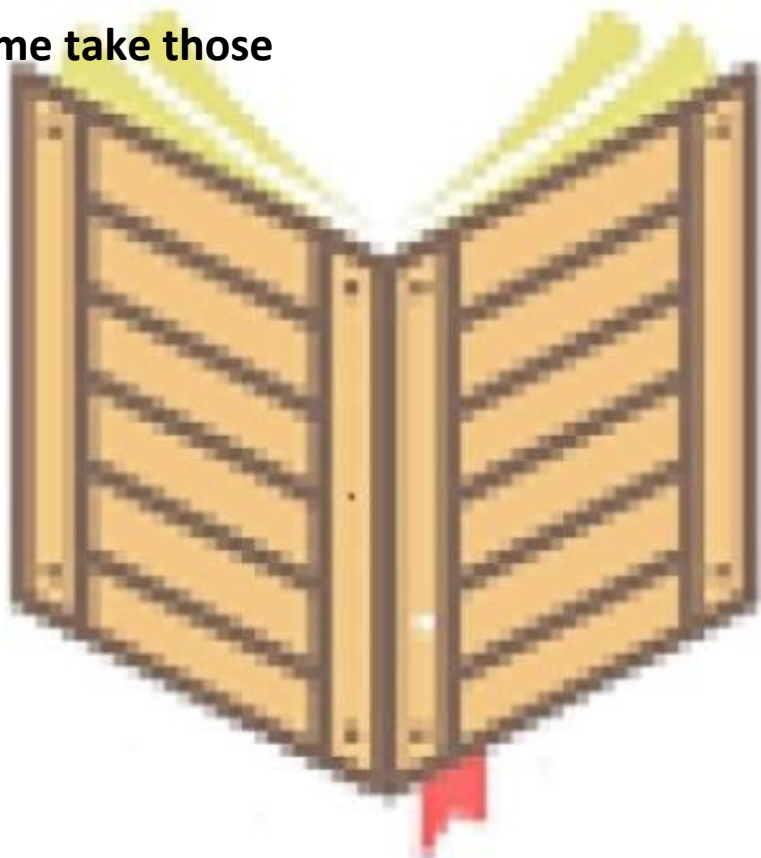
Say what now? Why is she switching up on me like this? I thought we talked

Khwezi: but mama... Mom: it's a free ride

Khwezi: yeah yeah whatever

I went to take my bags and I said goodbye to my father who was watching, Mom walked us outside.

Sakhile: let me take those



NOVELSGURU.COM

He took my bags.

Mom: I'm gonna miss you Khwezi: I will miss you too

Mom: call me when you get there and please don't forget to pray mtanami, I will try to call you Khwezi: I will call you don't worry, okay I love you

Mom: I love you too, travel safe Khwezi: we will thanks

We share a long hug, she started crying and I had to calm her down, i knew she did not want me to go but for the sake of my future I had to go.

I got inside the car and drove off, Sakhile clears his throat.

Sakhile: I'm sorry for showing up like that Khwezi: you better be, I didn't like what you did Sakhile: I said I'm sorry Khwezi: and I heard you

I fold my arms.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: so you forgive me

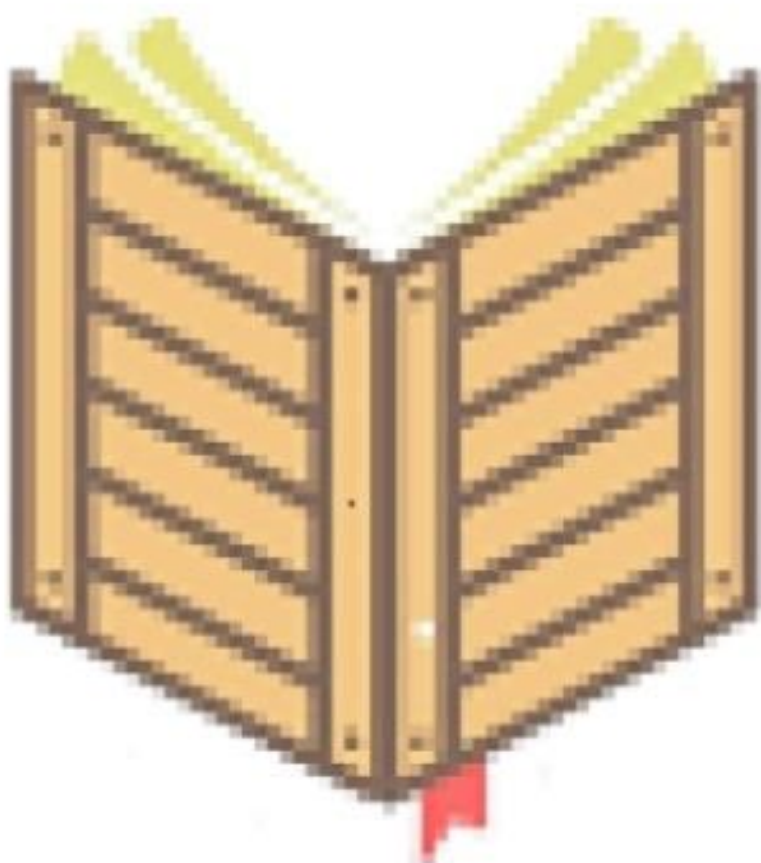
Khwezi: depends on what you apologising with

Sakhile: we gonna pass by McDonald when we get to the city

Khwezi: sounds fun

He laughs a little and I smile.

Khwezi: so what did you want to talk about?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: let's not talk about it now, for now let's enjoy each other's company

He turns on some music and we start chatting, this is really a long ride I ended up sleeping.

I was woken up by Sakhile shaking say I g we have arrived, I set up straight as I watched the beautiful city of Jozi.

My eyes sparkle as I look at the street lights, this is a busy place I can because of the car being all over the place.

We went to McDonald like he promised, he bought us something to eat and I thanked him.

He drive me to campus where I will be staying though I was planning on getting an apartment for myself, I hate sharing room with someone I enjoy my own company.

NOVELSGURU.COM

He helps me with the begs as I signed in and I was given my room keys, we went looking for my room till we found it. I could hear some loud music playing so we just barged in.

There was a girl there with her friends and they all turn to look at us when we walked in.

Girl2: ouuu, she brought as snack

She saying looking at Sakhile, I just minded my own business.

This girl looks at me and she smiles, I return the smile.

Her: Hii my name is Ovelile and these are my friends

Oh I suppose she is my roommate.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: hii I'm Khwezii

**Girl3: nice to meet you and you are really beautiful Khwezi:
thanks, so I should walk out I guess**

**I put my hands in my pocket and I look at Sakhile, he nods and I
follow him.**

Sakhile: so I guess this is it then

**Khwezi: yeah I guess, but don't say it like it's my last time
seeing you Sakhile: who knows it might be**

Khwezi: I highly doubt

Sakhile: I will see you around and I will call you

Shit I got to call my mom.

Khwezi: okay bye Sakhile: no hug?

**Khwezi: why would I hug you? Sakhile: because I asked Khwezi:
don't be an asshole**

**He laughs and I hug him, he left and I went back to my room,
they are still playing the loud music and I need some sleep.**

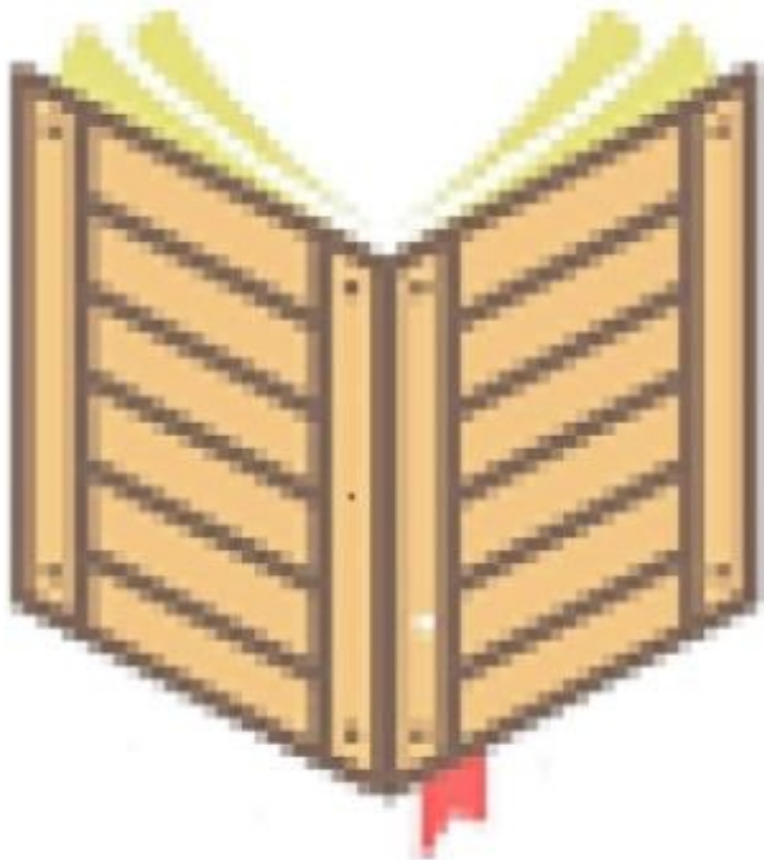
NOVELSGURU.COM

**I started unpacking my stuff and I ate the food Sakhile bought
for me, I need to do some grocery shopping when I'm done
with my classes tomorrow.**

I went to take a shower and I wore my sleeping clothes, I took

out my phone and I called my mother.

She was furious that I took my own precious time in calling her.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I prayed and luckily my roommate and her friends left I had the room to myself, I set my alarm and I went to sleep.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 3

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up early in the morning and I made my bed, I went to take a shower and I got dressed.

I wore a blue body hugging knee dress, it was a long sleeve so I didn't have to wear a jacket/jersey.

I wore my sandals, it's the only pair of shoes I have not that I'm complaining. I did not have anything to eat so I drank a glass of water, took my bag and I went out.

I arrived at my first class and I was a little bit early so I went looking for a seat and I set down, later other people started joining.



NOVELSOURU.COM

The lecturer walks in and starts the lesson, while we was learning a girl barges in the middle of the lesson.

The lecturer stops teaching and looks at her, the girl had a bread of toast in her mouth and she had her eyes all out.

Her: uhm... sorry I didn't mean to disturb y'all Lecturer: you are late Ms Mthembu



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: yes I'm sorry I just had a little problem with my alarm not ringing as you can see that resulted to me being late

Lecturer: this isn't your brothers houses were you can get to do as you please, now sit your ass down you disturbing everybody

I saw she wanted to say something but she held herself, this is a quite good experience for a first day for me.

There was an open seat next to me so she came and set there.

Her: this fucking old women, she doesn't even know who I am

She clicks her tongue and I giggle, she looks at me and smiles.

Her: ohh hey there, I'm Zizipho but you can call me Zizi Khwezi: I'm Khwezi, nice to meet you

Zizi: likewise, do you mind if I borrow your pen? Khwezi: sure

NOVELSGURU.COM

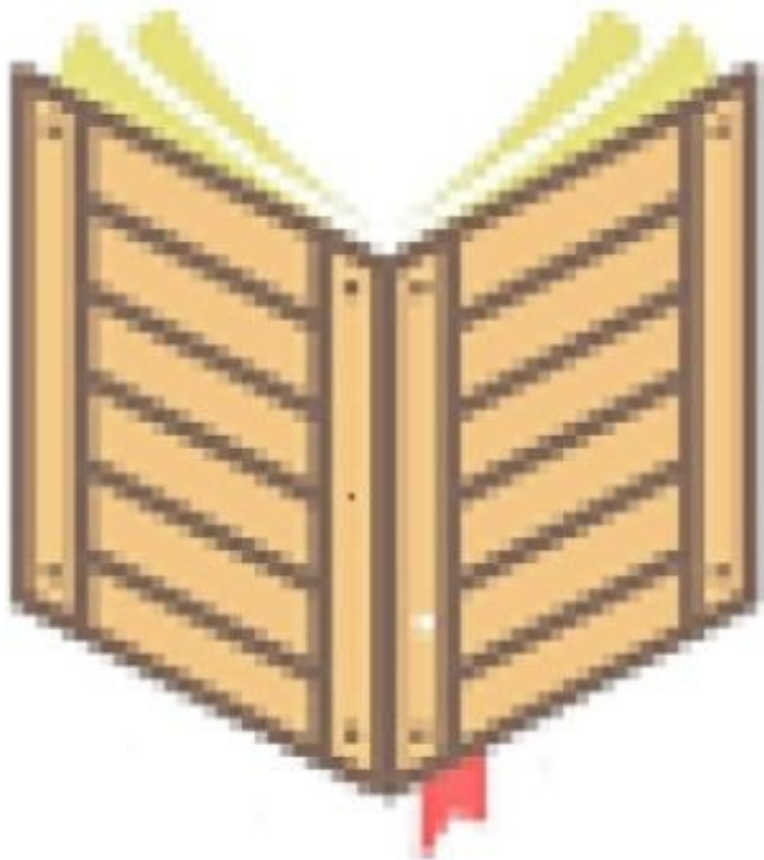
I had an extra pen so she took it.

Zizi: thank you

The lesson continued and we had to move to our next class, I

packed my stuff and I headed out, Zizi was following me.

Khwezi: can I help you? Zizi: yes you can help me Khwezi: with?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: with being friends, I mean if you want to

This girl is unbelievable, she doesn't even know me yet she wants to be friends with me.

Zizi: I will take that as a yes, let's head to our next class then Friend

She took my hand and she giggles, we went to our next class and boy this girl is talkative, she can't keep her mouth shut.

We finished with our classes for the day and I'm exhausted and I need some sleep.

Zizi: so what are you doing for the day?

Khwezi: I was planning on doing some grocery shopping

I'm not about to tell her that I don't have any food to eat that's really embarrassing plus she did not ask so imma keep my mouth shut.

Zizi: so we going to the mall I guess, I also need some food for my apartment Khwezi: you don't stay here? I thought all students stay here

Zizi: not when you are the sister of the Mthembu brothers

She winks at me.

Khwezi: oh okay

I followed her to her car, it's a beautiful White BMW M3 and damn baby those wheels looks really fyn if you ask me.

There was a driver waiting for us so we got inside.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: please take us to the mall Driver: yes ma'am

Who is this girl again?

Zizi: so tell me everything about you

She smiles and I laugh nervously, I really don't know how to answer that question.

Khwezi: how about you start

Zizi: okay, well you know my name *smiles* I'm Zizopho Mthembu, I was raised in a huge village in Gauteng and I later moved to Jozi with my family since we wanted a fresh start and father had start a business there, being the only girl in the family sucks cause I don't have anyone else to hang around with and I love my brothers but they are annoying

I feel out of place right now, what should I tell her?

Khwezi: wow that's a life there

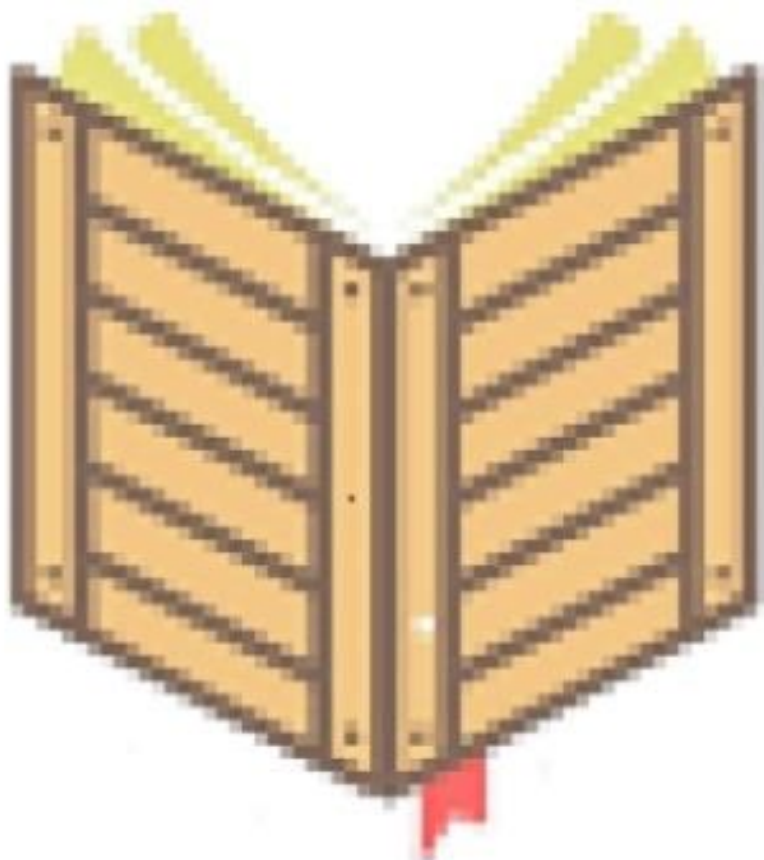
Zizi: it's not a fun life trust me maybe it's because I'm lonely and all that, so what about you? Khwezi: I really don't have anything interesting to talk about

Zizi: ohh come on, you have got have something interesting that happened in your life

Khwezi: I don't honestly Zizi: it's cool, we are here

She says smiling, we got out of the car and we went to inside the huge mall.

Khwezi: I will go to Spar and I will see... Zizi: Spar? Why do you want to go there? Khwezi: it's cheap plus I usually shop there



NOVELSGURU.COM

I'm lying, I only got R500 cash and I know I'm gonna be able to buy a few things with it.

Zizi: relax girl this one is on me Khwezi: on you?

Zizi: yes I will be paying for the both of us

Khwezi: you don't have to do that trust me I won't have any money to pay you back Zizi: who said anything about paying me back? You my girl and I got you

She hugs me, I smile and we went to Woollies.

We started shopping for stuff, this girl kept on putting everything she sees inside the trolley.

I wouldn't have been able to afford all this.

Zizi: what's your favourite cake flavour? Khwezi: chocolate

Zizi: where are you from again? *giggles* I also love chocolate, girl where have you been all my life

NOVELSGURU.COM

She hugs me as we walk around picking some food, I laugh at the way she said that.

We went to pay and headed back to the car.

Zizi: thank God we got the grocery covered, my brother will kill me if he found the apartment empty

Why does she keep talking about her brother as if he is some scary monster? I'm kidding

Zizi stops and she looks at me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: what?

Zizi: am I being too much?

Yes she talks a lot but she's not being too much, I love her bubbly self.

Khwezi: no you not

Zizi: thank God, I thought I was...I'm hungry Khwezi: I'm fine I will eat when I get home

I can't let her do anything else for me, she has already done a lot for me and I appreciate it.

Zizi: okay then, I will order in when I get home

Khwezi: yeah, I'm tired and I have a lot of work I need to do

Zizi: you can say that again

We got inside the car and she drops me off at the Campus.

Zizi: let me help you with your things

NOVELSGURU.COM

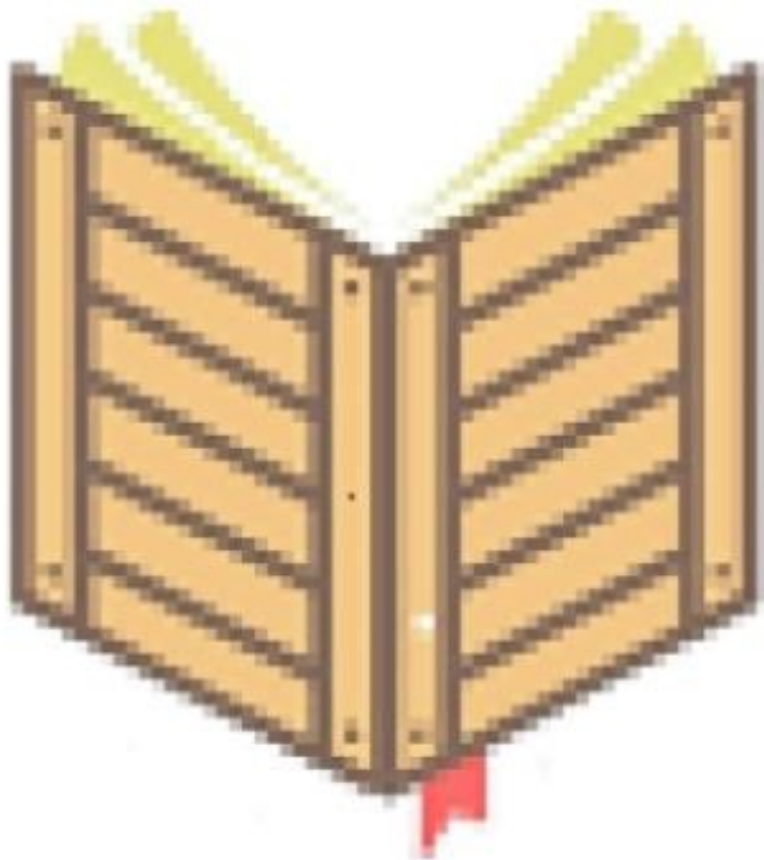
She says getting off the car helping me carry the million things she bought for me even after tell g her it's enough.

We arrive at my room and I open the door, we got inside and my roommate is still at it playing her loud music.

This time they are having alcohol and smoking.

Zizi: you stay here?

Khwezi: yeah I do



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: Yohh

Khwezi: tell me about it.

I give her the look and we both laugh.

Ovelile: hey roomie

Khwezi: hey, can you guys turn down the music and please don't smoke when I'm around, I'm allergic

Ovelile: sorry we didn't know

Zizi: you didn't have to know, you can't smoke in a room knowing very well you staying with someone, and it's not your room

Ovelile: I didn't know stop making a big fuss about it, it not like she's going to die

Yeah I won't die but I will have swollen itchy eyes.

Khwezi: its okay I will be fine, I will just open the windows

Ovelile: see she will be fine

NOVELSGURU.COM

She roll her eyes so does her friends, this is why I hate sharing a room.

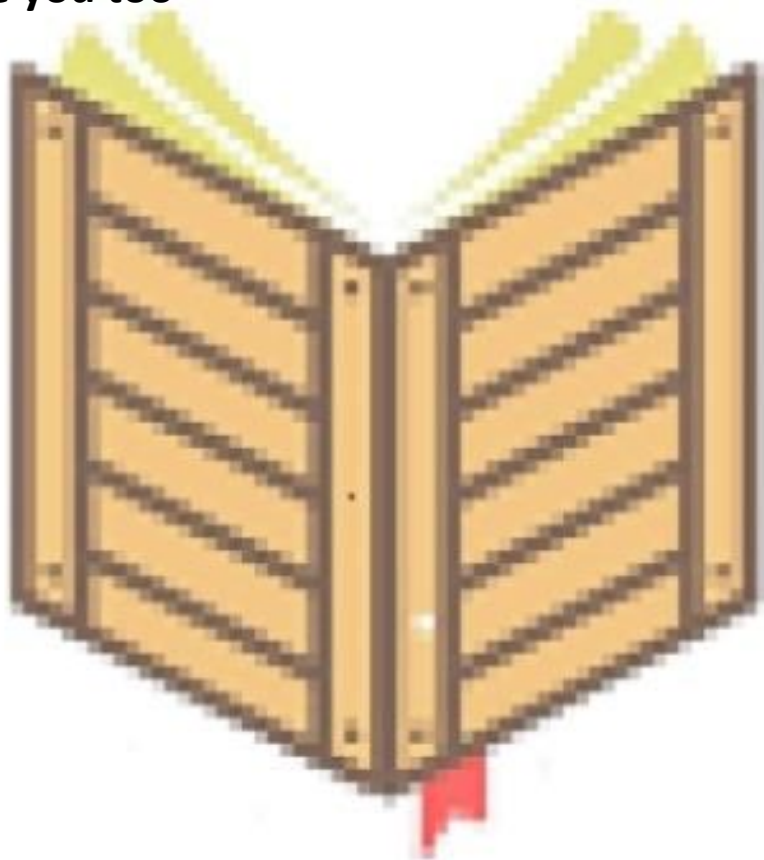
Zizi: you gonna be okay right? Khwezi: yeah I will be fine

Zizi: call me if you need anything or if you need me to give them

a new face

**She says looking at my roommate, she's being dramatic now
but she's cute.**

**Khwezi: I will see you tomorrow Zizi: love you
Khwezi: love you too**



NOVELSGURU.COM

We share a hug and she leaves, I start by opening the windows and my eyes are already starting to be itchy.

I started unpacking everything inside the cardboards and the fridge, I made myself something to eat and I was kind enough to share with my roommate.

Ovelile: no thanks I can afford my own food, unlike you who gets somebody else to buy you food, nxah!

She clicks her tongue, well that was mean. But I don't mind, I placed the food inside the fridge I will eat it in the morning.

**.
.
.**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 4

NOVELSGURU.COM

NARRATIVE.

It's been a week and things have been going well for Khwezi though she has been having problems with her roommate.

This one night she found Ovelile eating some of her food which was inside the fridge, Khwezi did not say or do anything since she's a person who doesn't like drama.

She has been having sleepless nights because of the little parties her roommate hosts, she woke up today feel exhausted.

She made her bed and she went to the bathroom to take a shower, she stayed there for a few minutes till she felt her body relaxing.



NOVELSGURU.COM

She turns off the shower tap and she shot out, she took a towel and she dried her body.

She stood in front of the mirror and she sighed when she saw the eyes bags she had. There was a knock on the door and it was one of the roommate friends.

Her: get out I want to pee

Khwezi didn't protest she just got out and she went to her side of the room, she lotioned her body and she decided to wear some jeans and a hoodie.

She wore her socks since she was feeling cold and she wore her sandals, she looked horrible.

She made herself some breakfast and she received a call from her mother, she answers.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: hello mama She said in a low tone.

Mom: hello my child, this won't be a long call I only got three rand Khwezi: it's okay mama, how are you at home?

Mom: we are trying though your father is making situations worse for me, imagine he just took the money I was saving to

go buy a bottle of whiskey

Khwezi sighs.

Khwezi: I will send you money when I get it, you will be fine

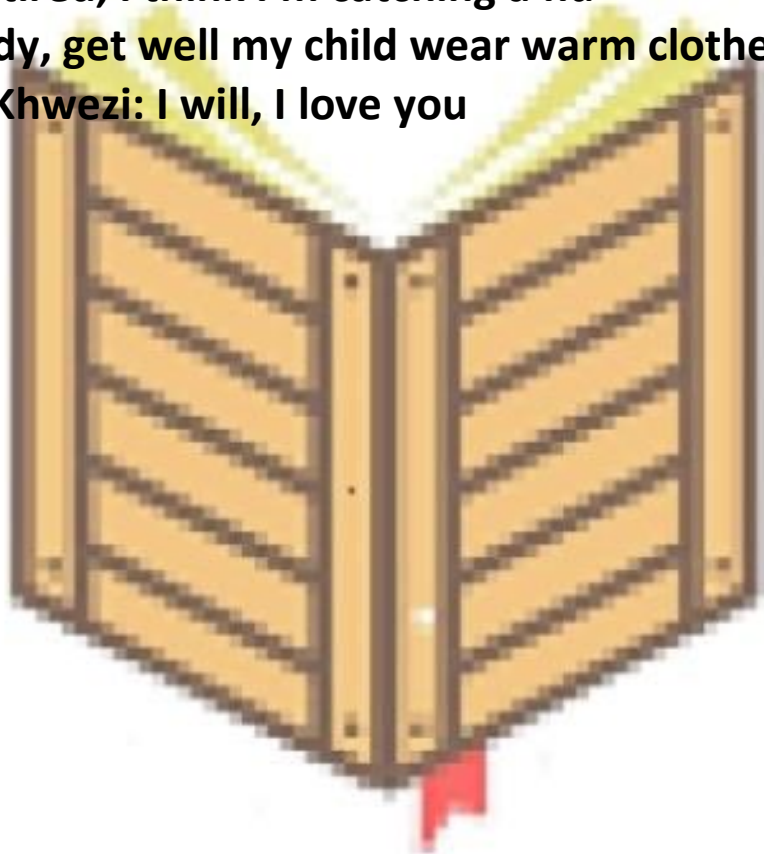
Mom: forget about me how are you?

Khwezi: I'm tired, I think I'm catching a flu

Mom: already, get well my child wear warm clothes and you

will be fine Khwezi: I will, I love you

Mom: I lo-



NOVELSGURU.COM

The call disconnected, Khwezi sighs placing her phone down the counter. She ate her breakfast and then went to bed, she isn't having any classes till tomorrow.

She was woken up by her phone ringing, it was Zizi, she set up straight and answered the call.

Khwezi: hey friend

Zizi: you sound down, what's going on? Are you okay? Is it that roommate of yours? I swear if it's her I will...

Khwezi laughs before cutting her short.

Khwezi: it's not her, I'm just catching a flu

Zizi: aww sorry baby, I have great news for you Khwezi: great news? Okay...

Zizi: so my brother girlfriend just moved out and I'm looking for a new roommate so can you please be my roommate

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I thought you said that was your apartment

Zizi: out of all the things you heard wena you asking about that

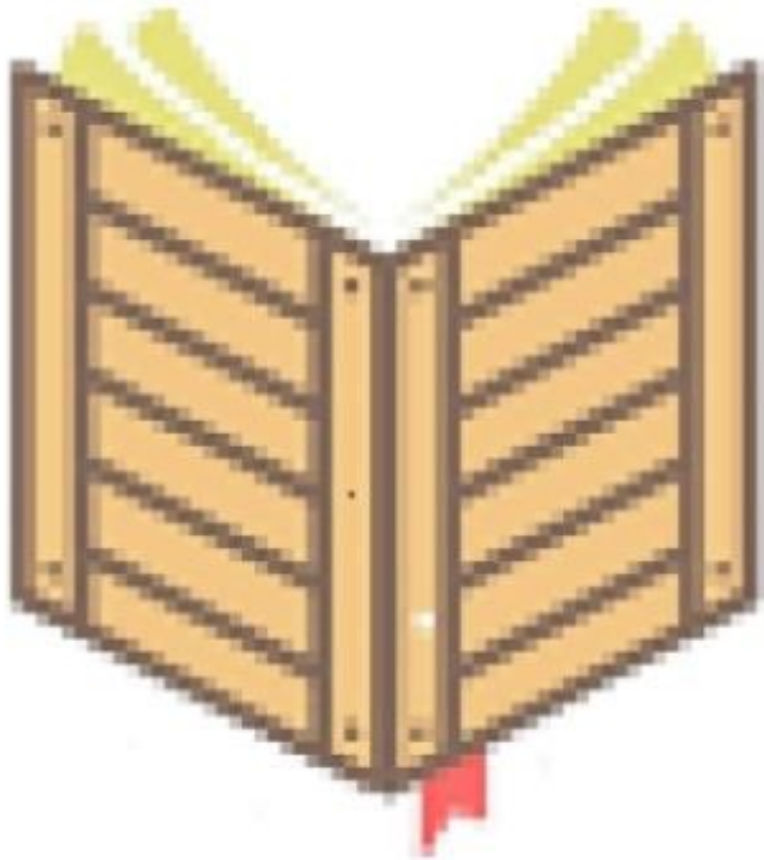
Khwezi: yeah I mean...

We both burst into laughter.

Zizi: so are you gonna be my roommate Khwezi: I don't know really

Zizi: come on please

Khwezi: on one condition though Zizi: what?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: if you allow me to pay rent

Zizi: you know I can't make you pay rent, I love you to the moon Khwezi: you see

Zizi: my brother pays the rent so it's all settled, come on please

Khwezi Khwezi: fine I will be your new roommate

She screams in excitement.

Zizi: thank you thank you, we on our way to help you with your things Khwezi: you on your way with who?

Zizi: my brother of course

Khwezi: I haven't seen your brother before

Zizi: I know...we are nearly there so get your things ready

Khwezi: fine

She hung up, she got up and started to pack her stuff. Her Roommate walks in and she is shocked to see Khwezi packing.

Ovelile: and then? Where are you off to? Khwezi: none of your business

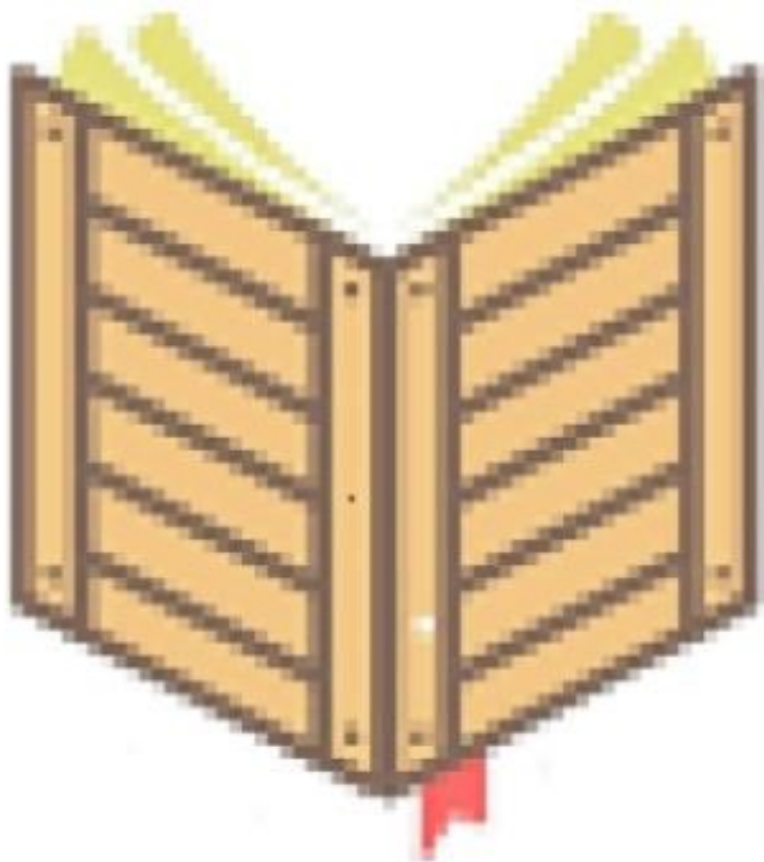
She said and she gathered everything, Zizi walks in with this light skinned handsome guy.

Zizi: bestie!!

She jumps on to Khwezi and she hugs her, the brother stood there watching them.

Khwezi: I missed you

Zizi: come on you saw me yesterday girl stop playing but I missed you too



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you are an ass Zizi: your ass right Khwezi: mxm

Guy: you must be the friend my sister can't stop talking about

He smiles and Khwezi returned the smile.

**Zizi: yes she is the one and only Guy: nice to finally meet you
Khwezi Khwezi: it's a pleasure and you are? Zizi: uMseti lona**

Guy: soxabana Zizipho

**Zizi: sorry *giggles* his name is Sandile Sandile: you know I can
introduce myself right?**

Zizi: yes the thing is you busy staring so I saved you

**Sandile: I wasn't staring she just has beautiful eyes Zizi: you
going to keep your hands off my friend Sandile: ayt ayt chill
Zizi: good, take those bags**

Sandile took the begs.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: you got everything right? Khwezi: yes I do but the food...

Zizi: nah she can keep it since she has been wanting to have it

She said looking at Ovelile straight in the eyes.

Ovelile: ohh please

Zizi: don't give me that attitude because imma beat you up and leave you for the street Ovelile: just get out of my room

Zizi: besesihamba vele

She clicks her tongue and walks out with Khwezi

Khwezi: what's with you and drama?

Sandile: drama is her middle name, let me help you with that

He took the beg Khwezi was carrying, they got inside the red BMW and drove to Zizi's apartment.

They arrived and Sandile helped in unloading everything inside the apartment.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: if that's all then I'm going to leave Zizi: yeah that all thanks

Sandile: you welcome, I didn't get your number

He looks at Khwezi and she just laughs.

Khwezi: that line is way way old, come up with something better maybe you gonna get my number

Sandile: ouch I'm hurt

Zizi: can you leave and stop flirting with my friend



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: okay fine I will leave

He left.

Zizi: I wouldn't recommend you dating any of my brothers, they are all players

Khwezi: I wasn't

Zizi: now let's go watch a movie

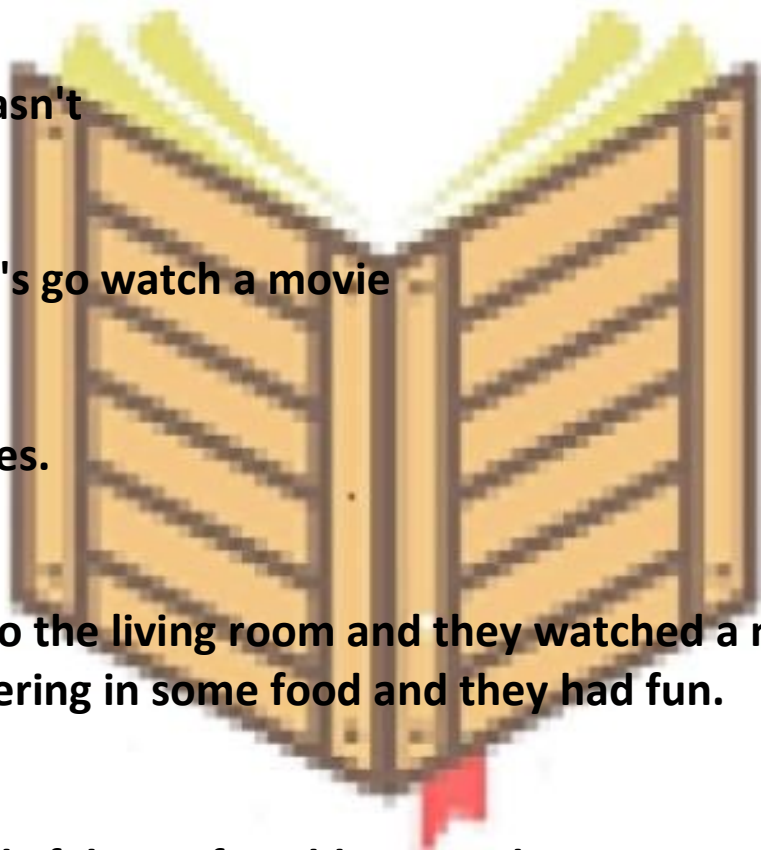
Khwezi smiles.

They went to the living room and they watched a movie, Zizi kept on ordering in some food and they had fun.

Khwezi finally felt comfortable around someone and that made her happy, it got late and they went to they decided to sleep on the same bed.

•
•
•

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 5

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I was woken up by my phone ringing, I didn't even check the caller ID I just answered and placed the phone on my ear.

That's when woken up for the second time by Sakhile's voice, he was shouting.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: where are you? Your roommate tells me you moved out, why didn't you tell me?

Khwezi: first of all shut up you gonna damage my ear with your screaming, I'm not your girlfriend so you won't call me demanding my whereabouts as if you own me

Sakhile: I'm...I'm sorry I did not mean to shout at you, I just over reacted

Khwezi: it's good that you noticed

Sakhile: how are you?

Khwezi: I'm good and you?

Sakhile: never better, I want to see you

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: why do you want to see me?

Sakhile: you remember the talk we never had



Khwezi: ohh that, when do you want to see me?

Sakhile: as in like right now, can I have your current location

Khwezi: sure I will send it to you

Sakhile: don't keep me waiting

Khwezi: I won't



NOVELSGURU.COM

He hung up, I shook Zizi trying to wake her up.

Zizi: mmmh? Khwezi: wake up Zizi: it's still early

Khwezi: I know but I need the location of this place, my friend wants to see me Zizi: koda Khwezi, I was about to kiss Michael B Jordan

Khwezi: I'm sorry but I need this Zizi: fine

She took my phone and texted the location to Sakhile, she went back to sleep.

Khwezi: I love you Zizi: love you too

She said closing her eyes and continuing with her sleep, I got up and I went to my room which is next to Zizi's.

I washed my face and I brushed my teeth, Sakhile texted me that he is outside so I got out.

NOVELSGURU.COM

The morning weather is kinda cold, he was standing outside the car.

He smiles.

Sakhile: Hey you Khwezi: uhm...hey

Sakhile: I didn't know you could afford suck a place



NOVELSGURU.COM

Okay that hurts.

Khwezi: it's not mine but it belongs to a friend

Sakhile: mmmh, why didn't you tell me that you were switching places? Khwezi: because I didn't see the need to tell you, we

not even that close Sakhile: but I brought you here

Khwezi: no no no you offered to bring me here I did not ask you, either way stop acting like an asshole

Sakhile: Okay I'm sorry I didn't mean all that

Khwezi: understandable but you can't unsay what you said

Sakhile: I know and I'm sorry

He tried to touch me but I moved back, who he thinks he is to come here and talk to me like I'm his fucking property.

Sakhile: don't be like that

Khwezi: you said you wanted to talk, so talk Sakhile: not while you still angry at me

Khwezi: ngithe khuluma Sakhile or I'm going back inside

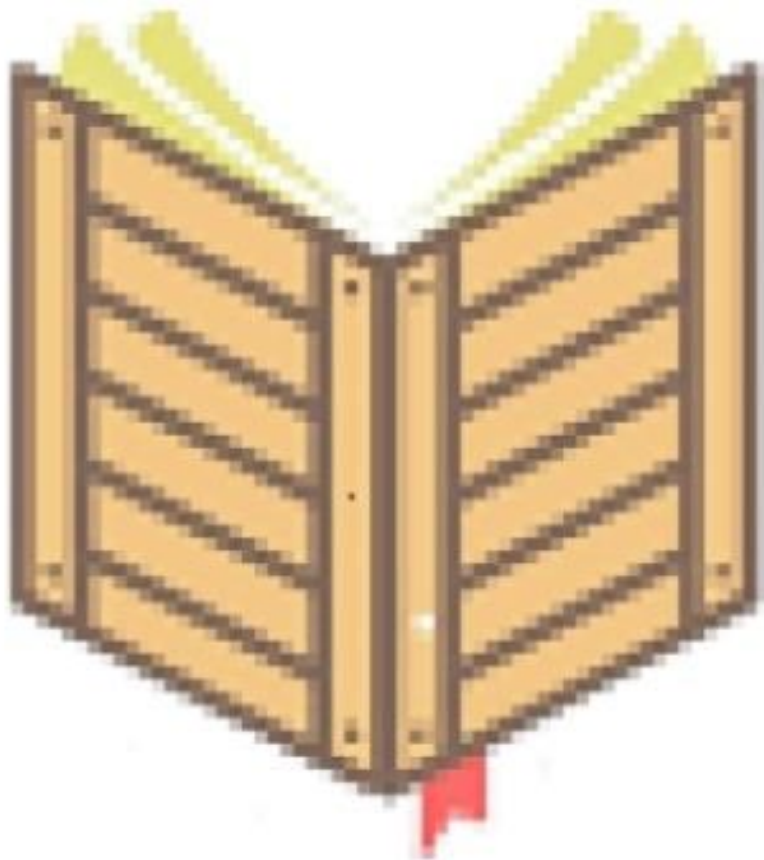
NOVELSGURU.COM

He sighs.

Sakhile: okay okay look I love you and I want you to be my girlfriend

Did he come here to say all this unromantic kak?

Khwezi: I don't date Sakhile you and I both know that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: give me the chance, I know you don't date but I just want you to give me the chance, I promise I won't do anything to break you

He looks at me in the eyes and I folded, he pulls me closer to him and we now breathing the same air.

Sakhile: all I'm asking from you is a chance Khwezi: I can't...

Sakhile: why can't you?

Khwezi: I don't know but I just can't, I got a lot of things on my plate and the last thing I want is being distracted from achieving what I want

Sakhile: think about it then

This guy isn't going to give up.

Khwezi: *sighs* I will think about it Sakhile: thank you so much

He attacks me with a hug, I hug him back and we stay like that for a few minutes.

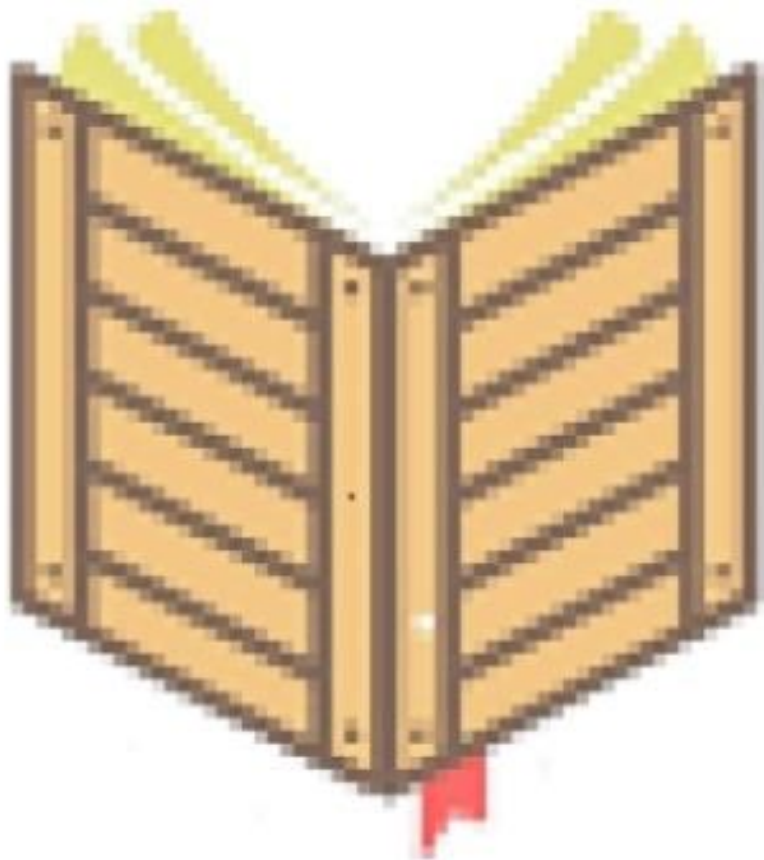
Sakhile: I love you

Khwezi: Thank you for loving me, now I gotta go Sakhile: no kiss?

Khwezi: you pushing it

I look at him in the eyes and he bites his lower lip, I love away from him.

**Sakhile: I will see you soon, right now I got to rush to work
Khwezi: okay, travel safe**



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: thank you, bye butterfly

He kisses my forehead and he got inside his car, he drove off. I went back inside found Zizi standing there with a glass of fillers with Champaign in her hand.

Zizi: you two look cute, so tell me about it?

Khwezi: he told me he loves me and he want me to be his girlfriend

Zizi: just like that? No flowers chocolate and so forth? Khwezi: I was asking myself the same thing

Zizi: so dry, I'm disappointed

Khwezi: despite that I'm really not ready to be in a relationship with someone Zizi: I understand you love

Khwezi: I'm glad now let's get ready for class Zizi: I already showered

Khwezi: did I take that long?

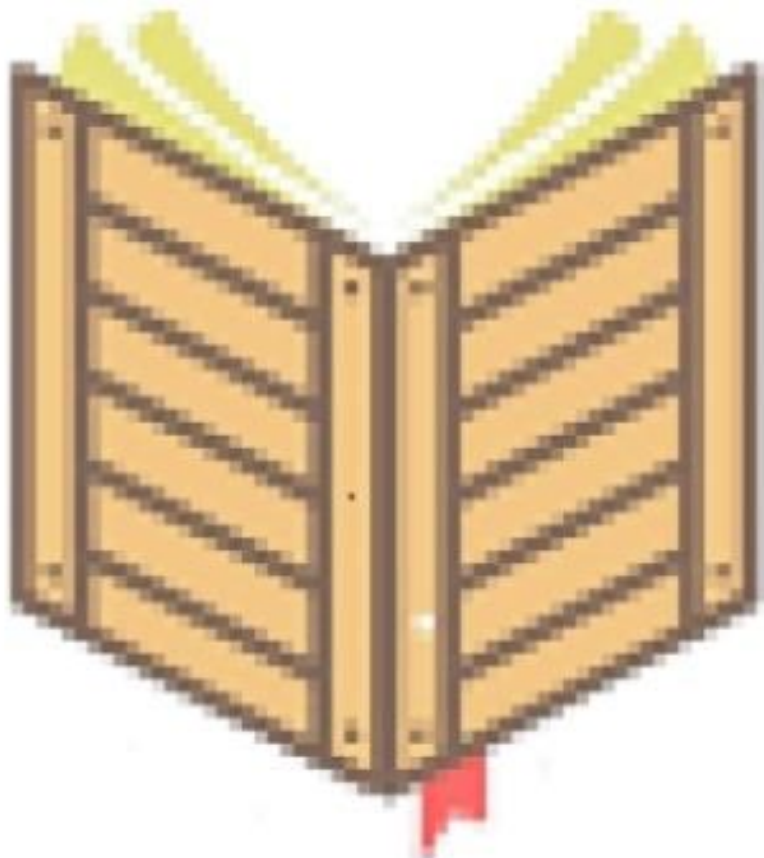
Zizi: you most definitely did, I will make breakfast Khwezi: okay

I went to take a shower and I got done, i dried and lotioned my body. I wore a pencil skirt and crop top, I wore my sandals and did my hair.

I went to the main room and Zizi was already dressed, she really went out on the breakfast.

**We ate and then she requested the driver to come pick us up,
we went to our first class...sadly she did not attend the second
class with me**

-
-
- **ZIZIPHO.**



NOVELSGURU.COM

My name is Zizipho Mthembu daughter of Nomthandazo and Mpendulo Mthembu, I have five brothers which are Kungentando, Nkosinathi, Nkanyiso, Syathokoza, and Sandile.

Well I'm the last born, Big brother Ntando got married few weeks ago to Amahle Ndlovu.

Nkosinathi well he is a complicated guy but his very loving and my father is very fond of him, Nkosi has a girlfriend which we as a family don't like. you will find out why.

Well the rest of my brothers are players, equally they are all playing of course counting big bro out of it since he is married but he was one.

My family loves me and they treat me like an egg, I don't like being and egg but what can I say I'm the last born.

My father called in a meeting so we are all here gathered, I arrived early then everyone.

**Mom: my little pumpkin I thought you didn't want me anymore
Zizi: Hey mommy**

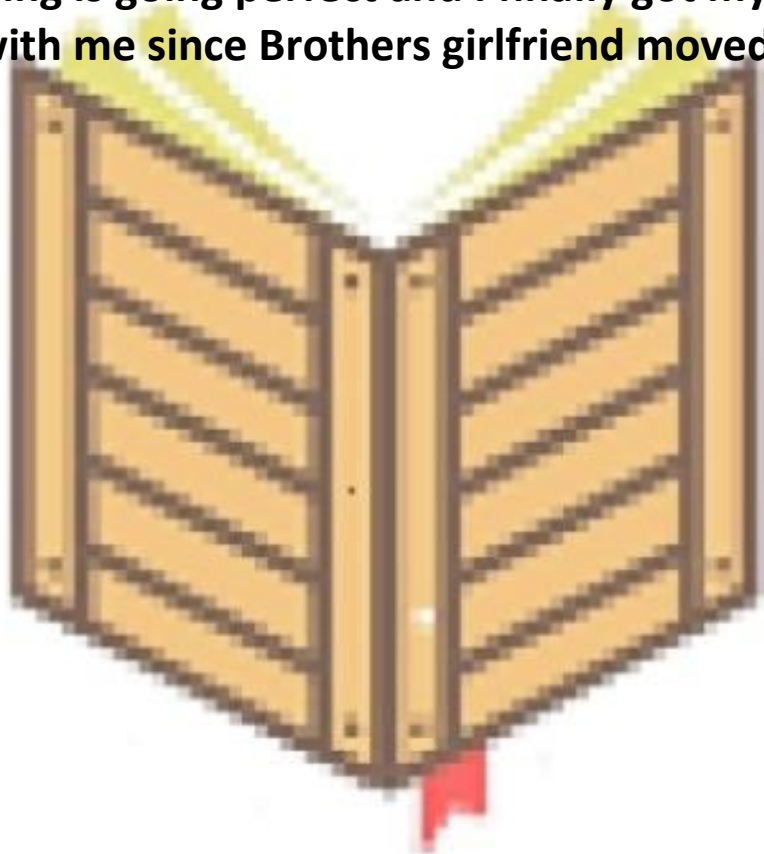
I quickly ran to her arms and I hugged her, I am a mommy's girl and I missed her.

Mom: how are you baby? Zizi: I'm good mom and you?

Mom: I'm fine, how is school? Tell me everything about it? Zizi: mom you asked me this a few days ago

Mom: I know but I want you to keep me updated

Zizi: everything is going perfect and I finally got my friend to come stay with me since Brothers girlfriend moved out



NOVELSGURU.COM

I mean Nkosi's girlfriend, she's a pain in the ass that one...she can't even cook her own food.

Mom: that's great maybe you should invite your friend for dinner tonight
Zizi: that's a great idea, I will ask her as soon as I get home

Mom: great it's good to see you have got a friend whom you love
Zizi: and I love her for real, she should have been my sister

Dad: who should have been your sister?

Dad walks in, he is dressed in a powder blue shirt and has his sleeves rolled up. He must have been busy with work.

Dad: so I don't get a hug now? Zizi: come on old man

Dad: who you calling an old man?

He changed his voice, my father is a very respectful man and he doesn't tolerate nonsense but for me he does.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I give him a huge and he kisses my cheek, I giggle. okay I might be daddy's girl a little bit.

He went to kiss my mother.

Dad: what are my beautiful ladies talking about?

Zizi: about school and dinner, is it okay if I invite my friend for dinner? Dad: anything you want princess

Zizi: you the best, thank you

Dad: your brothers will be here in a few



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: help me set up the table Zizi: sure

I helped her set up the table, we are having lunch as a family and I guess we gonna have a meeting.

Few moments later my brothers arrive, firstly big brother walks in with his Wife Amahle.

Ntando: nozalo lamii

He kisses my mother on the cheek.

Ntando: you look gorgeous Mom: thank you, Makoti Amahle: sawubona ma

She says in a respectful tone.

Mom: take this to the table for me Amahle: sure

She takes the jar followed with juice.

Sandile, Nkanyezi, and Syathokoza walk in making noise.

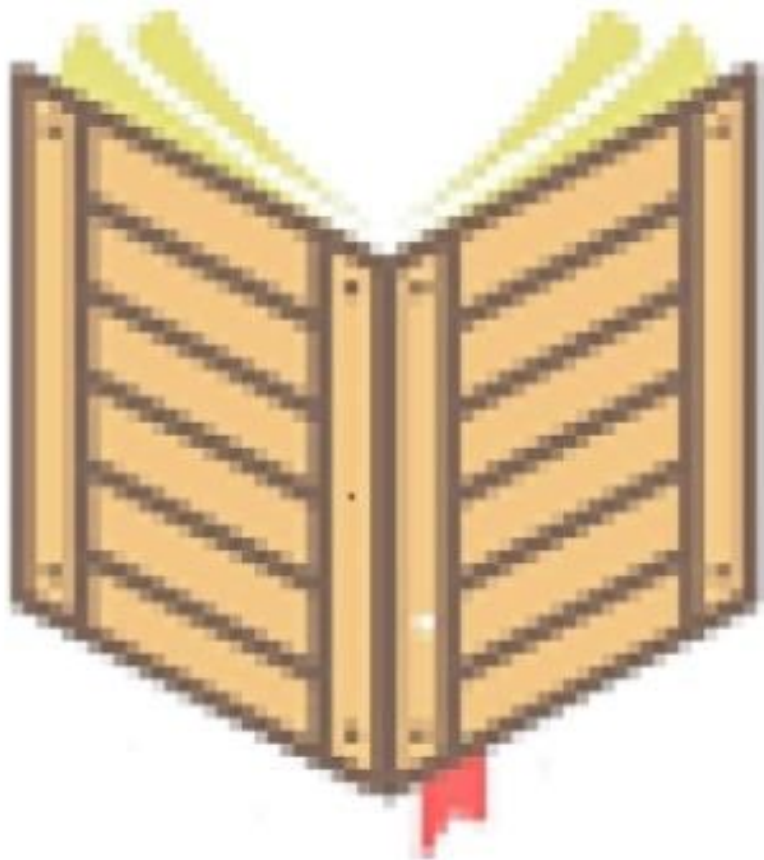
Sya: I told you to stay away from that girl



NOVELSBURU.COM

Here it's goes again, always talking about girl.

Nkanyezi: fuseg nje wena you always flopping



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: nithuka inhlamba emzini wamii? (You swearing in my house?)

Them: sorry mama

Mom: Nxah!!

Sandile: I told y'all to shut up look now

They went to greet mom but she didn't have any of it, she just ignored them.

We all set down, now we waiting for Nkosi...

Zizi: mama baba uphi uNkosie? (Where is Nkosie?) Mom: Sthandwa Sami?

She looks at Dad. NOVELSGURU.COM

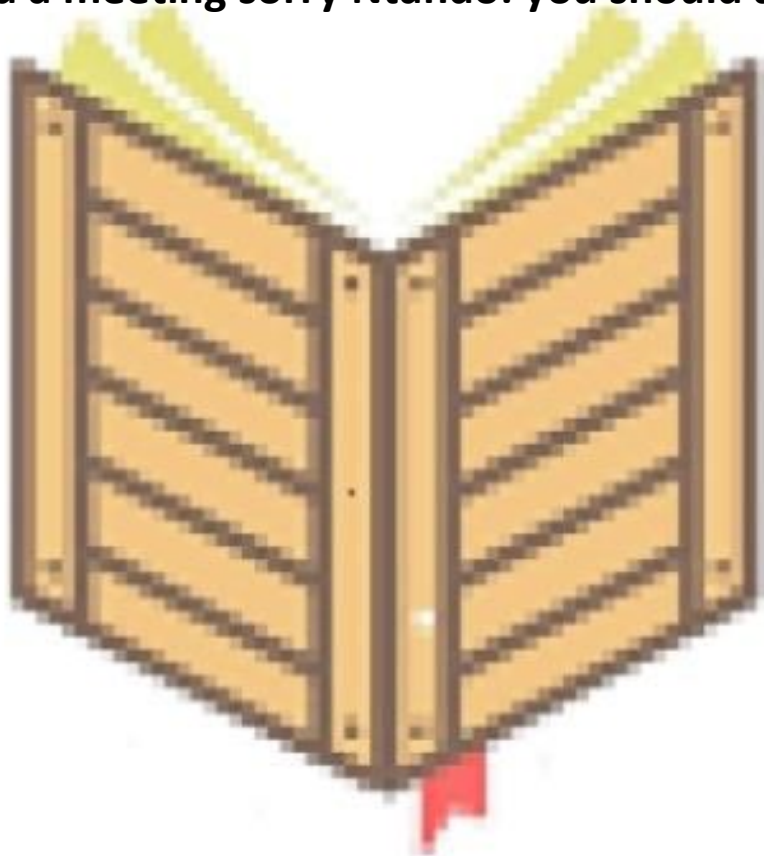
Dad: he must be on his way

Few seconds later, Nkosi walks in...I'm not gonna lie to you but

my brother is hella hot. Forget about Big brother and the rest of the brats, Nkosie is the flaming kinda hot.

The combination of Big brother, Mom and Dad...he is a whole snack no wonder every girl wants him so bed.

Nkosie: I had a meeting sorry Ntando: you should apologise maybe



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie gives him a side eye before he set down.

Mom: its okay son what matters is that we are all here

She said, we prayed and we started to eat our food.

Mom: so Sandile how is your new job going?

Sandile: great and it pays me really good, though I would really love to have a company like big brother and Nkosie

Ntando: usasemncane mfanami (you still young boy)

Sandile: kahle wena ngim'dala kabi (nonsense I'm old)

Nkanyezi: fosa

Him and Syathokoza laugh.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: Nkosie why are you so quite? Did you have a bad day?

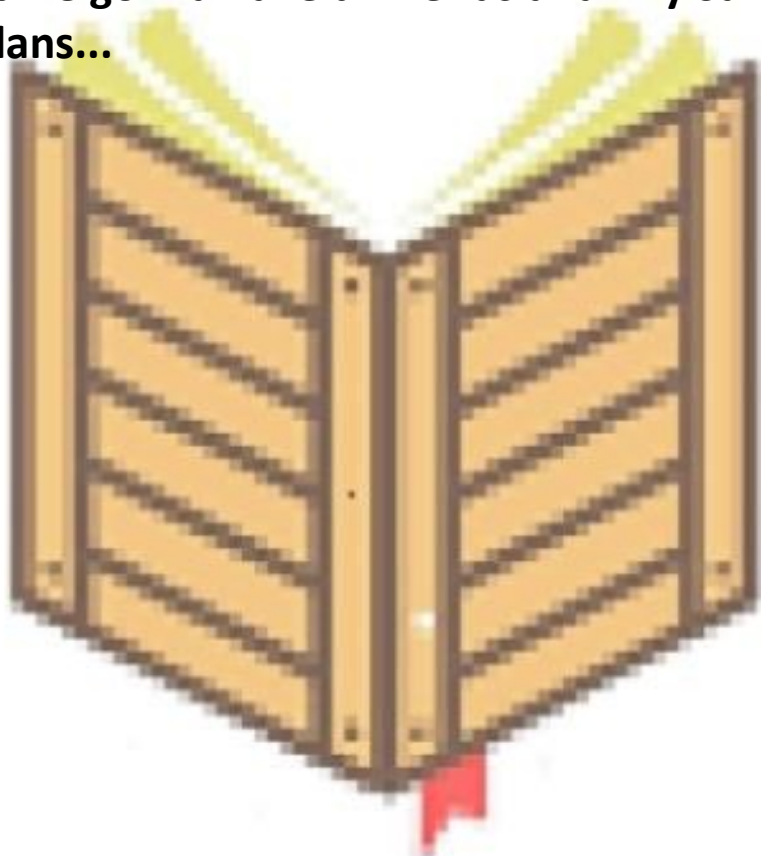
Nkosie: I'm just not in the mood, why did you call us here father?

Ntando: yah fede why did you call us here?

Dad: I'm gonna speak when I want to speak not when told to

He said and enjoyed his meat, we continued to have a chat as a family.

Dad: tonight we gonna have dinner as a family Sandile: but baba I got plans...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: I didn't not say speak boy

He said in calm yet demanding tone.

Dad: and what is this nonsense that I hear y'all are changing girls as if you changing underwear's

Ntando: ayii mina (not me) Sandile: you also count me out

Nkanyezi: me too

Nkosi: don't leave me out

They all look at Syathokoza.

Sya: ningangibuki kanjalo akusimina (don't look at me like that, it's not me)

Dad: thulani umsindo niyadika, listen here I won't have you boy going out there and ruining the family name and image

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: dad we are not we just having fun

Dad: I'm gonna knock that fun out of you with one slap my boy

Syathokoza swallowed.

Nkosie: angiqondile ukuphazamisa koda Mvelase, we are still young and we still exploring

Dad: we still exploring, nyesploring yamasimba...nifuna ukumithisa manje and wena last time I checked you have a girlfriend



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: she's not my girlfriend

Dad: nxa! all I'm saying boys is watch the way you doing things cause there are people out there who are watching and you don't want our family business being published all over the news

They shook their head.

Dad: yibani amadoda nenze kahle not this rubbish

Ntando: I apologise for them father

Dad: I didn't ask for an apology, Nkosinathi come to my office we got a lot of business to discuss

He stood up and left.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie stood up and went to the kitchen to his mother, he stood there discussing something with her and you could see whatever it was it was bothering him and it didn't sit well with him.

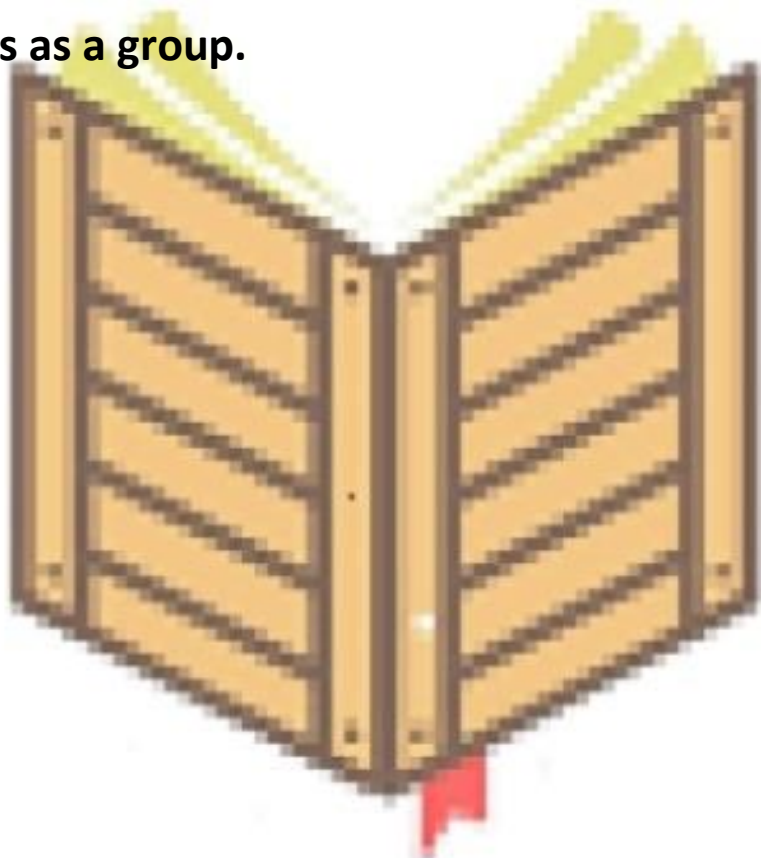
His mother gives him a hug and kisses him in the cheek.

Nkosie nods and he goes upstairs to his father.

Ntando: sis'omncane

Zizi: ngiyeka wena you replaced Ntando: ohh come on, I missed you Nkanyezi: no we missed you

They all hugs as a group.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: y'all suffocating me, I can't breathe...ohh my god I'm going to die

Sya: stop being a drama queen

He says and we all laugh.

Zizi: I missed your annoying asses

Ntando: we missed you too but we got to bounce, me and my wifey here got a lot of unfinished business

He kisses her and we all do the 'Eeewww' sound.

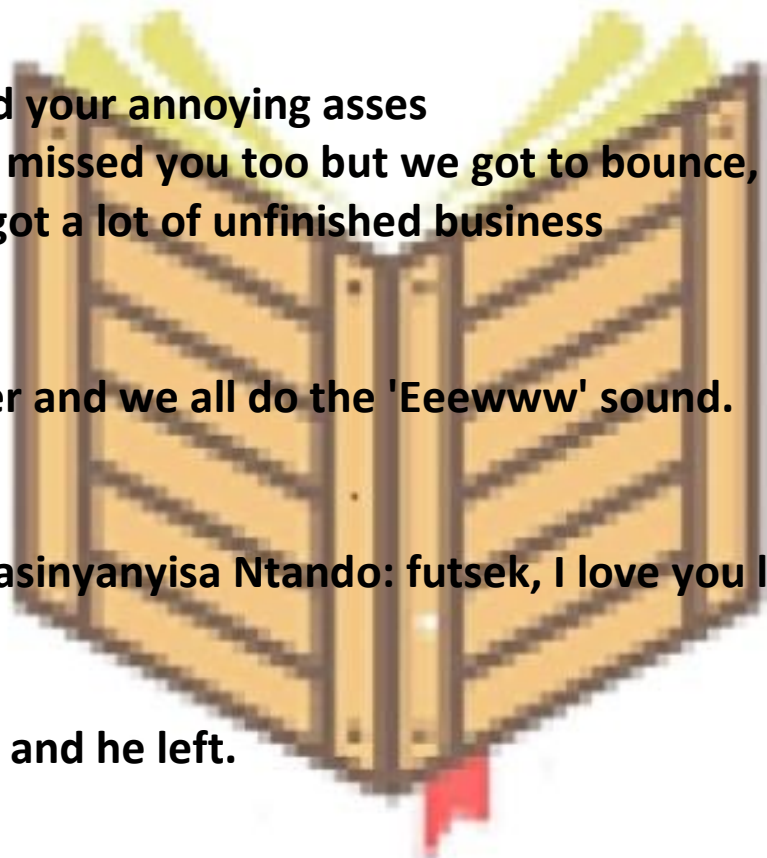
Sandile: niyasinyanyisa Ntando: futsek, I love you lil sis Zizi: I love you

He hugs her and he left.

Sandile: we also gotta love and leave you sisi Zizi: wow you all are unbelievable

Nkanyezi: we love you too

They say walking out the door, I sighs and threw herself on the couch.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: they left you huh?

Zizi: yeah...I kinda miss having them around

Mom: you will get used to it, now I have been thinking why don't you and your friend sleep over

Zizi: I don't know I respect her and I can't make decisions without including her so we gonna talk about it first



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: my little girl has grown Zizi: I know I know

She set there and watched TV, few hours later Nkosie came downstairs.

Zizi: hey amazing brother in the whole world, you know I wanted...

Nkosie: not now Zipho

He says walking out, Zizi's jaw dropped. Nkosie never talks to her like that, she's also surprised.

Mom: don't mind him, he's just going through a rough patch

Zizi: I hope his gonna be fine

Mom: he will...I hope

She mumbles the last part.

.
. .
. .

NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 6

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up early in the morning, I don't know why but I seem to be excited for a reason I don't know.

I got up, went to wash my face and brush my teeth. I went to the main room, Zizi is seating on the kitchen high chair having some coffee.



NOVELSGURU.COM

She left me the whole day yesterday, I didn't even see her come back, and I was bored like hell.

Khwezi: good morning stranger Zizi: I'm a stranger now?

Khwezi: you left me at school and said you were gonna come back but you didn't Zizi: I had to go see my family, I'm sorry pretty face

Khwezi: mxm, I set where bored like he'll Zizi: and you missed me, say it

Khwezi: yeah yeah I missed you Zizi: I missed you too

She got up and gave me a hug.

Zizi: so friend tonight we having dinner at my house and I was wondering if you would come with me

Khwezi: to meet your family?

Zizi: and have dinner *smiles* yes

Khwezi: they don't have a problem with me coming

Zizi: you my best friend plus they have been wanting to see you

Khwezi: ohh my God Zizi, you told them about me?

Zizi: I had to tell them about you, you my best friend

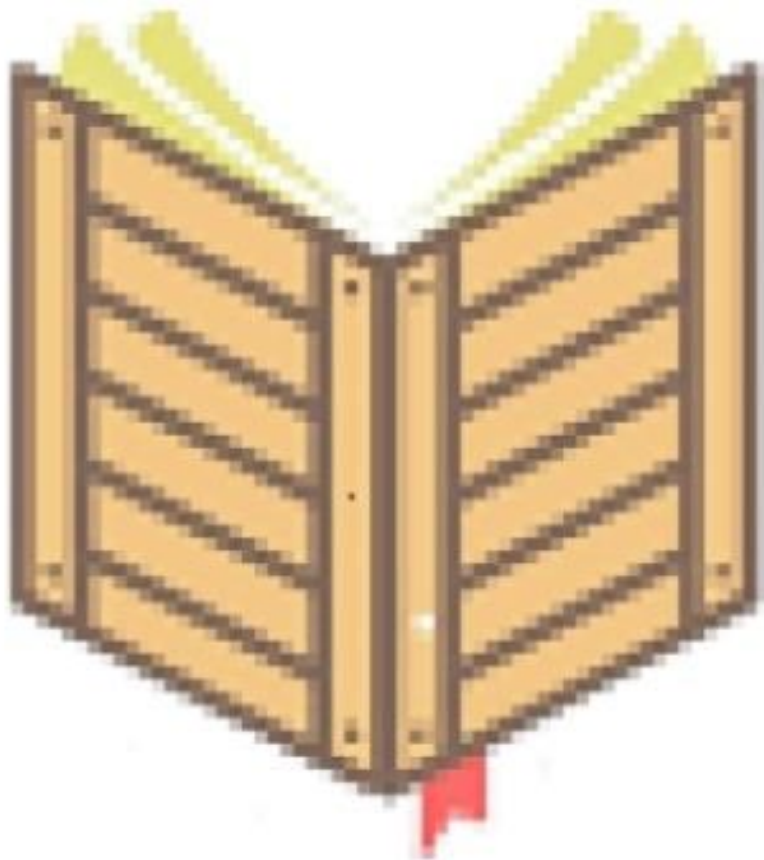
Khwezi: I will go with you then

Zizi: great, we also gonna sleep there if you don't have a

problem Khwezi: as long as you my friend are there, I don't

have a problem at all Zizi: thank you, why don't we go and eat out?

Khwezi: you taking me out? How thoughtful of you Zizi: I didn't say I was talking you out



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: mood spoiler

Zizi laughs.

Zizi: let's get ready, I will meet you out here in 30 Khwezi: sure

She places her coffee mug inside the sink and she goes to the room, I went to my room and started to take a shower.

I finished showing and I dried my body, I went through my clothes and I really don't know what to wear.

I decided to wear some black jeans, a black t-shirt written 'F.r.i.e.n.d.s' I wore my sandals.

I decided to let my hair go and I must say it had been growing and it looks good. Someone who doesn't know me would say it's a wig but it's not.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I took my side bag and my phone, I went out and Zizi was also coming out of her room.

She was wearing black sweat pants an oversized t-shirt, Nike sneakers and she looks good.

Zizi: girl you are copying me Khwezi: no you are

We giggle.

Zizi: wait here, I will be right back

She went inside her room and cane out with a black leather jacket, she gave it to me and I wore it.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: now your outfit is completed Khwezi: thanks

Zizi: and love you hair Khwezi: thank you

She locks the apartment door and we head out, our usual driver was already waiting for us outside.

We got inside the car and drove to the mall, we arrived there and we went to spur, we ordered the breakfast meal and we ordered milkshakes.

Khwezi: so tell me about your family

Zizi: well I'm the only girl as you know, you already know Sandile he is the fifth born, Syathokoza the fourth born, Nkanyiso the third born, Nkosinathi the second born and lastly Kungentando

Khwezi: wow it must be a very huge family Zizi: not really but wait till we get to Gauteng Khwezi: it's a disaster huh?

Zizi: a huge one

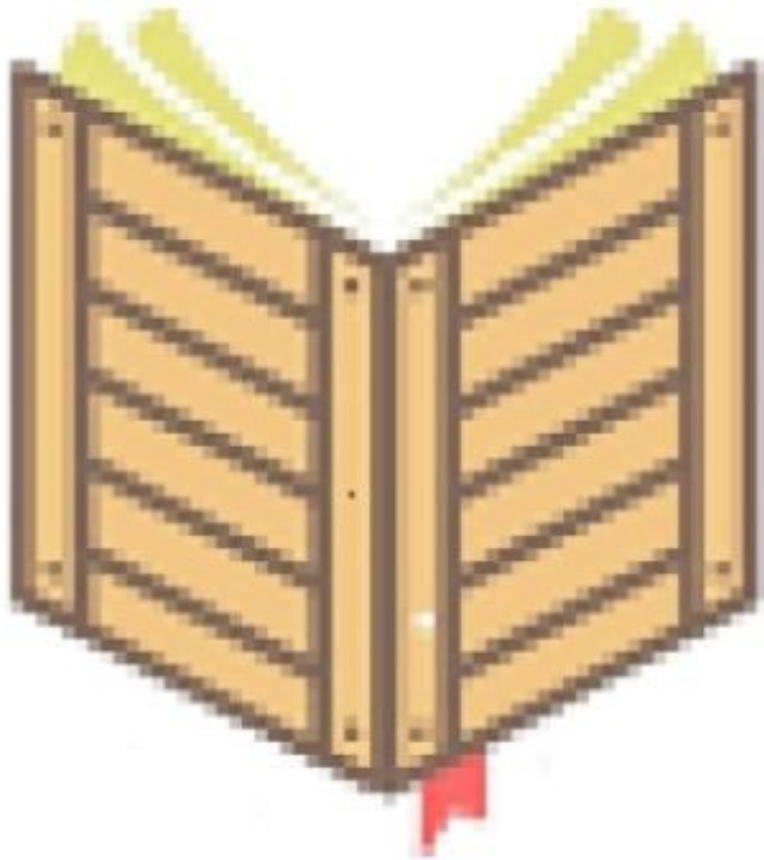
NOVELSGURU.COM

She says and our order came, we had our breakfast while chatting and she was telling me about her childhood.

We got done and I settled the bill just to show some humanity, she decided that we go for shopping.

I really don't need any new clothes but Zizi insisted we buy new clothes, I even bought a dress for tonight's dinner and I got two new pair of shoes.

I'm really blessed.



NOVELSGURU.COM

We then went to watch a movie and trust me it was so much fun, we kept on hitting people with popcorn and laughing.

This one lady caught us and we were kicked out, we were laughing our heads off.

Khwezi: I told you the lady was watching

Zizi: nah that lady got serious problem with us, I mean the fuck

Khwezi: but the movie was fun, sad we weren't able to finish it

Zizi: I will search for it on Netflix

Khwezi: cool, we should head home it's getting late and for sure the driver is sleeping by now

We laugh.

We walk to the car and like I said we found the driver sleeping, poor him the fact that he had to wait for us.

He drove us back to the apartment and when we got there we took a shower, we are nearly late for dinner but not that late.

I got out of the shower and I dried my body, I lotioned it and I looked at the dress I'm going to wear and I giggled.

I got dressed, it was a silk red body hugging dress, it wasn't

short but it was below my knees.

It was tight on my body revealing all my curves, it really made me look good and I could feel my confident boosting.

I wore the pair of black heels Zizi bought for me, I was about to sit down and do my hair when Zizi walks in.

Zizi: damn girl you look fire



NOVELSGURU.COM

**Khwezi: thank you don't look bad yourself Zizi: isinqa esingaka?
(Such a big ass?)**

I giggle.

**Zizi: can I do your hair, I have been wanting to do it pretty
please**

**This girl bathong, I set down and she did my hair, she tied it up
and she did some edges.**

I really looked good, I put some silver earring and a necklace.

**We took a few snaps and Zizi posted on her grams, we headed
out.**

**The drive to Zizi's house was long but fun because she kept on
making jokes along the way.**

NOVELSGURU.COM

**I laughing the car stopped outside the gate of this beautiful
mansion, this house is gorgeous with a capital letter G.**

**I bet they are rich like the super kinda rich, we drove inside and
I couldn't keep my eyes of the house.**

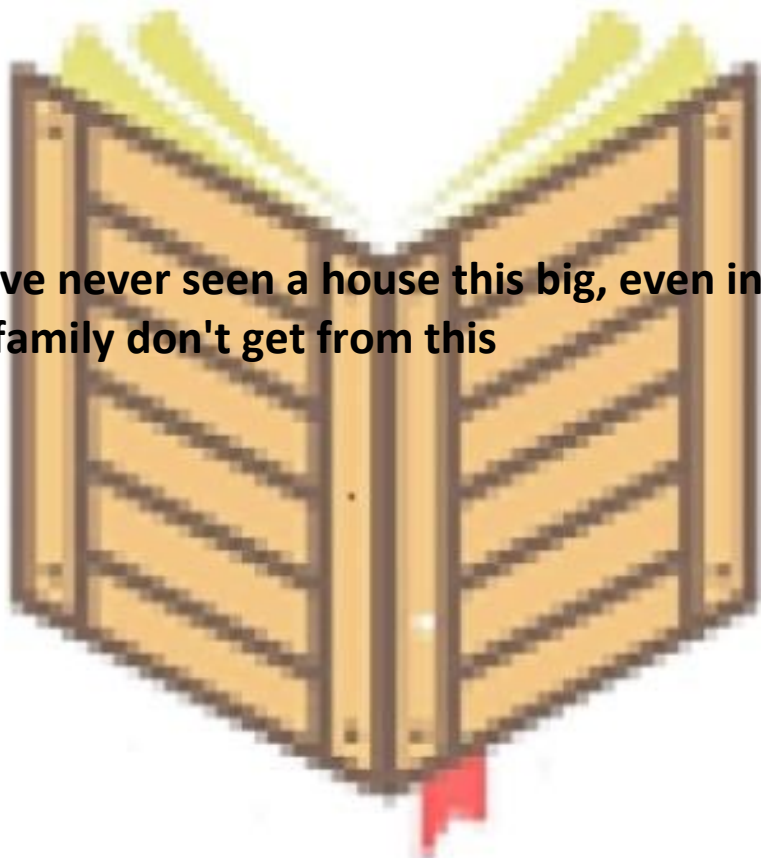
We park right outside, there are five cars parked outside and they are all different types of BMW's. We got out and Zizi held my hand.

Zizi: don't be nervous

Khwezi: leave the nervous part girl your house is huge and beautiful

She giggles.

Khwezi: I have never seen a house this big, even in my village the Ndlovu family don't get from this



NOVELSGURU.COM

In my village the Ndlovu family is the only family with a huge house but this house right here is luxury.

We got inside and I wanted to scream but I held myself, which part of the world are they from?

Sandile: it's the beautiful lady once again

He says walking in with a smile on his face, I returned the smile.

Khwezi: hey

Sandile: you look beautiful Khwezi: thanks

Sandile: little sis

She hugs her sister and the rest of the brothers walk in, they are only four of them where is the other?

NOVELSGURU.COM

They are all light skinned and they look really handsome.

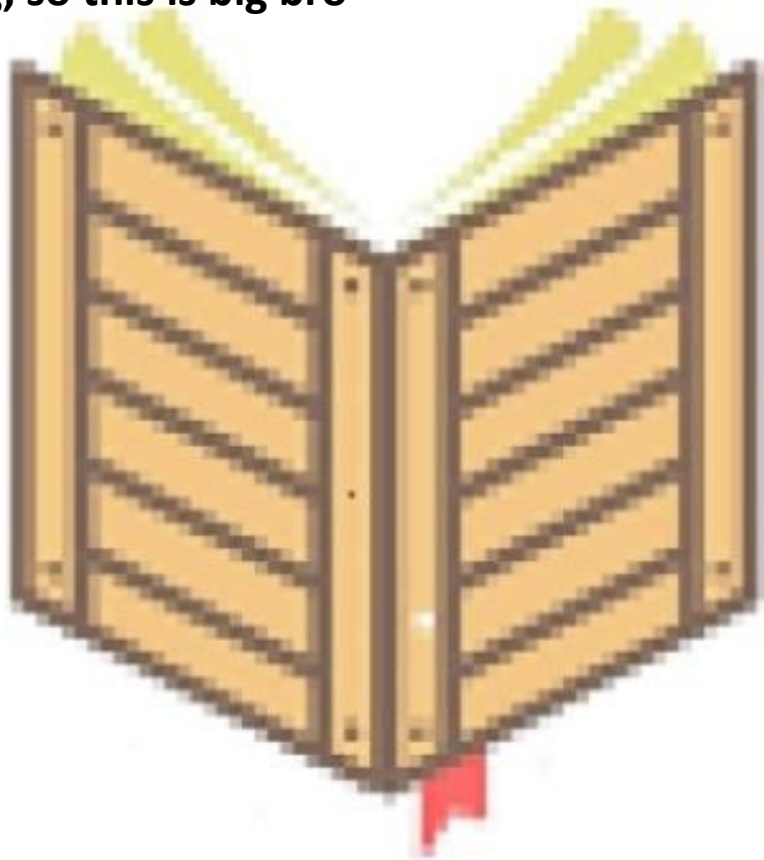
Nkanyezi: yow it's the girl from the village Sya: which girl now?

Nkanyezi: the one whom came to call us Sandile: ohh her, I knew she looked familiar

And I knew I kinda saw him somewhere but my stupid head couldn't remember where exactly.

Ntando: what are y'all talking about?

Zizi: nothing, so this is big bro



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: Kungentando

Zizi: that's the third born... Khwezi: Nkanyezi

Zizi: that's the forth born... Khwezi: Syathokoza

Zizi: and then it's the fifth born... Khwezi: Sandile

They look at me shocked that I know their names, the look on their faces is priceless.

Where is the second born? I forgot his name what was it again?

I was busy basting out my brain try g to remember the second born name out of the brother when this light skinned super freaking hot guys came downstairs.

He is dressed in a white shirt with a black blazer, he had matching black pants and Sneakers on.

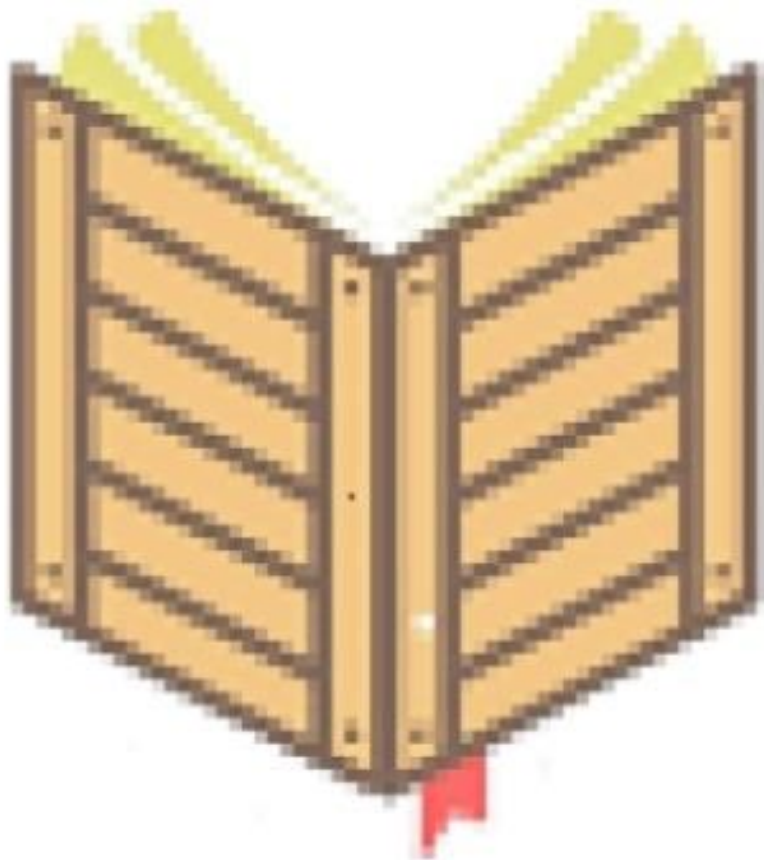
Who looks yummy, I mean handsome.

He got closer to us. NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: and that's Nkosinathi Nkosie: y'all talking about me? Zizi: you wish

She rolls her eyes.

Zizi: well guys this is my friend Khwezi



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: it's nice to meet you guys Nkanyezi: it's nice to meet you

He said the 'you' louder.

Zizi: before y'all think of any stupid business my friend is off limits, don't I mean don't mess with her

He says folding her arms, the guy's just laugh.

Zizi: Mom!!

She went to her mother, a familiar face once again, they hug.

Mrs M: ohh I know you, you the girl I sent to go call the boys for me Khwezi: yes ma'am that's me

Mrs M: you look stunning Khwezi: thank you

Mrs M: y'all stop staring at the poor girl, you gonna make her shy

NOVELSGURU.COM

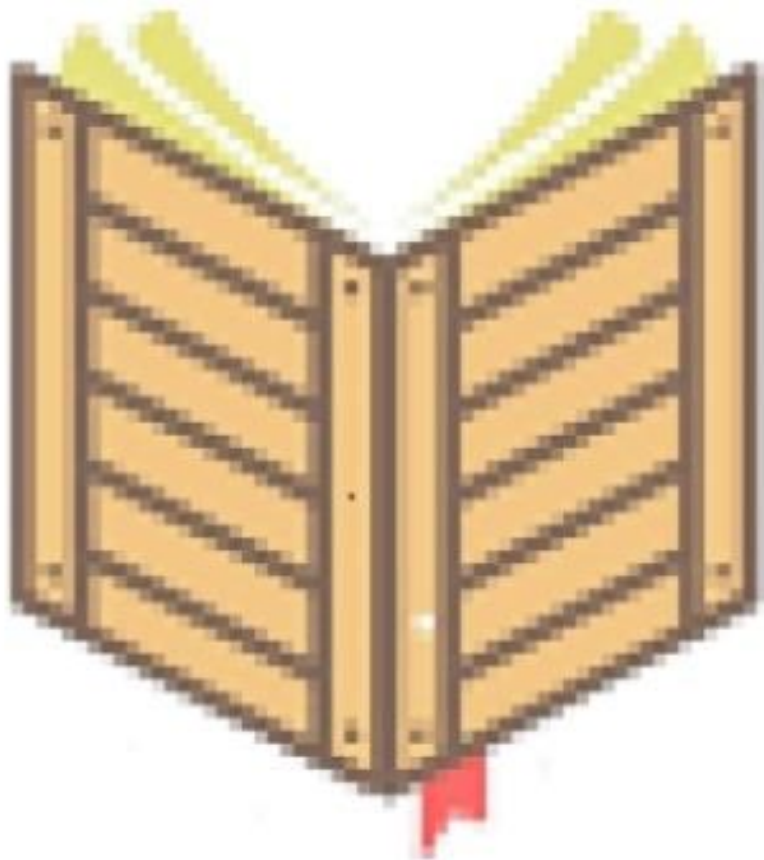
Yeah right they were staring, now i know I shouldn't have worn this dress.

Mrs M: come help me in the kitchen Sandile: can I also help?

Mrs M: don't start with me boy, don't!

The guys laugh, me and Zizi follow her mother to the kitchen.

Mrs M: don't mind the boys and please don't fall for whatever they say to you, my sons are let me just say they aren't that serious



NOVELSGURU.COM

I understood what she meant.

Khwezi: sure I get you

Zizi: great, let's take this to the table

We took some food to the table and everyone came to gather around, this scary looking well his not that scary but his looks are.

He looks a more like Nkosi, now I see where he got those looks from.

Dad: you must be the friend my daughter can't stop talking about

I just smile not know what to say.

We set down having dinner in a light conversation, Amahle kept on giving me weird stares, and I don't like her I never did.

We finished eating and then I helped clearing up the table, the parents went upstairs and we as the kids remains downstairs talking.



NOVELSOURU.COM

I noticed Zizi standing outside taking with Nkosi.

[OUTSIDE]

Nkosie: you still angry at me?

Zizi: what type of question is that? She folds her arms.

Nkosie: I bought you something



NOVELSGURU.COM

He took out a red box which had a necklace inside it.

Zizi: I don't want it

Nkosie: come on lil sis, I'm sorry I didn't mean to talk to you like that, I got a lot of on my plate and it was wrong to take out all my anger and frustration on you

Nkosie and Zizi have this bind which Zizi doesn't have with the other brother, they are really close and they adore each other.

Zizi: I understand but you know you can talk to me about it right?

Nkosie: that's the thing I don't want to talk about it

Zizi: it's fine

Nkosie: so you forgive me?

Zizi: I wasn't even angry with you but yeah, help me wear that necklace now

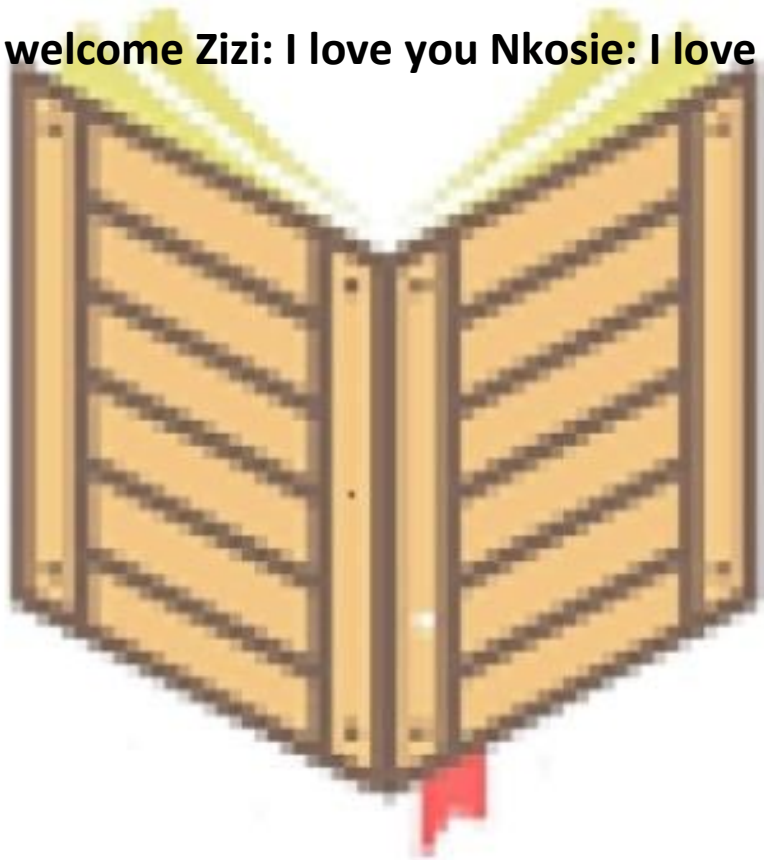


Nkosie chuckles and helped Zizi wear the necklace.

Zizi: thank you bro

She hugs him.

Nkosie: you welcome Zizi: I love you Nkosie: I love me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi pinches him and they both laugh, they head back inside.

They joined the other inside, the brothers were busy Flirting with Khwezi.

Amahle: baby can we leave Ntando: why? We still chilling nje

Amahle: I don't feel good, I just want to leave Ntando: I will call the driver to take you home

Khwezi: so bhuti Ntando you telling me that you can do 50 push ups without getting tired

Amahle: babe?

Ntando: I'm telling you, I can beat these losers as

Amahle stood up and left.

Khwezi: no ways

NOVELSGURU.COM

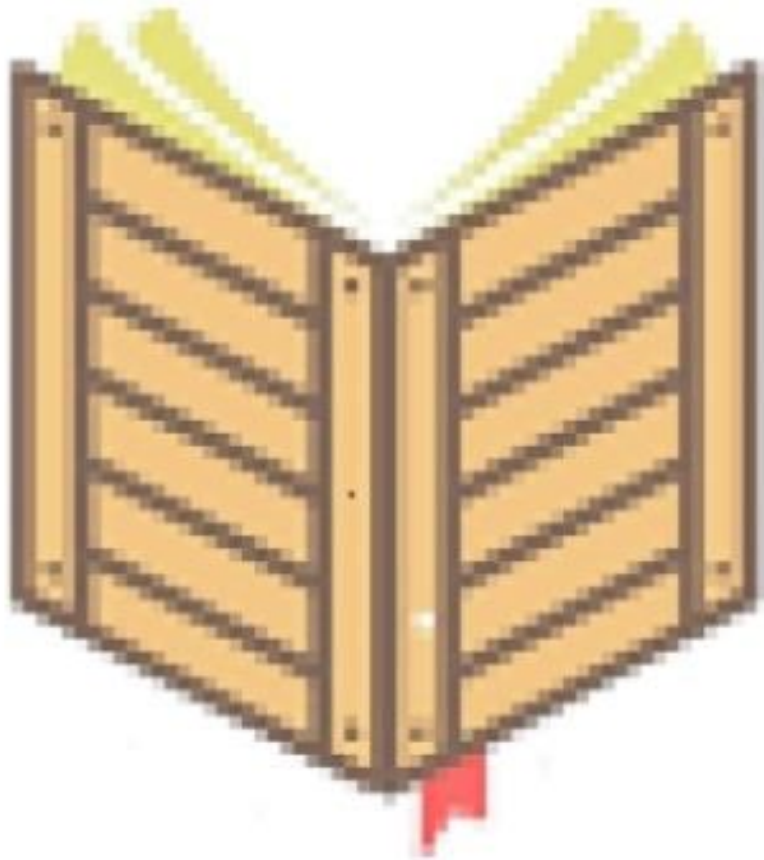
She laughs.

Sandile: but you won't beat Nkosie Ntando: I will, you know me

Nkosie: beat me from what?

He set down opposite Khwezi, who couldn't stop drooling.

Nkanyezi: 50 push ups



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: 50 is a little amount how about 100 Ntando: 100?

Nkosie: what are you scared? Ntando: never, let's do it

Nkosie: I don't really want to embarrass you, plus I don't want to sweat I got a beautiful lady I'm going to meet...

He looks at his watch.

Nkosie: right now, I will see y'all

He stood up.

Khwezi: he wouldn't have done it

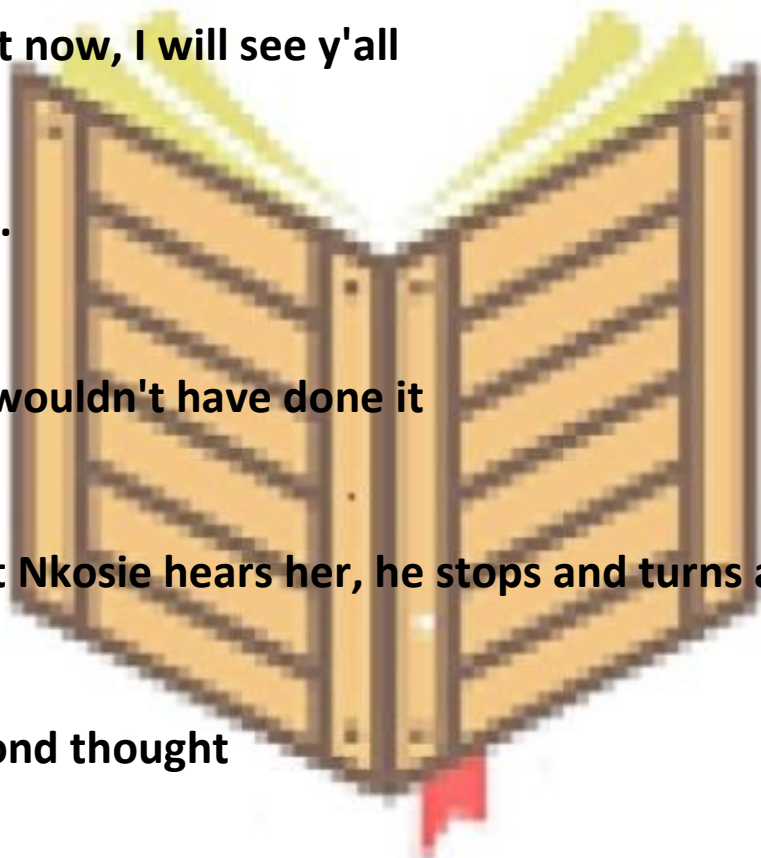
She says but Nkosie hears her, he stops and turns around

Nkosie: second thought

He took off his blazer and unbuttons his shirt at the top, Khwezi panicked thinks he might have heard her which he did.

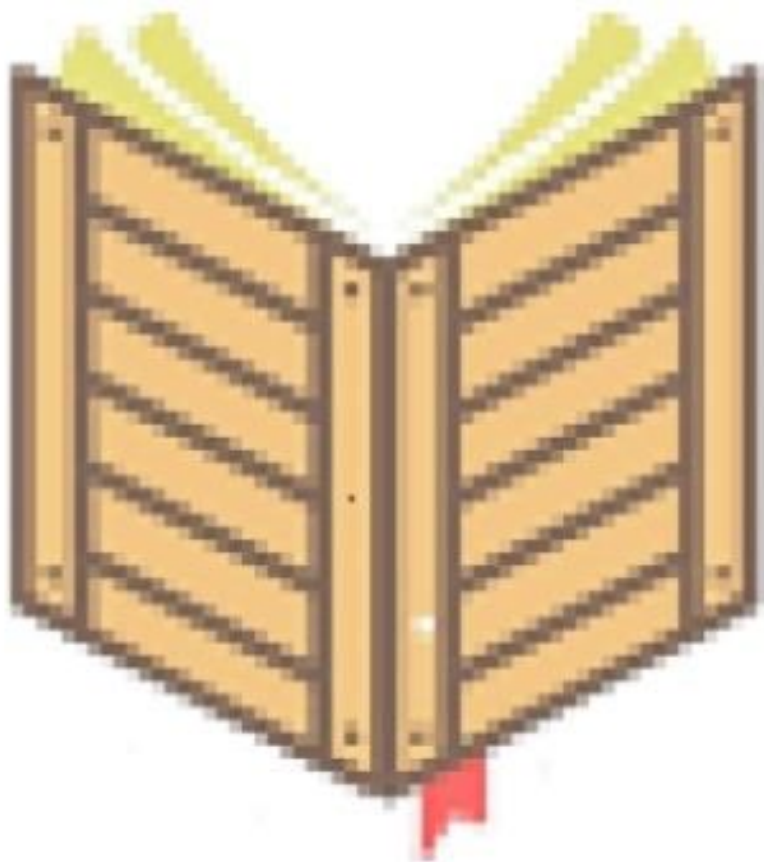
Ntando and Nkosie started to do push ups

Ntando: 87, 88, 89...



He stops and he laid down breathing heavily while sweating.

Nkosie: 99, 100



NOVELSGURU.COM

He got up and fixes himself while looking at Khwezi in the eyes.

Nkosie: next time don't doubt someone

He said looking straight into Khwezi's eyes.

Khwezi: s- sor...

Nkosie: I don't need your apology, gents I'm out

Them: Moja

Khwezi felt like crying.

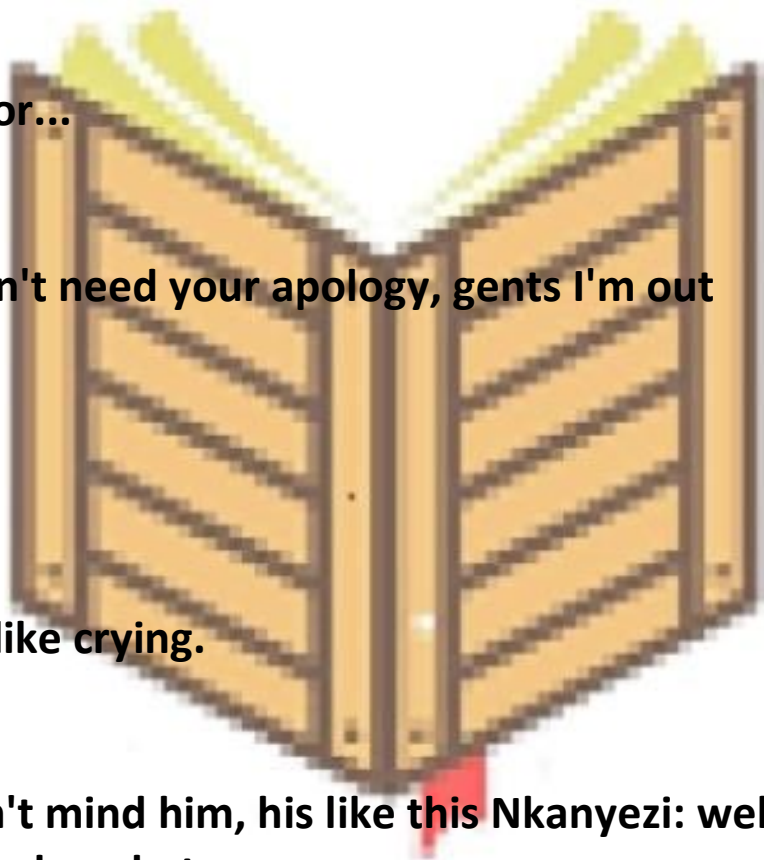
Sandile: don't mind him, his like this Nkanyezi: well you lost big brother Ntando: whatever

NOVELSGURU.COM

He stood up and left.

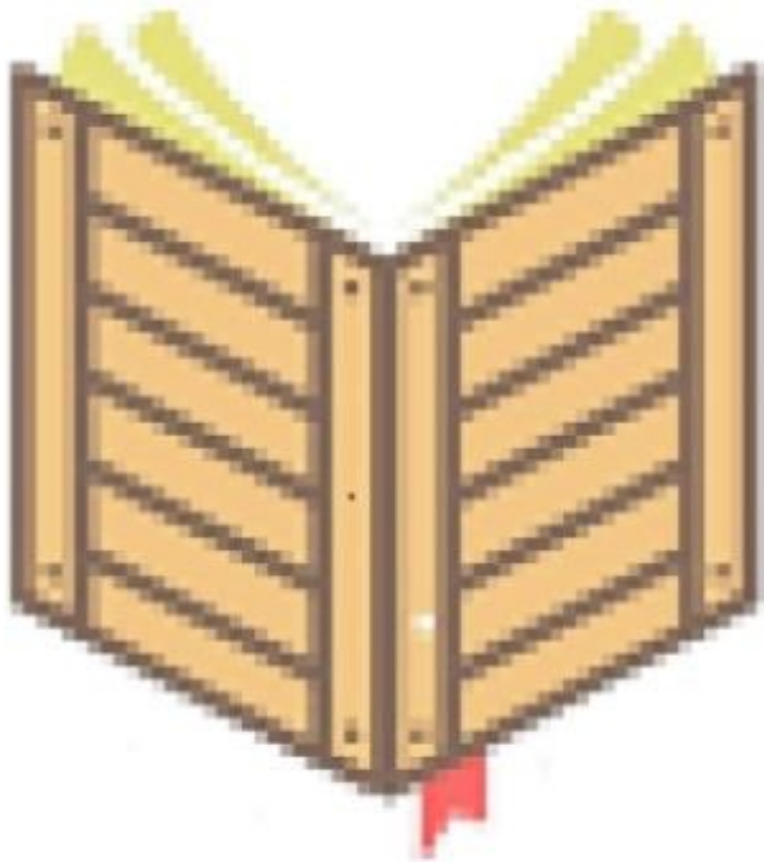
-
-
-

FOREVA YENA



Insert 7

NKOSINATHI.



NOVELSGURU.COM

After having dinner with the lady, which turns out I did not like. I head to my car and my phone rings, it's Amanda.

I connect my phone to the car and I answer.

Nkosie: what do you want?

Amanda: hawu no "baby how are you? Are you okay? How was your day?"

This women is gonna be the death of me.

Nkosie: seriously though what do you want? Amanda: you have been ignoring my calls Nkosie: I'm busy

Amanda: with what? You are always busy Nkosie

Nkosie: so what you want me to do drop all my work and come to you as if you some special human being *chuckles* please

I start my car and I drive back home.

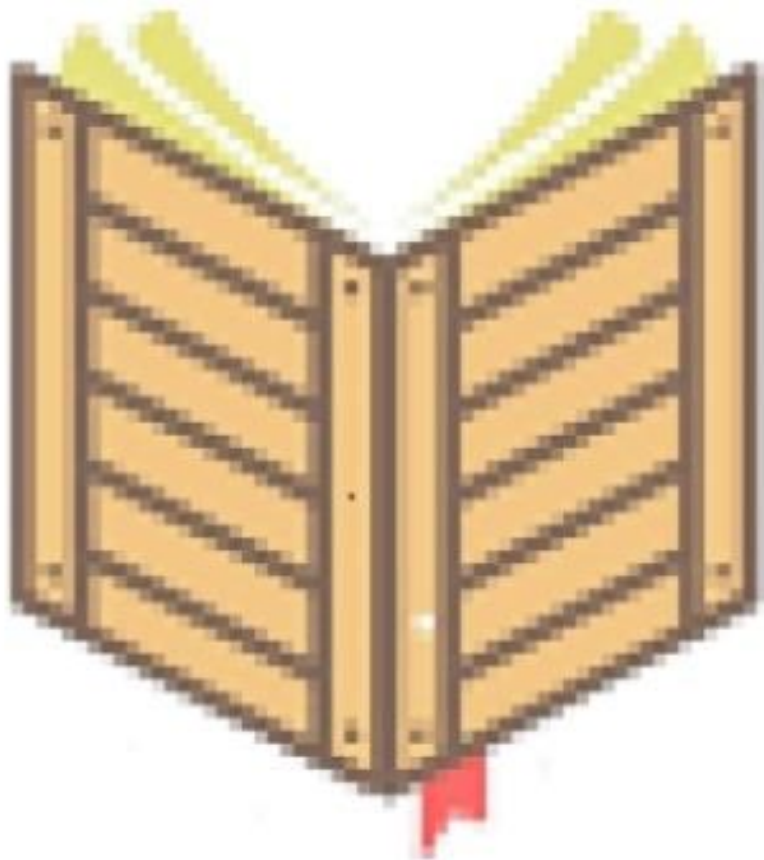
NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: at least come see me Nkosie: why should I come see you? Amanda: I'm you girlfriend you idiot

I drop the call, she called me an idiot and that pissed me off, second she likes calling herself my girlfriend where as she is not.

The gate opens and I drive inside, I park my car inside the garage and I got out.

I locked the car and I went inside, it's dark and very quiet so I turned on the lights.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I went to the kitchen and I took out a bottle of water, I went outside and I took out a cigarette.

I'm not supposed to smoke but I want to, I will do a few puffs then I will throw it away.

As I was about to light the cigarette someone opens the sliding door and I turned to see who it was.

It was Zizi's friend Khwezi, she had a frying pan in her hand, was she going to hit me with that?

Khwezi: ohh sorry...

She says nervously lowering the frying pan, I look at her as if she has gone insane.

Khwezi: I thought someone was breaking in Nkosie: and you were going to hit them with that? Khwezi: kinda, was it a bad idea?

Nkosie: very bad, a bullet is way faster than a frying pan

She laughs a little.



Khwezi: I know it's stupid of me, what are you doing out here at night?

I should be asking her that question

Nkosie: this is my house, I should be asking you that

Khwezi: stupid me, I was feeling thirsty and I...

She's boring me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: no need to explain yourself, just do what you came here to do

I said turning around but she continued to stand there.

Nkosie: anything else I can help you with?

Khwezi: uhm...I'm sorry about last night, I should have said what I said and...

I cut her short, she talks too much.

Nkosie: like I said, do what you came here to do and leave me alone alright?

Her facial expression changes and she fakes a smile then walks away.

Khwezi: you know you don't have to be mean right?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: what the hell is wrong with you? Can't you see I'm trying to chase you away because you annoying as fuck, jeez get out of my face

I half shout and I could see tears in her eyes, she better not cry,

she walks back inside leaving me there.

Nkosie: finally some piece and quite

I set down and I was about to light my cigarette once again but I put it away, I set down on one of the chairs and I looked at the sky.

I took my bottle of water and I drank it, I felt cold so I head up to my room. Nkosie: lock

The door locks and I turn on the lights, I take off my shoes and I walks to the bathroom.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I turn on the light in the bathroom and I switch on the shower water, I unbuttoned my shirt and took out my vest, I took out my pants and I took out my boxers.

I got inside the shower and the warm water felt good on my skin, I close my eyes getting lost in my own thoughts, why me? I ask myself.

Before I could suffocate myself with this over thinking, I turn off the water and I step out of the shower.

I wrap a towel around my lower body and I look at myself in the mirror, I need to blow off some steam, I can't maintain this anger I have, where us it coming from? I don't know.

I went to my room and I took out my phone, I called Amanda.

She answers.

NOVELSGURU.COM

**Amanda: I'm so-
I hate when people apologise.**

Nkosie: get ready for me

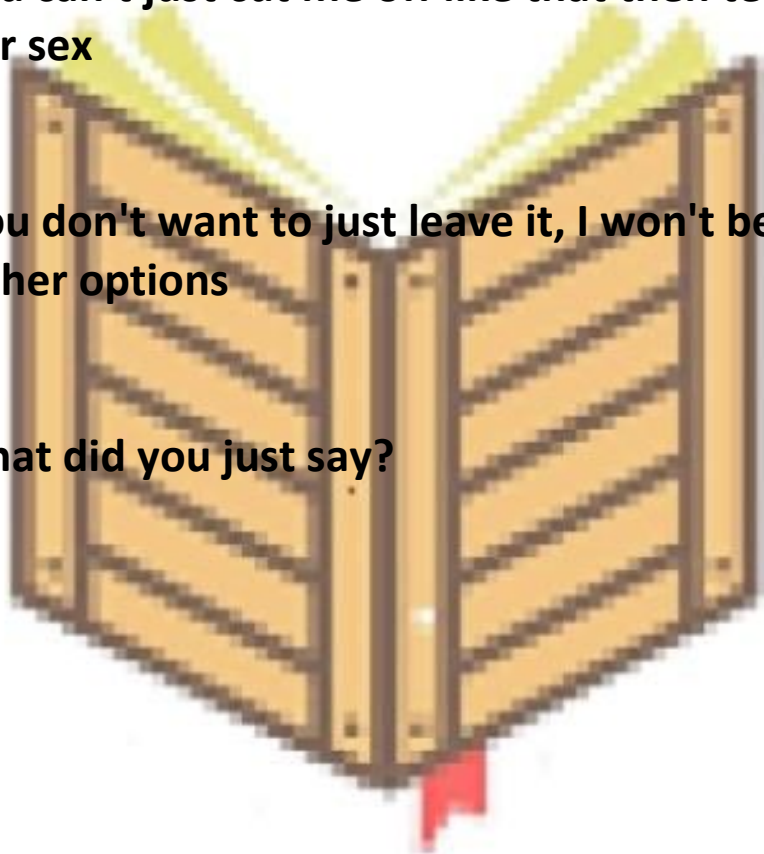
Amanda: what?

Nkosie: I'm not a robot I won't repeat myself

Amanda: you can't just cut me off like that then tell me I should get ready for sex

Nkosie: if you don't want to just leave it, I won't beg you I got a whole lot other options

Amanda: what did you just say?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: that!

I dropped the call, I texted my other girl and she answered. I got dressed and I sprayed cologne on myself, I took my car keys and off I was.

I knock at her door, she answers.

Her: hey daddy

She takes off her coat exposing her beautiful body, I got hard instantly, I smashed my lips on hers, it wasn't a slow kiss but a kissing telling her that I want her.

I lift her up and I close the door using my foot, I threw her in the bed.

I took off my pants and I entered inside her, I fucked her as she moans out loud.

Her: ahhh fuck...yes right there...ahhh...shit

.

.

. KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up in the morning and Zizi was still asleep, I really had hard time sleeping last night, I went to the bathroom.

I wash my face and brushed my teeth, I look at myself in the mirror.

I started to think about the way Nkosie talked to me last night, he was so mean and it looked like I discussed him, why does he hate me? I mean I apologised right?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: he is such a loser

Zizi: who is a loser?

That was supposed to be my thought, I was supposed to say it out loud dammit Khwezi.

Khwezi: the guy I was dreaming about Zizi: ohh you dreaming about guys now

Only if she knew I was talking about her loser of a brother.

Khwezi: don't give me that look, it was just a dream Zizi: if you say so

Khwezi: so when is breakfast served?

Zizi: I don't know but when mom wakes up, she makes the breakfast

Khwezi: mind if I do it?

Not that I wanted to show off, I just want to thank them for inviting me to their dinner.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: I'm sure mom won't mind

Khwezi: great then, let me shower first Zizi: I will shower after you

Khwezi: cool

I turn on the shower and she walks out, I strip naked and I started to bathe.

I finished up and I dried my body, I wore a towel around my body and I headed to the main room.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi places down her phone and goes inside the bathroom.

I lotion my body and I wore a pink dress, I wore my slippers and I went downstairs.

Everyone is not yet awake so let's start with the cooking, I know my way around the kitchen so it won't be a problem.

After spending a minute on trying to turn on the stove I finally did it, I want to make something greasy.

I'm gonna end with the toast, I made cheese omelette, bacon, sausages, eggs and pancakes of course.

I made toast, I would go on but it all looks delicious, Zizi came downstairs when I was done.

Zizi: when you said breakfast I thought you were gonna make porridge Khwezi: what do you take me for Zizi?

She shrugs.

Zizi: but you did very good, I can't wait to taste Khwezi: you will

just help me take this to the table

Zizi: sure friend, you would make a very good wife material

Khwezi: if I decide to get married which I won't

Zizi: you gonna die wena

She helps me take the food to the table, later everyone started to come downstairs.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: it smells good in here, good morning ladies

Zizi: morning Khwezi: morning

Nkanyezi: who made breakfast because mom is not here and I know Zizi wouldn't do all this? Let me dish up

Khwezi: don't you dare!

I said in a warning tone.

Zizi: my best friend did it

Sya: I'm gonna marry her

Sandile: You don't want to start a fight with me

Khwezi and Zizi laugh.



NOVELSGURU.COM

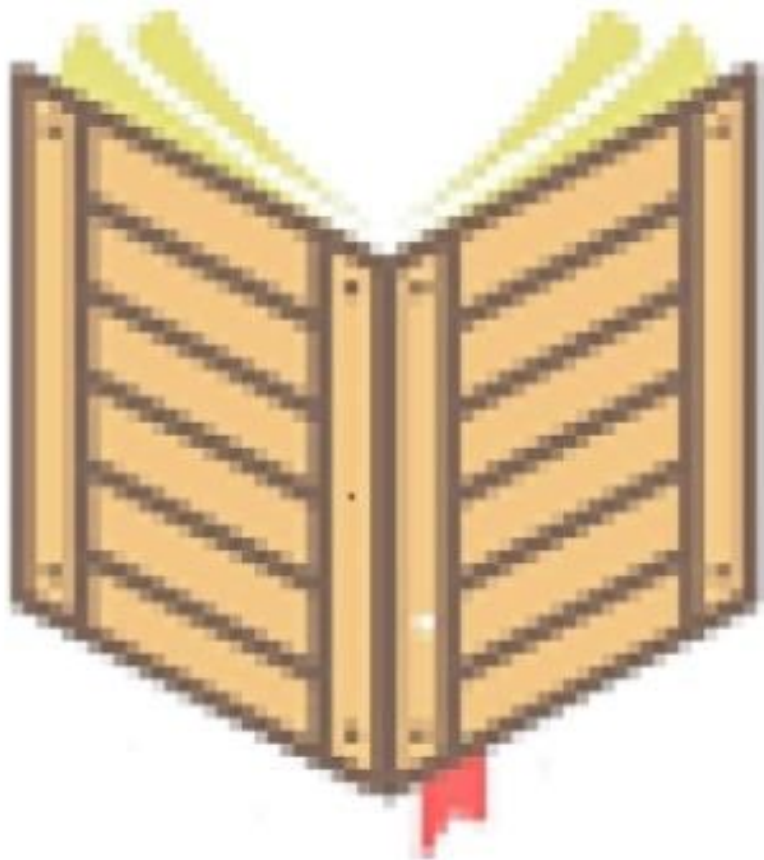
The parents came downstairs, Ntando and Amahle walk in.

Mrs M: who made breakfast? This looks appetizing

She set down so did Mr M.

Khwezi: I did, I just wanted to thank you guys for welcoming me to your beautiful home

Mrs M: you didn't have to baby, thank you Khwezi: it's a pleasure



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mr M: this indeed looks good

Ntando: I think I'm going to join y'all Amahle: but we ate babe

Ntando: hhayi I'm still not full

Mrs M: weehhh maye!

Nkosie came downstairs and I roll my eyes, I liked him when I first met him but now I don't.

Mr M: sit down, Khwezi made us breakfast Nkosie: ohh

He set down, I sat next to Zizi.

We prayed and we ate our breakfast, all you could hear was the forks and knives and of course the dramatic licking of fingers by Sandile.

NOVELSGURU.COM

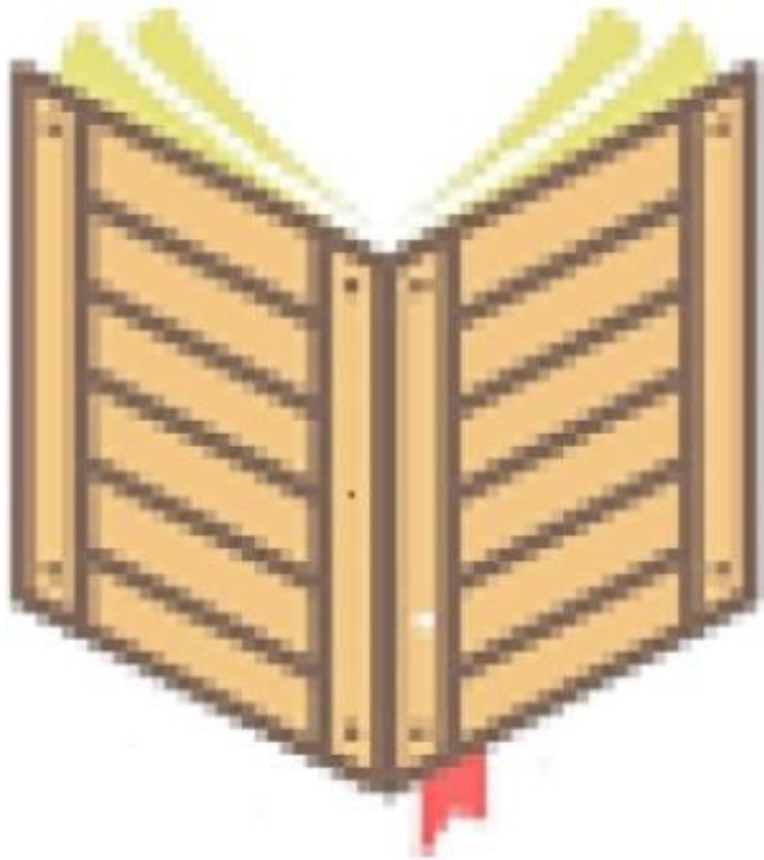
Mrs M: Sandile inesicefe leyonto (what you are doing is annoying)

Ntando: I don't blame him the food is delicious

Amahle: it's ordinary breakfast

Sya: nope it's not, it's just perfect

Nkanyezi: she will marry me this one



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: mama you see, I saw her first

Mrs M: count me out on your drama

Sandile: soxabana ngempela koda Nkanyezi

Nkosie was just silently eating, I knew he wasn't you going to compliment my food.

We finished up and me was standing up to clear up the table and do the dishes.

Mrs M: its okay I will do it Khwezi: no I insist

She smiles and she set back down, I did the dishes and sighed sitting down on the couch next to Zizi.

My phone rings it is Sakhile, I stood up and answered the call.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: good morning butterfly Khwezi: morning, how are you?

Sakhile: good since I got to hear your voice and you? Khwezi: I'm fine

Sakhile: how did you sleep? Khwezi: slept good and you?

Sakhile: same, can I see you I got something for you Khwezi: for me?

Sakhile: yes for you, I'm leaving my house now heading to your place

Khwezi: I'm not there Sakhile: where are you then?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: at my friend's house

Sakhile: so why you saying you not there?

Khwezi: I mean I'm at her family house, as in like her home home

Sakhile laughs.

Khwezi: what's funny?

Sakhile: the way you explaining it Khwezi: kanje wena awuzwa

Sakhile: but princess, you got to find a way to get here I miss you and I want to see your beautiful face Khwezi: I'm on my way then

Sakhile: great i will wait for you Khwezi: sure

He hung up, I went back to the living room.

Zizi: I wonder who that was in the phone

She wiggled her eye brows.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I need to head back Zizi: what why?

Khwezi: I'm meeting with someone and his already on his way

Zizi: such a shame the driver is not yet here

Khwezi: shit!

Zizi: wait, Bhuti Nkosie...

Khwezi: no don't, I will take a taxi

Zizi: a taxi? You crazy you want to get mugged?

Nkosie: yah sisiza

He said focused on his phone.

Zizi: relax

She said looking at me, I set down and folded my arms.

Zizi: can you please take my friend back to our apartment

Nkosie: can't the driver take her there?

Zizi: you know he doesn't arrive at this time, please bhuti

She does the puppy eyes.

Nkosie: okay fine I will take her

NOVELSGURU.COM

He switches off his phone and looks at me before looking at Zizi.

Zizi: you the best

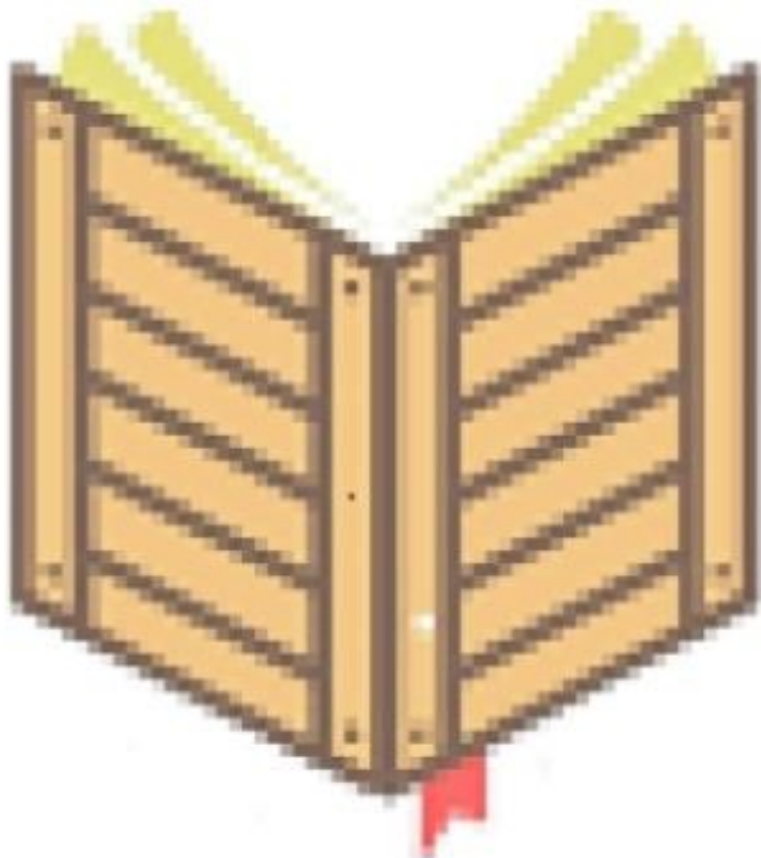
Nkosie: whatever, let's go Khwezi: let me fetch my beg

Nkosie: you still got to fetch your beg? Zizi: don't be mean

Nkosie: it's just a question

I went upstairs and took my beg, I came back down and he was waiting for me.

Zizi: I will meet you in class



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: love you Zizi: love you too

Sandile: I also love you Nkanyezi: me too

Sya: don't forget me

Ntando: eyy xeganii ingane nina (leave the cold alone)

I giggle while heading out, he got inside a black BMW and I also got in.

He started the car and we drove off, he plays some music and he jams to it while tapping the steering wheel.

I steal a glance at him and he really looks Fyn.

Nkosie: stop staring

He said with his eyes focused on the road, I did just that, I stopped staring.

NOVELSGURU.COM

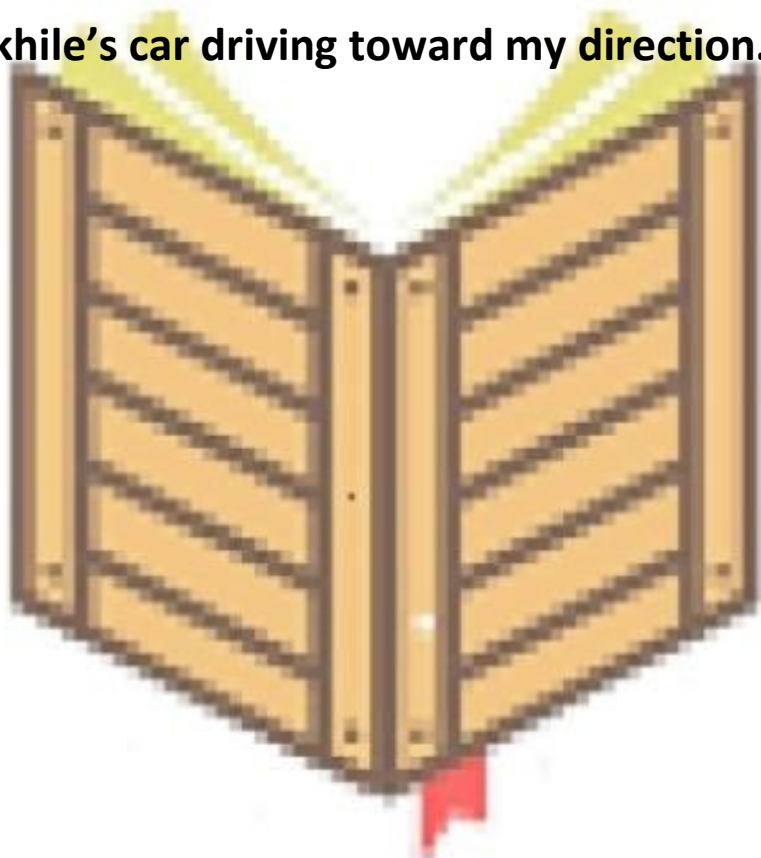
Nkosie: look I'm sorry for the way I talked to you

He looks at me.

Khwezi: focus on the road you gonna cause an accident, plus I don't need your apology

He parks right outside the apartment and I got off, I heard him chuckle before slamming the door shut.

I noticed Sakhile's car driving toward my direction. Nkosie drives off.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile pulls over and he got out.

Sakhile: who was that dropping you off?

**Khwezi: my friend's driver, you look good in a suit Sakhile:
thank you and you look beautiful**

I smile.

Khwezi: so you bought me something? Sakhile: yeah

He took out some red roses and some Ferrero Roche.

Khwezi: you bought this for me? Sakhile: yes I did

Khwezi: thank you

**I gave him a hug, I pulled out and I looked at him in the eyes
the next thing we are kissing, he has his hand on my waist
pulling me closer to him.**

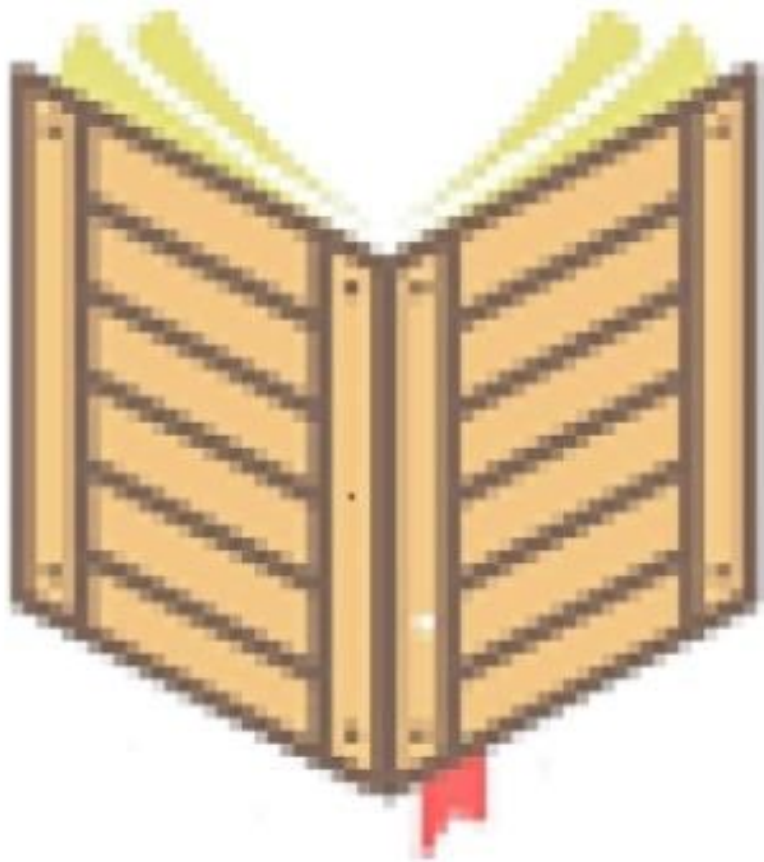
NOVELSGURU.COM

After a few minutes I pull out, biting my lower lip.

Sakhile: you gonna do me like that princess?

**Khwezi: don't call me a princess, you make it sound like I'm a
child**

Sakhile: I love you Khwezi and I want to give this a try, just give me the chance to show you how much I love you



NOVELSGURU.COM

He looks at me in the eyes, I found myself nodding, he kisses me and this time he is the one to pull out.

Sakhile: great so I can take you out on a date Khwezi: yes
Sakhile: tonight then Khwezi: tonight it is

I giggle.

He kisses me once again, he drives off and I got inside the apartment.

I started eating my chocolate and I called my mother, I got ready for class and the driver came to pick me up.

.
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 8

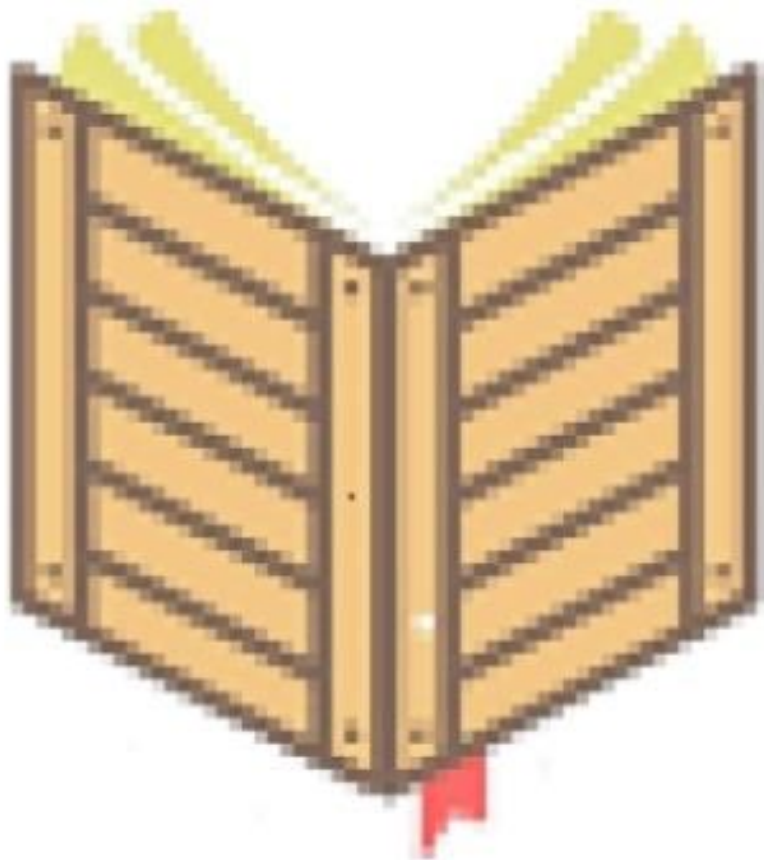
NOVELSGURU.COM

KHWEZILOKUSA.

We just finished without last class and boy we are so exhausted, I told Zizi about my new relationship and she is happy for me.

We are on our way home and I need to get ready for my date though it's still early.

"I can't wait to see you butterfly" he texts me and I smile.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I just text with a heart emoji and I switch of my phone, the car stops a d we got out.

We went inside and we started to do some of our school work, we took a break and we ate some food.

Zizi: it's time to get you ready Khwezi: so soon, I'm nervous
Zizi: don't be baby, it's gonna be fine Khwezi: let's home so

I got up and Zizi picked my outfit, I got dressed into a white knee dress, I wore black heels, I set down and Zizi did my make-up.

Zizi: girl you look so fucking
Khwezi: thank you and thank you for the make up Zizi: you welcome now let's take some pictures

She took her phone and we took some pictures, I can't even count how many pictures we took but we kept on going till my phone ringed.

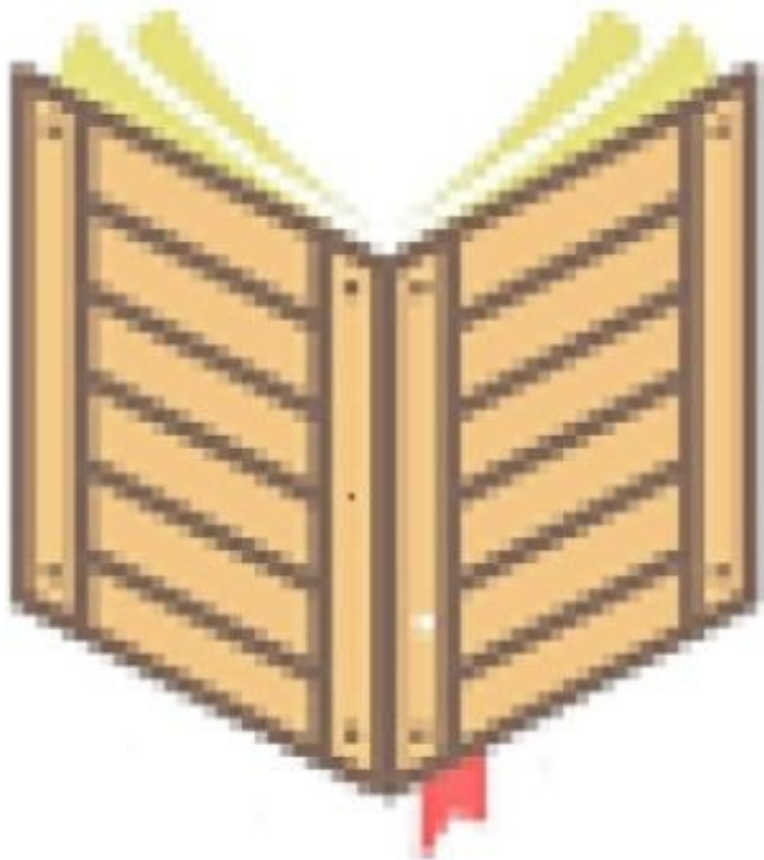
NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: have fun

She kisses my cheek and walks out, I shake my head and I answer my phone.

Khwezi: yes Sakhile: I'm outside
Khwezi: okay I'm on my way

I hung up, I looked at myself in the mirror for the last time and I headed out.



NOVELSGURU.COM

It was dark, he was leaning on his car and he smiles when I stood in front of him.

Sakhile: you look beautiful Khwezi: thank you

He pulls me closer to him and he gives me a kiss, we both pull out from the kiss and he opens the door for me.

He jogs to his side and he looks at me with a smile on his face, he starts the car and he drove to this fancy restaurant.

We got inside and the place was packed with rich people, a guy came to us.

**Him: your table is done and ready for you sir Sakhile: thank you, shall we my lady
Khwezi: of course**

He held my hand and we walked to the table, we set down.

NOVELSGURU.COM

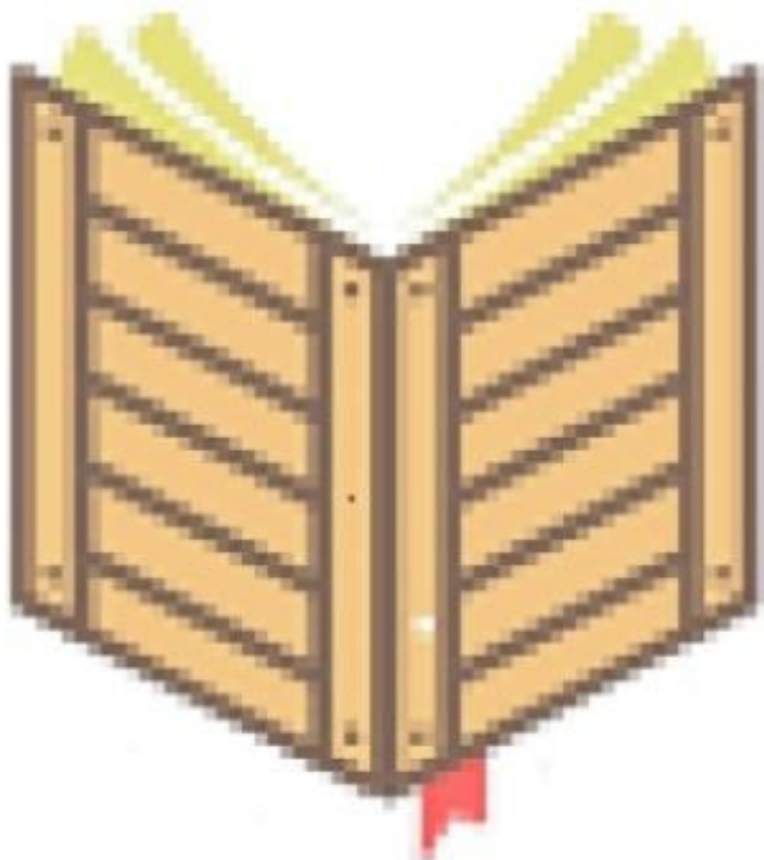
Sakhile: so what do you think? Khwezi: about what?

Sakhile: the restaurant Khwezi: it's nice

Sakhile: nice? Baby this is the famous and expensive restaurant, you can't just call it nice

Khwezi: its beautiful then

Sakhile: that's the word, let's order Khwezi: sure



NOVELSGURU.COM

We ordered our food and it arrived.

Sakhile: so tell me how is varsity?

Khwezi: it's good though it's kinda exhausting Sakhile: mmm I see and what course did you pick? Khwezi: law

Sakhile: you want to be a lawyer?

Khwezi: yes I really love helping people and...

Sakhile: being a lawyer doesn't pay you a lot of money

Khwezi: it's not about money here it's about me doing something i love Sakhile: but still

He laughs a little, okay he is spoiling this whole thing.

Khwezi: why are you being such an ass?

Sakhile: an ass? Nah I'm just trying g to get to know you

Khwezi: nah you not you being an ass over the whole thing

Sakhile: sorry for trying to get to know you

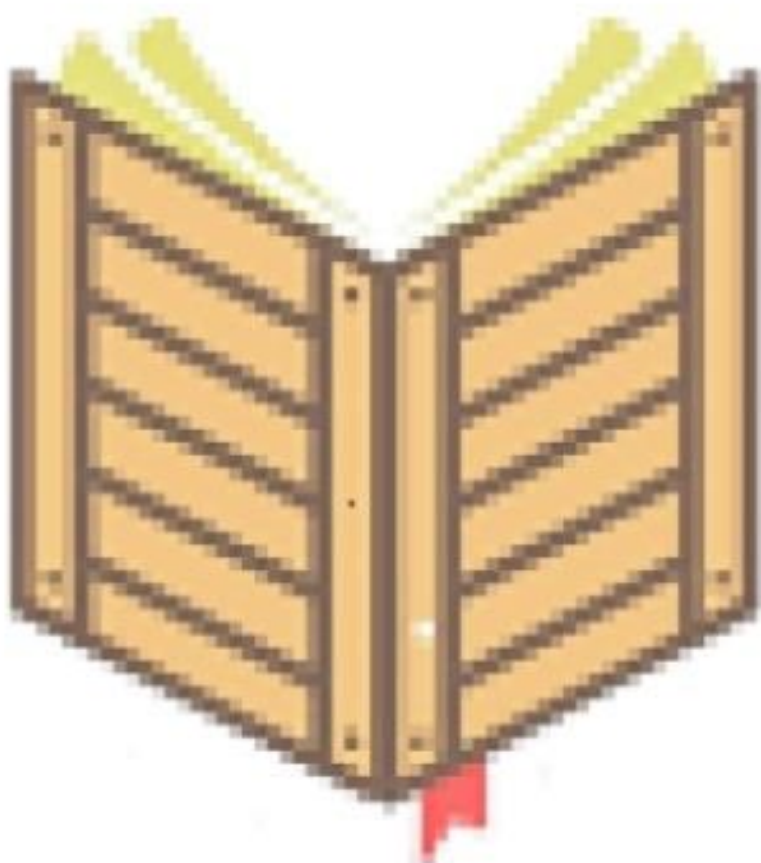
Khwezi: *sighs* just stop making everything I say sound negative

Sakhile: I'm not Khwezi: dude you are Sakhile: I'm sorry

Khwezi: it's fine, so what do you do? I mean your business?

Sakhile: it's nothing that fun

Khwezi: come on I want to know



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: I'm an IT guy and I have hired a lot of other guys to come work for me, it's still a small business but it's cool

Khwezi: an IT that sound dope, so you deal with all those technical stuff?

Sakhile: yes and it's cool, I will show you when I get the time

Khwezi: great

We continued to eat in a light conversation, he ate our dessert and I asked him to take me to the beach.

He park the car and I take off my shoes, I held them and we walk in the beach.

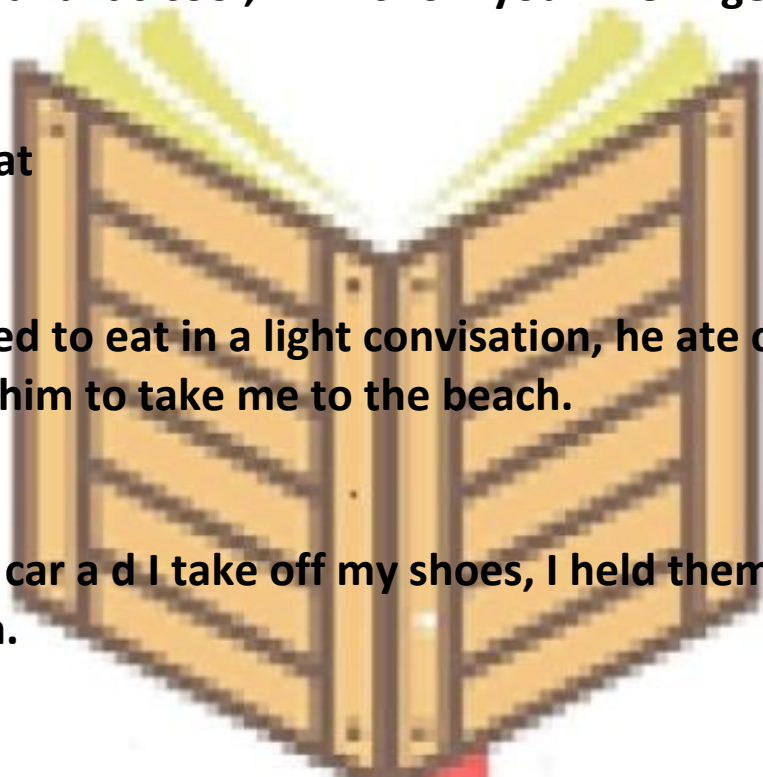
Sakhile: so why did you want to come here?

Khwezi: I just wanted to see the beach and the fresh air Sakhile:

mmmh I see, so what's your favourite colour? Khwezi: black? I don't know really

Sakhile: black is so plain

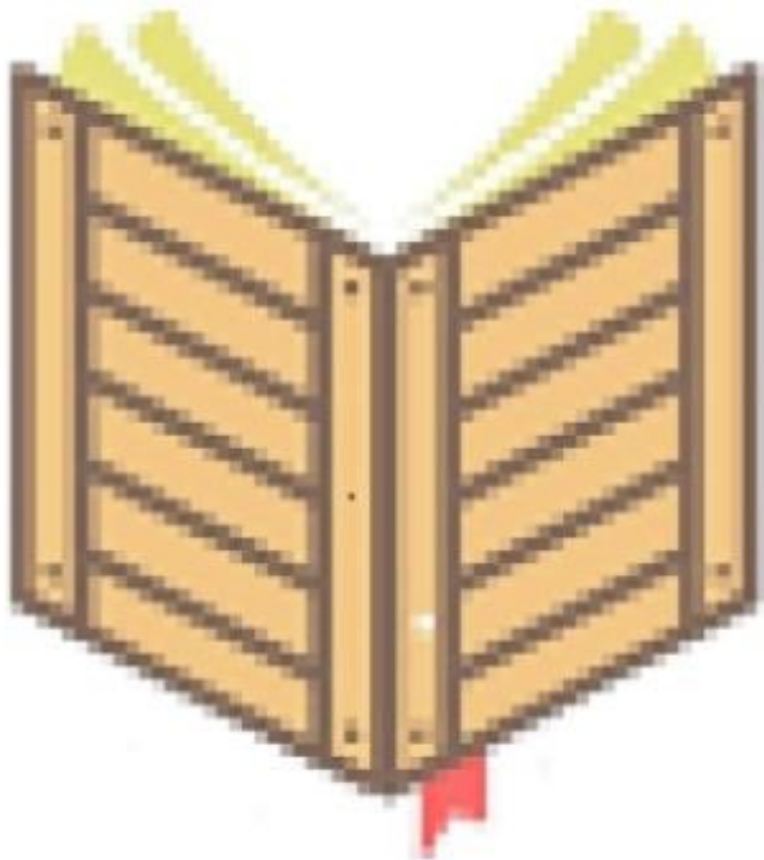
Khwezi: but it is beautiful



Sakhile: yeah maybe

I sigh.

Khwezi: I'm tired can you take me home Sakhile: sure



NOVELSGURU.COM

We walk back to the car and he drove me home, he was holding my hand while driving which was cute.

He parks his car outside the apartment gate.

Sakhile: we are here

Khwezi: thought we weren't gonna arrive

He laughs.

Sakhile: I guess this is good night

Khwezi: yeah I had a great night thank you Sakhile: you welcome babe

He got closer and he cups my face, we look into each other's eyes and I bite my lower lip, he takes my lips into his and I close my eyes.

We had a slow passionate kiss, things got intense and he places his hand on my thigh, he brushes my thigh and continues to kiss me.

His hand moved further inside under my dress and I stop him pulling away from the kiss.

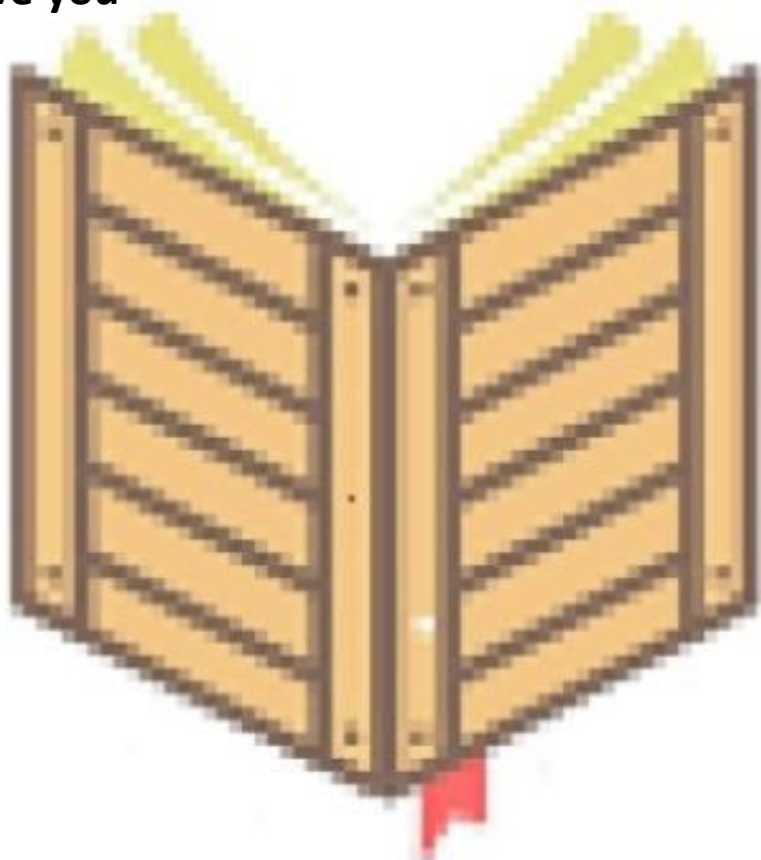


Khwezi: we can't

Sakhile: why not? I mean we both in a relationship and love each other

Khwezi: and I'm not ready to have sex with you Sakhile: okay fine, I will wait till you ready then Khwezi: thank you, good night

Sakhile: I love you



NOVELSGURU.COM

I kiss his lips and got out.

Sakhile: are you not you going to say it back? Khwezi: I love you too, happy? Goodnight

I close the door and I went inside the gate, I walk inside the apartment and Zizi was there waiting for me.

Zizi: how was it?

Khwezi: it was fun, I had a lot of fun and he is just amazing

That was a huge lie.

Zizi: I'm happy if you happy

Khwezi: great, I'm tired and I need some sleep Zizi: good night

Khwezi: night

I went to my room, I threw myself on the bed.

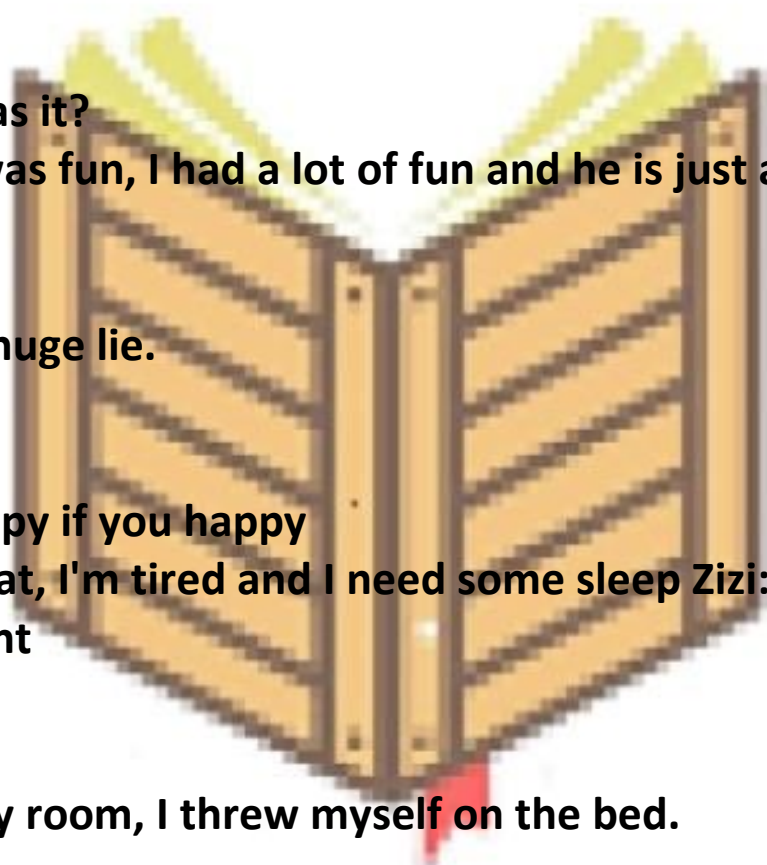
.

.

.

FOREVA YENA

Insert 9



NOVELSGURU.COM

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up in the morning and I went to wash my face and brush my teeth, I went out.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi was in the kitchen having a cup of coffee with her brother Sandile.

Sandile: look who decided to wake up

I'm embarrassed.

Zizi: girl you sleep all you want, don't mind this one

I smile.

Khwezi: hey Sandile Sandile: hey, how are you? Khwezi: I'm okay and you?

Sandile: I'm good though I'm a little bit tired Khwezi: sorry for you

I poured myself some coffee from the coffee machine.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: so we will be hitting the club tonight want to join?

Khwezi: the club? Nope I'm fine I would rather stay in bed then to go to that place

Sandile: what's wrong with that place?

**Khwezi: nothing is wrong with it but I don't like it Sandile:
maybe you don't like your village type of club...**

I laugh.

Khwezi: there's no club at the village



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: you lying?

Zizi: how do those people survive? Khwezi: there's a Tavern

Sandile: as long we drink and get drunk Zizi: amen

Khwezi: what have you done to my best friend? Zizi: she's right here, come on K it's a Saturday

Khwezi: so?

Sandile: it's time to party Khwezi: I don't party

Sandile: just this once pumpkin Khwezi: Yohh fine I will go with y'all

Zizi: I can't wait!! Ohh my god

She screams.

I made breakfast for the three of us and we ate, Sandile left and then we set watching TV and eating a lot of food.

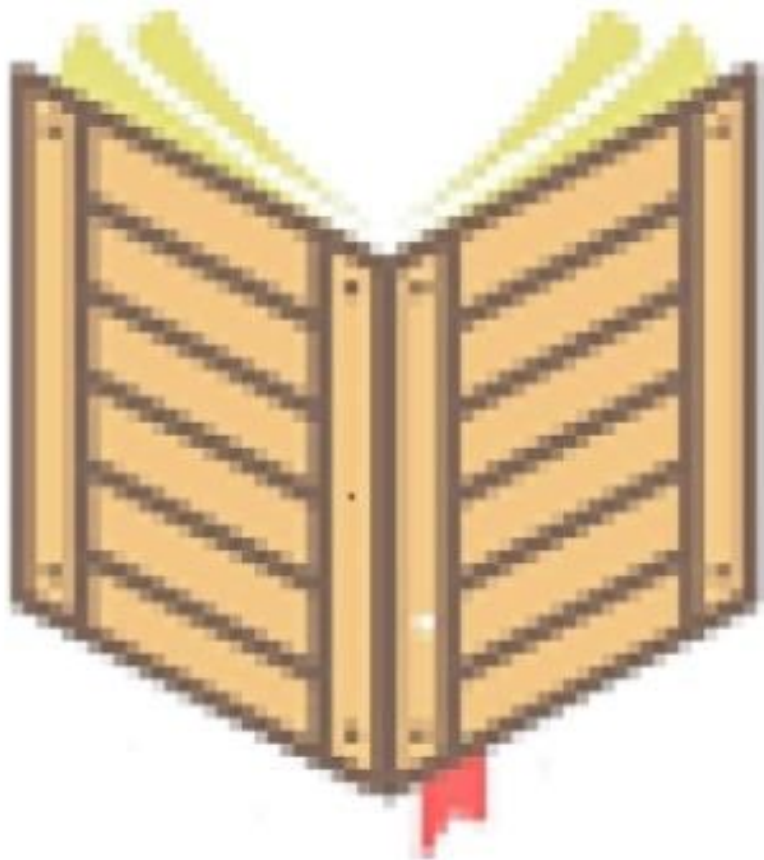
It got late and I was so not excited about this clubbing thingy, yes I am going to have fun but hhayi.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I got dressed into a black short dress, it wasn't that short though, I wore black heels, I did my hair and I looked really good.

Zizi walks in wearing the worlds most shortest dress, but she

looks good and her body is banging.



NOVELSGURU.COM

We look at ourselves in the mirror and we did a couple of poses, we headed out and the driver drove us to the club where we will be meeting the rest of the guys.

We arrived and as soon as we got out of the car, the brother started to make those stupid sound boys make when they see beautiful huns.

Khwezi: your brothers are weird

Zizi: nah baby they like what they see

She says looking at me and giggling, I also ended up giggling with her crazy ass.

Ntando was with his Wife and Zizi walked with Nkanyezi and Sandile, I walked in with Syathokoza.

The place was loud and people were all over the place dancing.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: did I just see a stripper?

I ask passing this girl who was busy dancing in a pole.

Sya: yep that's a stripper and I'm defiantly getting some of that

tonight

I laugh.

We passed the place where everyone was seated and having drinks.

Khwezi: where are we going kanti? Sya: the VIP section

He whispers to my ear, I have never been to a VIP section before, we arrive and we took our sits.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: let's order something to drink

She called the waiter by whistling, what happened to my best friend.

The waiter came to us.

Zizi: get us something strong and a few bottles of water

Waiter: whose gonna pay?

Nkosie: that's none of your business just take the order

He says walking in with this girl who was dressed in a short skirt and had a bikini top, she wore a leather jacket.

Khwezi: who's that? I whisper to Zizi.

Zizi: ohh that's my brothers 'girlfriend' Khwezi: ohh

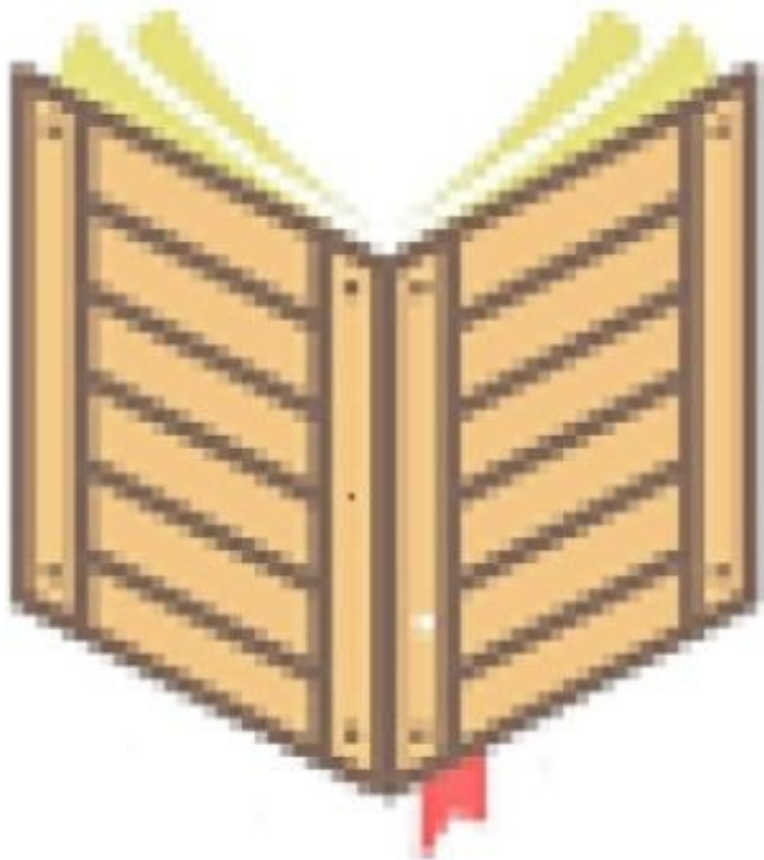
She really looks beautiful and her wig looks nice, the drinks came and we started having them, Sandile ordered some shots and we all gulps them down.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: ohh my god I need to dance, baby let's go dance

She took Nkosie's hand and they went to the dance floor and started to dance, they had their hands all over each other.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Then work by Rihanna ft drake played, that's my favourite song and I pretty much do know how to dance.

I got up.

Khwezi: I love this song, let's go girl

I took Zizi's hand and we both scream going to the dance floor, I think the alcohol is stark g to kick in cause God the things I was doing.

The room got dark and I felt someone's hand around my waist, I leaned over as I slowly move my waist and shaking my ass a little.

The song stops and I turn only to see Nkosie behind me, the way I wanted to jump and leave him there but the alcohol inside me said otherwise.

NOVELSGURU.COM

He looked drunk.

Then Mnike by Tyler ICU played.

Khwezi: hawemahhh!!

I said as I sang when that 'haike haike' part came, everyone in the room was screaming and shouting out the lyrics.

Zizi: sazo phila, nika nika

She sang along with me, yohh this night I will never forget.

Where did Nkosie disappear to?



NOVELSGURU.COM

We went back to sit down.

Nkanyezi: I did not know you could dance like that

He says looking at me, Nkosie walks in and he sits down.

Khwezi: I'm hungry, is anybody else hungry? God I need to pee

I shout.

Ntando: it's late, we need to head home Sandile: yeah mom will kill us

Zizi accompanied me to the toilet, I did my business and I flushed.

Amanda walks in.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: get your hands off my man

She points at me.

Khwezi: hayboh sisi, who are you?

Damn I'm drunk.

Amanda: the girl who will beat your ass up if you don't stay away from her man

Zizi: which man cause last time I checked...mxm let me keep quite because I will make you cry



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: uyabeda lona

**We click our tongue and walk out, the guys are already out waiting for us. Ntando: Nkosie you drive with Khwezi
Khwezi: why do I have to go with his mean ass?**

Nkosie just looks at me and says nothing, we listened to what Bhuhi Ntando said and we got inside the car.

The drive to the house was silent.

**Khwezi: don't kill us Nkosie: I'm not careless
Khwezi: mxm, I need some music**

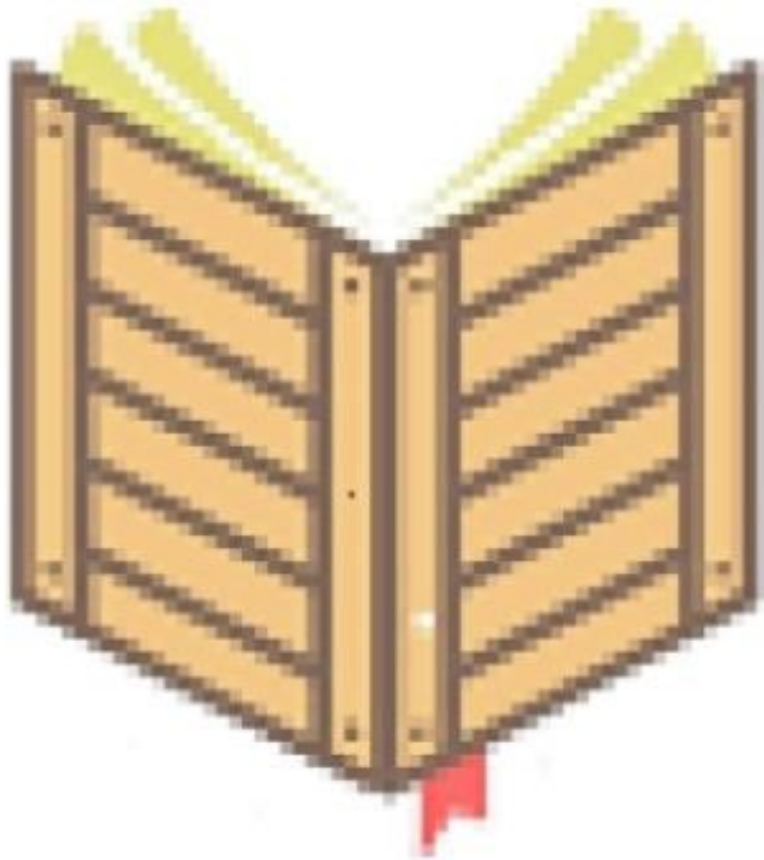
I turn on the music and he phone was connected, romantic songs were playing so I switched it off.

It seemed like we arrived early then everyone else, I took off my heels and Nkosie followed as I walk up the stairs.

I got inside the room and threw myself on the bed, I raised my head and Nkosie was waking inside.

**Khwezi: where do you think you going? Nkosie: this is my room
Khwezi: your room?**

I said looking around, shit I might have forgotten Zizi's room.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I'm so lazy to get up

I say, I got up anyway I can't be in the same room as him.

I picked up my heels and I walk to the door, he looks at me and I look at him, I love at his lips and I bite mine.

I want to kiss him, I wrap my hands around his neck and I smash my lips into his, he doesn't respond so I pull out from the kiss.

Khwezi: sorry Nkosie: lock Khwezi: what?

The room door closes, he lifts me up and he carries me to the bed while he had his lips on mine.

He gently unzips my dress and he lays me down on the bed, he kisses me then he goes down to my neck.

NOVELSGURU.COM

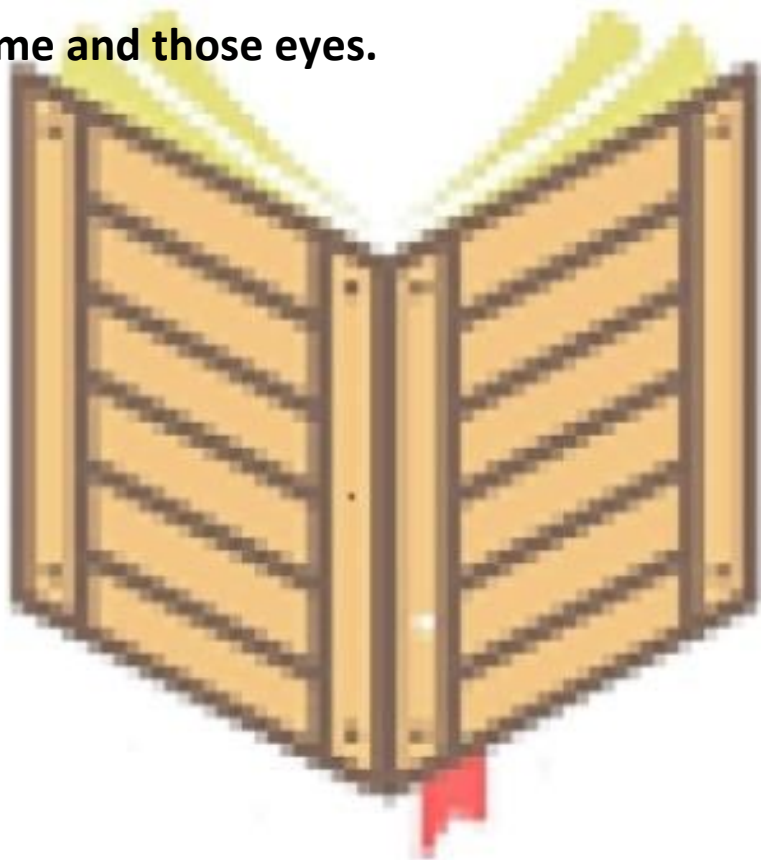
My breathing changes and I let out a moan, the next thing my dress was off my body and I was left with a bra and panty.

He looks at my body and he bites his lower lip before come to my lips, he devours the shit out of my lips and he helps me take off my bra.

He sucks my boobs and I bite my lower lip, I help him take off his shirt and God he looks good without his shirt.

Khwezi: wait stop

He looks at me and those eyes.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: yah?

Khwezi: I'm a virgin

Nkosie: I will be gentle I promise

He don't even ask if I want to, he kisses me on the lips.

His warm lips traced all over my body, leaving wet kisses everywhere, I gasps some air when he reached my thighs.

He took off my panty and he opens my legs a little.

Nkosie: damn you so wet

He says and he kisses my thighs, I felt his tongue on my nana and I bite my lower lip, he grabs my thighs and he sucks out all my juices.

Khwezi: ahhh mmm

NOVELSGURU.COM

I let out a moan and he presses on my clit, I felt the pleasure as he continued to feed on me as I let out moans.

He presses on my clit and then I let it all out, what was that? He came back up to my face and he kisses me, I could taste myself.

He unzips his pants and he shaft springs out, he rubs him right on my entrance.

Khwezi: fuck!

I curse as the feeling felt really good.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: ngzofaka kancane yezwa? I nod.

I entered him inside me and I felt some pain.

Khwezi: ahhh

I scream in pain as he pushes until he was inside, a tear escapes my eye, he looks at me in the eyes as he slowly thrust inside me.

The pains started to fade away and pleasure kicked in, I grab on tight to him as he increased the phase, I moan.

Khwezi: ahhh...*bites lower lip*

He increases the phase and he groan.

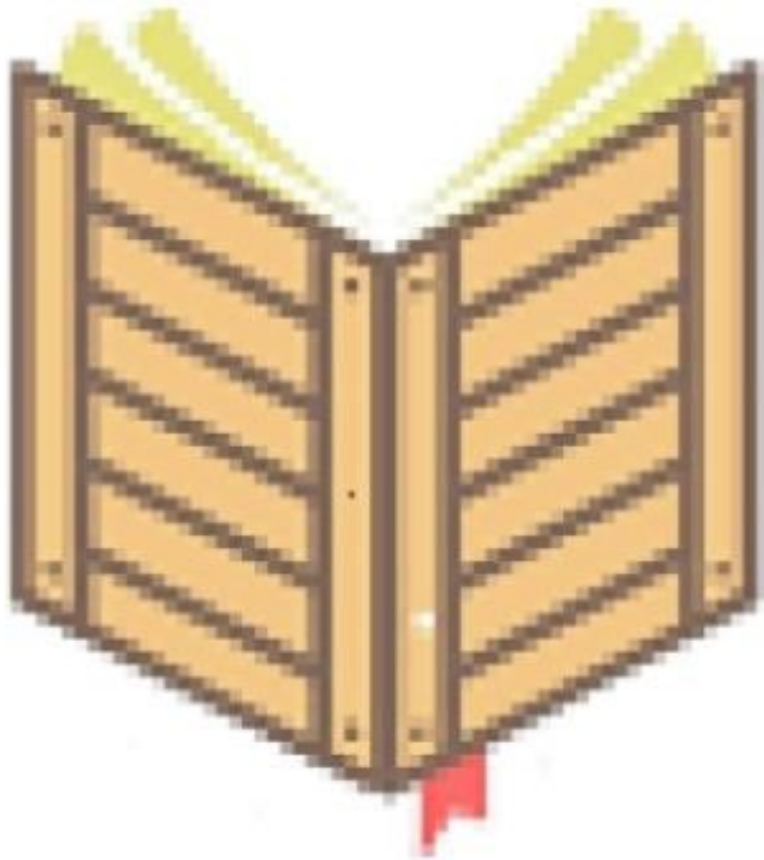
Khwezi: Nkosie...ahhh Nkosie: yes baby?

He says as he looks into my eyes giving it to me real good.

Khwezi: don't stop...ahhhhhhhh shit

I felt this argue to pee, I felt the pressure as I push his off me but he grab both my hands, he held them up my head as he continued to strut in me.

Khwezi: God!!



NOVELSGURU.COM

I say as liquid comes out of my nana, he groans, he flips me over and he told me to bend over, I did just that and he rubs himself on my entrance.

I found myself volunteering and I opened my legs for him, he enters me from behind and I felt my walls expand as they welcome him once again.

Khwezi: ahhh ahhh ahhh

He did not have mercy this time, I was screaming his name as he went in a very fast phase making me to release some juices every now and then.

He groans and smacks my ass, ohh Lord forgive me for crying for dick like this.

**.
. .
.**

FOREVA YENA

NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 10

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up with a banging headache, my body hurt was I dancing all night? I open my eyes and set up straight.

Why am I naked? I then remembered what happened last night.

Khwezi: ohh my God!

I say covering my eyes, Nkosie is not even in bad, what was I thinking.



NOVELSGURU.COM

The door swung open and mad Amanda walks in shouting.

Amanda: what are you doing in my boyfriend's room? Khwezi: stop shouting damn it

Amanda: don't talk to me like that, tell me what are you doing in Nkosie's room naked? Khwezi: I was...uhm

Nkosie walks in, he's wearing his vest and boxer, he didn't even look at me.

Nkosie: Amanda you making noise

Amanda: me making noise, tell me what's going on here

Nkosie: I don't owe you any explanation

Amanda: ohh you do Mr Nkosie: fucking leave my room

Amanda: I'm not going anywhere till you tell me what's going on

Nkosie: she was drunk and she could walk to her room so I allowed her to sleep in my room

Amanda: you never allow anyone to sleep in your room

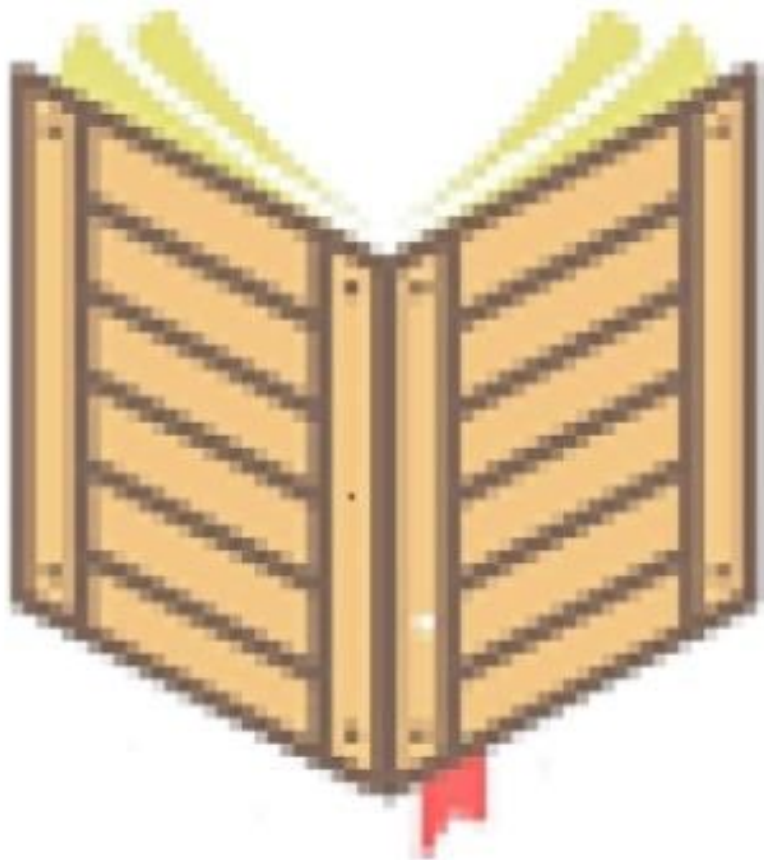
Nkosie: like I said she was drunk, I didn't even sleep here I used the guestroom

His such a liar, why would he lie? Yes she is his girlfriend but at

least tell her we had sex stupid.

Amanda: I don't trust you Nkosie: trust me baby

He kisses her on the lips, okay I have seen enough.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: just go downstairs while I sort this out Amanda: you promise nothing happened?

Nkosie: I promise

Amanda walks out and Nkosie turns to look at me.

Khwezi: why did you lie to her?

Nkosie: can you leave my room I need to shower

Khwezi: can I leave? Dude you can't kick me out after what we did Nkosie: what did we do?

I look at him in disbelief, this guys I mad.

Khwezi: don't tell me you one of those boys who uses girls and leave them just like that in the following morning.

I had tears in my eyes, what did I expect? Zizi warned me about them but I did not listen, look now.

Nkosie: what did you expect? You wanted me to be all lovey dovey, shame shuthi your pussy is special

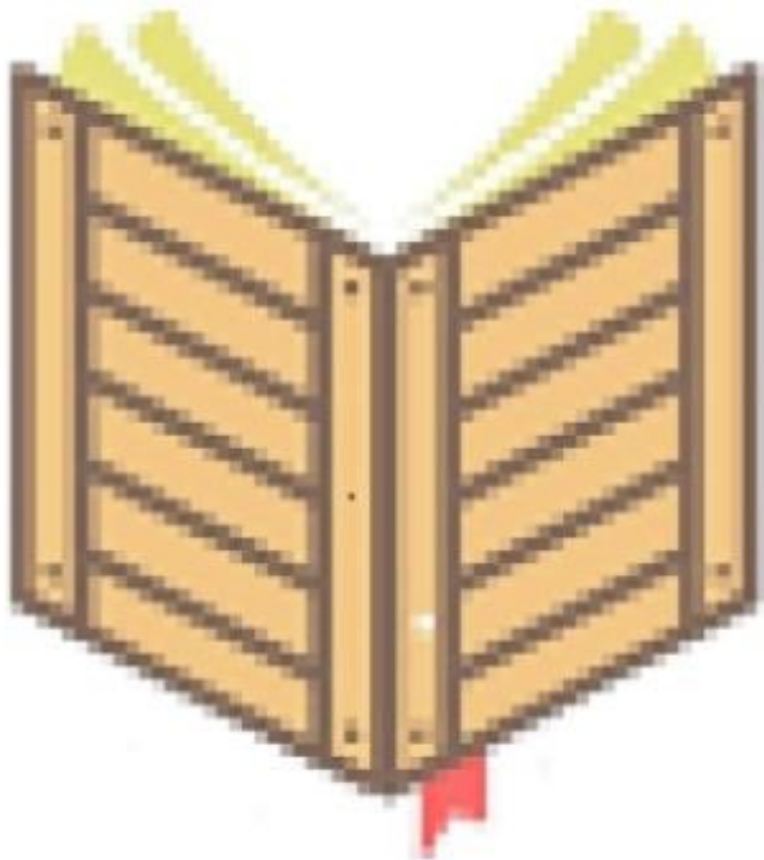
Khwezi: I gave you my virginity

Nkosie: yes it was your choice not mine, let's just forget about

this and pretend it never happened

Tears stream down my cheeks, how can he do me like this?

Khwezi: you boys are trash Nkosie: get out of my room tf



NOVELSGURU.COM

I got up and I felt this burn in between my legs, I bite my lower lip trying not to let out a sound.

He didn't even look at me, I picked up my clothes and i got dressed while wiping the tears off my eyes.

I can't believe I got fooled like that.

Khwezi: well thank you for proving a point about you

I say and he looks at me, he showed no emotions, his facial expression was just blank, I need to leave.

I walked to the guestroom, when I got there I threw myself on the bed and I started crying, I don't know why I was crying but he really did me like that?

I thought he was different, I laugh at my crazy thought and I got up, there was a knock on the door and Zizi walks in.

Zizi: I was looking for you, why are you crying? Are you okay? What happened?

She came to me and she gave me a hug, I continued to cry while

she rubs my back.

Zizi: what's wrong pretty face?

I wipe my tears and I narrated everything to her, she just gave me a hug.

Zizi: I'm sorry babes, but I warned you about my brothers

Khwezi: I just thought maybe he was different

Zizi: look Nkosie is a complicated person, he has his good days and bad days but I'm not saying what he did to you was right, I'm sorry



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: it's okay

Just then Nkosie walks in, he was dressed in a suit and he was shocked to see Zizi there with me, he had some pills in his hand.

Zizi: I thought I told you to stay away from my friend bhuti

Nkosie: she's the one who should have stayed away from me

Zizi: how can you do her like that?

Nkosie: I'm really late for work, drink these pills

He slowly walks to my bed and he gives me the pills, I didn't even want to look at him, he held on the pills and I yanked them away.

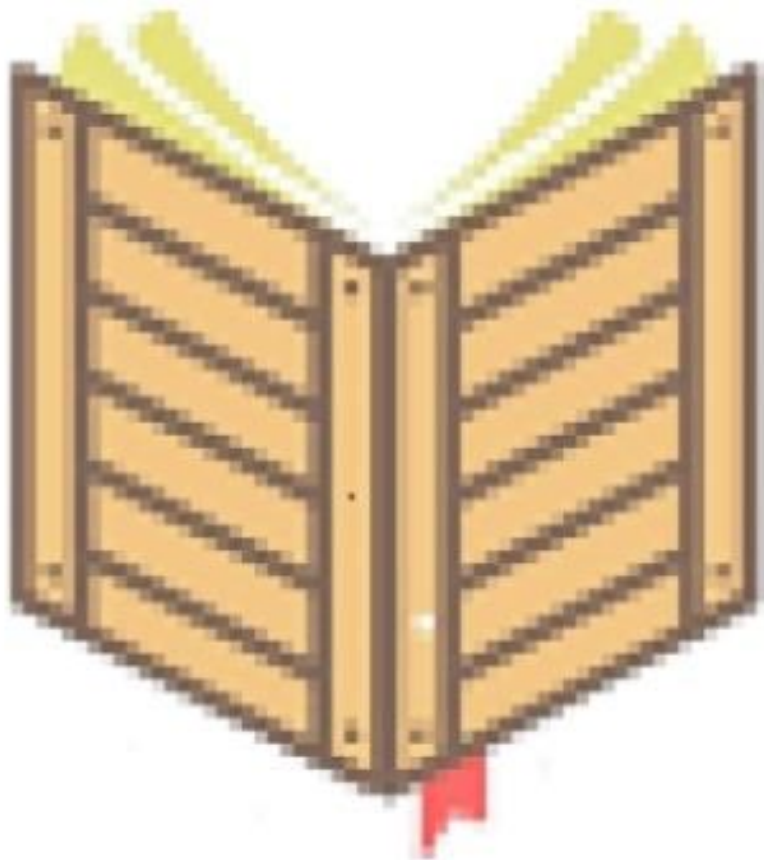
NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: I don't want you anywhere near my friend Nkosie: sure

He looks at me for a second and he walks out.

Zizi: he is such an ass hole, are you going to be okay? Khwezi:
yeah I will be fine, I just need to shower and sleep Zizi: I will
bring you some food
Khwezi: I'm not hungry, I just need to be alone Zizi: pretty
face...

Khwezi: please!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi nods and she got out, I took the pill and I drank it, I got up and I prepared a bath for myself.

I stayed in there while crying, what was I thinking?

I got out of the bath tub and I dried my body, I wrap a towel around my body and I went to the main room.

I lotioned my body, I wore a hoodie and panties, I went undercover and I cried myself to sleep.

I was woken up by someone entering the room, I opened my eyes to see who it was and it was Nkosie. I rolled my eyes at him.

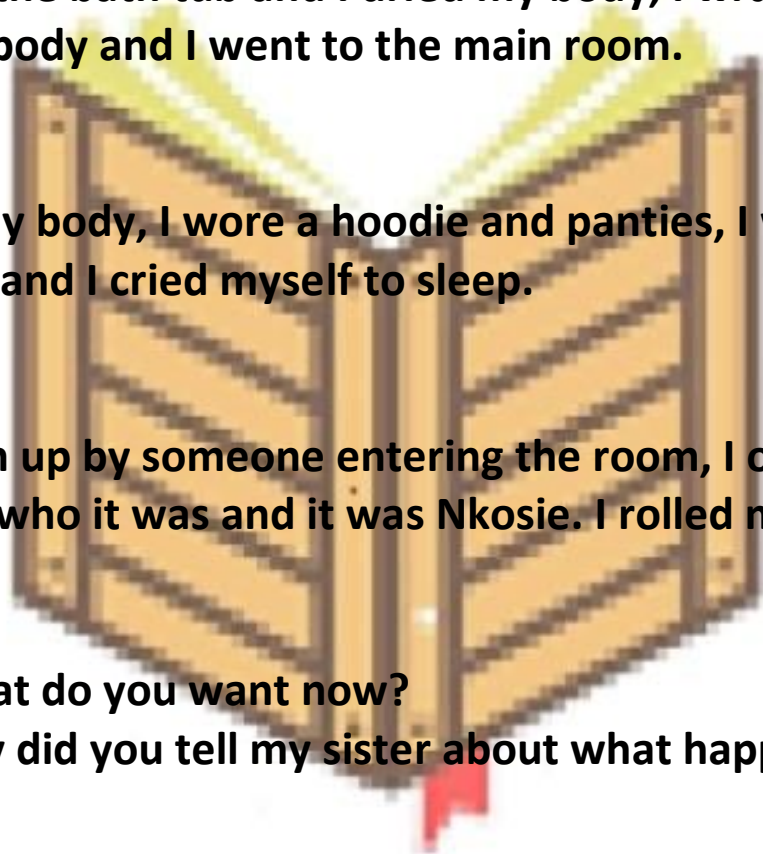
Khwezi: what do you want now?

Nkosie: why did you tell my sister about what happened?

Khwezi: just leave please

Nkosie: nxah!

He clicks his tongue and left, what is wrong with this guy. I need



NOVELSGURU.COM

to leave this place

I got up and I wore black sweat pants, I started to pack my things and I went for, I texted Zizi that I'm leaving.

I called the driver and he took me to the apartment, I got there, the apartment door was slightly open.

I got inside on my to find Sakhile seated on the couch, I jumped.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: how did you get in here? Sakhile: hello baby

Khwezi: dude I asked you a question

Sakhile: I heard the question, where were you?

Khwezi: that's none of your business, how did you get in here?

Sakhile: Where are you?

He got up and got closer to me, I got scared.

Khwezi: I was out

Sakhile: so wena you go out clubbing with boys

How did he know I was out clubbing?

Khwezi: they are not boys but my friend's brothers

A hot slap landed on my cheek, the room started spinning.

Sakhile: you are a hoe now huh? You go around clubbing?

Khwezi: no I'm not a hoe, where is this coming from?

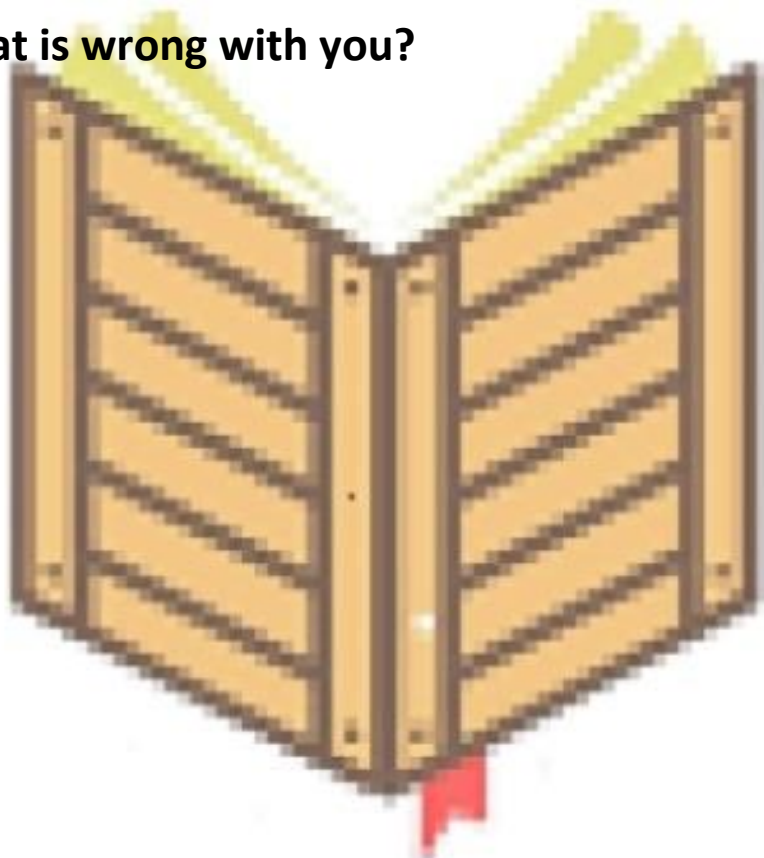


NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: listen don't make me angry or else I will hurt you really bad

He grabbed my hands, I had tears in my eyes, what is wrong with him, and he wasn't like this.

Khwezi: what is wrong with you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: did I hurt you? I didn't mean to hurt you

He hugs me.

Sakhile: you pushed me baby, I got scared I thought you were cheating on me.

Oh hell yeah I did, but what is wrong with him.

Khwezi: I'm sorry, I didn't mean to make you angry

Sakhile: it's okay I forgive you.

•
•
•

FOREVA YENA

Insert 11

NOVELSGURU.COM

ZIZIPHO.

I woke up early in the morning, Khwezi has been locking herself in her room.

I really feel sorry for her after what my brother did, I mean it's like him to do such but she's my friend.

I took a shower and I got ready to go to my morning class, I hope Khwezi is up.

I went out and she's not out at all, she usually wakes up early then me, I went to knock inner room door.

Zizi: prettyface



NOVELSGURU.COM

Silence.

Zizi: come on baby you can't kick yourself up all day, you gonna have to come out sometime

Still she doesn't say anything.

Zizi: pretty face please, just open the door, we need to get to class

I hear some shuffling and the door opens, she stood in front of me with puffy eyes and she had red eyes.

Zizi: ohh baby come here

I gave her a hug and she breaks down, I don't like seeing my friend like this I swear I'm going to murder Nkosie

NOVELSGURU.COM

We set down on her bed and she wipes her tears.

Khwezi: I can't deal with all this I really can't, I can't breathe, I can't even think properly

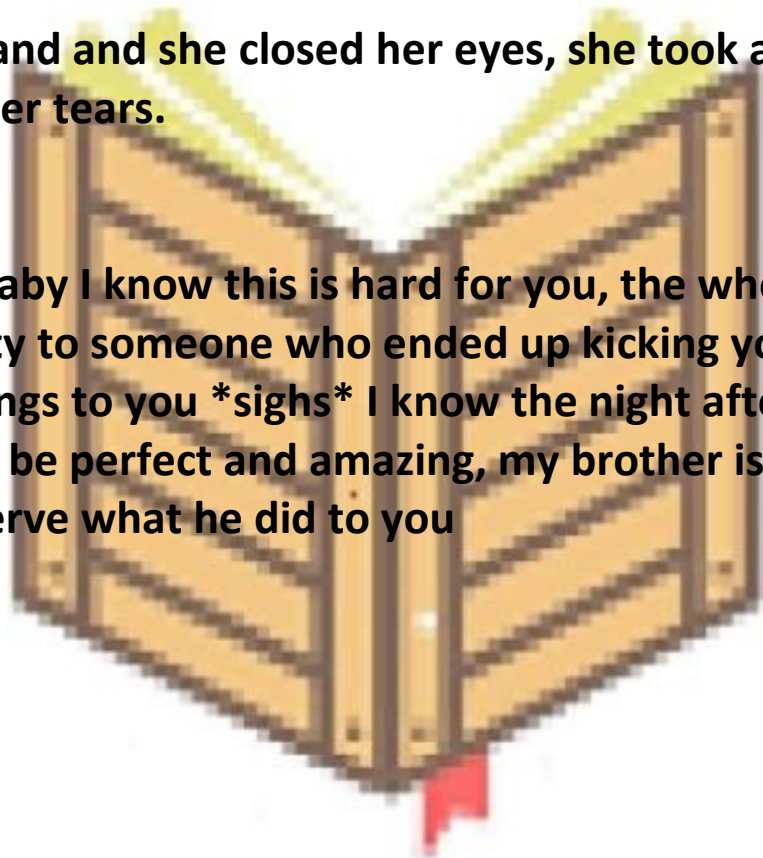


She speaks while choking in her tears, she's even breathing heavily.

Zizi: calm down okay breath

I held her hand and she closed her eyes, she took a few breaths and wipes her tears.

Zizi: listen baby I know this is hard for you, the whole losing your virginity to someone who ended up kicking you out and said bad things to you *sighs* I know the night after your first time should be perfect and amazing, my brother is an ass and you don't serve what he did to you



NOVELSGURU.COM

She wipes her tears.

Zizi: you deserve way better than that, I know it will be hard to forget all this but you have to move on

Khwezi: you are right but I really need a breath, o think I need to go home and see my family

Zizi: as in like to back to the village?

Khwezi: yes plus I miss my mother and father, this place is suffocating and I need to go out for some air

Zizi: whatever you want prettyface, as long as you going to be okay

Khwezi: thanks let me get ready for class then

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: relax you can stay in, I will take notes for you

Khwezi: thanks

Zizi: wena you stay in and order all you want, it's on me

Khwezi: you don't have to really, we already have food here I will be fine

Zizi: I love you Khwezi: I love you too

I hug her and I left.

I called the driver and he took me, I arrived and I set down, it's gonna be a long day because Khwezi is not here.



NOVELSGURU.COM

After finishing off my classes, I headed home, I wanted to see ma.

The driver parks right outside and I thank him, I got out of the car and I went inside the house.

Mom was seated in the living room having a cup of tea.

Zizi: my favourite women in the planet

She turns to look at me and she smiles.

Mom: hey sweetheart, you done with your classes already? Zizi: yes and I'm tired

Mom: you also look tired, where is your friend today? Zizi: she's sick and she had to spend a day home

I lied.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: poor girl, I hope she gets well soon Zizi: I hope so too, mommy...

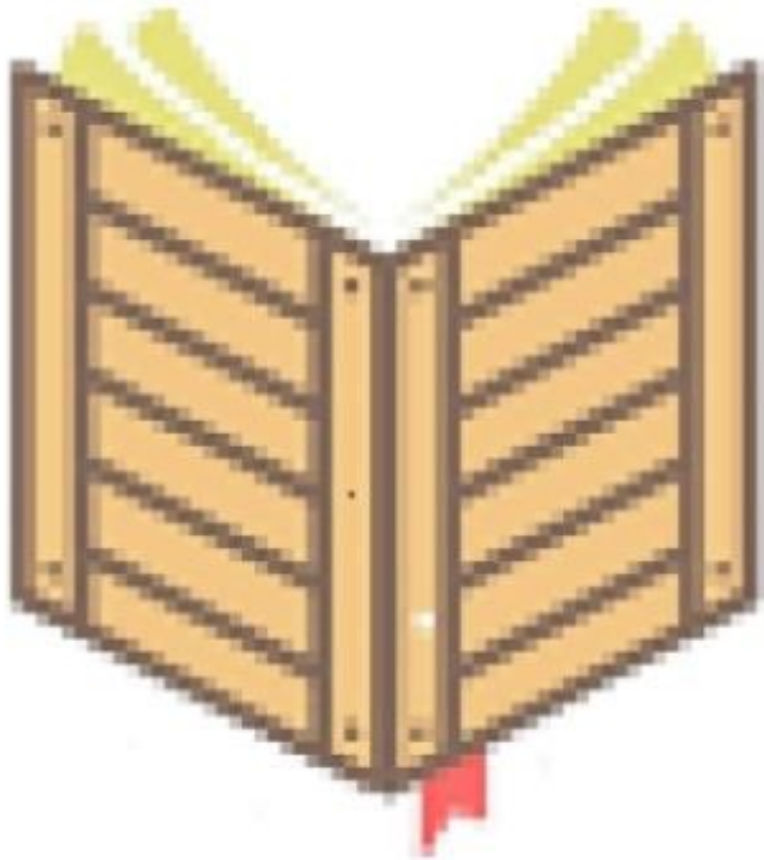
I look at her with a huge smile on my face.

Mom: I know that's smile, you want something what is it?

Zizi: can you make me something to eat, I missed your cooking

Mom: here I am enjoying my own piece and wena you asking me to cook

Zizi: please mama, I miss your cooking and I'm starving



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: then go make yourself something in the kitchen, God gave you two hands

Zizi: he also gave me you

Mom: hhayi let me enjoy my piece

I laugh getting off the couch and heading to the kitchen, I made myself a sandwich and poured some juice.

Zizi: how is dad? Mom: he is okay

Zizi: and the brothers?

Mom: they are fine though I haven't heard from Nkosie

Zizi: what do you mean you haven't heard from him?

I took my plate and juice, I went to the living room and I set down.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: I mean he isn't answering my calls, your brothers say he is also not answering their calls

Zizi: you think he is back at it?

Mom: I hope not

Nkosie has this thing of disappearing for week or maybe a month or so, he doesn't answer any of our calls and that freaks mother out.

Zizi: I really don't get why his pushing all of us away, we are a family



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: you know your brother he is stubborn

Zizi: I hope he comes back

Mom: yeah

She takes out her phone and she calls him but no answer, I also tried but he did not answer, he always answers my calls.

Zizi: I guess we doing this once again

Mom: it's really no fun though

Zizi: you are right

We set there and decided to watch a movie together, it got late and I had to leave.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: I have to head back

Mom: so soon? I will you see again angith? Zizi: yes you will

Mom: and please check on your brother

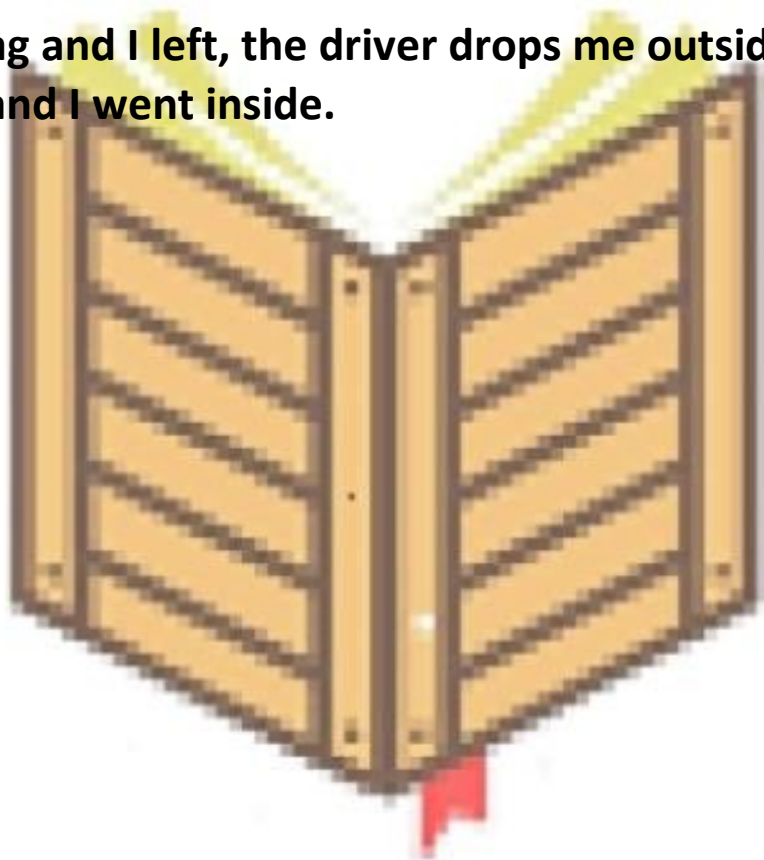
We are all used to this except mother, she's always on panic

mode especially when it comes to Nkosie.

Zizi: stop panicking mom, he always comes back

I give her a hug and she kisses my cheek.

I took my bag and I left, the driver drops me outside my apartment and I went inside.



NOVELSGURU.COM

When I got there Khwezi was busy making dinner, she looks a little bit well though her eyes still look puffy.

Zizi: missed me?

Khwezi: I wouldn't miss your crazy ass

Zizi: shame I know you missed me, how are you? Khwezi: I'm better and you?

Zizi: just tired but a hot relaxing bath will fix that Khwezi: yeah right, the food will be ready in ten Zizi: you the best

Khwezi: can I have the notes Zizi: ohh I almost forgot

I took out my books and I summaries everything we did to her, she took my book and went to copy.

After taking a relaxing bath I took my food and we went to sit in the living room.

Zizi: girl your cooking skills

She giggles.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I learned from the best

Zizi: we can get on that

We got done and I did the dishes, we watched a movie and dozed off on the couch.

-
-



NOVELSGURU.COM

.
FOREVA YENA

Insert 12

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up early in the morning, I'm heading back to KZN just for a few days, I missed my home land.

I did my hygiene process and I got dressed into baggy clothes, my phone rang as I was packing my clothes.

It was Sakhile, he hasn't talked to me after the incident for sure you know what I mean.

Khwezi: Sakhile?

Sakhile: that's how you gonna answer your phone? Khwezi: yah it's my phone anyways

Sakhile: look I said I'm sorry I didn't mean to lay my hands on you Khwezi: okay, how can I help you?

Sakhile: ohh so it's like that now Khwezi: like what?

Sakhile: you gonna treat me like that?

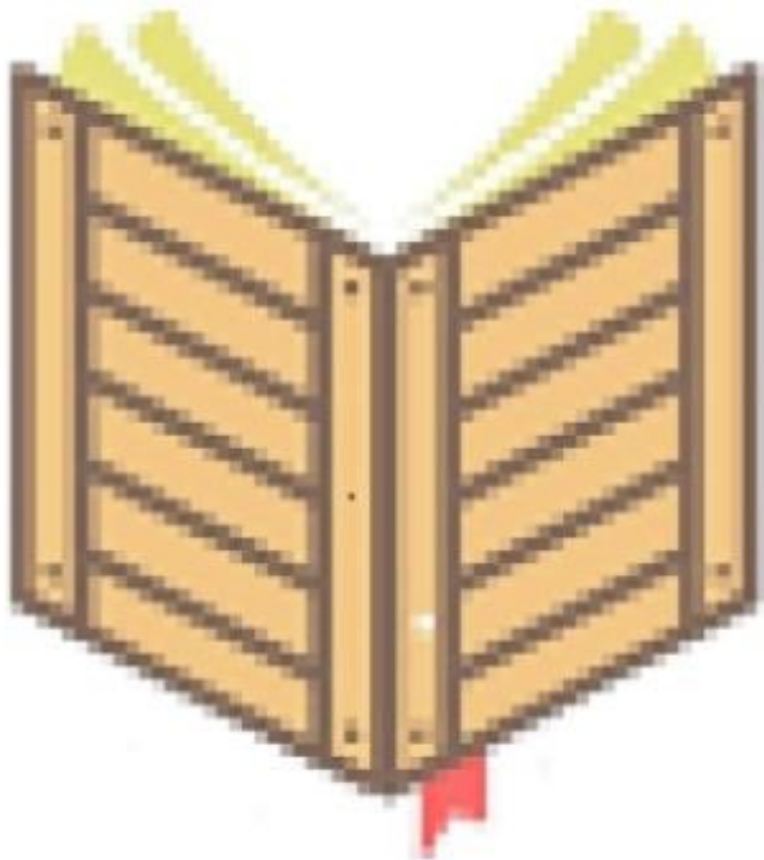
Khwezi: dude just get to the point, what do you want again I ask? Sakhile: I want us to go out on a movie

Khwezi: you want? What happened to "can I take you out on a

movie?" Sakhile: it's the same thing

Khwezi: I got plans

Sakhile: for sure you can cancel them Khwezi: no can't do



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: come on Butterfly Khwezi: bye Sakhile

**I hung up, I threw my phone on the bed and I start to pack my
begs, I got done and I went out.**

Zizi was already up making breakfast.

Khwezi: good morning, you up early

**Zizi: well you leaving so I had to make you something g to eat
before you leave Khwezi: that's so sweet**

**I set down on the high chair and I had my breakfast, I wash my
plate on the sink.**

Zizi: girl do you have to leave?

**Khwezi: yeah I do, but I will be back before you know it Zizi: I'm
gonna miss you**

Khwezi: that's not what you said last night

She laughs.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: yeah yeah come here

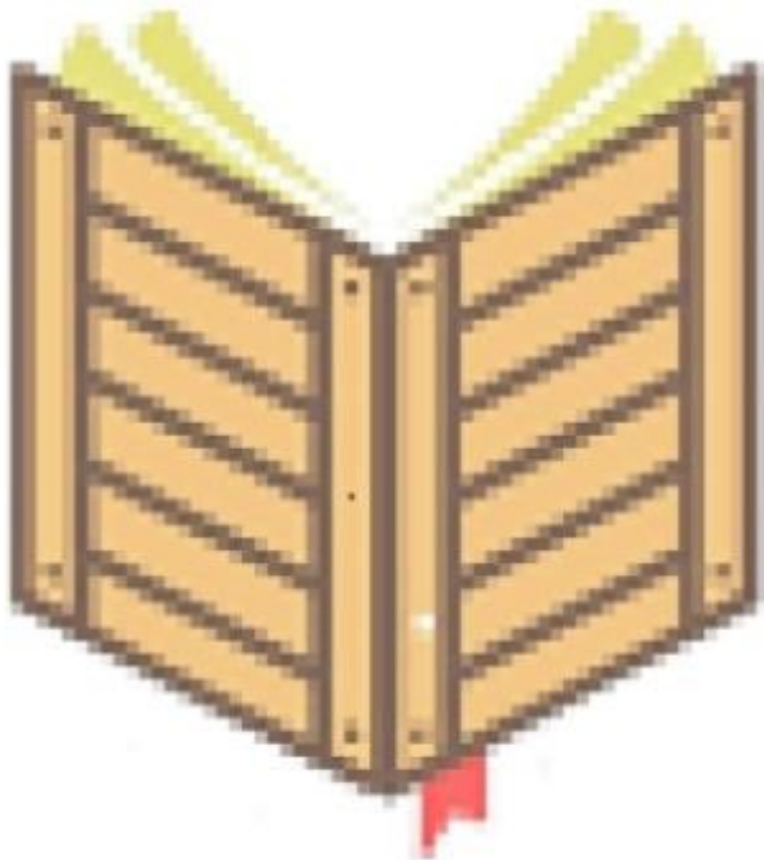
She gave me a tight ling hug and she let's go.

Zizi: travel safe okay?

Khwezi: I will

Zizi: I really don't get why you traveling by taxi I mean the driver can take you there

Khwezi: I want to travel by taxi, plus it's not a big deal



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: if you say so

Khwezi: I got to go bye Zizi: bye

I walk out and the driver drops me off at the rank, I boarded a taxi to KZN and I waited till it was full.

We pay up and the driver come a after a whole hour of waiting, he starts the taxi and off I was to KZN.

The drive was long and exhausting, I can't even feel my butt, we arrive in KZN and the drive to my village is a little bit short.

The taxi drops me off right at a stop, I got off and the driver looks at me.

Him: uhambe kahle ntokazi Khwezi: ngyabonga bhuti

I close the taxi door, I walk to my house and when I got there mom was outside picking up the clothes from the line.

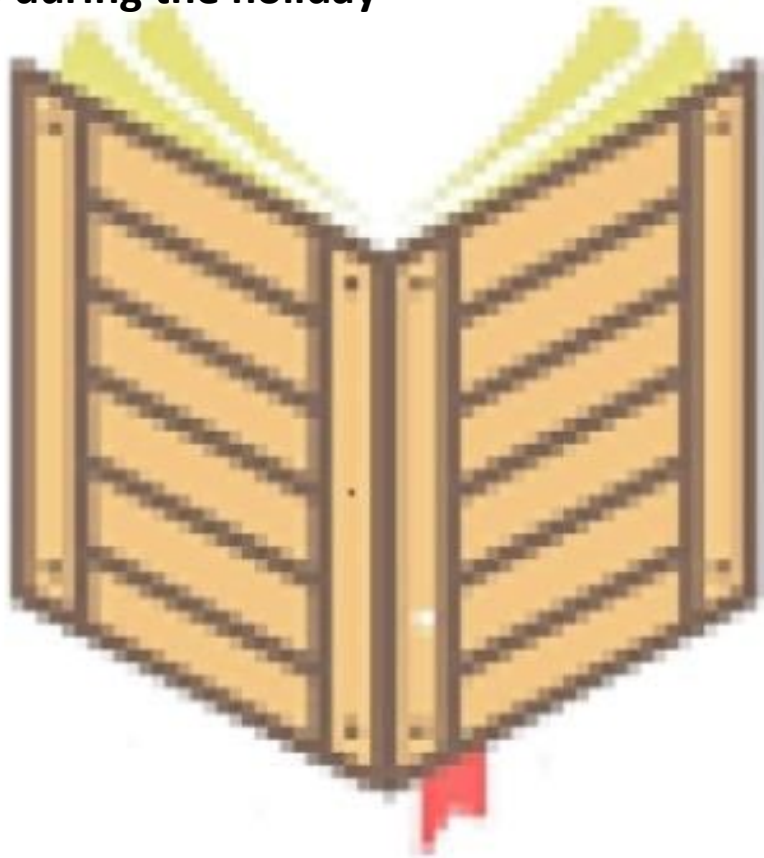
When she saw me she couldn't believe it.

Mom: Khwezilokusa mtanami

She walks to me and she gives me a tight hug.

Khwezi: hey mama

Mom: how are you? What bring you here? I thought you was gonna come during the holiday



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: so many questions mama, let's go inside

She sighs.

We got inside and I was welcomed by Dad's singing, he was seated in the couch enjoy g his cold beer.

I guess things never change.

Khwezi: father...

He turns to look at me a d he smiles.

Dad: princess, look at you

Khwezi: I missed you so much

NOVELSGURU.COM

I sat next to him and gave him a hug, ohh God he needs to take a bath but I don't mind.

Dad: hat is this thing you wearing? You look like a boy

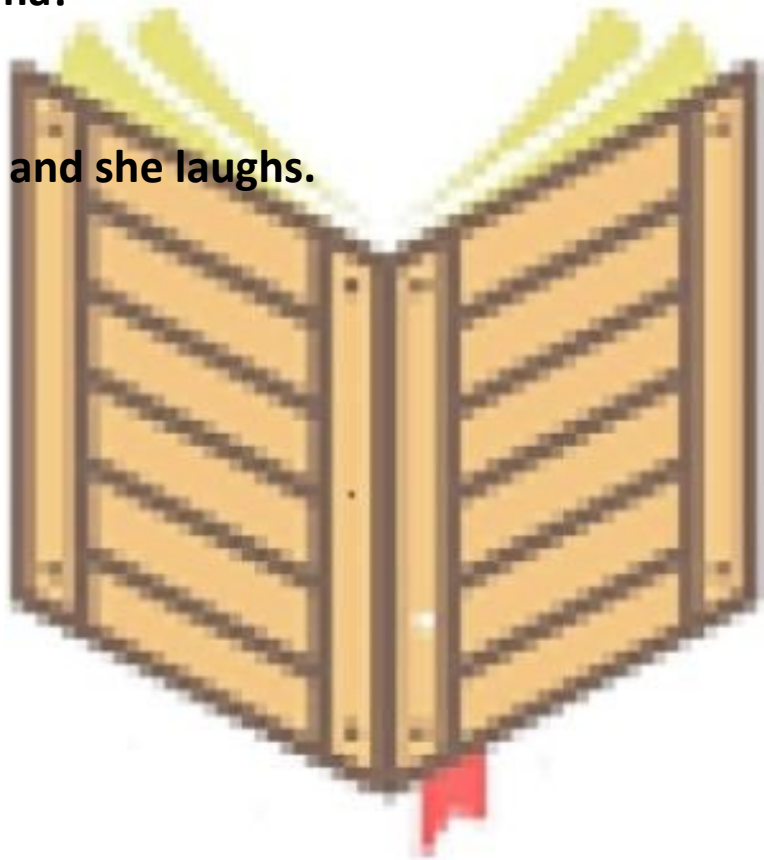


Khwezi: no I don't, it's just clothes my friend bought for me

Mom: is that friend a boy

Khwezi: mama!

I look at her and she laughs.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: but you look beautiful Khwezi: thank you dad

Mom: so you didn't and we my question, I thought you were gonna come during the holidays

She set down looking at me.

Khwezi: I just needed a break from that city, it moves really fast and I can't seem to keep up

Mom: I understand baby but you gonna miss out on the work

Khwezi: I'm covered, my friend will help me out when I get back

Dad: who is this friend kanti?

Khwezi: her name is Zizi

Dad: what stupid name is Zizi?

I laugh, my dad Mara.

Khwezi: she's my friend njalo, her full name is Zizopho

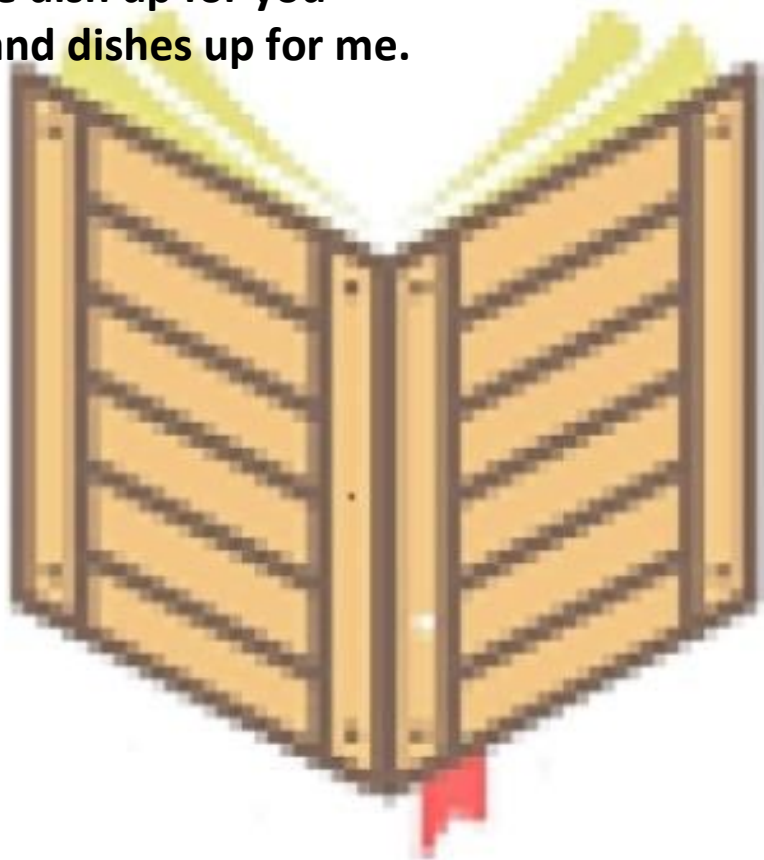


NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: Zizipho who?

**Khwezi: Mthembu, you guys are busy asking me questions,
mama I'm hungry**

**Mom: let me dish up for you
She got up and dishes up for me.**



NOVELSGURU.COM

I thanked her and I ate.

Mom: so when we're you going to tell me about your relationship with Sakhile

Dad: relationship?

Khwezi: relationship?

Me and Dad ask at the same time, I mean who told my mother about this.

Mom: yes her mother told me this other day after church, she says Sakhile can't stop talking about you

Khwezi: shame, that's good news I guess?

Dad: I don't like that boy

Mom: you don't have to like him, she does

Khwezi: Yohh



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: but I wish you told me sooner

Khwezi: I wasn't ready to tell you plus I'm really not sure about the relationship

Mom: what do you mean?

Khwezi: I mean I might break up with him, it's simple

Mom: why you breaking up with him now?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I just think we rushing things, plus I don't feel him

Mom: I hear you mtananmi

Khwezi: great

I got up and I washed my plate.

Khwezi: I had a long drive and I need some sleep, I will see you beautiful people in the morning

Mom: good night

Khwezi: night, good night dad

Dad: good niythi nawe

NOVELSGURU.COM

I shake my head, I went to my room.

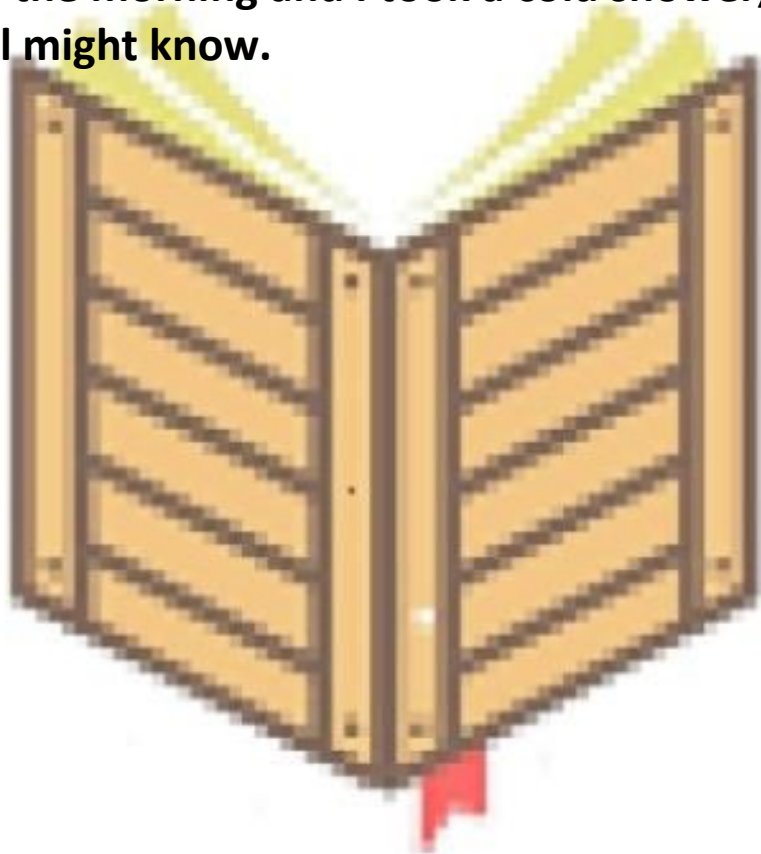
**.
. .
. .**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 13

NKOSINATHI.

I woke up in the morning and I took a cold shower, for a reason some of y'all might know.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I turn off the tap and I got out of the shower, I took a towel and I tried my body.

I went to my room and I lotioned my body, I got dressed into my gym wear and I headed to my indoor gym.

For sure you might be wondering where I am, I'm in Cape Town.

Here's a thing or two you should know about me, one I got my own complicated shit I'm dealing with and two I cut everybody off.

by that I mean my family, I don't even know where my phone is, I'm sure they are calling me nonstop but I need to deal with my demons alone.

I got inside the gym and I started working out, after an hour, I'm literally sweating and my heart is racing.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I went downstairs and I made myself a protein shake, I drank it while scrolling on some Channels on my huge TV.

I found a movie of my liking, I went upstairs and I took a quick shower since I was sweating.

I wore sweat pants and a vest, I went downstairs and I ordered something to eat which is meat obviously.

The order came and I set down watching the movie, I don't really watch movies.

I got bored and I headed to the gym once again, this is what I do almost all day when I'm like this.

I work out, I go on gun mode of course I know how to use a fucking gun, not just one gun but different types.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I punch the punching bag while this super cool playlist was playing.

Nkosie: fuck!!

I punch the bag and I kick it in frustration, I set down.

.

.

. KHWEZILOKUSA.

I just woke up and I'm busy preparing breakfast when I noticed there is no bread.

I quickly went to my room and took out a twenty rand note and I went to the shop to get some bread.

As I was walking this guy came to me.

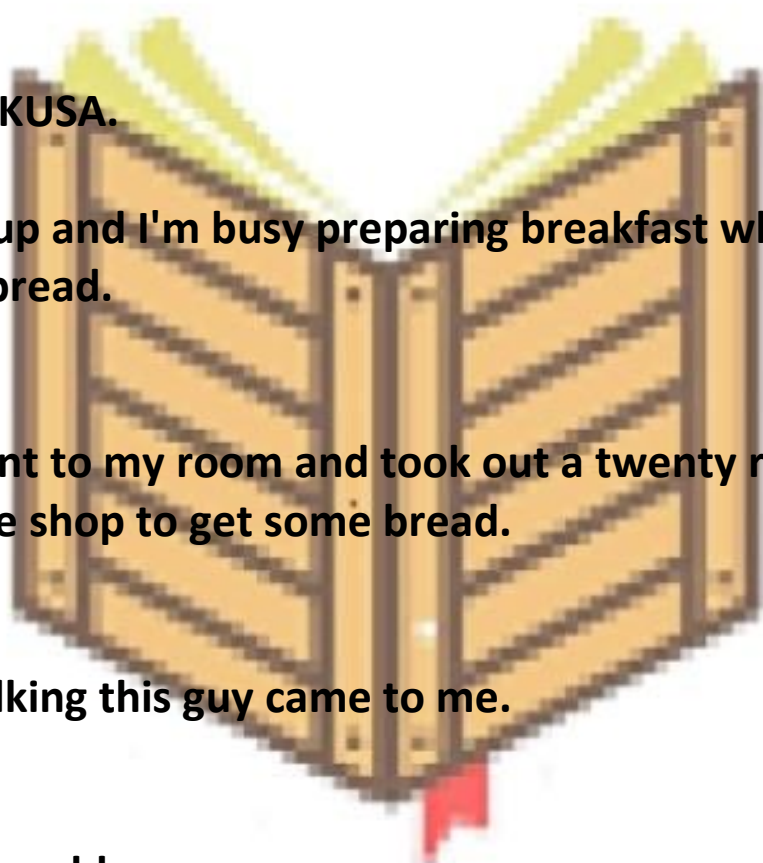
Him: awu semuhle mama

Khwezi: ngingakusiza? (Can I help you?)

Him: yes you can help, I have never seen you around Khwezi: okay?

Him: you know you the only girl I have seen here who is beautiful

Khwezi: yeah right



NOVELSGURU.COM

I chuckle, bashimane guys, ngithi the bafana the boys they are death.

I bought the bread and the guy is still here, this time he is also g for my number.

Khwezi: I don't have a phone



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: come on mamazi

Khwezi: mamazi? You drunk wena Him: please...

Khwezi: I don't have a phone now leave me alone

I walk past him.

Sakhile: you heard her, leave her alone

What is he doing here? When did he get here? Is he following me?

I increased my walking phase, I don't want to see or talk to him, he grabs my arm and I yank it away.

Khwezi: don't touch me

Sakhile: please don't do this right now

I told my arms looking at him, the way I was holding the bread my mother would kill me.

Sakhile: you look beautiful Khwezi: I know get on with it dude

Sakhile: why you so cold?

Khwezi: are you following me? Sakhile: no I'm not following you

Khwezi: then? How did you know I was here? Sakhile: I just



NOVELSGURU.COM

happened to be passing by Khwezi: lair

Sakhile: look Butterfly I'm sorry about what I did, I really want us to live one from this and start afresh

Khwezi: the moving on and start g afresh part I love



NOVELSGURU.COM

He smiles

Khwezi: but I will gladly do it without you Sakhile: what?

**Khwezi: all this is not working, I don't want you no more, entlek
I never did**

Sakhile: you breaking up with me

**Khwezi: no I'm marrying you, hayboh vuka emaqandeni bhuti
(wake up)**

I snap my fingers I front of his face.

**Sakhile: you can't break up with me Khwezi: but I just did
Sakhile: you gonna break up with me when I say so**

I laugh, he is crazy.

NOVELSGURU.COM

**Khwezi: I don't think you hearing yourself right now, I don't
want you no more**

Sakhile: and I said it's not happening

Khwezi: yazii wena you sick in the head and mad in the stomach, nxah!

I click my tongue and I leave him standing there shouting my name.

I arrived home and mom was awake.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: ohh I was looking for you Khwezi: I was out to get some bread Mom: ohh thank you my child Khwezi: no need to thank mama, now sit down I will make breakfast

She smiles and went to sit down, I made breakfast for the three of us, Dad joined us and we had our breakfast

After the breakfast I did the dishes and I cleaned around the house, I did some of the laundry and I received a call from Zizi, we talked for hours till she had to leave.

I was then bored, I decided to sleep and I woke up to prepare dinner.

Dinner got ready and we set down as a family, this is what I missed spending time with my lived one's.

**.
.
.**

FOREVA YENA

NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 14

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I spent three days in the village with my family and to think of it I really needed some time out of that city.

Today I'm heading back to Jo'burg, I pack my stuff and mom walks in, she sits on the bed.

**Mom: you know I'm really happy that you came to see us
Khwezi: I'm also happy that I saw you guys**



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: you know you can always talk to me if something is bothering you

Khwezi: y-yes

I say slowly looking at her, what is she on about?

Mom: good, don't hide things from me Khwezi I'm your mother

Khwezi: I won't hide things from you mama

Mom: great now mtanami buka, if things are starting to get hard while you out there just get on your knees and pray mtanami

I set down next to her.

Mom: just know that prayer is the answer to everything, communicate with your maker

Khwezi: yes mama I will and I am

Mom: that's great then, don't lose yourself in that city

Khwezi: I won't I promise

We shared a hug and I got up, I went out with my bag and we had breakfast, we prayed and I had to leave.

I went to catch a taxi and off I was back to Jo'burg, I arrived and it was a little bit dark, luckily the taxi driver agreed to drop me outside the apartment.

I thanked him and I buzzed in, I got inside the apartment and when I got there Zizi was seated with her brothers chatting a storm.



NOVELSGURU.COM

When she saw me she got up and ran to me.

Zizi: prettyface Khwezi: hey babes

Zizi: ohh my god I thought you weren't gonna come back

Khwezi: you exaggerating now

I place my bag down.

Nkanyezi: she even asked us to come keep her company

Sandile: she couldn't stop talking about you coming back

Khwezi: shame my friend Zizi: I missed you so much

Khwezi: I missed you too, my parents send their greetings

Zizi: lucky me

She smiles.

Sandile: so how was the trip?

Khwezi: it wasn't a trip wena, but it was fine Sandile: that's good, we missed you this side Nkanyezi: and your cooking

Zizi: so my cooking is bad

Sya: nah we didn't say that cutie Zizi: mmmh



Sandile: you know that we love you Zizi: whatever

We laugh.

Khwezi: let me go take a shower

Zizi: alright but we are living, my father asked to see us Khwezi:

I will see you when you come back

**Zizi: sure don't bother to cook I will bring a takeaway Khwezi:
okay**

I went to my room.

.

.

. ZIZIPHO.

**We are driving to our house, I really don't get why dad is calling
us at this hour.**

**Sandile: what do you think he want? Nkanyezi: I don't know
maybe it's about Nkosi Sya: maybe**

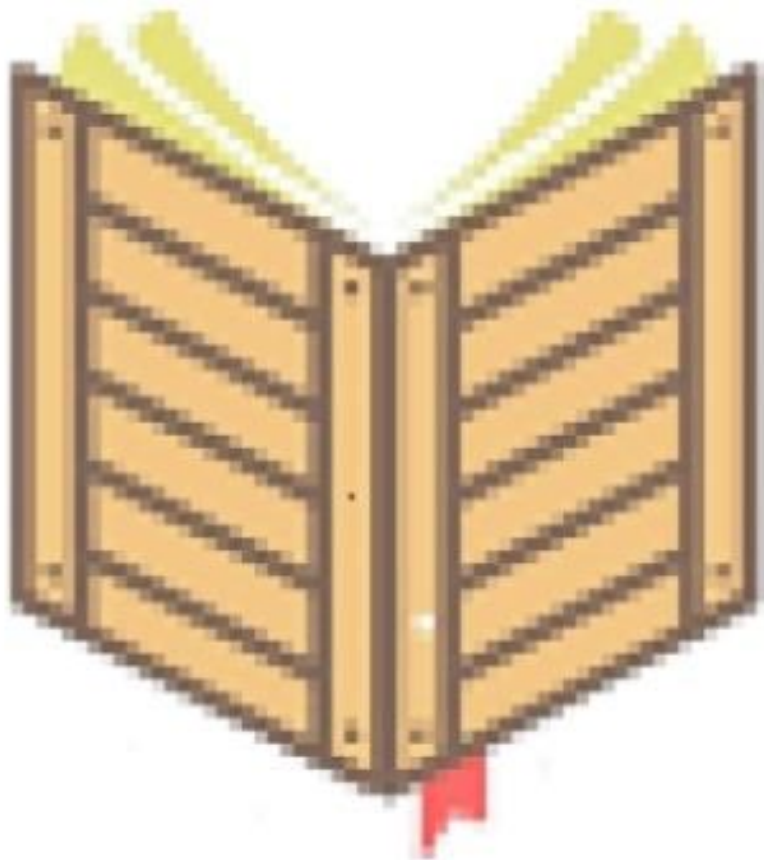
Zizi: speaking of Nkosie have you heard from Him?

NOVELSGURU.COM

**Sandile: nah I tried calling him this morning but he is not
answering**

Nkanyezi: I also tried few days back but nothing

Sandile: I really don't like it when he gets like this



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: only if he knew how worried we are about him, maybe he won't do such nonsense

Sya: even if he knew Nkosie never listens

I sigh.

Nkanyezi parks outside and we got out of the car, we got inside the house found big bro, mom and dad sitting in the living room.

We joined them.

Dad: finally we are all here Mom: not all of us

She says in a low tone, I can see this Nkosi thing is taking a toll on her.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: he is going to come back, he always does

Mom: this is nonsense

She folds her arms.

Dad: well we not here to talk about Nkosie, in two days' time we will have very important visitors which mean we gonna have to hosts a huge event to welcome them

Sandile: visitors?

Ntando: yes the Swati royal family will be here, we kinda want to share partnership in the new deal



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: so hosting this event for them as a welcome is the start of getting this deal

Zizi: so you trying to buy them?

Ntando: not really princess

Zizi: ohh I see

Dad: so we will be splitting responsibilities

Nkanyezi: responsibilities?

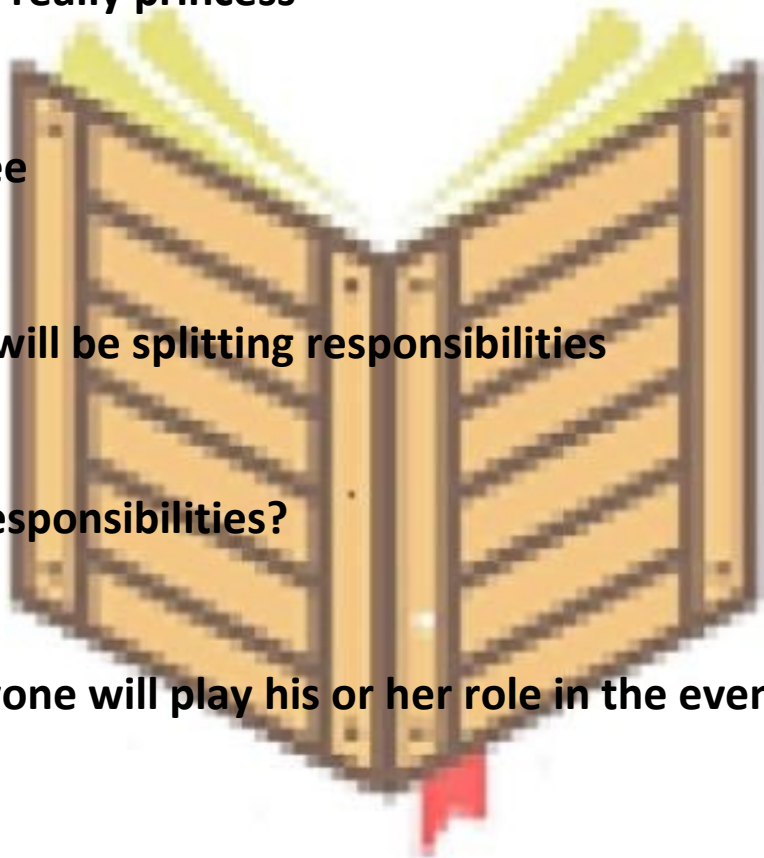
Mom: everyone will play his or her role in the event

Sya: great

NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: Sya and Sandile will be in charge of the transport

Sandile: wow

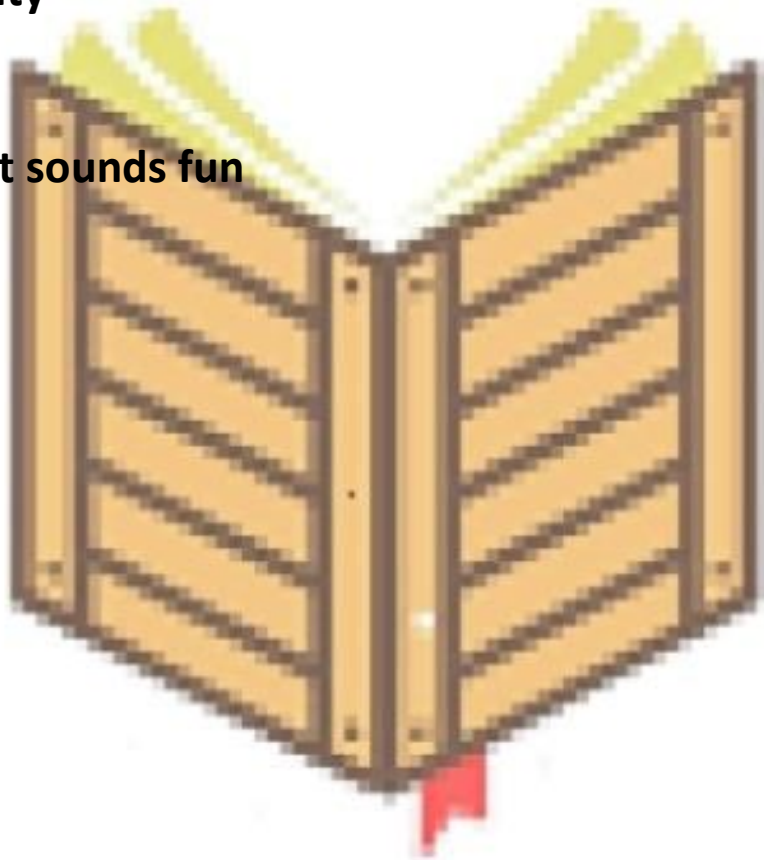


Dad: got a problem?

Sandile: nope I don't

Dad: good, Nkanyezi you are with Ntando and you are in charge of the security

Ntando: that sounds fun



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: while y'all doing that we will be making the guest list and wena Zizi please ask your friend to help out, we will really need extra hands on this one

Zizi: I will talk to her, so what are we in charge of?

Dad: the food, decoration anything that involves girls

Zizi: why do we get so much work?

Dad: because you are good at this

Mom: I will be helping baby trust me

Zizi: it's a good thing we won't be busy

Dad: great then it is settled, two days till this huge event

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: who makes a huge event in two days?

Dad: we do princess, we are the Mthembu's after all and nothing I mean nothing beats us



I smile.

Zizi: so we gonna do all this without Nkosie? Dad: he is a grown man

Sandile: but dad we all know Nkosie he...

Mom: okay enough about my son, let's stop thinking the negative, he will come back and that's it



NOVELSGURU.COM

She stood up and left us, Dad looks at us and follows mom.

Nkanyezi: it's gonna be hard doing this without bhuti, I mean he has connection and he makes things happen

Ntando: I'm here I can make things happen

Sya: the last time you said that, you ruined almost everything and almost embarrassed the family in front of the whole world

Sandile laughs.

Ntando: mxm, let's get to work

We got up and I went back to buy some takeaways then went to the apartment.

Khwezi was seated doing the work she missed out on.

Khwezi: you back?

Zizi: yeah I'm back and I got good news and bad news

Khwezi: what is the good news?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: the good news is that we will be getting a visit from the Swati Royal family, that means we gonna see beautiful Royal boys

I giggle and she shakes her head.

Khwezi: the bad news?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: we hosting a huge event

Khwezi: that's good news njena

Zizi: not when you got two days to prepare for the event

Khwezi: two days? That's little

Zizi: I know and we gonna need your help

Khwezi: I'm always happy to help

Zizi: great then, first thing in the morning we heading to my house to discuss with mom

Khwezi: okay, what about school?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: Dad will talk with the heads and we will get the work transferred to us

Khwezi: that's good

Zizi: but it's really not gonna be easy with Nkosie not being around

I sigh.

Khwezi: what do you mean not being around?

Zizi: let's not talk about it, I need to shower



NOVELSGURU.COM

I gave her the takeaway and I went to my room, I threw myself on the bed and I tried to call Nkosie but it goes straight to voice mail.

Zizi: Nkosie is such a jerk

I put my phone on the charger and I went to take a shower, I was busy drying my hair when my phone rang, it was Nkosie, I jumped and answered the phone.

Zizi: bhuti? Are you okay? Why are you not answering my calls? Do you know how worried we are about you?

Nkosie: breath pumpkin

I took a deep breath.

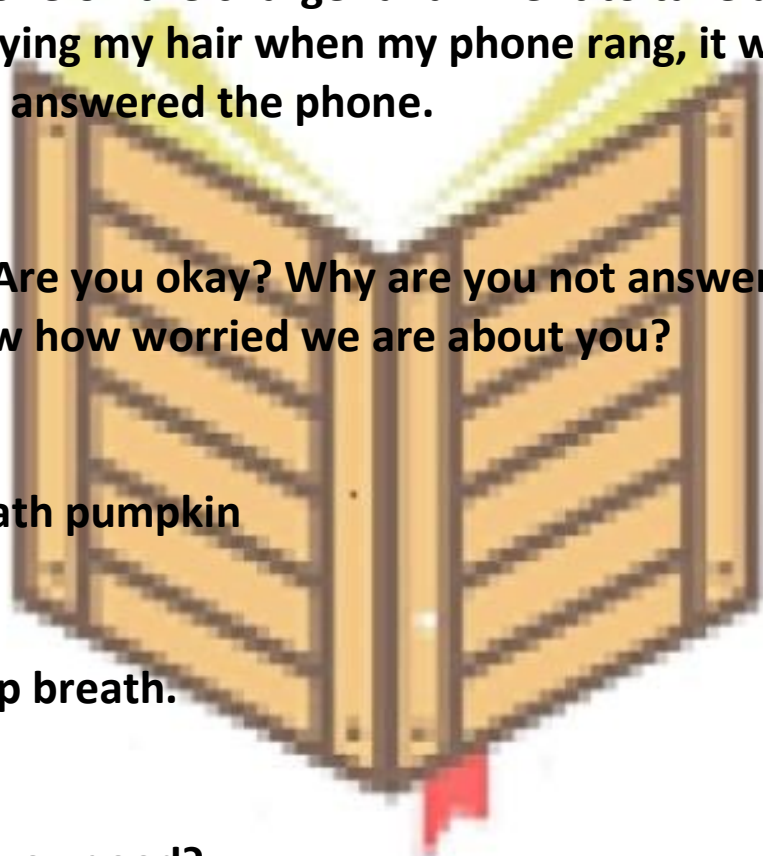
Nkosie: are you good?

Zizi: no I'm not, you disappeared on us again Nkosie: I don't want to talk about that

Zizi: why you shutting us out Nkosie: I'm not

Zizi: then why are you not answering my calls?

Nkosie: if you were in the situation I'm in, how would you be feeling?

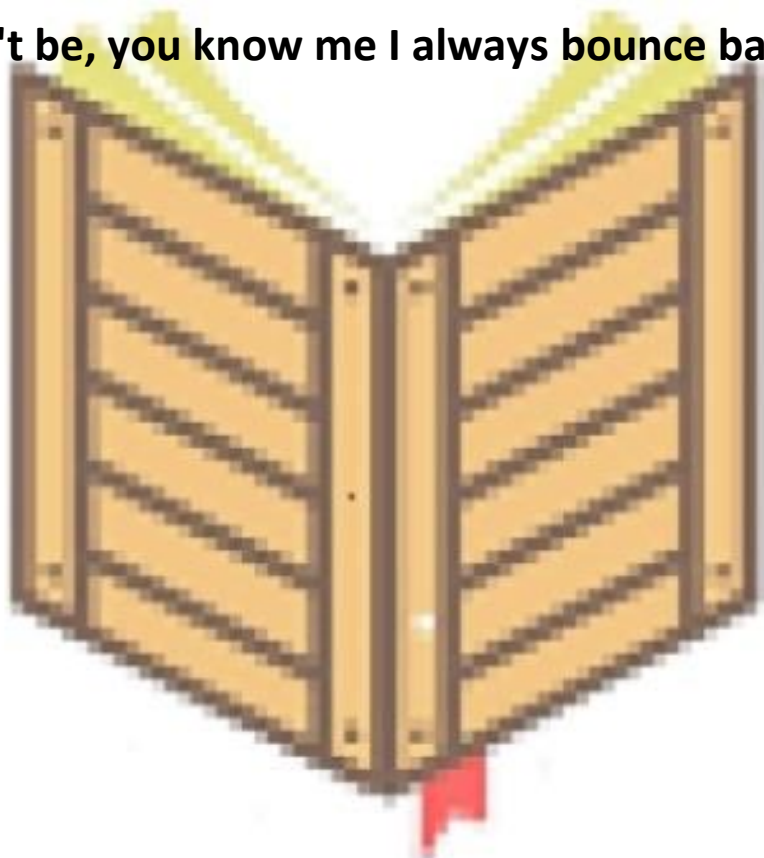


I sigh, I would be depressed as fuck honestly.

Nkosie: you see

Zizi: but I'm worried about you bro

Nkosie: don't be, you know me I always bounce back



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: you have to bounce back soon cause we need you

Nkosie: I know just contact me and tell me how to help but don't tell anyone I called

Zizi: what why?

Nkosie: just listen to what I'm saying

Zizi: fine

Nkosie: now stop worrying

Zizi: mxm

Nkosie: I have to go, remember I didn't call you

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: sure, I love you Nkosie: I love you too

I smile, he never says it back, I know for a fact he has his eyes rolling because he doesn't like saying such words.



He hung up, always he is doing okay, I deleted the evidence that showed he called.

I lotioned my body and I wore my pyjamas, I went to eat with Khwezi, she was kinda off.

-
-
-



NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 15

NARRATIVE.

The following day Zizi and Khwezi went to meet with Mrs Mthembu. They got there and they started to discuss everything.

Mrs M: I was thinking why don't we do green and yellow?

Zizi: green and what? Mom the royal people will be here and you thinking about such hideous colours

Mrs M: green and yellow is pretty Zizi: but not for this event
mama

Mrs M: whatever, wena you always against my ideas

Zizi: I'm not it's just that those are two bright colours, what about red and white?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs M: it's an event not Valentine's Day

Khwezi giggles as she was enjoying this mother and daughter fight.

Mrs M: what do you think Khwezi?

Khwezi: I don't know honestly maybe black and white? It's simple and beautiful Zizi: black and white sounds nice

Khwezi: I would say we should allow them to wear anything of their choice koda hhayi.

Zizi laughs.

Zizi: imagine seeing someone walking in wearing a pink suit



NOVELSGURU.COM

**Mrs M: a yellow suit Khwezi: a red suit Zizi: a green dress
Mrs M: it will be a disaster**

Zizi: a huge one

They laughed.

They started to do the invites and they went them out, after that they went to meet with the person whom will help them with the decoration.

They started to discuss and pick the right things for the decoration, they added a few colours.

On the other side the boys took care of everything, Sandile and Nkanyezi got the cars prepared to pick up the royal family from the airport.

Ntando and Sya got security for the place.

[THE DAY OF THE EVENT]

It was early in the morning that's when the people of the deco came in, they started to make the place look pretty and Zizi was

in charge and trust me she knows what she is doing.

Zizi: come on put those there

She points placing the huge vase with 100 white roses on the table, she looks around.

Zizi: what are you standing there for? Work girl I don't like lazy people, this has to be perfect



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi came downstairs and she shakes her head laughing at how worked up her friend is getting about this whole thing.

Khwezi went to the kitchen and she wore an apron, a few girls came in to help as she started to prepare the meals for tonight.

Mrs Mthembu was outside ensuring that everything looks good, you can't decorate the inside and leave the outside, I mean that would be a lame plain event.

Ntando and Sya came in with their men who will be security, they had a small briefing about the protocols that need to be followed.

They were placed in every position of the yard, Nkanyezi and Sandile drove in with his team of drivers, they were driving black BMW G wagons.

It got late and everything was sorted out by then, the team of drivers go out to the airport to wait for the royal family since they are about to land.

People started come to the event, beautiful and luxurious cars drove in.

Celebrities got out and walked down the red carpet and took a few clicks, also got to answer questions as the place was filled with a lot of media people.

They were all allowed in and served drinks right as they walked in, slow music was being played by the musicians who were on stage.

People were having the moment of their lives as they laughed and had small chats with each other.

Zizi was with her mom and dad welcoming everyone and having a chat with them, Khwezi was still busy finishing up.

Zizi saw her friend and she held her long black and white dress and dragged it going to her friend.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: pretty face you still not dressed?

Khwezi: yes I was still finishing up with the dessert Zizi: girl almost everybody is here now

Khwezi: I know, I'm nearly done I just need to...

Zizi puts a finger up stopping her from going any further.

Zizi: baby just go upstairs and get ready, I will find someone else to finish up

Khwezi: but friend I need...

Zizi: pretty face please, I promise everything will be fine here in the kitchen just go

Khwezi: fine

She sighs and took off the apron, she went upstairs and she took a quick shower.

She got out and she dried her body, she lotions it and she decided to do her make up first since it will ruin her dress because it's white.

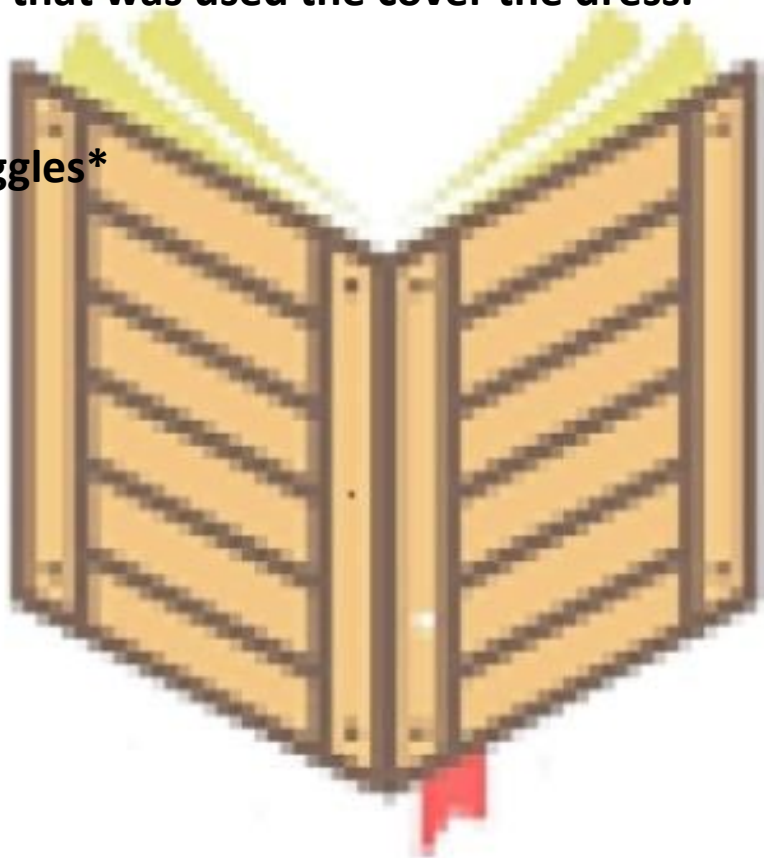


NOVELGURU.COM

She set down and she did her makeup, she was taking her time and had no rush, she applied some lipstick and she pouts in front of the mirror.

She got up and she took her dress from the closet, she unzips the package that was used to cover the dress.

Khwezi: *giggles*



NOVELSGURU.COM

She wore her dress, it was a white tight long dress which had sparkling diamonds, it was covered in feathers at the bottom and at the top covering her breasts.

The dress had an opening where her right leg was out, she set down and she wore the white clear heels.

She got up and she zips her dress, it wasn't that easy but she did it. She untied the long silk weave and she took this small thing that was covered in glass stones.

It looked like a crown, she looked like a goddess, she held the left side part of the dress and she walks out.

She took a deep breath before walking down the stairs, she was looking down and she did not notice the stares she was getting from the people.

She lifts up her head and she stops, she was getting shy as everyone in the room had their eyes on her.

Her cheeks flush, she froze when she saw Nkosie in the crowd.

He was dressed in a black suit and he looked really good, he did not have a tie around his neck but he had a diamond chain

instead of the tie.

Nkosie couldn't keep his eyes off her.

Mrs M she looks pretty

Mr M: she looks like a princess Zizi: my princess pretty face

She smiles, Khwezi finally arrives down the stairs, Zizi went to her and gave her a hug.

Zizi: which kingdom are you from?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I knew I shouldn't have worn this thing on my head
Zizi: girl you look stunning

Khwezi: thank you and you look gorgeous Zizi: thank you your highness

She did a dramatic bow.

Khwezi: I think I saw your brother in the crowd Zizi: who Sandile?

Khwezi: no Nkosie

Zizi: you lying...where is he?

Khwezi: I don't know but I think he is somewhere in the crowd

Zizi: maybe you are seeing things, he said he was not coming

Khwezi: out of all the things I could see I saw your brother?

Yeah right

She chuckles.

There was some noise outside and guards walk in, a short man walks in and they hand him the mike.

NOVELSGURU.COM

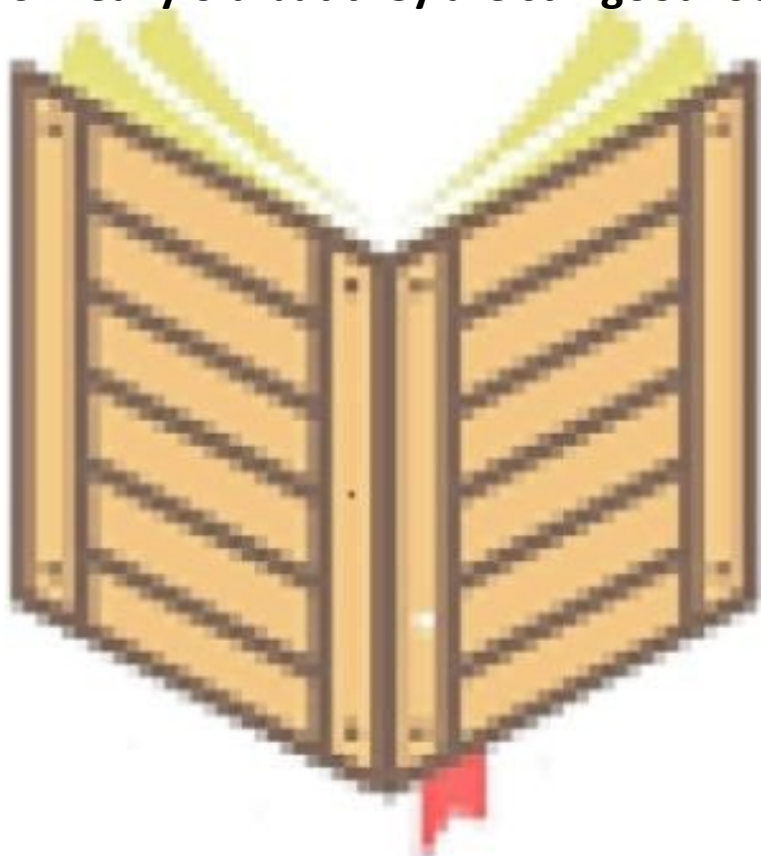
Him: ladies and gentle I present to you, Ingonywama the king Mbikiza and inkhosikati Queen mother Ziyanda

A tall dark skinned guy with a beard which looked neat and so does her, he was dressed in a white suit and had an animal skin

on his left shoulder.

He had a walking gold stick, next to him was a beautiful lady, she was dressed in a white dress which had some beads on it, she had her hair well done and she had a crown.

They both look really old but they are still good looking, they walk in.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Everybody bows down showing some respect, then this dark tall handsome guy walks in, he was dressed in a matching suit like his father.

A girl follows and she looks really young, she was dressed in a white dress.

Mr and Mrs Mthembu went to them.

Mrs M: your royal highnesses

Queen D: no need for formalities, how are you? Mrs M: we are good thank you and you?

Queen D: never better

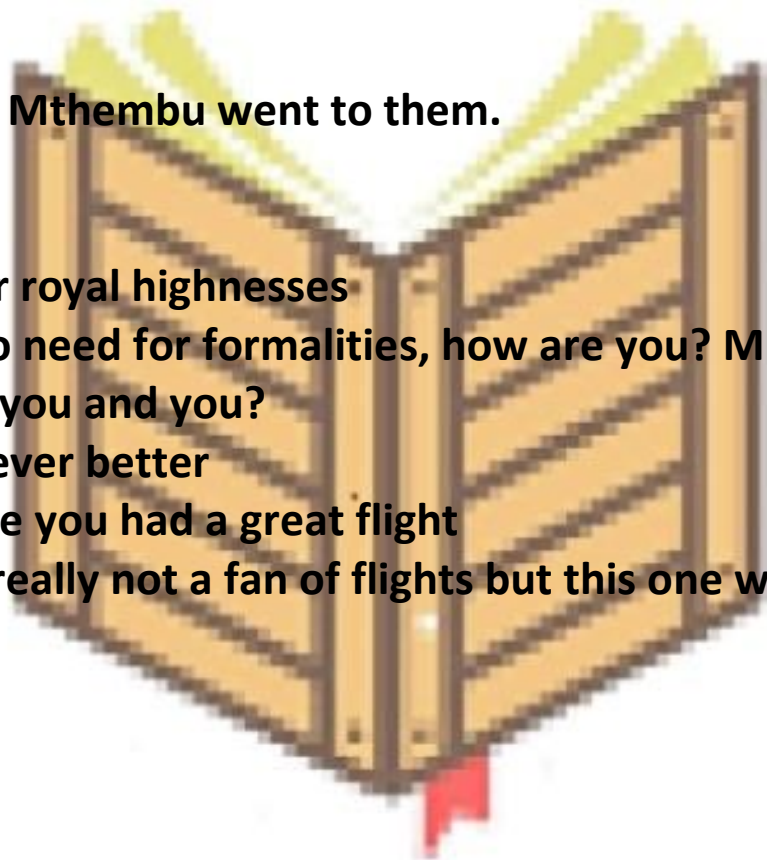
Mr M: I hope you had a great flight

King D: I'm really not a fan of flights but this one was the best

They laugh.

Queen D: let me introduce you, this is my son Lindani and this is my daughter Sikhanyiso

Lindani: nice to meet you, I have heard a lot about your family and your amazing family business



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mr M: well thank you son

Sikhanyiso: i love your house

Mrs M: well thank you darling, I hope you gonna enjoy your time here, let me show you around

Queen D: sure, baby?



NOVELSGURU.COM

She kisses him in the lips and she left, the man went to have their own talk.

The kids well they went around talking to people.

Sandile: you must be the Prince, yow wassup my man?

They did a fist bump.

Lindani: I'm good and you?

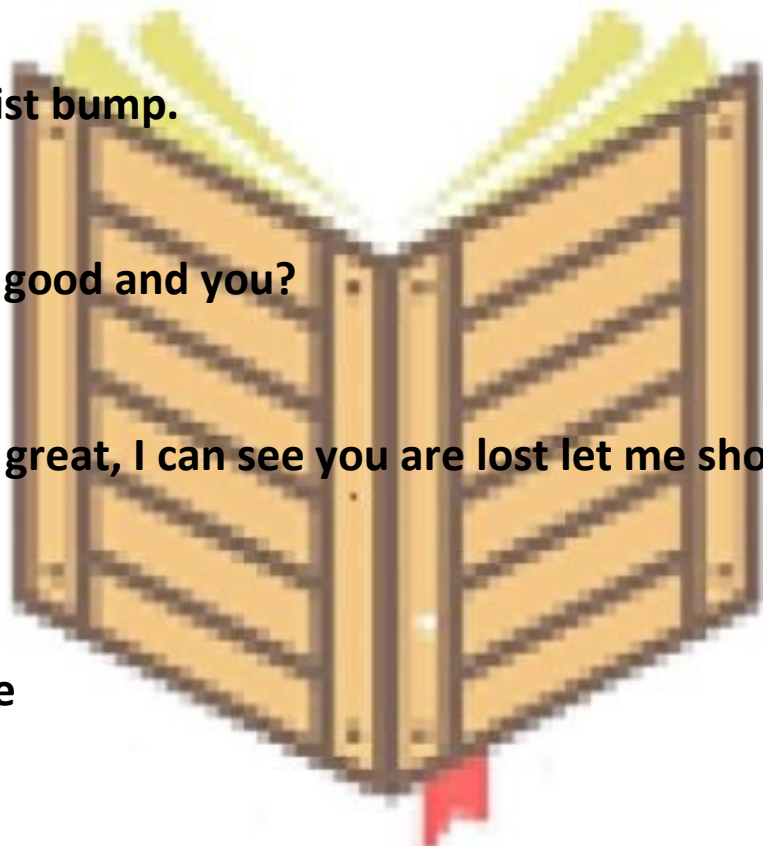
Sandile: I'm great, I can see you are lost let me show you around

Lindani: sure

They walk around and got some drinks, they were standing there talking but someone caught Lindani's attention.

Khwezi was standing there chatting with her friend Zizi while laughing.

Lindani: who is that chick?



NOVELSURI.COM

Sandile: girl correction, that's my sister

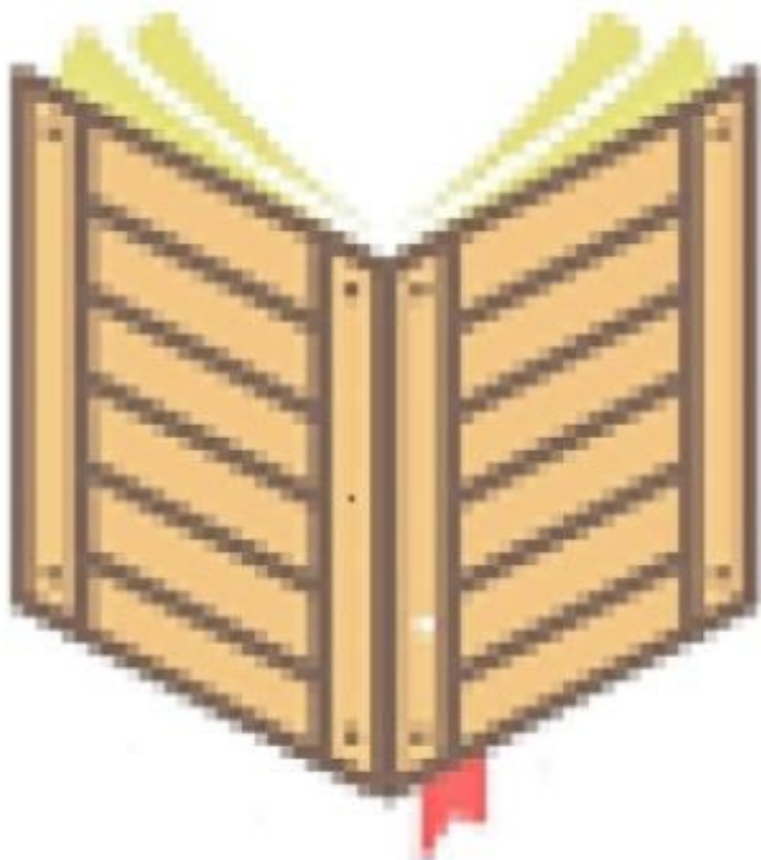
**Lindani: the one in the white dress? She's your sister? Sandile:
ohh that's Khwezi**

Lindani: she's your sister

Sandile: nah, she's my sister's friend Lindani: ohh I see

**Sandile: yeah, let's go meet the other brothers Lindani: other
brothers?**

Sandile: yeah sure let's go



NOVELSGURU.COM

- .
- .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 16

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I'm in the kitchen cleaning up, I mean who uses a kitchen and leaves it like this, if I come across the person who did this I will kill them.

Nkosie: you know you gonna ruin your dress right?

He stood there with his arms folded, his facial expression said nothing, it was blank.

Khwezi: Sawubona nawe Nkosinathi

NOVELSGURU.COM

I said his full name looking him in the eyes, I know it's gonna frustrate him and that's exactly what I want.

Nkosie: how are you? Khwezi: why do you care?

Nkosie: It's a simple question Khwezi

Khwezi: mine is also simple why do you care?

Nkosie: you look good tonight Khwezi: I know

I turn and wash my hands in the sink.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: you know I just came across this guy and he was asking for my name and number i mean dude...Bro?

I wipe my hands with a dish cloth.

Khwezi: excuse me

I left them there hugging.

Zizi: I thought you said you won't come Nkosie: I wouldn't miss this for the world Zizi: you asshole, you look fine

Nkosie: thank you and you look fabulous Zizi: thank you, ohh I missed you

She hugs him once again.

I took a glass of Champaign from one of the people who were serving it, I drank it on one go.

NOVELSGURU.COM

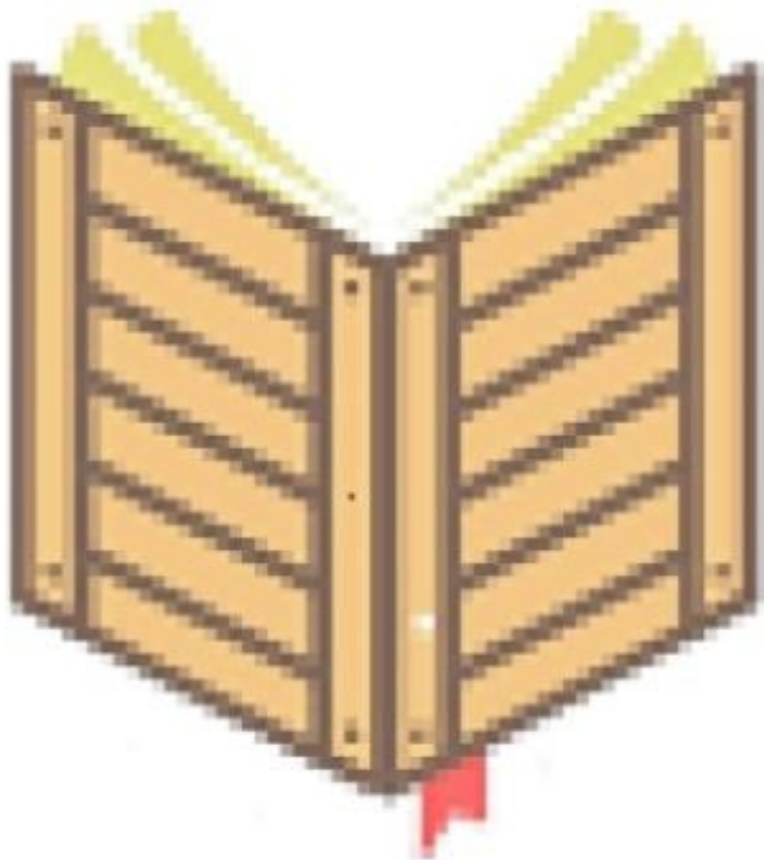
Lindani: you gonna have to slow down on that one?

I turn and it's that guy that came with the king and Queen.

Khwezi: can I help you?

Lindani: ohh sorry, my name is Lindani Khwezi: ohky

Lindani: you must be Khwezi



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: how do you know my name?

Its kinda freaks me out when someone knows a lot of intro about me without me telling them.

Khwezi: I asked you a question

Lindani: hey chill, Sandile told me your name

Khwezi: ohh so he is going around giving people my name

I mumbled.

Lindani: what was that?

Khwezi: nothing, can I help you? You need anything? Lindani: just a moment with you pretty lady

Okay firstly, I don't like boys they are freaks and they use you, second I'm really not in the mood for this guy.

Khwezi: I'm really busy

NOVELSGURU.COM

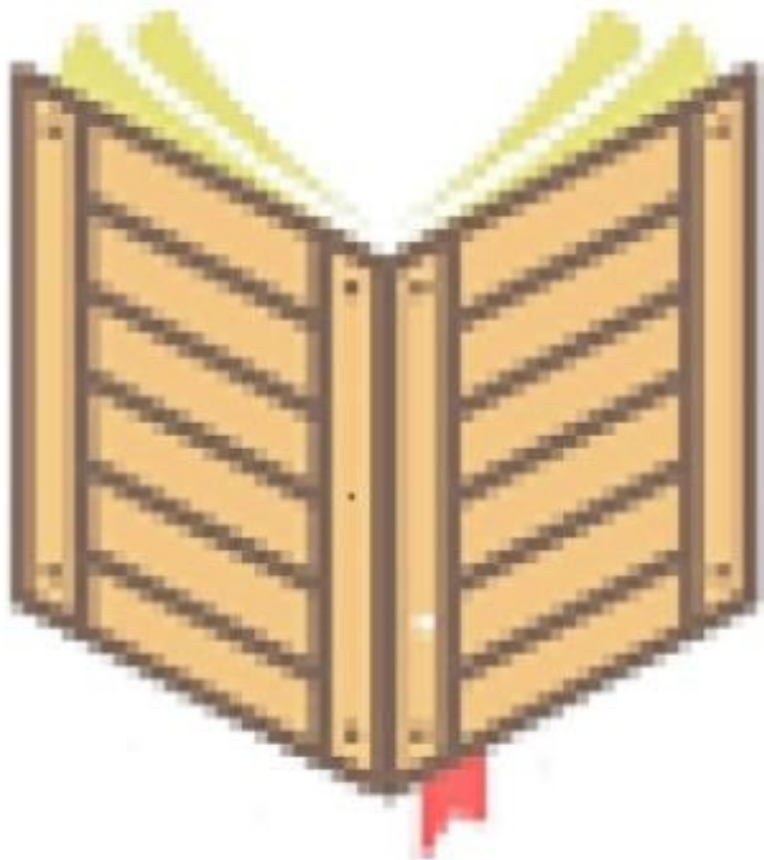
Lindani: don't be rude, I don't bite, want to dance?

I don't know how to dance to this type of music.

Khwezi: I don't know uhm...

He just took my hand and he held my waist, we danced to this slow boring song, I can't even dance properly.

Lindani: so are you from here?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: no I'm not I just came here to study Lindani: ohh, you got pretty eyes

Khwezi: thank you

he pulls me a little closer to him, i don't know if the problem is with me or the person I'm dancing with but I don't feel whatever this dancing is.

Snooze by SZA starts to play in my head, i close my eyes and I placed my head on the guys chest.

Lindani: you know the minute I set my eyes on you, I was like damn that girl is pretty

Khwezi: really?

I open my eyes and they were met with Nkosie's, he was standing in a distance looking at us, or maybe he is looking at me.

NOVELSGURU.COM

But I could feel his eyes on me.

Lindani: and I know we just met but I want to get to know you

Khwezi: why do you want to get to know me?

Everybody started to join in and we all danced, the song changed and Perfect by Ed Sheeran played.

We danced and I was kinda, we started to switch partners but Lindani didn't want to till someone held me by the waist and pulls me towards them.

At the second my heart was beating so fast when my eyes met with his, it was Nkosie.

Khwezi: you know I was still dancing with him right?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I got eyes I saw that

Khwezi: so?

Nkosie: we switching partners, have a problem?

He is still being mean, I look at Lindani who was not pleased as he danced with this other girl.

Nkosie: buka mina (look at me)

Khwezi: ngikubuke leni (why should I look at you?)

I asked while my eyes focused on walls, I don't want to look at him.

Nkosie: my sister asked me to apologise for what I did, it was really wrong of me

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: are those your words or your sisters?

Nkosie: mine

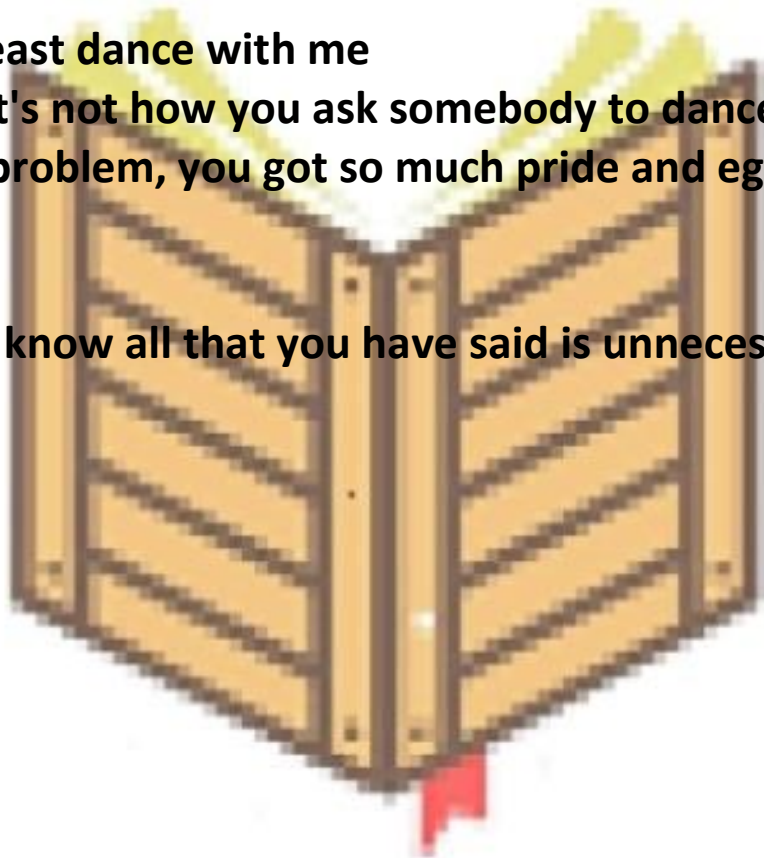
Khwezi: doesn't sound like it, talk to me when you serious with your stupid apology

I remove his hand from my waist and I was about to walk away he held my arm stopping me.

Nkosie: at least dance with me

Khwezi: that's not how you ask somebody to dance with you, that's your problem, you got so much pride and ego

Nkosie: you know all that you have said is unnecessary



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: whatever, let go of my hand or I will make sure to cause a very huge scene

Nkosie: can you please dance with me

**He looks at me in the eyes, what was hard in saying that?
Stupid boy**

Khwezi: I don't know how to dance to such songs

Nkosie: I will show you

Khwezi: no thank you

Nkosie: do you trust me?

Khwezi: no I don't and I never will

He chuckles, 24 hours by Kaylow plays.

He pulls me back to him by my waist, our eyes locked, I hands



NOVELSGURU.COM

on his shoulder.

He slowly moves my waist to the sides, he let's go of my hand and he spins me around and I lost my step but he caught me.

He still go his eyes locked with mines, my body loosens up and I start dancing along.

Nkosie: you see? Khwezi: mmh?



NOVELSGURU.COM

What did he say? I bite my lower lip, I turn around and he held me from behind and I laid the back of my head on his shoulder.

I could feel his breathing on my neck and I really don't know what I just felt, the song lyrics stop but the song is still playing.

I turn around and I face him again, he pulls me even closer to him and our bodies' touches.

**'Hey baby, umuhle ngempela Uuuuu, umuhle ngempela
Nothing's better than having you around Nothing's better than
seeing you smiling Nothing's better than having you in my arms
I want you for 24 hours, 24 hours
I want you for 24 hours, 24 hours-'**

The lyrics say, I don't know a lot is building up in my head as we still held eye contact, I never looked into someone's eyes that long.

I was brought back to life by people clapping, wait wait hold on what?

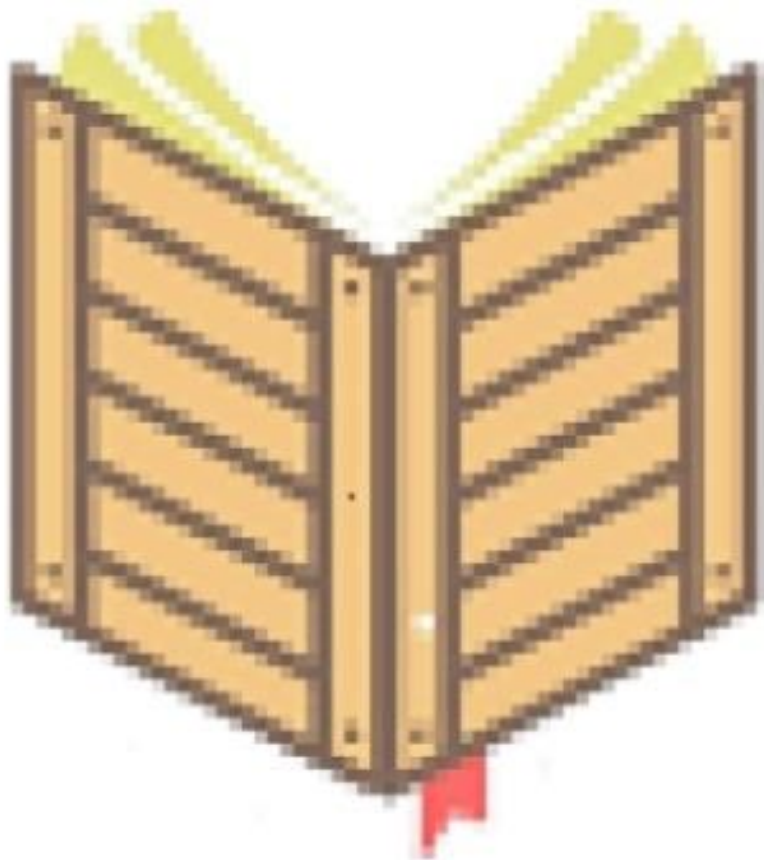
He removes his hands from me, he walks away.

I'm left standing there.

•
FOREVA YENA

Insert 17

KHWEZILOKUSA.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: girl you two looked really serious, I'm still the one for you right

Khwezi: always

I gave him a hug and we laugh, it was just a dance, I just got caught up in the moment.

I'm never gonna forgive him after what he did to me, kicked me out like a dog? Never shame that I won't forget.

That dance won't change the fact that he is an asshole.

Lindani: well that was long Khwezi: I'm really sorry

Lindani: did you two have a thing or...? Khwezi: what you talking about?

Lindani: the way you two danced, it looked like y'all have something going on

NOVELSGURU.COM

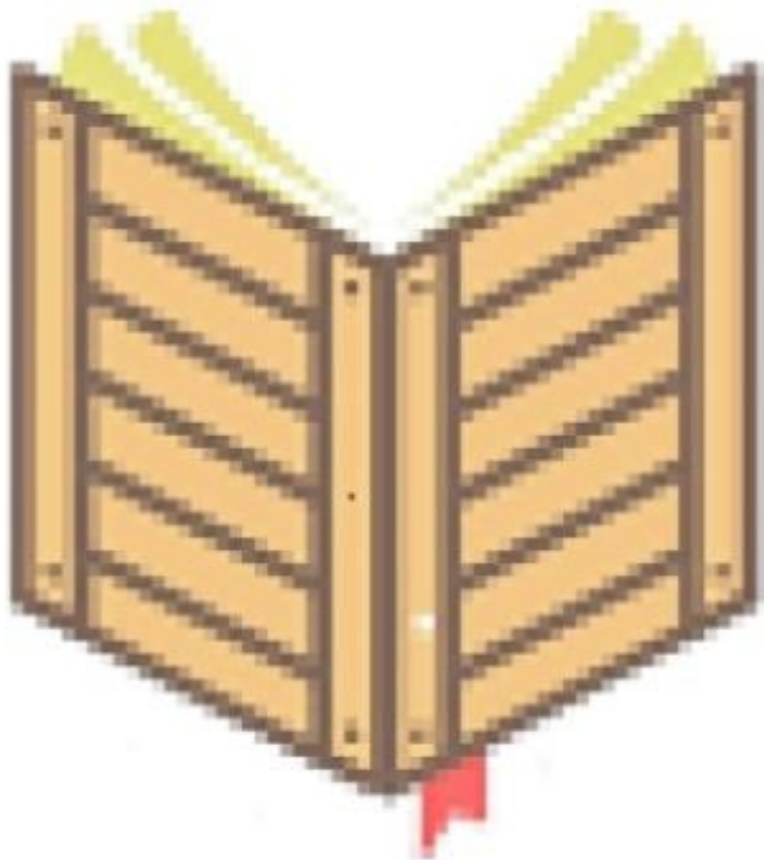
Khwezi: me and that jerk? Never

Lindani: well that's great I guess

Khwezi: I'm really sorry I did not mean to leave you like that

Lindani: it's fine, shall we go get something to eat

Khwezi: sure I would love too



NOVELSGURU.COM

I smile and we walked together to get someone to eat, honestly he is a very nice guy and has a very good sense of humour.

Khwezi: so you telling me that you are 22 years old?

Lindani: yes, how old do I look?

He laughs.

Khwezi: I would rather not say

Lindani: ohh it's that bad

Khwezi: not really

We laughed, Zizi was seated with her brothers and Nkosie was there, he seemed to be fine.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: so tell me what course do you do?

Khwezi: law, before you say it doesn't bring a lot of money and all that stuff...



Lindani: hey hold up, I wasn't going to say that, as long as you going something you love who cares about money?

Khwezi: right?

We smile at each other.

Lindani: I really like your company



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: well your company isn't that bad

Lindani: you just say it, I'm very very very good company

Khwezi: I don't know about that very very very you just said

I laugh, this guy shame.

We spent the whole night talking and knowing each other, I also got the chance to meet his sister Sikhanyiso.

People were now leaving and the royal family was also leaving though they still going to be in town.

Khwezi: aww you guys are leaving now Sikhanyiso: relax we gonna see you soon Khwezi: really?

Lindani: who wouldn't want to see such a pretty face?

NOVELSGURU.COM

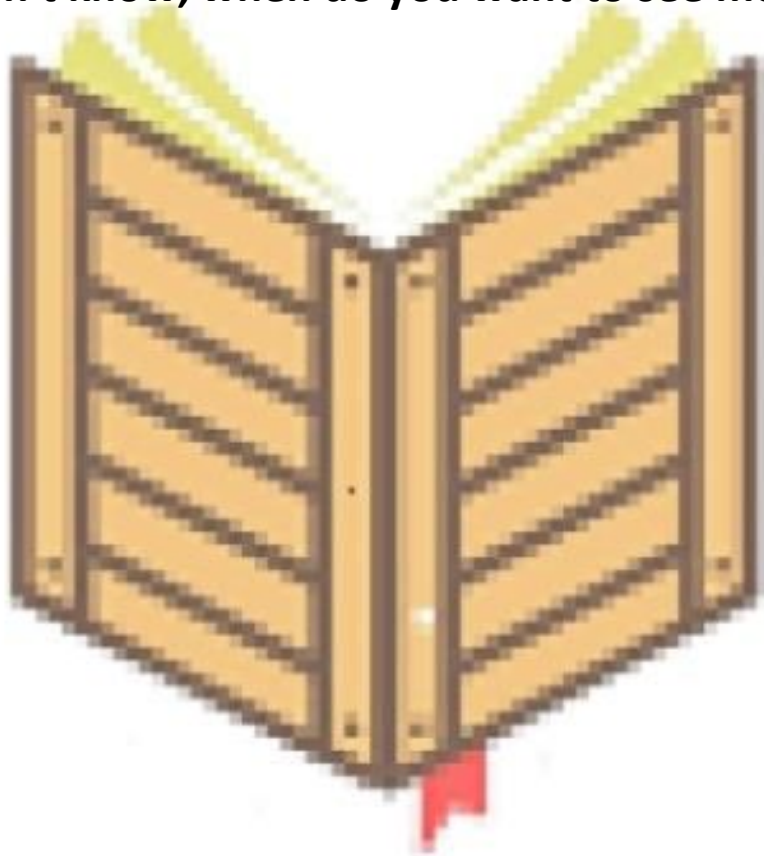
I blush, okay nigga stop you gonna make my cheeks hurt, I think he has done much for the night.

Sikhanyiso: I will give you two some space

She leaves.

Khwezi: so when am I going to see you again?

Lindani: I don't know, when do you want to see me my lady?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: as soon as possible *giggles*

Lindani: then as soon as possible me it will be my lady, good night

Khwezi: it's morning for Christ's sakes

Lindani: you didn't sleep and you are going to sleep now for sure, so yeah good night

Khwezi: okay fine, it's good night then

Lindani: I don't know why you being stubborn

Khwezi: your family is gonna leave you

Lindani: they won't, I will see you okay?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: bye

I gave him a hug and he left, Zizi came to me.

Zizi: I leave you for a night and you already scoring some tall dark skinned guy

Khwezi: girl!! He is really handsome

Zizi: and he couldn't keep his eyes off you

Khwezi: my Prince charming

Zizi: I hope this one makes you happy, I would hate for someone to break your heart again



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: whatever, I'm tired

Nkanyezi: okay we see you and the Prince

I giggles.

Sandile: I'm her number one though

Zizi: can't you shut and stop including yourself in others business

Sandile: hayboh she's my wifey, I saw her first

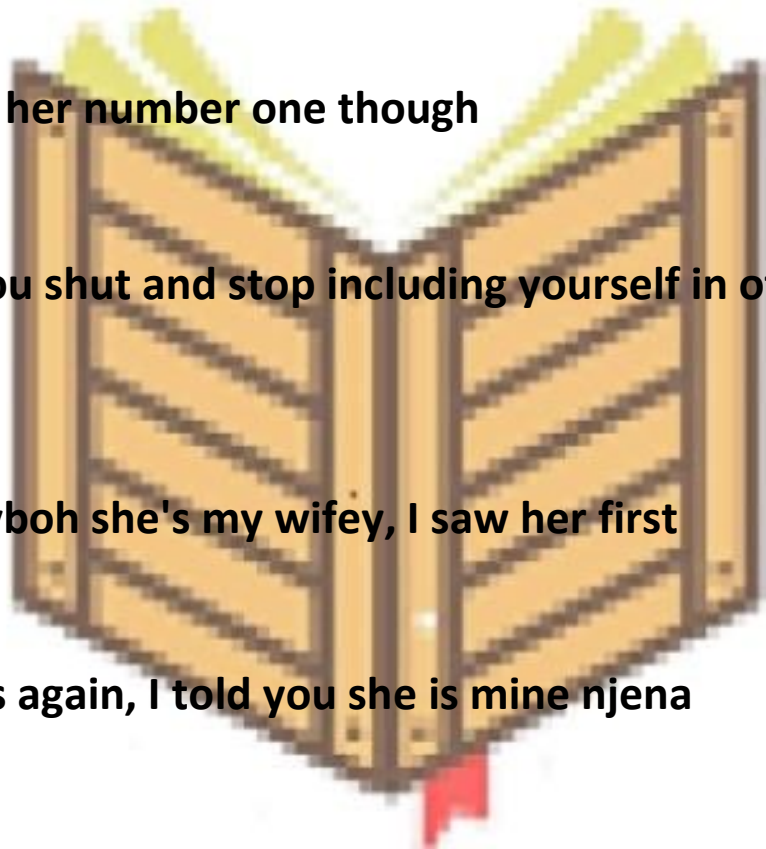
Sya: not this again, I told you she is mine njena

Nkanyezi: if she is your then she is also mine

NOVELSGURU.COM

Ntando: don't forget me

Amahle: don't forget you where? You are mine wena



Ntando: I'm just messing with you

He tried to kiss her but she walks away, they guys laugh.

Ntando: baby I didn't mean it like that

Sya: that's why I don't want to get married



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: yet you want my wife

Sya: yeyyii I said...

Sandile: Khwezi you got to choose who do you want?

I laugh along with Zizi, they aren't really doing this to me.

Khwezi: I'm all of y'all's wife but Sandile comes first

Nkanyezi: that's unacceptable

Sandile: well you heard that gents

He hugs me and I hugged him back, they guys walk upstairs annoyed, I thought we was playing njena.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: Mseti muphi uNkosie? (Where is Nkosie?) Sandile: ohh he went out with dad

Zizi: well I will see him tomorrow

Sandile: and you my wife are coming with me

He lifts me up and he takes me to his room while I scream commanding him to put me down.

He places me down.

Sandile: good night your highness

He leaves my room and I shake my head, these boys bafethu, well. I can't sleep in this dress.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I'm so tired, I took off the dress and I wore my pyjamas, I prayed and I went to sleep.

.

.

FOREVA YENA

Insert 18

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up and Zizi is sleeping next to me, this girl loves me shame, I got up and I went to the bathroom.

I was my face and brush my teeth, I went back to the main room and my phone buzzes with a notification.

"Go check outside I got a surprise for you, L" I giggle, it must be from Lindani, I mean his the only guy I know whose name starts with a letter L. **NOVELSGURU.COM**

I quickly wore my slippers and I went downstairs, the doorbell rang and I went to answer.

A guy stood there with a huge bouquet of red roses, i giggled.

I took the roses and thanked the guy, I went to the kitchen and I placed them there.

I took the note and read it " roses for you beautiful lady, good morning"

I wanted to jump up and down, I giggle and I smelt the roses, I can't believe I got roses.

As I was having a good mood, Nkosie came downstairs and my mood changes.



NOVELSGURU.COM

He makes his way to the kitchen.

Nkosie: morning Khwezi: morning

He took out some water from the fridge and he drank it.

Nkosie: nice flowers

Khwezi: thanks, aren't you gonna ask who they from?

Nkosie: am I supposed to? Khwezi: I don't know

Nkosie: all that is none of my business Khwezi: okay, great then

Nkosie: what you thought I was going to say?

Khwezi: maybe ask me who they from and throw them inside the bin Nkosie: if you want me to do that I would gladly do it

Khwezi: no don't

Nkosie: stop making stupid scenarios in your head, you gonna die

NOVELSGURU.COM

He left me, I look at my flowers once again and I smiled, I took them upstairs.

Zizi: good morning prettyface

Khwezi: morning babes, look who got flowers early in the morning? Zizi: you lie, it's from the Prince



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: the one and only hun

She got up from the bed and we jumped up and down in excitement.

Zizi: you have hit a jackpot with this one Khwezi: tell me about it, I'm so excited Zizi: and I'm happy for you pretty face Khwezi: I'm also happy for myself

Zizi: now that's the smile I have been wanting to see, I really love it when you happy

Khwezi: thank you for being a good friend and I love you

Zizi: I will always be a food friend to you pretty face, I love you more then you know

We share a long hug, she decided to go to her room, I did my hygiene process and I got dressed.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I wore sweat pants and a hoodie, I went downstairs and Mrs M was making breakfast.

Mrs M: good morning early bird

Khwezi: good morning ma, how did you sleep?

Mrs M: knowing we sealed the deal last night, I slept like

perfectly

Khwezi: that's great news, we should celebrate

Mrs M: yes and we will have dinner

Khwezi: great then, can I help?

Mrs M: you did a lot for us yesterday and thank you, you sit down and relax



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I'm good I really do want to help, I mean I can't sit here and watch you cook

Mrs M: well you will darling cause I'm not gonna let you cook

Khwezi: fine I will watch you cook then

I really wanted to help bit it's fine, everyone started to come downstairs and breakfast was nearly served.

Nkosie came downstairs.

Mrs M: ohh my baby boy, I didn't get that chance to see you yesterday

Nkosie ignores his mother and he sits down.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs M: Nkosie I'm taking to you

Nkosie: and I can hear you

Mrs M: don't talk to me like that I'm your mother

Nkosie: I know you are, it's early in the morning ma I'm really don't want any drama

Mrs M: Nkosie get your ass here

Nkosie just set down.

Mrs M: boy I said get your ass here or I swear I'm gonna come get you myself



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie sighs and he got up, everyone was looking at him.

Nkosie: what?

Is he also like this toward his mother?

Mrs M: Nkosie I'm your mother and you can't talk to me like that

Nkosie: I guess I'm sorry then

Mrs M: do you know we were so worried about you missing once again, we didn't want you coming back here like the last time

Nkosie: let's not talk about this

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs M: no we gonna talk about it son, we love you Nkosie and we are your family, we can go through this together as a family

Nkosie: that's the thing I don't want you involved I want to be alone

Mrs M: Son please don't shut me out

Nkosie: just do your breakfast mom, I will eat out

He left, I could see the pain written all over Mrs M's face, I didn't know he is like this to his family

Khwezi: mama I'm sorry

Mrs M: no I'm sorry you had to weakness that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: trust me I know that side of him, why is he like this?

Mrs M: he just has his own shit that's going on, he doesn't want anybody close to him, it's one of those bad days but he will be fine

Khwezi: he is always like this?

Mrs M: yep, we got used to it

Khwezi: have you tried maybe to get him some help

Mrs M: we did but he doesn't want to talk to anybody, he shuts us all out and...

She wipes her tears.

Mrs M: I'm sorry

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: its okay, i will finish up Mrs M: thank you baby

She took of the apron whole shaking and she went upstairs, okay this is sad.

I continued to make breakfast and I called everybody, we had

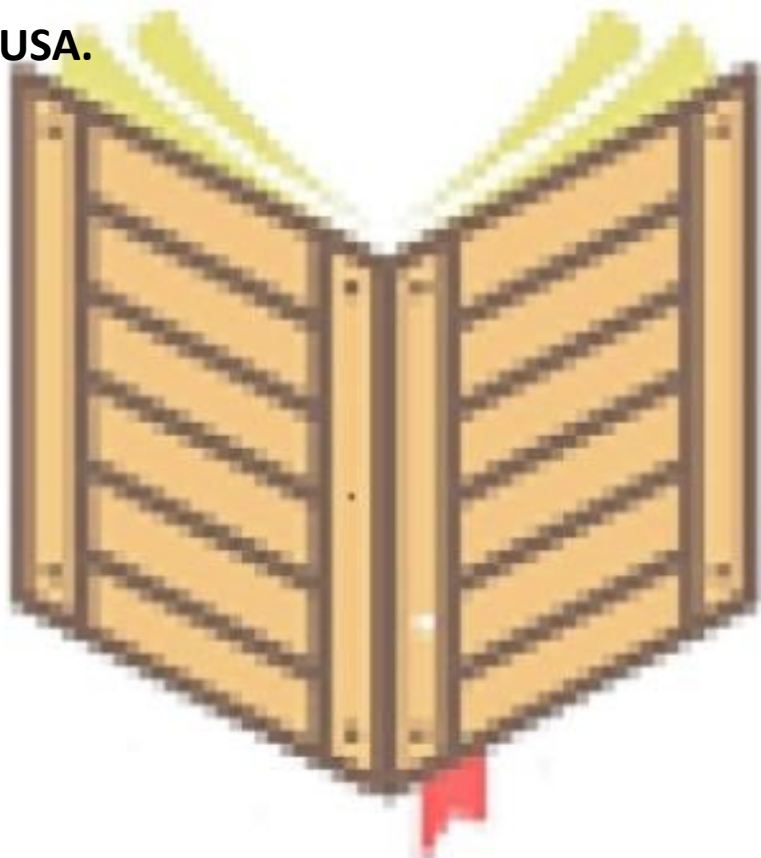
breakfast.

-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 19

KHWEZILOKUSA.



NOVELSGURU.COM

It got late and I got ready for tonight's dinner, I wore a powder blue dress. I wore earrings and I stood in front of the mirror doing my hair.

I got a call and it was mom, I answered.

Khwezi: my night keeps getting better Mom: how are you sweetheart?

Khwezi: I'm good and you?

Mom: I'm also fine, you know I only have a little bit of airtime I just wanted to hear your voice

Khwezi: argh mama, I love you Mom: I love you more

The call got disconnected, I guess she really had little airtime. I wore my sandals and I took my bag, I went out.

Zizi: the driver will be here in a few Khwezi: okay

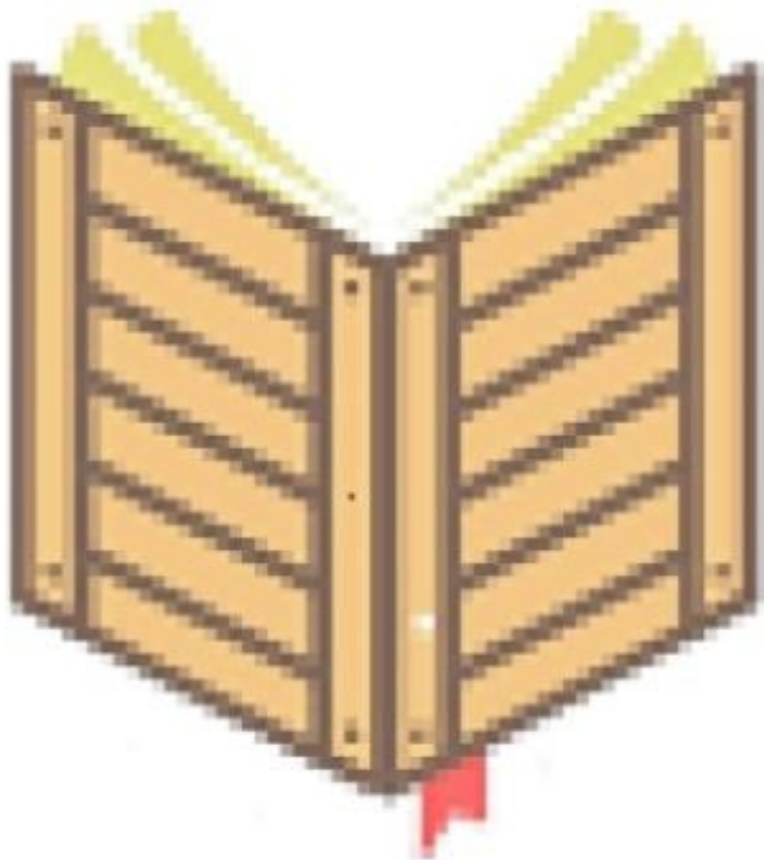
I set down on the couch, the driver got there and he took to Zizi's house.

He drops us off right outside and we went inside the house, I was taken by the nice smell, me and Zizi immediately went to the kitchen.

Zizi: hey mom, it smells good in here

Mrs M: hey girls, I decided to go all out today Khwezi: I see

We giggle.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: hey pumpkin

She gave Zizi a hug.

Sandile: hey wifey Khwezi: hey

Zizi: the Prince is going to kill you wena Sandile: shame in your dreams

I laugh.

Nkanyezi: mama kanti when are you finishing?

He set down on the kitchen high chair.

Mrs M: boy you not gonna rush me Nkanyezi: sorry mama but it smells so good

Sya: and you have been cooking for a long time now

NOVELSGURU.COM

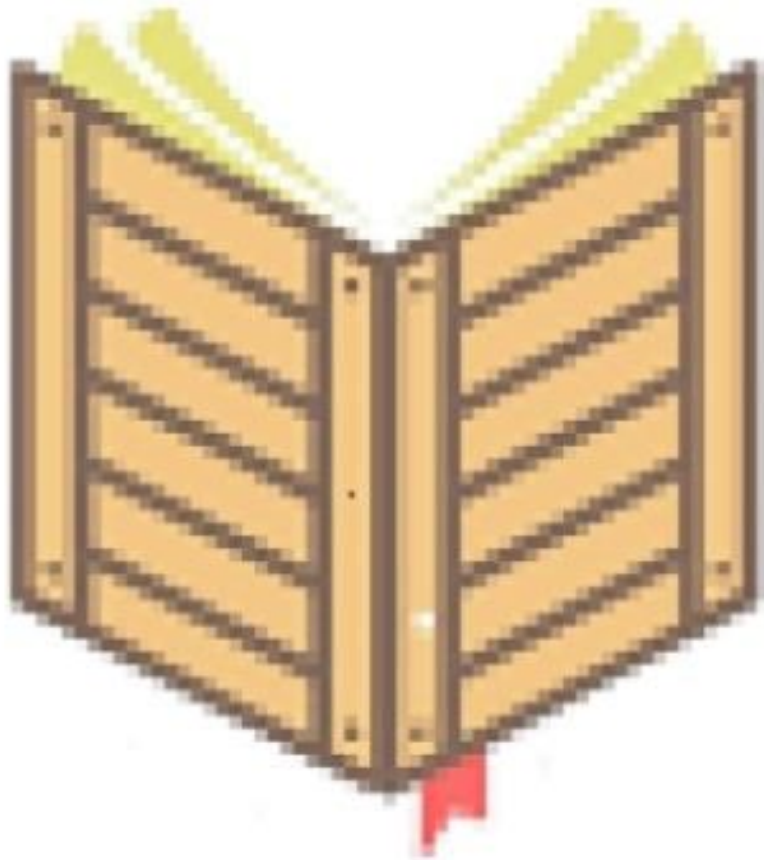
Mrs M: yeyyii be patient

Ntando walks in with his wife, Mrs M looks at his son and she smiles.

Ntando: beautiful women Mrs M: Makoti...

Amahle: yebo ma

Mrs M: how are you two love birds? Ntando: we are fine mom and you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs M: I'm good just worried about your brother, he doesn't want to talk to anyone

Ntando: where is he? What's wrong this time?

Sandile: we don't know bro he just keeps on chasing us out of his room Ntando: I will go and talk to him

Mrs M: please do son Zizi: I will come with you

She went upstairs with her brother, I helped Mrs M in the kitchen, after a few minutes Zizi and Ntando came downstairs shaking their heads.

Nkanyezi: and then?

Zizi: he doesn't want to talk Ntando: ayyy mama we tried

Mrs M sighs.

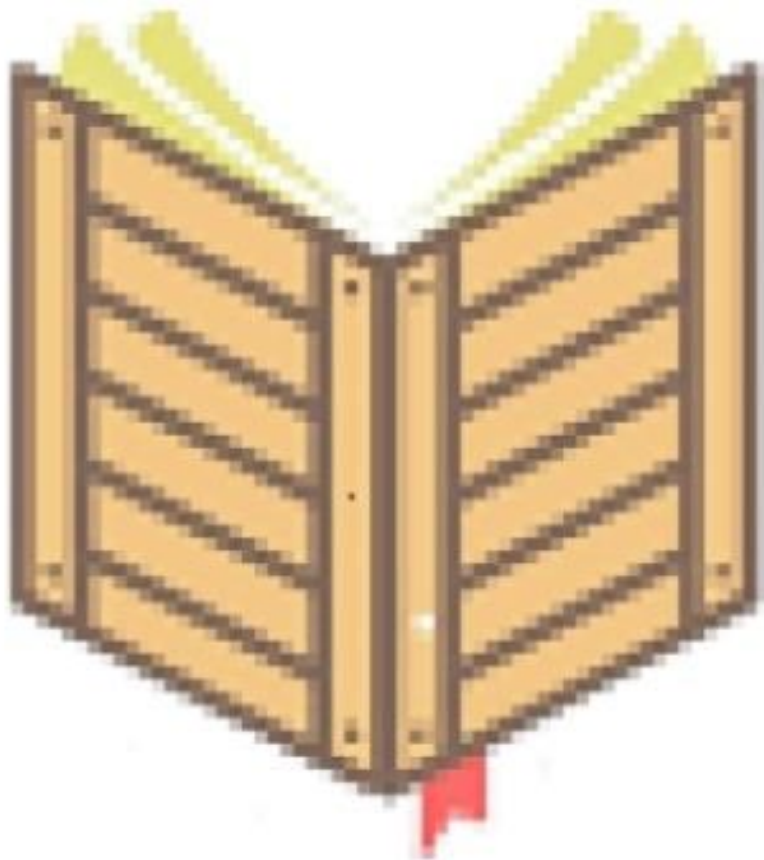
Khwezi: I need to use the toilet

I wash my hands and wipe it with kitchen cloth, I went upstairs and when I got there instead of going to the toilet I went to Nkosie's room.

I don't know why but I found myself standing outside his door, I look around to see if anyone is around then I got inside.

He was seated in a couch facing the window, he had his hoodie hat on.

Nkosie: thought I said I don't want anybody here



NOVELSGURU.COM

I clear my throat and he turns to look at me.

Nkosie: what are you doing here? Khwezi: I came to see you

He chuckles and shakes his head.

Khwezi: you know what you doing is really wrong? I know whatever you going through hurts but...

Nkosie: shut up cause you don't know what you talking about

Khwezi: then tell me, talk to me about it so i know what I'm talking about

Nkosie: get the fuck out

I fold my arms and I look at him, ain't no way I'm letting him act like this, everybody is worried about him.

NOVELSGURU.COM

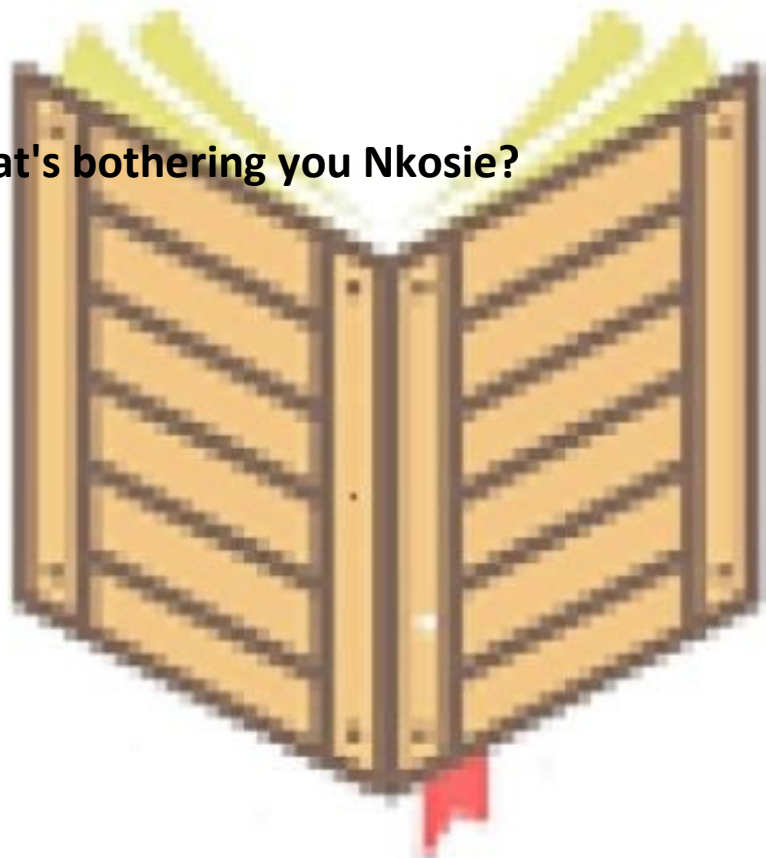
Nkosie: well enjoy standing there

I went and set next to him, he didn't even turn to look at me.

Khwezi: you know your family loves you right? You really lucky to have a family that cares about you like this, you know some other people do have a family but they don't seem to give a fuck about them

Nkosie: none of the shit you saying is gonna sort out this whole situation, even if you talk to me things will still remain the same

Khwezi: what's bothering you Nkosie?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: the fact that you annoying me when I simply told you that I don't want you here

Khwezi: I'm trying to help you here

Nkosie: I didn't ask you to help me

Khwezi: why you acting like this?

Nkosie: I'm not acting, it's just the way I am

Khwezi: you being a dick

Nkosie: that enough get out, fucking leave my room

He took off the hoodie hat and I could see his face properly, was he crying? His eyes are red.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: are you crying?

Nkosie: get out!!

He shouts.

Khwezi: Nkosie...

I say in a low tone looking at him, I really did not think he would be crying, I mean he is Nkosie, the hard headed one.

He isn't even looking at me, I pulled him closer to me and I gave him a hug, what it that's bothering that is his even crying.



NOVELSGURU.COM

He hugs me back and he held on tight.

Khwezi: you gonna be okay Nkosie: I won't be okay

He says still laying on my boobs, I play with his hair and I place the back of my hand on his forehead.

Khwezi: you burning up

He doesn't respond, I just heard cute snores and I look at him, he is fast asleep, I giggle this guy.

Now how am i going to get out of here, this guys is heavy.

I allowed him to sleep, after a few minutes I moved him off me. I made him lay on the couch, I took a blanket and I covered him.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I still hate you though

I left the room, when I got out my dress was kinda messed up so I fixed it then I hear someone clapping their hands.

I look up and I saw Amahle.

Amahle: I see, you sleeping with brother in law now

She had this evil smile on her face.

Khwezi: I'm not sleeping with him, I was just talking to him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amahle: for this long, I knew you were trouble you want to sleep with all of these brothers

Excuse me?

Khwezi: what? No I...

Amahle: before you even think about it, Ntando is mine and if you dare touch him girl I will murder you

Is this girl okay upstairs?

Khwezi: listen girl deal with your insecurities and stop coming to my face and saying bullshit, I'm not you ntanga mina (I'm not your age/I'm not your peer)

Amahle: just stay away from my man

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: eyy voitsek

I click my tongue and I went downstairs, Zizi was setting up the table.

Zizi: you taking this long in the toilet?

Khwezi: I just had a lot of business, if you know what i mean

**She just laughs, we all set down, while we were about to pray
Nkosie came downstairs.**

Mrs M: Nkosie are you okay?

He nods and he held his mother's hand.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: nozalo lamii, I'm really sorry for the way I talked to you...I understand you care about me and you were worried

Mrs M: its okay baby, I understand that it must be hard for you

Nkosie: and I'm sorry to everyone else, Pumpkin?

He looks at Zizi, who had her arms folded like a baby.

Nkosie: I'm sorry little sis

Zizi: well I forgive you because I love you, plus I need you to buy me a new phone

She says and Nkosie laughs, he set down and he looks at me.

Dad: thank you for that, now let's have dinner as a family

Nkanyezi: I have been hungry ever since I got here

He says, we all ate dinner together in a conversation full of laughter and it was really fun.

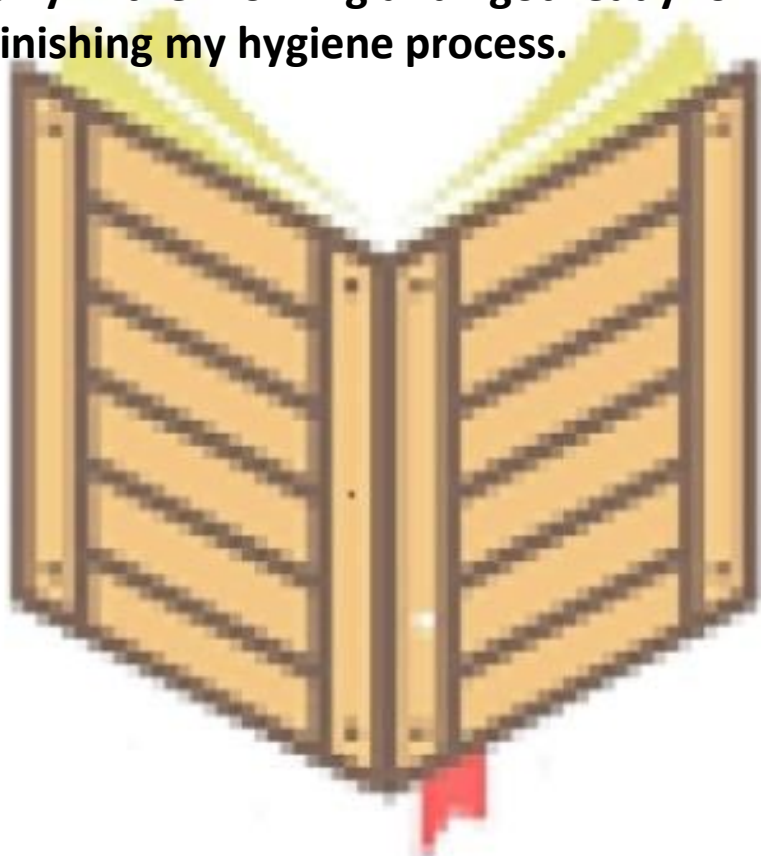
•
•

FOREVA YENA

Insert 20

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up early in the morning and I got ready for my morning class, after finishing my hygiene process.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I wore a pair of thorn jeans and a brown sweater with white butterflies, I wore my shoes and I decided to not tie my afro.

I packed my books inside my bag and I went out, Zizi is not out yet so I made breakfast for the both of us.

I dish up for the both of us and Zizi came out.

Khwezi: morning babes

Zizi: morning pretty face, how did you sleep? Khwezi: great and you?

Zizi: there's nothing to complain about

She set down and we had breakfast.

Zizi: before we go I need to tell you something Khwezi: sounds serious, okay?

Zizi: so the driver kind of had an emergency he needs to attend to

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: oh okay and?

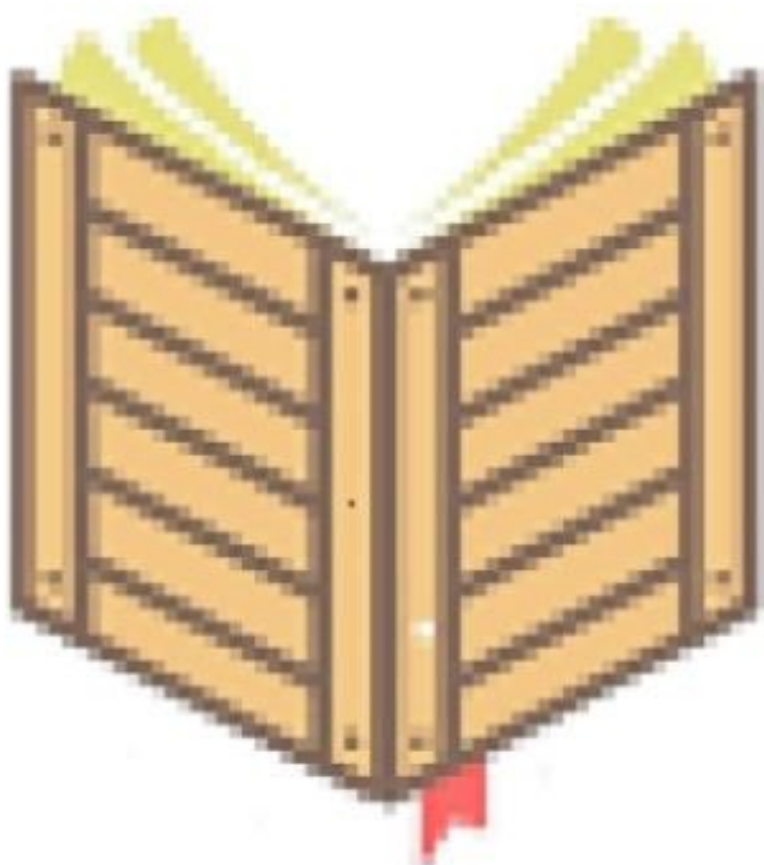
Zizi: Nkosie is gonna pick us up Khwezi: okay

Zizi: you don't have a problem?

Khwezi: why would I? We all move in right?

I take a smile and I continued to eat, we put our plates inside the sink and we went out.

Nkosie's BMW is parked outside, I really don't want to think about this too much I'm gonna go with the flow.



NOVELSGURU.COM

We got in the back and he didn't even greet, thus guys though.

Zizi: so you not gonna greet us? Nkosie: hello?

Zizi: mxm, wabhora shame

He shakes his head and he starts the car.

Zizi: so you heading back to work?

Nkosie: yep things are getting messed up back in the office, so yes

Zizi: that great you can't kick yourself in your room forever

Nkosie: what would have stopped me?

Zizi: whatever that got you out of that room would have stopped you

NOVELSGURU.COM

He looks at me through the rear-view mirror, I turn and my eyes focus outside.

I did not notice but we arrived, I was the first one to get out of

the car, Zizi followed me, we went to our first class.

I was packing up so I can head to my second class, I walk out and I saw Sakhile standing there outside.

What does he want?

Zizi: you will see me in class Khwezi: okay I won't take long



NOVELSGURU.COM

She left and I went to Sakhile.

Sakhile: Butterfly

He smiles, I keep on a straight face.

Khwezi: what are you doing here Sakhile?

Sakhile: I came to see you, I missed you

Khwezi: Sakhile I thought I made myself clear that I don't ever want to see you

Sakhile: but you can't just tell me that, look you and I will break up when I say so, that bullshit you told me back in KZN was just a waste of your breath

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: what don't you understand Sakhile? I told you I don't want you, can't you just accept that

Sakhile: no I can't, you are mine and I will take down anybody who tries to take you away from me

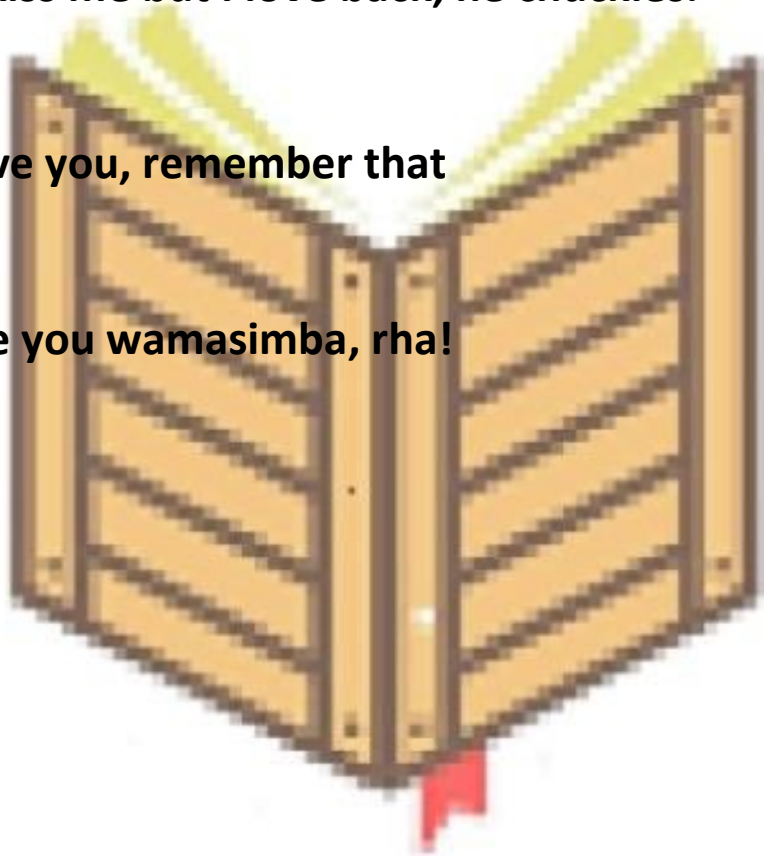
Khwezi: are you crazy?

Sakhile: about you yes, I will see you real soon butterfly

He tried to kiss me but I love back, he chuckles.

Sakhile: I love you, remember that

Khwezi: love you wamasimba, rha!



NOVELSGURU.COM

I click my tongue as he walks away, I really can't believe this guy right now, I went to my second class and the lecturer was already there.

He didn't allow me in, so I really got kicked out of class because of Sakhile who's even not worth my energy.

I walk down the hall and I went outside, I set on the step and I sulk, my phone rang and it was Lindani

I smile and answered.

Khwezi: your highness Lindani: my princess

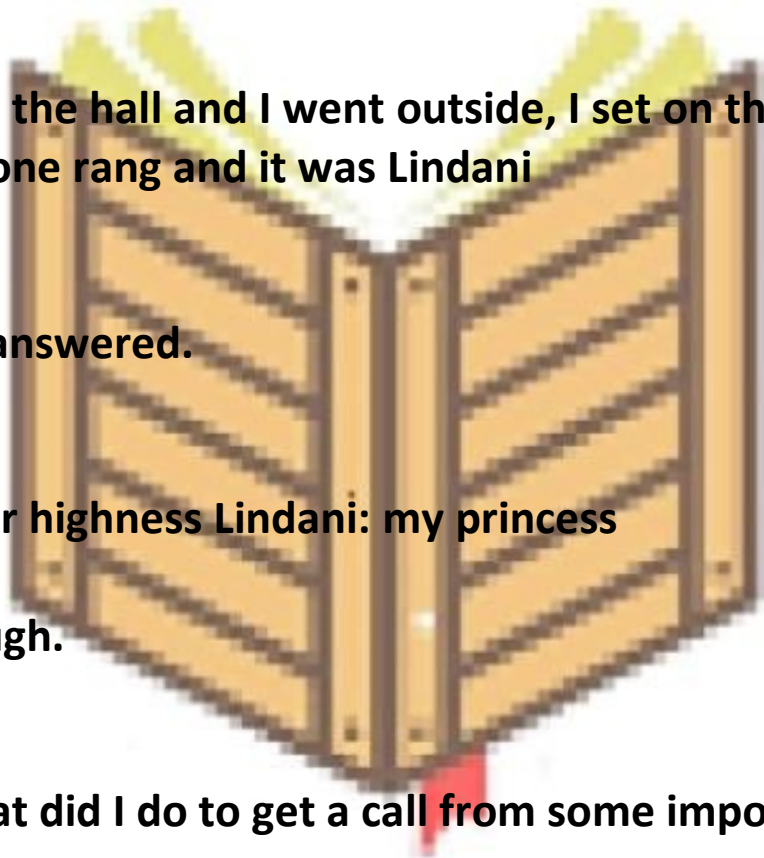
We both laugh.

Khwezi: what did I do to get a call from some important like you?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: I'm important, I'm fluttered

Khwezi: I'm serious though



Lindani: before I answer that how are you doing?

Khwezi: I'm doing good and you?

Lindani: same, so are you not supposed to be in class or something? I mean it's still early

Khwezi: I got kicked out, I arrived late so the lecturer wouldn't let me in



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: ohh I'm sorry about that

Khwezi: Don't be, I don't really enjoy his classes anyways

I roll my eyes.

Lindani: what caused you to be late?

Khwezi: I had to go to the toilet

Lindani: I see so since you missy got kicked out, can I come by and wait with you?

Khwezi: as in like now?

Lindani: if you don't have a problem with me coming now

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: no I don't

Lindani: give me the location



Khwezi: I will send it to you

Lindani: okay I will be waiting for your text

I hung up, I sent him the location, after a few minutes he drive in with his Range Rover.

I went to his car and I got inside, he smiles.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: you look gorgeous Khwezi: thank you

I smile.

Lindani: I brought us some snacks

Khwezi: you are the best

Lindani: anything for you

He gave me the snacks and we added up sharing.

Khwezi: where is your sister?

Lindani: at the hotel, she begged me to bring her with but I said no

Khwezi: come on you left her there alone?

Lindani: she's with mom

Khwezi: why didn't you want her to come with?

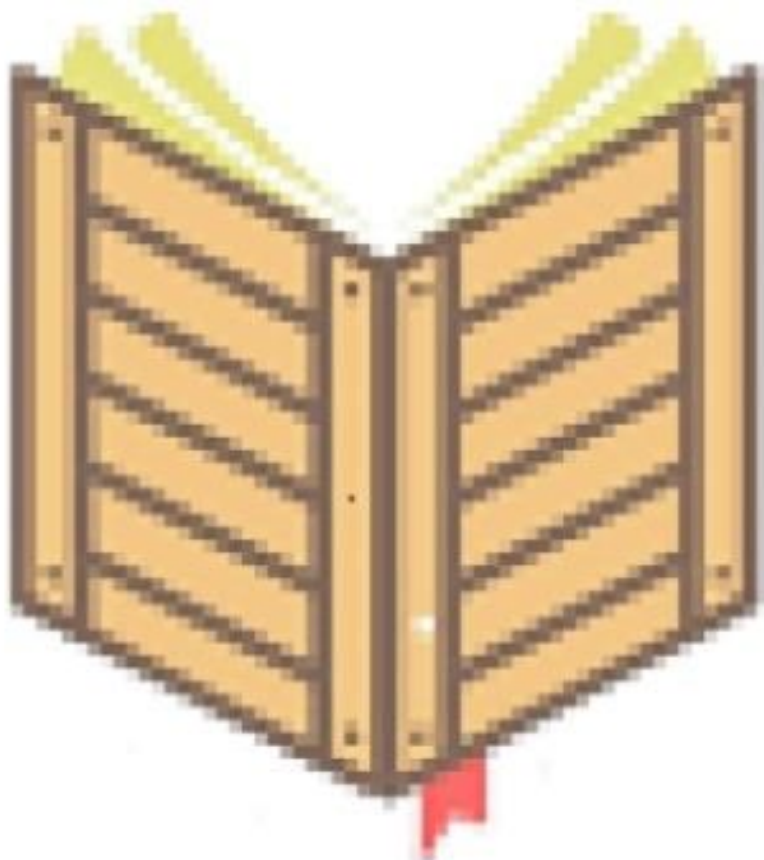


NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: because I wanted some time alone with you

Khwezi: so you can do what?

I look at him in the eyes, he does the same.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: nothing just to look at your beautiful face

Khwezi: ohh that's all?

I said in a flirting tone, I look at his eyes then his lips, I don't want to kiss him, I just like seeing him being uncomfortable.

He clear his throat, I laugh so hard that my stomach was hurting, he was just looking at me.

**Khwezi: I'm sorry, I'm really sorry Lindani: I really don't get what's funny Khwezi: you won't get it vele
Lindani: mmh**

I could see I kinda spoilt his mood, I feel bad now.

Khwezi: Lindani? Lindani: Yes

Khwezi: I didn't mean to spoil your mood I'm sorry Lindani: it's cool

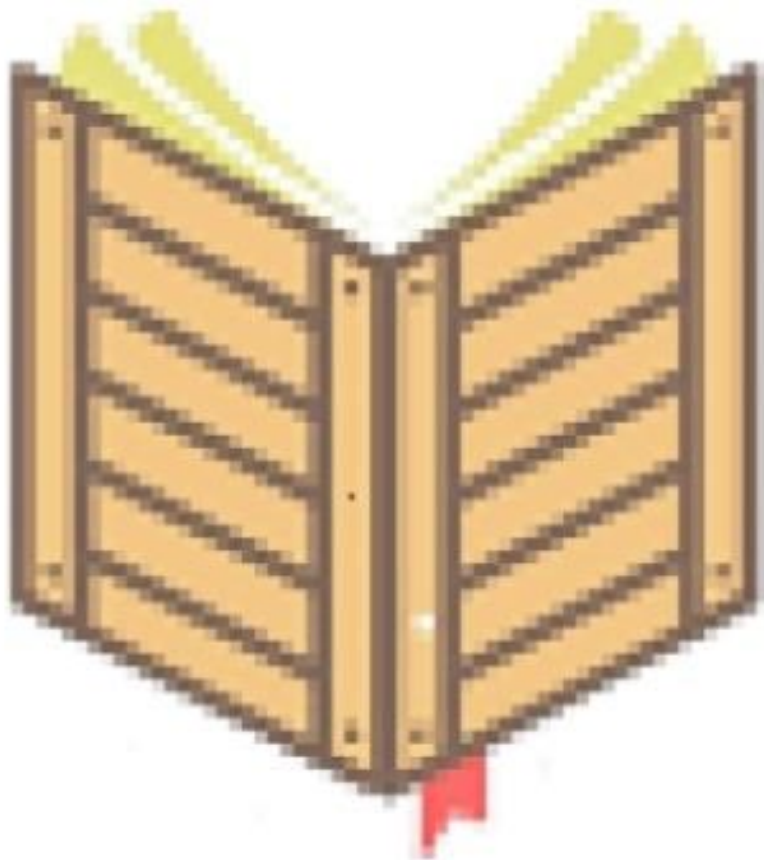
Khwezi: it's not but if you say so

We continued to chat till the class ended and he had to leave, I got out of the car and Zizi was standing there waiting for me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: was that Prince charming? Khwezi: yep it was him
Zizi: girl soon you gonna be the queen mother Khwezi: let's not
move that fast



NOVELSGURU.COM

We laugh, we went to our third class, after finishing all our classes we went out.

Nkosie was outside waiting for us, the fact that every girl is staring is really annoying I mean...trust me I'm not jealous.

I could feel his eyes on me though he was driving, does he want to cause an accident?

He parks outside our apartment.

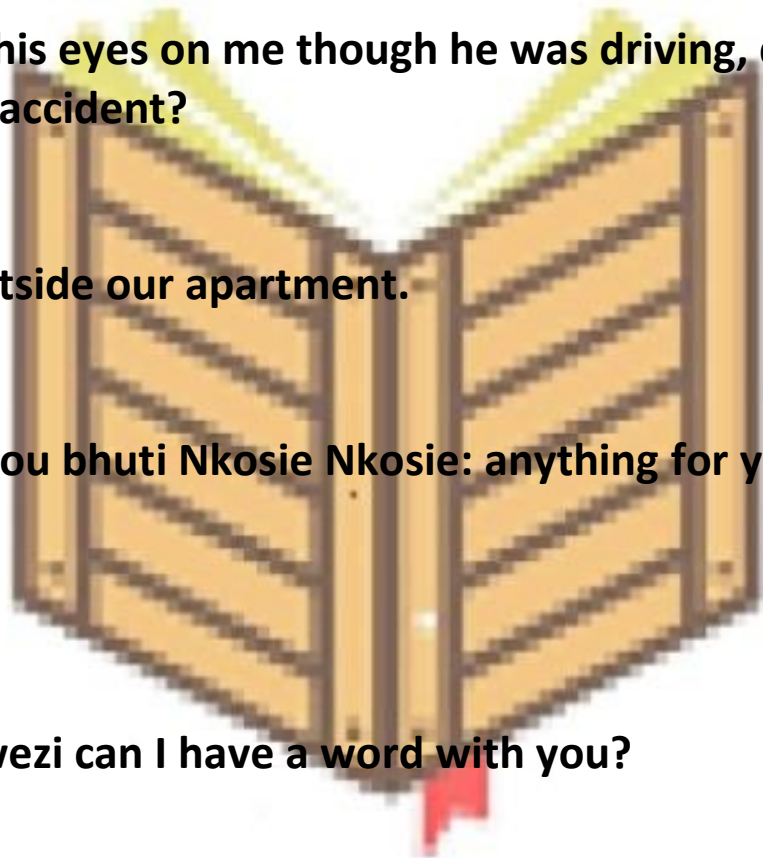
Zizi: thank you bhuti Nkosie Nkosie: anything for you pumpkin

She smiles.

Nkosie: Khwezi can I have a word with you?

I look at him then back at Zizi, I don't feel the need to talk to him.

Zizi: I will be inside

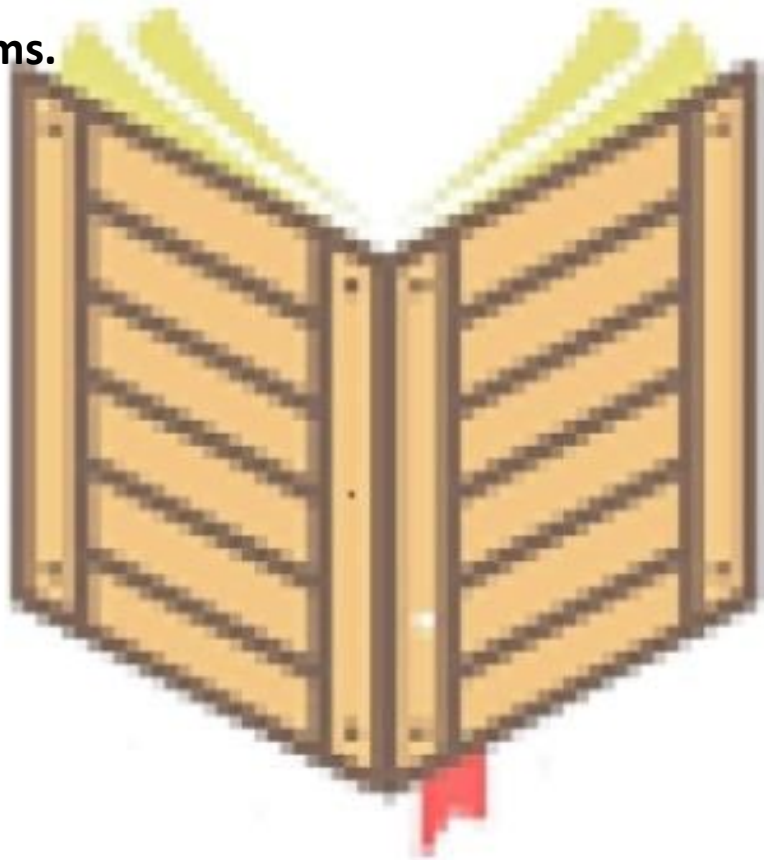


She got out of the car and went inside.

Nkosie: can you come in front so we can talk properly

Khwezi: we talking properly njena

I fold my arms.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: just come and sit at the front

Khwezi: say please

Nkosie: kahle Khwezii

I roll my eyes and I went to sit in the front, he unbuckles his seat belt and he faces me.

Khwezi: I'm listening Nkosie: I'm sorry

He looks at me, his sorry that's all he is gonna say, that's so blank

Khwezi: you are sorry? Nkosie: yes

Khwezi: ain't you gonna add anything to that, what are you sorry for actually? are you sorry for being rude to me were as I was being nice to you or are you sorry for taking my virginity and yes I know we were both drunk and not in our senses but the following morning we were both in our senses

I'm crying, you see this is what I hate about myself, I'm weak and my tears come out really quick.

Khwezi: but you kicked me out like I was some sort of dog, as if

I was nothing? you used me Nkosie and I allowed you too, I don't know why even after what you did I still care so fucking much for you but wena you still just the same, you are a jerk Nkosie, iyinja not just any dog but you see those hungry dogs who stay in the streets and eat left out food from the garbage, yeah that's you

I wipe my tears still wanting to say more.

Khwezi: honestly right now I don't care about your apology anymore, I don't even know what I saw in you in the first place



NOVELSGURU.COM

I wipe my tears and I pick up my bag, he set there not saying anything, I don't care if he remains quite what I know is that he heard me.

I got out of the car and slammed the door.

.

.

FOREVA YENA

Insert 21

NKOSINATHI.

I woke up early in the morning, Amanda was sleeping next to me, she must be tired after what we did last night.

I got out of bed and I went to take a shower, I got done and I dried my body, I went to lotion my body.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I got ready for work and I went downstairs, I made myself a cup of coffee while looking at some documents on my iPad.

Amanda came downstairs dressed in my shirt, she came to me and she hugs me, I push her off.

Nkosie: you gonna ruin my suit

I quickly say and she giggles, it's a good thing I got my own house, I wouldn't bring Amanda to my parents' house.

Amanda: baby the things you did to me last night, fuck I want to go through that night again

She held my manhood and I remove her hand.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: don't do that the fuck, jeez

Amanda: sorry, baby can you give me your card I want to go out and do a little shopping

Nkosie: no, get dressed and leave, I don't want you here when I come back...I will be bringing in important people

Amanda: Nkosie you can't do that, we just had a moment of our lives and wena you kicking me out

Nkosie: I don't have time for you right now

I put the empty cup inside the sink.

Amanda: what kind of relationship is this?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: that's the thing, you think we in a relationship that's where you get everything wrong

I checked the time and I'm already late for the meeting.

Nkosie: I don't want to find you here

I took my BMW car keys and I drove to work, I arrived there and I park outside where I usually do.

I went in and everybody greets me, My P.A came to me telling me how late I am.

I got inside the board room and the clients were already waiting for me.

Them: you are late Mr Mthembu



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you in my building so we go by my rules

The lady who was sitting down rolls her eyes at me.

The meeting started, after an hour the meeting ended, they signed the file and they left, I don't have time to shake hands and say thank you.

I pour myself some whiskey and i look at the file, i drank the whiskey while paging the file.

The board room door opens and my siblings walk in, these idiots.

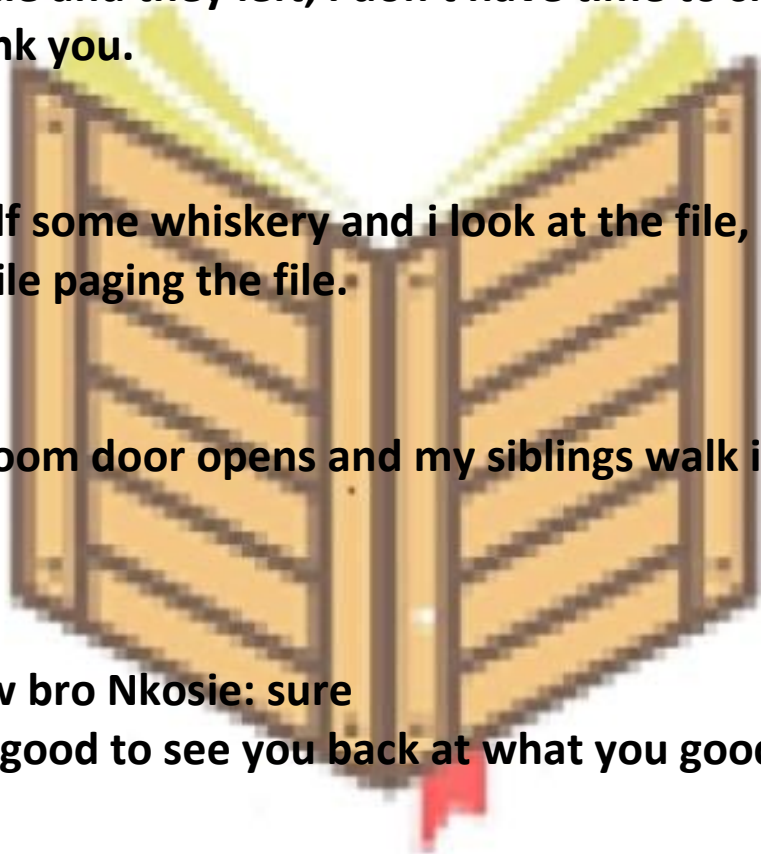
Ntando: yow bro Nkosie: sure

Sandile: it's good to see you back at what you good at

Nkosie: i mean nobody does it better than me right?

Sya: nobody trust me, it's also good to see that you are okay

Nkanyezi: yeah, phela we don't like seeing you like that



NOVELSGURU.COM

They all nod agreeing.

Nkosie: it won't happen again, i guess

Ntando: so i heard Zizi talking about Khwezi's birthday being around the corner

And there it goes again about that girl.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: we should host a party for her

Nkosie: why should we?

Nkanyezi: cause she is our friend and she's like a sister to us

Sya: the jealousy Zizi will have if she hears you say that

Nkanyezi: she would murder me, but honestly though, Khwezi deserves this party

Sandile: she has been nothing but good to us

Well they speaking for themselves they should count me out on that one, she hates me and i don't blame her.

Ntando: we also need to sort out that thing

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: i got it handled

I say, i know what he is talking about.

They left and i continued to do some meetings with my clients, it got late and I'm meeting with some people tonight.

I got inside my car and i drove to the airport, i got there and their plane was landing, speaking of good timing.

They got out of the plane, i don't even know their names but i know what I'm going to do.

We drove to my house while they tried to engage in a conversation with me but I'm not interested at all.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I'm interested on what's inside that brief case, we arrived at my house and we got out of the car.

I poured myself some whiskey, they set down.

Guy1: so we are here to...

I took out my gun and I shot both of them dead, I don't talk I do business. I gulp down the whiskey and I place the glass on the table.

I went and took the brief case, I opened it using one of their fingerprints and it was followed with cash, a small black beg and there was a device.

Nkosie: perfect

I took out my phone and called Syathokoza.

Nkosie: they wanted to fight with me so I killed them

I lied and he laughs.



NOVELS SURU.COM

Sya: so everybody you deal with always wants to fight with you and you kill them?

Nkosie: it's the only option, just get your ugly face here

I hung up.

I opened the small black beg and it had beautiful stones by that I mean diamonds.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: now this is what I'm taking about

.

.

FOREVA YENA

Insert 22

KHWEZILOKUSA.

It's been two days and I have been spending time with Lindani, I don't know what to say but I think I'm catching feelings for him.

Lindani is a nice guy and this other day he took me out, I have never been treated by a guy so nice.

I just finished taking a shower, it's my birthday tomorrow and I'm thinking of heading home to celebrate it with my family.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I got dressed and I wore a pencil skirt, I wore a white shirt but I tied it up making it a crop top.

I went out and Zizi was on a call with someone, she looks frustrated and she's taking down a few things on her note book.

Nkosie was seated on the couch watching TV, I don't really have the energy for him.

I don't regret a single thing I said to him.

Zizi: listen I said...

She froze when she saw me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I didn't mean to disturb you

She laughs nervously and I went to the fridge, I decided to make a fruit salad.

Zizi: I will call you later...sure. bye

She hung up and she smiles looking at me.

Zizi: you look beautiful today

Khwezi: thank you, what was that call about? You looked really frustrated

I finished chopping the fruits and I put them inside a bowl, I took a fork and I ate.

Zizi: it wasn't that important, it's just an ordinary call

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: okay

I smile.

Khwezi: I have been thinking of going home since it's going to

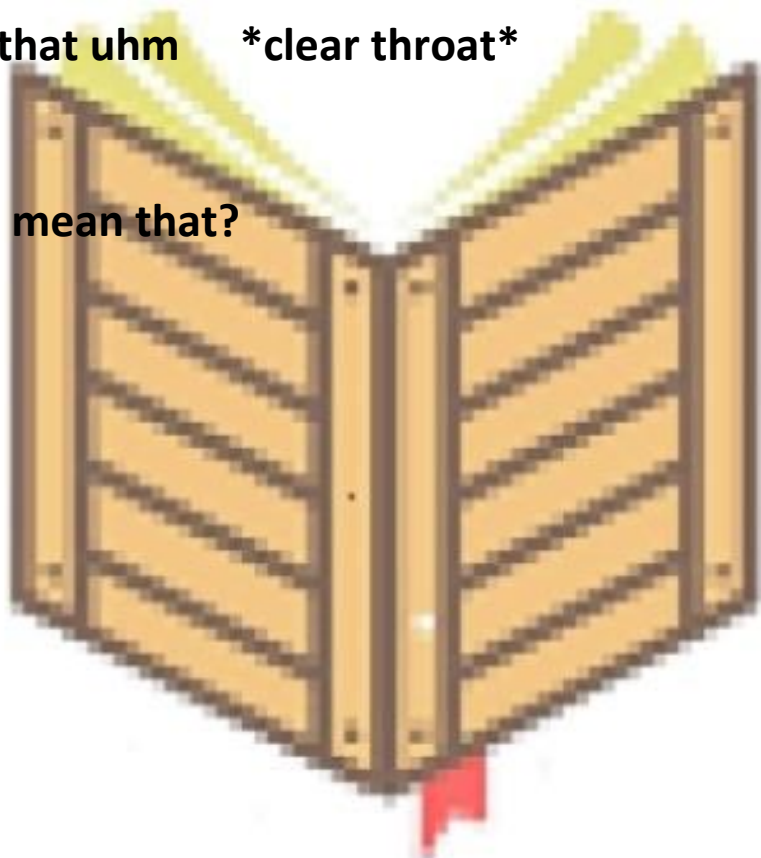
be my birthday tomorrow

Zizi: what? No you can't go

Khwezi: what do you mean I can't go?

Zizi: I mean that uhm *clear throat*

Khwezi: you mean that?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: you have spent your birthday with your family these whole years, not that I'm saying you shouldn't spend it with them but princess this is your first birthday with us and we want to spend it with you

Khwezi: I really didn't think of that

Honestly I didn't.

Zizi: think about it though

She looks at me with begging eyes, I sigh and I nod, she jumps to me and gives me a hug.

Khwezi: you squeezing me

Zizi: no I'm not *giggles* thank you pretty face Khwezi: whatever ugly face

Zizi: please. you see this is God's finest creation

NOVELSGURU.COM

She says moving her eye brows, I laugh.

Nkosie stood up and she came to the kitchen, he looks at me and I do the same.

Nkosie: hi Khwezi: sho

I continued to eat my fruit salad, I got a text from Lindani telling me he is outside, I smiled.

Khwezi: well that's my queue to leave, I will see you later friend

I wash my bowel on the sink and I wipe my hands, I caught Nkosie looking at me and I chuckle.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I took my phone and I went out, Lindani was standing outside his car and he looks really sexy today.

I don't know if it's the sun or what but damn he looks good, I gave him a hug and he brushes my ass a little.

I pull out from the hug and bite my lower lip.

Khwezi: what was that about Mister?

Lindani: nothing, how are you?

Khwezi: I'm good and you?

Lindani: I'm okay, see I came to talk to you about something

Khwezi: what is it?

NOVELSGURU.COM

I say in a low tone.

Lindani: I'm heading back to Swaziland

Khwezi: what? Why? I thought you said you gonna stay longer

Lindani: I'm a prince Khwezi and I got duties

Khwezi: I know but you know tomorrow it's gonna be my birthday

Lindani: I know but I have to go



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: but Lindani...

I gave him a hug, yes I'm crying, I'm a cry baby

Lindani: don't cry, tell you what then...

I look at him with my chin on his chest.

Khwezi: what?

Lindani: I will be back tomorrow for your birthday

Khwezi: you Will? You the best

I peck his lips and his eyes widen, I bite my lower lip what did I just do? Where did I get suck a liver?

NOVELSGURU.COM

I look into his eyes.

Lindani: can I get that kiss once again

He says in his deep voice and pulls me closer, I melt...I pull him

closer by his neck and my lips meet with his.

We kiss for a few minutes and I pull out, I look at him in the eyes and he rubs my lips with his thumb, I smile.

Khwezi: you should get going if you want to come back early tomorrow

Lindani: you are right, I will see you tomorrow then



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: travel safe and tell me when you get there

Lindani: you sound just like my mother

I giggle, he gives me a kiss and he got inside his car, he drove off and I went back inside the apartment.

Zizi: it took you long enough, wonder what you were doing

She gave me a naughty smile and I hit her with Cushion as I set down.

**.
.**

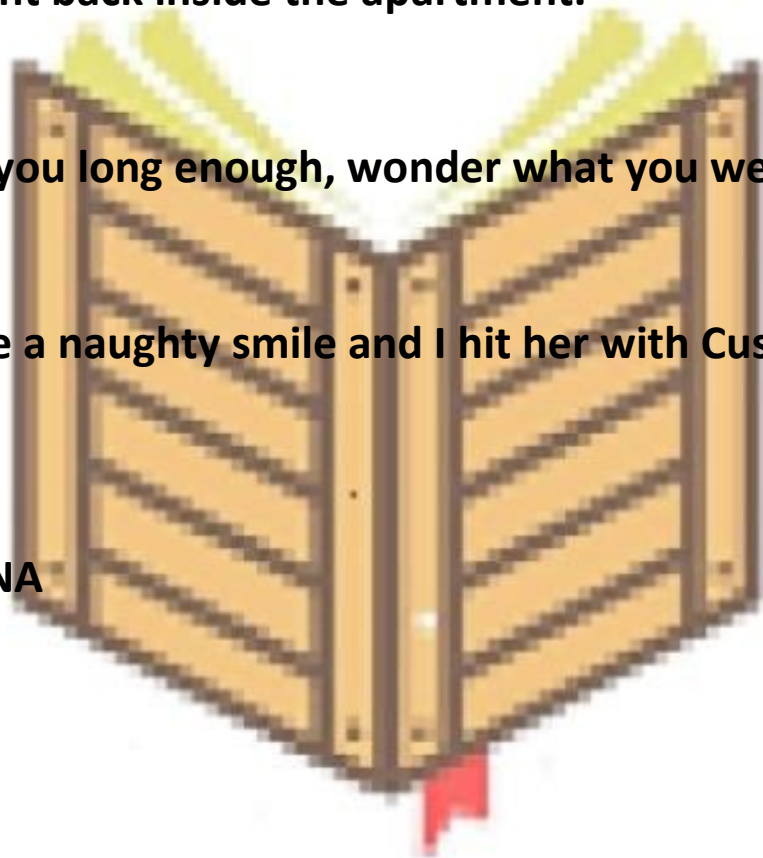
FOREVA YENA

Insert 23

ZIZIPHO.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I woke up around 5am and I took a shower, the reason which woke up is I don't want to see Khwezi cause I want to make her feel sad then I will surprise her with the biggest birthday party.

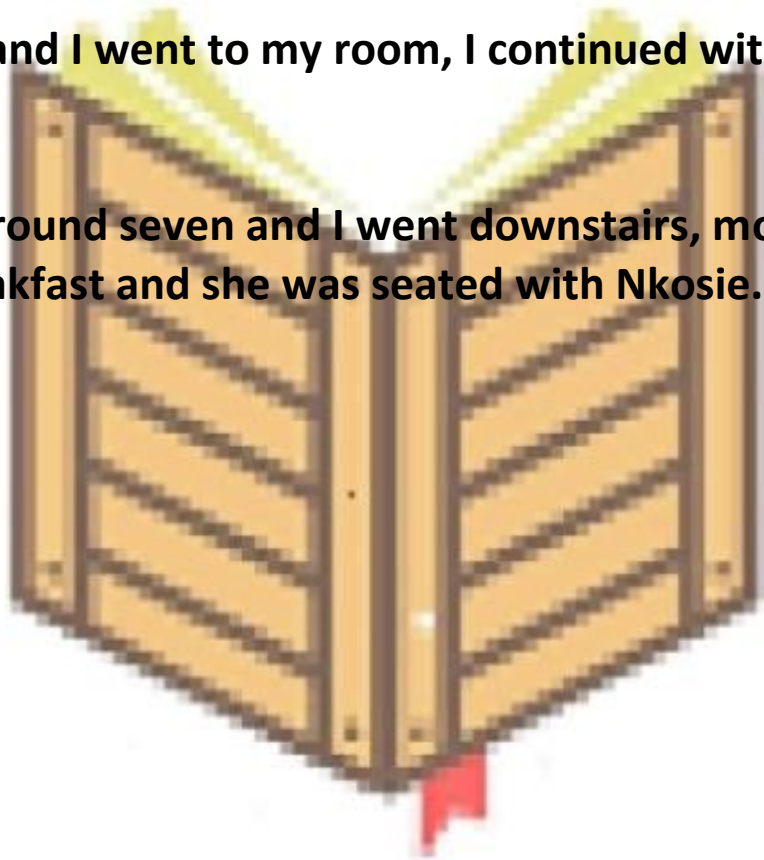


I got out of the shower and I dried my body, I lotioned my body and I wore some jeans and an oversized t-shirt.

I packed a bag and I get a text that the driver is outside, I got out and I left.

I got home and I went to my room, I continued with my sleep.

I woke up around seven and I went downstairs, mom was up making breakfast and she was seated with Nkosie.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: my favourite humans

Mom: hey baby, when did you get here?

Zizi: I got here around 5am, you guys were sleeping

Nkosie: so early why?

Zizi: I didn't want to wish Khwezi happy birthday cause she will see I got something planned for her

Mom: you so cruel

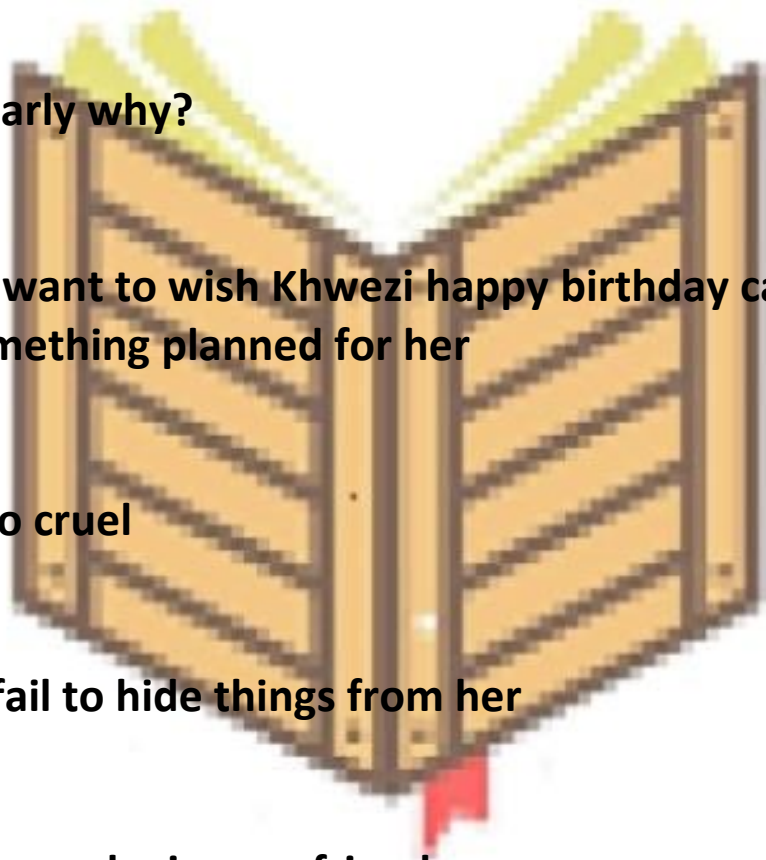
Zizi: mom I fail to hide things from her

Mom: I get you, she is your friend

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: thank you at least you understand and wena you up early, you usually sleeping at this time

Nkosie: you make me look like a lazy person like you



Zizi: I'm not lazy Bhuti Nkosie

Nkosie: yes you are it's just that you don't know it

Zizi: I'm taking you out of my favourite list

Nkosie: I know you won't do that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: if you continue being like this then I will

Nkosie: I got to go, I have meetings to attend

Zizi: don't be late for the party

Nkosie: yeah yeah whatever

He rolls his eyes and he left, I helped mom in making breakfast.

The brothers won't be joining us so it's me and mom for today, we finished having breakfast and we watched a movie.

It was around 12h00 when we started to decorate the house for the party, I'm very good at planning parties.

The place looked really beautiful when it got done around five, it was getting dark and I'm very happy with the work I have done.

I got the chiefs to cook her favourite dishes, which I know cause I'm a good friend of course.

I invited a few of my friends and Instagram followers, it was gonna get lit and I had in a few celebrities.

As I saw that everything was looking good and the people are enjoying, now I need to go fetch Miss Party.

I got inside the car and the driver drove me to our apartment, I got inside and I place the apartment keys on the counter.

Zizi: pretty face



NOVELSGURU.COM

I turn on the lights and she is sitting on the couch cuddling herself, I notice a few tissues on the floor.

Zizi: pretty face are you crying?

I went to her and indeed she was crying, I sat next to her and I wipe her tears and kiss her cheek.

Zizi: what is wrong my love?

Khwezi: you left me here all alone, on my birthday Zizi...you forgot

Zizi: your birthday? Ohh I forgot, sorry friend

Khwezi: you see I should have went home

NOVELSGURU.COM

She wipes her tears, my friend her is a drama queen and a cry baby, she is really cute.

Zizi: look I'm sorry, tell you what? Let go to my place and we will watch a movie while eating ice cream

Khwezi: I don't want too

Zizi: come on please, I will make it up to you...we will order all your favourite food

Khwezi: fine, let me go and change

Zizi: and wipe your tears please

Khwezi: yeah I will



NOVELSGURU.COM

She got off the couch, she is still wearing her pyjamas, she got out after an hour, she was dressed into blue leggings and a white hoodie, she had her socks on and her sneakers.

She looks good, we left and drove back to the house, we arrived.

We got out of the car and girl couldn't see the decoration and the lights were turned off.

Khwezi: is everybody sleeping?

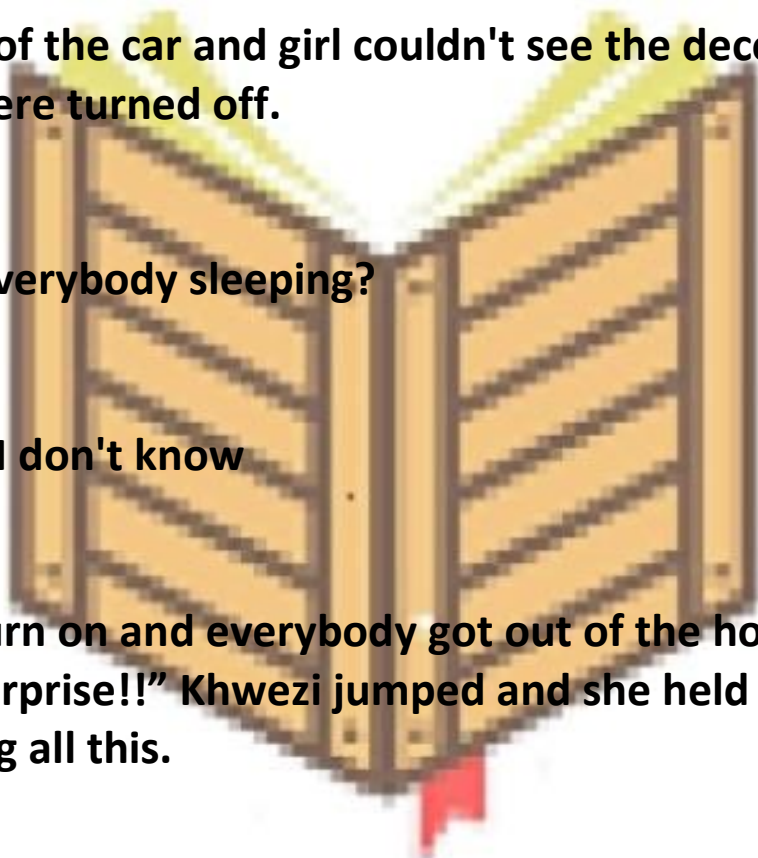
Zizi: maybe I don't know

The lights turn on and everybody got out of the house and shouted "Surprise!!" Khwezi jumped and she held her mouth not believing all this.

Khwezi: all these people are here for me?

Zizi: I guess I didn't forget your birthday after all

She gave me a tight hug.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: thank you best friend, I love you Zizi: I love you too pretty face

We both pull out from the hug, my brothers came along and they wished her happy birthday.

Nkanyezi: happy birthday Khwezi: thank you

She smiles, they went inside and the party started, there was a lot of music and dancing, Khwezi was just having her coke.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I went to the stage and I took the mike, i cleared my throat and the Dj turned off the music.

Zizi: well that's much better, I would like to take this opportunity to thank each and every one of you who were able to come to my best friend's birthday party

Khwezi: she's talking about me

Everybody laughs.

Zizi: she has been a huge blessing in my life, the first day we met she gave me her pen cause I didn't have mine and look...

I took out the pen and u showed her, I never gave it back, she smiles.

Zizi: our friendship grew and it became strong, I love you girl and nobody will take your position

Khwezi: I love you too Bestie



NOVELSOURU.COM

Zizi: now let's lift up our drink, a toast to my beautiful best friend and her turning 21

Everybody cheers and we drank our drinks, I got off the stage and the Dj continued to play the music.

I went to Khwezi and she gave me a hug.

Zizi: it's time to open the presents

Sandile: open mine first



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi giggles.

She went to the pile of present which were on the floor next to her name, Sandile gave her the present he bought and she opens it.

Khwezi: oh my god thank you

She smiles taking out the Air Jordan sneakers.

Sandile: you welcome pretty face

I gave him a dead stare, that's a nickname I gave her and I'm the only one allowed to call her that.

Zizi: open mine now

I gave her the present I bought, she opens it and she starts crying.

Zizi: I didn't say cry girl

She laughs wiping her tears, it was two necklaces with a heart



NOVELSGURU.COM

which had our names both written on them.

Then there was a photo frame with a collage of pictures that we took the past weeks we have met.

Zizi: turn it around

She did just that and she looks at me holding back her tears.

Khwezi: best friends till the coffin drops



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: we gang bitch

She smiles and blew a kiss to me.

She opens the some of the presents and God they were so many, after the present opening Sya and Ntando came with the huge three stair cake.

It had a 21 which was a candle and had "pretty face" written on it, her eyes sparkle.

We sang the happy birthday song.

Us: happy birthday to you...huuurraayy!!

They clap their hands as she blew the candle, she cuts the cake and everybody got their piece.

**.
.**

NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 24

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I really did not think I would have such a huge birthday party, I though she forgot about my birthday.

I didn't not expect such a huge lit party, I was seated down having some cake it's the o my thing I ate since I got here.

Lindani: am I late?



NOVELSGURU.COM

It's him, he really came, I place my cake down and I give him a tight hug.

Khwezi: I thought you forgot about me

Lindani: forget about you? Never

I giggle.

Lindani: I bought you this

It was a bouquet of flowers, he had a gift bag which had all my favourite snack.

Khwezi: thank you so much

Lindani: it's a little know, I couldn't get my hands on a present since I was already late

Khwezi: as long as you are here nothing matters



NOVELSCURU.COM

I gave him a hug, we went to sit in the couch while chatting, I got up and went to the kitchen to get us more drinks.

As I was pouring us some drink of the plastic red cups, I felt someone's hand around my waist.

Khwezi: the fuck...get your...

Nkosie: it's me relax

Khwezi: relax? Get you dirty hands off me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: can we talk?

I could feel him breathing on my neck, I got a shiver.

Khwezi: talk about what?

Nkosie: everybody got to give you their present, now it's my turn

Khwezi: you got me a present? Where is it?

Nkosie: come with me and you will find out

Khwezi: I'm not going anywhere with you

Nkosie: that's unfair though, I also want to show you my present

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I really don't have time for your stupid games

Nkosie: nganii ngikucela kahle Mapholoba

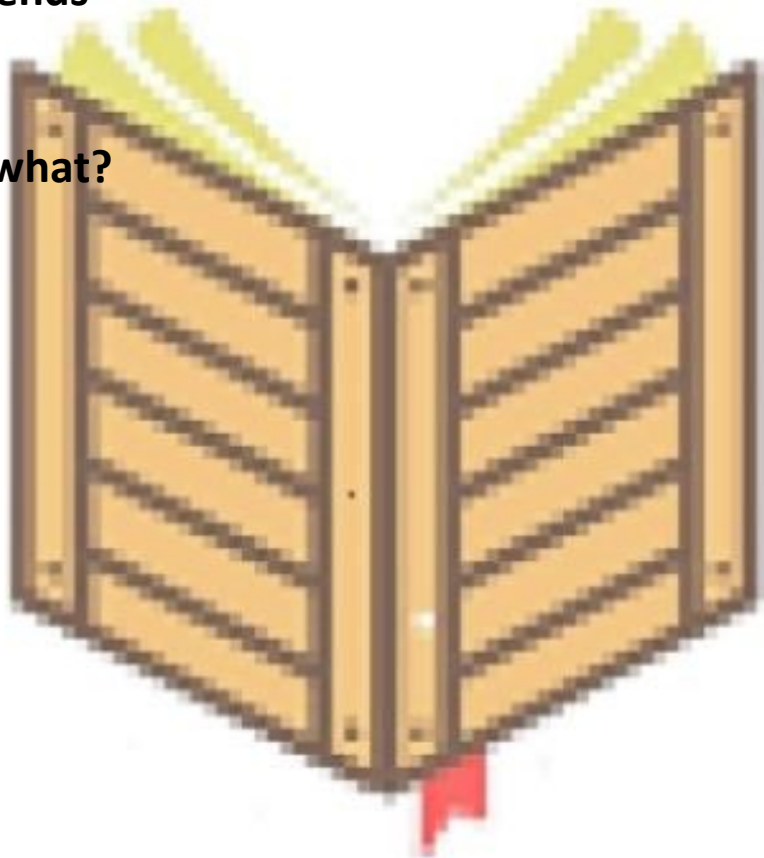


Did he just...no he didn't.

Khwezi: how long will it take?

Nkosie: depends

Khwezi: on what?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: if I will be able to control myself

Khwezi: okay change of plan...I'm. Not going anywhere with you

Nkosie: hawu ngyadlala njena

Khwezi: you still want me to come with you or what?

I turn to look at him and his face was so close with mine, he took my hand as he led us outside.

He opens the door for me and we drove in silence.

Khwezi: where are you taking me?

Nkosie: patience

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: don't tell me to be patient. I left my party

Shit I also left Lindani there.

He parks outside this beautiful glass mansion, I got out of the car and I stood outside.

Nkosie: you won't see the surprise if you standing out there, plus it's cold

I took my eyes and I followed him inside, it was dark, I could see candles but he turns on the lights.

Oh my god, the place was decorated with roses and there was a candle light dinner set on the table, rose petals on the floor, I wanted to cry.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you did all this?

He nods.

Khwezi: for me?

Nkosie: no for the person behind you

I look behind me and there as no one.

Nkosie: I did this for you silly, look I know I have been a complete jerk and I treated you in a very wrong way, I do have an excuse for my behaviour but I would rather not share it with you

He got closer to me and looks at me in the eyes, God I folded.

Nkosie: I'm really sorry for all the bad that I did to you and happy birthday

I had tears in my eyes, did he just apologise fully?

Khwezi: there was no need for all this really

Nkosie: I wanted to trust me, are you hungry?

Khwezi: I'm starving

We set down and we had dinner together, there was talking there and there. The only thing that was a lot was staring, God we really did do a lot of staring.

The eye contact, the...yohh



NOVELSGURU.COM

I wipe my mouth with a napkin and I look at him.

Khwezi: thank you for all this

Nkosie: don't thank me, I owed you all this

Khwezi: mxm

Nkosie: we need to head back, everybody must be looking for you especially my sister

I stood up and I smile, looking at me.

Khwezi: so you brought me here only to eat?

Nkosie: yes, what else would I bring you here?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I don't know, you tell me

I slowly walk to him, Nkosie is really handsome, he is fire, he is the sun, like he is too much heat.



I set on top of him with my legs apart on each side, he looks at me and I look at him in the eyes, I don't know but I want to kiss him so bad.

Nkosie: we need to head back

I look at his eyes then down to his lip, I bite my lower lip and I smash my lips into his, he quickly responds and he places his hands on my waist.



NOVELSGURU.COM

He devours my lips and I must say he really is a good kisser, after having a tongue battle I pull out from the kiss when I felt something hard poking me underneath.

He grabs my ass and I release a moan, he got up and had his hand on my ass as he carried me upstairs while looking into my eyes as if he was undressing my soul.

Soon I'm going to be the one who will be getting undressed, he put me down and he grabs my ass then my waist, he pushes me to the wall and he presses his body on mine.

I could feel his hard manhood poking me, he grabs my hands and held both of them in the air pressing them on the wall and he gives me wet kisses on the neck.

my breathing changes and I bite my lower lip, I took off my sneakers using my feet, he let's go of my hands and he looks at me.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I kiss him, it wasn't any ordinary kiss but I don't know, it was filled with a lot of unexplainable shit. I took off his shirt and he took off my hoodie, he carries me to the bed.

He kisses me on the lips and he goes down sucking my boobs, I want him, I want him inside me buried in so deep inside my

nana.

While on my own thoughts, he tore my legging and he threw it on the other side on the bed. He shifts my underwear to the side and he starts playing with my clit while he kisses me.

I moan in between the kiss which felt so good but what was happening down there was way way good.

Khwezi: ahhh

I moan pushing his face off me, he kisses my neck, I can't focus on one thing, he presses so hard on my clit.

Khwezi: Nkosie!!!!



NOVELSGURU.COM

I moan out his name and he continues, he sucks my neck so hard I swear he is gonna leave a mark.

I felt like peeing.

Khwezi: Nkosie!!

I reached my organism, I'm breathing heavily, he slide a finger inside my nana and he kisses me. Khwezi: mmh!

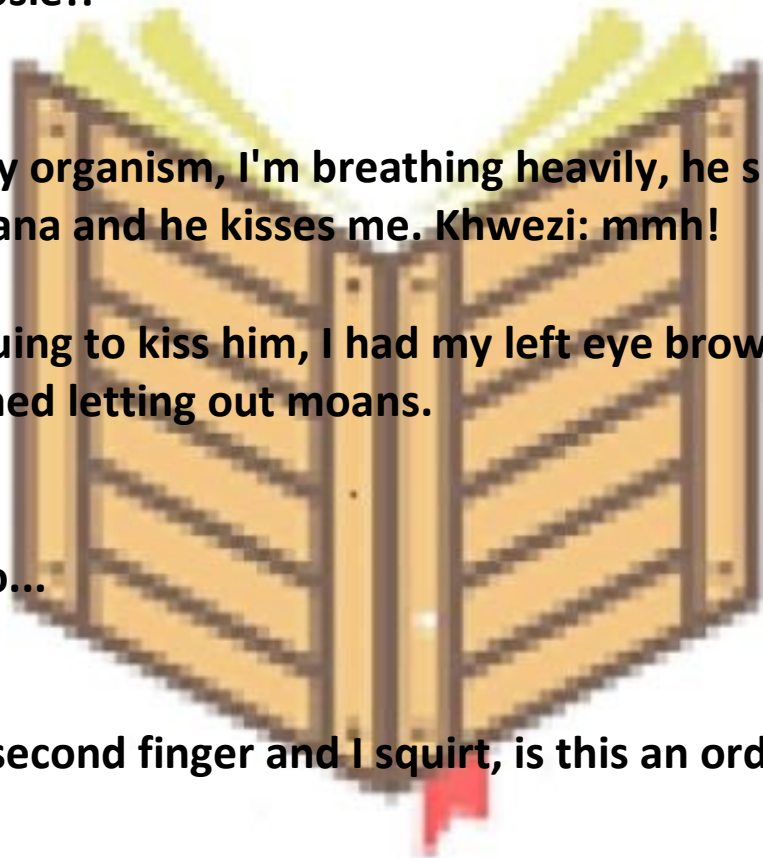
I say continuing to kiss him, I had my left eye brow up as my mouth opened letting out moans.

Khwezi: Nko...

He insert a second finger and I squirt, is this an ordinary finger.

He got off the bed and he took out his sweat pants, his shaft came out and I swear it was looking right at me.

He came back to bed and started to kiss me, he peck my lips and he goes down to my nana, he took me to muff town.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I was dripping wet like honey in a pot and he is the best whose licking all that juicy honey.

Khwezi: Ahhh fuck...

I held his head as his tongue did wonders on my nana, he was thrusting with his tongue and my legs are literally shaking.

Khwezi: Nkosie...ahhh



NOVELSGURU.COM

He presses on my clit and it felt like my whole body was being electrocuted, I released my juices on his face and he wipes himself.

He came to my lips and he kisses me.

Khwezi: Nkosie Nkosie: Mapholoba?

We are speaking in between the kiss and God I could taste myself on his mouth.

Khwezi: I want him Nkosie: who?

I grab his manhood and it touches my nana, I moan, he removes my hand and he held them both right up my head.

Nkosie: be patient

He pulls out from the kiss and looks at me in the eyes, he continued to kiss me, I can't tolerate this.

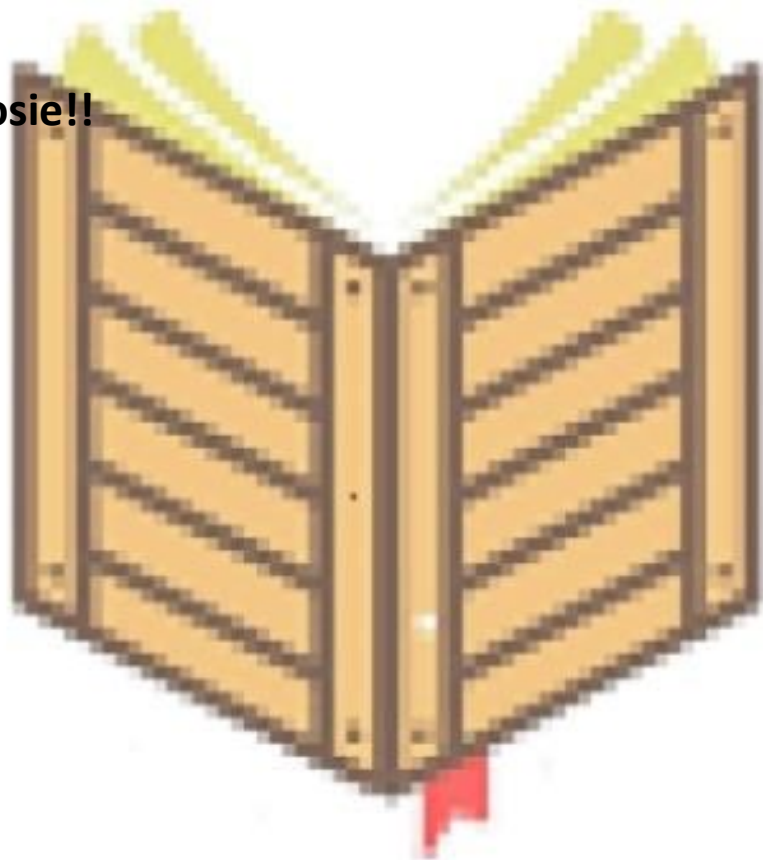
Khwezi: Nkosie!!



He pulls out from the kiss and he looks at me, he smiles and then he pecks my lips, he rubs his shaft right outside my wet honeypot, I moan.

He did that for a few minutes and I cum, he insert himself inside me and my vagina wall expand welcoming him right where he belongs.

Khwezi: Nkosie!!



NOVELSGURU.COM

I moan as he thrust, he was going in and out slowly and the feeling felt really good, he was groaning and he increases the phase.

Khwezi: ahhh ahhh

I moan as he slabs inside me creating this huge feeling inside me, I grab him so tight as he continued to give it to me real good.

He then lifts both my legs and places them on his shoulder, he continued to give it to me and this time he was in deep touching all those nice spots making me shiver.

Khwezi: Nkosie fuck...you doing...ahhh

He thrusts in deeper and the only sound you could hear was when both our flashes met.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: Nkosie!!!

I release, he didn't stop, God I'm gonna pee on thus bad right now I swear, I literally had tears in my eyes.

Khwezi: ahhh!

he flips me over while I squirt, he spreads my legs and made me to bend , he was still inside me and he smacks me right in my ass.

The next thing I'm moaning out his name, begging him not to stop cause he was touching all those right spots.

Khwezi: fuck!!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you harder right?

Khwezi: uh-huh

Indeed he fucked me real hard, we went on to we both cummed. He laid down and he made me get on top of him.

Khwezi: I can't my legs are shaking

Nkosie: phakama kancane

He says and I do just that, he inserts his hard shaft on my nana and I moan.

Nkosie: they still shaking?

Khwezi: no

NOVELSGURU.COM

I bite my lower lip, he places his hand on my waist and made me move in circular motion, he groans grabbing my ass.

I could now do it on my own and it felt really good, I rode him as if I was an expert in this whole thing.

Nkosie: yes baby...

He groans and I move my ass up and down making him go crazy, he took both my boobs into his hands as I continued to ride him.

Khwezi: ahhh Nkosie!!



NOVELSGURU.COM

we both release and I lay on the bed next to him, I don't think I will be able to go back to the party, I'm really tired and I feel sleepy.

He got off the bed and I watch him with my half closed eyes, I told you I'm feeling sleepy the reason to that I don't know.

He came back with a towel and he wipes me clean, he got back to bed and he moved me closer to him, I place my one leg on him.

His hand made its way to my nana and he rubs my clit, I bite my lower lip.

Khwezi: I'm sleeping dammit

He slides two fingers inside me.

Khwezi: Nkosiee!! NOVELSGURU.COM

I moan his name in his ear and I heard him groan, he slowly fingers me while I moaned with my eyes closed.

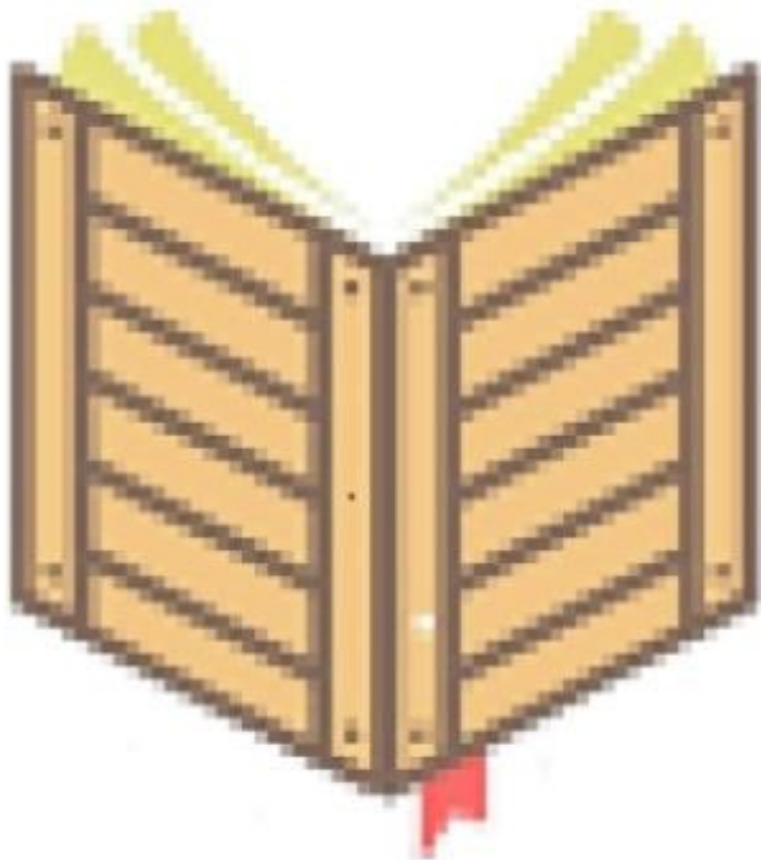
Khwezi: I want to...ahhhhh!!! sleep

He fingered me till I reached my organism, he wipes me once again and I slept on his chest.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 25



NOVELSGURU.COM

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up in the morning and my body hurts, I rub my eyes and I set up straight, where is Nkosie?

I got off the bed and I need to use the toilet, I went to the bathroom and I set on the toilet, I started to relieve myself and I flinch in pain.

My nana is on fire and the urine makes it even worse, it took me a while to finish urinating.

I wipe myself and I head back to the room, did Nkosie leave me again? Is he going to come back and kick me out? Ohh my god what was I thinking?

I need to get out of here before he even gets here, I wore my hoodie and I went to look for pants I could wear.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I found them and I got dressed, I wore my sneakers and I went downstairs.

When I got there Nkosie was in the living room with his brothers, it looked like they were discussing something very serious cause even Sandile is not joking around.

They all look at me.

Ntando: Khwezi? Khwezi: hey bhuti

Ntando: what are you doing here?

Nkosie: that is none of your business Ntando

He got up and he came to me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: so this is where you disappeared to last night at the party

Nkanyezi: for the whole night

Sya: and you wake up here wearing brother's clothes

Ntando: with you hair messed up

Okay they are making me feel shy and I don't like whatever this is, I hid my face on Nkosie's chest.

Nkosie: you finally awake Khwezi: why weren't you in bed?

Nkosie: did you see the time?

Khwezi: nope I didn't

Nkosie: it's twelve, plus I didn't want to wake you up

Khwezi: I thought you were going to kick me out like last time

Nkosie

NOVELSGURU.COM

Here i am wanting to cry.

Nkosie: why would i do that? Come on, that won't ever happen again

Khwezi: promise?

Nkosie: I promise, now please go upstairs I'm still discussing something very important with my brothers

Ntando: if you done with whatever you two are talking about we need to get back to business

Nkosie: I will be with you in a second



NOVELSGURU.COM

I nod and let go of him.

Sandile: We have a very serious problem

He says removing his phone from his ear, we all look at him.

Sandile: Nqaba and his men are on their way here

Nkosie: the fuck?

Sandile: and they are all armed, we need to get moving ASAP

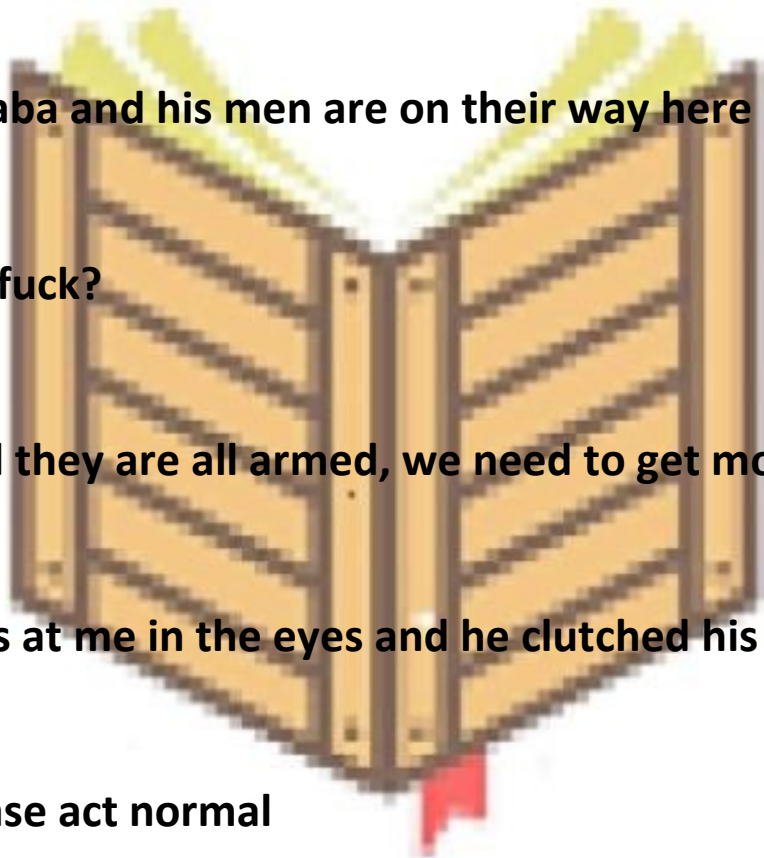
Nkosie looks at me in the eyes and he clutched his jaw.

Nkosie: please act normal

NOVELSGURU.COM

Am I not normal? What is this guy trying to say to me?

He took out a gun so did the rest of the brothers, so they own guns now? What else do they own fucking grenades?



Nkosie held my hand and he made me sit on the couch, he stood next to the couch I was sitting on.

The front door opens and a tall scary guy walks in, he looks really scary and his very masculine.

He walks in with other scary man who were carrying guns, I swallow.

Nqaba: we found the Mthembu tribe sitting together, how nice



NOVELSGURU.COM

He smiles, even his smile looks scary.

Ntando: what are you doing here Nqaba?

Nqaba: I came to get what's mine, my boys came here to do a deal with this fucker of a brother and I never heard from them

Ntando: maybe there must be some sort of mistake

Nqaba: there is no mistake here, now where are my stuff?

Ntando: we are telling you that we don't know anything

Nqaba: but your stupid brother does

He looks at Nkosie.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I don't know anything

Nqaba: don't lie to me boy, I will slaughter all of you with this knife of mine

Nkosie: go ahead then

Is he crazy? Did he just say he should slaughter us all?

The scary looking guy chuckles and he looks at me, he smiles.

Nqaba: who is this beautiful dark chocolate?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you didn't come here for that did you? Now focus on what you came here for

Nqaba: you not gonna tell me what to do boy, what's your name beautiful?

He got closer to me and I look at Nkosie, Nkosie looks at Ntando.

Ntando: leave the girl alone she is with us

Nqaba: with you?

Sandile: you heard the guy

They all point their guns at the scary looking guy.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nqaba: ohh I see, you got yourself a dime here

Ntando: like we said Nqaba nobody knows anything about your stuff, if you could leave we were really busy with something here

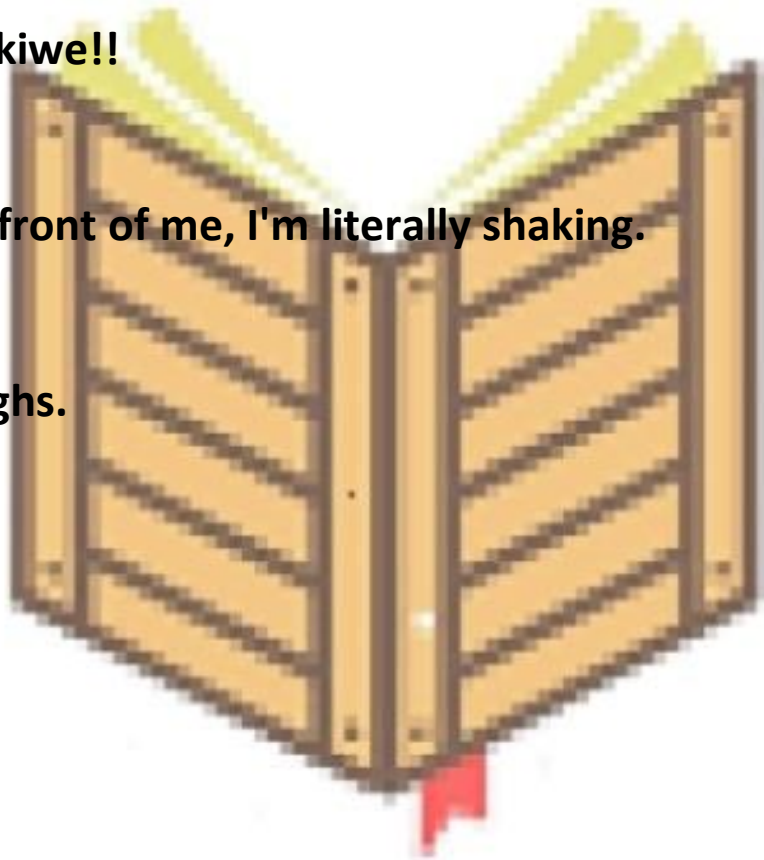
The guy is still looking at me.

Nqaba: okay while you still thinking of bringing my stuff back, she's gonna have to come with me

Nkosie: udakiwe!!

He stood in front of me, I'm literally shaking.

The guy laughs.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nqaba: I have been waiting for this time you know...

He is still looking at me, what does he mean he has been waiting for this time?

Nqaba: I will leave but know that I'm watching you and if I find out that you have my stuff...

He shakes his head and he licks the knife he had in his hand.

Nqaba: hell will freeze me tell you, majita

He walks out with his man, I finally breathe out, I did not expect all of this, the brothers turn to look at me.

Ntando: Khwezi are you okay? Khwezi: I'm fine

No I'm not fine, they had guns and the guy wanted to take me, I'm really scared.

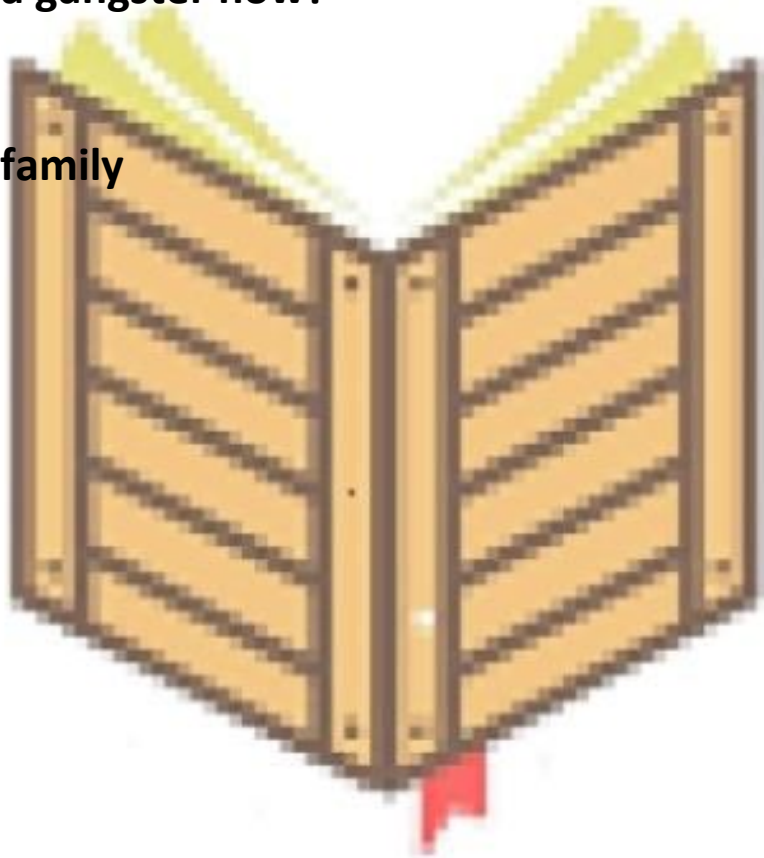
I look at Nkosie who was just standing there deep in his thoughts.

Sandile: it's a good thing he left

Nkanyezi: we wouldn't have let his take you Khwezi, you are one of us now

Khwezi: I'm a gangster now?

Sya: no you family



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I need some water

I got up and I went to the kitchen, I heard them mumbling.

Sya: she's gonna be okay

I pour myself a glass of water and instead of drinking it I just stared at the glass filled with water.

Nkosie: are you okay?

I snap out of it.

Khwezi: huh?

He sighs and he walks to me, he held me by the waist and made me look at him.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I'm never gonna let anything bad happen to you

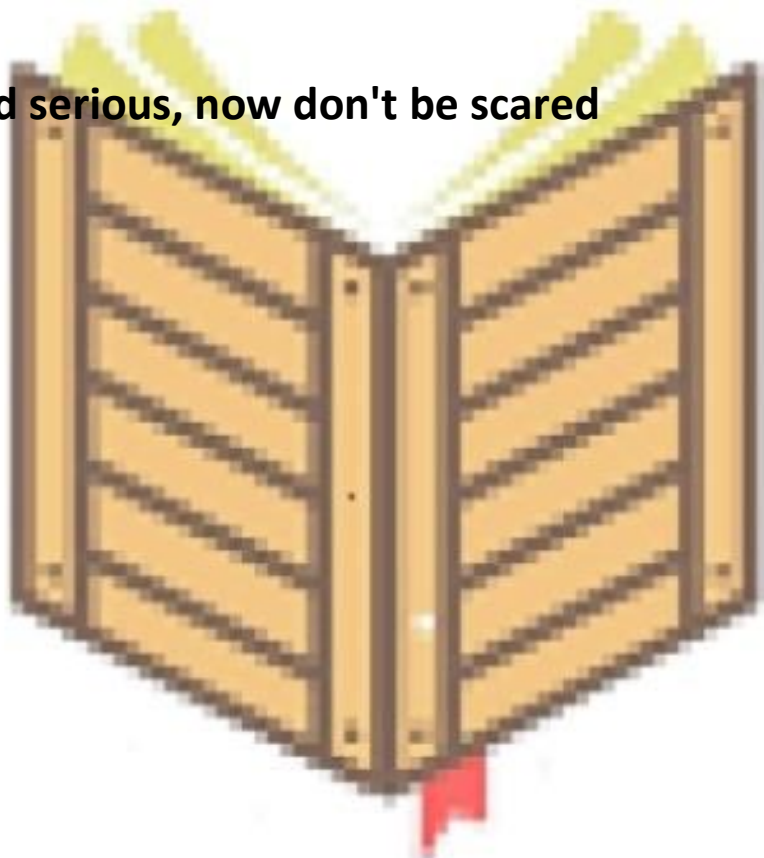
Khwezi: you won't?

Nkosie: I will protect you with my life and give up mine if I have to

Hayboh.

Khwezi: are you serious?

Nkosie: dead serious, now don't be scared



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: okay...I need to shower and get out of here, I got classes to attend and I got a lot of explanation to do

He chuckles.

Nkosie: I will take you

Khwezi: you really don't have to take me

Nkosie: we not gonna argue about this, how is it down there?

Khwezi: where?

He touches my honeypot, I flinch a little.

Khwezi: it hurts, I couldn't even pee properly

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you gonna be okay?

Khwezi: yeah i just need to bath

Nkosie: okay then

He moves away from me and I head upstairs, I prepare a warm bath for myself and Nkosie k locks on the bathroom door.

Nkosie: I bought you some bathing salt, it will help relieve the pain

He gave it to me and I put it inside the water, he looks at me as I went naked and got inside the bath tub.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I felt a little pain but it got better, I look at him and giggle at the way his looking at me.

Khwezi: what? Nkosie: nothing Khwezi: kiss me

I look at him in the eyes and he smirks, he got closer and he leans over for a kiss, I wrap my wet hand around his neck while we kissed.

I pull out from the kiss, he looks at my lips and he bites his lower lip.

**Khwezi: now leave, I need to bath Nkosie: you so mean
Khwezi: I learnt from the best**

He laughs walking out of the room.

.
.

FOREVA YENA

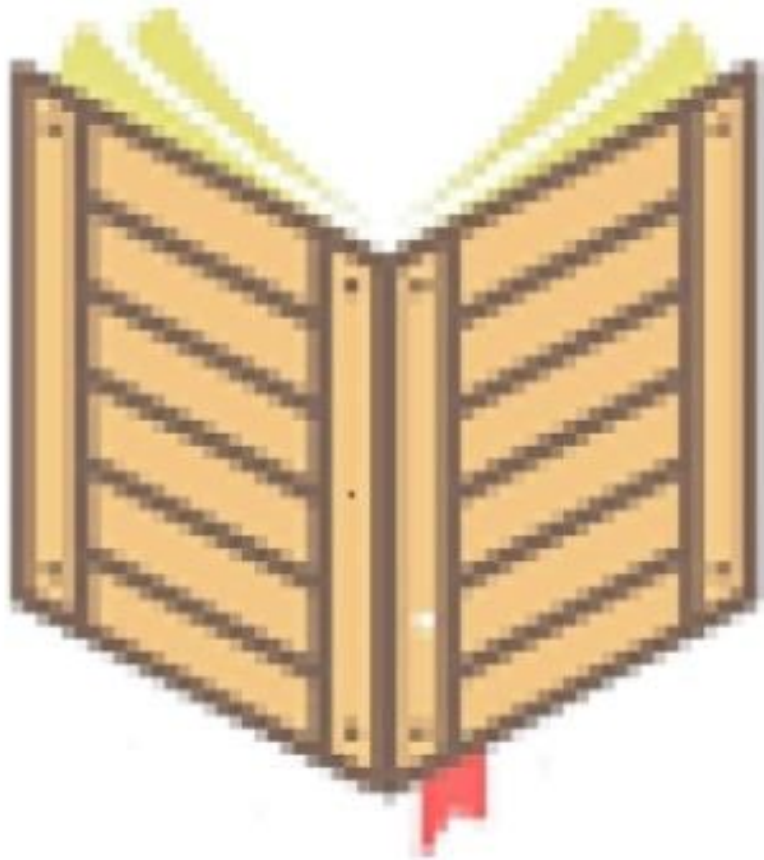
NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 26

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I finished bathing and I felt a little better, I got out of the bath tub and I dried my body with a clean towel.

I took another towel and I wrap my body in it, I first made the bed and Nkosie walks in.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you done?

Khwezi: yes but I need something to wear Nkosie: you can pick anything inside my closet Khwezi: anything?

Nkosie: whatever you want

Khwezi: you ain't gotta tell me twice

I giggle and went to the closet, I took this oversized black t-shirt which had Kanye West's face on it.

I took a pair of black sweat pants, white socks and I lotioned my body.

I then got dressed, Nkosie was seated on the bed waiting for me.

Nkosie: you look like an old gangster

Khwezi: and old gangster that looks good

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: gangsters don't look good

Khwezi: ohh you trying to tell me you don't look good?

Nkosie: I'm not a gangster

Khwezi: what was all that about few hours ago?

Nkosie: just a misunderstanding, see let's not talk about that

Khwezi: okay fine, did you eat?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: nah I just had a glass of whiskey

Khwezi: and look you seem proud of that, let's go I will make us something to eat

Nkosie: I'm really not that hungry but since you offered to make the food, why would I deny?

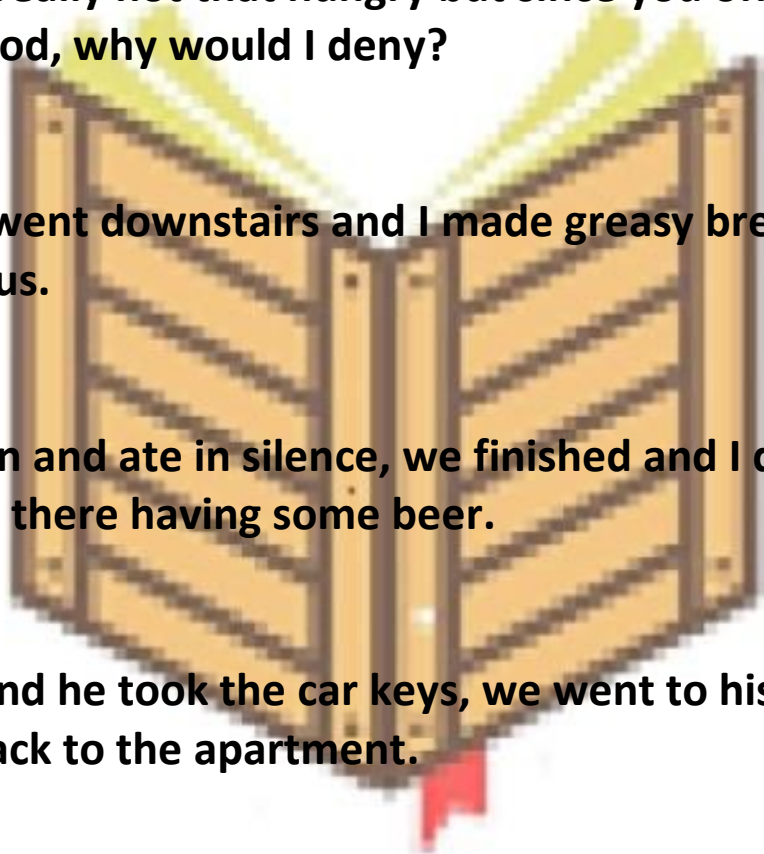
I laugh, we went downstairs and I made greasy breakfast for the both of us.

We set down and ate in silence, we finished and I did the dishes while he set there having some beer.

I got done and he took the car keys, we went to his car and he drove me back to the apartment.

While we were driving 24 hours by Kaylow played, I then remembered the day we both danced.

I look at him and his focused on the road, Nkosie is really good looking.



Nkosie: you staring

Khwezi: got a problem?

Nkosie: not really but it's creepy

I look away and he places his hand on my thigh, he brushes my thigh.

Nkosie: I didn't say stop though

I chuckles and shake my head, I really don't get what's going between me and him but whatever it is I don't want it to stop.



NOVELSGURU.COM

He parks right outside the apartment, I notice Lindani's car outside and I start panicking.

Khwezi: shit...

Nkosie: what is it now?

Khwezi: Lindani is here, I left him last night and...Yohhh

Nkosie: you mean that Swati prince

Khwezi: yes him, he can't see you here and he can't find out about last night

Nkosie: what does that mean? Are you two dating?

Khwezi: no but... NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: but what?

Khwezi: I don't want to hurt him

Nkosie: ohh I get you

He removes his hand from my thigh and he unlocks the door, I can't tell if he is angry or not.

Khwezi: Nkosie I'm sorry

Nkosie: why you apologising to me? You should apologise to him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you know what I mean

I look at him and his not even looking at me.

Nkosie: your boyfriend is waiting for you, you don't want to hurt his little feelings now do you?

Khwezi: bye

I got out of the car, I got inside the apartment and Lindani was seated on the couch.

When he saw me he immediately got up and came to me.

Lindani: Khwezi...God do you know how worried I was?

He gave me a tight hug and I hugged him back.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: where did you disappear to last night? We looked for you everywhere

Khwezi: I wanted some time alone you know...

Zizi: some time alone from what? It was your birthday Khwezi and wena you just disappeared

Khwezi: I'm sorry

Lindani: what is he doing here?

I pull out from the hug and I turn to look at who he is talking about, Nkosie stood there with his hands in his pocket.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: he is my brother

Nkosie: you forgot your phone in my car

He took out my phone and gave it to me, I just panicked, he could have waited till Lindani left.

I took the phone while my hands were shaking.

Lindani: so you were with him?

Zizi looks at me.

Khwezi: I can explain

I said holding his hand and looking him in the eyes, I'm even crying.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: you telling me I came all the way from Swaziland, leaving all my important family issues to come attend your birthday and you went with him and left me there as if I didn't leave all my stuff just to come see you

Khwezi: I know you left important things I know, I'm sorry we just needed to fix a few things

Lindani: couldn't that wait till your birthday was over

Khwezi: I'm sorry Lindani...I can explain it to you just give me some time to explain

He lets go of my hand and he went to take his jacket which was in the couch and he took his car keys.

Lindani: for a second there I thought you and me could have something



NOVELSGURU.COM

He chuckles and he walks out, I walk out following him but Nkosie held my arms stopping me.

Khwezi: let go of my hand, this is all your fault

I yank my arm and I went out following Lindani, he just got inside his car and he drove off.

I stood right outside and I set down in the pavement, I cried my eye balls out, I really did not mean for all this to happen.

I felt someone's hand on my shoulder.

Khwezi: leave me alone please

Zizi: you can't stay out here, let's go inside

NOVELSGURU.COM

I look up and Nkosie got inside his car, he left.

I got up and went inside with Zizi.



Khwezi: he left Zizi, I hurt him and his not going to forgive me

Zizi: I won't be surprised if he doesn't, Khwezi can't you see that he loves you

I wipe my tears looking at her.

Zizi: I told you very well Khwezi that my brothers are gonna play you, Mom even told you to not fall for their shit and here you are once again back in faze one



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I didn't mean for all this to happen, this time he was different around me

Zizi: different? *chuckles* so that's all you gonna say he was different, you know what? I won't tell you what you should and shouldn't do...girl just think about what you just did, you dragged two boys into your life now you gotta choose whose you want

She kisses my forehead.

Zizi: you gonna be fine

She got up and she went to her room, I set in the living room while thinking about this whole thing.

**.
.**

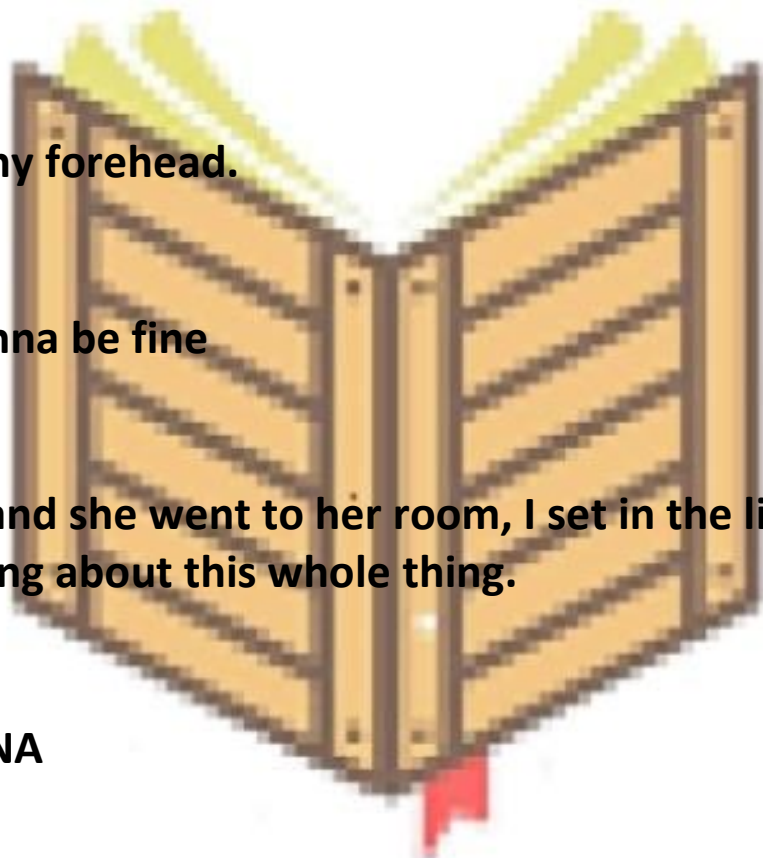
FOREVA YENA

Insert 27

NOVELSGURU.COM

LINDANI.

I just landed in Swaziland and I'm really drained, this whole Khwezi things drained the shit out of me.



The guards were waiting outside, I got inside the car and I was escorted to the palace.

We drove in and the driver parks the car outside, I got out of the car and I went inside.

Mom was in the kitchen with the maidens making lunch, she looks at me and she smiles.

Mom: ohh darling you back, how was the party?



NOVELSGURU.COM

She came to me and she gave me a hug followed by a kiss on the cheek.

Lindani: the party was fine ma, I'm really tired and I need to rest

I walk away.

Mom: Lindani come here boy

She half shouts and I walk back to her, I'm really not in the mood for anything g right now.

Mom: were you crying?

Lindani: no mom I wasn't crying, can I leave now?

Mom: you not going anywhere till you tell me what's bothering you? Did the party go well? Did something happen?

Lindani: mom like I said I'm fine, the party went well and nothing bad happened

Dad: stop bothering the boy my love, his telling you he is fine

Lindani: thank you dad, can I go now?

Mom sighs and she nods, I went upstairs to my room.

I lock the door and I threw myself on the bed, I just want this day to end, my phone rings and it is Khwezi.

I decline the call and I switch off my phone, I went to take a shower, when I got done I dried and lotioned my body.

I wore a t-shirt and some shorts, I went downstairs and Sikhanyiso came to me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sikhanyiso: hey big bro, you back...I missed you

Lindani: yeah I'm back, I missed you too

Sikhanyiso: I was so bored without you here

I wish I had stayed if I knew I would be left alone in the party.

We set down and we had lunch.

Dad: Lindani you remember what we talked about before you left?

Not this again.

Lindani: I remember father and I'm not ready for all that

NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: you don't have to be ready boy, I can die any moment from now

Mom: Mpendulo!!

Trust mom she doesn't like the death topic, she would shout at us everytime we talk about it, not that dad is dying he is just saying.

Lindani: Dad I'm not ready for marriage, plus I want to find my own princess just like you found your own Queen

Mom: that's right baby



NOVELSGURU.COM

She smiles looking at me.

Dad: I'm giving you a month then Son, if you don't find a wife of your choice I'm going to have to choose one for you

What do I say now? I already found the perfect person to be my wife. Plus she's very respectful and beautiful, she's anything a guy would wish for.

But it's a loss for her.

.
. .

FOREVA YENA

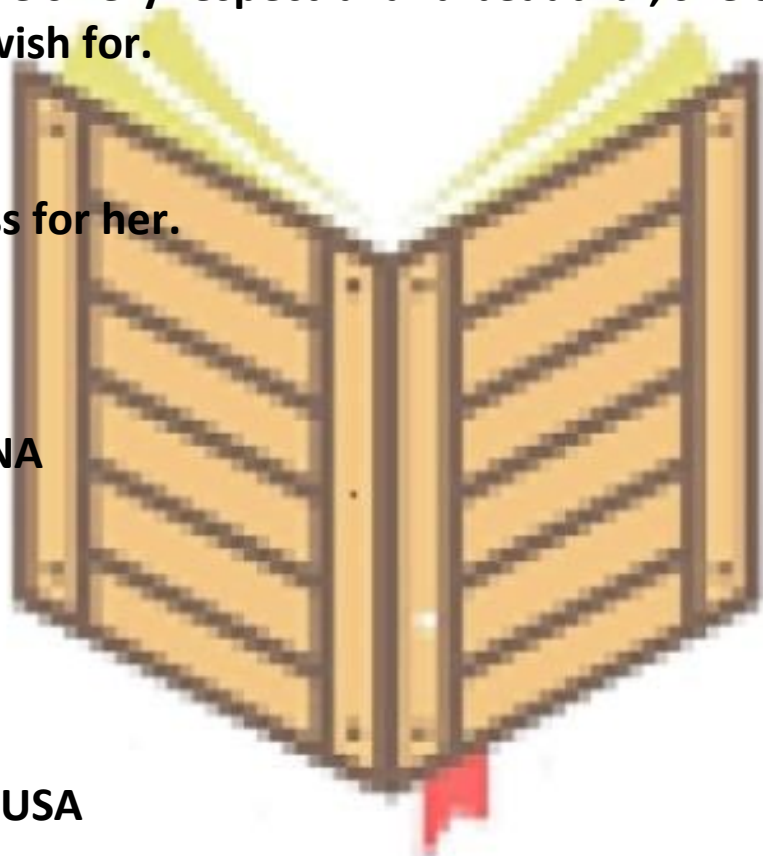
Insert 28

KHWEZILOKUSA

NOVELSGURU.COM

A WEEK LATER.

I woke up early in the morning and I went to take a shower, I finished showering and I dried my body.



I wrap a towel around my body and I went to the main room, I set on the bed and I took my phone, I called Lindani.

I have been trying to call him but it goes straight to voicemail, I just want to talk to him.

The call rings and it goes straight to voicemail.



NOVELSGURU.COM

**Khwezi: hey Lindani it's me again, I called because I want us to talk, you can't keep ignoring me like this
sighs please talk to me, I don't like this I miss you, please get back to me as soon as you can**

I sigh before hanging up, I got up and I lotioned my body, I decided to wear a jam suit, it was black in colour.

I wore my sneakers, I decided to let go of my afro, I applied some lip gloss on my lips and I took my bag.

I went to the kitchen and Zizi is not awake yet, I made breakfast for the both of us, she came out of the room.

**Khwezi: good morning friend
Zizi: morning pretty face, thank you**

She took her plate and she sat next to me, we are our breakfast while focused on our phones.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: so have you made a decision yet?

Khwezi: no I haven't, I just don't know I'm confused

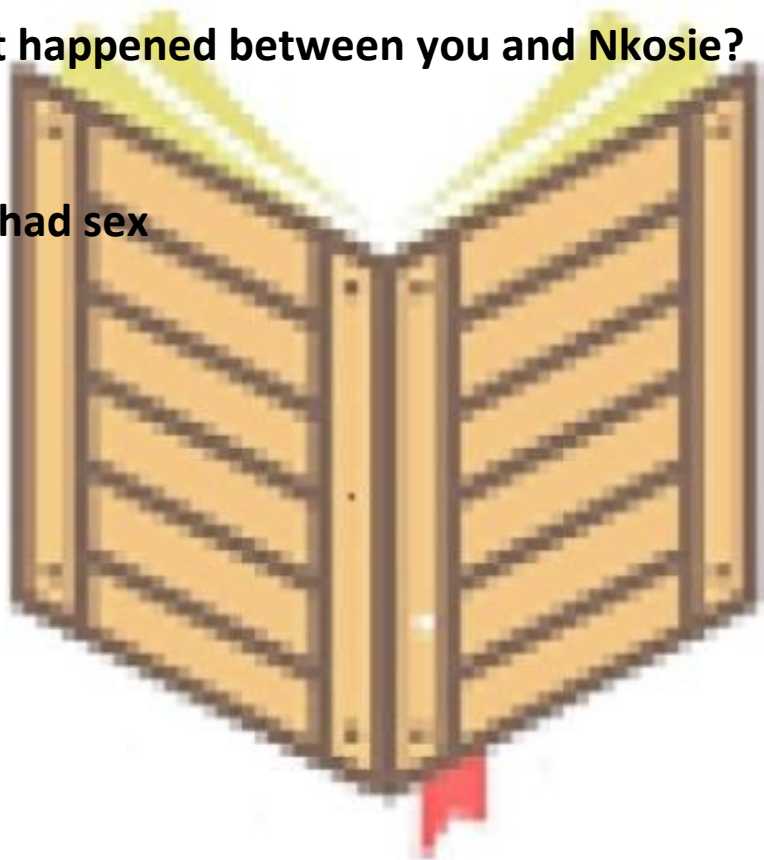
I sigh.

Zizi: I so don't wish to be you right now

She laughs.

Zizi: so what happened between you and Nkosie?

Khwezi: we had sex



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: normal sex or the crazy kinda sex

I can't believe I'm talking about this with Zizi, I mean she is Nkosie's sister.

Khwezi: I don't know but all I can say is that you brother knows how to please a women cause...

Zizi: cut cut I don't want you hear the details

I laugh at her.

Khwezi: I thought you wanted to hear

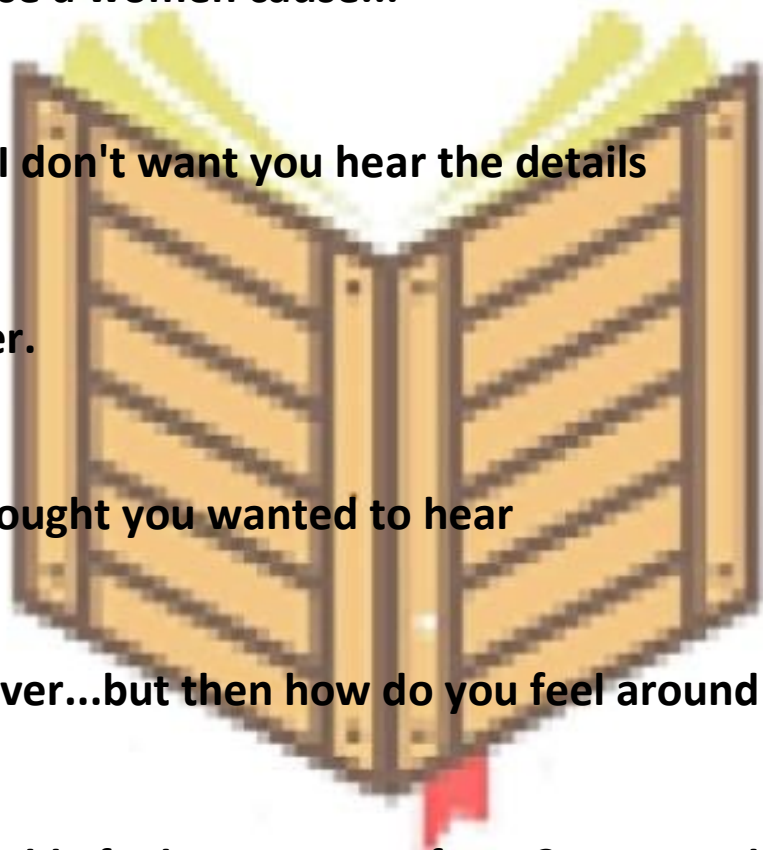
Zizi: never ever...but then how do you feel around him?

Khwezi: should I feel some type of way? I mean Nkosie is a good guy...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi looks at me with her eyes wide open.

Khwezi: okay his not that of a good guy but he has that soft spot, as long as you know which button to press everything



goes fine

Zizi: look at you talking about soft buttons, so you gonna have to struggle everytime trying to press that soft button of his

Khwezi: not that I struggle, yes he is hard headed like I said though...he is different around me

Zizi: he is different around everyone

Khwezi: I really don't know what to say now



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: what about Lindani then? Anything happened between you two?

Khwezi: we kissed this one time

Zizi: how does he make you feel then?

Khwezi: he makes me feel special, he makes me happy and his very kind, gentle, romantic and funny

I smile.

Zizi: do you like him?

Khwezi: I like him and I care for him so much

Zizi: and do you like Nkosie?

Khwezi: I liked him at first till he became mean

Zizi: and you had to struggle trying to find the right button to



NOVELSGURU.COM

press so you can get his soft spot

Khwezi: something like that

Zizi: so you gave him your virginity thinking he would like you

Khwezi: no, that's out of topic...I was drunk Zizi

Zizi: I'm just trying to figure this out with you and help you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: well I did not give him my virginity thinking he would like me back, I liked him the first place maybe I guess my feeling and the alcohol took over and made me sleep with him

Zizi: but this time you were sober?

**Khwezi: yes I was, I don't know what happened Zizi I swear...we were having dinner and it was fine
sighs then this side of me came out...he just happens to bring out this side of me and I don't know what I was feeling at that time when I got up and set on top of me...**

I buried my face on my hands and I groan.

Khwezi: God your brother brings out the worst in me

Zizi: that's a good or bad thing?

Khwezi: both actually but what I will say is that I do not regret getting into bed with him

Zizi: my brother must be giving it to you girls real good

Khwezi: you girls?

Zizi: you know you not the only my girl my brother goes around sleeping with?

This is what I hate about Zizi, she's straight forward and she tells the truth just the way it is.

You see now my mood got spoilt.

Khwezi: we should head to class

I got up and Zizi did the dishes, we went out and the driver was already waiting for us.



NOVELSGURU.COM

We got inside the car.

We arrived in our first class and we set down, the lecturer wasn't that focused, I ain't gonna lie I did not hear a word.

Lecturer: that's all for today, class dismissed

Those where the words I heard, I got up and I packed my stuff, as me and Zizi walked out, Zizi taps my shoulder while screaming in excitement.

Khwezi: Zizi what is it right now?

I look at her, I'm really not in the mood for anything right now, I heard girls screaming a d shouting, photos being clicked.

Zizi: look whose here to see you

NOVELSGURU.COM

She points at the person, I turn to see who it was.

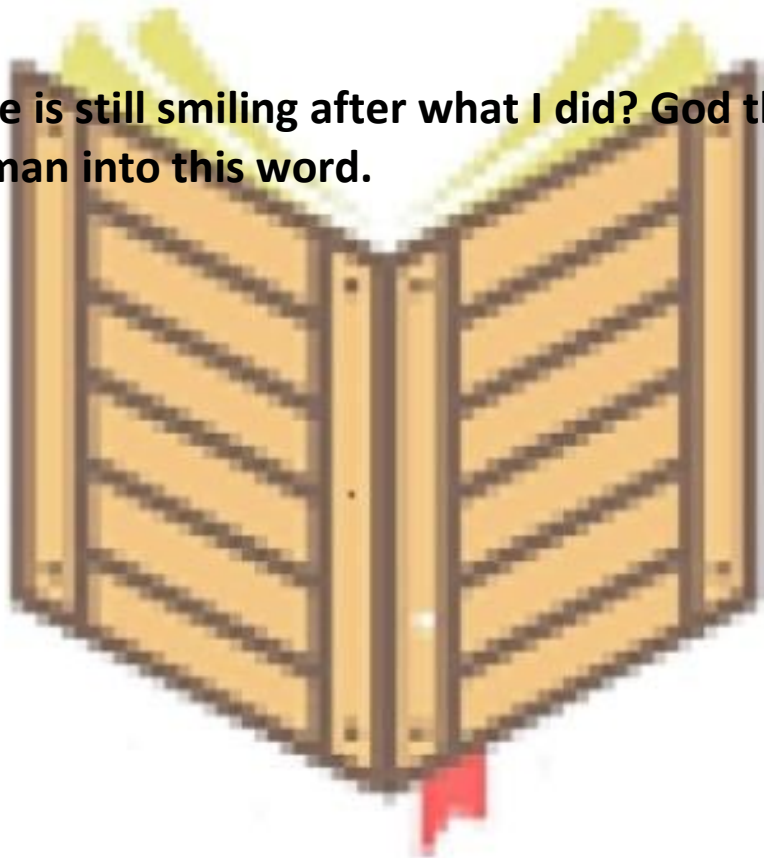
I wanted to cry and jump up and down at the same time.

It was Lindani, he was walking towards us.

Khwezi: Lindani?

Lindani: ladies, hey you

He smiles, he is still smiling after what I did? God thank you for being such man into this word.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I just gave him a tight hug and he hugs me back, I did not want to let go.

Khwezi: I'm sorry Lindani, I'm really sorry please forgive...

I cried and he gently pushes me off him, he wipes my tears off my face and I look at him.

Lindani: please stop crying, what will people think of me if they see a women as beautiful as you crying in my arms

I chuckle, this guy though, I missed him.

Lindani: can we talk

After a week of calling you? Wow but its fine I want to clear all this out.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: I will be in class

She left and i went with Lindani to his car.

Lindani: before you apologise for the hundred time, I want to

apologise first...

Apologise for what?

Lindani: I'm really sorry for not answering you calls, I was just frustrated and I'm sorry for making you cry on that other day you left me a voicemail, I'm just angry at what you did to me

Khwezi: you apologising for not answering my calls while you were angry at me? Are you okay?

Lindani: I'm fine trust me, yes I was angry at you but I didn't not know you would end up crying



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I'm also sorry for leaving you at the party as if you did not come across the country to see me, I'm deeply sorry and I hope you forgive me

Lindani: I forgave you a long time ago, I was still progressing this whole thing

Khwezi: can we start afresh?

Lindani: yeah sure, let's pretend nothing ever happened

Khwezi: can I?

Lindani: sure

he moves his car seat back and I got up from my seat, inset on top of him, don't look at me like that I wanted to hug him properly.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Now you can't do that while sitting on the other side of the car now can you?



I gave him a hug.

Khwezi: I missed you

Lindani: I missed you more

He held on tight to me, we stayed in the position for a few minutes, we weren't talking just hugging and exchanging words.

I pull out from the hug with his hand still on my waist.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I look into his eyes then down at his lips, I bite my lower lip and he cups my face, he kisses me.

I kiss him back, the kiss went on for a few minutes till I felt something hard underneath me, I pull out from the kiss and he his eyes are half closed.

He bites his lower lip.

Lindani: did I ruin everything?

Khwezi: not you, he did

I giggle.

Lindani: he doesn't bite trust me

He pulls me back in for a kiss and God I can't get enough of his lips.

I pull out from the kiss once again and he groans.

Khwezi: I need to head back to class



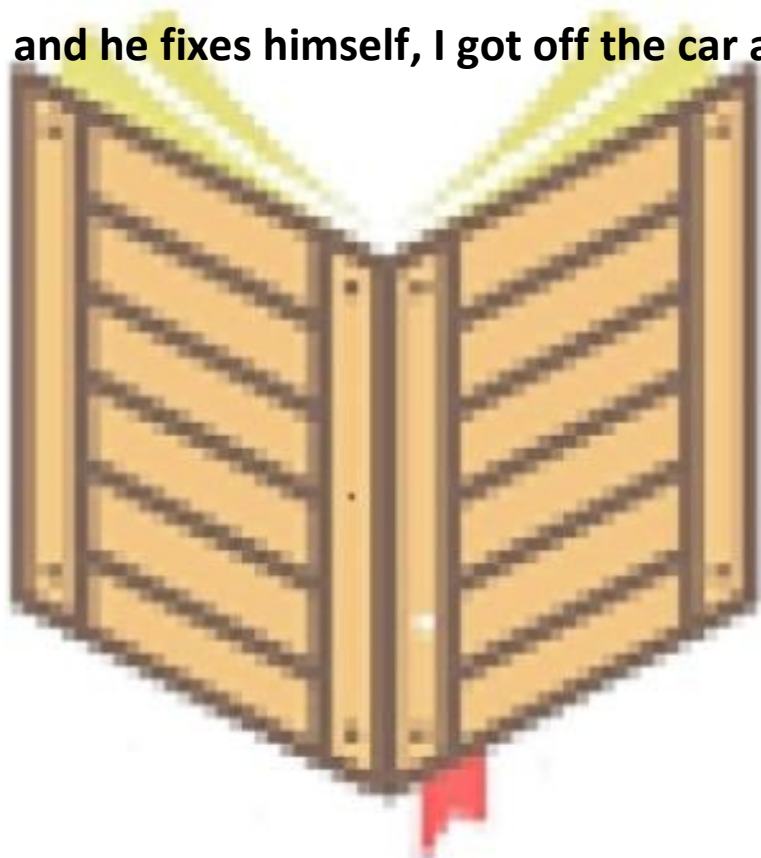
NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: fuck...okay...can I spend the rest of the day with you once you done with your classes?

Khwezi: sure

I got off him and he fixes himself, I got off the car and I went to class.

-
-
-



NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 29

NARRATIVE.

Khwezi woke up early in the morning and she did her hygiene process, she wore a pair of black jeans and a white long sleeve polo neck.

She was busy doing her hair when her phone rang, she checked the call ID and it was Lindani.

Khwezi: baby? You miss me?

Lindani: you should greet first you know

Khwezi: I can do the greeting later when I see you after class

Lindani: about that, I'm going to have to cancel

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: what do you mean by that?

Lindani: I mean that I got a load of work I need to take care of, so I'm gonna have to work in extra

Khwezi: okay then I will drop by at your office

Lindani: I will see you then

Khwezi: great, I love you

Lindani: I love you more, have a nice day neh?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you too

He hung up, Khwezi places her phone down and she smiles.

It's been three days since Khwezi and Lindani decided to give the whole relationship thing a try, it's going well for them so far.

Khwezi packs her books inside her bag and she went out, Zizi was out and she was making breakfast.

Zizi: good morning, you are glowing

Khwezi: well what can I say? I got a guy whose keeping me happy

Zizi: is he also keeping you happy in bad?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi giggles and she takes her plate, she starts eating.

Khwezi: we haven't done the deed

Zizi: what? Girl you trying to tell me that you are starving a

whole Prince

Khwezi: yeah?

Zizi: when are you planning in giving it to him?

Khwezi: I don't know but not anytime soon, we are taking things slow

Zizi: I see, well I'm happy for you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi Smiles and she continues to eat her food, they finished eating and the left the apartment.

They got to their first class and it was nothing out of the ordinary just normal classes that they attend.

Khwezi finished with her class and she asked the driver to drop her off at Lindani's work place once he has dropped off Zizi.

The drive to Lindani's work place was long, the driver parks outs, Khwezi got out of the car.

She stood outside the huge building, she walks inside and she went to the receptionist.

Khwezi: hi I'm looking for Lindani

Her: do you have an appointment?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: no I don't but he is expecting me

Her: your games won't work here girl, you need to make an appointment

Khwezi: you don't understand really, he is expecting me and...

Lindani: Sthandwa Sami

He held her by the waist and Khwezi looks at the receptionist in the eyes and she looks down.

Lindani: why are you standing here?

Khwezi: well I was busy having a small chat with your receptionist, I love your dress



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: thank you

Lindani kissed Khwezi on the cheek and they went to his office, everybody in the office was gossiping and asking themselves a lot of questions.

Khwezi places her bag in the couch and she set went to Lindani who was busy with his files.

Khwezi: you really busy ain't you?

Lindani: you don't want to know

He says and Khwezi chuckles, she stood there watching him, he stops what he is doing and he looks at Khwezi.

Lindani: shit I'm sorry...it's just that I got a lot of work

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: it's okay I understand, I shouldn't have come here in the first place.

She frowns.

Khwezi: you told me you were busy but I came anyways

Lindani: stop talking about unnecessary stuff and come here

Khwezi went to Lindani, he held her by the waist and looked at her in the eyes.

Lindani: work can wait

He kisses her in the lips and she smiles.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you're sure?

Lindani: I'm sure, now let's order in I'm starving

Khwezi: what do you want to eat?

Lindani: anything is fine with me

He took out his phone and he gave it to Khwezi, she ordered in some food, as she was busy scrolling on the app ordering some food.

A notification from Khetho shows up on the screen, Khwezi mistakenly clicked the notification.

"Hey, can we talk? I want to know what's actually going on between us after what happened last night...I love you" the text said.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi felt her blood boil and she threw the phone at Lindani, it got him on the chest.

Lindani: ouch! Babe? Why you throwing my phone like that?

Khwezi: masimba Mani lawa?

Lindani: what?

Khwezi: that on your phone, masimba Mani lawa?

Lindani unlocked his phone while Khwezi stood there with her arms folded.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: ubani uKhetho?

Lindani: baby look it's not what you think

Khwezi: I did not ask you that I'm asking you who is she and what is she talking about?

Lindani: baby look...

Khwezi: suthii baby look lana, answer the flippin question the fuck

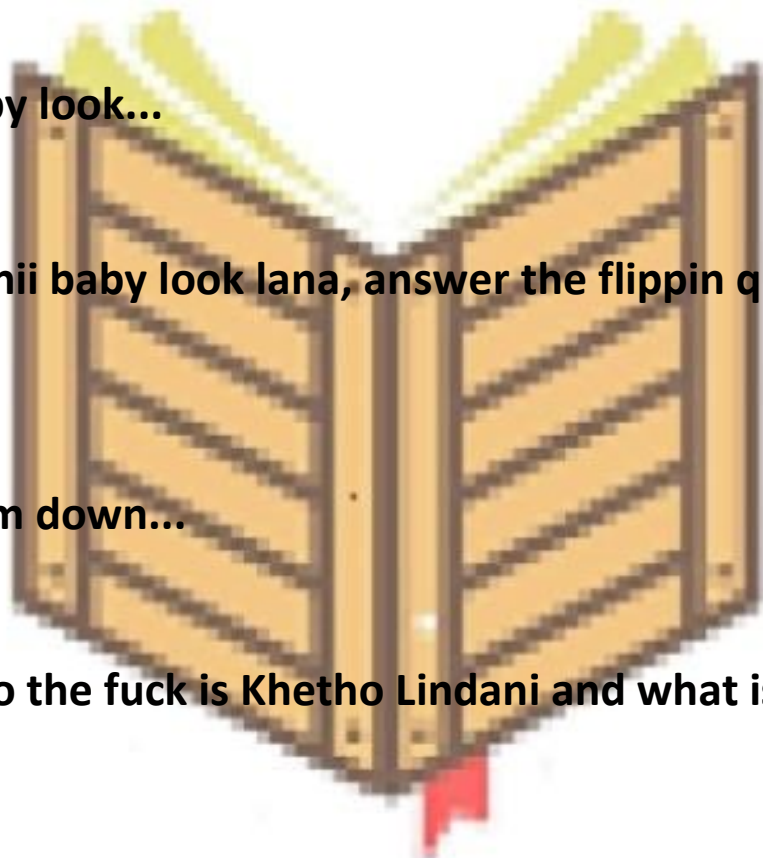
Lindani: calm down...

Khwezi: who the fuck is Khetho Lindani and what is she talking about?

Lindani: I swear it's not what its looks like, it's a miss understanding and...

Khwezi: then what is it huh? What do you call that?

Lindani: she is a nobody, she's not that important



NOVELSGURO.COM

**Khwezi: then why do you have her number? It's also saved
dammit don't play fucking games with me Lindani**

She shouts.

Lindani: look baby all this is a misunderstanding

**He gets a text from the same number once again, Khwezi laughs
a little while tapping her foot on the floor.**



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: Lindani I swear to God...if you don't start explaining yourself right now I'm gonna walk out that door and you will never hear from me again

She looks at him in the eyes.

Khwezi: and I ain't fucking playing with you, now explain this

She still had her arms folded.

Lindani: at least sit down

Khwezi: I don't want to sit down...EXPLAIN!!

She shouts.

Lindani: okay okay...my father has been planning to get me married to a girl of his choice which is the girl that just texted me *sighs* yesterday I was there meeting the girl and her family, that's when Dad made us exchange numbers and I swear baby that's all nothing happened between me and her, I wouldn't do you like that, I love you



NOVELSOURU.COM

Khwezi: what does she mean when she said y'all need to talk about what happened?

Lindani: I kinda flipped in front of the girls family and I chased them off

Khwezi: is that all Lindani?

Lindani: I swear baby that's everything

Khwezi: then why didn't you say all that in the first place?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: do you know how scary you look when you angry

Khwezi: very funny

I roll my eyes and he laughs.

Khwezi: so you gonna get married to her?

Lindani: no baby I won't. Look...

He held Khwezi's hands.

Lindani: the only person I want to marry is this beautiful lady standing right in front of me

Khwezi: that sounds cute but babe, I'm you and I'm not ready for marriage

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: I'm not saying we should get married immediately, all I'm saying is that you the only girl I'm gonna marry

Khwezi: when I am ready?

Lindani: yes when you are ready, we got a lot of time baby

He kisses her on the cheek.

Lindani: I love you okay?

Khwezi: I love you too



NOVELSGURU.COM

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 30

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up early in the morning and I went to take a shower, I got done and I dried my body.

I went and lotioned my body then I got dressed, I wore a blue dress and I wore some socks.

today I'm free and I ain't doing anything, I decide to do my laundry, I take my laundry bucket and went to the laundry room.

NOVELSGURU.COM

As I was putting the clothes inside the washing machine I came across the clothes that belong to Nkosie.

I really forgot that I had them here, I took the t-shirt and I smelt it.

It still smells like him, I put it inside the washing machine and I start the machine.

Zizi should be awake right now but I don't see her, I start cleaning around the apartment.

After a few hours of cleaning I was done, I went to make something to eat, as I was eating Zizi walks in with her brothers.

They were busy laughing and when they saw me they got even excited.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: wifey

Khwezi: hey husby, missed me?

Nkanyezi: we all missed you, why don't you busy us anymore?

Sya: mom be asking about everytime Zizi comes over

I smile, I don't know what to say.

Khwezi: I will make a plan and come over

Ntando: we almost thought you not coming over because of what happened between you and Nkosie

Nkosie looks at Ntando and he shakes his head sitting down.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: it's not that

Sandile: yeah you seem busy these days though

Zizi: she is not busy, she got a boyfriend and they always all

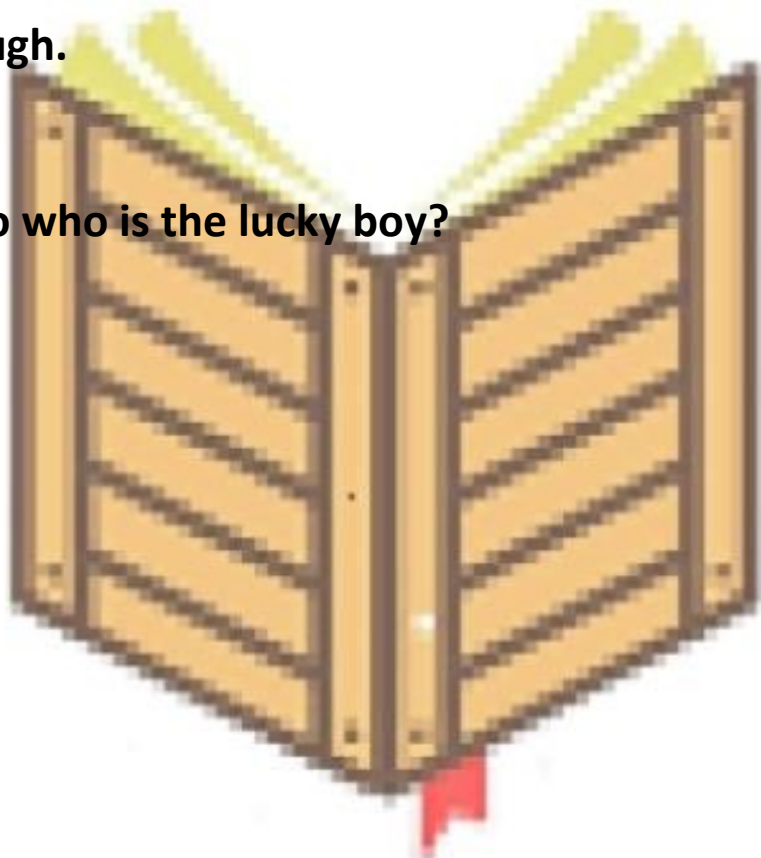
over each leaving me here bored

Khwezi: we not always all over each other, you just jealous

Zizi: yes I am, I'm used to having my best friend all to myself

The guys laugh.

Nkanyezi: so who is the lucky boy?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: Lindani

Sandile: you mean that ugly Prince

I look at Sandile before laughing

Khwezi: he is not ugly Msetii, don't talk like that about my man

Nkanyezi: my my look at you, we didn't mean to put you on defensive mode

Khwezi: whatever, how are you guys doing?

Ntando: apart from all the work we be busy on, we are fine

Sandile: and guess what?

NOVELSGURU.COM

He looks at me.

Khwezi: what?

Sandile: I'm hosting a party tonight and I would really love to have my beautiful wife come over

He smiles.

Khwezi: I don't know really *chuckles* you have a house?

Sandile: what do you take me for kanti?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I'm just asking, I always see y'all staying at your parents' house

Nkanyezi: yes we do stay there sometimes but we got houses of our own

Zizi: and I don't, y'all made me stay in an apartment

Nkosie: relax all our house belong to you pumpkin

Zizi: no I want my own house

She folds her arms and her brothers just laugh at her.

Sandile: think about the party thing and maybe you can get your Prince charming to come over with you

He went to sit down and they watch soccer.

Khwezi: let me make you guys something to eat

Sya: now this is why I like coming to visit here, always get to taste her delicious food



NOVELSGURU.COM

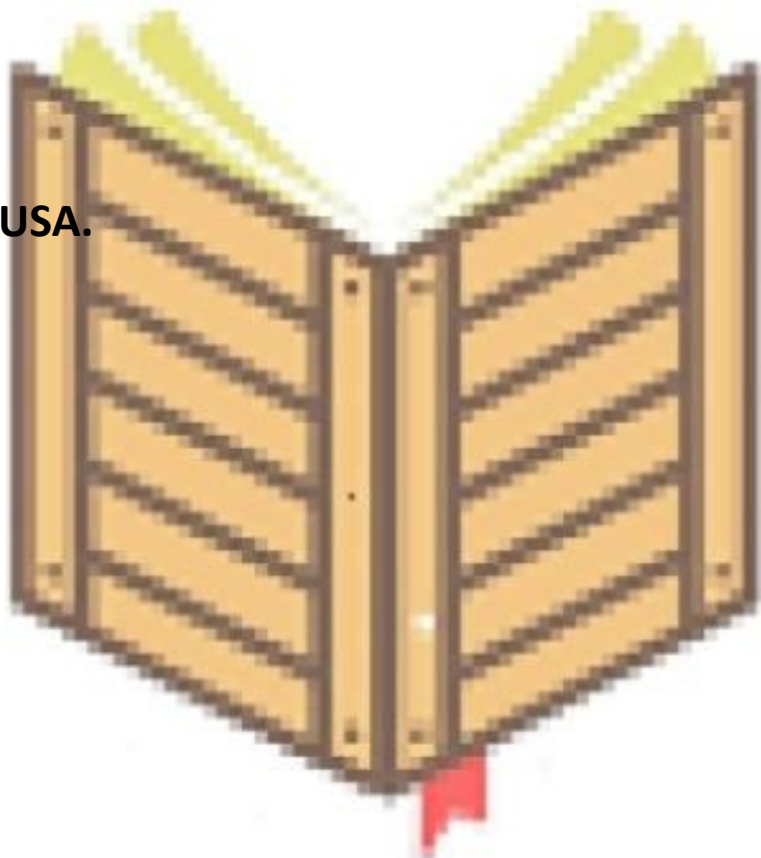
I start with the pots and I made something for the brothers, I made a beef stew with some rice and some salads.

-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 31

KHWEZILOKUSA.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I dish up for all of them and I asked Zizi to make them wash their hands, I went to give them their food.

Ntando: Sbonge

He took his plate and he starts eating.

Ntando: I wish I wifed you instead cause this is delicious

Sandile: I'm gonna wife her

Nkanyezi: wife her ekuphi Nkosie? Sukhohliwe wena ngyabona (wife her while Nkosie is around? you have forgotten I can't see)

I gave them their food and when I was about to give Nkosie his food he said...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I'm good thanks

He had his eyes focused on the TV and I sigh.

Khwezi: you should have told me you were good while I was cooking, the food is already here so eat up

Nkosie: for sure my brothers would love to have my plate

Khwezi: no they won't, just eat the food and stop being whatever this you are being

Nkosie: I said I'm fine, use your ears the fuck

Ntando: Nkosie no, she made the food for all of us now eat



NOVELSGURU.COM

I don't get why Nkosie is being so childish about this whole thing.

Nkosie: honestly I'm fine

I look at him and I place the plate on his lap, I walked back to the kitchen, he walks in and he places the plate in the counter.

Khwezi: what is wrong with you?

Nkosie: excuse me?

Khwezi: I'm asking you. What is wrong with you Nkosinathi?

Nkosie: nothing is wrong with me it's just that I ate before coming here

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: why didn't you tell me before you started cooking?

Nkosie: I didn't see the need, just stop asking stupid questions

I look at him not saying anything.

Nkosie: good

He walks away and the apartment door opens, Lindani walks in with a bouquet of flowers, I smile.

Khwezi: I'm in the kitchen love

He looks at me and he smiles, he came to me and he kisses me in the lips.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: how are you?

Khwezi: I'm okay and you?

Lindani: I'm fine, it's a man cave in here, what are they doing here?

Khwezi: you should know this is not my apartment but my friends, so their brothers came for a visit

Lindani: okay cool, so you cooked for them?

**Khwezi: yes they were hungry, why you sounding jealous?
giggles don't be**

I kiss him on the lips and he smiles, I took the flowers from his hand.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: thank you babe

Lindani: anything for you my love

Khwezi: let me out then inside a vase

I went to the cardboard and looked for vase, I poured water and I put the flowers inside.

Khwezi: you hungry? Here's a plate

I gave him the plate and he smiles, he went to join the guys.

Sandile: yow prince charming



NOVELSGURU.COM

He shouts and everybody greets him except for Nkosie, shame.

I got done cleaning up and I went to the living room, there was no space left for me to sit so I set on Lindani's lap.

He places his hand on my thighs.

Sya: you two look serious and it's cute

Khwezi: thanks bhuti

I smile looking at Lindani.

Ntando: so Lindani how is business going for you?

Lindani: its hectic bru, I got clients left right and centre

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: we also dealing with the same thing

Ntando: why don't you come over so we can discuss a few business proposals?

Lindani: I don't know man, I don't have the time

Ntando: come one dude, don't waste the fun

Nkosie: what's the use cause we already got his family signed up at our company?

Ntando: shut up Nkosie I wasn't talking to you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie chuckles and he remained quiet, he took a sip on his glass of water.

Why is Ntando talking to him like that? I mean that was rude and he kinda has a point about this whole business thing which isn't any of my business.

Lindani: I will think about it I guess

Ntando: think about it

Sandile: and ohh wifey, since your boyfriend is here let's talk about the party I invited you to

Lindani: who's your wife now?

Sandile: the women sitting in your lap, right wifey?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: yes husby

I smile.

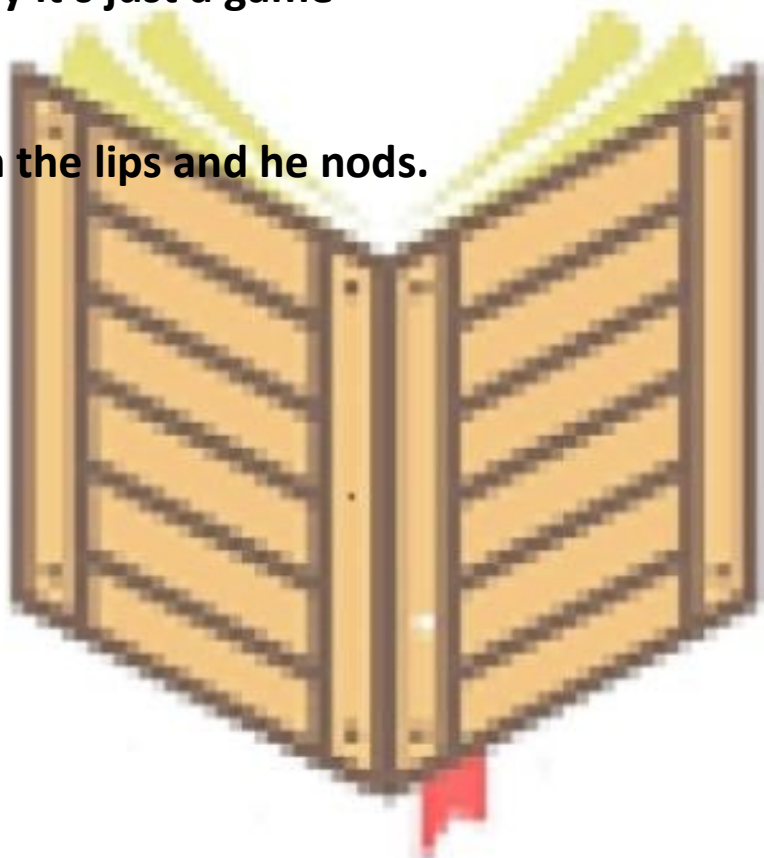
Lindani: excuse you but that's my women

Nkosie: we know that

He looks at him and he smiles.

Khwezi: baby it's just a game

I kiss him on the lips and he nods.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: so when is the party?

Sandile: it's tonight

Lindani: I got a meeting I need to attend tonight so I can't come

Sandile: you can always come a minute late

Lindani: I doubt I will

Khwezi: babe?

Lindani: I'm serious I got work

Nkosie: relax we will take good care of your women

He is looking at me, oh my god he is looking at me, I look at Lindani and I could tell he is getting annoyed.

Lindani: what's your problem man?

Nkosie: what's my problem?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: yes it seems like we got a problem here

Nkosie: fill me in real quick cause I ain't quite catching what you talking about

Lindani: you have been staring at her ever since we got here



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: what? Am I making you feel insecure?

Lindani: no man that's rude

Nkosie: nah it ain't just stopping paying attention to it then you will be fine

Lindani: stop staring dude

Nkosie: what should I do? She's beautiful and I can't seem to keep my eyes off her

I found myself blushing that was uncalled for.

Lindani: I swear to God is you don't stop this nonsense I will...

He was about to get up and I place my hand on his chest, I look at him in the eyes and he clicks his tongue.

Ntando: we should leave

Khwezi: why? We still chilling njena



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: your boyfriend ruined everything when started feeling insecure

He chuckles getting up, they left.

Khwezi: baby what was that about?

Lindani: I just don't like the way he is looking at you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: he can look all he want but he ain't gonna get me, I'm all yours baby

Lindani: I'm sorry for the way I reacted

Khwezi: you were being an ass but its fine

We both laugh.

[OUTSIDE]

The brothers were walking while debating about the soccer match they were watching, Nkosie seemed deep in his thoughts.

Nkosie: Ntando why ungidakelwa?

Ntando turns to look at Nkosie, the other boys remained silent.

Ntando: what did you just say to me?

Nkosie: ungizwile, you have forgotten about me and what I did to you the last time you talked to me like that. I let it slide



NOVELSGURO.COM

cause I didn't want to embarrass you in front of everyone cause vede nawe you know I can deal with my own shit and talk man to man kunyiwe once unlike your pathetic ass

Sandile: okay guys I think we all need to calm down and go home

Ntando: you know getting him into the business is gonna be good for...

Nkosie: uchazela bani? (Who are you explaining to?)

Ntando: You just being childish



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie chuckles and got inside his car.

Sandile: that was unnecessary you know

He shouts as Nkosie drove off.

Ntando: nxah!

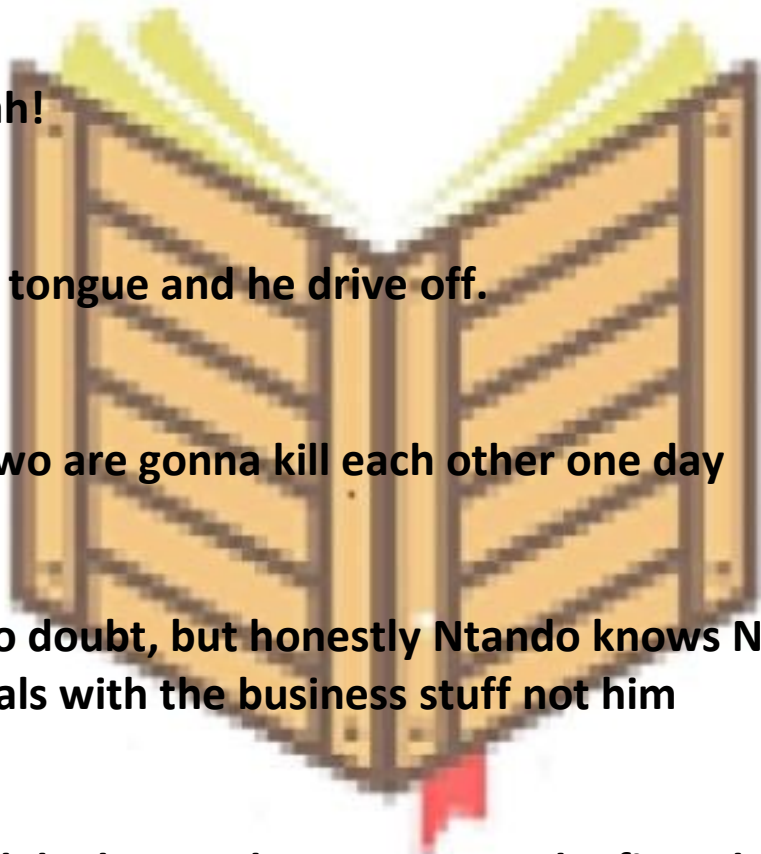
He clicks his tongue and he drive off.

Sya: these two are gonna kill each other one day

Nkanyezi: no doubt, but honestly Ntando knows Nkosie is the one who deals with the business stuff not him

Sandile: yeah he knows, he was wrong the first place when he asked Lindani to come over for the business proposal

Nkanyezi: and told all him to shut up, dawg I was waiting for a fight

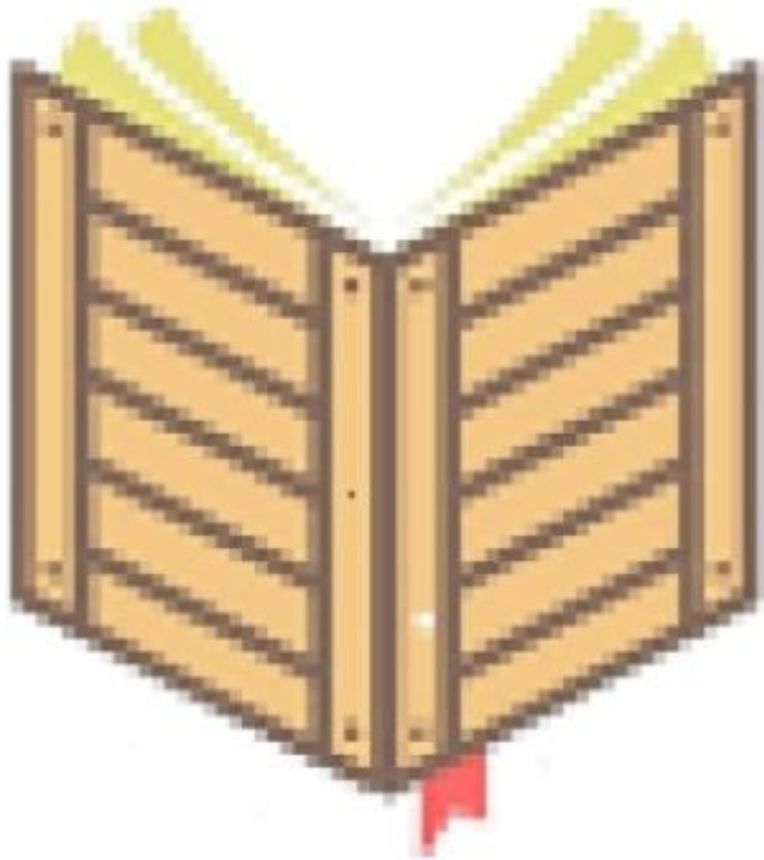


Sya: Same I thought Nkosie was gonna flip and hit his ass

They laughs as they got inside their cars.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 32

AMAHLE.

I was in the kitchen making myself a sandwich when Kungentando walks in, my husband looks frustrated.

He slams the door and he took off his jacket, I went to him.

Amahle: Sthandwa Sami what's going on?

Ntando: not now Amahle I'm really not in the mood

He pushes me to the side and he went to our himself a glass of whiskey.

Amahle: okay there must be something wrong, just talk to me about it baby

NOVELSGURU.COM

Ntando: I really don't get what I'm supposed to do now...

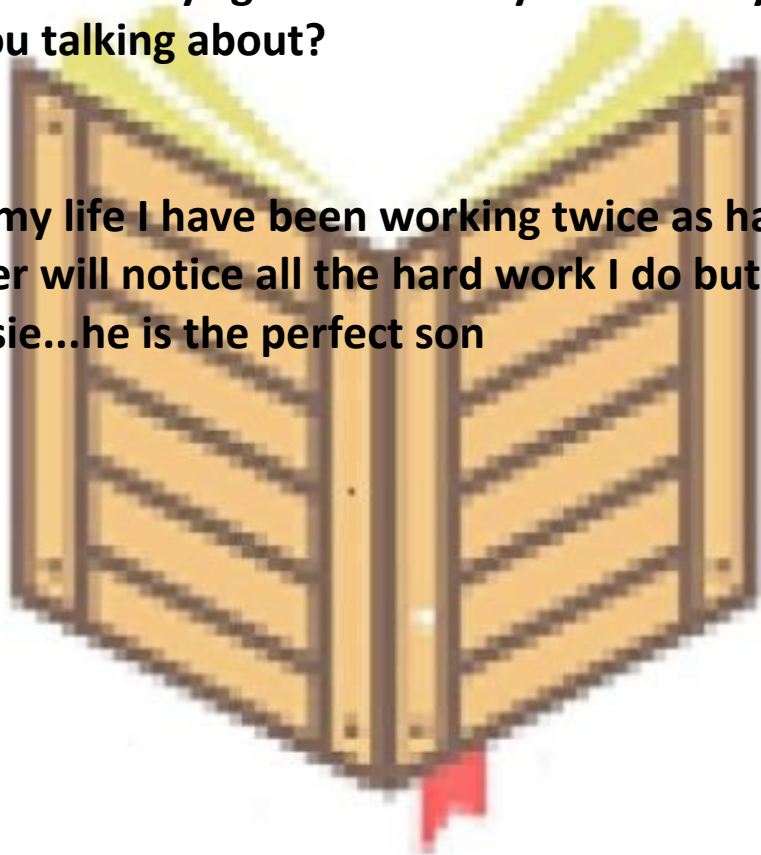
He pours another glass and he gulp it down.

Amahle: what do you get? What are you talking about?

Ntando: all my life I have been trying to be the perfect son and Nkosie always gets in the way

Amahle: Nkosie always gets in the way? What do you mean? What are you talking about?

Ntando: all my life I have been working twice as hard thinking maybe father will notice all the hard work I do but no, it's always Nkosie...he is the perfect son



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amahle: how come baby? But you are the first born

Ntando: that's just a label, Father treats Nkosie like he is the first born, he involves him in family business, work, trusts him with us issues, they are so close and they leave me out as if I don't matter

Amahle: okay baby look, leave the alcohol and let's talk about this

Ntando: I don't get what Nkosie has that I don't, yes he is smart apart from that but I should be treated like the best son not him

Amahle: I'm sure this is gonna end soon, you gonna be fine

Ntando: I don't be, imagine today he talked to me as if I don't know, I was some sort of child...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Amahle: baby look at me, you might not be perfect in front of others eyes but you are perfect to me, listen we gonna work in this together and try to make you the best son *smiles* what do you think?

Ntando: nothing is going to work babe

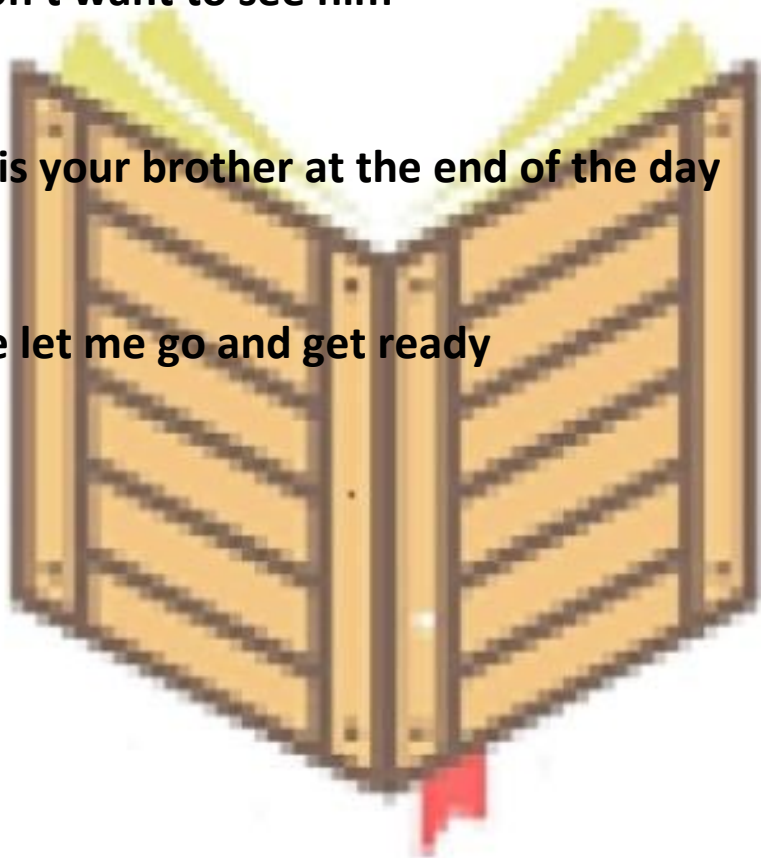
**Amahle: don't say that, we gonna come up with a plan *smiles*
let's just go and attend this party as if nothing happened**

Ntando: I don't want to see him

Amahle: he is your brother at the end of the day

Ntando: fine let me go and get ready

.
.



NOVELSGURU.COM

. ZIZIPHO.

It got late and we had to get ready for Sandile's party, my brother is really good when it comes to throwing parties that are like this.

I wouldn't be surprised if he invited everybody in Jo'burg.

I got ready and I wore some jeans and a bikini top, I wore a black leather jacket, I wore some heels and I went out.

Khwezi came out wearing a pair of grey sweat pants and my brothers t-shirt, some sneakers and a cap.

The driver arrived and he took us to the party, I told you my brother is a party animal.

They place was packed with a lot of cars and people, some girls are out wearing bikinis, we got out of the car and went inside.

NOVELSGURU.COM

The loud music was lit and everybody was dancing. Sandile: my two favourite women

He came to us and we hugged.

Sandile: I think I once saw that shirt somewhere

Khwezi: don't be silly, this place is full

Sandile: that's because win the host, come let's get you two settled in and drunk as fuck

We went to a clear spot and we set down, he got some drink and we started drinking.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: where are the others?

Sandile: they are in their way

Zizi: cool

We have shots and then we went to dance, it was so much fun but I could see Khwezi wasn't in the mood.

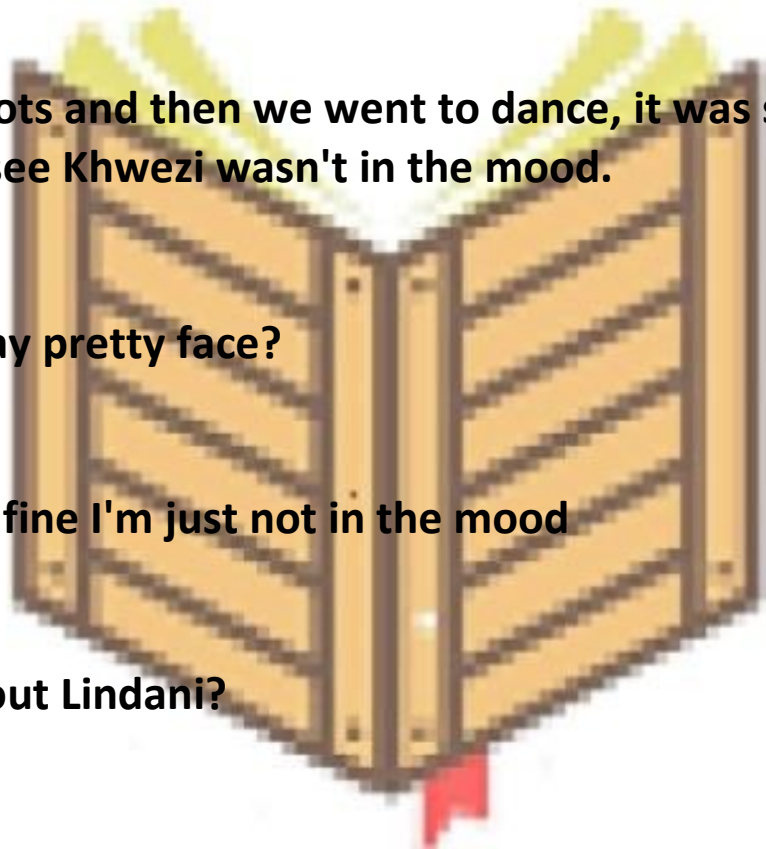
Zizi: you okay pretty face?

Khwezi: I'm fine I'm just not in the mood

Zizi: is it about Lindani?

Khwezi: yes he should have acted the way he did and I wanted him to come over NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: he should have acted the way he did, did you not see how my brother was looking at you?



Khwezi: how was he looking at me?

Zizi: I can't explain it but we all haven't seen him like that before

Khwezi: well he is gonna have to forget about me sooner or later

Zizi: I doubt

Khwezi: I'm tired, I'm going to sit down



NOVELSGURU.COM

She left me there dancing and she went to sit down, later my brother's walk in and they joined Khwezi who was sitting down.

I also went to them.

Zizi: I thought you crazy asses weren't coming

Sya: wouldn't miss our brothers crazy parties

Sandile: they are not crazy but fun, let's have shot

Amanda: baby I'm gonna use the bathroom

She said looking at Nkosie, I know that look she wants to smash.

Nkosie: okay

NOVELSGURU.COM

She got up and went to the bathroom, I went to sit next to my brother.

Zizi: so how have you been?

Nkosie: I have been good

Zizi: why are you still seated? Amanda wants some of you...

He laughs.

Nkosie: I ain't gonna fuck her, I'm cool



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: what if she ducks with another nigga?

Nkosie: she can fuck with thousand more nigga I don't care

Zizi: why you still with her then?

Nkosie: she doesn't want to leave so I let her be

Zizi: I told you though that you should call me when you have a problem with that bitch

Nkosie: I can take car did my own shit

Zizi: it doesn't look like it

Nkosie: get out of here

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: come on let's go dance

Nkosie: I dance when I'm. Drunk



Zizi: you are boring

He chuckles and I went to sit with Khwezi who was busy sulking, she has been drinking the same drink ever since we got here.

Zizi: nah girl you have to loosen up

Khwezi: nope I don't, I don't feel good I just want to go home



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: so you gonna let some boy ruin your day

Khwezi: this is not about somebody but I don't feel like I should be here, my ears are ringing and my palms are sweating

Zizi: meaning you should have some fun

Khwezi: meaning I should get out of here

Zizi: maybe it's that you in a crowded place, you gonna be fine

I kiss her on the cheek and I went to Dance.

**.
.**

. NKOSINATHI.

I'm just doing there slowly jamming to the music while having my beer, few minutes later Amanda came back and she looks at me.

NOVELSGURU.COM

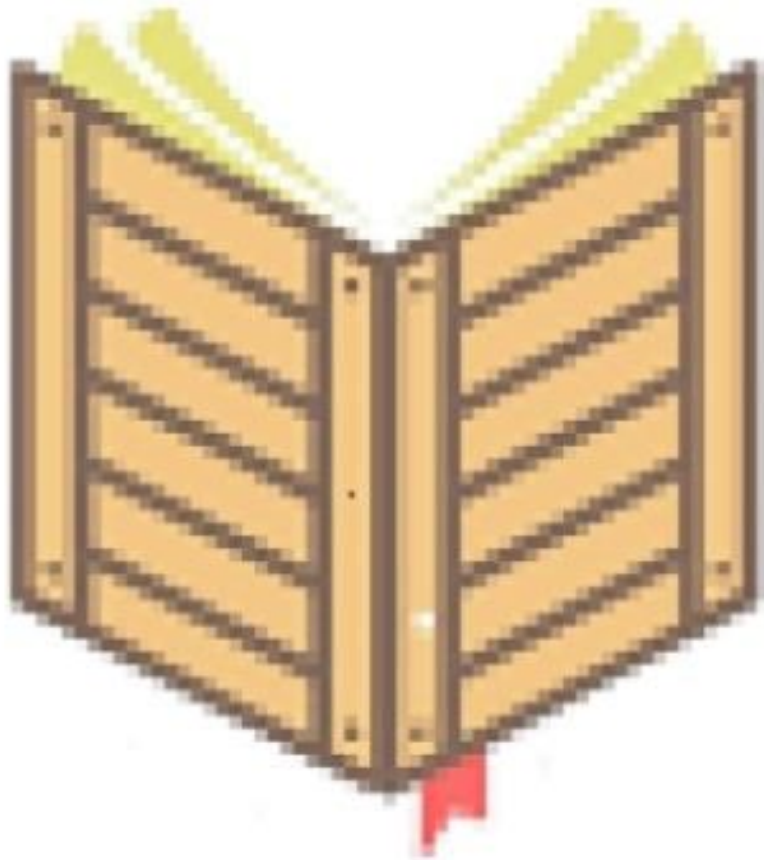
Amanda: why didn't you come?

Nkosie: it's a party I can't go around smashing you in my

brother's bathroom, the fuck

Amanda: you should have told me then

Nkosie: I'm telling you now



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: what is your problem?

Nkosie: why does everyone think I have a problem? There is no problem is just that I don't want you

Amanda: what do you mean?

Nkosie: I mean you no longer make my dick hard

She looks at me with her eyes wide.

Nkosie: you got that now? You can go find somebody else to please you

She got up and clicks her tongue, I look at Khwezi who was just sitting there looking at everyone else dance.

It's a first to not see her want to dance.

I got up and I took the same drink she's having. I sat next to her and she looks at me.

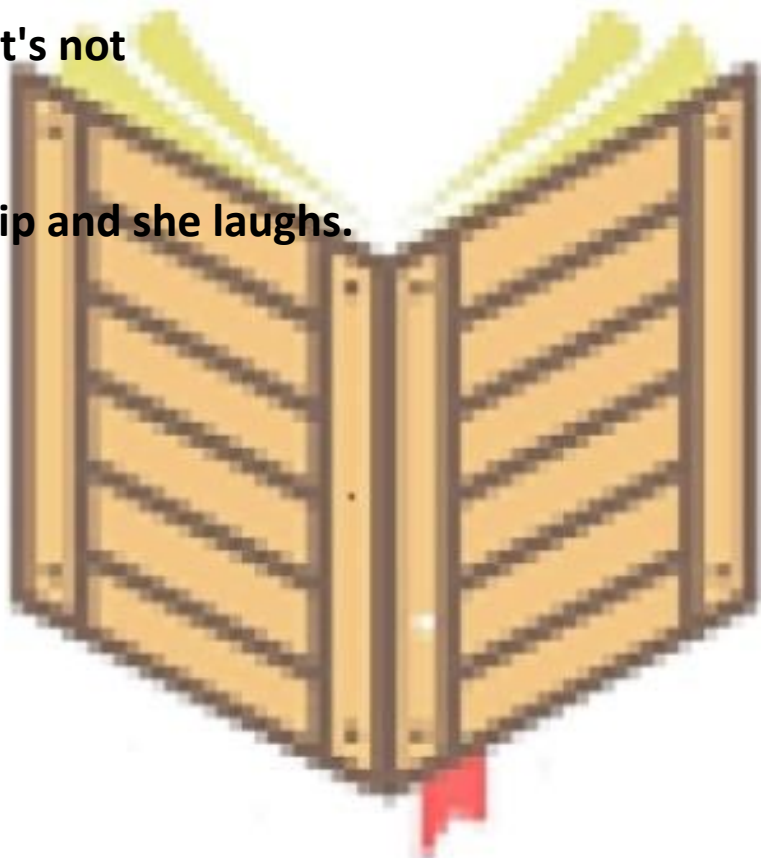
Nkosie: here's another beer

Khwezi: I got one thanks

Nkosie: you have been holding on that beer ever since I got here, for sure it's hot now

Khwezi: no it's not

She took a sip and she laughs.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: yep it's hot

She places the beer down and took the one in my hand.

Khwezi: thank you

Nkosie: why are you not dancing today?

Khwezi: I don't know, something feels off or maybe I'm just over thinking things

Nkosie: what do you mean by that?

Khwezi: nothing

Nkosie: did I piss of your boyfriend yesterday?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: not really

She not good when it comes to lying.

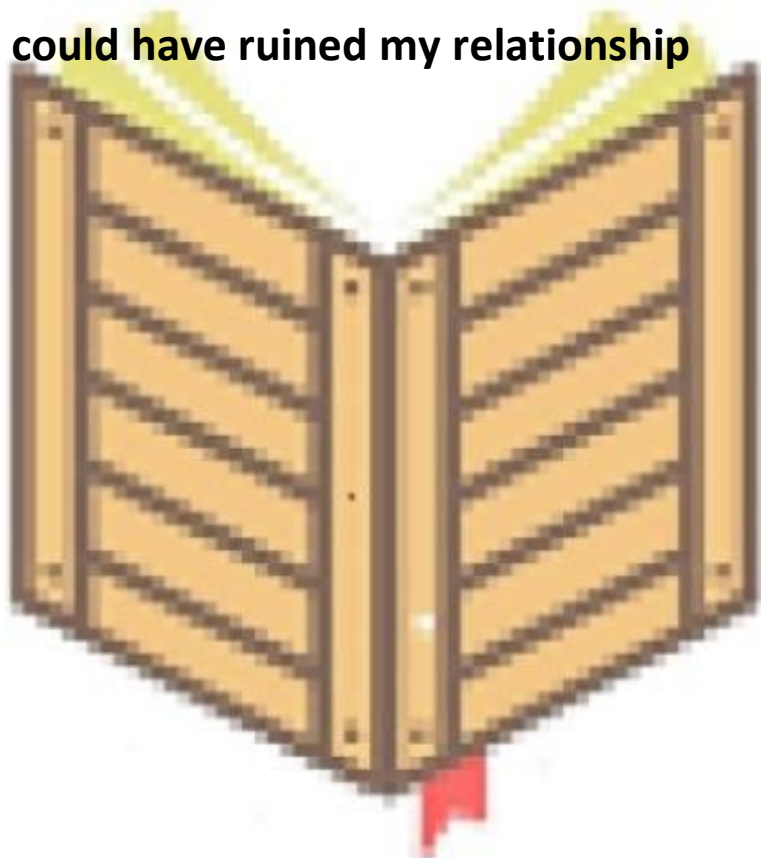
Nkosie: I'm not convinced

Khwezi: okay fine he was kissed but we are okay now, I really don't get why you did all that

Nkosie: something's are better unsaid

Khwezi: you could have ruined my relationship

I laugh.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: do you want me to tell you the truth about you?

Khwezi: the truth? yeah sure

Nkosie: you are selfish

Khwezi: excuse you, I'm not selfish

Nkosie: ngilinde ngiqede ukukhuluma (wait for me to finish talking)

Khwezi: sorry

Nkosie: you know why I say you selfish?

Khwezi: why?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: when you were in a rough position of having to choose between me and him, you thought of his feelings, you didn't want to hurt him , you got to hear him out but what about me?



Khwezi: Nkosie...

Nkosie: angikaqedi (I'm not done), did you think of my feeling? you hurt me in order to not hurt him, you gave him a chance to talk...you heard what he had to say but what about me?

Khwezi: I didn't realise I was doing all that, by your feeling what did you mean?

Nkosie: everybody got feelings, I don't mean the love kinda feeling trust me you the last girl on earth I would love



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: then here comes the mean Nkosie

Nkosie: I'm stating facts

**Khwezi: do you know why I did not even think of your feeling?
why I decided to hurt you and not him?**

Nkosie: why?

Khwezi: Nkosie you are mean and you got moods, I can't seem to understand you, you are a puzzle which has a lot of pieces which need to be filled in, you never treated me right the first day we met, Lindani treated me good despite not know me, you hurt me Nkosie and I was just returning a favour

damn.

Nkosie: so this is more like revenge huh?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I didn't say that

Nkosie: then what are you trying to say?

Khwezi: I'm trying to say that, I can't be considering feelings of somebody who doesn't consider mine

Nkosie: I don't consider your feelings?

Khwezi: I really don't get the point to why we talking about this whole thing cause it won't change anything that has and will happen

I chuckle.

Nkosie: I'm just trying clear everything up and stop the beefing



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: we are not beefing Nkosie

Nkosie: it looks like we are

Khwezi: we just don't click

I spot Lindani walking in and she smiles, she stood up and I held her hand.

Khwezi : Nkosie please don't ruin things for me

Nkosie: mana Mapholoba musa ukungijaha

she looks at me in the eyes.

Nkosie: I own the keys to the palace nobody else, I opened the palace which means the palace on my belongs to me

she chuckles.

Khwezi: just because you opened the palace doesn't mean

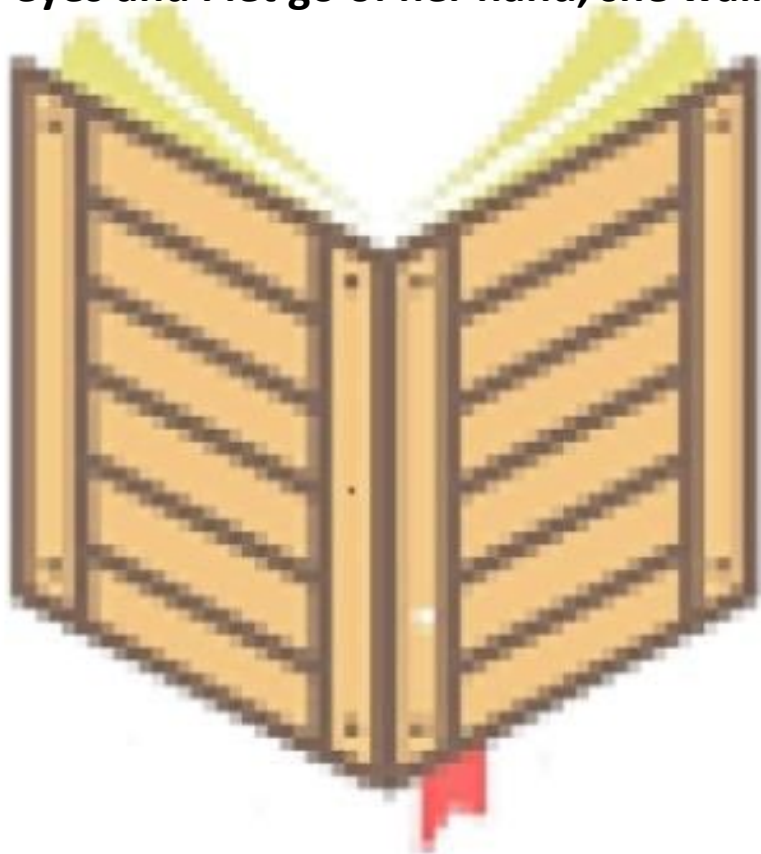


nobody can't come knocking right? meaning I gotta let them in, let go of that ego of yours Mr Mthembu maybe you might go somewhere

Nkosie: I like the shirt you wearing, who does it belong to?

she rolls her eyes and I let go of her hand, she walks away.

-
-
-



NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 33

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I'm in the car with Lindani and he is driving me back to the apartment, I agent said a thing she sings I got inside the car.

I'm still thinking about what me and Nkosie were talking about, I'm looking outside the window.

Lindani: babe

Khwezi: yes?

Lindani: your silence is killing me, what are you thinking about?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: nothing really I'm just tired and I need a warm bath

Lindani: are you sure cause you don't look really good?

Khwezi: I'm fine babe don't worry about me

Lindani: if you say so then

**he plays some music and I get lost in my thoughts once again,
he parks right outside the apartment.**

Lindani: we are here babe...



NOVELSGURU.COM

he pauses.

Lindani: honestly what is bothering you?

Khwezi: like I said I'm tired

Lindani: did something happen at the party?

Khwezi: what do you mean by that?

I turn to face him.

Lindani: I don't know...maybe you cheated on me with Nkosie cause I saw you two sitting there together talking

Khwezi: ohh so this is what you think of me, a girl who goes around cheating on her boyfriend whom she loves whole heartedly

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: I honestly don't know what to think anymore

Khwezi: you don't know what to think or you don't trust me

He doesn't respond.

Khwezi: you know what it's fine, it's not like you trusting me is gonna make me earn loads of money cause it ain't gonna do nothing...I really don't get why you being like this, everything was fine till you started acting like this

Lindani: I'm sorry it's just that I can't control my thoughts, when I saw you with him I thought...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you thought I had sex with him well guess what we didn't have sex, we was just clearing shit up so all this fucking mess and your insecurities could go away

I'm actually shouting, I'm pissed.

Lindani: I'm not insecure

Khwezi: then what you jealous?

Lindani: I'm not jealous

Khwezi: then what the fuck is it?

Lindani: I don't...

he is even shouting.

NOVELSGURU.COM

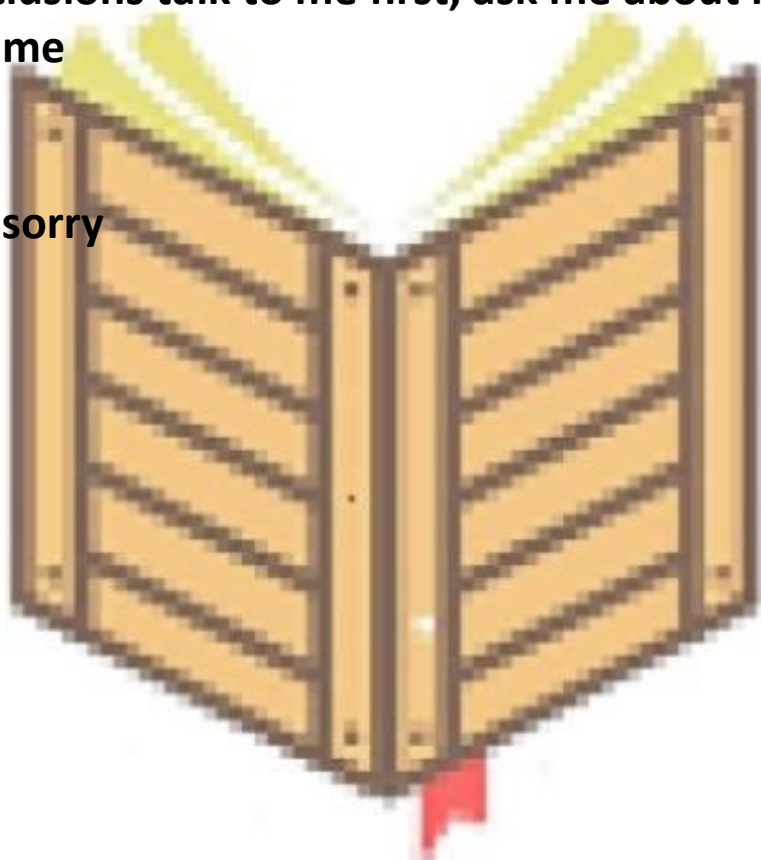
Lindani: I don't want to loose you Khwezi, I just hate seeing you around him cause you make it look like he has some sort of chance with you

Khwezi: I didn't know I was doing that

**Lindani: now you do, Khwezi I love you and I love what we have
smiles I want to have you by my side all my life and I will do
anything**

**Khwezi: I love you too but next time before jumping into
fucking conclusions talk to me first, ask me about it and don't
fucking assume**

Lindani: I'm sorry



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: it's fine, I understand

he gave me a hug.

Lindani: look tomorrow I want you to meet my parents for lunch

Khwezi: meet your parents? don't you think like it's too soon to meet your parents?

Lindani: I know its soon but baby they have been wanting to meet you especially my mother

Khwezi: you even told them about me? oh my God!

Lindani: they will be landing tomorrow morning and I will pick you up

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I will be done with my classes by then,.but I don't think this is a good idea

Lindani: please baby

Khwezi: fine I will meet them, but babe you should have told me earlier then this I would have prepared myself

Lindani: prepared yourself for what now?

Khwezi: to meet your parents silly, I'm really scared of them

Lindani: if I love you that means they gonna love you too

Khwezi: if you say so, I really have to go



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: good night

Khwezi: night, text me when you get to your place okay?

Lindani: I will

I kiss him on the lips and I got out of the car, I got inside the gate and went inside the apartment.

I turn on the lights and it's quite, I went to the fridge and I made myself something to eat.

I set down while eating and watching a movie, few minutes later I felt sleepy so I got up.

I wash the dish I was eating from, I went to my room. and I took a bath then I got done.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I dried and lotioned my body, I wore a night dress and I went undercover.

[THE FOLLOWING DAY]

I woke up early in the morning and I went to prepare a bath for myself, while I was filling the bath tub with water, I went to make my bed.

I got done and i went to the bathroom, I stripped naked and I got inside the bathtub.

I stayed there for a few hours and then I got out, i dried my body and I stood in front of the mirror.

Khwezi: look at you queen *smiles* I'm bigger then the world baby!

I wink and I went back to the room, I started to lotion my body and I went for something nice and simple.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I wore a brown strip knee dress and a pair of fluffy brown sandals, I did my hair into a neat bun.

I applied some lip gloss and I took my bag, I went out and Zizi was seated having a green drink.

Khwezi: that looks disgusting

Zizi: want to taste?

Khwezi: I just said it looks disgusting

she laughs and continued to have her drink.

Zizi: I should have stuck with last night but no I decided to have a lot of alcohol

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: there was no way of stopping you last night

Zizi: I think I'm gonna skip today's classes

Khwezi: I will take some notes for you don't worry

Zizi: you are the best and when you come back I'm gonna tell you about the steamy session I had with this white dude

Khwezi: you got some yesterday?

Zizi: I always get some girl it's just that I don't talk about it and I'm very low key

Khwezi: i see but the bad news is that, I won't be coming back I'm going to meet Lindani's parents



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: you mean the king and Queen

Khwezi: yes and I'm so nervous

Zizi: it's good to be you darling

Khwezi: Oops! I have to go the driver is here

Zizi: you didn't eat

Khwezi: I will grab something at the cafeteria

Zizi: okay bye I love you

Khwezi: I love you too



NOVELSGURU.COM

I got out and went to the car.

the driver drops me off and I went straight to the cafeteria, I bought three chocolate muffins and some coffee.

as I was walking to class I bumped into Ovelile.

Ovelile: ohh hey *smiles*

Khwezi: hey

Ovelile: how are you? it's been a while you know



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I'm good, yeah

I'm really not in the mood for her.

Ovelile: you know about what happens between me and you...I'm really sorry for being shitty toward you

Khwezi: okay

Ovelile: okay?

Khwezi: you want me to give you a hug or something, I'm late for class

I walk away and left her standing there, I arrived and I set down while having my muffins.

NOVELSGURU.COM

the lecturer walks in and i was already done eating, I attended a few more classes and I was out.

Lindani texted me that he was outside, I went to him, he was standing there waiting for me.



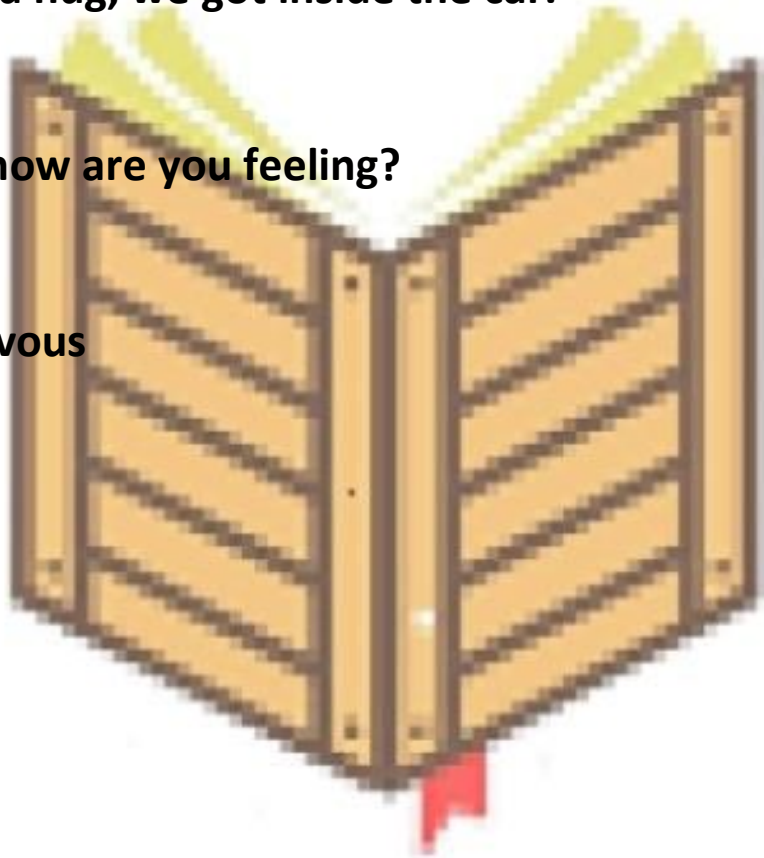
Lindani: you look good in that dead women

Khwezi: thank you babe

he gave me a hug, we got inside the car.

Lindani: so how are you feeling?

Khwezi: nervous



NOVELSGURU.COM

I giggle a little.

Lindani: you gonna be fine

he held my hand, we got to the restaurant and we went inside.

we went to some clear place where we found the king and Queen, I just gave them a smile.

Queen: you must be the Khwezi my son can't stop talking about, come here

she gave me a hug.

Queen: you look beautiful darling

Khwezi: thank you, you also look beautiful

Queen: I try

she laughs a little.



NOVELSURI.COM

Lindani: dad this is Khwezi

Dad: I know who she is, is she the girl you want to marry so bad that you chased away the only girl who...

Queen: please love let's not do this now

King: *sighs* how are you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

he is looking at me.

Khwezi: I'm fine and you?

King: I'm good

we set down and I squeeze Lindani's hand.

Queen: so Khwezi are you from here?

Khwezi: no I'm from Kwa-Zulu Natal

Queen: ohh so you are Zulu?

Khwezi: yes ma'am *smiles*

NOVELSGURU.COM

Queen: you should teach my son over there a little bit of Zulu

Khwezi: I will do just that ma'am



I look at Lindani and he smiles.

King: Lindani tells me you are currently at UJ and you doing your first year in law

Khwezi: yes that's true

King: why do you want to be a lawyer actually?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: well I really love working with people and I'm very good at it

King: that's all?

Khwezi: yes...I guess

I laugh nervously, the king shakes his head and I look at Lindani.

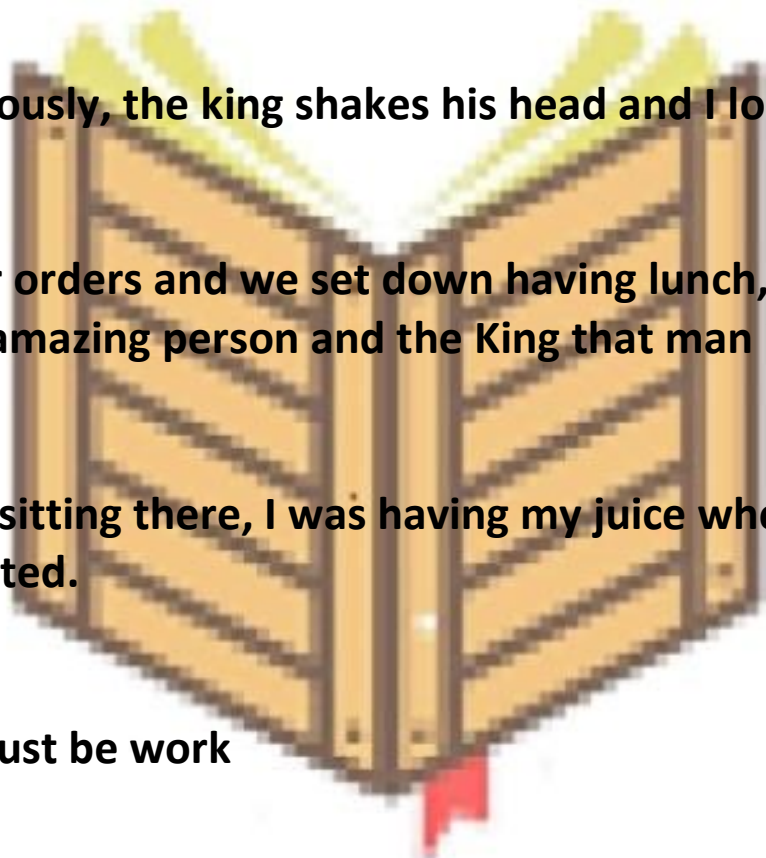
we took our orders and we set down having lunch, the queen really is an amazing person and the King that man is bitter.

as we were sitting there, I was having my juice when their phone vibrated.

Queen: it must be work

she smiles looking at me and I smile back, they all take their phones and they check what it is.

the next thing I hear myself moaning and screaming Nkosie's name, I spit my drink back into the cup.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani look at me fumbling and the Queen snatches the phone from the King.

Lindani: what is this nonsense?

he showed me a video is me and Nkosie having sex the day on my birthday, how did he get that.

Khwezi: I swear I don't know what that is

Lindani: then why did you send it to me?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: send it to you? why would I send it to you?

Lindani: I don't know you tell me

he is shouting, I look at the phone and the video got deleted.

Khwezi: I swear I did not send that to you

King: so you called us here to meet this prom star of yours?

the Queen looks at me and she shakes her head.

Khwezi: I swear I did not send this...

Lindani: shut up!!

he shouts and I jump, I'm now crying, o got up and stormed out of the restaurant.

I took out my phone and I called the driver, I'm busy crying with my hard shaking.



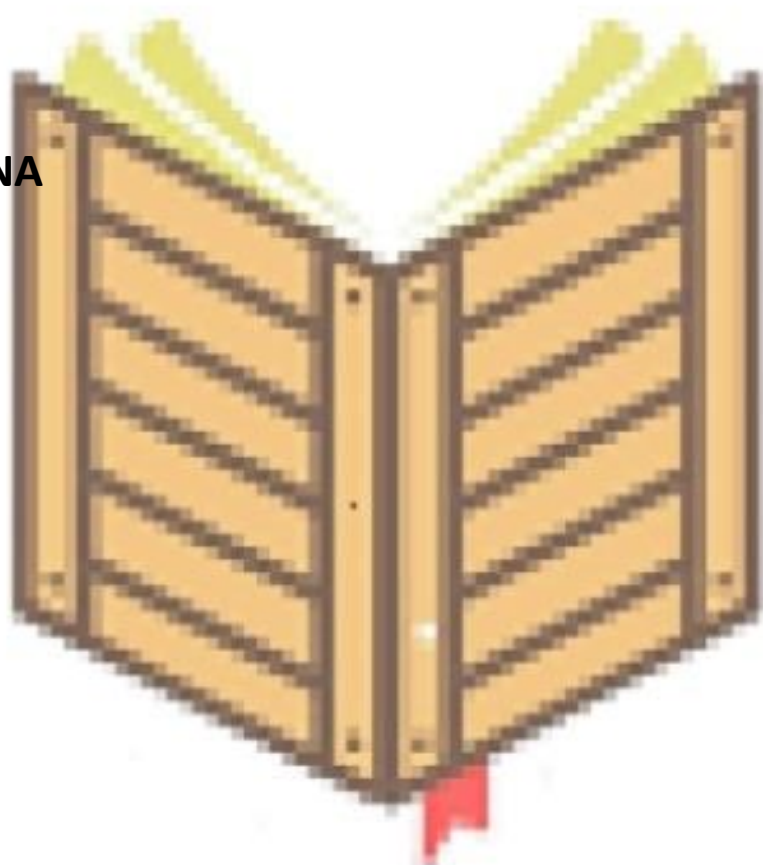
NOVELSGURU.COM

I dialed Zizi's number and it went through, as I was opening my mouth to speak somebody covered my nose and mouth with a cloth.

I think they poured something on the cloth cause my vision is getting blur, my phone drops on the floor and it was lights out for me.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 34

ZIZIPHO.

I was in my room enjoying some food I ordered, my phone rang and it Khwezi.

I answered.

Zizi: hey pretty face missed me?

she does it answer but the phone disconnects, that wierd she never does that, maybe she hung up by mistake.

I call her but she does not answer, maybe she actually did not mean to call me.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I place my phone down and continued to have my food.

.

.

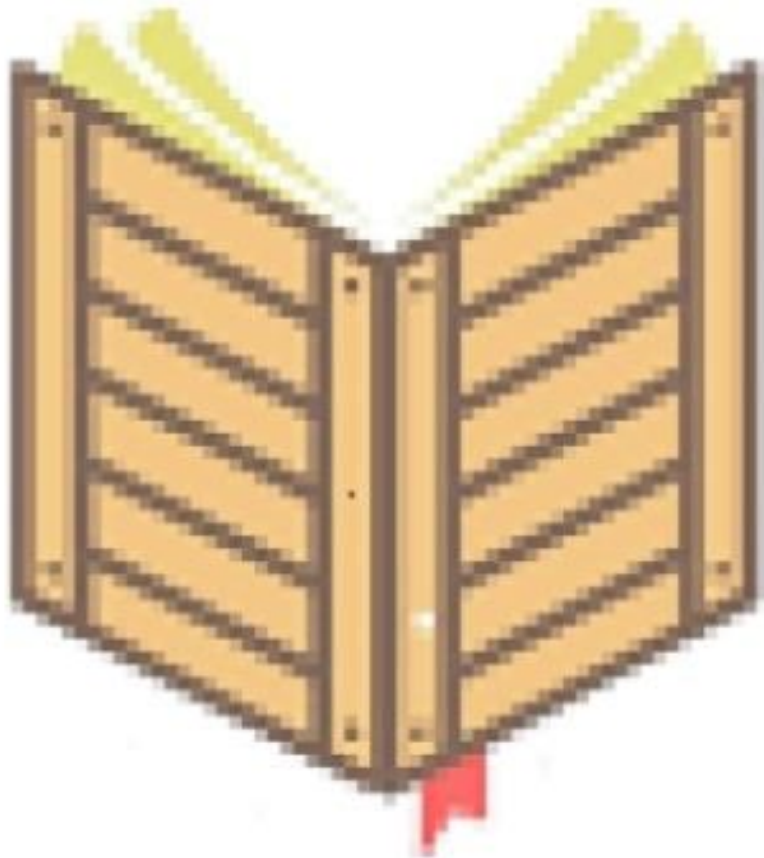
. KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up a few minutes ago, I have a black beg covering my

head and I'm inside a car, we have been moving for a while.

I can't move or do anything, my feet and hands are tied.

Khwezi: please don't hurt me, just let me go please...if you want money I can give it to you



NOVELSGURU.COM

God know I don't have any money with me.

"shut up" the guy says and I start screaming.

they remove the black bag from my face and I close my eyes, I open them and I was met with a gun pointing at me.

I swallow.

Guy1: try screaming one more time and you will arrive there cold like ice

he says.

Khwezi: I'm sorry

he clicks his tongue and removes the gun, he puts the bag back in my face.

NOVELSGURU.COM

the car stops and they take me out, here I am busy trying set myself free but no luck these man are very strong.

they remove the bag from my head and they push me inside a



room.

Khwezi: please let me go

**the other guy pushes me and I fell down right inside the room,
I'm still tied up.**

they close the door and I scream.

Khwezi: let me go, please I beg you!!!



NOVELSGURU.COM

I shout but nobody comes to open the door, what am I thinking? they kidnapped me and there's no way they care about how I feel right now.

I start crying as I look around the room, I notice a rat.

Khwezi: please..

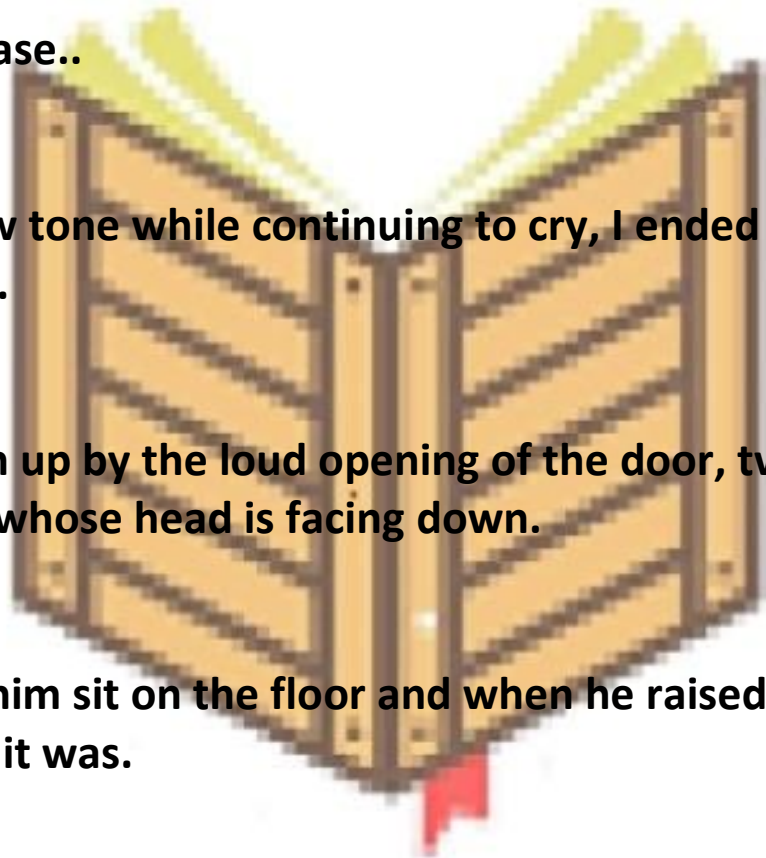
I say in a low tone while continuing to cry, I ended up sleeping on the floor.

I was woken up by the loud opening of the door, two guy walk in with guy whose head is facing down.

they made him sit on the floor and when he raised up his head, I knew who it was.

Khwezi: Nkosie!! NOVELSGURU.COM

he looks drunk and he is wounded, I don't care he tried to ruin my relationship by sending that video.



Khwezi: you fucking asshole, how could you?

Nkosie: ohh hey

he laughs a little, he really looks drunk.

Khwezi: why did you send that video to Lindani and his parents?

Nkosie: what video?

Khwezi: you know very well what in talking about



NOVELSGURU.COM

he shakes his head and the next thing he is asleep, I start crying till I ran out of tears.

if I don't get myself out then who will, I tried to get my hands out of the rope but there was no luck.

I can't believe all this is happening to me, I mean what did I do? I close my eyes and I start praying.

after what seemed like an hour the door finally opens and a group of guys walk in, they look at me and then they went to Nkosie.

just when I thought they were letting him go they start beating him up instead, I gasp and they beat him.

Khwezi: what are you doing?

NOVELSGURU.COM

the punch him in the face and they kicked him right on the ribs.

Khwezi: stop stop stop!! please you hurting him...

I shout but they don't listen.

Khwezi: I'm begging you stop

I start crying and they continued to beat him up, I just set there watching them beat him up.

they stopped and they went out, one of the guy turned around and came to me.

Khwezi: no no no please...

I cried but he u tied my feets and my hands, he left.



NOVELSGURU.COM

as soon as the door went shut I got up even though my legs were numb, I went to Nkosie and he was covered in blood.

he is still drunk.

Khwezi: Nkosie?

he doesn't answer, all he does is groan in pain.

Khwezi: why are they doing this?

I ask myself placing his head on my lap.

Khwezi: God wherever you are please help us out, we need you
God please

.
. .

FOREVA YENA



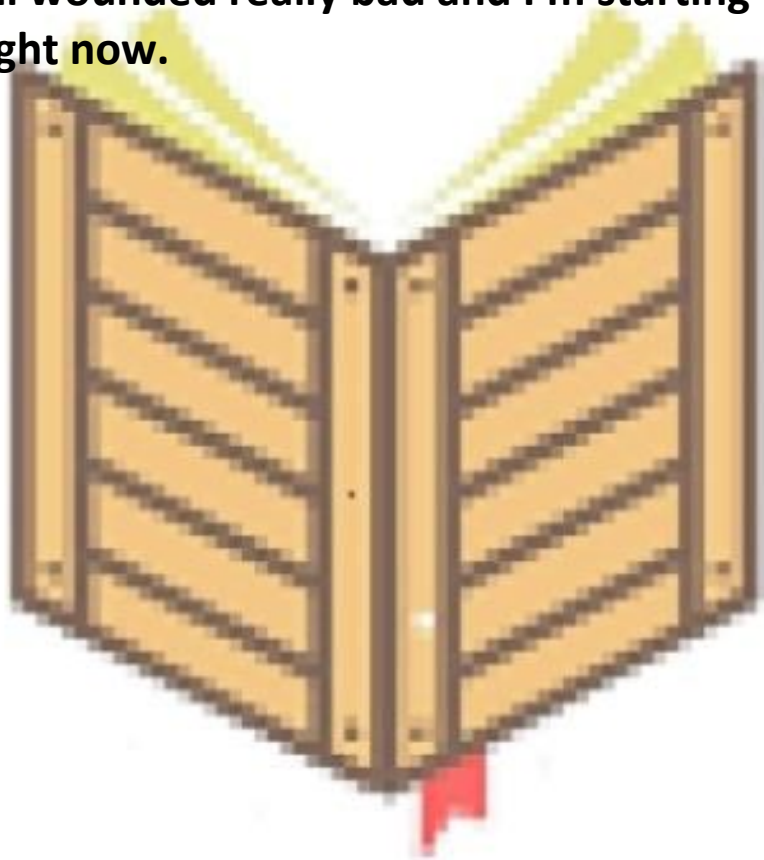
NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 35

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I don't know how long it has been but we have been locked up in this place for what seemed like a very long time.

my throat is dry and my eyes are swollen from all the crying, Nkosie is still wounded really bad and I'm starting to get very impatient right now.



NOVELSGURU.COM

why can't the person who kidnapped us come in here and state his/her business or maybe take Nkosie away since he is hurt.

I really don't know who did all this but whoever did they gonna regret all this.

.

.

. ZIZIPHO.

it's been two days since Khwezi left the house saying she's going to class and was gonna meet with Lindani's parents and never came back.

when it got late I started to get worried and I kept on calling her but nobody answered, I left the apartment and I went home.

when I got there mom was on panic mode and Nkanyezi was busy in his laptop, Dad was seated on the couch with his shirt sleeves rolled up.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he looked very stressed.

Zizi: mom.whats going on?

Mom: oh baby it's good to see that you are okay

she gave me a hug and I could see that she was crying.

Zizi: mom what's going on? why does dad look stressed and why is bhuti Nkanyezi busy on his laptop and where us everybody else?

Mom: Your brother is missing



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: who?

Mom: Nkosie...

Zizi: what do you mean? he got kidnapped?

Nkanyezi: he was at the strip club after the party and he got drunk, some guys said they spotted some guys knocking him unconscious then taking him away

Zizi: what? did you call the police?

Nkanyezi: that's not how we operate Zizi

Zizi: but...

Nkanyezi: no but you know we can't call the police we will find him on our own

I sigh.



NOVELSCOURU.COM

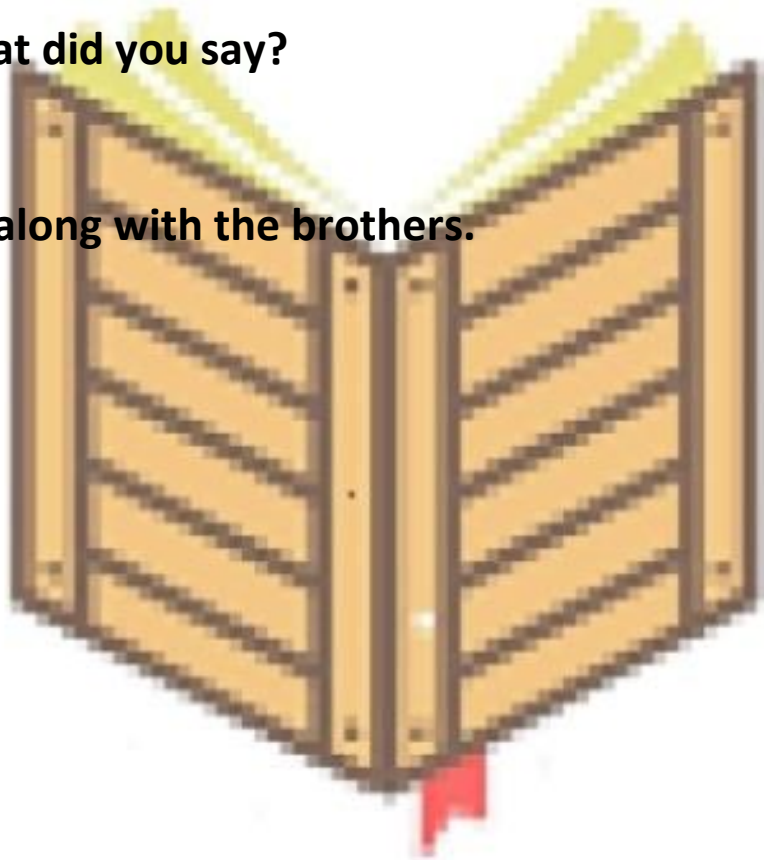
Zizi: we also got another huge problem...

Mom: what is it?

Zizi: I think Khwezi is also missing

Sandile: what did you say?

he walks in along with the brothers.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: Khwezi is missing, I thought she was out with Lindani but yesterday he came to my apartment asking about her, she called me but the call got disconnected as soon as I answered

Sya: this is a very huge problem

Sandile: what if Nqaba is behind all this?

Ntando: it can't be him, he wouldn't do that

Sya: but we are not sure, maybe he did kidnap them

Zizi: who is Nqaba?

Dad: somebody you shouldn't worry yourself about, look we gonna have to bring in our two suspects for questioning, we not gonna let this one slide get on those streets and bring me back my son

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: and my friend

I add, father looks at me and I shrug.

Nkanyezi: give me your phone

Zizi: what do you want with my phone?

Nkanyezi: just give me the phone

he snatches the phone from me, he connects it to his laptop using a USB cable.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: you said she called you right?

Zizi: yes but the call got disconnected

Nkanyezi: you know the call might have been disconnected and but the phone is still on meaning we can be able to trace it

Sandile: that is good news right?

Nkanyezi: depends if the person who has the phone doesn't find out we trying to trace the phone

Zizi: I hope she is safe.

.
. .
. .

FOREVA YENA



Insert 36

NOVELSGURU.COM

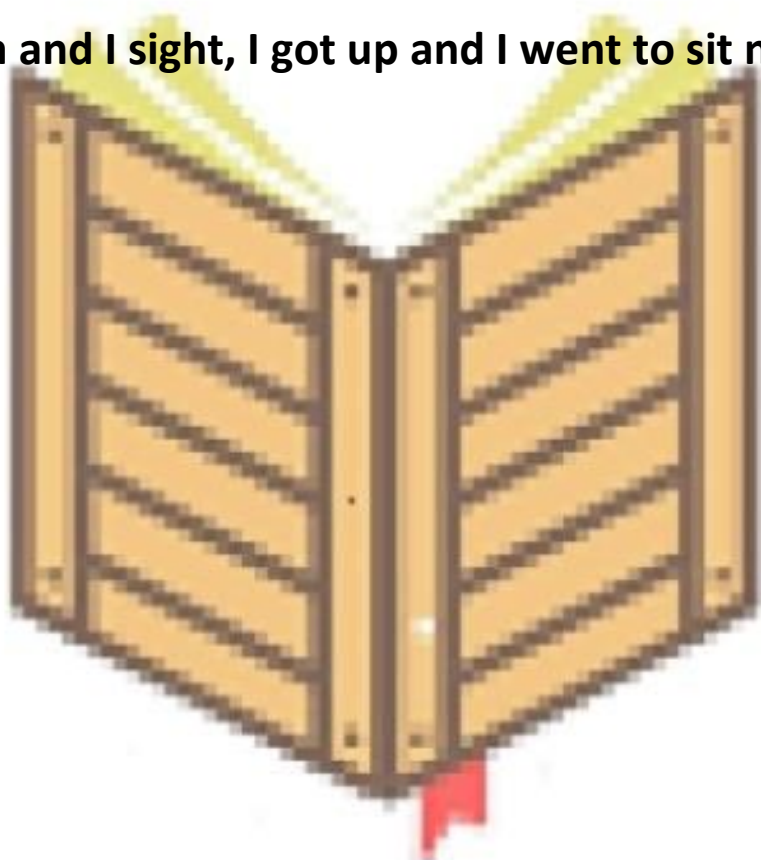
KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up and my body hurts from all the sleep in on the cold floor, I sit up straight and I rub my eyes.

Khwezi: I never knew sleeping on the floor hurts like this

I chuckle and look at Nkosie who was sitting across the room with his buried in his hands.

I look at him and I sight, I got up and I went to sit next to him.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: are you okay?

Nkosie : I'm good and yourself?

Khwezi : Nkosie!

Nkosie: I'm hurt and I broke my rib

he places his hand on his broken rib and he flinches in pain.

Khwezi: let me see

Nkosie: there's nothing to see here and...

Khwezi: I don't want us to argue,.just lift up the shirt so I can see

NOVELSGURU.COM

he rolls his eyes and he lifts up his shirt while he groans in pain, the part were he got beaten up has turned purple.

Khwezi: oh my god I'm so sorry, you gonna be okay cause I'm going to get us out of here

Nkosie: you gonna get us out of here?

he chuckles.

Nkosie: I doubt you will do that, for sure my brothers are looking for us right now

Khwezi: what if my mother called and I did not answer? I always answer her calls...what if she...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: calm down, your mother won't call

Khwezi: you don't know that Nkosie, maybe she has been trying to call me but no luck *sighs* oh my poor mother

Nkosie: relax okay, haven't you been kidnapped before?

Khwezi: why would anyone want to kidnap me?

I give him a bored look and he smirks.

Khwezi: wait wait honestly though why would anybody kidnap me?

Nkosie: maybe you are a well known celebrity

Khwezi: you are the celebrity here not me

NOVELSGURU.COM

I roll my eyes.

Nkosie: honestly though we gonna get out if here

we set there staring at the walls, the door finally opens and two man walk in, I got scared, what could possibly happen?

Nkosie: what do y'all want? where is your boss?

somebody laughs while walking in, I can't believe my eyes, it's Sakhile.

Sakhile: finally King is back to his senses



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: Sakhile?

Sakhile: hey butterfly you miss me?

he looks at me and he smiles, I got up and I fold my arms.

Nkosie: who are you and what do you want?

**Sakhile: you don't ask those question no more, I'm in charge
smirks boys teach him a lesson**

**the two guys move towards Nkosie, I quickly went to stand in
front of Nkosie and I point at the guys.**

**Khwezi: don't you even think about, can't you see he had
enough of your beating**

NOVELSGURU.COM

the guys turn to look at Sakhile and he looks at me.

Sakhile: butterfly move out of the way

Khwezi: he had enough Sakhile

Sakhile: boys it's okay leave him, we will deal with him later

the guys look at me and they walk back to stand behind Sakhile.

Sakhile: I see you are protecting your boyfriend

Khwezi: he is not my boyfriend



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: he sure does look like he is your boyfriend

Khwezi: he is just a...why am I even explaining myself to you

I roll my eyes.

Sakhile: what did I ever do wrong to you Khwezi?

Khwezi: what do you mean by that?

Sakhile: I gave you all the love in the world but you decided to end things because of him

he points at Nkosie who was just standing there with one hand in his broken rib.

Khwezi: what? no no no I broke up with you because you are a control freak

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: DON'T!...call me a control freak

he said out loud.

Khwezi: then what do you call a person that wants to control every move another person does, wants to know their where about, who they are with, tell them what to do and not do...what do you call that Sakhile Ndlovu?

Sakhile: I gave you...

he shouts but stops and he held his head, he then points at me.

Sakhile: I gave you everything Khwezi, I loved you with all my heart



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you did not love me, when you asked me out it wasn't cause you loved me it's because you wanted to use me but since I'm a very smart girl who doesn't like freaks like you I just ended things which really worked out for me

Sakhile got close to me and he grabs me by the neck so tight I couldn't breath.

Sakhile: listen here you not gonna talk to me like that Khwezi, I'm your man and you are my women meaning you gonna respect me okay?

I can't even talk, I got tears in my eyes, he let's go of me.

Sakhile: I told you that you mine and nothing will ever change that

he smiles.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: are you okay in the head Sakhile? you seem crazy to me

a hot slap lands on my face, the room starts to spin.

Nkosie: what is wrong with you dude?

he tried to get closer to me but the two guys held him.

Nkosie: awumuphathi kanjena mfwethu umuntu wesimame (you don't treat a women like that dude)

Sakhile: you not gonna tell me how to treat my women, you see this one right here...she is mine

Nkosie: you really can't...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: teach him a lesson boys

they started punching Nkosie, my ears are still ringing from the slap I got from Sakhile, what is wrong with him? he layed his hand on me again.

Sakhile: well I got rid of that Prince and now I'm gonna get rid of him

get rid of who now? wait so he is behind all this?

Khwezi: Sakhile please don't do this

Sakhile: look who is begging everybody, butterfly baby don't beg it doesn't look good on you

Khwezi: Please Sakhile...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile gives his man a signal to stop beating Nkosie and when they get off him he looked really bad.

Sakhile: see now this is how things are going to work...you are gonna come stay with me and you gonna break ties with him and his family

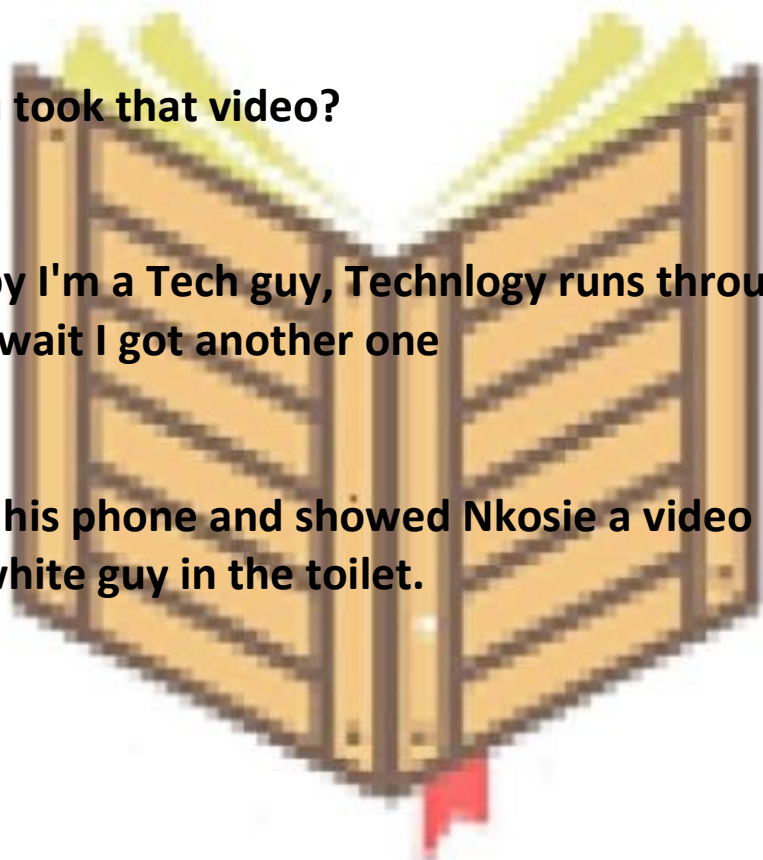
he is looking at me.

Sakhile: and you are going to get out of here tell your brothers to stop searching for Khwezi or else I'm gonna post your sex tape

Khwezi: you took that video?

Sakhile: baby I'm a Tech guy, Technology runs through my veins darling and wait I got another one

he took out his phone and showed Nkosie a video of Zizi having sex with a white guy in the toilet.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: she really does it real good when she is drunk, it's not my words but the guy on the videos words

he laughs.

Nkosie: son of a bitch

Sakhile: you want me to post your sisters video?

Nkosie doesn't say anything.

Sakhile: I thought so, now we gonna give you a ride back home and if you ever decide to come looking for Khwezi or to even kill me, the videos will be posted on all social media platforms and you gonna be famous son of a bitch

he laughs.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: baby let's go

he grabs me and I look at Nkosie who was still laying on the floor bleeding and badly hurt, Sakhile takes me to a car.

I cried while they forced me inside the car, the drive was silent while he had his hand on my thigh.

this guy is sick.

we arrive to this huge house, he drags me out and we walk inside.

Sakhile: from today this is your house, you will stay here and you won't ever leave this house



NOVELSGURU.COM

what did he just say?

Khwezi: but I have...

Sakhile: you will take online classes, welcome home baby

he covers my nose with a cloth, my vision get blurry and the last thing I heard was his laugh.

.
. .
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 37

NARRATIVE.

Khwezi woke up in a huge clean room, she had a chain on her leg which was chained to the wall across the room.

she looks at the chain and she tries to unlock it but no luck, she ended up staying there crying.

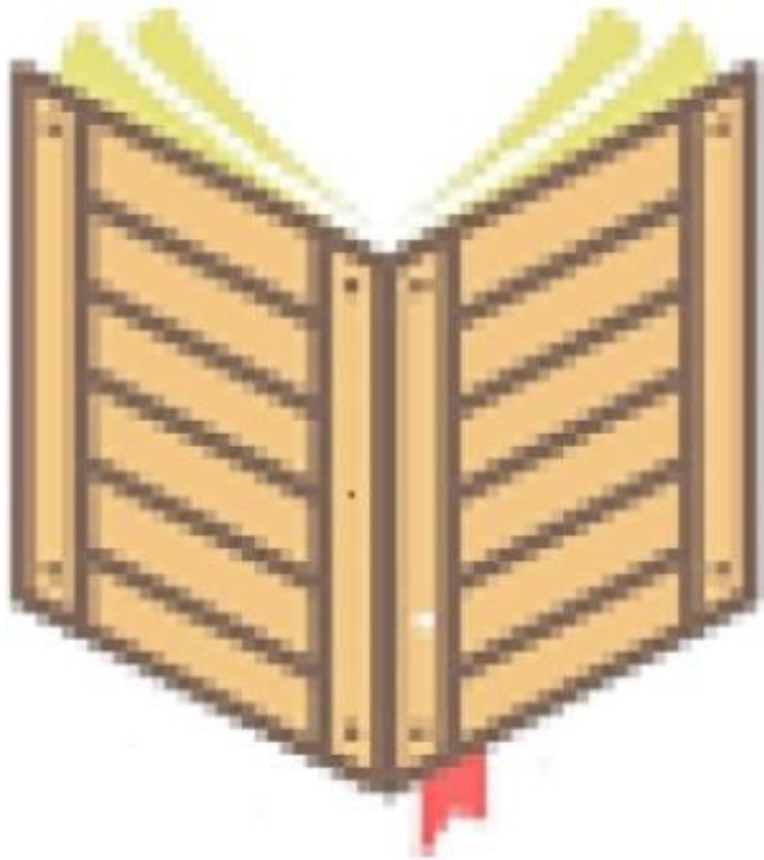


NOVELSCURU.COM

she figured crying was not going to help her so she got off the bed, she went to the door and start to bang it.

Khwezi: Sakhile open up!

she shouts.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: Sakhile I swear to God if you don't open this door I'm going to commit suicide in here

she shouts and the door open.

Sakhile walks in with a smile on his face.

Khwezi: what's this nonsense? why you have me chained like a dog?

Sakhile: just in case you tried to run away at night, I don't trust you

Khwezi rolls her eyes.

Sakhile: good morning butterfly, how did you sleep?

Khwezi: unchain me

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: you ain't going to do that, I just asked you a question

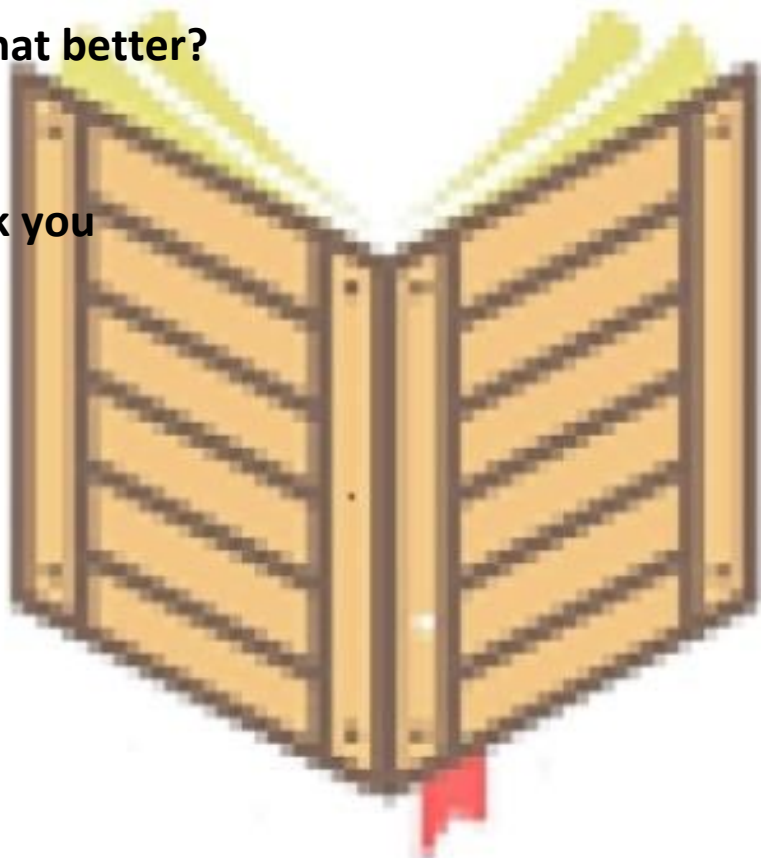
Khwezi: the question at worth any of my breath just unchain me

**Sakhile: since I love you so very much I'm gonna do as you say
butterfly**

he got down on his one knee and he takes off the chains.

Sakhile: is that better?

Khwezi: fuck you



NOVELSGURU.COM

she hit him with her knee on the nose and she ran out of the door, the house is so huge. she saw the door and as she went to it, she tried to open but no luck.

Sakhile: what were you thinking?

he asks walking down the stairs wiping the blood off with a cloth.

Khwezi: Sakhile please let me go, I'm begging you please you can't keep me here forever

Sakhile: you are not going anywhere and yes there's a very high possibility that I might keep you here forever

Khwezi: Sakhile please, I got a life and I need to contact my mother she must be worried

Sskhile: don't worry about that, I will allow you to call her everyday with my phone

Khwezi: why can't I have mine?

Sakhile: so you can contact you friend and your boyfriends,



NOVELSGURO.COM

since when have you become such a hoe?

Khwezi: I'm not a hoe

Sakhile: but you slept with King while you was dating the prince

Khwezi: we were not dating, Sakhile please I just need to speak with my mother

Sakhile: first make us some breakfast, I will be busy with your phone

Khwezi: Sakhile...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: if you continue to annoy me like this I'm going to give you a hot klaar (slap)

Khwezi: I'm sorry

she left and went to the kitchen, the place had everything she needed to make breakfast.

she made breakfast for the both of them and she dishes up.

Khwezi: I'm done

she shouts and Sakhile walks to the kitchen, he gives Khwezi her phone.

Sakhile: they won't be able to trace the phone, you have 5 minutes

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi took the phone and fails her mother's number.

the call rang and she answers.

Mom: Khwezilokusa my child

Khwezi's heart melted and she started to cry

Mom: Khwezi baby are you okay?

Khwezi bites her lower lip and she wipes her tears.

Khwezi: yes mom I'm fine how are you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: I'm also fine, you don't sound okay what is bothering you?

Khwezi: nothing is bothering me mom it's just that I miss hearing your voice and when I heard your voice I got emotional since I missed you so much

Mom: awww baby I miss you too, when are you coming over? and when are you starting with your exams?

Khwezi: I don't know but I don't think I will be able to visit, my exams are around the corner mom

Mom: why won't you be able to come? we miss you darling and your father has been asking about you

Khwezi: he has, did y'all get the money I sent you last week?

Mom: yes baby we got the money and thank you

Khwezi: it wasn't from me but from my friend, I don't have any money honestly

Mom: you have a very good friend, I wish to meet her one day

Khwezi: you will meet her trust me

Mom: I hope so...study my child and I know you gonna do well on your exams

Khwezi: thank you mama

Sakhile reaches out his hand to take the phone but I step back.

Khwezi: I will call you tomorrow mom, I love you so much



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: I love you too and please be safe

Khwezi: I will, tell dad I said hi

Mom: I will tell him when he wakes up

Khwezi: the usual?

Mom: you know your father

they both laugh and Khwezi wipes her tears, she hung up and Sakhile took the phone.

Sakhile: I said 5 minutes not 10

Khwezi: Sakhile I need to go to class

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: I thought I specifically said you won't be leaving this house

Khwezi: but Sakhile I need to learn and the exams are around

the corner

Sakhile: you will take online classes, entlek I don't want you to do anything just sit here

he pushes the empty plate to Khwezi.

Sakhile: wash that and come join me in the living room

He got up taking Khwezi's phone with him, Khwezi felt like screaming.



NOVELSGURU.COM

she took the plate and she washes it, she did not eat the breakfast since she was not hungry.

she went to the living room and she set opposite Sakhile.

Sakhile: and why are you sitting there?

Khwezi: I'm more comfortable here

Sakhile: come sit with me

Khwezi: no

Sakhile: I wasn't asking you

Khwezi: I know but still no



NOVELSGURU.COM

she was focused on the TV, Sakhile got up and went to sit next to her.

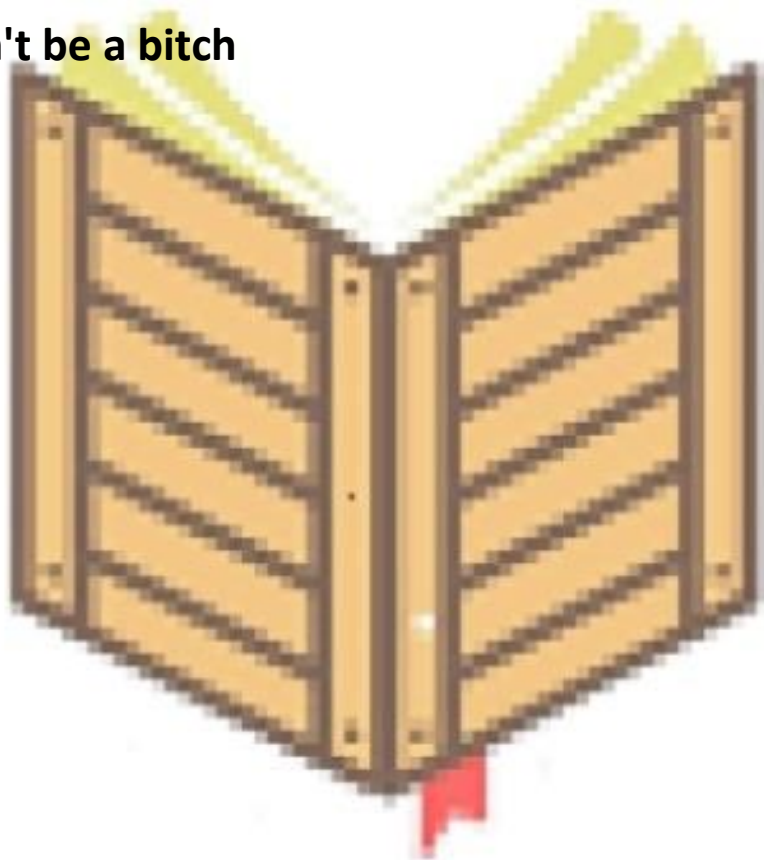
Sakhile: you really look beautiful today

Khwezi doesn't say anything.

Sakhile: I'm complimenting you

Khwezi: I don't need your compliments

Sakhile: don't be a bitch



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: can't you see I'm not even interested in you Sakhile, I don't even like you yet you all over my face annoying me

Sakhile: again you don't talk to me like that?

Khwezi: you might as well kill me cause you ain't done nothing to earn any of my respect

she clicks her tongue getting up from the couch.

.
. .
.

FOREVA YENA

Insert 38

NARRATIVE.

Nkosie is in the hospital and he has his family there waiting for him, Sakhiles man dropped him right outside the gate and he was found by the guards.

he was then taken to hospital.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: buka ingane yamii bayenzi (look what they did to my child)

she says crying while her husband held her tight, he also looked really sad to see his son in such state.

Zizi: who would have done this?

Nkanyezi: whoever it is he knows them



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: we gonna make them pay, nobody touches any of us and gets away with it

Ntando: facts, we gonna hunt them down and slaughter them like dogs

the doctor walks in.

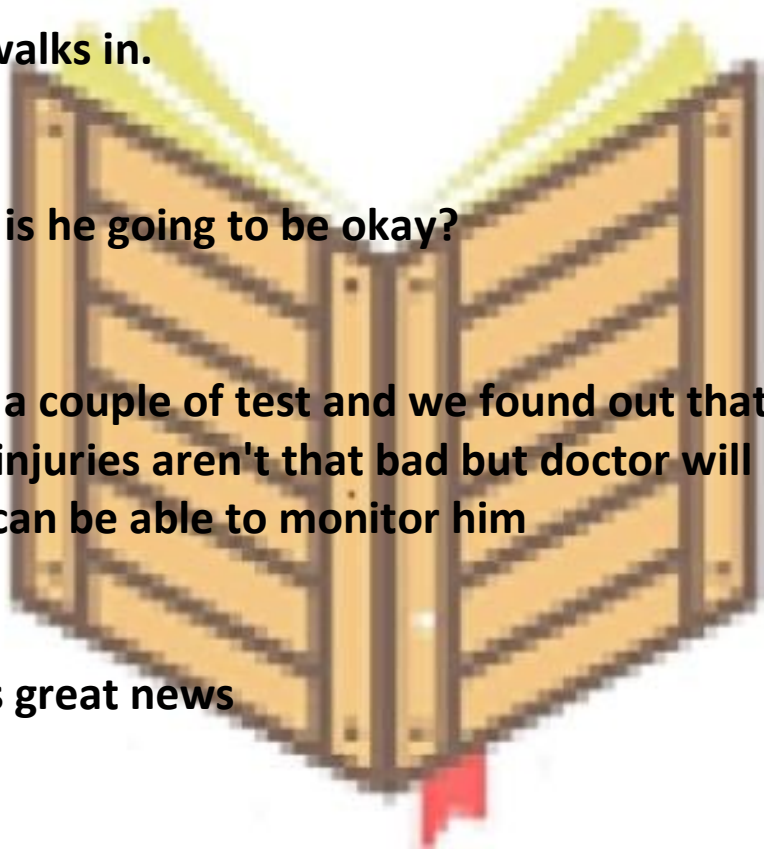
Dad: doctor is he going to be okay?

Doc: we did a couple of test and we found out that he broke his left rib, the injuries aren't that bad but doctor will keep him here so we can be able to monitor him

Mom: that's great news

Doc: but I got bad news, Mr and Mrs Mthembu the doctor wants to see you in his office

Zizi: wait what bad news? we are family and we all want to know



NOVELSGURU.COM

Doc: the doctor asked for the parents

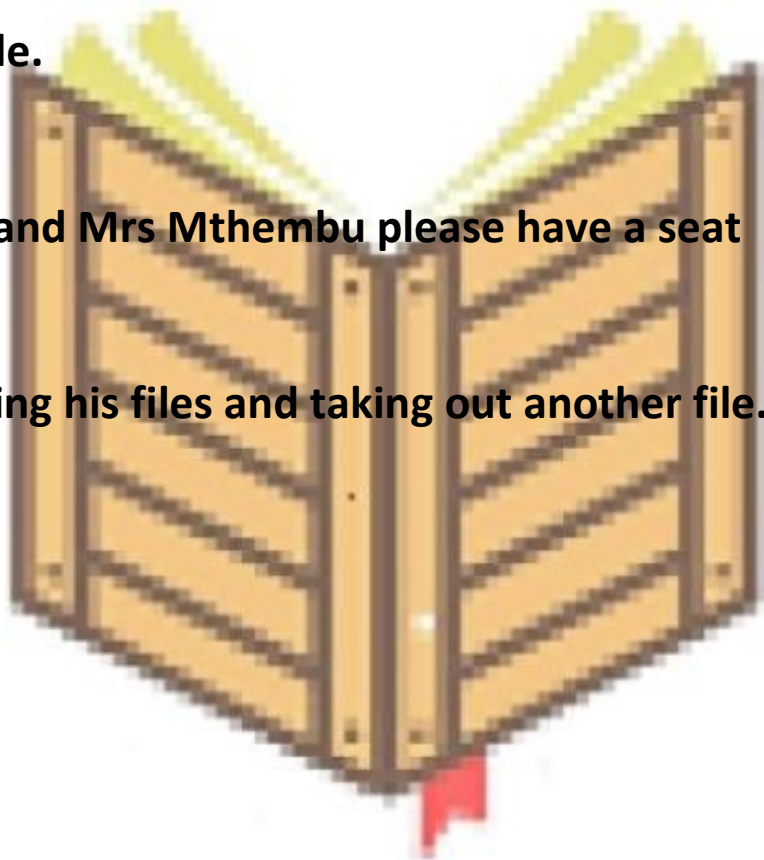
Mom: we will be back

she kisses Zizi on the cheek and they went to the doctors office.

the got inside.

Doc: oh Mr and Mrs Mthembu please have a seat

he says closing his files and taking out another file.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: you wanted to see us doctor

Doc: yes, it's about your son

Dad: yes it's about him of course he is the one laying in that bed

he says frustrated cause he knows whatever the doctor is about to say isn't good.

Mom: sthandwa samii yehlisa umoya (baby calm down)

she held his hand.

Mom: I'm sorry doctor please continue

**.
.**

Mr and Mrs Mthembu got out of the doctors office and went back to Nkosie's ward.

Zizi: mama what did they day?

Dad: he just lost a lot of blood that's all



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: he is going to be fine right

Mom: your brother is a fighter, he will be okay

Zizi: that's great, I'm not leaving till he wakes up

Mom: girl you got classes to attend, I bet Nkosie will be furious if he found you here and not in class



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: but mom I want to be by his side

Mom: you will be once you done with you classes

Sandile: I will stay with him

Nkanyezi: and me

Sya: we are all staying I guess

Ntando: I'm not, I got to hear home and see my wife

Dad: so your wife is important then your brother?

Ntando: I didn't say that it's just she has been calling me

NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: asambe mkami (let's go my wife)

they left the ward.

Ntando sighs and he set back down, he took out his phone and he calls his wife.

Amahle: baby I have been trying to call you

Ntando: I saw the missed calls, I can't come my brother is in the hospital and he needs me

Amahle: he is in hospital? he was found?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ntando: yes they found him, so I can't come to see th babe

Amahle: it's okay but babe...what if we end him

Ntando stood up and went to stand away from his brother so they don't hear the call.

Ntando: I'm with my brothers stupid

Amahle: you didn't say, but you heard what I said

Ntando: I can't do that he is my brother

Amahle: I know he is your brother, look if he is removed from the picture then you will come along and things will change, think about it

Ntando: there's nothing to think abiuat here, I ain't doing that shit

he hung up.

he went back to his brothers and he set down with them.

Sandile: wifey is mad at you?

Ntando: you have no idea

he laughs nervously and Sandile just looks at him.

they set there for hours while busy on their phones, offering in some food, they even slept on the chairs.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile was walking in with a brown bag when he saw Nkosie moving and opening his eyes.

Sandile: bafo!!

he puts the bags down and he went to his brother.

Sandile: Nkosie bafo you are awake, uvukile majita (he is awake guys)

he shouts and the rest of the brothers got up.

Nkosie: what am I doing here? where is Khwezi?

Nkanyezi: by would Khwezi be here?

Nkosie: fuck my head hurts

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile helps him to sit up.

Nkosie: how long have I been here?

Sya: 2 days

Nkosie: what? guys we need to find Khwezi, this crazy guy has her and she is not safe at all

Sandile: which crazy guy?

Nkosie: Sakhile Ndlovu that what she called him

Nkanyezi: I will look into him for now you need to pay down and stop stressing yourself.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I can't relax while she's out there, God knows how Zizi is right now, where is she?

Ntando: she has been asking about her you know, she left for her classes

Nkosie: she is okay right?

Sandile: yes she is fine

Nkosie: when she gets here we do not tell her anything about Khwezi till we find her

Ntando: deal now rest bro you look badly hurt and you broke your rib

Nkosie: it's not like it was my first time getting kidnapped and beaten up

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi presses on Nkosie's broken rib and he groans in pain, he hits him.



Nkosie: uyahlanya yini Nkanyezi kubuhlungu ndoda (are you crazy Nkanyezi, it hurts dude)

they laugh so does Nkosie.

-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 39

KHWEZILOKUSA.

It's late at night, I haven't eaten anything till now and I am starving but I don't feel like eating.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I'm sitting in this cold room of mine staring at the ceiling, the fact that my life turned upside down in a split second really supprises me.

I mean where did everything go wrong? what did I do wrong?

yes it was wrong of me to get into a relationship with Sakhile knowing very well I don't have any feelings for him.

but I thought I did, look where all the lying led I'm in the middle of no where and a house I don't even know.

I don't have my phone,I haven't eaten I'm just a whole mess.

I wonder if Nkosie is okay, I hope they set him free cause he doesn't deserve whatever that happened to him.

the room door opens and Sakhile walks in.

Khwezi: there's something called privacy

Sakhile: you in my house and you my wife

Khwezi: you wish

I chuckle.

he got closer to me and he stood in front me.

Sakhile: oh my god you really sexy



NOVELSGURU.COM

what the fuck?

he touches my face and I remove his hands, he grabs me by my neck roughly.

Sakhile: it's a pity that I wasn't the one who broke your virginity

I can't breath he is hurting me.

Sskhile: but as long as I get to smash then it's fine with me

as long as he what? he removes his hand and he pushes me to the bed, I'm still catching my breath.

he got on top of me and I trying pushing and living him but no luck.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he took out come handcuffs from his left pocket and he cuffed me, I'm in tears right now.

Khwezi: Sakhile please don't do this!

I beg looking at him in the eyes but my tears don't mean nothing to him, he starts kissing me and I bit his tongue.

a hot slap landed on my cheek and I cried out loud as he unbutton his pants, he takes off my panty as I layed there unable to help my helpless self.

he enters inside my not so wet vagina and he struts inside me while I felt so much pain on my nana.

he groans as he continued to increase the phase, I layed there crying and he pulls out.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he kisses my cheek.

Sakhile: you got one mice tight pussy

he bites his lower lip, I'm so discussed right now, how can he do this to me? did he just rape me? will anybody help me out of this?

he left me there still cuffed and he went to take a shower, he came back with a towel wrapped around his lower body.

he looks at me.

Sakhile: oh my god butterfly, are you okay?

he said in a concerned tone, is he really asking me that question after raping me?

NOVELSGURU.COM

he removes the cuffs and he looks at me, I could see blood on the shots and all did was just cry.

Sakhile: please don't cry butterfly I didn't mean to hurt you

**I pull the shots covering my body and I love away from him,
God please help me out of this.**

-
-
-

Nkosie was still in the hospital, Nkanyezi was seated on the couch busy on his laptop, he is trying by all means to find Khwezi.

Nkanyezi: nothing is working bafo

Nkosie: what do you mean? there had to be a way



NOVELSGURU.COM

he says and the rest of his brothers walk in.

Ntando: we looked everywhere bafo but there's nothing

Nkosie: you did not look harder then

Sandile: trust me we went all over joburg but we can find her

Nkosie: you not looking harder enough

Sya: Nkosie we spent the whole day looking for her

Nkanyezi: and we getting the same feedback, this guy knows what he is doing and for some reason he built this fucking wall I can't seem to get through, he is smart and I'm sure he knows each and everyone of our moves

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: don't tell me that bullshit we need to find her, you should have seen the way that animal slapped her in front of me bro

They all sigh.

Nkosie: God knows what he is doing to her and...

he felt this sharp pain on his chest, his chest started to heat up and he rubs his chest.

sandile: Nkosie are you okay?

Nkosie: nah my chest hurts, give me some...some water



NOVELSGURU.COM

he says, Sandile got him some water and he drank it.

Sya: should I call the doctor?

Nkosie: if you want to but I'm fine, it's just...well I don't know what that was

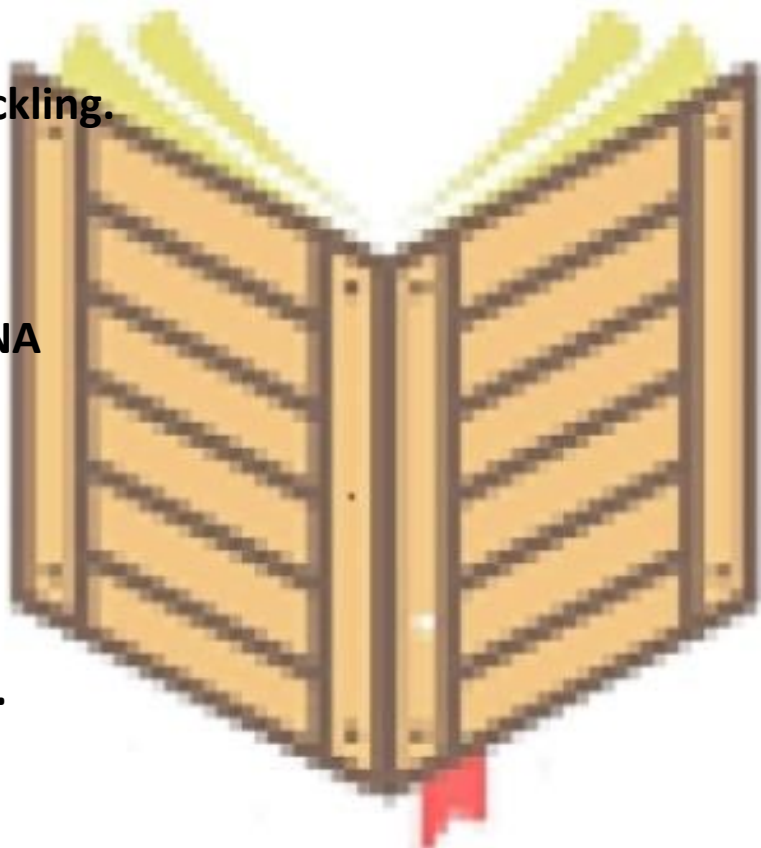
he says chuckling.

.
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 40

NARRATIVR.



The following morning Nkosie woke up and the doctor came to do some check up, he was told that he is going to be discharged and he was happy.

though he has to take it easy because of that broken rib.

he took out his phone and he called Sandile, he answers.

Sandile: wassup?

Nkosie: waphendula kubuhlungu kanjena (you answering in such a bad way)

Sandile: my bad, good morning Mr Mthembu how can i help you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie chuckles.

Nkosie: I got discharged can you bring me a pair of clothes

Sandile: ohh now you gonna allow me to go to your house, I thought you said you have want to see me there

Nkosie: that because you end up stealing my stuff and my money

Sandile: you lie, I would never do such I'm a Christian

Nkosie: fucking get my clothes and stop being a dick head

Sandile: I will change my mind

Nkosie: be here in 10 minutes

NOVELSGURU.COM

he hung up.

he set on his bad while he still felt that burning in his chest, the doctor ran some tests but he looked completely fine to him.

few minutes later Sandile walks in with a bag in his hand.

Nkosie: I wonder what took you this long

he says talking the beg and getting off the bed.

Sandile: your house is really huge dude don't forget that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: yeah right

he went to the bathroom and he changed, he was wearing a pair of black nike tracksuits.

Nkosie: any updates on find Khwezi?

Sandile: nah there's nothing bro, we have tried our level best, you know us we never disappoint when it comes to this typa shit but this time it's so different man

Nkosie: I feel yah, tell you what let's meet at my hour and we will have a discussion abiuat this whole thing

Sandile: that's a great idea, order some meat for us

Nkosie: with whose money? uyadakwa

NOVELSGURU.COM

he takes the beg and they leave.

they arrive at Nkosie's places and when they got in they found Amanda seated in the kitchen having a sandwich.

Amanda: baby you back *smiles*

Sandile: couldn't you pick a better looking and shaped girl either then this thing

Nkosie: she used to give the best sex yow

Sandile: used to give..? what changed that huh?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: nothung

he smiles.

Amanda: baby are you okay? what happened to your face?

Nkosie: firstly what are you doing in my house?

Amanda: this is our house babe

Sandile laughs and Nkosie looks at him.

Sandile: sorry, let me go play a video game while y'all sort out your sexuationship

he laughs leaving.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: this is my house and you need to leave, I no longer need you in my life so pack your stuff and leave

Amanda: but babe we were doing fine together

Nkosei: firstly we were not dating second nothing was fine, now leave

Amanda: Nkosie maybe we can fix this, you can't end things just like that

Nkosie: fuck...

he mumbles, he takes out his phone and he makes a call, few minutes later one of Nkosie's security walks in.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: get her out of my property

Gaurd: yes boss

he lifts Amanda up and took her out.

Amanda: Nkosie you gonna pay for doing this to me

Sandile: you know you shouldn't have done that

Nkosie: I know a bullet seemed better then kicking her out

Sandile froze.

Sandile: no I mean you should have talked to her properly you know

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I'm done talking properly, where are your brothers?

Sandile: they are my brothers now?

Nkosie gave him a board look.

Sandile: they are on their way

Nkosie: great I need to shower

Sandile: can I use your phone?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you got your phone why do you need mine?

Sandile: I want to order food

Nkosie: you can order with your phone. why do you want mine?

Sandile: because you have more money than me

Nkosie chuckles.

Nkosie: I'm not giving you my phone, use your own phone and money not mine

Sandile: come on please, I will wash all your cars

Nkosie: don't wash the car just take the phone

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: you the best brother in the world

he gave him a hug and Nkosie pushes him off while groaning in pain.

Nkosie: I'm still hurt you asshole

Sandile: I forgot

Nkosie: mxm

he went upstairs, he got to his room and he turns on some music.

he went to the bathroom and he stripped naked, he looks at himself on the mirror and he looked bad.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he steps inside the shower and he starts bathing, he turns of the tap and he steps out of the shower.

he dries his body and he wraps a towel on his lower body, he went back to his room and he lotions his body.

he got done and he wore some Adidas tracksuits, he wore his socks and went downstairs.

Ntando: look at you looking all good as if you didn't just get a beating of your life

Nkosie: hahaha very funny, wow so much food

he looks at Sandile.

Sandile: I got tempted brother

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you gonna finish all this I'm telling you

Sandile: I love you more



Nkosie: love you wamasimba, uzoyiqeda lento oyithengile (love you my foot, you gonna finish this food you bought)

Nkanyezi: but honestly though it's a lot of food, what were you thinking?

Sandile: I was enjoying my brothers money

Nkosie: he is gonna be the death of me



NOVELSGURU.COM

he shakes his head and they laugh.

they went to the living room and they had beers.

Sya: no beers for you remember you are on meds

Nkosie: one beer won't hurt come on

he says opening it with another beer.

Nkosie: so where you able to gather up information about Sakhile Ndlovu?

Nkanyezi: oh yes I did

Ntando: wait wait wait isn't that Amahle's brother?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: shit you mean the guy who kidnapped Khwezi is that ugly guy back from KZN?

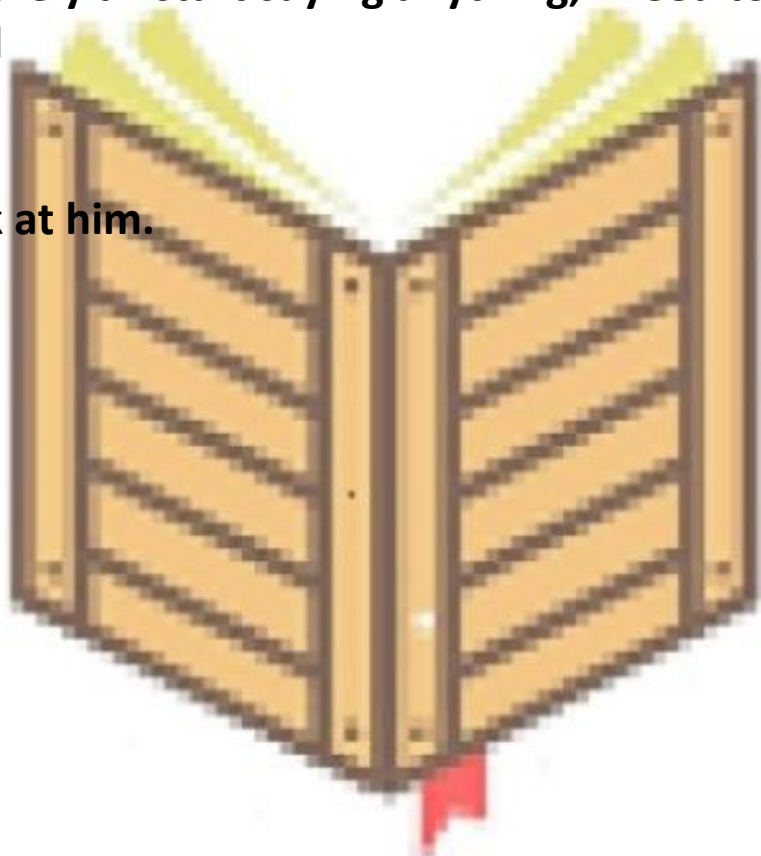
Nkosie: no wonder I could remember him, I mean I always remember good looking people but it was so unfortunate for him

he frowns and the guys laugh.

Ntando: what would Amahle's brother want from Khwezi?

Nkosie: before y'all start saying anything, I need to come clean for a second

they all look at him.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I didn't say look at me like that jeez

Sandile: just tell us what's going on

Nkosie: well the guy was kinda Khwezi's boyfriend and he is angry about what happened between me and Khwezi, he seemed to be kinda obsessed to me the worst part of it he is blackmailing me with a sex tape of me and Khwezi and sex tape of Zizi with some white guy I don't know

Nkanyezi: what did you just say?

Sya: he got whay on our little sister, the mother fucker better run cause he sure is gonna die

Nkosie: a painful and slow death

Ntando: this is fucked up

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: you need to somehow ask you wife abiot his brother

Ntando: I will

Nkosie: nah she will get suspicious, we can't act like that we don't even know if she is working with him

Ntando: what are you trying to say about it wife? she wouldn't do such?

Nkanyezi: and how long have y'all been married

Ntando doesn't say anything.

Nknayezi: exactly, you don't know what she is capable of



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ntando: trust me I do

he mumbles.

Nkosie: we can also use his sister on this one, I got a very good plan and you not gonna like it brother

Ntando: when you out it like that I ain't gonna like it for real

Nkosie smirks.

Nkosie: let's kill two birds with one stone

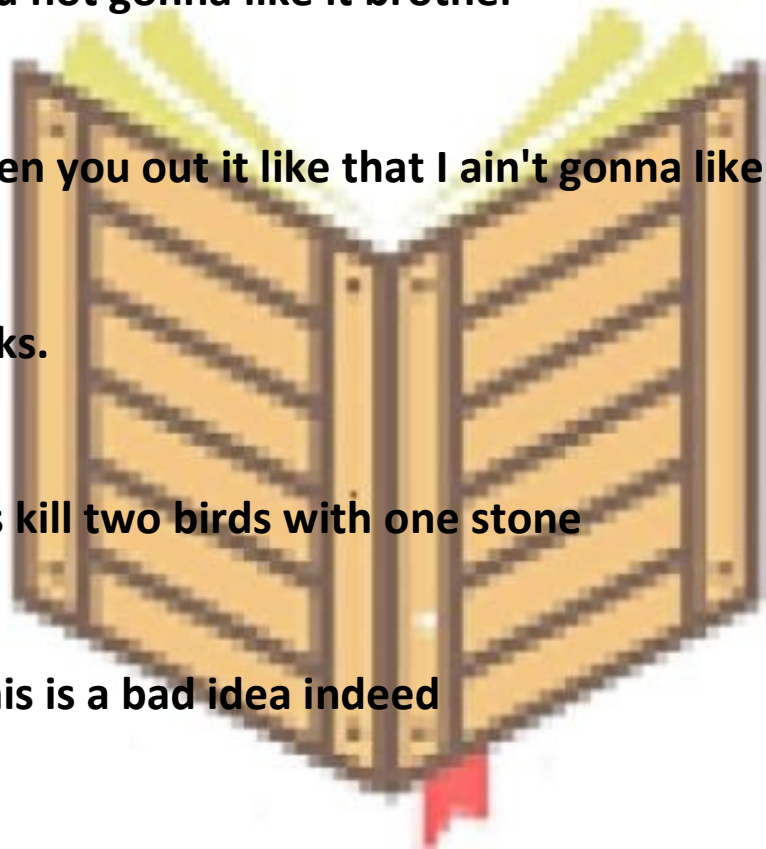
Sya: okay this is a bad idea indeed

Nkosie: do I ever come up with bad ideas?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: not really but this one sounds bad

Nkosie: you haven't even heard what I got to say



Nkanyezi: let's all him to speak

Nkosie: thank you so since the stupid brother like sex tapes so much how about we make a sex tape involving his sister and see if he is gonna like it

Sandile: very bad but good idea

Ntando: hell that's not happening



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I don't remember asking

he had this serious face.

Ntnado: fine whatever as long as my face won't be visible

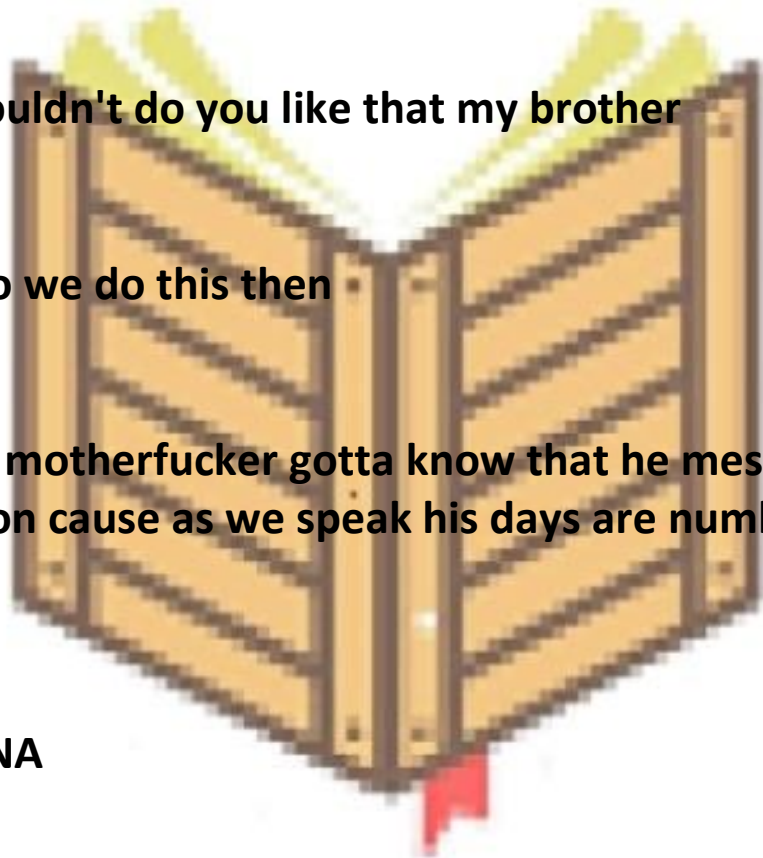
Nkosie: I wouldn't do you like that my brother

Nkanyezi: so we do this then

**Nkosie: this motherfucker gotta know that he messed with
wrong person cause as we speak his days are numbered**

**.
. .
. .**

FOREVA YENA



Insert 41

NOVELSGURU.COM

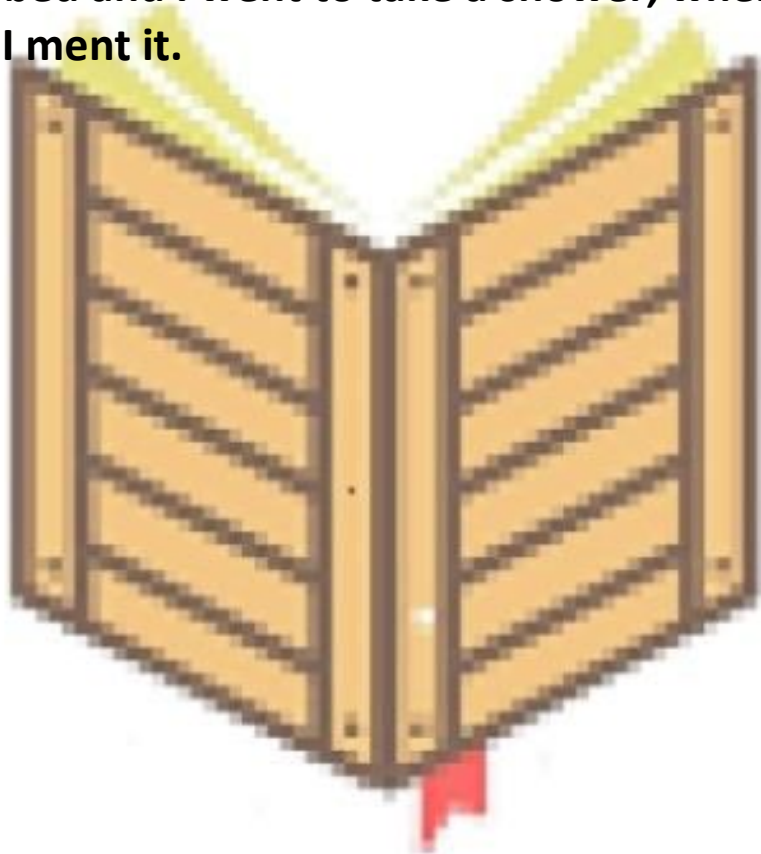
KHWEZILOKUSA.

its been a month and I'm still living with this psychopath, I

haven't had enough sleep and I'm drowning myself with a lot of food.

he has been treating me really good lately maybe he is regretting what he did to me which I won't ever forget.

I got off the bed and I went to take a shower, when I said I'm gain weight I ment it.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I finished taking a shower and I dried my body, I really want to get back to school he declined for me to do online classes.

I went back to the room and as I was sitting down the bedroom door opens.

he always allows himself in without knocking, I got used to it.

Sakhile: butterfly you up early today

I remain silent as I lotion my body while looking at myself in the mirror.

Sakhile: I'm talking to you

Khwezi: and I can hear you I'm not deaf

he got closer to me and he looks at me then down at my belly.

yes I got a big belly now, I have been drowning myself with a lot of food I tell you.

Sakhile: my mother and sister will be coming over for dinner,



NOVELSGURU.COM

prepare something nice

Khwezi: anything else?

Sakhile: no nothing else, are you okay?

Khwezi: I'm just not in the mood for your crazy different personalities *sighs* close the door on your way out

I say still lotioning my body, he looks at me for a while and he walks out.



NOVELSGURU.COM

finally I get to breath properly.

I got up and I look at myself on the mirror, I notice this black line on my belly.

Khwezi: I need to scrub this off tonight when I bath, I don't know how I missed the spot

I shake my head laughing at what I just said, I went to the closet and I decided to wear some baggy clothes.

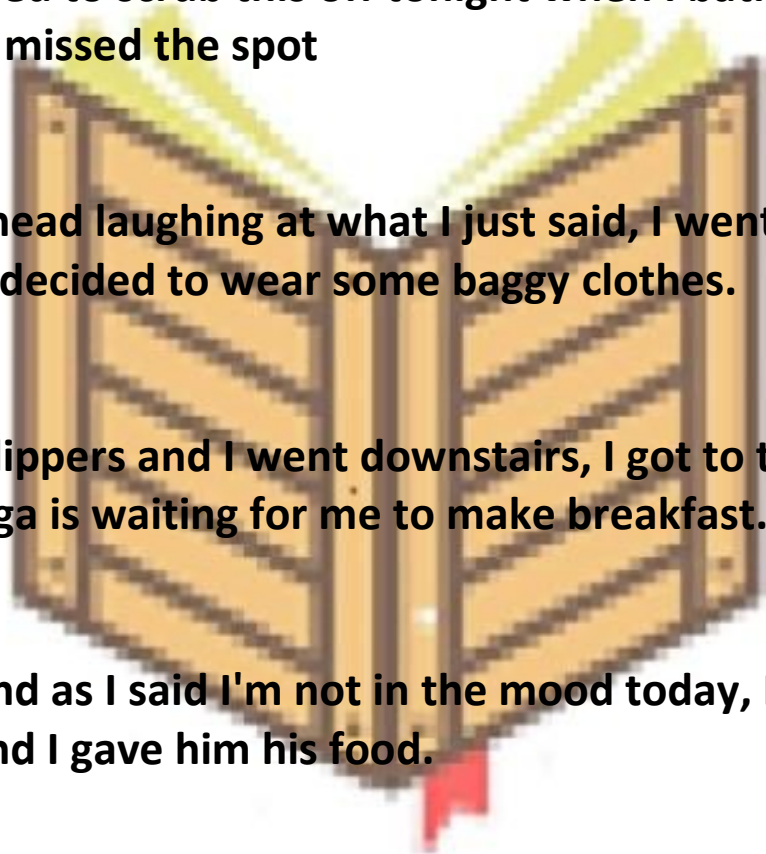
I wore my slippers and I went downstairs, I got to the kitchen and this nigga is waiting for me to make breakfast.

I did not mind as I said I'm not in the mood today, I made breakfast and I gave him his food.

Sakhile: you going to eat all that?

Khwezi: got a problem?

Sakhile: not at all Khwezi: perfect then



NOVELSGURU.COM

I roll my eyes and took a bite on this wierd sandwich I just made, I finished up and I drink my juice.

Khwezi: at what time is your mother coming?

Sakhile: around seven

Khwezi: great I have just enough time to sleep



NOVELSGURU.COM

I got up and I wash the dishes.

Sakhile: you just woke up butterfly

Khwezi: you should really focus on minding your own business really it's annoy to have all up in my business 24/7 go masturbate or something jeez...

I roll my eyes and I went upstairs, as soon as I got undercover it was home sweet home for me.

**.
.**

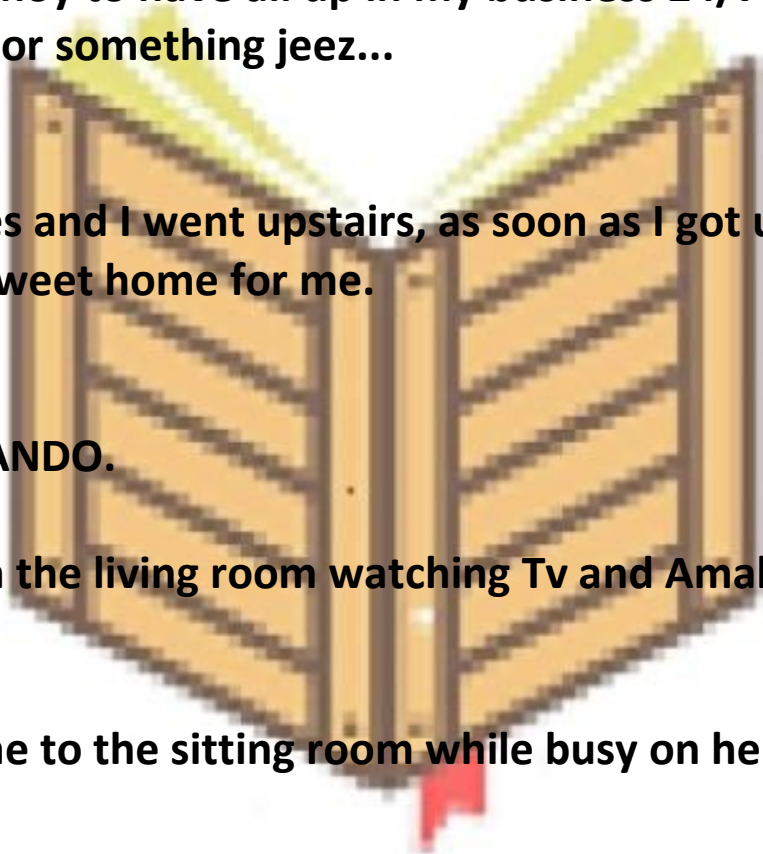
. KUNGENTANDO.

I'm sitting in the living room watching Tv and Amahle walks in.

Amahle came to the sitting room while busy on her phone.

Amahle: alright mama, that's great news

she set down next to me and I kiss her neck. she giggles pushing me away.



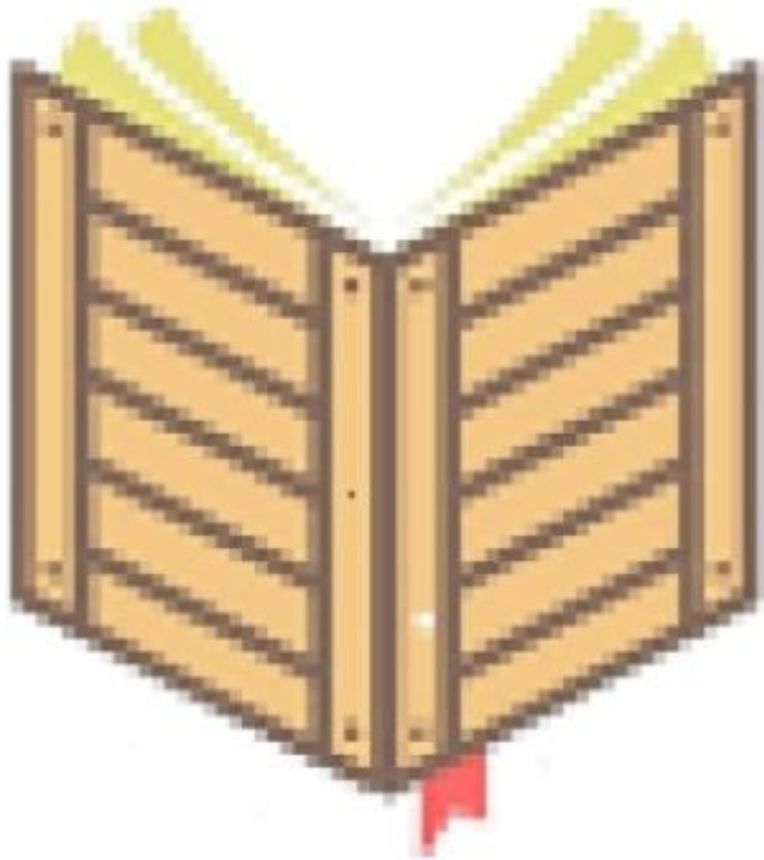
NOVELSCURU.COM

Amahle: he bought a new house?

I put my hand in between her thighs and she looks at me.

Amahle: he also got a girlfriend, how interesting for him to finally settle down

she laughs.



NOVELSGURU.COM

after a long minute of taking on the phone she hung up, I gave her a kiss on the lips and she kisses me back, she pulls out from the kiss.

Amahle: baby you know I was talking to my mom

Ntando: you are my women and I payed cowed and not to forget a thousands on cash

Amahle: you are mad

she laughs.

Ntando: what was that long call about anyways?

Amahle: brother is inviting me and mom to come visit him at his new place, imagine he also got a new girlfriend that very unlike him

NOVELSGURU.COM

That caught my attention, we have been trying to get the motherfucker for a month now but no luck.

Ntando: you mean you brother Sakhile?

Amahle: yes him and I can't wait to see the girl he is talking about

Ntando: can I also come for dinner I mean who will cook for me here when you gone

Amahle: you know I don't cook, you will have to order. plus brother only asked for me and mother

Ntando: I'm gonna miss your cute ass atleast let me drive you there, I will drop you off then leave



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amahle: I'm not allowed to bring anyone along, brother is very strict when it comes to his personal life things

Ntando: then he won't know, it will be a secret between me and you sthandwa samii, I also wanna get some before you leave

I pull her for a kiss and she giggles

Amahle: you never get tired of this

Ntando: get tired of what? this?

I grab her ass.

Ntando: soze baby (never baby)

.
. .
. .

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 42

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I was woken up by Sakhile, this guy is going to be the death of me, I remove his hands off me and I continue with my sleep.

Sakhile: dammit wake up you need to cook

Khwezi: cook for yourself I'm tired



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: you have been laying around all day, get your ass up and stop being a lazy bitch

I woke up and I gave him a death stare.

Khwezi: you need to blow some steam hineatky cause you really staring to annoy the shit out of me

I got of the bed and he held me by my waist.

Sakhile: then help me out here butterfly

he bites his lower lip and I could feel his hard dick.

Khwezi: get your filthy hands off me or your tiny dick will land on the floor

NOVELSGURU.COM

he chuckles and moves away.

Khwezi: angazii you want some bloody help wamasimba

I click my tongue and went to the bathroom, I wash my face on the sink and I wipe it with a towel.

I went downstairs and started to cook, I was tired when I was done with half of the meal, I got done and I was really exhausted.

Khwezi: I'm done, I'm going to shower and don't disturb me

I went upstairs, I prepare a warm bath for myself and I got inside, I started to bathe.

I start scrubbing the black line on my belly but it won't come off.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: just come off bitch

I say in frustration, I ended up crying.

Khwezi: you see now you making me cry, I don't know why you won't come off

I wipe my tears.

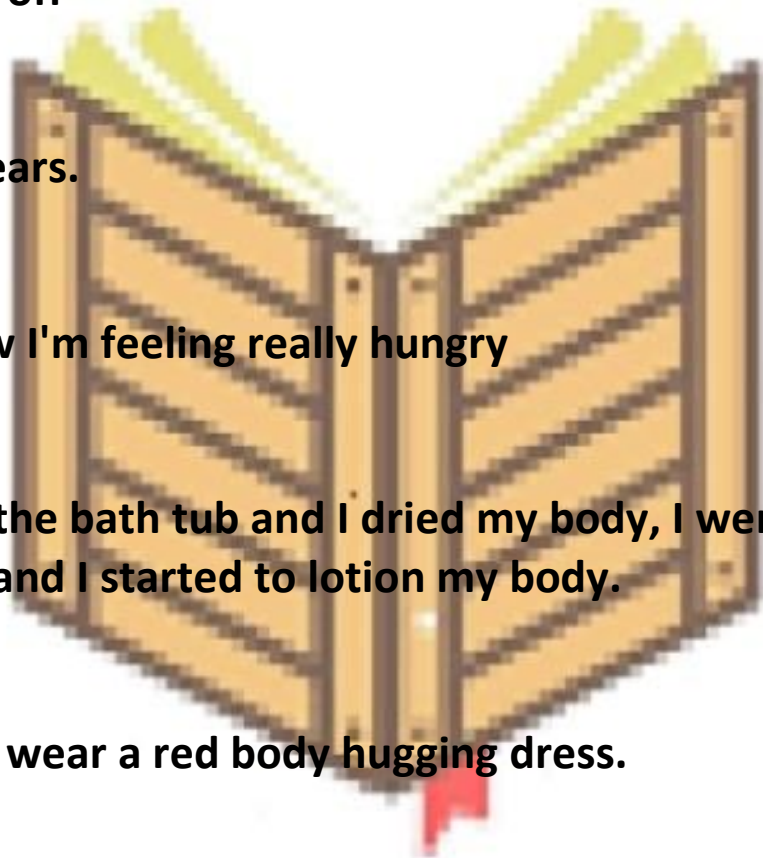
Khwezi: now I'm feeling really hungry

I got out of the bath tub and I dried my body, I went back to the main room and I started to lotion my body.

I decided to wear a red body hugging dress.

I let my hair go and I look really good, the weight gaining is really doing it for me cause I look sexy.

i giggle as I went downstairs, I went to the kitchen and as I was about to open the fridge I heard a familiar voice.



NOVELSGURU.COM

the psychopath's mother is here, ruined my time to eat but it's fine.

Mrs N: my boy you really did a very good job, this house looks beautiful

Sakhile: thank you mom

Mrs N: this must be the beautiful lady, ohh it's you Khwezi
smiles Mbali's daughter



NOVELSGURU.COM

I'm not in the mood but I fake a smile anyways.

Khwezi: hey ma how are you?

Mrs N: I'm okay love, you are glowing

she smiles.

her son has me locked in here, sometimes beats the hell out of me and he even raped me yet she's taking about me glowing.

I feel like setting this whole house on fire but I'm a lady I don't do such nonsense so I will keep my thoughts to myself.

Sakhile: where is sister?

Mrs N: she is on her way

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: great then let's sit down while we wait for her

Khwezi: and eat right?

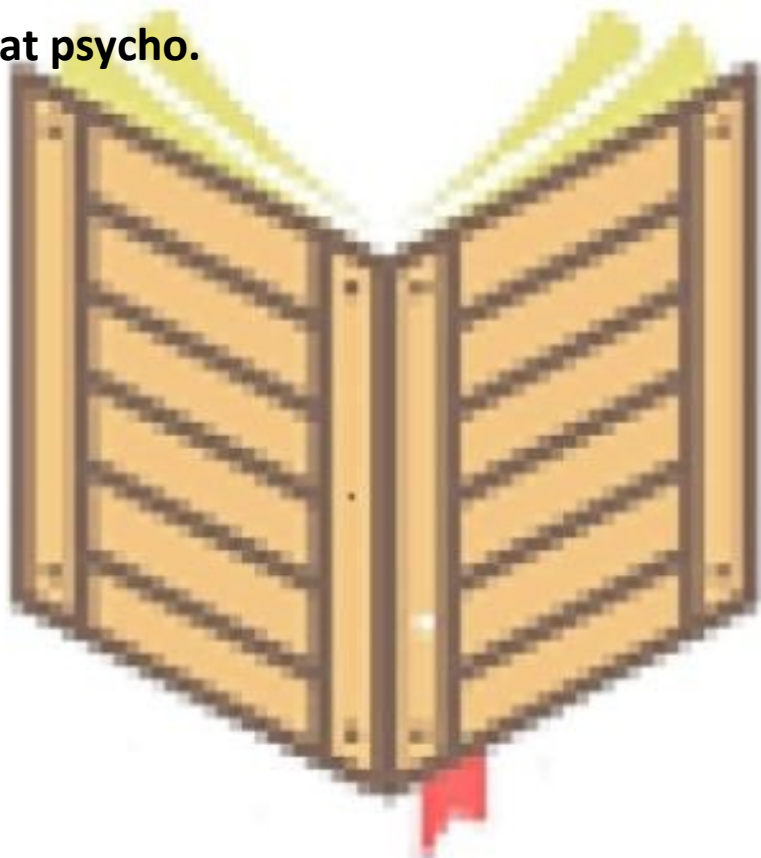


Mrs N: it's okay darling you can eat

Sakhile: she can wait till my sister arrives

Mrs N: let the girl eat

yes let me eat psycho.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: fine

he gave me this looks as if it was some sort of warning.

Khwezi: it's fine I will wait for his sister

I fake a smile, I'm starving oh god.

**.
.
.**

Kungentando parks his car few feet away from Sakhiles house, he didn't want the cameras to see him and he also brought a car that had deemed windows.

Amahle: thank you babe, you did not bring me here I was brought by a uber

Ntando: yes yes I get it, I love you

NOVELSGURU.COM

Amahle: I love you more

they shared a kiss and Amahle got out, Ntando drove off and he drove off.

he arrives at his house and he took out his phone calling Nkosie.

he answers.

Ntando: I got great news for you bafo

Nkosie: nothing is great news right now



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ntando: I found Sakhiles location and I bet Khwezi is there

Nkosie: you joking right?

Ntando: no I'm not...

Nkosie: send me the location

Ntando: hold up you not going to go there alone

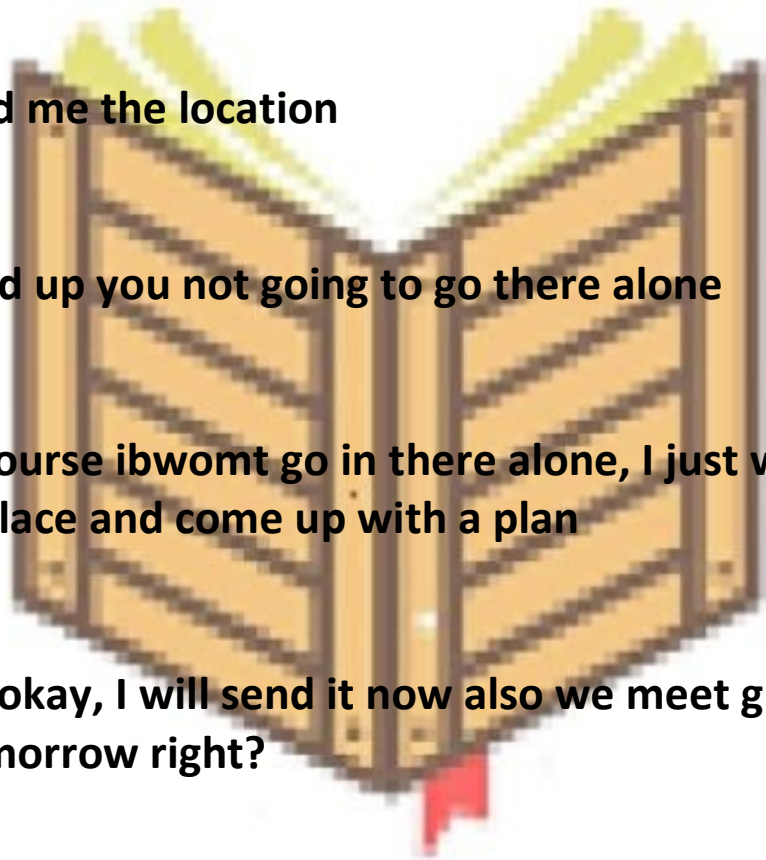
Nkosie: of course ibwomt go in there alone, I just want to study the whole place and come up with a plan

Ntando: oh okay, I will send it now also we meet g to discuss the plan tomorrow right?

Nkosie: yes we are, I have to go

he hung up.

Ntando: you welcome

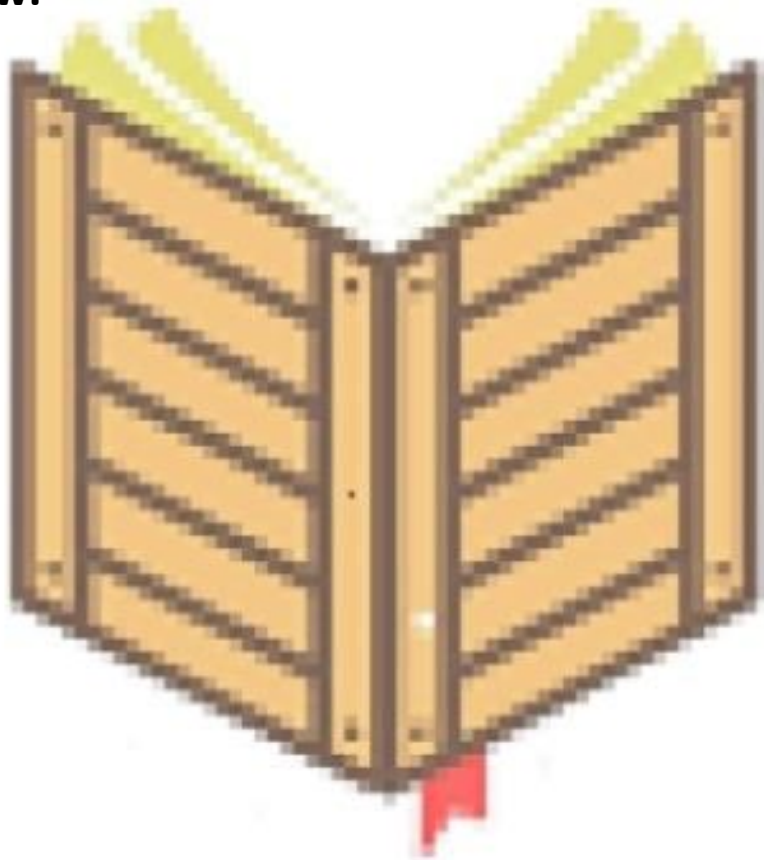


NOVELSGURU.COM

he mumbles.

-
-
-

They were not seated having dinner and Amahle is not pleased to see Khwezi here, she thought it was going to be a girl she doesn't know.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs N: so how far along are you?

she looks at Khwezi with a smile.

Khwezi: excuse me?

Mrs N: I mean how far...wait she doesn't know?

Sakhile: she doesn't know what mom?

Mrs N looks at Sakhile in the eyes and Sakhile shakes his head.

Sakhile: nah she is not pregnant, are you pregnant baby?

Khwezi: hell no I'm not pregnant, my mother would kill me if I was pregnant

NOVELSGURU.COM

she says enjoying her food, she was drinking her juice when her thoughts started to flood in her head.

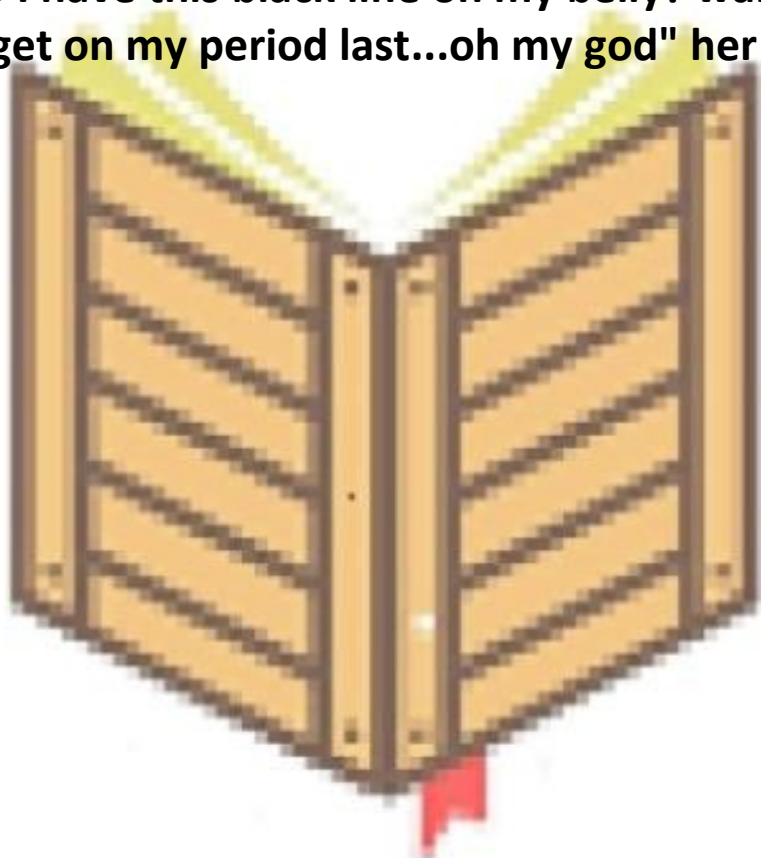
"it was first the weight gain but normal people gain weight, I sleep a lot and I have mood swings it doesn't mean I'm pregnant right?" those are Khwezi's thoughts.

" nah I'm not pregnant" she dismisses all her thoughts.

she smiles and continues to eat.

"but why do I have this black line on my belly? wait I was suppose to get on my period last...oh my god" her thoughts come back.

she panicks.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I need some air

she got up and she went outside, Sakhile was seated there furious cause he knows his mother never lies.

Sakhile: can you guys leave I need to have a moment with my wife

Mrs N: have a moment? baby you gonna be a father

Sakhile: get the fuck out, I'm sorry but y'all need to leave

Amahle: God have mercy, let's go mom

they got up and they left.

Sakhile went to where Khwezi was standing.

Sakhile: tell me that baby doesn't belong to that Mthembu boy

Khwezi: can you give me some space



NOVELSGURU.COM

she says with tears in her eyes.

Sakhile: you ain't getting no fucking space here, tell me does that baby belong to me or to Nkosie

Khwezi: you pulled out when you were forcing yourself on me so that means...

Sakhile: first thing in the morning a doctor will be here, we getting that thing out of you



NOVELSGURU.COM

he says and he walks back inside.

Khwezi: that thing?

she repeats Sakhiles words wiping her tears.

.
. .

FOREVA YENA

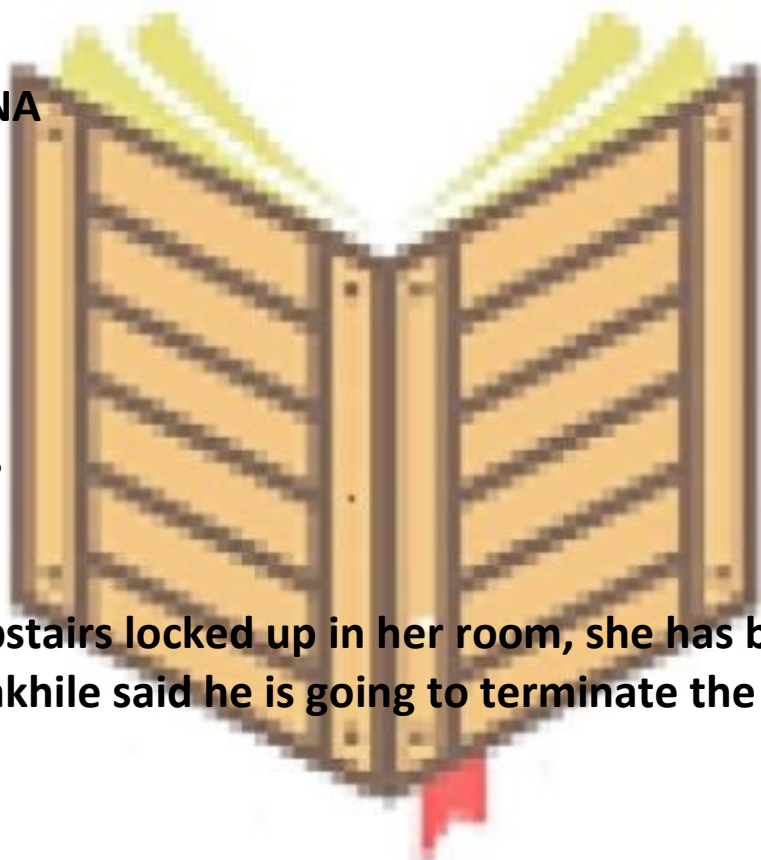
Insert 43

NARRATIVE.

Khwezi is upstairs locked up in her room, she has been trying ever since Sakhile said he is going to terminate the baby she's carrying.

for a second there she somehow has a reason to fight all this and get out of here, she's carrying a baby and she wouldn't want anything bad to happen to the baby.

she wipes her tears and she went to wash her face in the bathroom, she came back to the main room and when she was heading to the closet she saw a shadow outside the balcony.



NOVELSGURU.COM

the shadow kept on moving towards the sliding door, Khwezi got scared because she did not know who it was.

she was surprised when the person knocked, why would a thief knock?

she walks to the sliding door and she pushes the Curtin to the side only to see Nkosie standing there all dressed in black.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: Nkosie?

she unlocks the sliding door and the minute the door opens she attaches Nkosie with a hug.

she started to cry.

Nkosie: you are safe with me come don't cry

Khwezi: I'm not safe Nkosie

she protests.

Nkosie: I'm here ain't I?

Khwezi: yes

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: then you are safe, I'm really sorry I took long to come get you but the motherfucker is smart

Khwezi: he is not smart but crazy

Nkosie: did he hurt you?

Khwezi: he...he forced himself on me and he beats me up
Nkosie I'm staying with a psycho of course he is gonna hurt me

Nkosie: he raped you?

Khwezi: I don't really want to talk about it just get me out of here



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie's blood started boiling.

Nkosie: he is gonna pay for doing such to you, you don't deserve all this

Khwezi: please take me with you

Nkosie: I can't take you with, we need to come up with a solid plan cause if I take you now you know what he is going to do right?

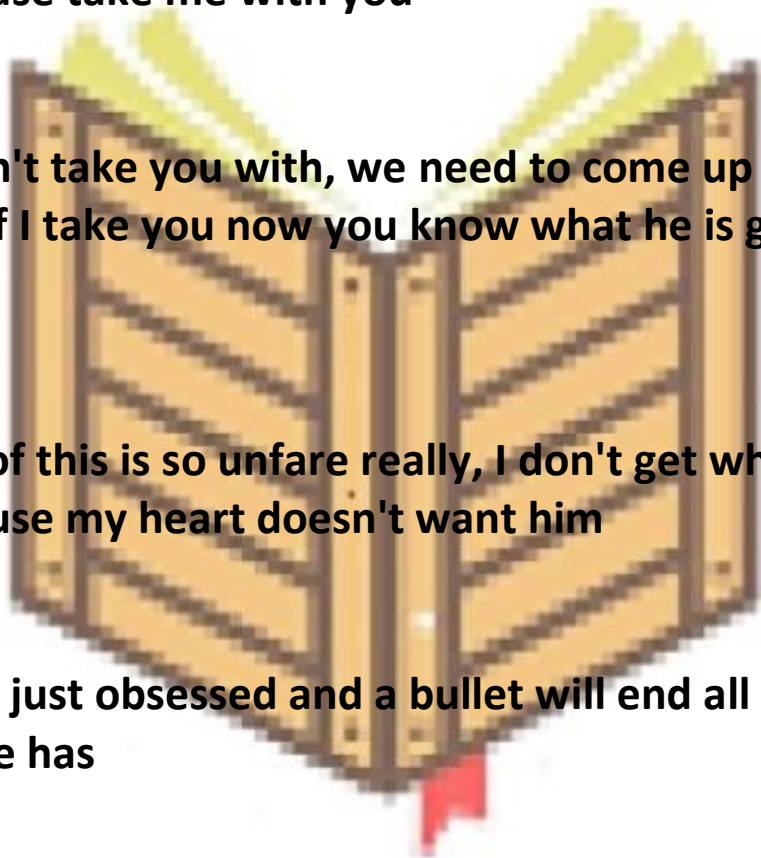
Khwezi: all of this is so unfare really, I don't get what he wants from me cause my heart doesn't want him

Nkosie: he's just obsessed and a bullet will end all that obsession he has

they are still hugging.

Khwezi: get me out of here...

Nkosie: I'm gonna get you out of here all I need from you is to



NOVELSGURU.COM

be patient and hold on for a little while

Khwezi: we can't Nkosie

Nkosie: we?

Khwezi pulls out from the hug and she places her hand on her belly, Nkosie's eyes are now wide open as he is shocked at what he is seeing.

Nkosie: you are pregnant?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: yes Nkosie I'm pregnant and it's your baby

Nkosie: my baby? how come

Khwezi: we never used protection remember?

Nkosie: but you said that psycho...

Khwezi: he pulled out

Nkosie: the pulling out method doesn't work sometimes you know

Khwezi: so you telling me I'm lying to you Nkosie?

Nkosie: no I'm not saying you lying it's...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: why would I even lie to you Nkosie?

Nkosie: I'm sorry I didn't mean it like that

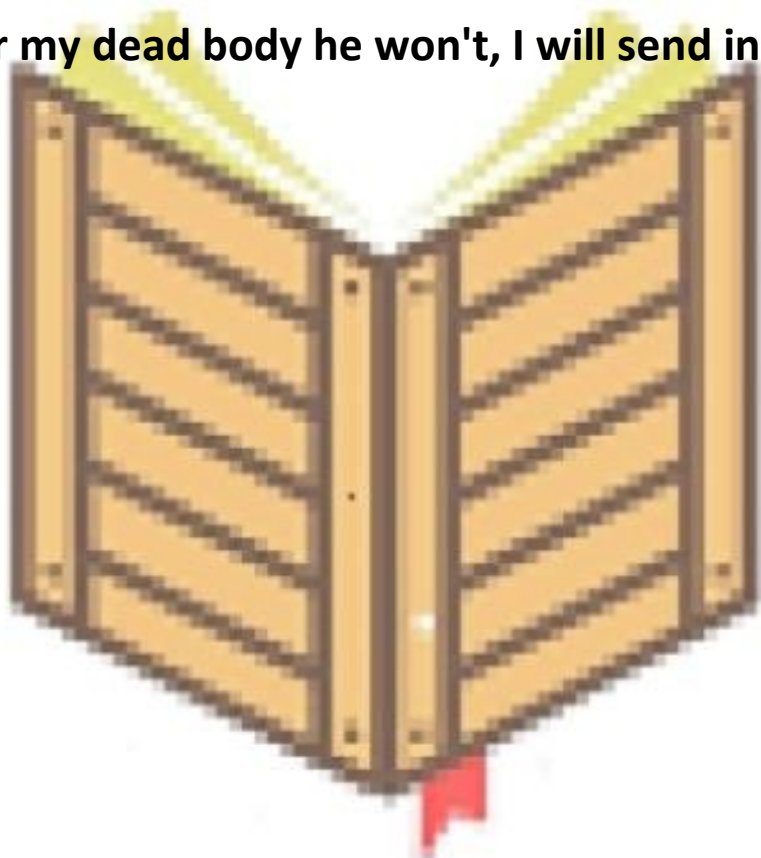
he places both his hands on her waist and pulls her closer to

him, she looks at him in the eyes and he melts.

Nkosie: I'm going to get you guys out of here

Khwezi: he wants to take the baby out of me

Nkosie: over my dead body he won't, I will send in one of my doctors



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: what if he knows they are one of yours?

Nkosie: he won't know

Khwezi: but Nkosie this guy is...

Nkosie: I don't care how he is

Khwezi sighs.

Nkosie: you trust me right baby?

Khwezi: cut the baby part out though

Nkosie chuckles and bites his lower lip.

Nkosie: uyangethemba angith Mapholoba? (do you trust me right?)

Khwezi buries her face on his chest while she blushes.

Nkosie: why are you hiding your face? I wanna see you blush



women

he says and she giggles, he made her to look at him.

Nkosie: do you trust me?

Khwezi: I trust you

Nkosie: thank you for your trust, now I have to leave before
this motherfucker finds me here



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you are leaving?

Nkosie: yes I'm leaving, nobody knows that I'm here even my brothers so it's unsafe for me to stay here

Khwezi: I don't want you to go

Nkosie: don't make things hard for me as they already are

he said placing his once hand on her cheek while lookingvat her in the eyes.

Khwezi: just for a few minutes

Nkosie: you know I can't stand a second away from you and you asking me like this makes me wanna stay...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: then stay

she adds.

Nkosie: I can't stay

Khwezi's cheeks start burning and the next thing she is crying.

Nkosie: fuck!

he gave her a hug and a kiss her on the forehead.

Nkosie: I can't stay baby and you know that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you can't or you don't won't

Nkosie: why are you so hard headed?

Khwezi: I'm not I'm just asking

Nkosie then heard someone's voice and steps coming to Khwezi's room.

Nkosie: someone is coming I have to leave

Khwezi: oh my God...

she panicks.

Nkosie: hey look at me...

NOVELSGURU.COM

she looks at him.

Nkosie: don't panic just act normal and stay safe for me



Khwezi: I will stay...

she didn't get to finish her sentence Nkosie smashed his lips on hers and she replied back, they kissed for a few seconds and Nkosie pulls out as the door slowly opens.

he looks at her in the eyes before vanishing, Khwezi just stood there biting her lip.

Sakhile walks in.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: shouldn't you be sleeping

Khwezi: shouldn't you be sleeping also?

she rolls her eyes.

Sakhile: you really discuss me, you need to get ready by morning so the doctor can get that thing out of you

Khwezi: You not going to take my baby from me, Mark my words...

Sakhile: we will see about that

he clicks his tongue and he walks out, Khwezi set down and she sighs, she quickly got up and she went to the balcony but Nkosie was not there.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: how did he get up here?

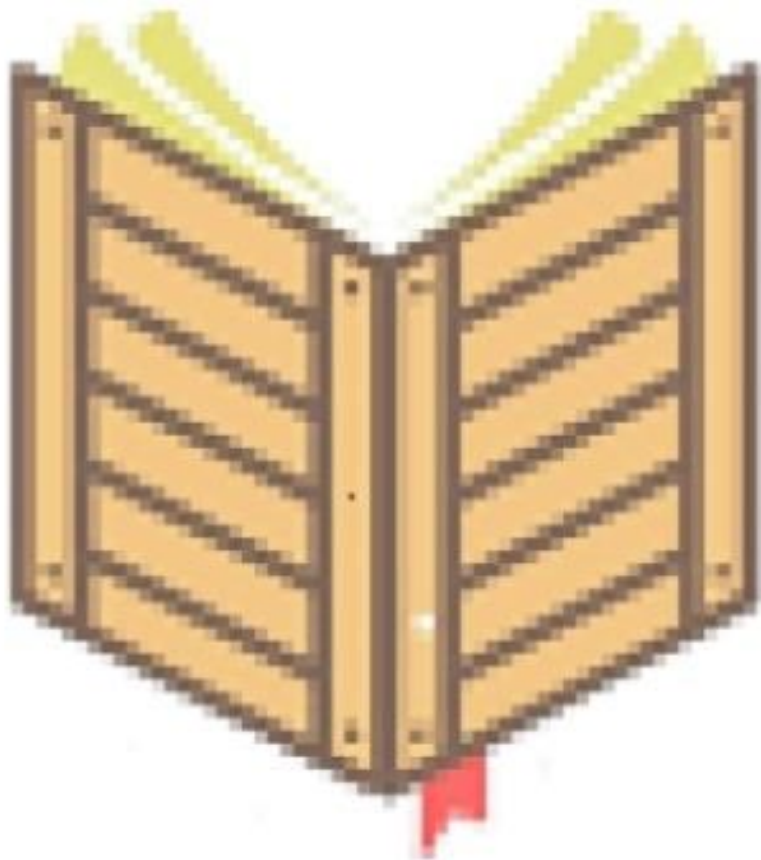
she smiles shaking her head and she went back inside, she took a shower and she wore her sleep wear.

she looks at herself in the mirror and she rubs her belly with a smile on her face.

Khwezi: daddy is gonna get us out of here

she giggles.

-
-
-



NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 44

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up early in the morning and I took a shower, I got done and I dried my body.

today I'm really nervous about what might happen to me and my baby, so I'm planning to not eat or drink anything Sakhile gives me.

I got dressed and I wear a pare of black cargo pants and a white Nike t-shirt, I went downstairs and he was in the kitchen making breakfast.

Sakhile: good morning butterfly

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: morning, Sakhile I feel really sick from staying in this house twenty four seven, atleast take me out to the mall

he laughs, I'm serious about this yet he thinks it's funny.

Sakhile: you not gonna leave this house

Khwezi: but I feel sick

Sakhile: it's that fucking baby that's making you sick and it's all non of my business

Khwezi: don't talk like that about my baby

Sakhile: I will beat you so bad women you gonna end up having a miscarriage



NOVELSGURU.COM

he clicks his tongue.

Khwezi: you are such a bore

I set down and I stare at the wall, he gives me a plate with food and I just look at it, I look at him then back at the plate.

Sakhile: what? are you not hungry?

Khwezi: yes I'm not hungry

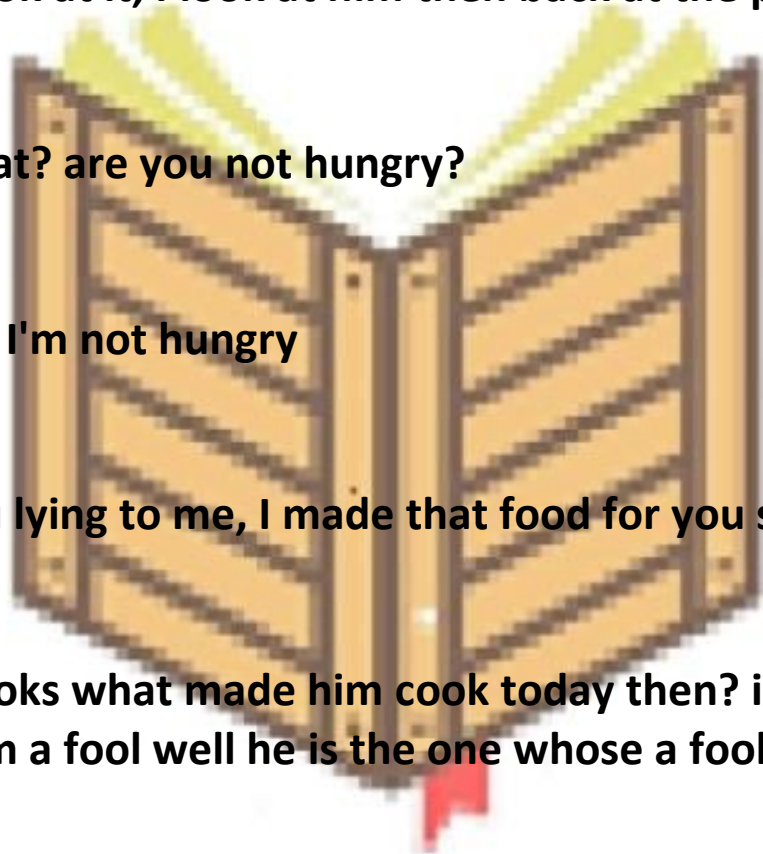
Sakhile: you lying to me, I made that food for you so eat

he never cooks what made him cook today then? is it my baby?
he thinks I'm a fool well he is the one whose a fool.

Khwezi: no thank you I'm fine

Sakhile: Butterfly I made that food with love come on eat up

he set next to me.

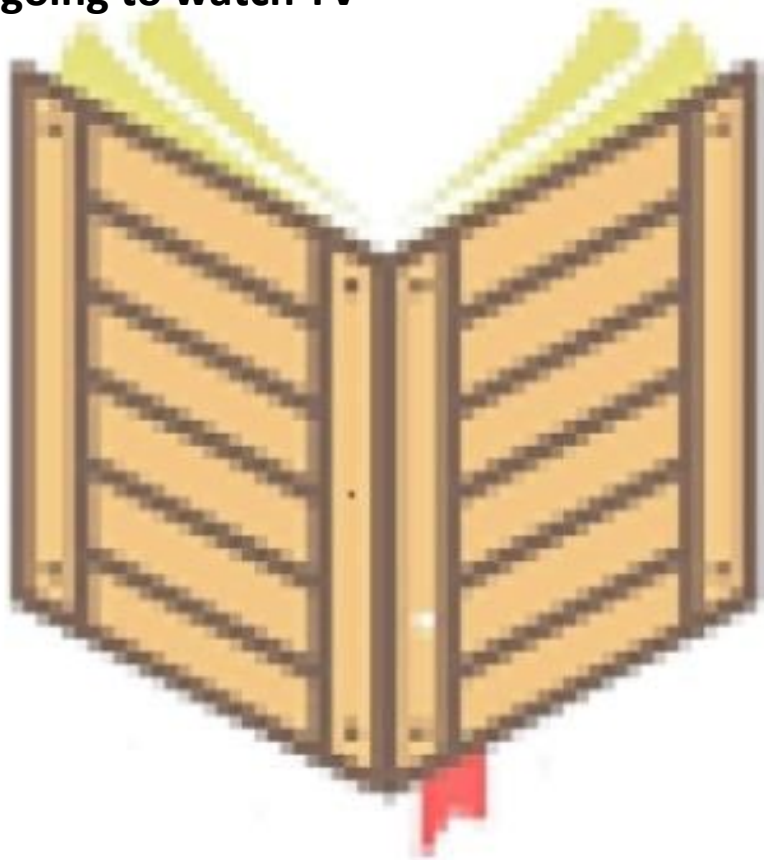


NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I said I'm fine

I got up.

Khwezi: I'm going to watch TV



NOVELSGURU.COM

I said and went to the living room, I set there scrolling on the channels and i got bored, I ended up sleeping.

I was woken up by Sakhile shaking me, he wasn't doing it gently but he was being rough.

Khwezi: I'm awake goddammit

I say sitting up straight.

Sakhile: the doctor is here

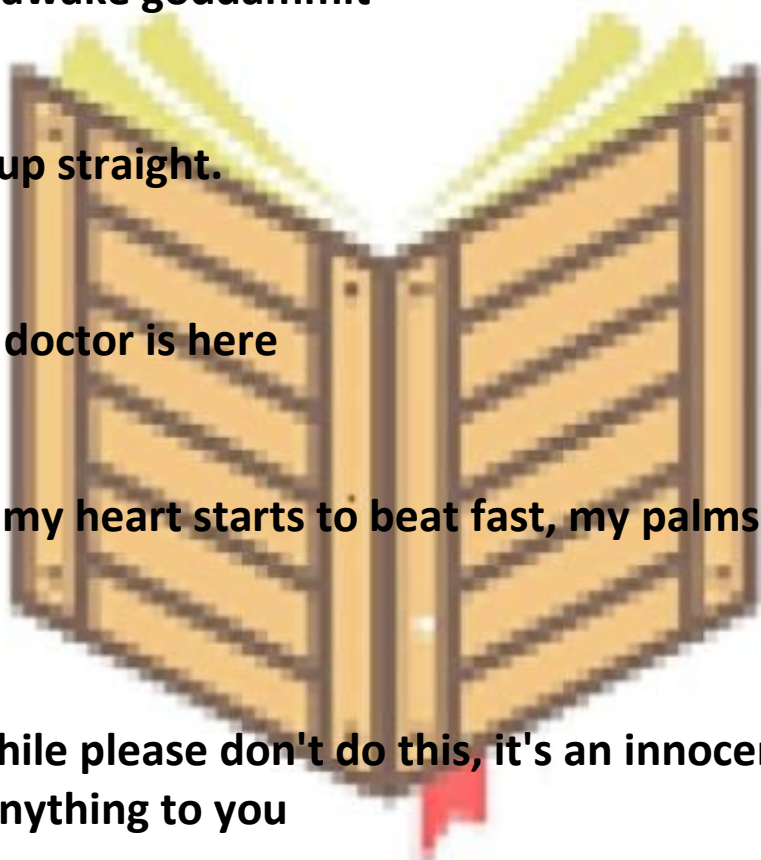
he says and my heart starts to beat fast, my palms start sweating.

Khwezi: Sakhile please don't do this, it's an innocent soul that did not do anything to you

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: I don't want to argue with you, let's just get this thing over with and we will be cool

he walks away, I got up and I follow him, the doctor is in my room waiting for me.



he looks young.

Khwezi: doctor I really don't want to do this, the baby...

Sakhile: shut your mouth bitch and lay down

the doctor doesn't say anything, he remains calm, I doubt he was sent by Nkosie.

I set down on the bed.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Doc: so we first going to can her to see how far she is.

Sakhile: as long as you getting that baby out of her

he says folding his arms.

I lay down on the bed.

Doc: can you lift up your shirt for me

**I slowly lift up my shirt and he apply some cold gel on my belly,
I could see my baby on the small screen.**

**I got emotional and I started crying, it's a pittyour journey is
goinhbto end here baby.**

I wipe my tears.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Doc: she is a month pregnant

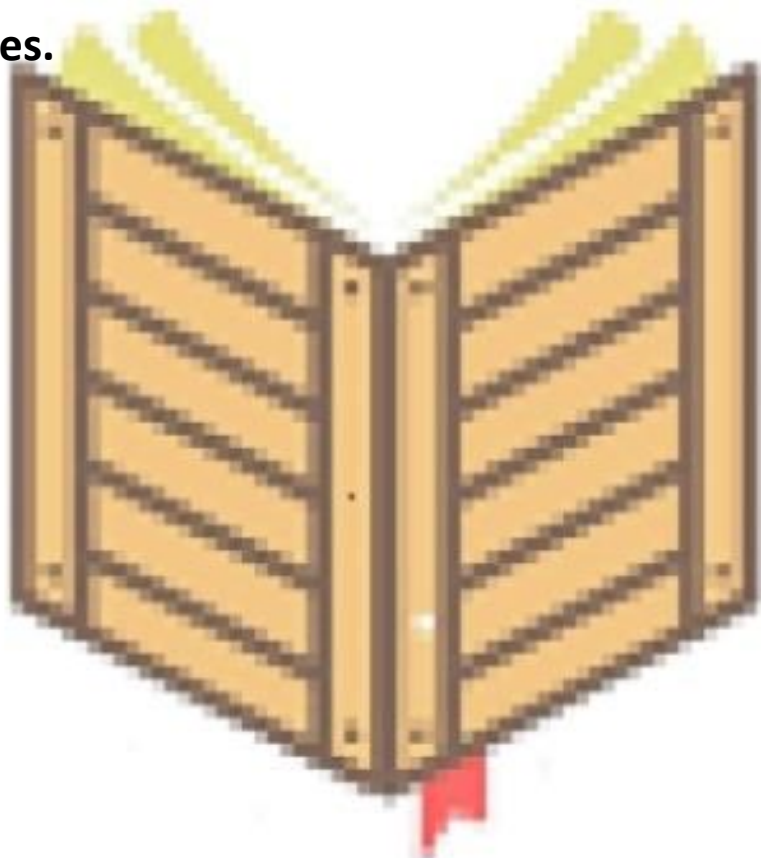
Sakhile: I don't care get the baby out of her

Doc: I'm afraid that won't be able to happen Sir, we can only terminate the baby if she was below 16 weeks *sighs* the baby is to big for us to continue with this operation

Sakhile: what do you mean? you won't be able to take the baby out?

please say yes.

Doc: yes sir



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: there has to be some sort of way to get the baby out, it has to come out

Doc: if you continue with the operation we might loose the mother

Sakhile frowns.

Thank you God, I knew you have never left my side.

Doc: if that's all sir I would like to leave

Sakhile: get out of my house

he clicks his tongue and the doctor packs his things.

Khwezi: doctor is my baby healthy?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Doc: yes ma'am and don't worry you going to get out of here

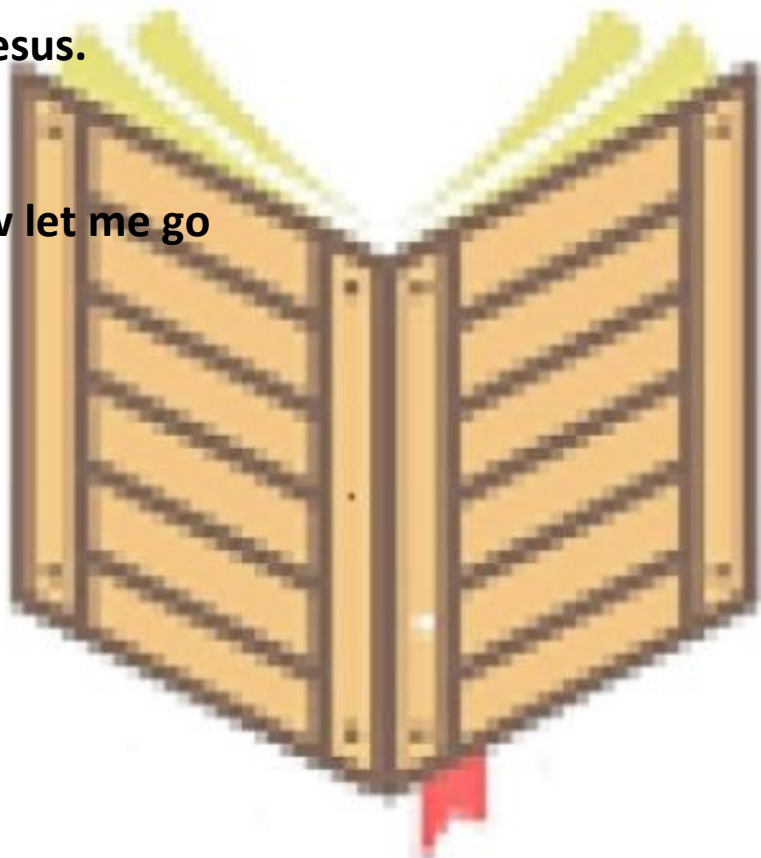
he said that a little bit lower tone for only me to hear, now I know he was sent by Nkosie.

the doctor left and i set there brushing my belly, Sakhile looks at me and he clicks his tongue.

Sakhile: that boys shouldn't have had you first, he shouldn't have fucked you now look my plan is falling apart

thank you Jesus.

Khwezi: now let me go



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: no you not going anywhere, I'm posting his sister's video just for the mistake he did

Khwezi: wait Sakhile don't post my friends video, she's very young for such to happen to her, it will all ruin her reputation

Sakhile: what should I do then you are carrying the motherfucker child and you want me to sit there and pretend as if I'm not hurt?

Khwezi: I know it hurts that this is not your baby but look, you have me and he doesn't, posting those videos will make things worse cause he would want to kill you

Sakhile: I don't care if he kill me, if I post that video it can't be taken down

Khwezi: Sakhile please....

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: shut the fuck up, he is fucked up big time

he clicks his tongue and he walks out.

God how am I going to tell Nkosie about this, oh my god my

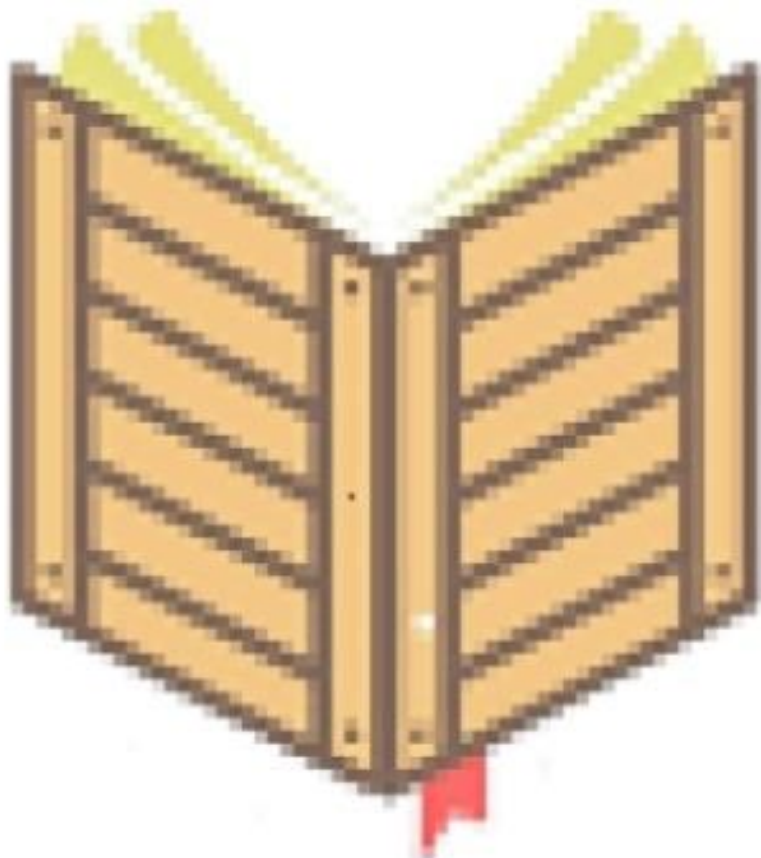
poor friend, her whole life is going to fall apart because of me.

I'm a bad friend.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 45



NOVELSGURU.COM

NARRATIVE.

The following day, Khwezi was in her room sleeping. Sakhile got ready to go meet his friends, he took his car keys and he locked the house.

he got into his car and he drove to the bar where he will be meeting g his two friends, he knows Khwezi wouldn't do anything stupid.

he is still frustrated about the fact that Khwezi is pregant with Nkosie's child, he parks his car outside and he went inside the restaurant.

when he got in his friends raised their hands and he went to them.

Sakhile: majita

he set down.

Mnotho: it's been long since we saw you

Sbani: we were starting to think that you forgot about us



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: I would never, how are you guys doing?

Mnotho: I'm doing good bro

Sbani: I'm okay and you?

Sakhile sighs.

Sakhile: I'm not okay



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mnotho: this one needs a drink

he calls the waiter and they ordered something strong.

Sbani: so tell us what seems to be bothering you

Sakhile: so I meet this girl neh...

the gents start laughing.

Mnotho: you not being okay involves a girl? wow I fear women now

Sakhile: don't make fun of me, we all have problems

Sbani: but not all of them involve a girl

NOVELSGURU.COM

he adds.

Sakhile: as I was saying, we got close and I developed feeling for her and I told her how I feel, I took her out and we dated...



Mnotho: you are fast shame

Sskhile: if you love the girl what would you do?

Sbani: I would have told her

**Sakhile: you see, so stop making me look like a bad person
cause I'm not**



NOVELSGURU.COM

he took a sip on his drink.

Sakhile: days passed and we was still dating then came a day were she broke things off with me, the next thing i found out she slept with her friends brother, the next thing she is dating a prince from Swaziland

Mnotho: you lying!

Sakhile: I'm telling you, I was shocked as you are right now

Sbani: yohhh women

Sakhile: but we are okay now, we fixed things and got back together

Sbani: just like that?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: I love her

Mnotho: does she love you

Sakhile: yes she does love me it's just that she won't say

Sbani laughs.

Sbani: you wasting your time dude

Mnotho: you can tell him again *laughs* there's nothing you doing with that girl, it's either you are cheating or she is... there's no fucking way that you guys still working things out



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile got frustrated.

Sakhile: we love each other and we will be okay

Sbani: keep convincing yourself

Sakhile: you all don't even have girlfriends yet you talking about my relationship

Mnotho: it's a relationship kanti?

he laughs.

Sbani: don't make fun of yourself nigga, dump the poor girl there are enough girls in the world

Sakhile: fuck off

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mnotho: we didn't mean to piss you off

he continues to laugh.

Sakhile: the worst part in all this is that she is pregant with the guys child

Sbani: which guy?

Sakhile: the one who broke her

the guys laugh even louder.

Sakhile: I'm going to get up and leave if you don't shut the fuck up



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mnotho: sorry bro it's just that the situation you in is very funny, women really know how to make man feel useless

Sakhile: fuck you

Sbani: okay Mnotho let's stop laughing I feel like there more

Mnotho: okay okay sorry

Sakhile: the doctor came to check her since I wanted the baby removed from her

Sbani: why would you want her to remove the baby, it's not your choice but her choice, it's her body after all

Sakhile: I swear if you say anything with that mouth of yours I'm going to kill you

NOVELSGURU.COM

he says frustrated.

Mnotho: bro chill

Sakhile: the doctor said she is one month pregnant and said if she was 16 week we would have been able to remove the baby

Sbani: say what now?

Mnotho: dude a month is made up of 4 week

Sbani: and 16 weeks is 4 months



NOVELSGURU.COM

They bust into laughter.

Sbani: you just got yourself fooled

Sakhile: dammit why didn't I think of that, shit...

he got up, the guys were still laughing.

Sakhile: why would the doctor fool me though? unless he was sent by Nkosie...but he doesn't know were I live

he took his car keys.

Sakhile: I have to go and sort something out

Sbani: come on don't leave we still enjoying your story time

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mnotho: story time on how I got fooled by a girl

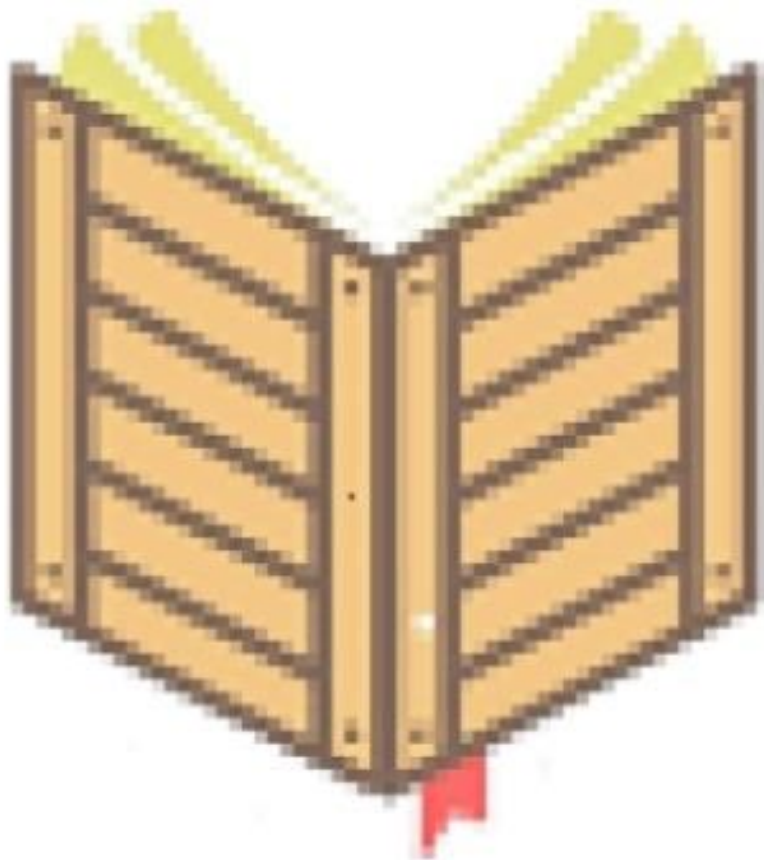
they continue to laugh as Sakhile walks out.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 46

ZIZIPHO.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I just finished with class and I'm packing up my things, it's really been hard living without Khwezi.

my brothers know about Khwezi's whereabouts but they don't want to tell me, my driver is outside waiting for me.

I got inside the car.

Zizi: please take me to the mall

Driver: yes ma'am

he starts the car and drove to the mall, he parks the car at the parking lot and I got out.

I went and bought a few groceries that I need at the apartment, it would have been way easier if Khwezi was here.

NOVELSGURU.COM

after an hour of standing in the line It was then my turn to pay up, I took my things and went back to the car.

I went back inside the mall and I got a lot of stares, maybe I'm just overthinking things.

I rub the feeling off and I went to Steers to get something to eat, I took my order and I set down waiting for it.

I could hear some whispers and I look behind me, these two girls were seated while whispering looking at their phone.

maybe they talking about someone else.

I look forward and my phone starts receiving a lot of messages, I took out my phone but when ideas about to check it out I noticed the ladies behind me pointing their fingers at me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I turn to face them.

Zizi: if you have something to say just say it and stop whispering like old church ladies

they laugh while looking at their phone.

my order was called and I click my tongue going to the ladies, I took my order and my phone kept on buzzing.

I took out my phone and I was getting a lot of notifications from a little social media platforms.

I clicked one notification from Facebook and it was a video of me making out with this white guy in the toilet at Sandile party.

I check other social media platforms and the videos is everywhere, I look up and everyone in the mall has their phone and they are pointing at me.

the food I had in my hands drops on the floor and I quickly rush to the toilet, I push everyone out of the way and I look myself in the toilet.

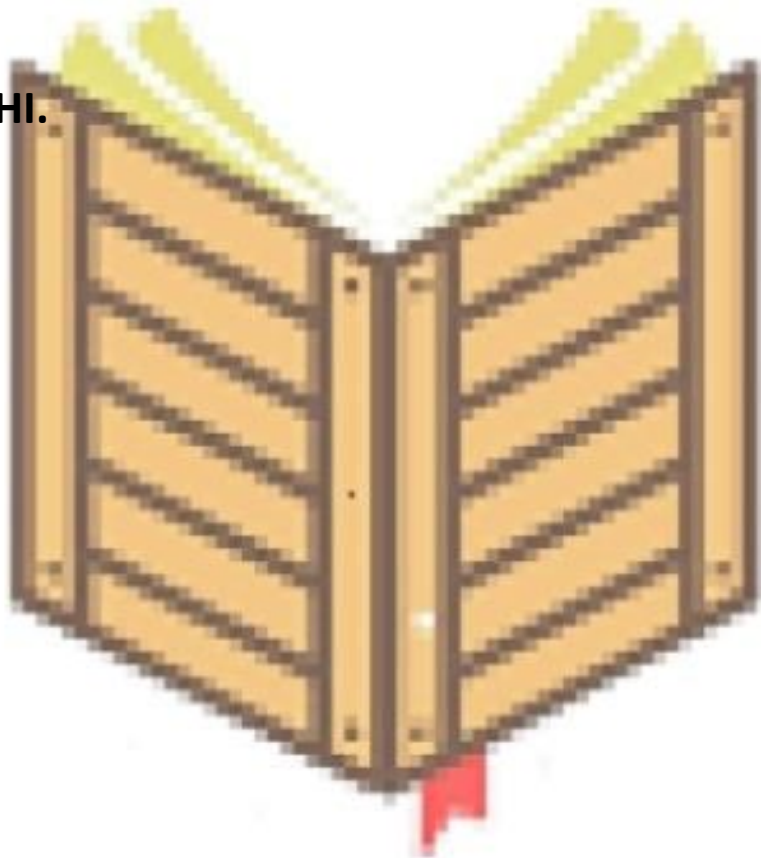
I started crying, I click the video and it had about 250k views. I tried to delete the video and I was unable to delete it.

I check out the comments and everyone is making find of me, I bury my face on hands.

.

.

. NKOSINATHI.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I'm sitting with my brothers and we have been trying to hack into Sakhiles system and it's impossible.

I went to take the food I ordered outside, the guy took out his phone and he gave it to me.

Him: is this your sister sir?

Nkosie: excuse me?

I took the phone and it was a video of Zizipho, it was trending all over the internet.

Him: can I have my phone please

Nkosie: if you continue to watch this video, I'm going to hunt you down and kill each and everyone you care about

NOVELSGURU.COM

I take the food from him and give him his phone, I immediately shut the door.

Nkosie: we got ourselves a very huge problem, that Ndlovu boy leaked pumpkins video

Ntando: kanti liyanya lelisende eliwayo

Sandile: okay Nkanyezi do that hackingvshit fast cause this bitch needs to die

I remained silent and took out my phone, I called Zizi but she did not answer.

Nkosie: answer the phone pumpkin

I mumble calling her once again but she does not answer.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I track her phone, I took my car keys and I went to the mall. I followed the tracking app, I went inside the toilet and I went to the ladies room.

all the ladies stared at me at me but at that moment I did not care, I knock on the door.

Nkosie: pumpkin open up

the door immediately opens and she gives me a hug while crying.

Nkosie: you know innate it when you crying, I'm here now

Zizi: did you see the video

Nkosie: I don't even want to look at it

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: everyone is pointing at me

Nkosie: fuck everybody, you are a hundred times beautiful then these things

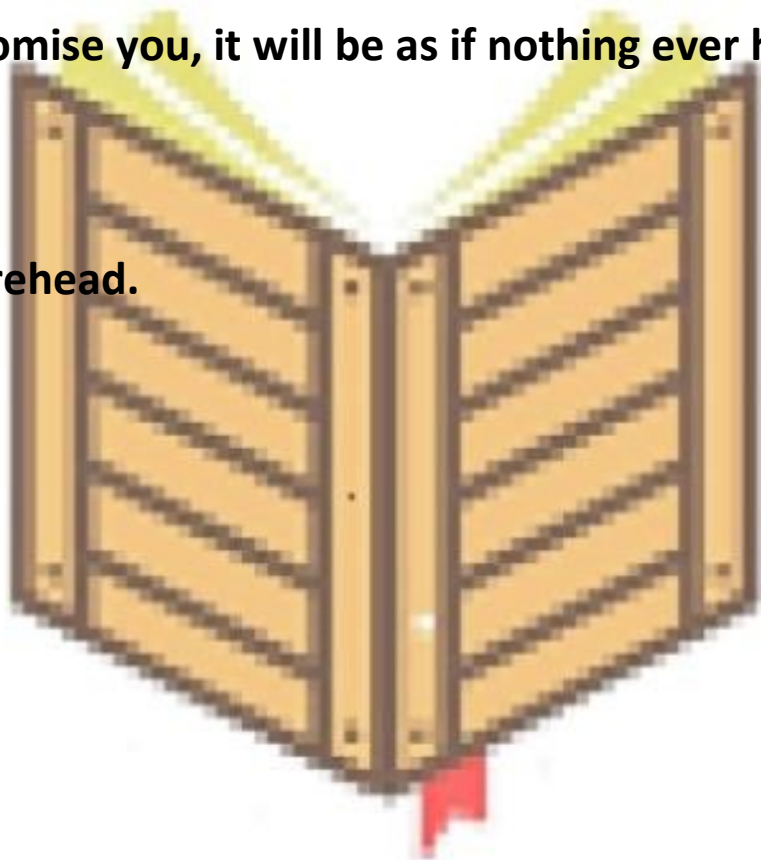
Zizi: that won't help they saw the video

Nkosie: I'm going to sort everything out

Zizi: you will?

**Nkosie: I promise you, it will be as if nothing ever happened
trust me**

I kiss her forehead.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: let's get you out of here

I took her hand and walk out with her, she had her head down while she walks and everyone was staring.

Nkosie: look at me

she looks at me with puffy eyes.

Nkosie: don't mind the people

Zizi: but...

I took out my gun and shot once in the air, everybody runs off.

Nkosie: is that better?

NOVELSGURU.COM

she laughs a little.

we walk to my car, I ask the driver to leave.

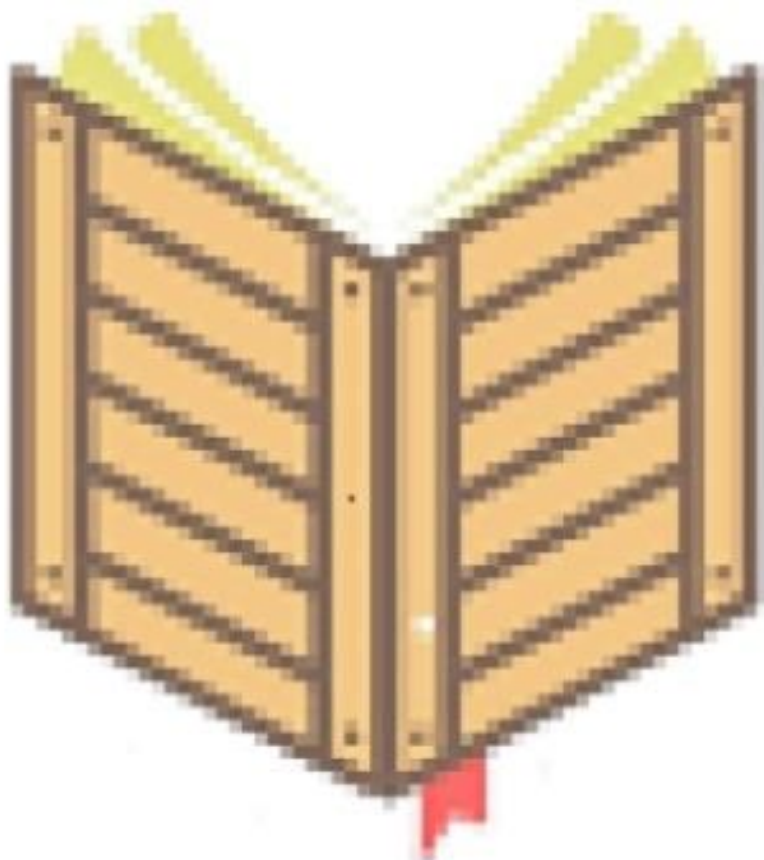
-
-
-



FOREVA YENA

Insert 47

NARRATIVE.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi just finished taking a shower, she was walking out of the bathroom drying her hair when Sakhile walked in.

Khwezi: what...

he went straight to her and gave her a hot slap, she stood there holding her cheek not knowing whats happening.

Khwezi: you slapped me?

Sakhile grabs her by the neck strangling her.

Sakhile: that stupid doctor lied to me

Khwezi: you...you hurting me

she says while Sakhile still had his hands around her neck, he pushes her and she falls down.

Sakhile: that baby is going to have to come out, whether you like it or not

Khwezi gasps some air.



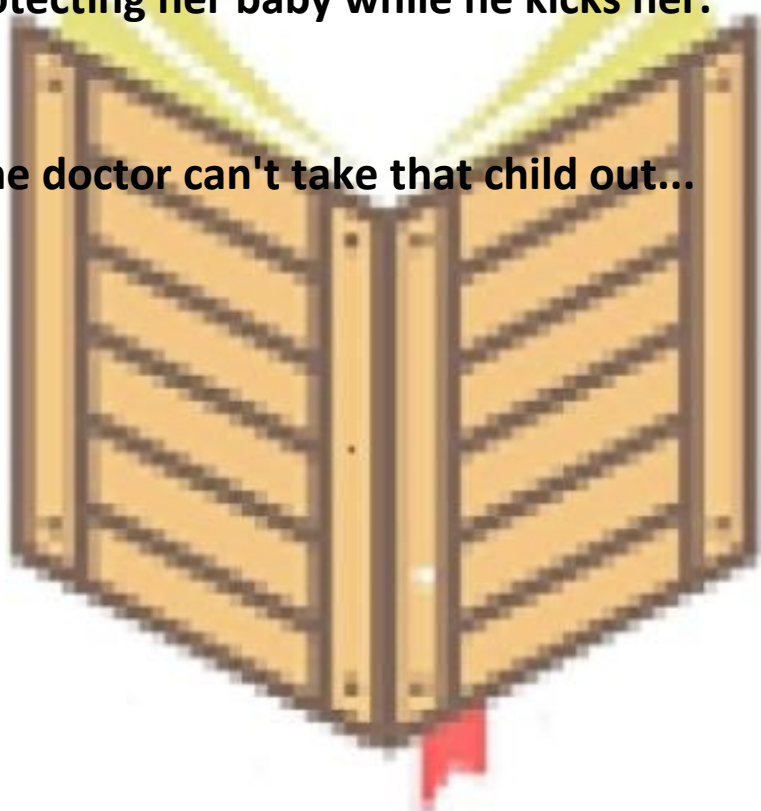
NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you not going to do that Sakhile mark my words

Sakhile: you ungrateful hoe

he kicks her in the stomach and she wraps her arms around her stomach protecting her baby while he kicks her.

Sakhile: if the doctor can't take that child out...



NOVELSGURU.COM

he kicks her on the rib.

Sakhile: I'm going to have to take it out myself

he says and he heard gunshots outside, he stops for a second and kicks Khwezi one last time before going to the window to check what's going.

Sakhile: fuck! how did they find us...

he says when he saw the Mthembu brothers outside along with their man.

Nkosie: get in that house and find that motherfucker

he says pointing at the house and group of man went to the house.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi was still on the floor hurt, she was crying as the pain seemed to be a lot for her to handle.

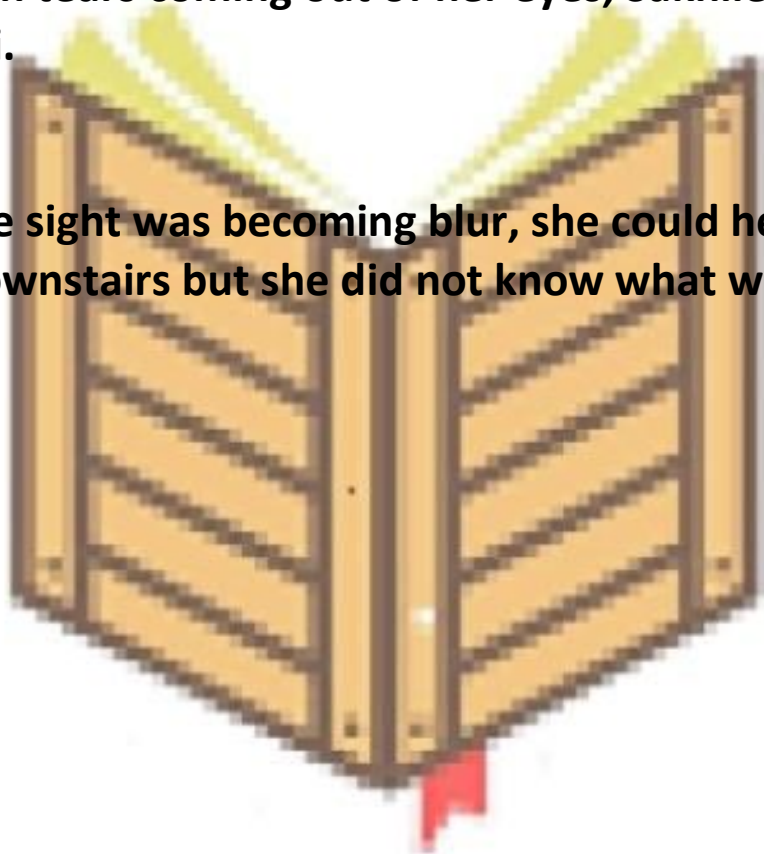
Sakhile helps her to stand up.

Sakhile: we need to leave...they are here

Khwezi: kubuhlungu (it hurts)

she says with tears coming out of her eyes, Sakhile went out with Khwezi.

Khwezi's eye sight was becoming blur, she could hear the gunshots downstairs but she did not know what was going on.



NOVELSGURU.COM

"Nkosie" shouts Sandile downstairs as they were shooting at Sakhiles guards who did not want to let them come upstairs.

Khwezi heard Nkosie's name and her heart starts pumping, she starts breathing heavily and she used her last energy to shout.

Khwezi: Nkosie help!!

it was lights off for her, Sakhile leaves Khwezi on the floor and he runs off.

Khwezi layed there with her eyes closed, Sandile and the rest of the brothers came upstairs.

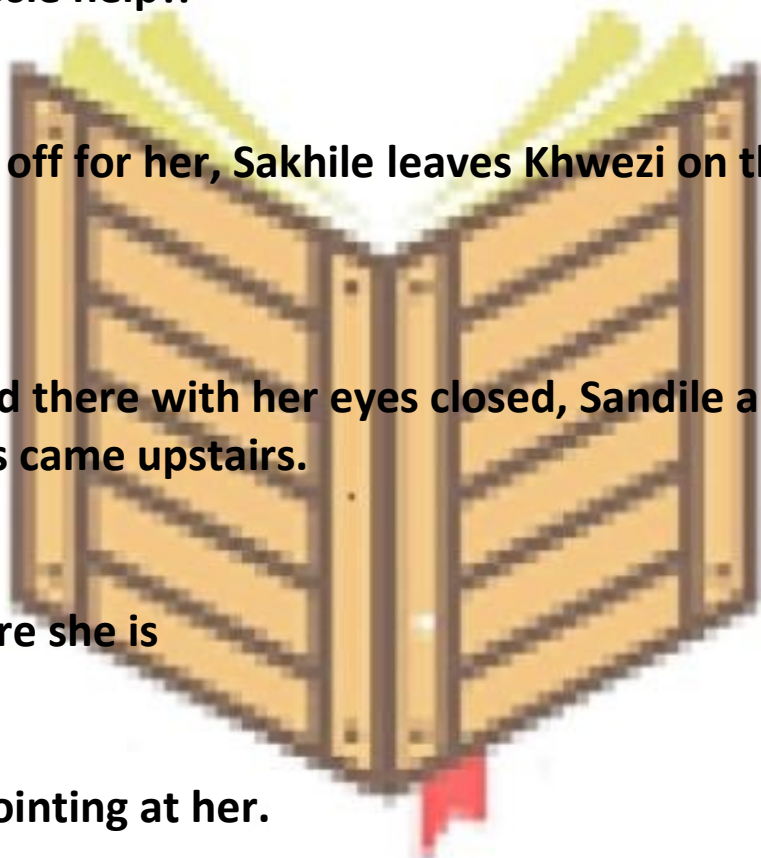
Sandile: there she is

he shouts pointing at her.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: Khwezi...

he went down on his knees and started to shake Khwezi but she did not wake up.



Nkosie: Mapholoba...where is the son of the bitch?

Sya and Nkanyezi went to look for him.

Nkosie lift Khwezi up and carries her downstairs.

Nkosie: you going to be okay

he says as he places her inside the car, Sandile and Ntando got in. They drove to the hospital.



NOVELSGURU.COM

while they were driving Nkosie's phone rang.

Nkosie: did you find him?

Sya: we couldn't find him, he escaped

Nkosie looks at Khwezi who was kabi g on his lap.

Nkosie: burn that place down and call in the construction people to remove that piece of shit

he drops the call.

Nkosie: kanti yini uwenza kancane nyathela lapho ndoda kusheshe(why are you driving slow, step on it man fast)

he says frustrated.

NOVELSGURU.COM

they arrive at the hospital after a long hour of driving, Nkosie carries Khwezi in and they took her.

Nurse: can you fill in these forms sir

Nkosie: fill the forms Sandile

he says sitting down.

Sandile later came to join him.

Sandile: what do we do from here brother?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you go out there with your brothers and find that Ndlovu boy

Sandile: Sya and Nkanyezi are on it

Nkosie: kanti mina ngithini kuwe (what am I doing to you?)

Sandile: fine I will go but if we don't find him...

Nkosie: I will find him myself

Sandile sighs and stood up.

•
•
•

FOREVA YENA

Insert 48

NOVELSGURU.COM

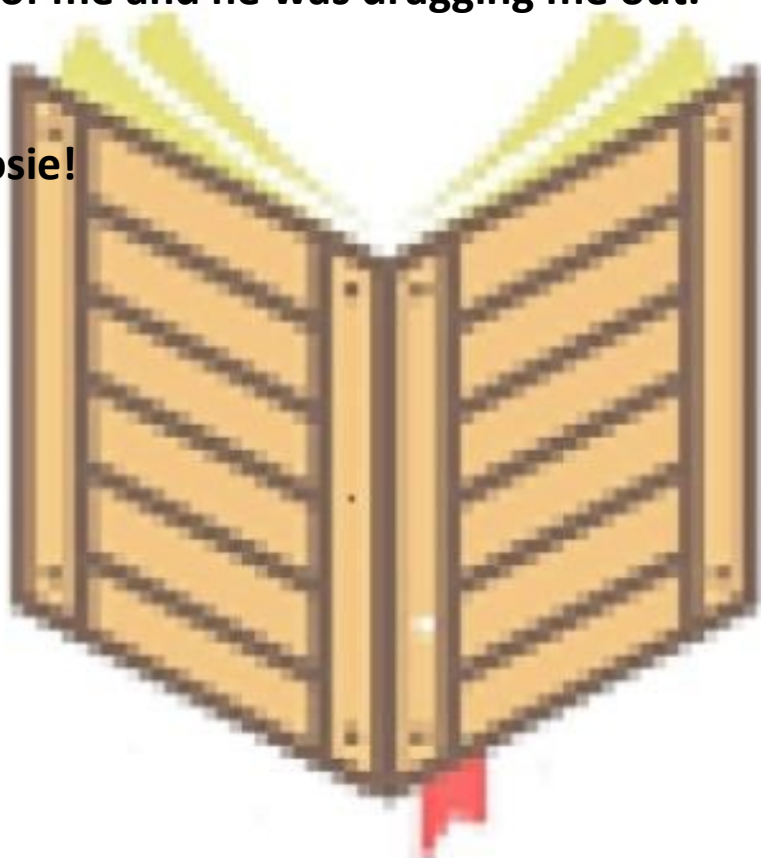
KHWEZILOKUSA.

I slowly open my eyes and I look around, I could see mechines around me. am I in the hospital? I rub my eyes and I set up straight.

Nkosie was seated on the small couch, he had a black vest on and he looks fast asleep, he even looks sexy when he is sleeping.

what happened? the last time I was awake Sakhile was beating the shit out of me and he was dragging me out.

Khwezi: Nkosie!



NOVELSGURU.COM

I shout and he moves a little.

Khwezi: Nkosie wake up

I shout once again and he mumbles something, this guy though.

Khwezi: Nkosinathi Mthembu wake up

I shout even louder and he opens his eyes.

Nkosie: you are awake

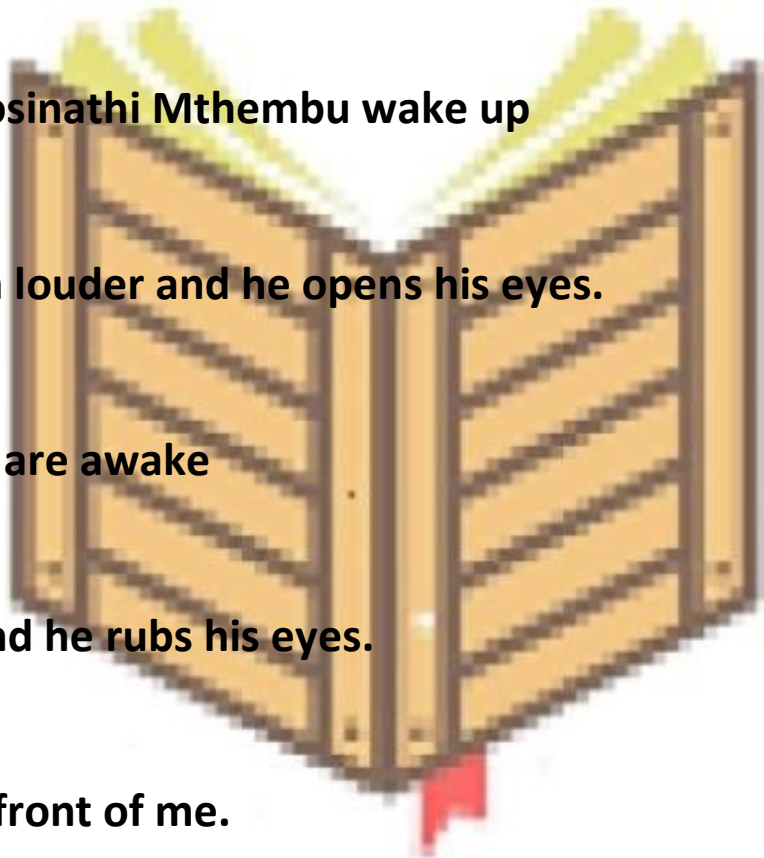
he got up and he rubs his eyes.

he stood in front of me.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: are you okay?

he says looking me in the eyes and in that moment I just melted.



Khwezi: I'm fine and you?

Nkosie: if you fine then I'm also fine

he set on the bed next to me.

Khwezi: thank you for saving my life, if it wasn't for you I would be dead who knows



NOVELSGURU.COM

I shrug.

Nkosie: as long as I'm alive nothing bad will ever happen to you

I look down and I play with my finger, I could feel his eyes on me and I look up, he is staring right at me.

I blush and I bite my lower lip.

Nkosie: musu qedile ukumamatheka Mapholoba mina bengathanda ukuk'qabula (when you done blushing Mapholoba I would love to kiss you)

I look at him and he has his eyes focused on my lips, I bite my lip even harder and he places his left hand on my cheek and he slowly rubs my cheek.

he came closer to me and I our lips slightly touch, I close my eyes as he was about to kiss me the doctor walks in and I push him away.

he smirks then looks at the doctor and he clicks his tongue.

Doc: you are wake *smiles*

Nkosie: you can see she is awake

I look at him and shake my head mumbling a "no"

Doc: we did some test and you completely fine

Khwezi: and my baby?

Doc: the baby is also fine and healthy



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: are you sure?

Doc: yes I'm sure Mr Mthembu

she even knows his surname how interesting but everyone knows him right so there nothing to worry about.

Khwezi why you thinking about this nonsense.

Nkosie: can we see the baby

Doc: ma'am should we wait for the father?

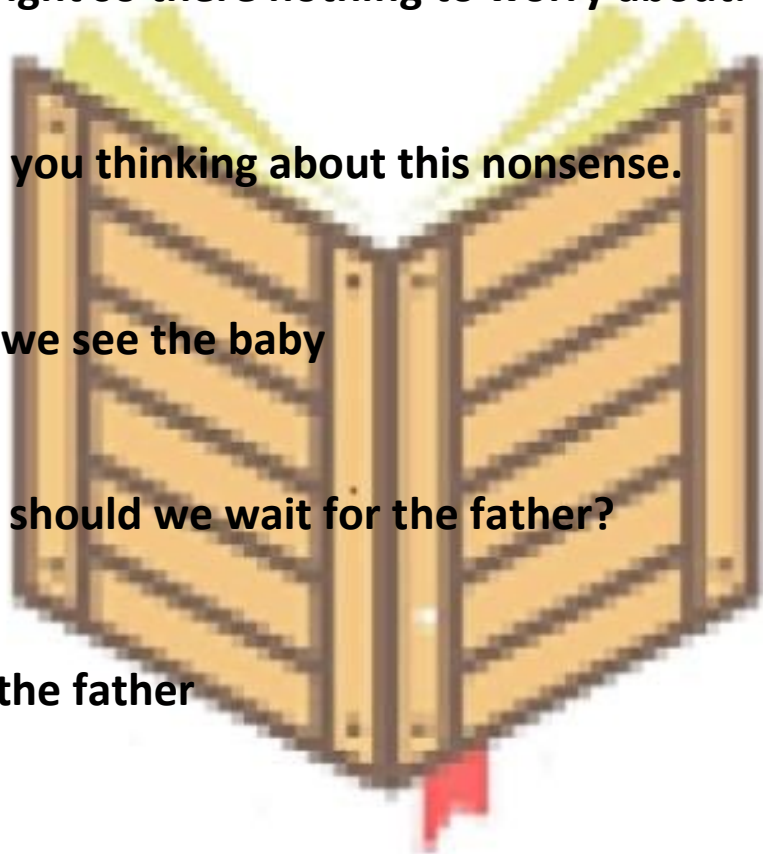
Nkosie: I'm the father

Doc: ohh

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: musuthi "ohh" get a wheelchair

Doc: sorry



she walks out.

Khwezi: no need to be mean

Nkosie: I was not being mean

Khwezi: whatever help me up



NOVELSGURU.COM

I remove the sheets and he places his hand on my waist pulling me off the bed and closer to him.

Khwezi: you need to stop with these games of yours

Nkosie: there's a game I'm playing? ohh I did not know

he says and I smirk.

I remove his hand from my waist and I almost fell, my legs are weak.

Nkosie: see there is no game I'm playing

he laughs and I playfully punch his chest.

he pulls me even closer and I could feel his boner, I clear my throat and his hand goes down to my ass.

Khwezi: Nkosie yazii...



he captures my lips on his and his lips are cold, he kisses me and I go with the flow.

I place my hands around his neck.

Sandile: niyaqabulana lana

I quickly pull out from the kiss and Nkosie groans.

Khwezi: how long have you been standing there?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: long enough to see my brothers hard dick

Nkosie: futsek

he places his hands on his hard manhood and he brushes it, I guess he is calming it down?

i chuckle.

**.
.
.**

FOREVA YENA

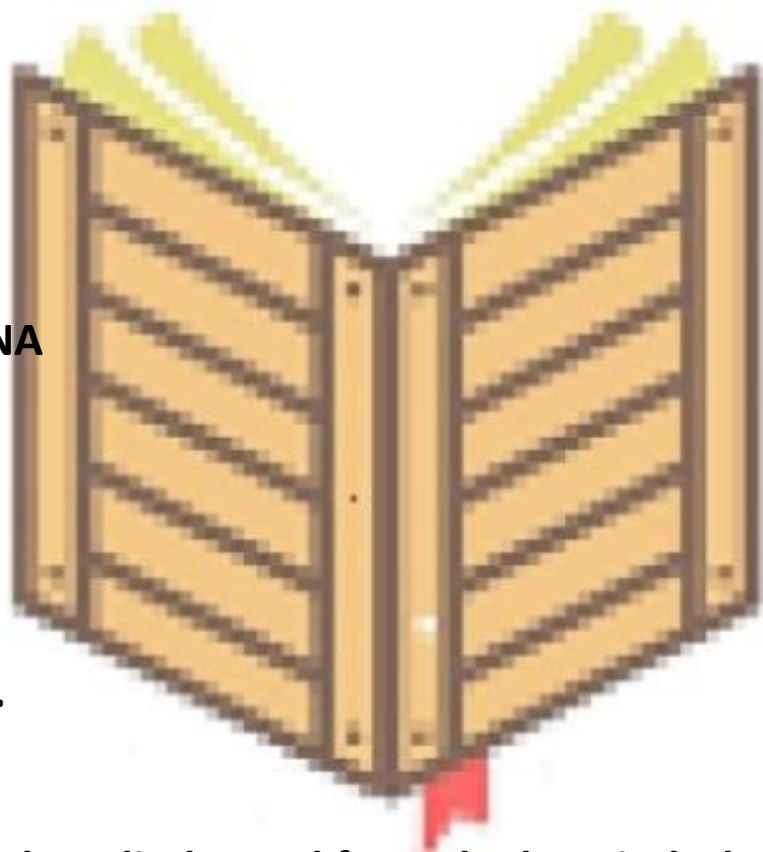
Insert 49

NARRATIVE.

Khwezi was then discharged from the hospital, she traveled by car with Nkosie, the drive was silent and things were a little awkward.

Khwezi: How is Zizi?

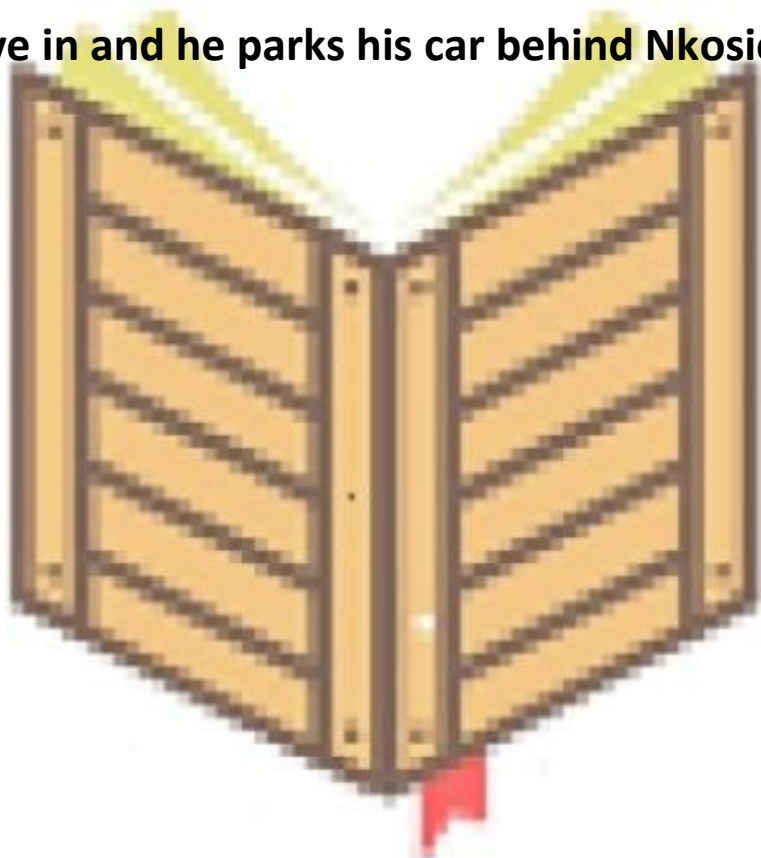
Nkosie: she's okay



Khwezi: great

she smiles and she leans on the window, they arrive at the house and Nkosie opens the door for her.

Sandile drove in and he parks his car behind Nkosie's car.



NOVELSGURU.COM

they walk inside and Mrs Mthembu got up, she gave Khwezi a hug.

Mrs M: my beautiful baby is back, are you okay? we were so worried about you

Khwezi: I'm okay thank you ma

Mrs M: did that boy hurt you?

Khwezi sighs and Mrs Mthembu pulls her back in for a hug and she cries.

Mrs M: I'm really sorry baby

Khwezi: it's okay, what has happened has happened we can't change the past

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs M: you right, meaning we should not live in the past

she pulls out of the hug.

Mr M: it's good to have you back Khwezi

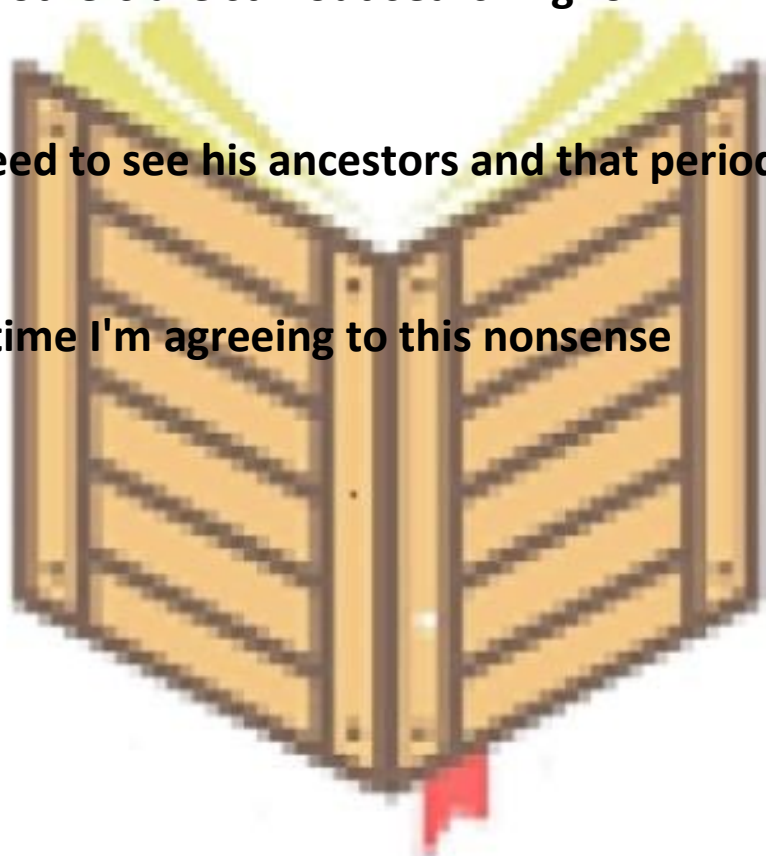
Khwezi Smiles.

Mr M: is he dead?

Sandile: the others are still out searching for him

Mr M: he need to see his ancestors and that period

Mrs M: it's time I'm agreeing to this nonsense



NOVELSGURU.COM

she says standing next to her husband.

Nkosie: and he will definitely meet his amcesters

he says and Khwezi looks at him.

Mrs M: Nkosie take the poor child upstairs to sleep

Nkosie smirks.

Nkosie: it will be my pleasure

he says in a low tone, he and Khwezi went upstairs instead of taking Khwezi to the guest room Nkosie took her to his room.

Khwezi: this is your room mos

NOVELSGURU.COM

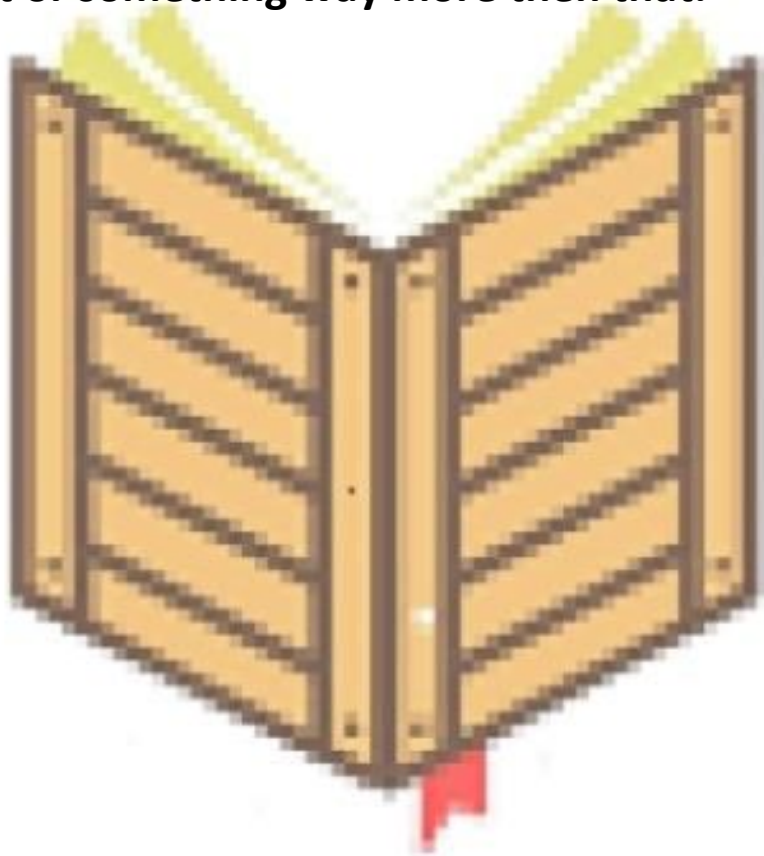
she says turning around and looks at Nkosie.

Nkosie: I know

Khwezi: I'm guest so you should take me to the guest room

Nkosie: who said you are a guest?

he asks looking into her eyes, that left her questioning herself if she's a guest or something way more then that.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I need to shower so can you leave the room

Nkosie: Khwezi you are bathing so the bathroom is that side and there's a door

Khwezi folds her arms and looks at Nkosie.

Khwezi: i see what you trying to do

Nkosie: what am I trying to do?

Khwezi: why you asking me? you know what your naughty brain is thinking

she says with a smirk.

Nkosie: I have a naughty brain now? come on in so innocent

NOVELSGURU.COM

he said the innocent party in slow motion sitting on the bed, Khwezi went to the bathroom and she closed the door.

she stripped naked and got inside the shower, she turns on the warm water and she looks up and the shower water pours on



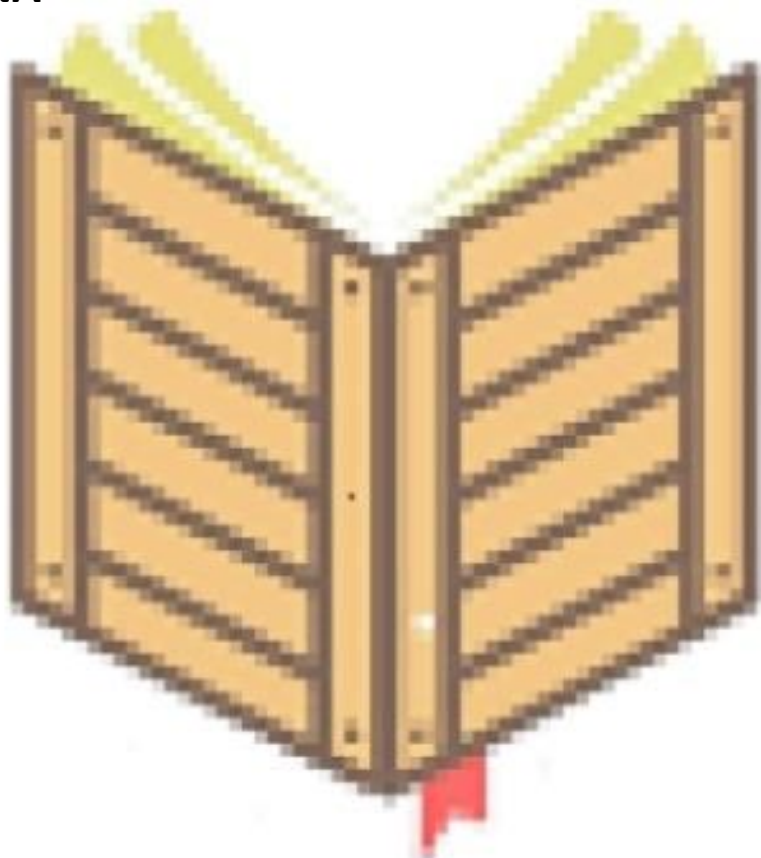
her face.

she started to bathe, she got done and she turns off the shower water and she got out.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 50



NOVELSGURU.COM

NARRATIVE.

she took a clean a towel and she dries her body, she wraps another towel on her body and she exits the room.

when she got to the room Nkosie was laying on the bed looking at the ceiling.

Khwezi: Nkosie...

she says and he set up straight, he bites her lower lip as he looks at her bare thighs.

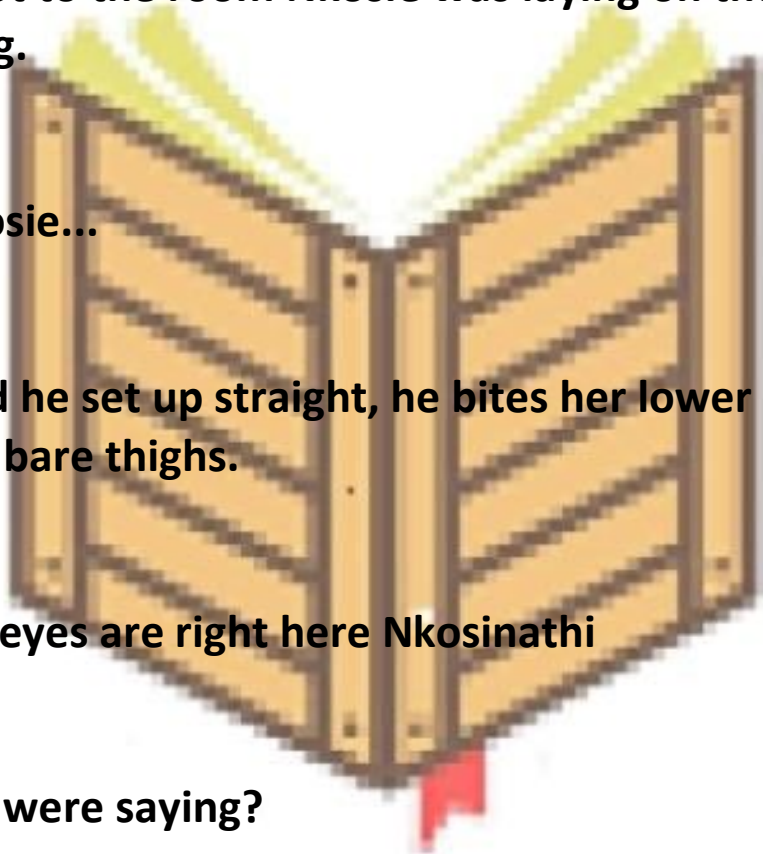
Khwezi: my eyes are right here Nkosinathi

Nkosie: you were saying?

NOVELSGURU.COM

he snaps out of it.

Khwezi: I need a pair of clothes



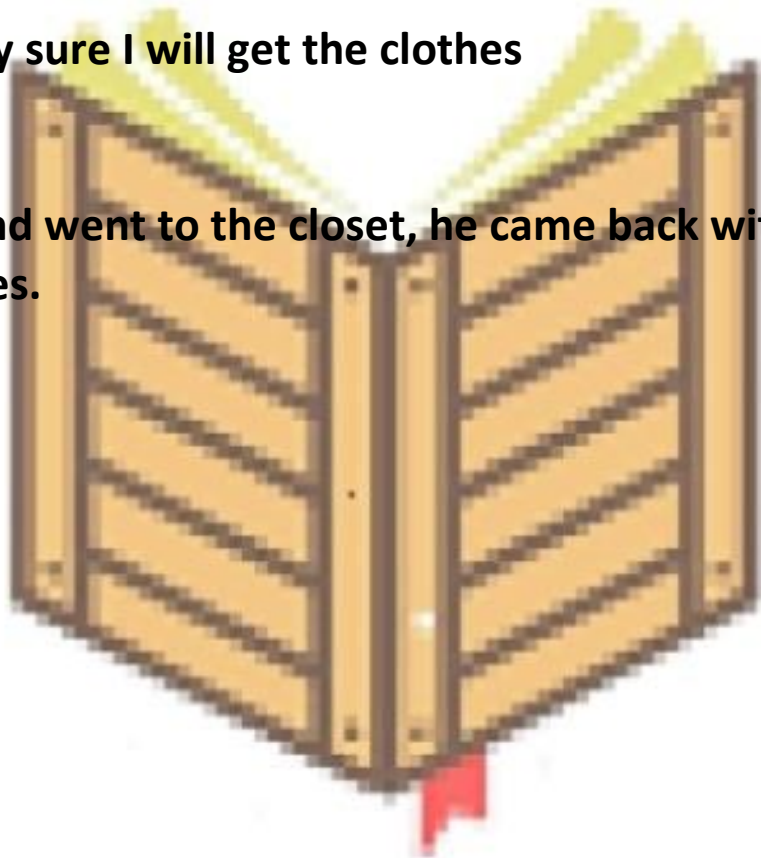
Nkosie: what are the clothes for now?

Khwezi: Nkosie!!

she says and places one hand on her hip.

Nkosie: okay sure I will get the clothes

he got up and went to the closet, he came back with a pair of warm clothes.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: here you go

Khwezi: you can now leave

she places the clothes on the bed and looks at Nkosie.

Nkosie: why? I have...

Khwezi drops the towel on the floor and Nkosie bites his lower lip, she had a few scars on her body but her body is still good looking to his eyes.

Khwezi takes the body lotion and she starts to lotion her body, at that moment Nkosie is not focused on the fact that she's lotioning her body.

his eyes were focused on her hard nipples, her curves, her ass and her bullet hole.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he looks at his pants and he is hard as rock.

he got closer to Khwezi but she stops him.

Khwezi: don't touch me Nkosie

she says in a low tone and Nkosie bites his lower lip.

he places his hand on her waiste and Khwezi removes it.

Khwezi: ngithe ungangithinti Nkosie (I said don't touch me Nkosie)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie looks at Khwezi as she continues to lotion her body, squeezing her boobs when she reaches them.

Nkosie: Mapholoba...

Khwezi: chabo (no) Nkosinathi

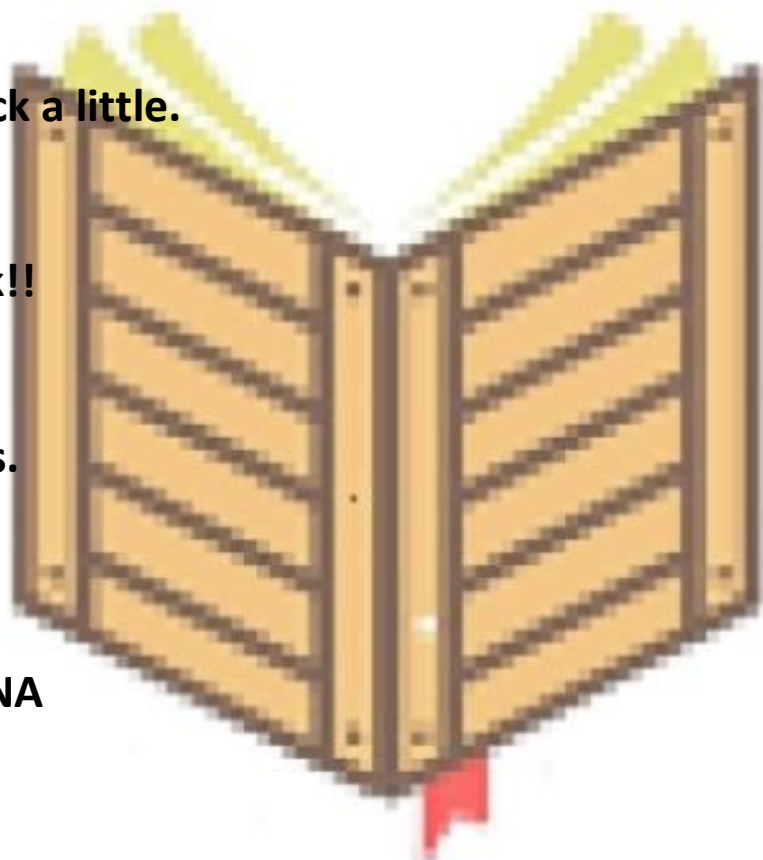
he steps back a little.

Nkosie: fuck!!

he mumbles.

**.
. .
. .**

FOREVA YENA



Insert 51

NOVELSGURU.COM

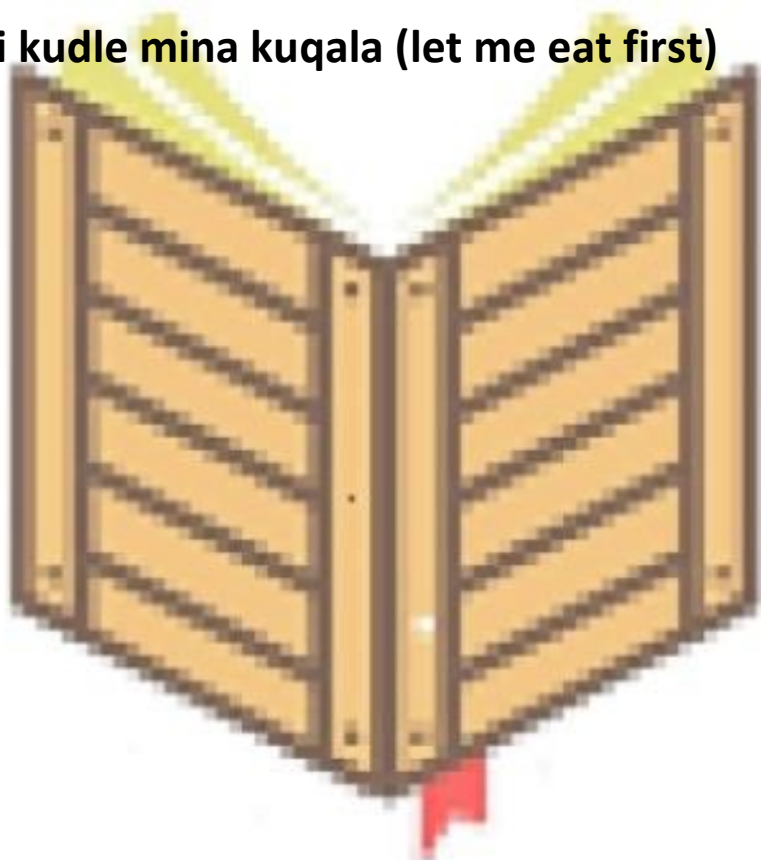
NARRATIVE.

he got closer to her and places his hands around her waist, this time she did not remove them she just continues to lotion her body.

Nkosie: kube uyazii kuthii ngikufuna kangaka nani (only if you knew how much I want you)

Khwezi: and mina I want food

Nkosie: yithi kudle mina kuqala (let me eat first)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: and what will you be eating?

Nkosie: wena nje (you)

Khwezi: am I food?

Nkosie is now breathing on her neck and she is slowly lotioning her boobs, he gave her a wet kiss on the neck.

her breathing changed.

Khwezi: Nkosie!!

she bites her lower lip and she could feel his boner behind her.

Khwezi: I'm still lotioning my body Nkosie

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie held both her hands and she sighs, she turns to face him and she wraps her arms around his neck with his hands on her waist.

they look into each other's eyes, Nkosie eyes are now red and small, she looks at his lips and he grabs her ass.

she let's out a moan and in that moment Nkosie saw the chance and he kissed her, she gently bites his lower lip and she kisses him back.

he grabs her ass once again and she let's out another moan, Nkosi lifts her up and he kisses her while he was still carrying her.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he gently places her on the bed and he gave her once steamy kiss and the he went down to her neck.

he went down and he kisses her belly, Khwezi Smiles.

Nkosie opens her legs a little and she opens them a little wider, she's already wet, he starts off by rubbing her clit and she moans.

he increases the phase and Khwezi moans even louder, he slide a a finger inside her and she grabs the sheets.

he fingered her till she reached her organism and he licks her juices, he starts to muff her and she held his head.

she bites her lower lip as his tongue did wonders on her honey pot, she squirts and Nkosie wipes her off. Khwezi moans fill the room and Nkosie presses on the clit making Khwezi's situation worse.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie made her squirt once again and he stops, the heat down there was a lot so he blew some air and Khwezi giggles, he went back and he ate her up.

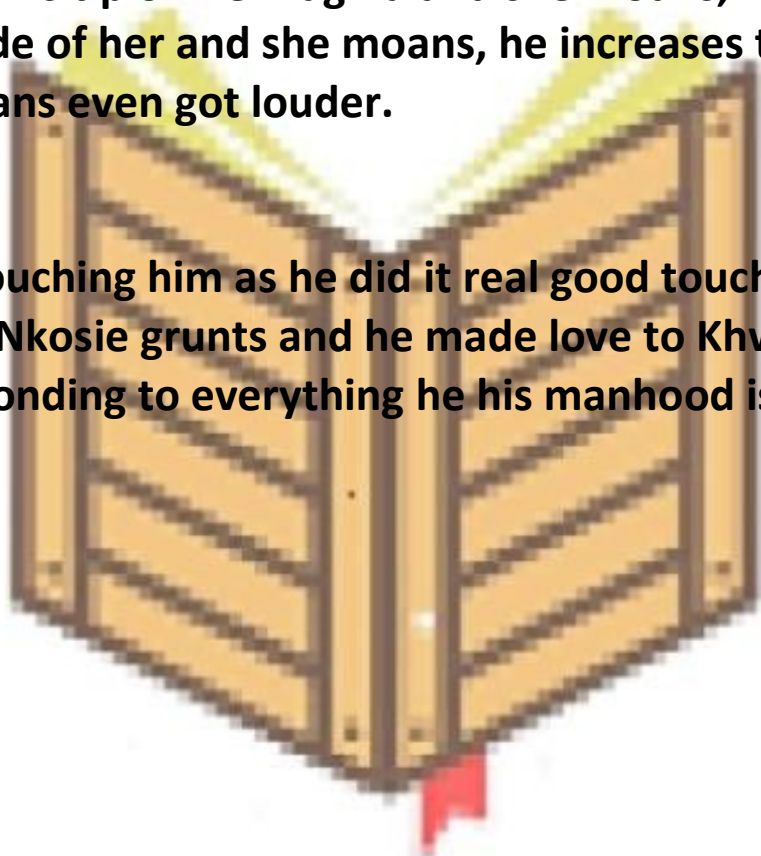
she felt her body getting weak and she releases everything out,

Nkosie went back and kisses her, she could taste herself in his mouth.

Khwezi helps Nkosi take off his vest, Nkosie took off his pants and his manhood was standing right up pointing.

Nkosie rubs his tip on her vagina and she moans, he slides himself inside of her and she moans, he increases the phase and her moans even got louder.

she starts touching him as he did it real good touching all the right spots, Nkosie grunts and he made love to Khwezi as she moans responding to everything he his manhood is doing inside her.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie starting slapping faster, this time it was not making live but fucking, Nkosie grabs tight on to him and she moans.

Nkosie groans as he hits her hard and she moans, they both cum and Nkosie got up.

Khwezi layed there breathing heavily.

Nkosie went to get a clean towel and he cleans her up, he lays next to her.

Khwezi: you see now I'm hungry and sleepy

she yawns.

Nkosie kisses her forehead.

Nkosie: I will get you some food

Khwezi: mmm okay

she says getti g undercover and Nkosie got up, he wore his pants and he went out, he later came back with some food for



NOVELSGURU.COM

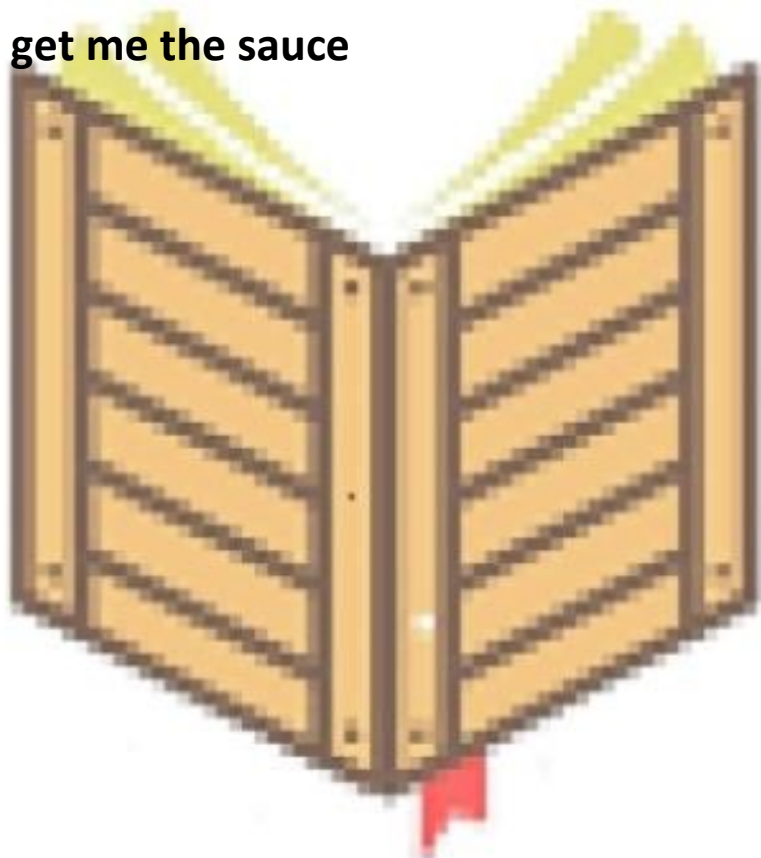
Khwezi.

Khwezi: is there peri peri sauce

Nkosie: you eat spicy things now

Khwezi: just get me the sauce

Nkosie: fine



NOVELSGURU.COM

he went back downstairs and came back with the sauce and gave it to Khwezi.

Nkosie: you good now?

Khwezi: never better

she starts eating and Nkosie got inside the bed, she got done and Nkosie took the dishes downstairs.

he came back and he cuddles with her.

they slept together.

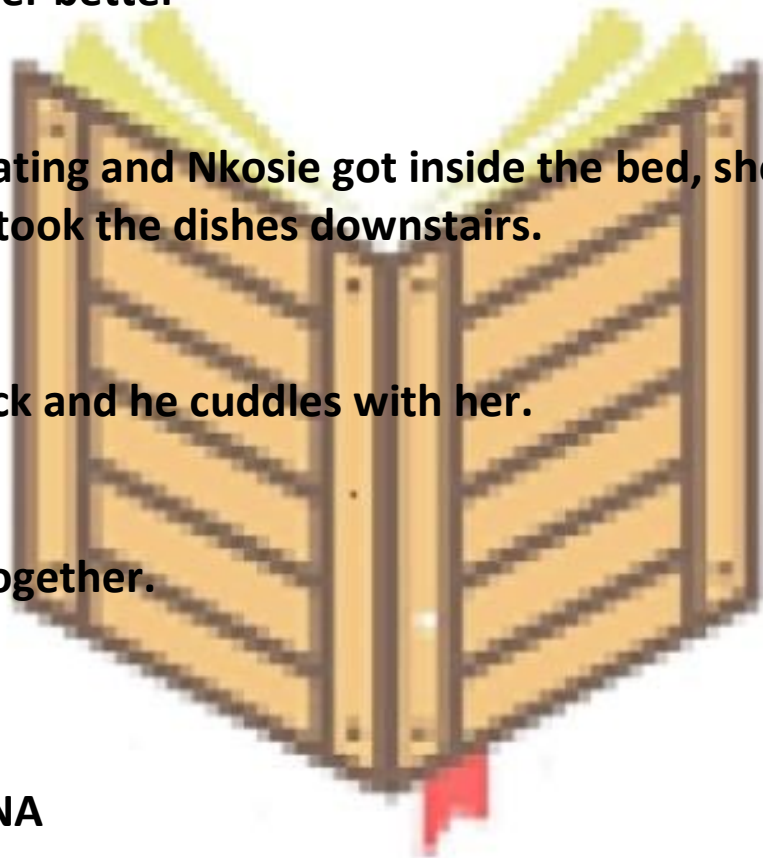
-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 51

NARRATIVE.



he got closer to her and places his hands around her waist, this time she did not remove them she just continues to lotion her body.

Nkosie: kube uyazii kuthii ngikufuna kangaka nani (only if you knew how much I want you)

Khwezi: and mina I want food

Nkosie: yithi kudle mina kuqala (let me eat first)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: and what will you be eating?

Nkosie: wena nje (you)

Khwezi: am I food?

Nkosie is now breathing on her neck and she is slowly lotioning her boobs, he gave her a wet kiss on the neck.

her breathing changed.

Khwezi: Nkosie!!

she bites her lower lip and she could feel his boner behind her.

Khwezi: I'm still lotioning my body Nkosie

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie held both her hands and she sighs, she turns to face him and she wraps her arms around his neck with his hands on her waist.

they look into each other's eyes, Nkosie eyes are now red and small, she looks at his lips and he grabs her ass.

she let's out a moan and in that moment Nkosie saw the chance and he kissed her, she gently bites his lower lip and she kisses him back.

he grabs her ass once again and she let's out another moan, Nkosi lifts her up and he kisses her while he was still carrying her.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he gently places her on the bed and he gave her once steamy kiss and the he went down to her neck.

he went down and he kisses her belly, Khwezi Smiles.

Nkosie opens her legs a little and she opens them a little wider, she's already wet, he starts off by rubbing her clit and she moans.

he increases the phase and Khwezi moans even louder, he slide a a finger inside her and she grabs the sheets.

he fingered her till she reached her organism and he licks her juices, he starts to muff her and she held his head.

she bites her lower lip as his tongue did wonders on her honey pot, she squirts and Nkosie wipes her off. Khwezi moans fill the room and Nkosie presses on the clit making Khwezi's situation worse.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie made her squirt once again and he stops, the heat down there was a lot so he blew some air and Khwezi giggles, he went back and he ate her up.

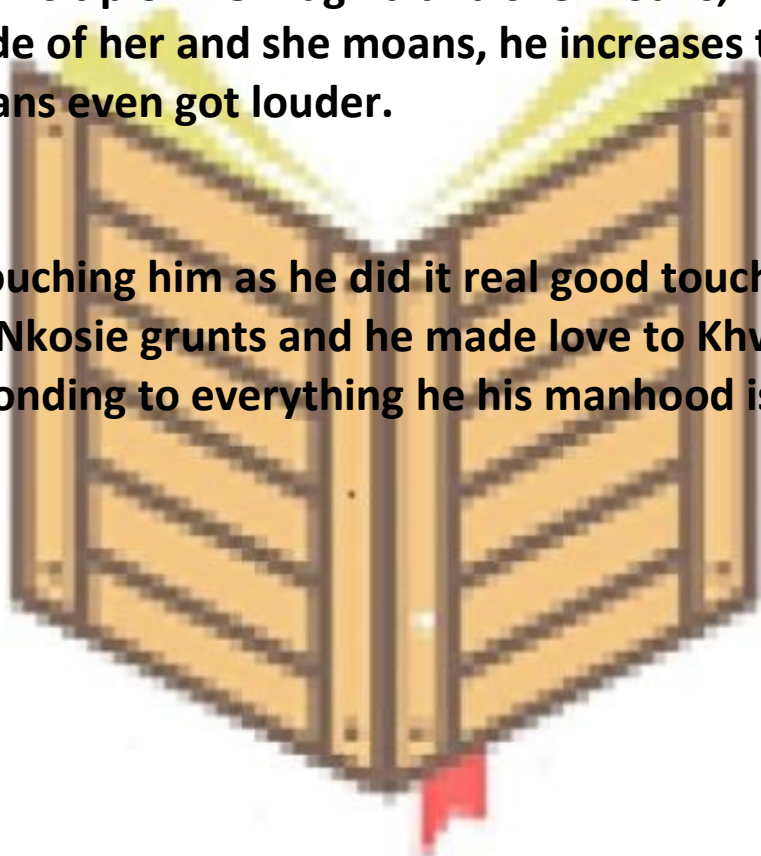
she felt her body getting weak and she releases everything out,

Nkosie went back and kisses her, she could taste herself in his mouth.

Khwezi helps Nkosi take off his vest, Nkosie took off his pants and his manhood was standing right up pointing.

Nkosie rubs his tip on her vagina and she moans, he slides himself inside of her and she moans, he increases the phase and her moans even got louder.

she starts touching him as he did it real good touching all the right spots, Nkosie grunts and he made love to Khwezi as she moans responding to everything he his manhood is doing inside her.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie starting slapping faster, this time it was not making live but fucking, Nkosie grabs tight on to him and she moans.

Nkosie groans as he hits her hard and she moans, they both cum and Nkosie got up.

Khwezi layed there breathing heavily.

Nkosie went to get a clean towel and he cleans her up, he lays next to her.

Khwezi: you see now I'm hungry and sleepy

she yawns.

Nkosie kisses her forehead.

Nkosie: I will get you some food

Khwezi: mmm okay

she says getti g undercover and Nkosie got up, he wore his pants and he went out, he later came back with some food for



NOVELSGURU.COM

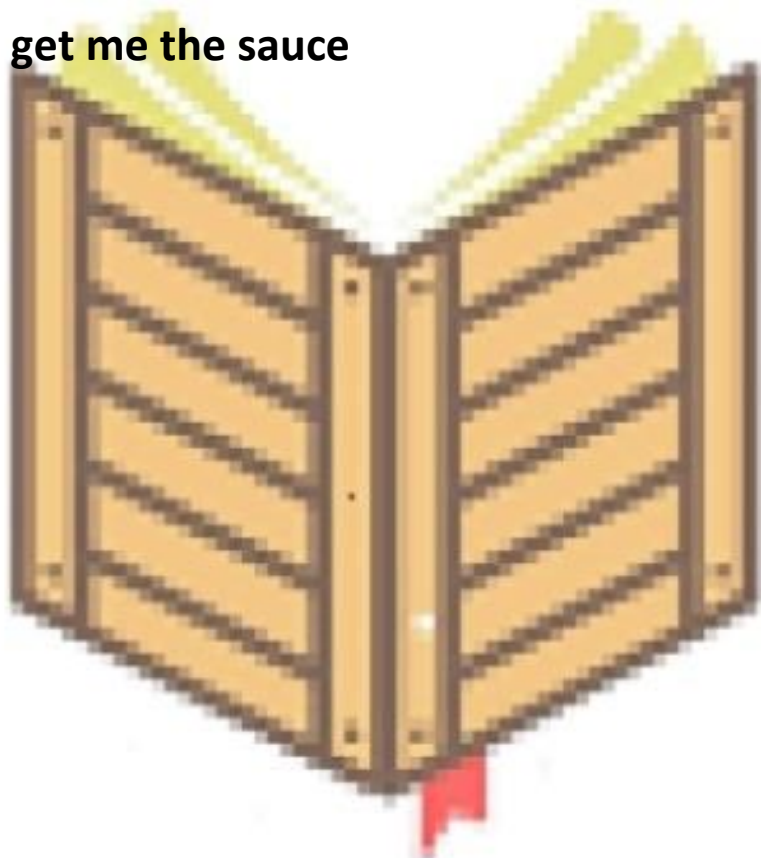
Khwezi.

Khwezi: is there peri peri sauce

Nkosie: you eat spicy things now

Khwezi: just get me the sauce

Nkosie: fine



NOVELSGURU.COM

he went back downstairs and came back with the sauce and gave it to Khwezi.

Nkosie: you good now?

Khwezi: never better

she starts eating and Nkosie got inside the bed, she got done and Nkosie took the dishes downstairs.

he came back and he cuddles with her.

they slept together.

- .
- .
- .

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 52

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up around 14:30 and I'm hungry, Nkosie is not in bed. I got up and I went to wash my face, I need to go see my mother she must be worried about me.

I went downstairs and nobody was there, I started to make something for myself to eat.

I set down on the kitchen stool and I ate my food while having some juice, I don't even have a phone Sakhile took it.



NOVELSGURU.COM

as I was having my last slice Nkosie walks in with his brothers, they came to the kitchen.

Nkanyezi: Khwezi how are you? Khwezi: I'm good thanks and you?

Nkanyezi: I'm fine

he went to the fridge and poured himself some juice.

Ntando: it's good to have you back safe and sound Sandile: you can say that again

Khwezi: where is Zizi?

Sya: she has been locking herself in the apartment after that Ndlovu boy leaked her video

Khwezi: this is all my fault, if I hadn't made contact with Sakhile all this wouldn't have happened

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: it's not your fault, it's something you were unable to control so don't say it's your fault

Khwezi: i want to see her can you take me there

Nkosie: after we done shopping

Khwezi: shopping?

Nkosie: yes you can't keep on wearing my clothes

Khwezi: but I like your clothes



NOVELSGURU.COM

I look at him and he smirks.

Nkosie: plus we need to get you a new phone

Khwezi: all that is really unnecessary

Nkosie: I want to do it and we ain't arguing about it

Khwezi: you know I don't just let things slide

Nkanyezi: you are glowing Khwezi someone would swear you are pregnant

he laughs, I took a sip on my juice and I got up to wash my plate, the rest of the brothers went to the living room and Nkosie stayed.

he was leaning on the fridge while looking at me.

Nkosie: are you okay?

Khwezi: I'm fine

I say and I wipe my hands since I was done washing the dishes, I went and stood in front of him.

Nkosie: I mean emotionally are you okay?

Khwezi: yes I'm fine, why you asking? are you seeing anything wrong?

Nkosie: it's just that you have been through a lot and I just wanted to be sure if you are okay, I can get someone who you can talk to



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: that will cost a lot of money and i don't like it when you guys use your money on me

Nkosie: I know you don't like it but I'm doing it because I want to do it

Khwezi: whatever, when are we leaving?

Nkosie: asikaqedi nje ukukhuluma (we not yet done talking)

Khwezi: I thought we were done *giggles*

Nkosie: if I organise a therapist for you will you be fine with that

Khwezi: I don't really need a therapist Nkosie

NOVELSGURU.COM

he looks at me and he nods, I went upstairs and he followed me.

Sya: Nkosie can you leave the poor girl alone

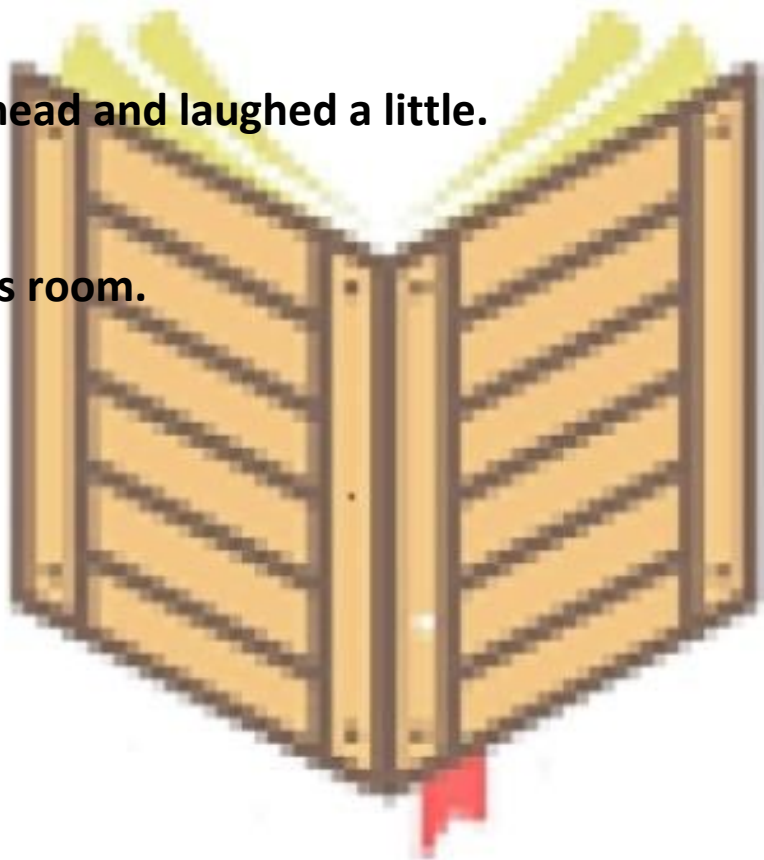
Nkosie: mind your own business

Sandile: that's my wife njalo

Nkosie: uyanya

I shake my head and laughed a little.

we got to his room.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I will go take a shower

Nkosie: okay

Khwezi: there's no need to wait for me, you can go chill with your brothers

Nkosie: I'm good

Khwezi: suit yourself

I went to the bathroom, I took a shower and I dried my body when I was done. I wrap a towel around me and I went out.

Khwezi: I'm done you can take a shower now

Nkosie: I already showered

NOVELSGURU.COM

he says focused on his phone.

I took the clothes from his closet and I set down on the bed next to him and started to lotion my body.

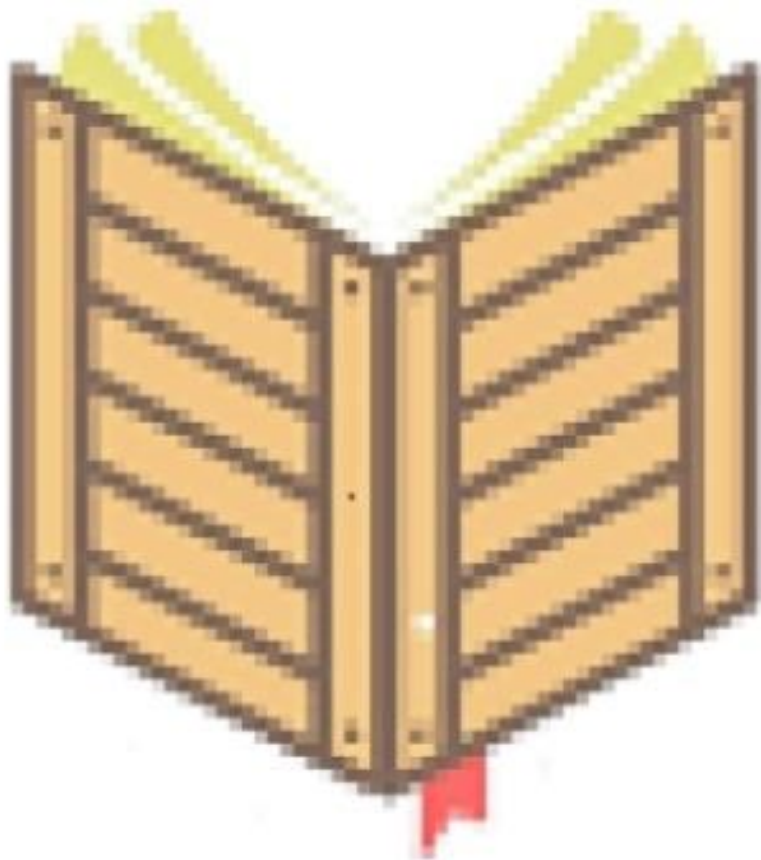


he groans and got up leaving the room, I chuckle.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 53



NOVELSGURU.COM

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I got done, I wore his hoodie, his sweat pants, I wore some pair of sock and I wore my shoes.

he walks in the room as I was doing my hair.

Nkosie: it's been thirty minutes and you not done

Khwezi: I'm a women and I need my time

Nkosie: I really don't get what you wearing that's taking so long

Khwezi: you don't have to be mean about it

Nkosie: I'm not being mean I'm just saying

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: okay then shut your mouth then

I'm getting annoyed.

Nkosie: don't tell me what to do

Khwezi: if you acting like this I'm gonna have to tell you what to do

I turn to look at him and I can't really read him, he is just standing there with his hands in his pockets.

Khwezi: I'm done

Nkosie: I can see that



NOVELSGURU.COM

he walks out and I follow him.

we arrive downstairs and I found his mother there.

Mrs M: look at you looking so beautiful, you are glowing

Khwezi: thank you ma

Mrs M: where are two going?

Khwezi: Nkosie is taking me out for some shopping

Mrs M: Nkosie and shopping? that's a first

Nkosie: mom we really are in a hurry honestly

Mrs M: leave me alone wena I'm still complimenting Sandile's wife

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: awww suka!!

he got up and started to do dance, I giggle, Nkosie clicks his

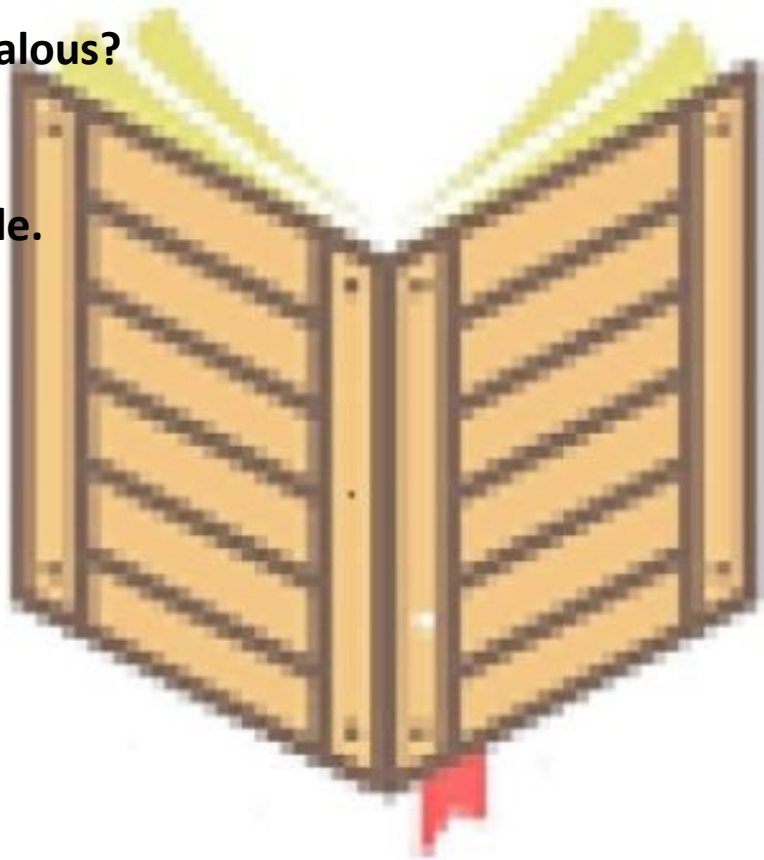
tongue and walks out.

Khwezi: I really have to go ma

Mrs M: he is just jealous

why is he jealous?

I laugh a little.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs M: go before you are late

Khwezi: sure

she smiles and I walk out, I got to the car and Nkosie was listening to his music.

Nkosie: you done can we leave now?

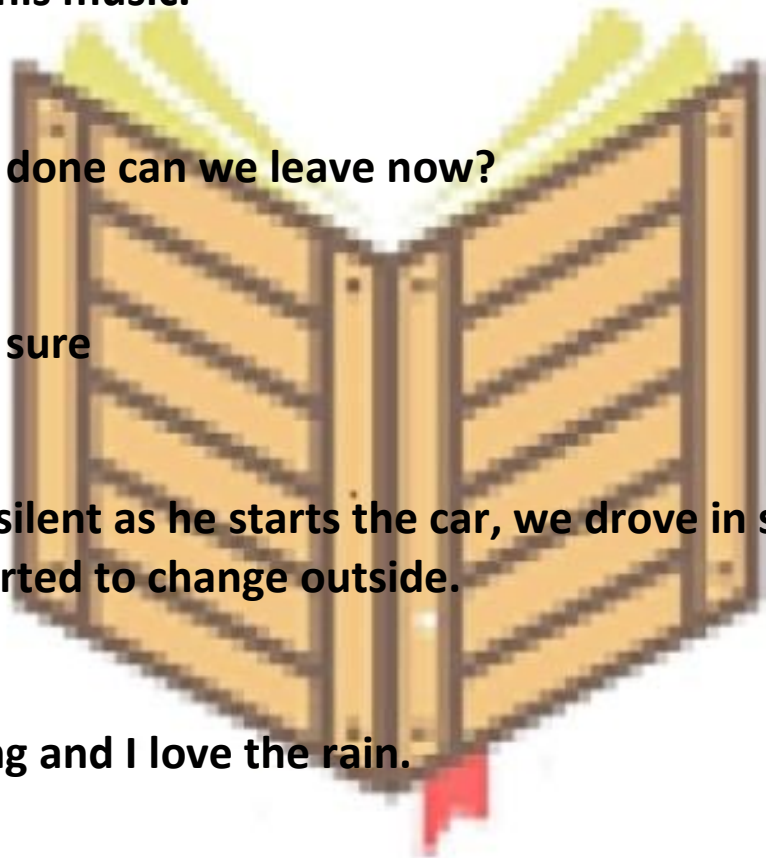
Khwezi: yes sure

he remains silent as he starts the car, we drove in silence as the weather started to change outside.

it was raining and I love the rain.

I look at Nkosie and he is so focused on the road, he is very good looking.

Khwezi: so Nkosie tell me more about you



NOVELSCOURU.COM

Nkosie: there's nothing to tell

Khwezi: come on I think there's more to tell, you are so mysterious

Nkosie: like I said there's nothing to tell

Khwezi: I just want to get to know you

Nkosie: that won't help you or me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: why you being like this?

Nkosie: being like what?

Khwezi: an asshole, I just want to get to know you, I want to get to know the father of my child what's wrong with that?

Nkosie: can you stop annoying me with your stupid questions, you want to know me? I don't want you to know me and honestly speaking I never really wanted a child with you

he half shouts.

Khwezi: oh

that hurts, I was just trying to make a conversation with him, I wear my hoodie hat as I felt tears building up and my cheeks burning.

.
. .
. .

NOVELSGURU.COM

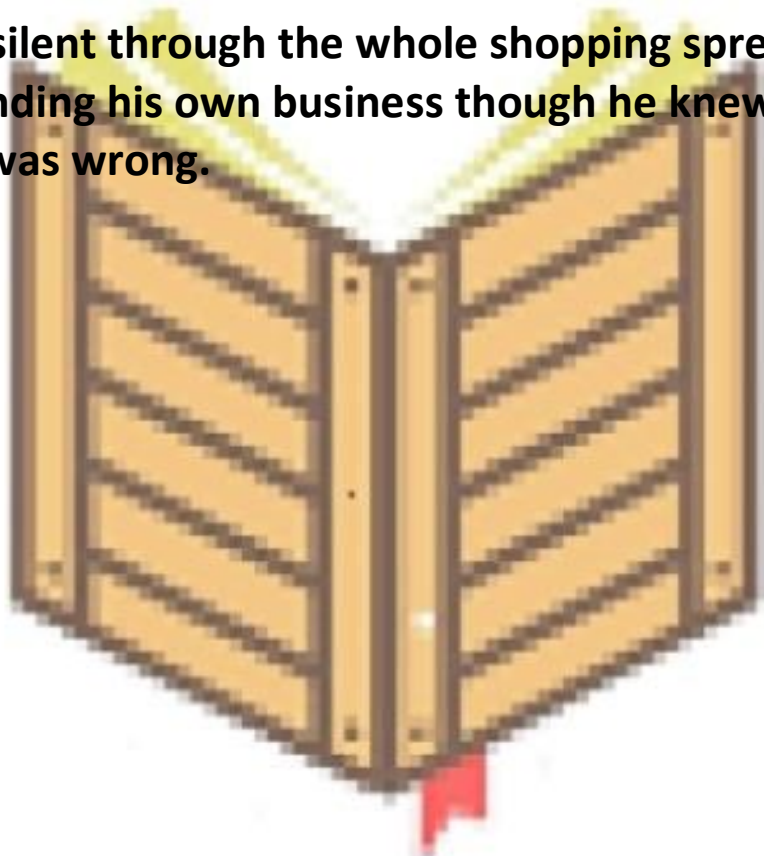
FOREVA YENA

Insert 54

NARRATIVE.

They got to the mall and things between the two was so awkward and tense, they went to the first shop and they bought everything Khwezi needed.

She was so silent through the whole shopping spree, Nkosie was just minding his own business though he knew what he said to her was wrong.



NOVELSGURU.COM

they went to buy Khwezi a new phone which was an iPhone 13 pro max, she was happy buy she did not show it at all.

now it's time to eat and Khwezi is starving.

Nkosie: where do you want to eat?

Khwezi: anywhere is fine

she says with her arms folded, they decided to go to spur, they were shown their seat and they took their orders.

the waiter left and they were both left alone.

Nkosie: Khwezi I'm really sorry for talking to you like that

he says and Khwezi looks at him then back down at her phone.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: talk to me

he says and she does not say anything.

Nkosie: I don't know what I was thinking, I was angry and...

**Khwezi: you thought it was right to take out your anger on me?
perfect**

she takes a smile and looks at her phone.

Nkosie: like I said I did not mean all that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi doesn't say anything.

Nkosie: Khwezi talk to me okay, I can't tolerate any other second with you being like this towards me

Khwezi: I have nothing to say Nkosie okay

Nkosie: I'm sorry

Khwezi: okay

Nkosie sighs and he sits back, he looks at Khwezi who seemed to not be bothered about this whole thing.

the food arrives and they are in silence, Nkosie kept on looking at Khwezi who was enjoying her food.

NOVELSGURU.COM

they finished and the waiter came to take the dirty dishes then came back with the cheque.

Nkosie paid and they went out, Khwezi was walking in front of Nkosie.

they got to the car and they still not talking to each other.

Nkosie: we going to see Zizi right?

Khwezi: yes

she says folding her arms and looking outside the window,
Nkosie sighs and starts the car.



NOVELSGURU.COM

the silence in the car was killing Nkosie so he decided to turn on some music, 24 hours by Kaylow started playing.

he looks at Khwezi as this was the very same song he danced with her with.

she could feel his eyes on her but she did not want to turn cause she knows she is gonna get sucked in.

they arrive at the apartment and they got out, Khwezi stood outside and she inhaled some air.

Khwezi: it's been a long time since I saw her, I just hope she forgives me

she mumbles, Nkosie opens the door and they walk inside.

Khwezi: Zizi? hello

NOVELSGURU.COM

she places her phone on the counter, Nkosie just stood behind her with his hands in his pocket.

Nkosie: she doesn't want to talk with anyone

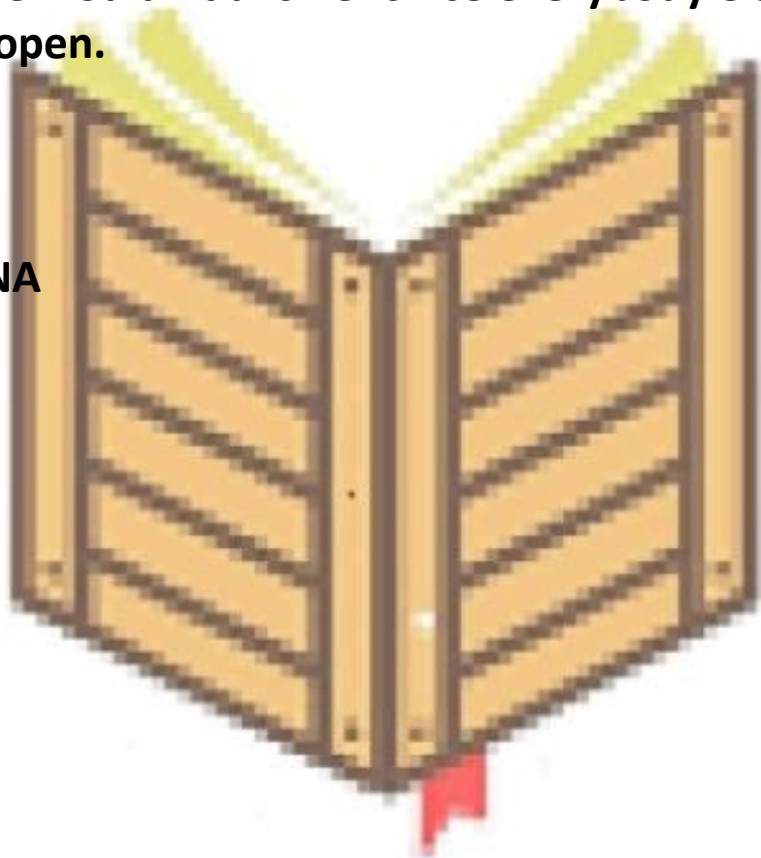
Khwezi: you too?

Nkosie nods.

Khwezi went to Zizi room door and she wanted to knock but she knew she wouldn't answer since everybody else tried but she did not open.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 55

NARRATIVE.

she barges in and she saw the shock of her life, Zizi was laying in bed with Lindani and they were kissing.

Khwezi: Zizi what the fuck?

they both jump.

Zizi: Khwezi you back, oh my god...

she got off the bed and tried to hug Khwezi but she pushes her away.

Lindani: Khwezi? NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: ohh you even remember my name

she rolls her eyes.



Zizi: I can explain

Khwezi: explain what? that you happen to be in the same bed with my ex

Nkosie walks in and he looks at Lindani and Zizi.

Nkosie: hell no you fucking my sister?



NOVELSGURU.COM

he says furiously.

Zizi: bhuti Nkosie please calm down

Nkosie: how dare you touch my sister the fuck is wrong with you

Zizi: let me explain please...

Khwezi: out of all the people you could have sex with you chose to have sex with my ex

she says looking at Zizi.

Khwezi: and you really slept with my friend

Lindani: and you slept with him

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: that was before we even started to date dude the fuck and I really thought...whatever I don't even know why I'm still standing here

Zizi: but you had sex with my brother and I did not have a

problem with that

Khwezi: so you don't see anything wrong you did?

she says wiping her tears.

Zizi: I didn't mean it like that

Khwezi: you know what? it was a bad decision to even come here the first place



NOVELSGURU.COM

she clicks her tongue and she takes her phone walking out.

Nkosie looks at his sister and he walks out following Khwezi who was vomiting outside, he went to her and brushed her back as she let everything out.

Khwezi: don't touch me

she pushes him away.

Nkosie: I'm trying to help

Khwezi: I don't need any of your help

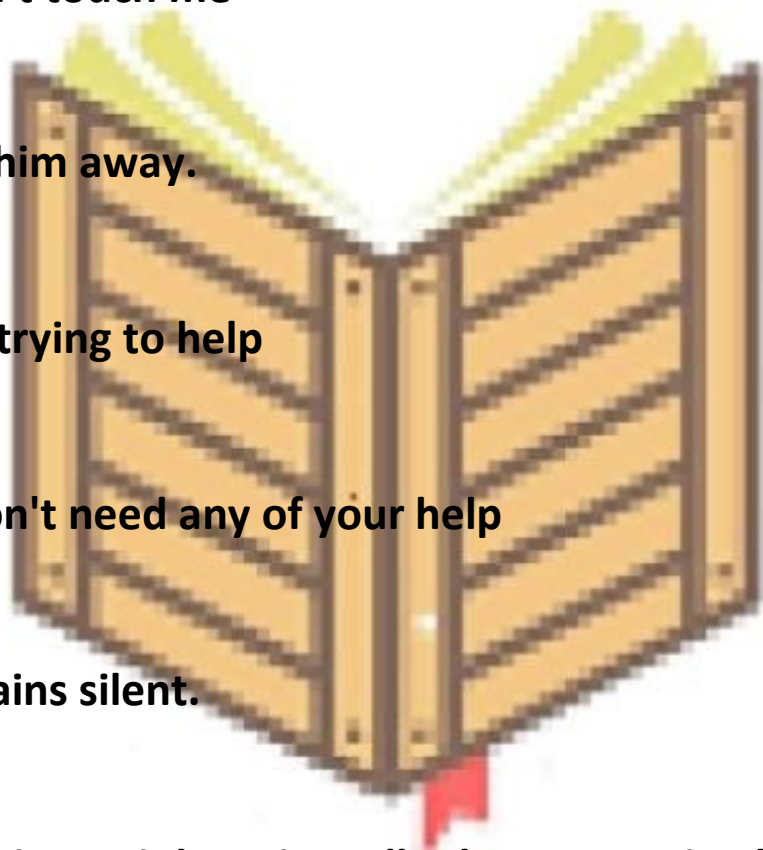
Nkosie remains silent.

Khwezi: coming to joburg is really the worst mistake I ever made

NOVELSGURU.COM

she says wiping her tears.

Khwezi: everything keeps falling apart and I'm losing it

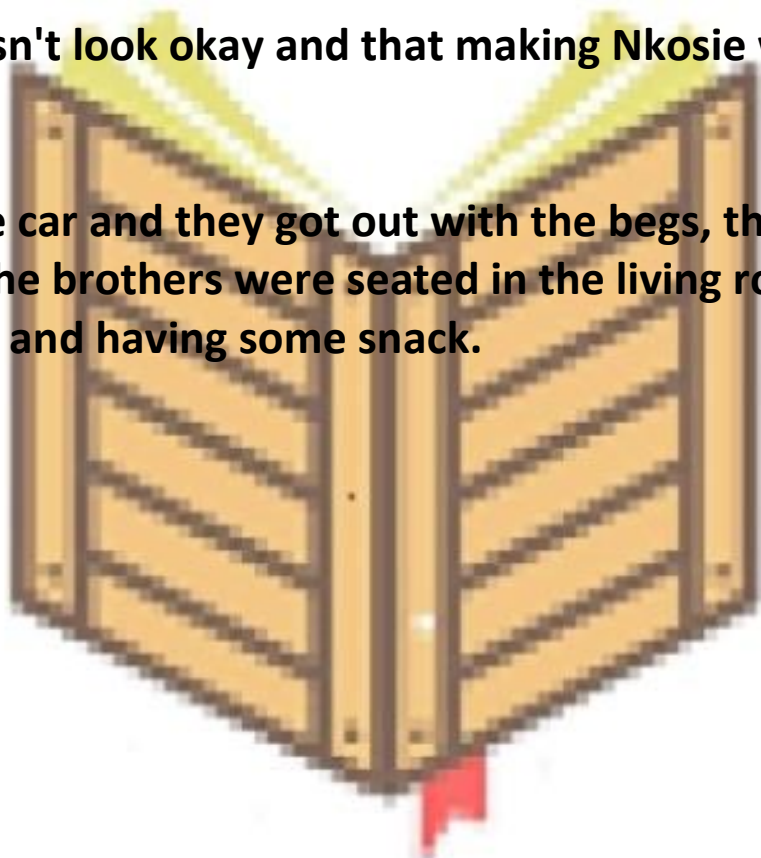


she cries even louder, Nkosie just stood there not saying anything.

Khwezi went to the car and few seconds later Nkosie follows her, they drove in the yard.

Khwezi doesn't look okay and that making Nkosie worried.

he parks the car and they got out with the begs, they went inside and the brothers were seated in the living room watching Tv and having some snack.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: y'all are back, what took you so long vele?

he asks.

Khwezi: nothing *clear throat* Sandile can you take me somewhere

Sandile: anywhere you want...wait are you crying?

Khwezi: no, it's going to be a long drive though

Sandile: we leaving now?

Khwezi: yes

Nkosie: I'm sure wherever he is taking you, I can take you there myself

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I don't want you to take me there

Ntando: what did you do to the poor girl now?



Nkosie: mind your own shit Ntando

Sya: he is just asking

Khwezi went upstairs leaving the brothers and she started to pack her clothes.

Nkosie walks in and he places his car keys down.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: can we talk?

Khwezi: I'm busy

she says continuing to pack.

Nkosie: I'm really...

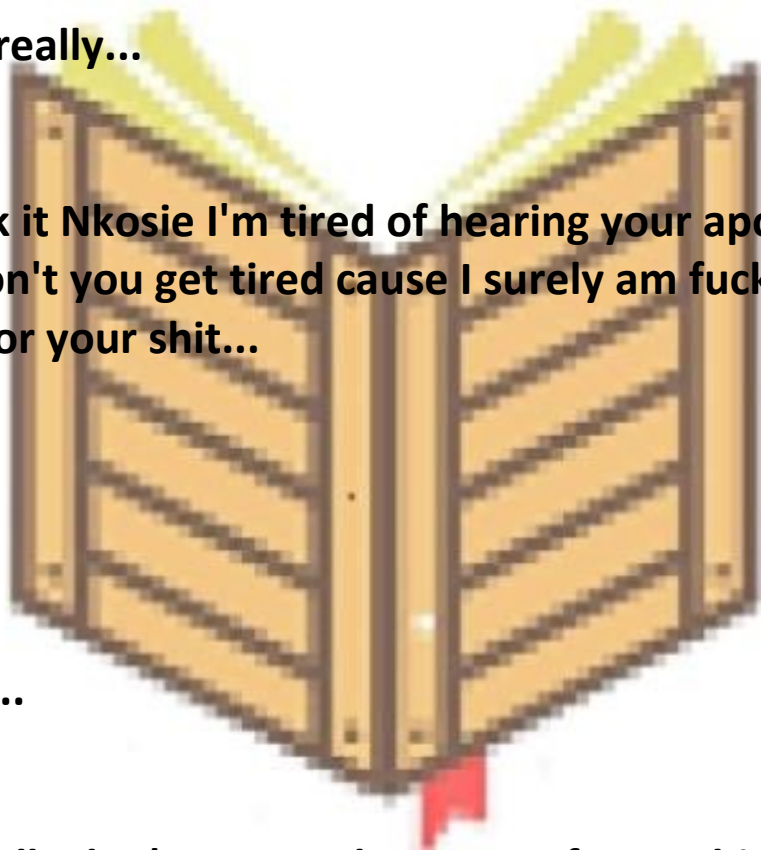
Khwezi: fuck it Nkosie I'm tired of hearing your apologies honestly, don't you get tired cause I surely am fucking exhausted for your shit...

she shouts.

Nkosie: but...

Khwezi: I really don't want to hear any of your shit right now, my life sucks ever since I got sucked in your life...everything that involves you is making me feel so tired cause it comes with a lot of drama I can't handle, I'm also human I got feelings...*sighs*

Nkosie looks down and he clutched his jaw as he is getting frustrated.



Khwezi: I need to take a break from you and everyone else, I'm dealing with a lot right now and I can handle any of your moods and attitude I suggest you fix your shit...I got a baby to take care of

Nkosie: we can talk this through and fix it though you can't leave. you carrying my baby

Khwezi: ohh it's your baby now since I'm leaving, what do want actually Nkosie?

Nkosie: I don't want you to go



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you late cause the begs are already packed and I have made up my mind

the drags the luggage.

Khwezi: bye Nkosinathi Mthembu

she looks at him before walking out, he didn't even stop her, that's just great.

she makes her way downstairs and Mrs M along with her husband walk in.

Mrs M: you are leaving?

Khwezi: yes I am

she wipes her tears.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs M notices Nkosie who is standing upstairs with his hands in his pocket and she understood what was happening.

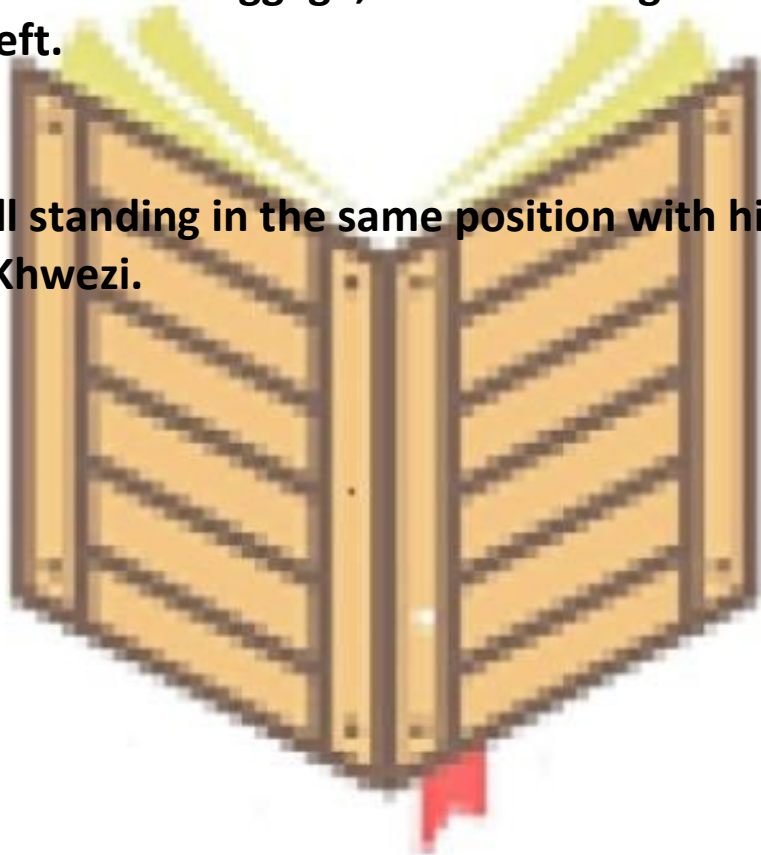
Mrs M: travel safe my dear

Sandile: she will *smiles*

Mr M: take care

Sandile took Khwezi's luggage, the brothers gave Khwezi a hug before she left.

Nkosie is still standing in the same position with his eyes focused on Khwezi.



NOVELSGURU.COM

As Khwezi was about to exit Zizi walks in, Khwezi rolls her eyes and she passes her.

she got inside the car.

Sandile: where to?

Khwezi: KZN

she sighs.

**.
.
.**

FOREVA YENA

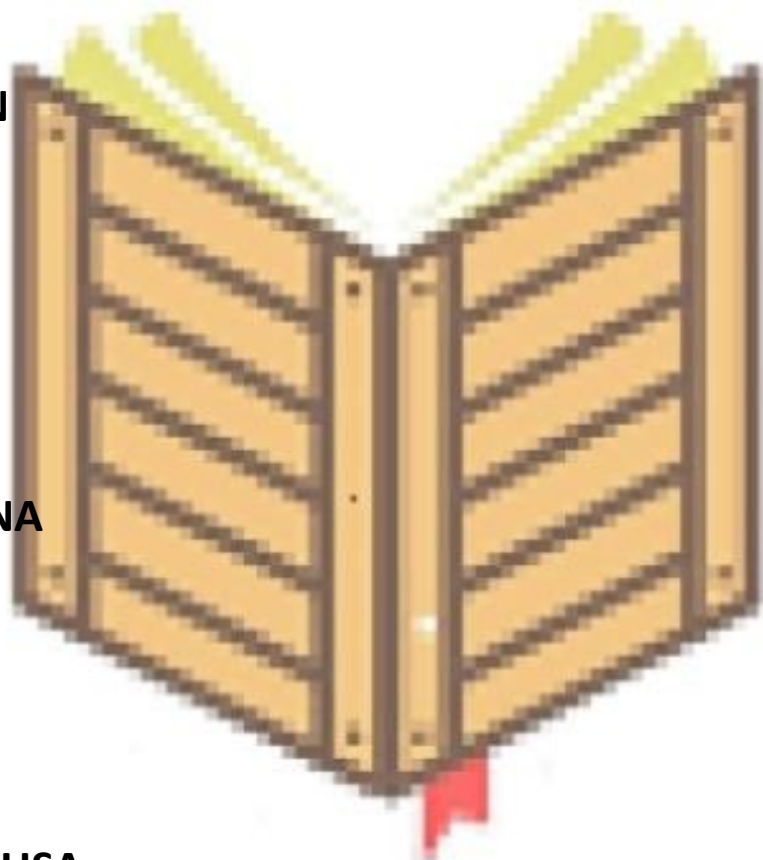
Insert 56

KHWEZILOKUSA.

NOVELSGURU.COM

We on the road driving to KZN, Sandile is a very nice and good person he doesn't have moods like somebody I won't say.

Khwezi: so you telling me that in a month you will be having your own company?



Sandile: yes and I'm really excited, can't wait for my brothers to invest in it

I laugh a little.

Khwezi: you gonna do a good job I know it



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: thanks

then there was some silence, I did want any silence now my thoughts are everywhere. I can't stand a second without thinking about my complicated life.

Sandile: so what happened between you and my brother?

he asks, I'm not about to tell him that I'm pregnant. I will tell them when we are both ready to for them to know about my pregnancy for now we keeping things low key.

Khwezi: well you know your brother he has moods and I can't handle them

Sandile: there's a reason behind those moods you know, he wasn't like that *sighs* he changes everytime

Khwezi: well I don't like the changing, I know there's a good side of him and he does show it. the thing is he switches up

Sandile: I feel you

Khwezi: what's the reason behind his moods anyways?

Sandile: it's not my place to tell

Khwezi: is it that big?

Sandile: very big

Khwezi: now I want to know



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile chuckles.

Sandile: but just know that he is not like that, he is just dealing with a lot of stuff at the moment

Khwezi: all of you keep saying the same thing, what's so big that he is becomes so rude and moody?

Sandile: like I said it's not my place to tell, my brother has never really introduced any girl to the family

Khwezi: he introduced Amanda though

Sandile: trust me he did not, she introduced herself *laughs a little* we was having a family gathering and the next thing Amanda walks in and introduced herself as Nkosie's girlfriend

I laugh.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: and what was his reaction?

Sandile: Nkosie is a very collected man and he knows when and how to act, he just remained calm and didn't do anything

he is right Nkosie is calm.

Khwezi: I see

Sandile: but when you are around it's a whole different story

he smiles.

Khwezi: what do you mean?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: he smiles more often, let me just say you bring out the good side in him

Khwezi: kanti he has a bad side?

I laugh.

Sandile: trust me you don't wanna know about his bad side

I just laugh and he joins me.

Sandile: whatever it is though you gonna fix it

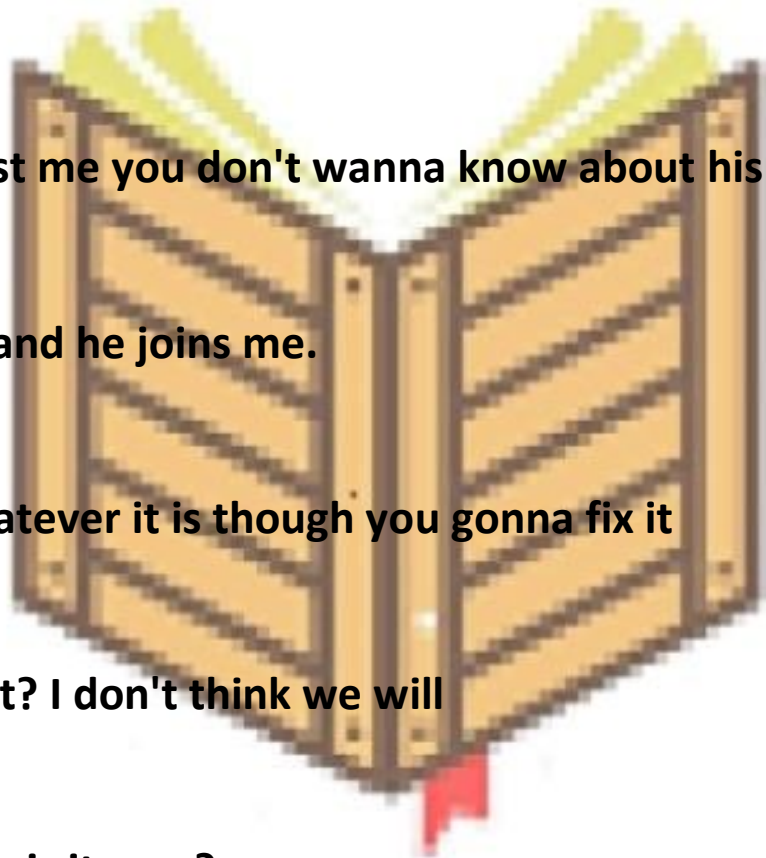
Khwezi: fix it? I don't think we will

Sandile: why is it now?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I'm pregnant with his child Sandile

I say and I frown, he stops the car and he parks at the side.



Sandile: say that again I think I didn't hear you properly

Khwezi: I'm pregnant with your brothers child

Sandile: holy shit!

Khwezi: and when we were driving to the mall I was trying to make out a small conversation with him but it did not end well, he ended up say I g he never wanted to have a child with me in the first place



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: yohh uNkosinathi uyahlanya...

he held his head and he turns to looks at me.

Sandile: don't tell him I said that

Khwezi: and I have a lot going, I really don't want any pressure right now

Sandile: I understand but he shouldn't have said that

Khwezi: you won't say a word to anyone about the pregnancy please

Sandile: your secrete is safe with me my friend

Khwezi: I'm no longer your wife now

Sandile: Nkosie would kill me

I laugh.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: but then take all the time you need to heal okay, don't rush the process even if he apologies make him beg please

Khwezi: I will take my time and I sure am not going to forgive him anytime soon

Sandile: good girl don't let boys play you

Khwezi: haybo his your brother njalo



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: he has to learn his lesson phela

he laughs and starts the car.

Khwezi: I'm really happy that I had this talk with you

Sandile: I'm always there for you, you like my second sister

Khwezi: ncoah you gonna make me cry seriously

I can feel my cheeks burn I ain't lying.

Sandile: you can sleep if you want, I don't mind

Khwezi: I'm not sleepy just yet

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: we will pass by the garage and get some food

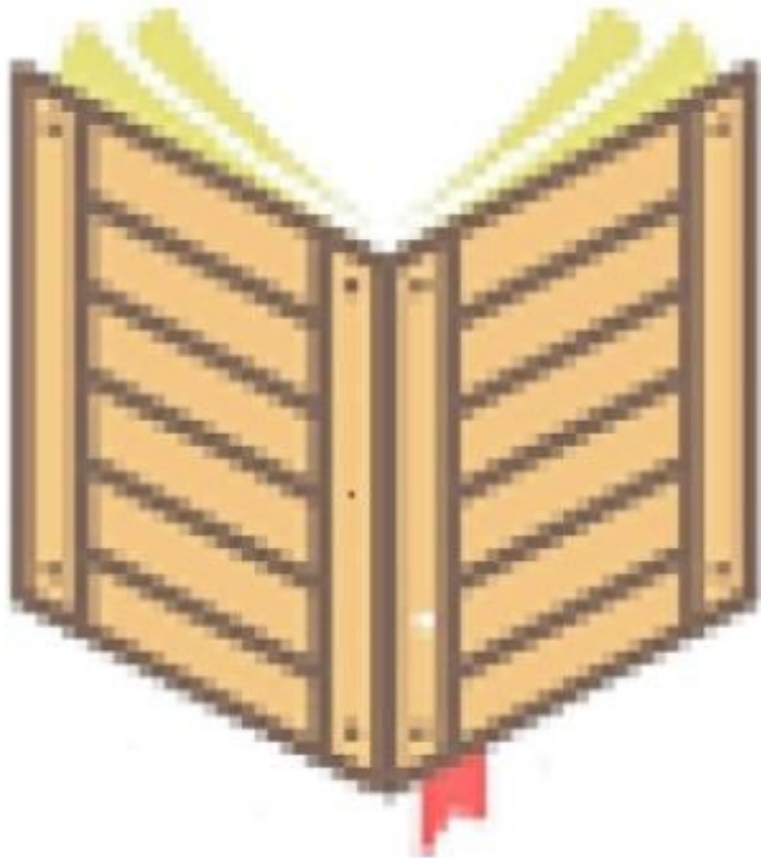
Khwezi: okay

we continued to have a chat and it was fun, I wonder what's that big that's making Nkosie act like this.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 57



NOVELSGURU.COM

KHWEZILOKUSA.

Sandile parks the car right outside my house, I took a deep breath with my eyes closed.

Sandile: you gonna be fine, let's go

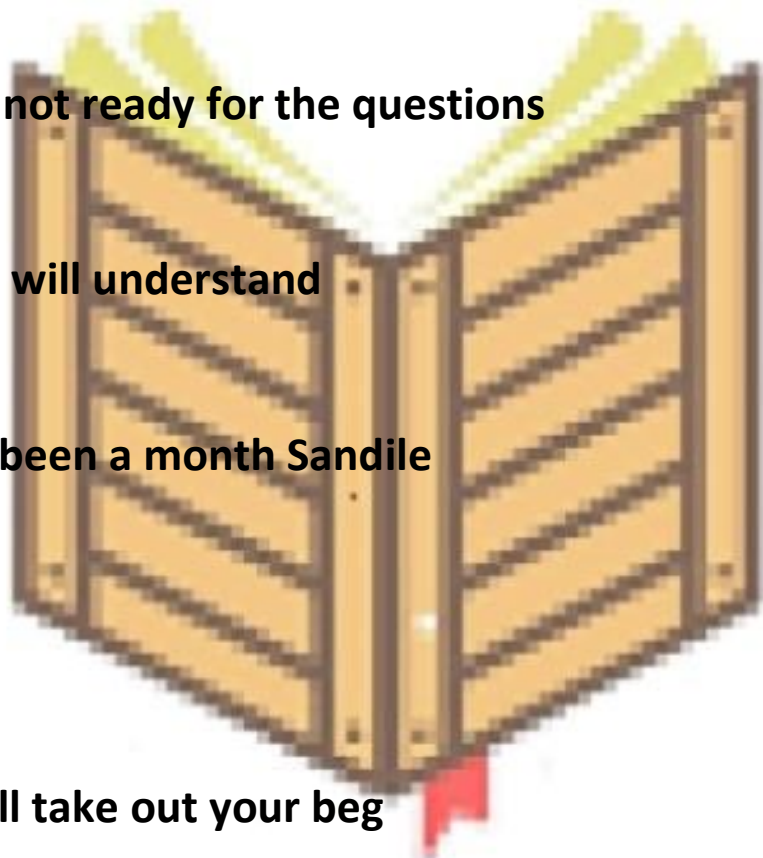
Khwezi: I'm not ready for the questions

Sandile: she will understand

Khwezi: it's been a month Sandile

he sighs.

Ssandile: I will take out your beg



NOVELSGURU.COM

he got out of the car, I could feel tears in my eyes and a huge lump on my throat.

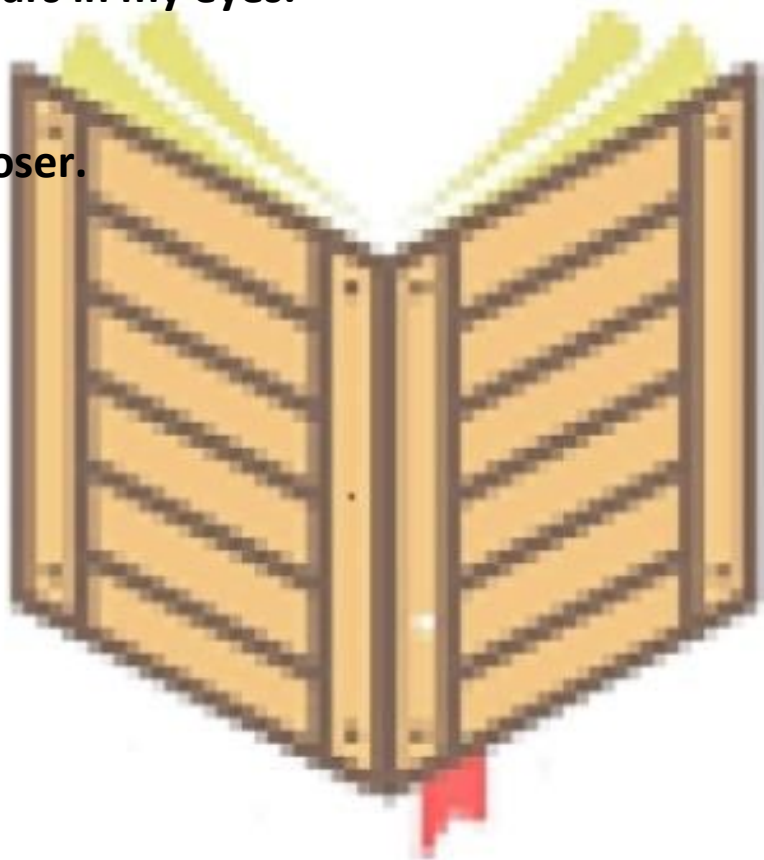
I got out of the car and mom came out of the house, it's dark. maybe she is wondering whose car is that, I mean it's s Mercede.

Mom: ubani lo osesangweni? (who is that at the gate?)

Khwezi: yimina mama (it's me mom)

I say with tears in my eyes.

she came closer.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: Khwezi mtanami is that you? ohh my god my child

she opens the gate and came to give me a hug.

Mom: we were so worried about you, where were you? are you okay?

Khwezi: mama I'm sorry *cries* I'm sorry for not calling you I really did not mean it all, I was just in a very tough position

Mom: I thought something had happened to you baby, I'm glad you are back home

Khwezi: I'm also glad to be alive thanks to God

we pull out of the hug, we both wipe our tears.

Mom: who is this man now?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: he is my friend Sandile

Sandile: sawbona mama

Mom: you friend huh?

Khwezi: trust me mom it's not what you think

Sandile: she is my sister moma nohung more

Mom: ohh I see, come in child



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: I'm kinda running somewhere but my mother would kill me if I said no

Mom: and I would have killed you myself

they both laugh, God I want to cry so loud but I can't let my mother see that I'm in pain.

Mom: you take a seat, I'm sure you must be starving let me dish up for you guys

we took a seat.

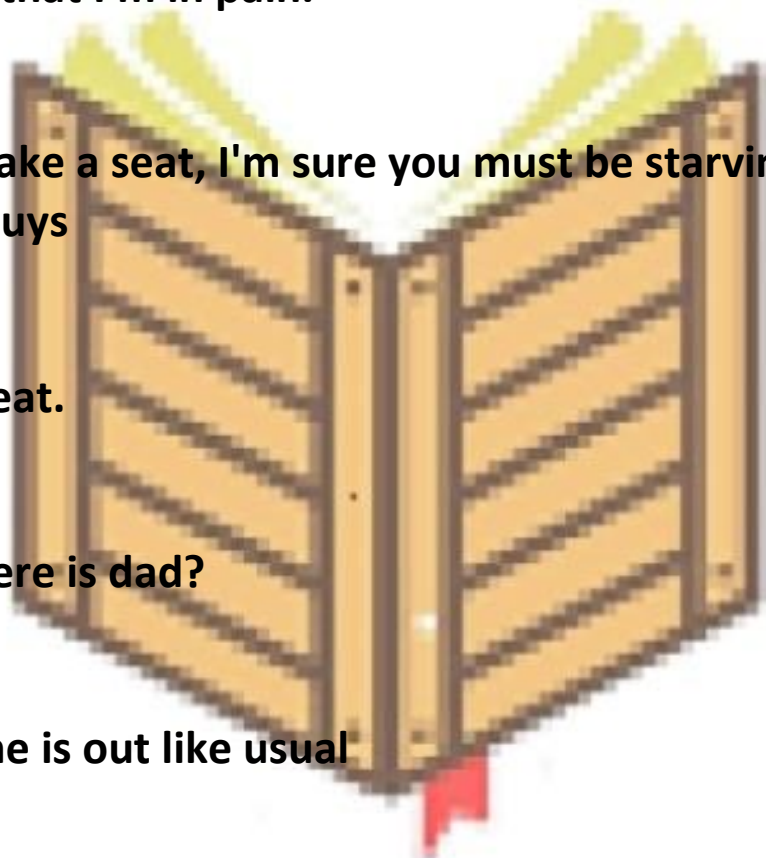
Khwezi: where is dad?

Mom: ohh he is out like usual

Khwezi: ohh okay NOVELSGURU.COM

mom came back with some food and drinks, we ate.

Sandile: this is delicious you cook just like your daughter



Mom: she learned from the best obviously

Sandile: she sure did

I smile as I continued to eat.

I took our plate when we were done, I went to wash them.

I got done and went back to the living room.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile looks at me.

Khwezi: let me walk my friend out mama

**Mom: ohh I even forgot he said he was rushing somewhere,
thank you for being my daughter here**

Sandile: Nkosie did the whole job though

Mom: who is that?

Sandile: my brother

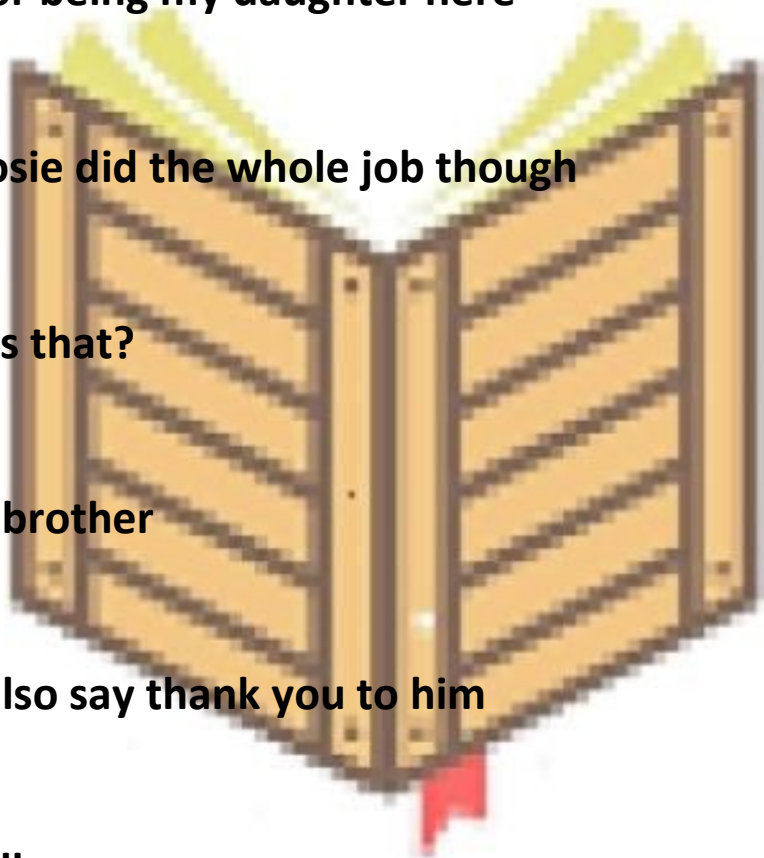
Mom: ohh also say thank you to him

Sandile: I will

NOVELSGURU.COM

we went outside.

Mom: it was nice to meet you my son



Sandile: it was my pleasure

Mom went inside.

Sandile: your mom is very good company

Khwezi: she is, hey can I ask for a small favour?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: yeah sure

Khwezi: don't tell Nkosie where I am

Sandile: trust me I won't

Khwezi: thank you

Sandile: sure

he left, I went back inside, mom was watching her favourite show so I went to my room.

**.
.
.**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 58

NOVELSGURU.COM

NKOSINATHI.

I woke up early in the morning, I did not sleep properly yesterday night I kept tossing for some reason I don't even know.



I went to take a cold shower and I turn of the tap, I'm really not in the mood for anything today.

I just want to get this day over with, maybe I should go to work. that sounds like a great idea to me.

I took a towel and I dried my body, I wore a towel around my lower body and I exit the bathroom.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I walk to my closet and I took out my dark blue suit, I took out everything imma wear. I started to lotion my body, I got done and I got dressed.

I stood in front of the mirror and tied my dark blue tie.

I got done and I put on some cologne, I took my phone and I went downstairs.

everyone was up and they are having breakfast, I went to the fridge and took out a bottle of water.

Mom: so you gonna pass us as if we not visible?

I just look at her and took a sip on my water, I close the bottle and I headed out.

Mom: hey boy wait up...

NOVELSGURU.COM

I stop.

Mom: what is wrong with you now?

I turn and look at her, her facial expression changes.

Mom: you need to sit down and have breakfast

I just stare into her eyes, when I said I wasn't in the mood I ment this.

Sya: come on bro don't be like that, mom is talk to you

Mom: yes I'm talking to you



NOVELSGURU.COM

I look at both of them and I turn to leave, I got inside my car and drove to work.

I arrive and everything was in place, I went to attend my first meeting.

Nkosie: building a new restaurant is a great idea but who is going to take care of the finances?

"we are working on this together so we gonna pay for it together" the man says with a huge smile on his ugly face.

Nkosie: I don't remember signing papers saying we work together, do you guys?

I ask my team and they shake their head.

"but-" he tries to add.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: get the fuck out my building

he stood up after I gave him a death stare, I click my tongue and I went to my office.

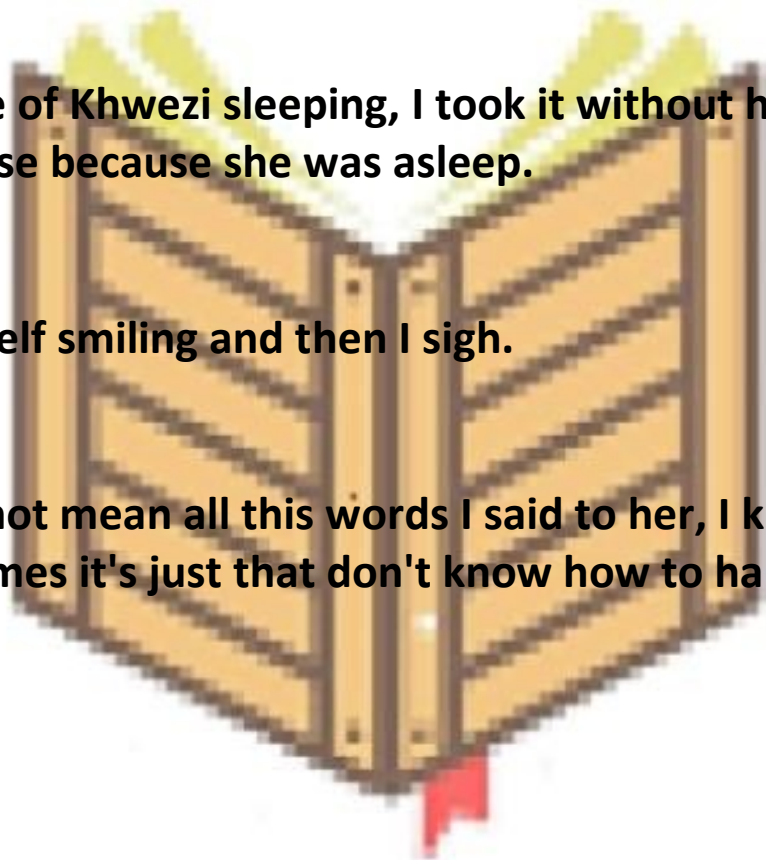
I take off my blazer and I lower my tie, I take a seat and I check the time, it's still early.

the time is really going slowly, I found myself going through my gallery. I'm not a fan of taking pictures but this picture right here looks perfect.

it's a picture of Khwezi sleeping, I took it without her noticing well of course because she was asleep.

I found myself smiling and then I sigh.

I really did not mean all this words I said to her, I know I'm a jerk sometimes it's just that don't know how to handle stuff like this.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I place my phone down and I close my eyes.

Nkosie: fuuuuck!!

I say and I open my eyes.

Nkosie: you can't loose focus now

I got ready for my next meeting.

I got done and it was late, I pack up my stuff and there was a knock on the door, I turned to see who it was only to find Amanda standing at the door.

Amanda: hey daddy

she giggles.

NOVELSGURU.COM

she better daddy her ass out cause I ain't in the mood.

I take my stuff and head out, she stop in feont of me.



Amanda: I miss you

Nkosie: I don't bitch the fuck

Amanda: Nkosie you don't get to talk to me like that

Nkosie: bitch I just did, now get the fuck out



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: you really think this is funny huh?

Nkosie: the only funny thing is you ugly ass, get the fuck out jeez

Amanda: Nkosie you know that I love you and I want us to go work again

I'm not in the mood can't you see that.

Nkosie: listen here okay, I don't love you, I never loved you, I don't see myself loving you it's just all blank so do me and yourself a favour and leave

Amanda: Nko...

I took out my gun and she swallow, i hate repeating myself.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I will use it next time you show up like this

I click my tongue as she walks away.

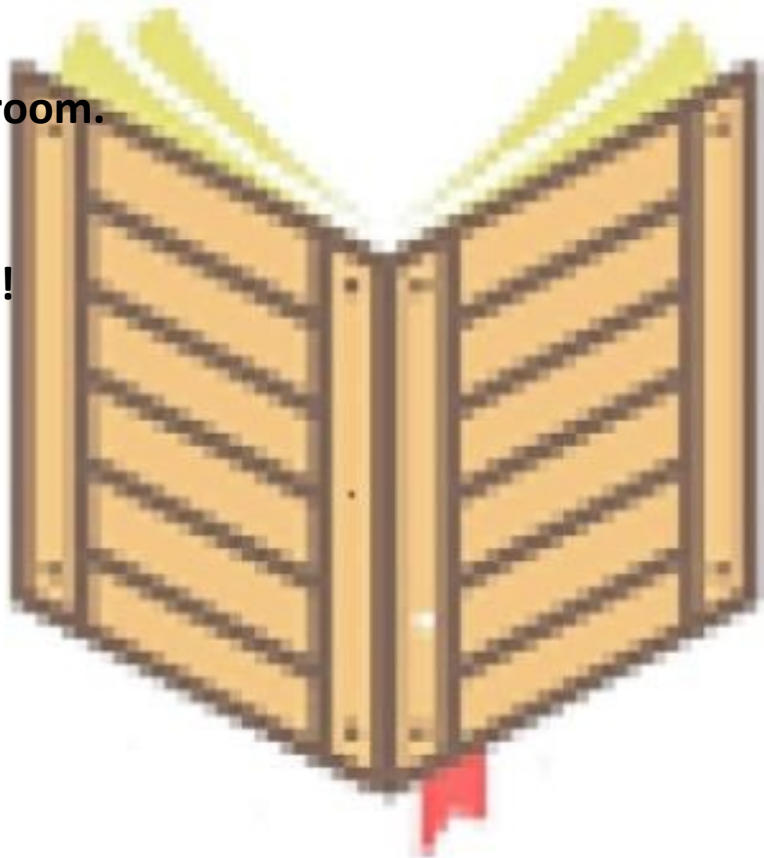


I lock my office and head down to my car, I got inside and drove straight home.

I got there and my brothers are outside having some drinks, I want to join them but I'm not really at the right state to be chilling with anyone now.

I got to my room.

Nkosie: lock!



NOVELSGURU.COM

the door locks and I drop myself on the bed.

I started to think about Khwezi, if she has eaten or if she is safe at all. Sakhile is still loose and anything can happen.

I took out my phone and dialed her number.

I place the phone on my ear and it rang.

"this is Khwezilokusa Ngcobo I really don't check my mail but try your luck I guess"

I drop the call.

I decided to text her since she is online, she blue ticks me.

Nkosie: okay that enough I'm dead

.
. .
.

NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 59

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up early in the morning and I bathed, I'm craving something spicy. I got done and I dried my body, I lotioned it and I wore a pink legging and a black graphic t-shirt.

I went to the kitchen and I'm made breakfast for my family, I dish up and my father walks in.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: Khwezi lami

I smile.

Khwezi: dad

I went to give him a hug, he looks sober.

Dad: where did you disappear to?

Mom: that's what I have been wanting to ask

she says walking in with the world's most serious look, what did I do wrong now?

she set down and she looks at me, I look at my Dad and he nods.

Khwezi: I was kidnapped

Dad: Kidnapped by who?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: Sakhile Ndlovu

Mom: imihlola...

Khwezi: mom I'm telling the truth, he is really crazy mama and he forced himself on me *starts to cry* he used to beat me every day mama

Dad: I never liked that boy anyways, the worst part he is here and he just bought a new car



NOVELSGURU.COM

I felt my feet getting cold.

Khwezi: what do you mean he is here?

Mom: he came back a week ago *sighs* I'm really sorry that you had to go through that all alone, on my if you called me I would have came to your rescue

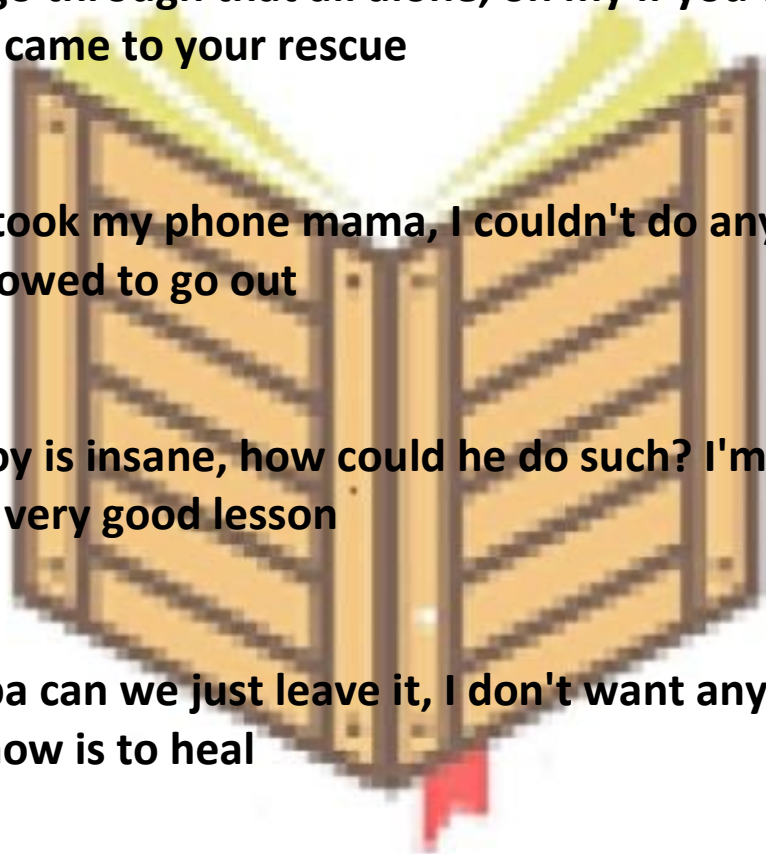
Khwezi: he took my phone mama, I couldn't do anything I was not even allowed to go out

Dad: that boy is insane, how could he do such? I'm going to teach him a very good lesson

Khwezi: Baba can we just leave it, I don't want any drama all I need right now is to heal

Mom: we understand mtanami, I'm glad you okay and don't forget that we love you

Dad: and we will always love you dear



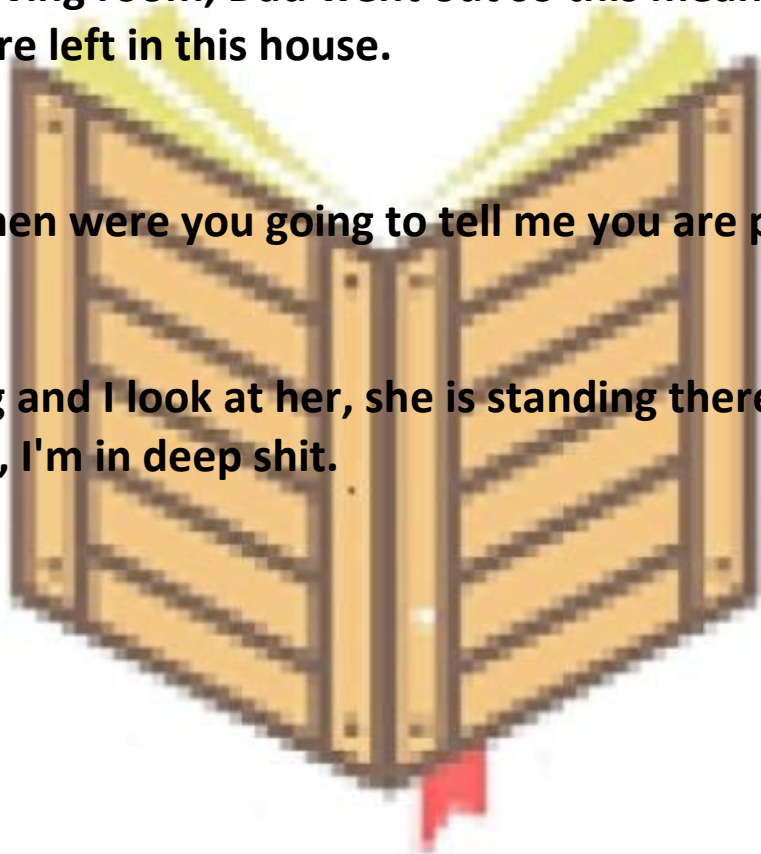
Khwezi: ncoah you guys, I missed y'all so much

I went to give them a hug while crying like a baby I am, we set down and we had breakfast, I did the dishes and I made myself something else to eat.

I set in the living room, Dad went out so this mean it's me and mom who are left in this house.

Mom: so when were you going to tell me you are pregnant?

I stop eating and I look at her, she is standing there with her arms folded, I'm in deep shit.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: pregnant? I'm not pregnant

I laugh nervously.

Mom: so you trying to say I'm seeing things

Khwezi: no no no I did not mean it like that mama, but I'm not pregnant

Mom: did I send you to Jozi to sleep with boys now?

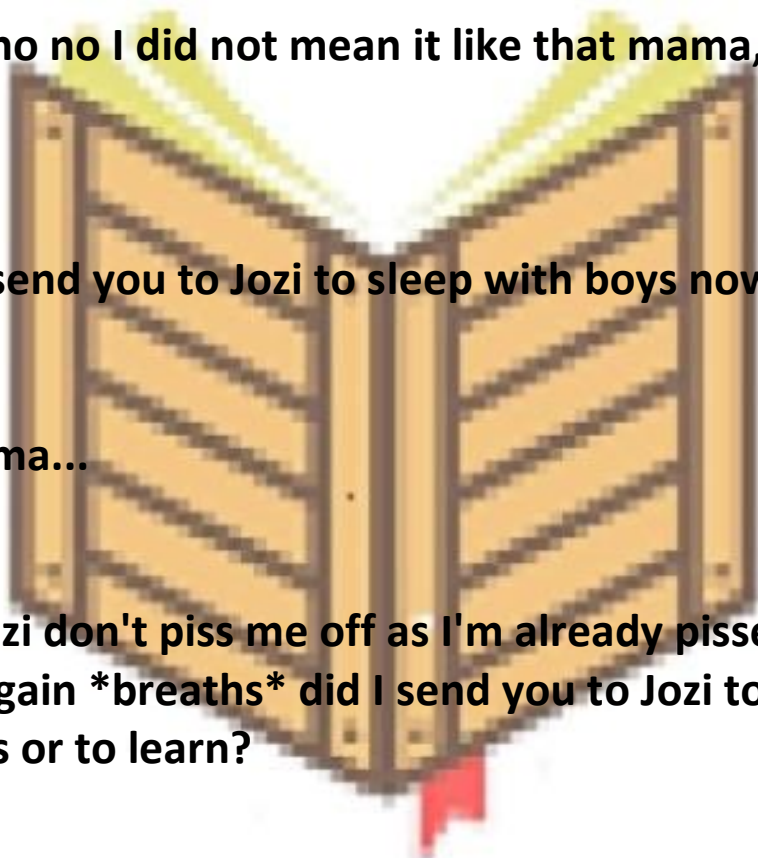
Khwezi: mama...

Mom: Khwezi don't piss me off as I'm already pissed right now, I'm asking again *breaths* did I send you to Jozi to open your legs for boys or to learn?

Khwezi: you sent me to learn mama

I look down.

Mom: then what is this? I know its an innocent soul but baby what is this? is this how you going to thank me for raising you



NOVELSGURU.COM

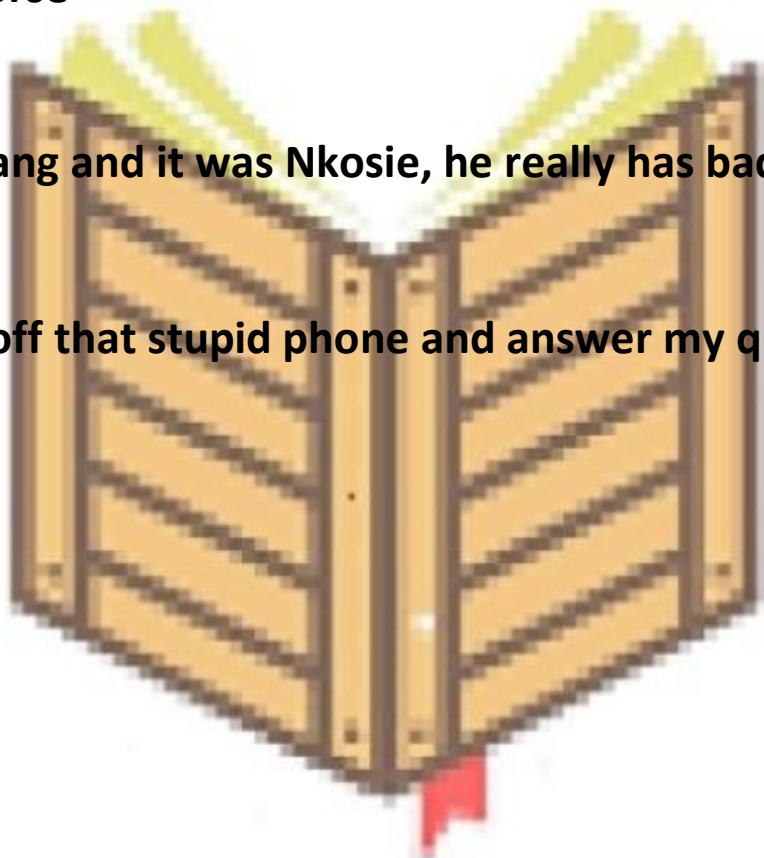
in such a hard way, putting a roof on your head making sure you eat... *sighs* is this the thank you I get Khwezi?

I'm now crying.

Mom: why are you crying? wipe those tears before I make the situation worse

my phone rang and it was Nkosie, he really has bad timing.

Mom: turn off that stupid phone and answer my questions



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I'm sorry mama

I decline the call.

Mom: Khwezi I have worked so hard darling, I have worked so hard to make sure you have a bright future and you now here with that belly making our situation difficult

Khwezi: I'm sorry mom I did not mean for all this to happen

Mom: so you thought sleeping with a boy will give you sweets?

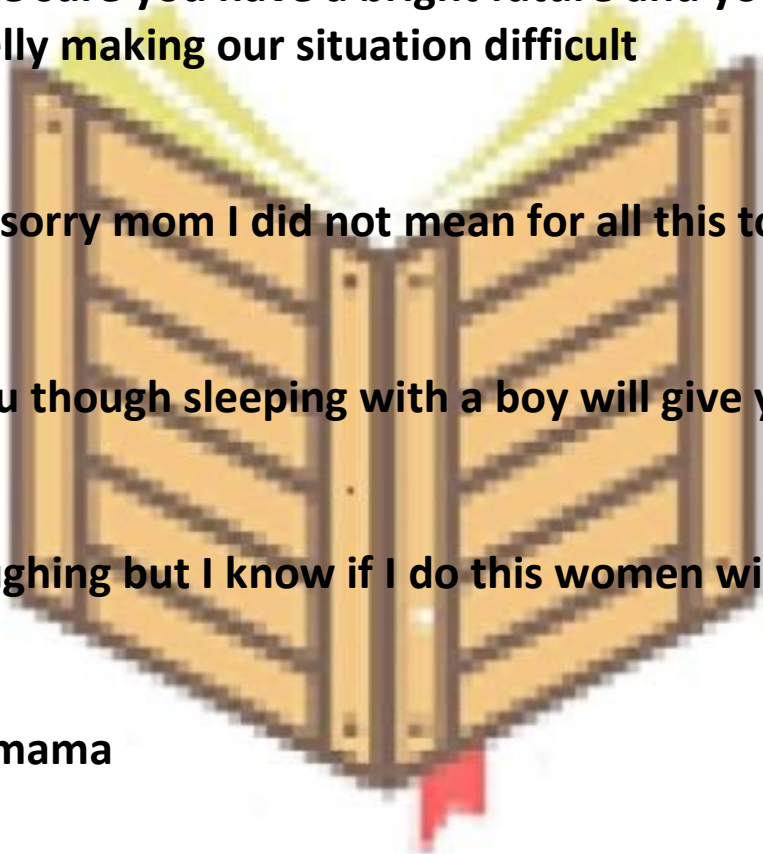
I felt like laughing but I know if I do this women will kill me.

Khwezi: no mama

Mom: who impregnated you?

Khwezi: Nkosie...

I swallow.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: his full name not that nonsense

Khwezi: it's Nkosinathi ma

Mom: so you want me to ask you for his surname also?

Khwezi: his Nkosinathi Mthembu



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: I don't know anyone with such a name

Khwezi: mom I'm really sorry

she sighs.

Mom: what's done is done my child, you gonna take care of that baby and I will help you every step of the way. a baby is a blessing from God which means we should treat the baby with love and care

Khwezi: I'm sorry for disappointing you

Mom: I forgive you baby, does the boy know about the baby?

my phone rang again and it's Nkosie, I decline the call.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: he does know mama

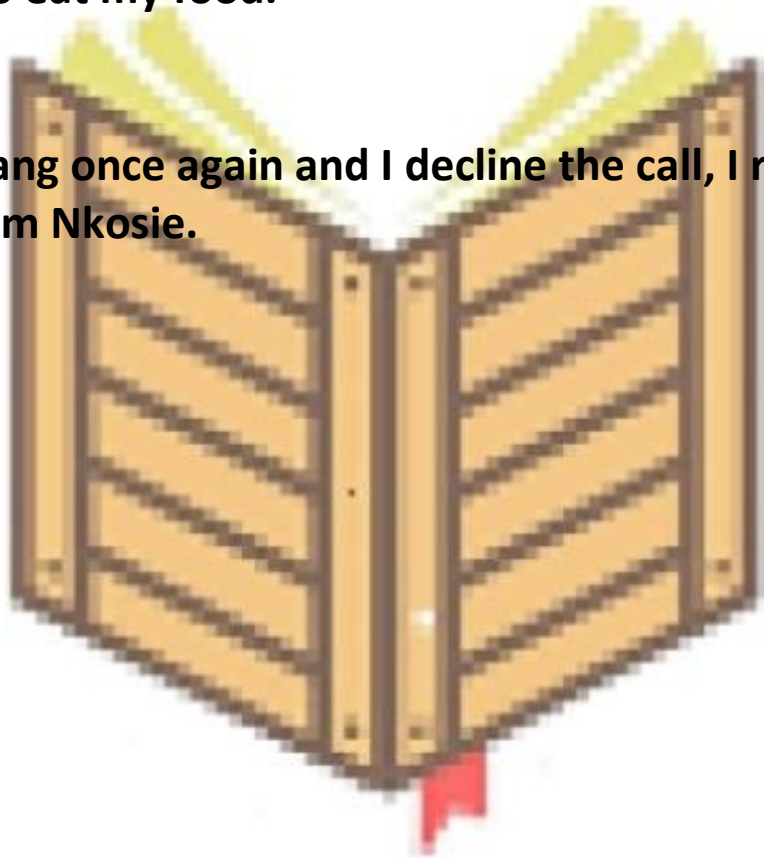
Mom: *sighs* you know I don't want to get involved in any of your drama just make sure you focus on your studies

Khwezi: I will mama I promise

Mom: good

she kisses my forehead and she got up, she left me there and I continued to eat my food.

my phone rang once again and I decline the call, I receive a message from Nkosie.



NOVELSGURU.COM

"please answer your phone" "just this once"

"I'm sorry okay" "please come back"

"what do you want me to do so you can come back" "I'm really really sorry Khwezi just come back"

I read the messages and I turn off my phone, sodlala abafana.

.
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 60

NKOSINATHI.

I'm sitting in my dark room deep in my thoughts, I have been trying to contact Khwezi but she doesn't want to talk to me.

she does not even answer my texts the only thing she does is to read them and that's frustrating.

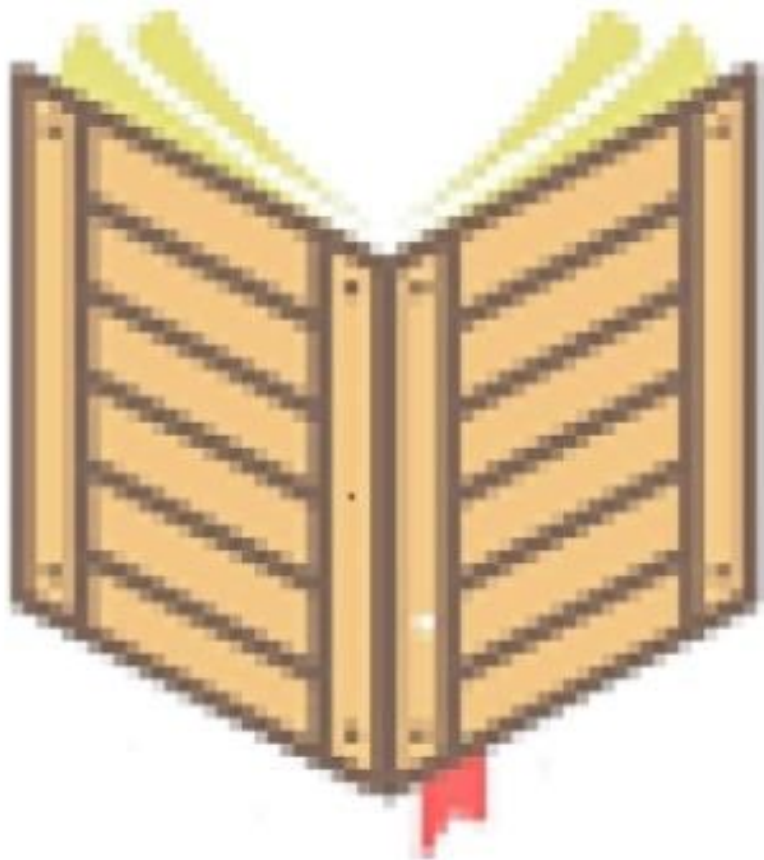
NOVELSGURU.COM

I know I messed up big time but I can't continue like this, the life I'm trying to leave is draining the shit out of me.

all I need right now is her but I messed up everything, I know she would want nothing to do with me even if I could track her

down and go to her place.

My mom walks in, I pour myself another drink.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I thought I said I need some time alone

Mom: I can't handle seeing you like this, you are my son

I remain silent.

Mom: Sandile told me everything

I still don't respond to her.

Mom: did you impregnant Khwezi?

I stood up and faced her.

Nkosie: why can't y'all mind your own goddamn business?

Mom: calm down Nkosie I'm talking to you nicely

Nkosie: I don't want you to talk to me nicely, I dont even want you here just leave

Mom: you should have just told her instead of making shit hard



NOVELS3URU.COM

for yourself

my mother never swears unless she is angry, am I the reason she is angry?

Nkosie: even if I talk to her, nothing will change it will be like I'm ruin her life, wasting her time and I don't want to do that

Mom: it's not wasting time when you with a person you love



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: mom you don't understand...

Mom: trust me I do, just go there and pour your heart out

Nkosie: what if she rejects me? I mean I told her I never wanted to have a baby with her anyways

I slap landed on my face.

Mom: that's for the women race, you never do such to a women

Nkosie: I'm sorry mom

Mom: you apologising to the wrong person

Argh fuck I hate this idea.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom smiles looking at me.

Mom: go get my favourite daughter in law



she walks out.

I took out my laptop, I started to track her phone and she is in KZN just as I thought.

I did my research about her just for my sister's safety but the work is coming in handy.

I grab my clack hoodie, phone and car keys.

I went downstairs and mom was seating with dad in the living room.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I went out and I got inside my car, I drove straight to her house location.

the drive was really long but it was worth it, I park right outside her gate, I can't walk inside the yard just like that.

I decided to take out my phone and try my luck.

the phone rang.

Nkosie: please answer the phone

it went straight to voicemail, I called her again and she immediately answered.

Khwezi: Nkosinathi you are annoying I can't even...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I'm outside

Khwezi: you are what?

she says in a panicked tone.

Nkosie: I'm right outside your house, please come out so we can talk

Khwezi: what the hell? it's 1am Nkosie

Nkosie: I know I just want to make things right

Khwezi: nxiim



NOVELSGURU.COM

she hung up.

I knew she wouldn't want to talk to me, I start my car and as I was loosing hope she walks out of her house with only her night dress on.

I got out of the car.

Khwezi: you came all the way from Jozi?

Nkosie: yes I did

Khwezi: what for?

Nkosie: for you

Khwezi: I really don't have time for this nonsense

she folds her arms.

Nkosie: I'm dying Khwezi



NOVELCOURT.COM

Khwezi: you know what this is a waste of time I'm going back inside

she turns to leave.

Nkosie: I have a heart disease and my doctors say I only have a year left to live, the reason why I have been rude toward you and everybody else is because I thought maybe if I became rude y'all will hate me and maybe won't feel anything when I die



NOVELSGURU.COM

she stops and she turns to look at me.

Nkosie: my family know about this diseases of mine but only my parents know that I only have a year to live...

Khwezi: you kidding right?

this is gonna be harder then I thought.

Nkosie: I'm not kidding, I swear on my mother *sighs* look I just did not want anybody to love me cause you know how all this goes when the person you love dies, y'all becomes sad and I don't want any of y'all to be sad that why I became that jerk you did not like

she has tears in her eyes and she laughs a little.

Khwezi: and you are a jerk

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: my feelings for you though fought against all this shit I have been planning to do, you gave me another reason to want to live, you make me so happy that I find myself laughing alone at night thinking of your beautiful face

Khwezi: Nkosie!!

she wipes her tears and her lower lip trembles.

Nkosie: I made you hate me because I did not want to let you in cause at the end of all this I'm gonna leave and you will be left alone, I though all this making you hate me was gonna work out koda inhliziyo yamii ilokhu ifuna wena Mapholoba (my heart keeps wanting you)

She attacks me with a kiss, I pull her closer and I held on her so tight I did not want to let go.



NOVELSGURU.COM

she pulls out from the kiss and I groan.

Khwezi: nami Mvelase inhliziyo yamii ifuna wena, I have been longing for you since a very long time and I kept fooling myself thinking you weren't the one

Nkosie: I can't promise you a happy ending or a forever lasting relationship but I can promise you that I will always love you dead or alive

Khwezi: let's not think about the negative things okay *smiles* I just love you so much

Nkosie: I'm sorry for the way I treated you

Khwezi: it's all forgiven, Ngyakthanda Mnis'wemvula

Nkosie: Ngyakthanda namii Mapholoba

NOVELSGURU.COM

we shared a long passionate kiss.

we both pull out from the kiss breathing heavily while looking into each other's eyes.

Khwezi: my mom must be wondering whose car is parked outside

Nkosie: she will have to wonder more cause I'm taking you with me

Khwezi: it's late Nkosie

Nkosie: I'm not leaving without you

Khwezi: Nkosie...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: the bed is going to be cold without you

she giggles.

Khwezi: fine I will go get my stuff

Nkosie: I will wait for you

Khwezi: why don't you come inside?

Nkosie: I need to do right first

she smiles cause she knew what I meant, I got inside my car as she went inside to get her things, I'm hard as fuck right now but imma be good.

•
•
•

FOREVA YENA



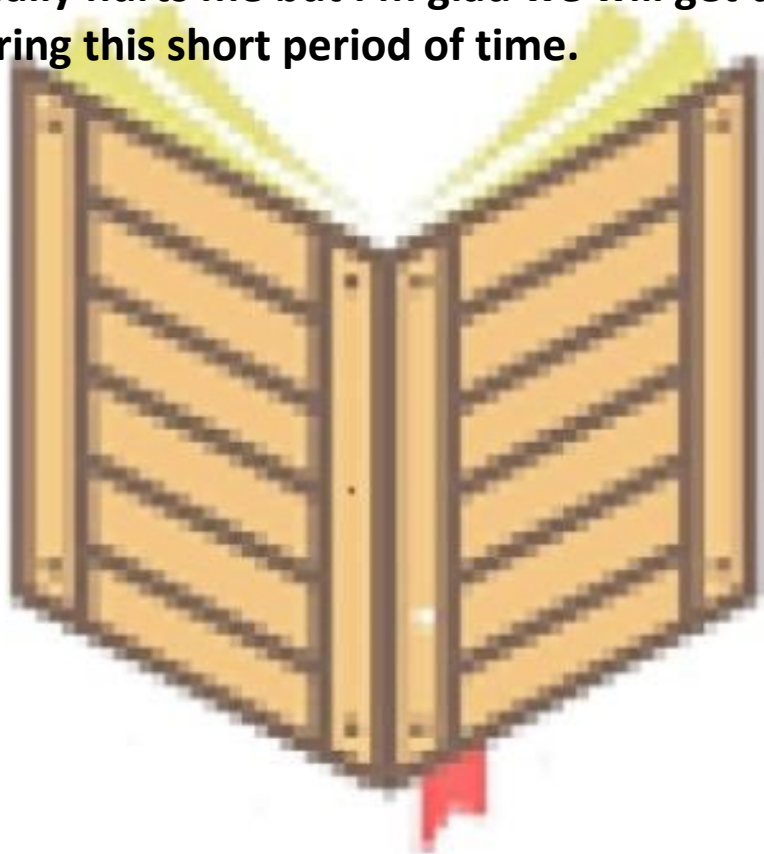
NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 61

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I told my mother that I had to leave and she understood, after packing my begs I said my goodbyes and I went outside.

I got inside the car and I look at Nkosie, the fact that he doesn't have long really hurts me but I'm glad we will get to spend time together during this short period of time.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you ready?

khwezi: yes I am ready

he smiled and starts the car.

Nkosie: your mother isn't angry with me right?

Khwezi: she is a little

he laughs and he starts driving, he held my hand while the other hand was in the steering wheel.

Khwezi: thank you for opening up to me

Nkosie: I had to do it either ways cause I don't want to loose you

NOVELSGURU.COM

I just got emotional, but I'm going to loose him and that hurts.

I felt sleepy and I lowered the seat, I slept and he had his hand on my thigh, he was brushing it slowly and the feeling was amazing.

We arrive in Joburg and we went to get something to eat, we then drove to his house.

we drove inside the yard and it was now morning, I got out of the car and he came out with my bags.

Nkosie: any regrets?

Khwezi: why would I have any? I'm with you ain't I? so there's no regret in that



NOVELSGURU.COM

I peck him on the lips.

we got inside and it was quite, I guess everyone is asleep, we went upstairs and I threw myself on the bed.

Khwezi: I need to shower before I sleep

I said getting off the bed, he pulls me closer to him and he kisses me passionately.

he grabs my ass and I pull out from the kiss, I bite my lower lip while looking at him in the eyes.

Khwezi: I'm going to shower remember?

he keeps on grabbing my ass, he kisses me hungry and I pull out from the kiss, he groans with his head on my shoulder.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he lets go of me and he sighs sitting on the bed, I couldn't help but notice his boner. I went to the bathroom, I stripped naked and I turn on the shower taps.

I got inside the shower and the warm water felt really good on my skin.

Nkosie walks in the bathroom and he starts undressing, he hard dick springs out and damn why does it look like it's getting bigger everyday.

Nkosie: you bathing without me?

Khwezi: I did not know you wanted to bathe

Nkosie: I don't...I just want to see your beautiful body



NOVELSGURU.COM

I chuckles and rolls my eyes.

mind you he is standing behind me and I can feel his boner, he places his hands on my belly, I bite my lower lip.

I mean I can feel his hard manhood.

Nkosie: you gonna be a good mother

Khwezi: I have never had a child before so how do you know I'm gonna be a good mother?

Nkosie: the way you take care of everyone around you, you are welcoming and very caring

I smile.

Nkosie: and of course you a rare

Khwezi: mmmh

I bite my lower as I felt his hands on my boobs, Nkosie really loves sex, he is making me horny.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: we are here to bathe remember?

Nkosie: so you gonna deny me from having what's mine

Khwezi: Nkosie!

Nkosie: uyaphika yini wena ukuthi ungowami (are you denying that you are mine)



NOVELSGURU.COM

he kisses my neck while squeezing my boobs.

Khwezi: angiphiki (I'm not denying)

I turn around and I look at him in the eyes, he smirks and I roll my eyes.

he kisses my nose and I giggle.

he lifts me up against the wall, the warm water is still pouring on us, I kiss him hungrily and he responds back.

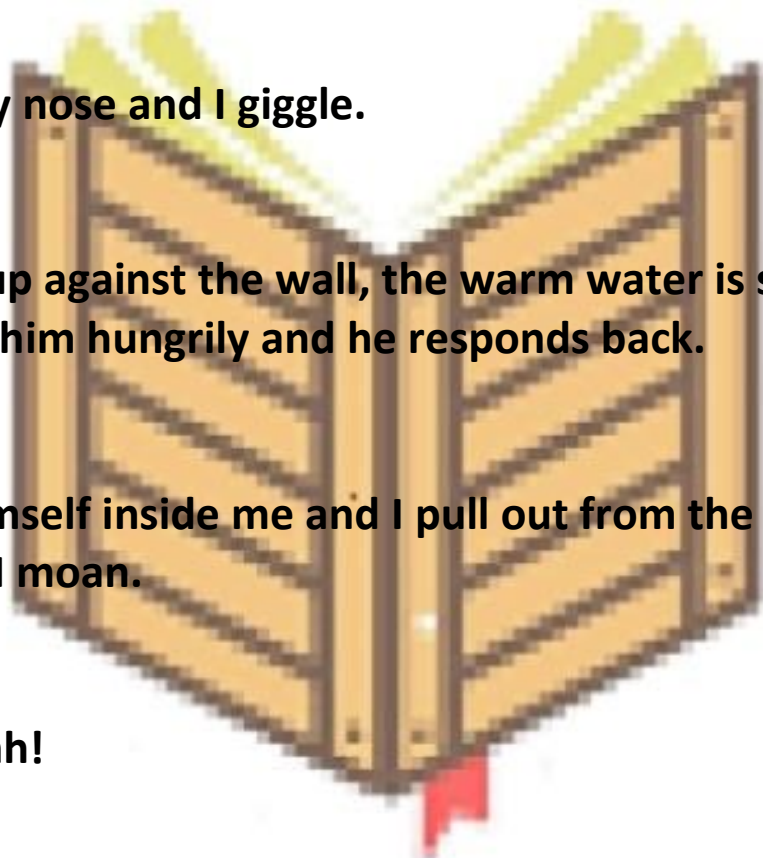
he slides himself inside me and I pull out from the kiss, he groans and I moan.

Khwezi: ahhh!

I moan grabbing his wet hair while he increases the phase, I lock him in with my legs around him.

Khwezi: ahhh Nkosie

I bite my lower lip, I could feel my whole body vibrating as he



NOVELSGURU.COM

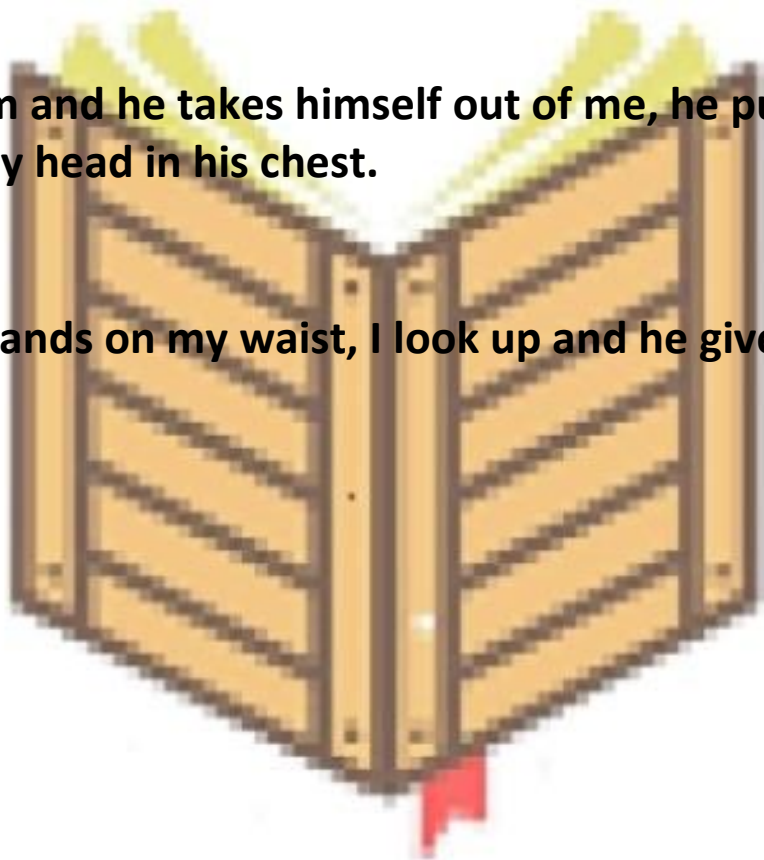
thrusts in deeper and I curle my toes.

Khwezi: fuck!!

I moan looking up and the water pours on my face, I could feel some pressure on my body, my legs got weak.

we both cum and he takes himself out of me, he puts me down and place my head in his chest.

he had his hands on my waist, I look up and he gives me a kiss.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I love you

Nkosie: I love you more

we took a bath and then we got done, we dried our bodies and we went to lotion them.

I decided to wear a tight long powder blue dress, if you have noticed blue is my favourite colour.

Nkosie wore a white vest and some black sweat pants, we went downstairs since I was hungry and he did not want me to alone.

more like he did not like the fact that I would be out of his sight.

I arrive and I start preparing breakfast for everyone, he set there watching me make some food.

everyone started to come downstairs.

Mrs M: Khwezi baby you are back

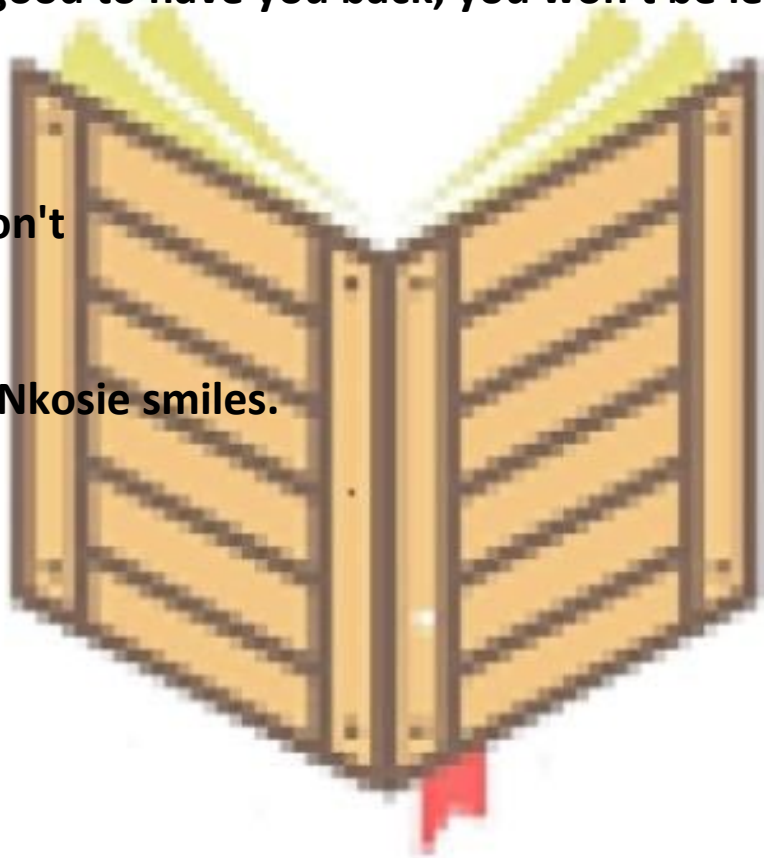
she smiles.

Khwezi: yes I am

Mrs M: it's good to have you back, you won't be leaving again right?

Khwezi: I won't

I giggle and Nkosie smiles.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: we really missed your cooking

Khwezi: just say you missed me

Nkosie: only I'm allowed to miss you

I smirk.

Sya: you not going to mess up this time Nkosie?

Nkosie: I won't mess up anything trust me

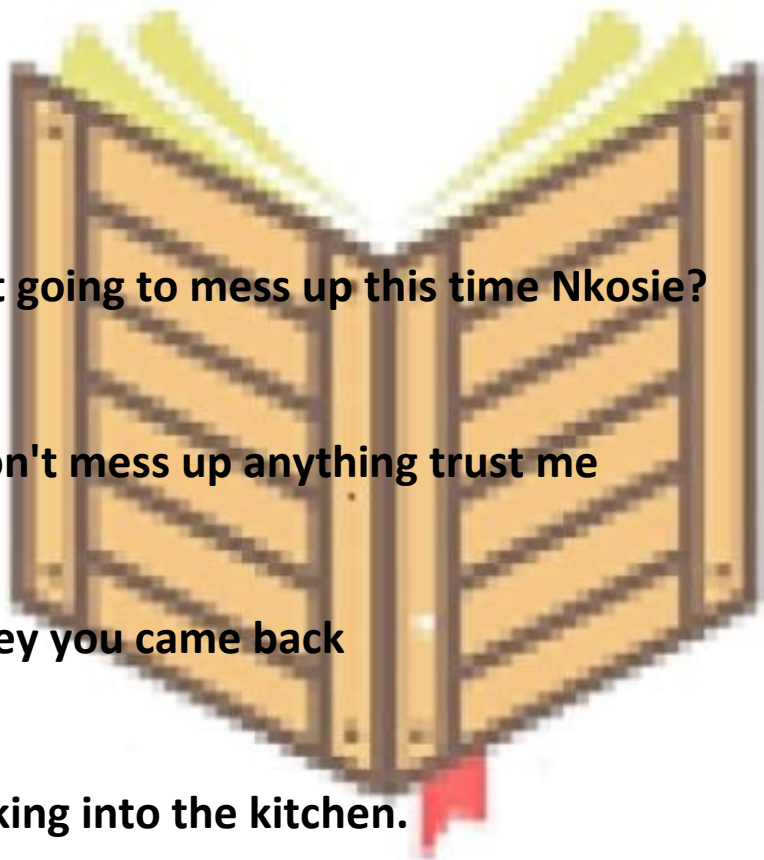
Sandile: wifey you came back

he says walking into the kitchen.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: yes I am back, please help me set the table

Sandile: sure



they took the food that was ready to the table, I took the rest with the help from Nkosie.

We set down and Zizi came downstairs, Nkosie looks at me and I shake my head.

Zizi: good morning everyone

she says and they responds, I didn't.



NOVELSGURU.COM

she set down opposite me.

we prayed then we had breakfast.

Nkosie: so we have something to tell you guys

Khwezi: yes we do

we both smile.

Mr M: spill the beans already

Us: we are pregnant

Sandile: I knew about that

Khwezi: don't spoil the fun

we laugh.

Nkanyezi: congratulations



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: thank you

Sya: so we going to be uncle's?

Mr M: and I'm going to be a grandfather?

Sandile: and Nkosie will be a father? wow that's huge



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: what you trying to say about me bro?

Sandile: nothing I was just saying

Nkosie and Sandile laugh.

Zizi: congratulations prettyface

she smiles and the smile fades when I don't return it.

Zizi: am I still allowed to call you that?

Khwezi: no but thank you

everyone noticed the tension so Mrs M cleared her throat.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs M: this is a very good thing for our family and the both of you

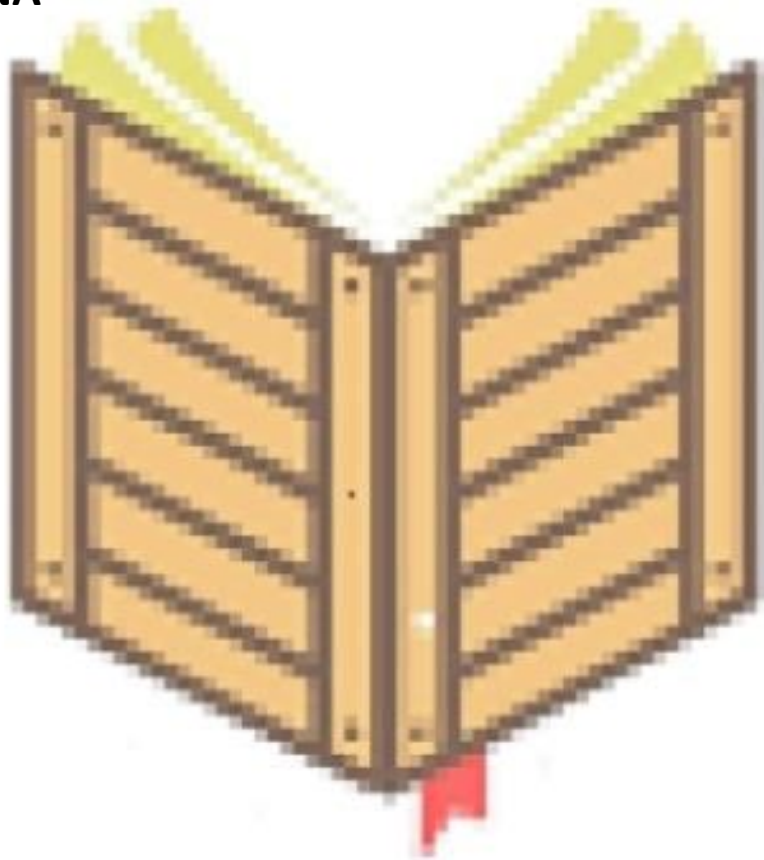
Mr M: it sure is

Nkanyezi: so you two are official?

Me and Nkosie smile, they start cheering.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 62

ZIZIPHO.

I woke up early in the morning and I did my morning routine and I went to the kitchen to make myself something to eat.

y'all must be hating after what happened between me and Khwezi, honestly it was what I did to her.

Lindani and I got close for the past few weeks when she was kidnapped, I know I shouldn't have messed around with her ex.

but it all happened unexpectedly, he was always there for me and very supportive. he didn't judge me when everyone was busy judging me about the video that got leaked.

I know for a fact I didn't talk properly with Khwezi but I will fix things with her, she is my friend and I love her.

after finishing with my food, I wash the bowl I was using and I wipe my hand with the kitchen cloth.

the driver notifies me that he is outside, I grab my bag and I

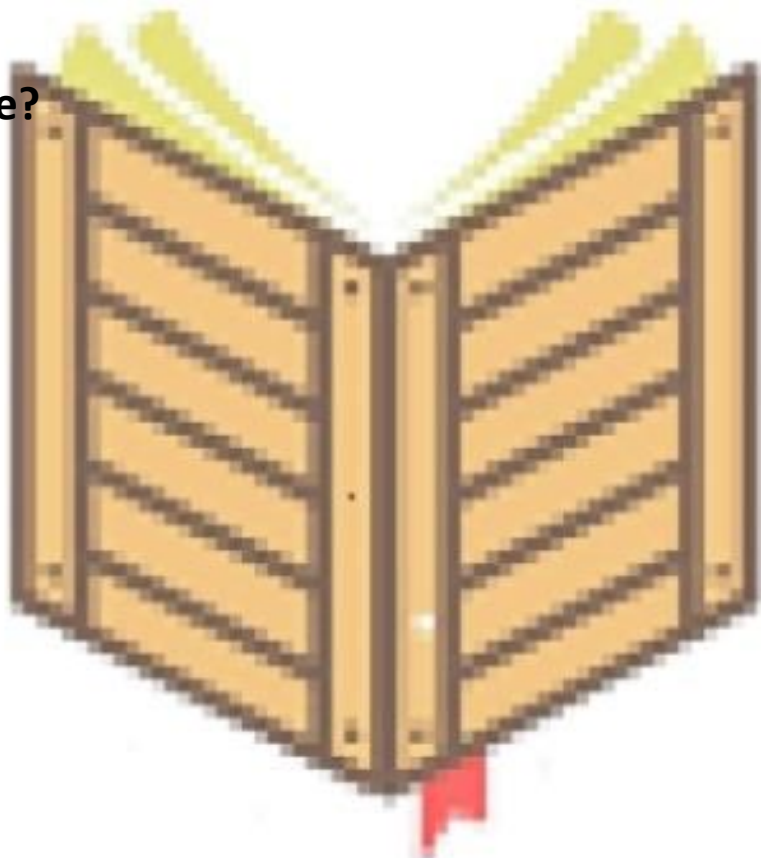
head out.

-
-
-

. NKOSINATHI.

we just woke up and she is laying in my chest while she was busy moving her little fingers on my chest.

Nkosie: babe?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I really need to get used to you calling me that

she looks up at me with a smile on her face.

Khwezi: yes you were saying

Nkosie: can you move in with me

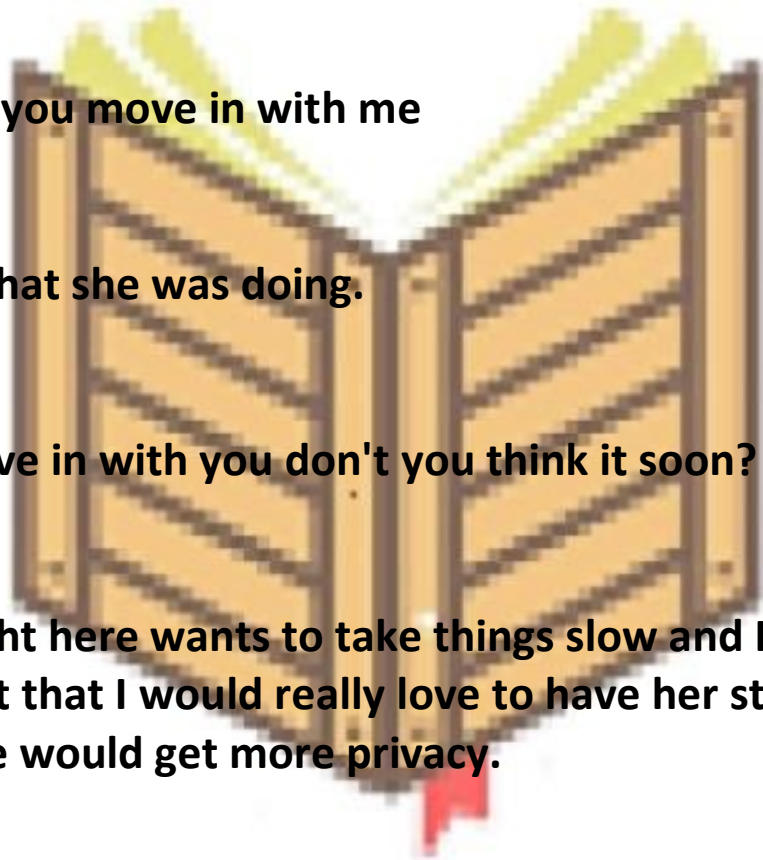
she stops what she was doing.

Khwezi: move in with you don't you think it soon?

my baby right here wants to take things slow and I understand that, it's just that I would really love to have her stay with me that way we would get more privacy.

Nkosie: I know its soon baby but I don't usually stay at my parents house for long

Khwezi: but it's nice here



NOVELSOURU.COM

Nkosie: you have only went once to my house

Khwezi: so you want me to go stay with you where you have been sleeping with your hoes

she's really going out of the topic right now, I don't know why she is bring this up.

Nkosie: what makes you bring that up now

Khwezi: I don't know but it just came up



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: we talking nicely here no need to throw rocks at me

Khwezi: it was just a question

Nkosie: you don't get to ask me such stupid questions, I know I have slept with a lot of women and trust me I have...

Khwezi: ohh tell me about it

she set up straight and folds her arms, she rolls her eyes.

Nkosie: but that was before you ain't it, I know I have a lot of bad habits I have to quite but baby don't be bring such shit up

Khwezi: well I'm sorry

I look at her, that's not an apology.

Khwezi: I'm sorry, I don't know what got into me

Nkosie: come here

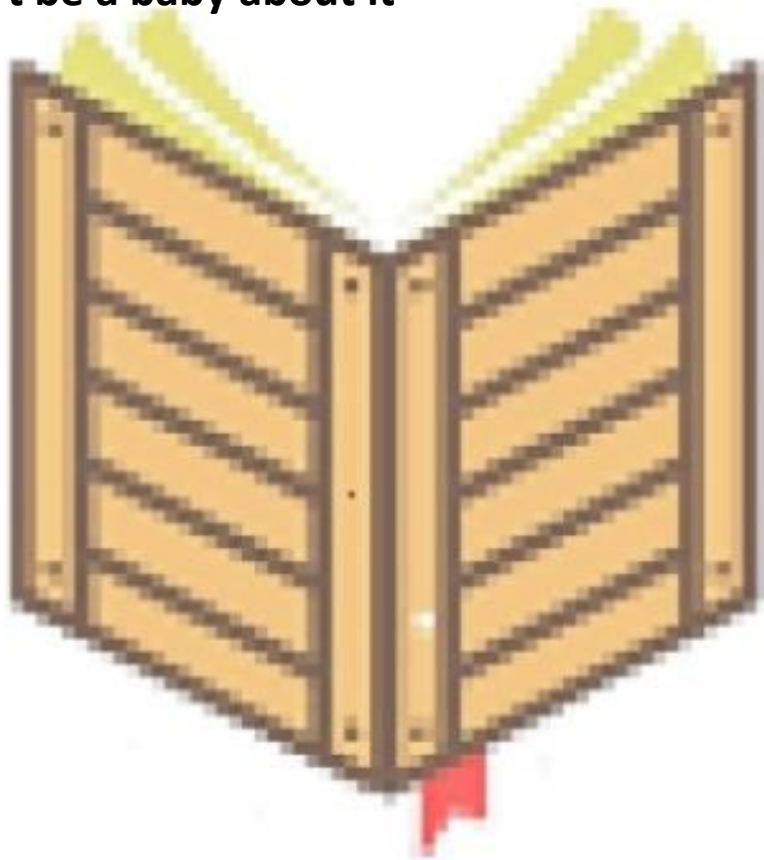


NOVELSGURU.COM

she pouts looking at me.

I laugh.

Nkosie: don't be a baby about it



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: mxm

she got off the bed and I laugh following her, I held her hand stopping her.

Nkosie: where you going we still talking

Khwezi: I need to take a shower

she isn't even looking at me, I chuckle, she is the cutest.

Nkosie: Mapholoba

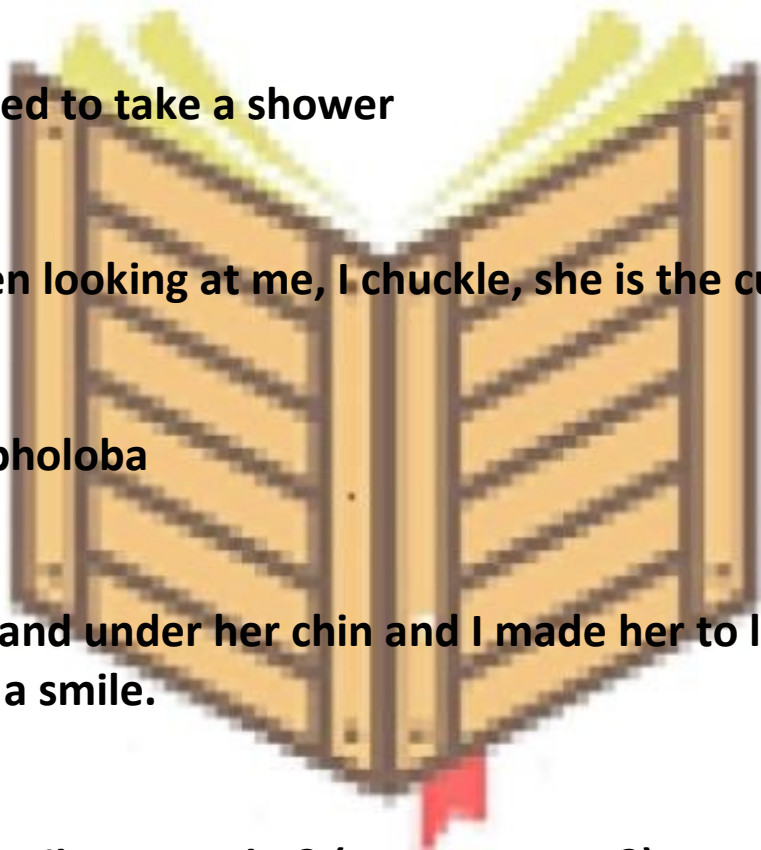
I place my hand under her chin and I made her to look at me, I swear I saw a smile.

Nkosie: ukwatile mawusho? (are you angry?)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: cha angikwatanga

she looks the other direction.



Nkosie: ngibuka phela (look at me)

she looks at me and I place my hands on her waist, I peck her on lips multiple times and she giggles.

Nkosie: now will you in with me?

Khwezi: I will think about it

she smirks, this women over here is sturbon as hell and really hard to convince.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I take her lips onto mine and I place my hands on her ass, she held my neck and she stands on her toes.

after a while she pulls out from the kiss and looks at me in the eyes, I lick my lips and I peck her on the lips, I pulled her buttom lips while pulling out from the kiss.

Nkosie: you done thinking?

Khwezi: ohh I was suppose to think during that steamy kiss I didn't know

she giggles.

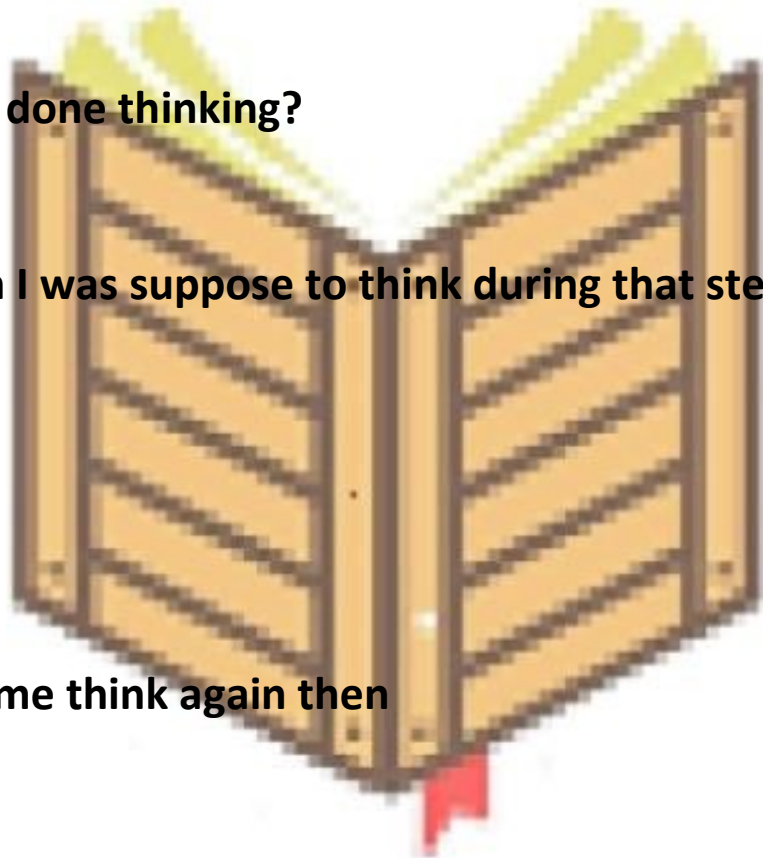
Khwezi: let me think again then

I just laugh.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: just give me the damn answer

Khwezi: don't be rude about it



Nkosie: I'm not

she places her hands on my chest.

Khwezi: I will move in with you

Nkosie: that's what I wanted to here



NOVELSGURU.COM

she shakes her head and goes to the bathroom to take a shower, I took my phone and checked my WhatsApp.

I notice my battery is low, I plug my phone on the charger and after a few minutes she got out.

Khwezi: Nkosie can you take my stuff at Zizi's apartment

Nkosie: why can't you do that yourself?

I ask focused on her wet thighs, she didn't dry her body.

Khwezi: because I got some things I need to do

Nkosie: why can't you just sit down and talk with Zizi? for sure you can come up with something

Khwezi: I do not want to talk to her

Nkosie: why is that? she slept with your ex that I understand but why you so hurt I mean you don't have feelings for him no more



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: yes I don't but she broke girl code

Nkosie: well fix it up cause I ain't like this shit that happening

Khwezi: I ain't fixing nothing

Nkosie: just listen to me, it's for the best

Khwezi: no you listen to me, I DON'T WANT TO TALK TO HER!!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: y'all girls like drama, I'm going to shower

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 63

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I got done making the bed and I set down, I got busy on my phone and Nkosie got out of the bathroom.

he lotioned his body and I kept on staring at his manhood, he got done and he went to get dressed.

he wore a white plain hoodie and a black bomber jacket (basketball jacket), he wore black jeans and a pair of black and white Jordan.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he took his car keys and phone.

Nkosie: let's go

Khwezi: but Nkosie...

Nkosie: eyy don't fuck with me, I said let's go

I don't get why he is being like this, I told him clearly I don't want to go to that apartment.

we went downstairs and greeted everyone, we went out, he opens the door for me and I got inside.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he went to his side and got in, he starts the car.

Khwezi: I don't get why you want me to go to that place

he remains silent, I could see that he I pissed.

I stare outside the window while we drove to the apartment,
he places his hand on my thigh and I remove it.

Nkosie: Khwezi...

he looks at me and I look outside the window.

Khwezi: focus on the road

I said in a low tone, I wanted to cry so bad, I don't want to see
her she betrayed me and that I won't tolerate.

I might sound childish but I ain't letting a men get in between
us she is the one who let a men get between us now she has to
deal with it.



he parks outside the apartment and I notice Lindani's car, I wipe my tears, yes I was crying.

Nkosie: baby listen...

Khwezi: no!!

I shut him up and got out slanging the door, why does it seem like he wants to control me? I mean yes Zizi is his sister and we were friends now we not.



NOVELSGURU.COM

why is being controlling about this whole situation.

I went inside and I knocked on the door.

"I will get it babe" Zizi shouts, I chuckle.

she opens the door and is shocked to see me.

Zizi: Khwezi *smiles*

Khwezi: I just came to get my things

Zizi: are you moving out?

she moves out of the way and I did not answer her, I got inside the apartment.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani is seated in the living room shirtless.

Khwezi: hii Lindani

Lindani: hey, how are you?

I did not answer that either, I just came here to get my stuff.

I started to pack, Zizi walks in.

Zizi: Khwezi I'm so sorry about this whole thing



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: okay

I said and continued to pack my stuff.

Zizi: I really did not mean for all this to happen, I was sad and dealing with a lot since my video having sex with this white guy got leaked

Khwezi: okay

I wipe my tears and continued to pack.

Zizi: talk to me prettyface

Khwezi: I'm not prettyface anymore!!

I shout, she gasps, I didn't know I could shout like that.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you know how much pain I endured at that time trying to protect you so that video doesn't get leaked, he was beating me up Zizi

she had tears in her eyes.



Zizi: I'm sorry...

Khwezi: fuck your sorry Zizi, I know this is all my fault and I probably ruined your life but all this is you just being unfare, you can't be having sex with my ex

Zizi: I know I broke the girls code but I love him

Khwezi: you love him? babazanii!! call the devil and he enter



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani walks in.

Lindani: baby are you okay?

Zizi: I'm fine I just need a few more minutes

Khwezi: nah you can have this apartment all to yourselves

I close the suitcase and I drag it to the door.

Khwezi: and get the fuck out of my way

I say furiously looking into his eyes.

he moves and I walks out, Nkosie is standing there with his hands in his pockets.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I drag the suit case out, I'm waking so fast and my heart is beating really fast.

my choking on my own tears and I could feel his steps behind

me, I stood in front of the car and impatiently wait for him to unlock the car.

Nkosie: Khwezi?

I didn't not answer him, I really don't want to talk right now.

he takes the suitcase from my hand and he unlocks the car, I got inside the car I tap my fingers on my lap while the tears stream down.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I took slow breaths as I found it hard to breath, I mean Lindani was the first guy who made me feel special.

I know Nkosie was there but at that time he had his ups and downs and was being an ass. Lindani treated me good and I loved him, I feel betrayed right now.

I know we broke up and I no longer have feels for him that's a fact but for Zizi to go for my ex, that's uncalled for.

I place my hand on my chest, I can't breath.

Nkosie got inside the car and saw I was struggling to breath.

Nkosie: Khwezi...hey...hey take slow deep breaths

he says holding my hand, I literly can't breath.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: look at me, I'm here okay and I love you just breath baby

I did as he said and I got better, he gave me a hug.

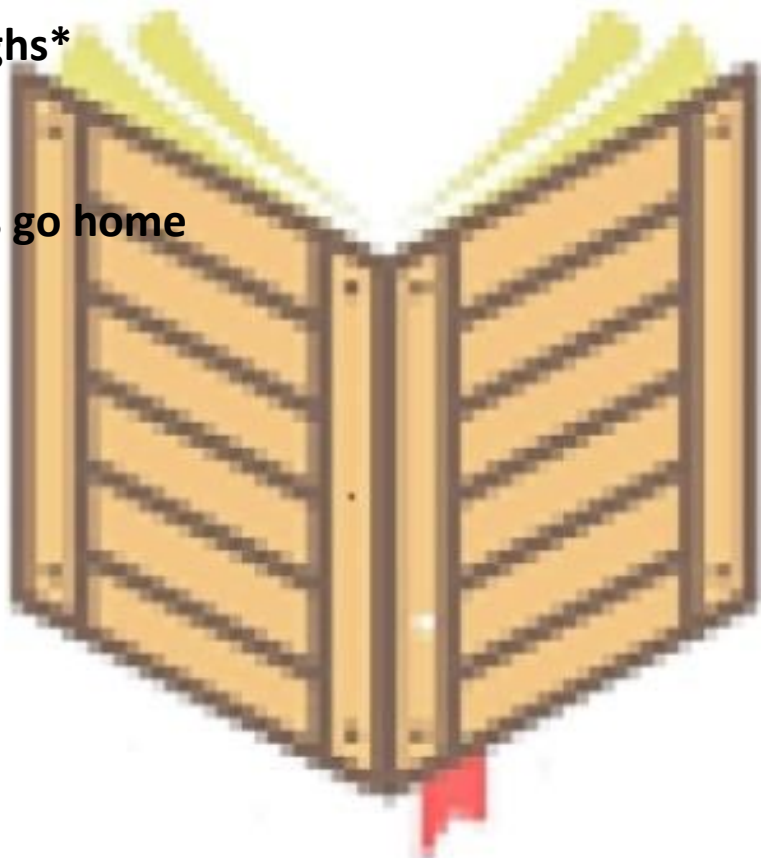
Nkosie: you scared me

Khwezi: I'm sorry I don't know what happened

Nkosie: you were having a panic attach

Khwezi: *sighs*

Nkosie: let's go home



NOVELSGURU.COM

he kisses my cheek, I lay back my seat as he starts the car, the drive was long and I ended up sleeping.

we got to his house and he picks me up in bridal style, he carried me inside, he took me to his room.

Nkosie: take some rest okay

he says when I opened my eyes, I slowly nod and he kisses my forehead.

.
. .
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 64

NKOSINATHI.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi is fast asleep, I went to my study and I made a call.

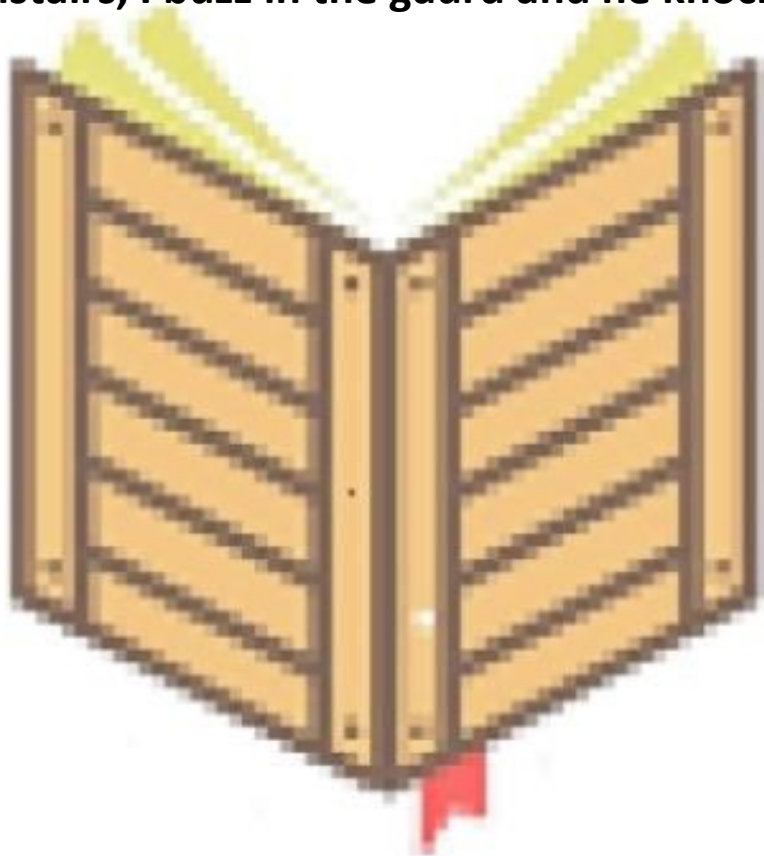
the person answers.



Nkosie: get a gaurd to come at my place now "fede fede bhoza (sharp boss)"

I disconnect the call, while I wait for the guard I went to change into all I'm black, I went back to my study and took out my gun.

I went downstairs, I buzz in the gaurd and he knock.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: gaurd my wife for me, I need to take care of some business

Him: yes boss

Nkosie: if anything happens to her while I'm gone I'm gonna skin you alive

Him: nothing will happen boss

Nkosie: good

I took my car keys and I drove to a secrete location only me, my brothers and dad know off. I could see my brothers cars and my father's.

I park my car outside and I went inside.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: finally you decided to join us

I didn't pay attention to him I just set down.

Dad: since we are all here I got a very huge job I want y'all to do

for me

Ntando: we listening

Dad: we need 200×5kg bags and we need to ship 50 girls

yes we are involved in human trafficking, I don't really care about who we trafficking, I don't care about anyone tears plus we get 500k for each girl.

there's a lot of other crazy business we do.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: sorry to interrupt you father but two hundred which are five kilograms, that's a lot

Sandile: not to mention the 50 girls, that's a huge number

Ntando: the last time we did a big job like this we almost got caught by the police

Dad: and we didn't, look we will be getting 5.1 Million for the cocaine and 25 million for the girls that a lot

Nkosie: I agree with Dad, we gonna have a meeting with the boys and the manufacturers

Nkanyezi: I don't think they will agree to that

Nkosie: stop being stubborn and let's work this through, you know this is how we role

Nkanyezi: okay fine

Dad: you will be meeting with the dealer in a week, make sure



NOVELSGURU.COM

this job is clean no blood must be spelt

he looks at Sya and Me.

Sya: okay you don't have to make it obvious

Dad: don't mess this up boys, I got a meeting to attend to

he stood up and we did the same, we respect our father this side, he might look at innocent but he ain't at all.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he went to jail for killing 53 men who were involved in the kidnapping of my mother, the case disappeared in two days.

people from the streets say I took after him.

after he left we had a small chat.

Nkosie: so tomorrow we meeting with the guys and then the manufacturers

Sandile: Tom is gonna be pissed

Nkosie: that's my homie

I chuckle and got up.

Ntando: and where are you going?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I got a wife waiting for me at home

Sandile: she's my wife though

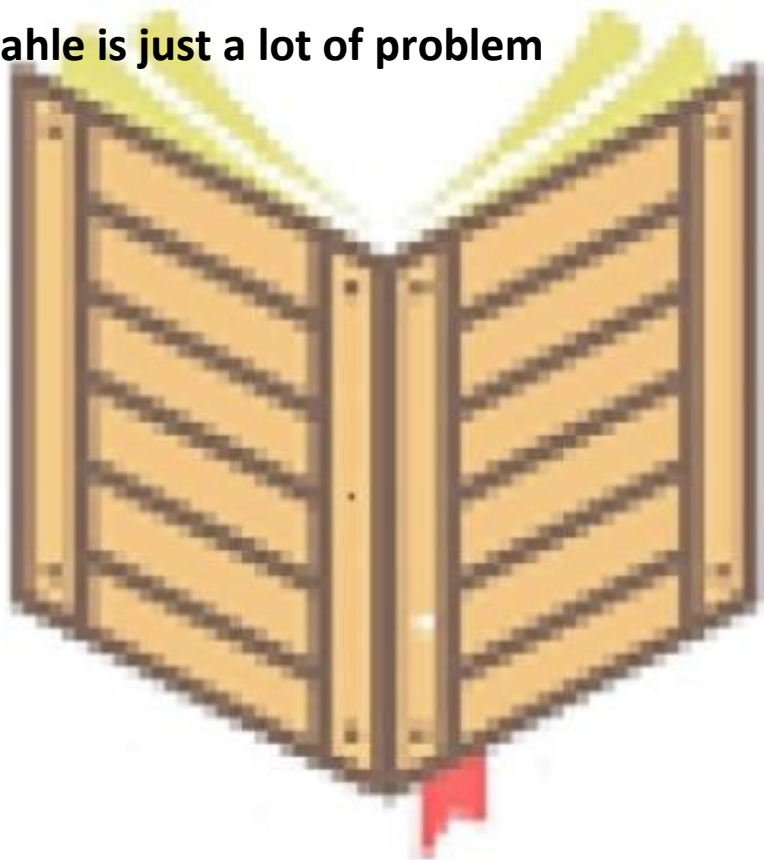


Nkosie: I will pretend I didn't hear that

they laugh.

Sya: Ntando you also got a wife at home why ain't you leaving?

Ntando: Amahle is just a lot of problem



NOVELSGURU.COM

they laugh, I shook my head and I went out.

I got inside my car and I drove back home.

.
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 65

KHWEZILOKUSA.

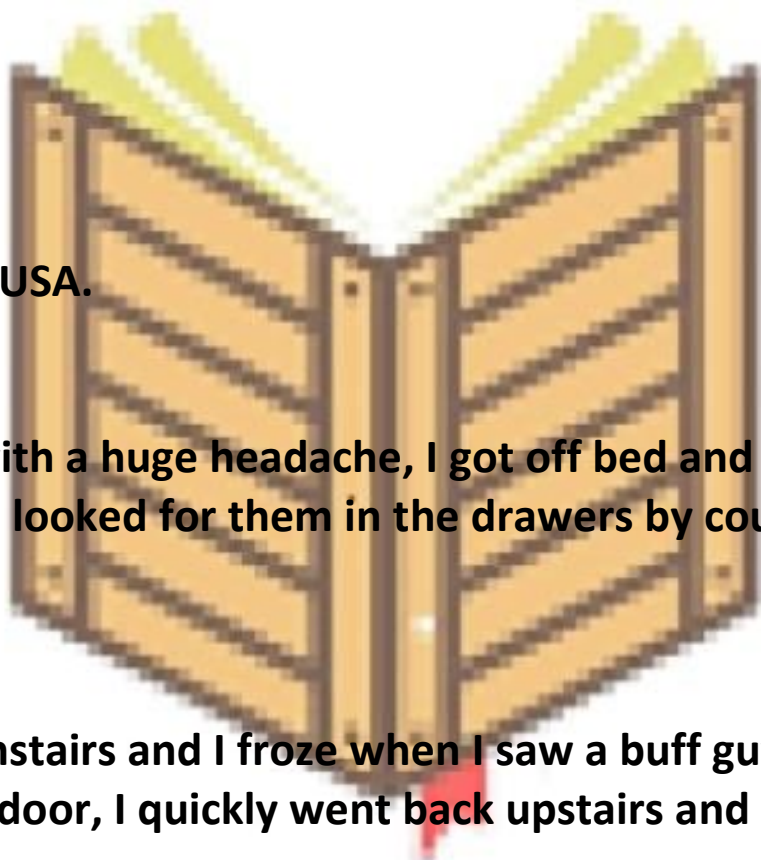
I woke up with a huge headache, I got off bed and I need painkillers. I looked for them in the drawers by couldn't find them.

I went downstairs and I froze when I saw a buff guy standing outside the door, I quickly went back upstairs and took out my phone.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I called Nkosie.

Nkosie: baby



Khwezi: there's some scary guy standing outside our door, where are you?

Nkosie: no that's a guard I sent, I'm on my way back home

Khwezi: *laughs* a gaurd really?

Nkosie: I wanted to ensure that you safe



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: it's cool, can you bring me some Woolworths wings and some ribs, ohh and a chocolate milkshake and a banana one also...ohh

Nkosie: I'm outside the gate

Khwezi: Nkosie!!

Nkosie: we will order

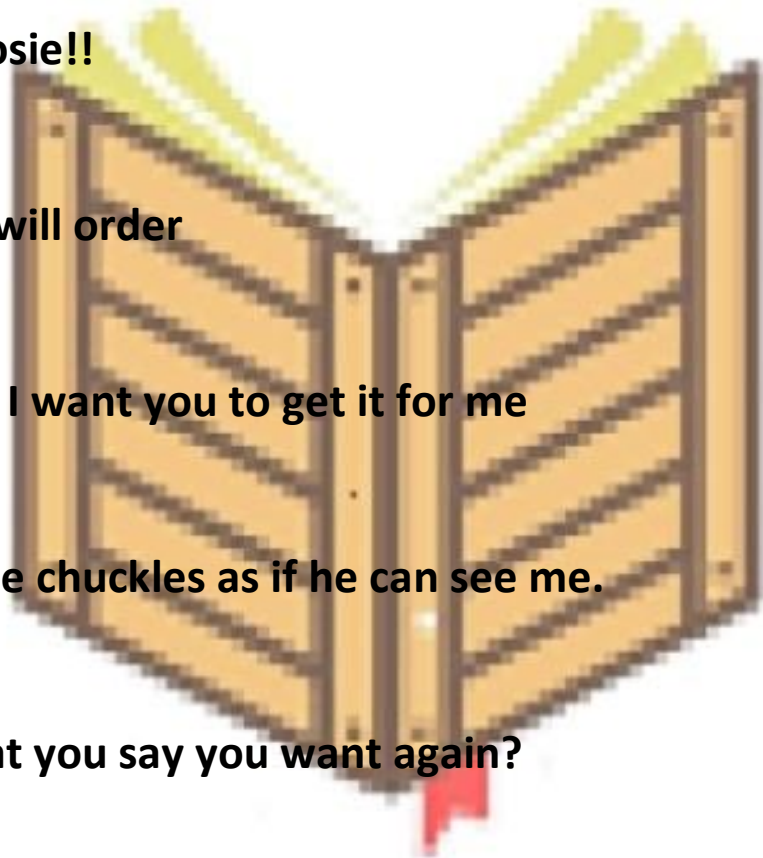
Khwezi: but I want you to get it for me

I pout and he chuckles as if he can see me.

Nkosie: what you say you want again?

Khwezi: woolies wings, spur ribs, chocolate and banana milkshake, carrot cake and a burger

Nkosie: anything else?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: are you on the menu cause I would like some of you

I bite my lower lip and I giggle.

Nkosie: you crazy

he laughs and he hung up.

in the meantime I went to take a shower, I got done and I wore my white night dress.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I wore my socks and slippers, I wore a gown just to cover myself up since there's a man I don't know.

I went downstairs and I took out some ice cream from the fridge, I looked outside and it seems to be windy.

I place the ice cream on the table and I went to the door, I opens it.

Khwezi: hey do you want to come in? it's pretty cold out here

Him: I can't ma'am

Khwezi: you should come in if you don't want to catch a flu, come on and please call me Khwezi

he looks at me shocked.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: ma'am sir will be furious if he found me inside

Khwezi: I will deal with him please

I moved making ways for him and he got inside.

Khwezi: let me make you something, I wonder how long you have been standing out there

Him: it's really not that long, ma'am I really don't like this idea sir will kill me

Khwezi: like I said please call me Khwezi

I smile.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: okay Khwezi sir will kill me, he gave me strict orders and I need to follow

Khwezi: what is your name?

Him: Leroy ma'am I mean Khwezi

Khwezi: well Leroy please take a seat for sure Nkosie won't mind, plus you must be starving

Leroy: indeed I am

Khwezi: you see now why you acting tough

I laugh and he keeps a straight face.

I went and made him a sandwich, I poured him some coke cause he doesn't look like the rest type. I'm joking I asked him.

I served him his food and I set down having some ice cream, after a while Nkosie car was outside the gate.

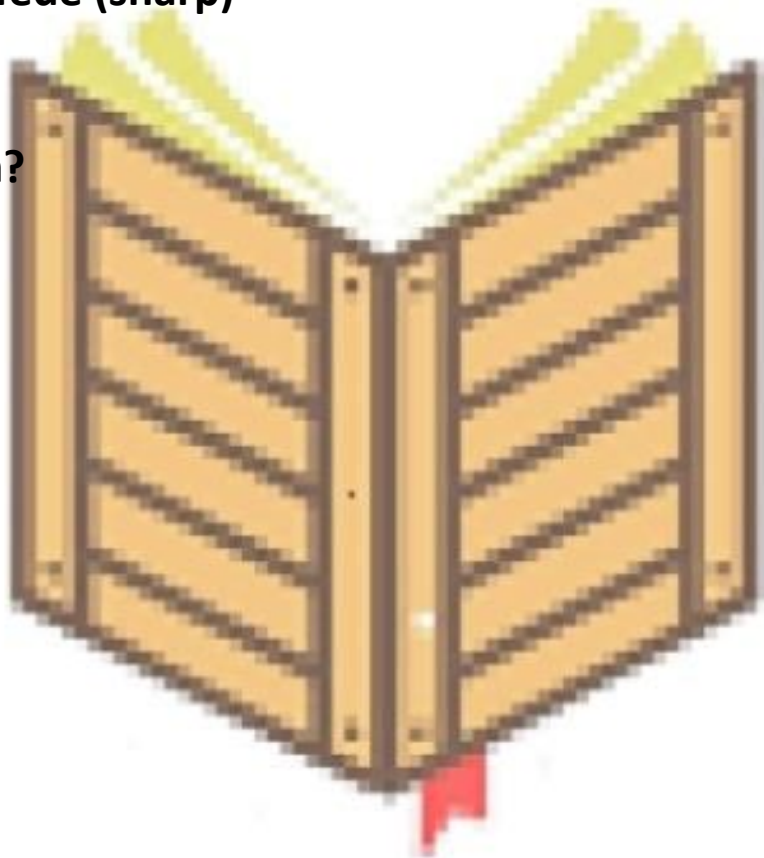


Leroy: I really need to go back to my post or else I will loose my job

Khwezi: it was nice meeting you

Leroy: fede fede (sharp)

Khwezi: huh?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Leroy: I mean sharp

Khwezi: ohh

he got out before Nkose could see him, Nkose got out of the car with the begs of food, Leroy left.

Nkose got inside.

Nkose: I brought your food

Khwezi: I already ate you took long

he looks at me in disbelief.

Khwezi: I'm joking you should have seen your face

NOVELSGURU.COM

I laugh.

Nkose: whatever here's your food

Khwezi: thank you

I took the bags with a huge smile.

Khwezi: where were you anyways?

Nkosie: I had some business to take care of

Khwezi: does this business involve killing people



NOVELSGURU.COM

he looks at me.

Khwezi: I'm joking

Nkosie: well your joke ain't funny

Khwezi: ayy fuck you then

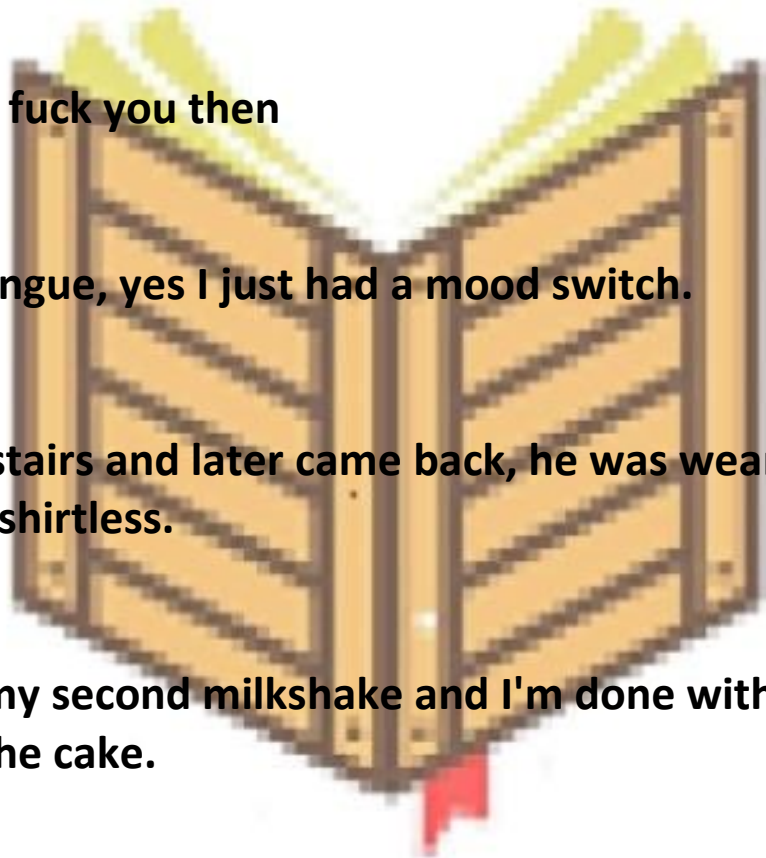
I click my tongue, yes I just had a mood switch.

he went upstairs and later came back, he was wearing shorts and he was shirtless.

I'm having my second milkshake and I'm done with the food, I ate half of the cake.

he set on the couch which was life a bed but isn't, I look at him and I know he is annoyed.

Khwezi: Nkosie?



Nkosie: yes

he says changing the channel on the TV.

Khwezi: I'm sorry for taking to you like that

Nkosie: okay cool

I got up and I went to cuddle with him, he had his arms around me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: take off the gown it's making me feel hot

Khwezi: okay mana ke

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 67



KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up and I sit up straight rubbing my eyes, Nkosie is not in bed. what time is it? I yawn taking my phone from the nighstand.

it's nine and I'm still sleeping, Good hell my mother would have woken me up right now giving me a lecture on how "you going to be a bad wife, who sleeps till nine?"

NOVELSGURU.COM

I laugh, I got off bed and I made it, when I was done I went to prepare a bath for myself.

I wonder where is Nkosie, I started with my hygiene process and I got done.

I wore some black tight short jumpsuit, it wasn't that short though. I wore a grey crop top hoodie.

I got done and I started to do my hair, I know I won't be going anywhere but I gotta look good.

I wore some socks and my slippers, I took my phone and I went downstairs.

I made myself something to eat and my phone rang, it was Nkosie I answered.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: Mvelase

he chuckles.

Nkosie: you seem to be in a good mood today

Khwezi: well you very good at ruining good moments

Nkosie: we were having a moment? I did not know

Khwezi: mxm, why you left me alone this morning? and guess what I just woke up

Nkosie: i had something important i needed to handle, pregnancy is making you lazy

Khwezi: I'm not lazy I was just tired, so are you coming back?

he sighs.

Nkosie: no I will come back really late



NOVELSCURU.COM

Khwezi: Nkosie...

Nkosie: babe I got a business to take care of and I will send someone over to ensure you safe

Khwezi: I don't need a babysitter I'm not a baby

Nkosie: it's not a babysitter but a gaurd



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I don't need one honesty, I don't get what would possibly happen

I roll my eyes.

Nkosie: your stubbornness will happen

Khwezi: whatever

Nkosie: how is my baby boy doing?

Khwezi: it's a baby girl

Nkosie: no it's a boy

Khwezi: how do you know its a boy? I'm the one carrying the baby

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I have always wanted to have a baby boy so I feel like since I have found the right person whom I love wholeheartedly, my wish will come true

Khwezi: just cause you said that I'm going to agree for now that

it's a boy

he laughs.

Nkosie: you funny, I have to go the boys just walked in

Khwezi: okay before you drop the call can you tell me where you placed the noted and videos that Zizi took?

Nkosie: ohh they are in my study



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: thanks, have a fun day at work

Nkosie: I don't have fun at work

I roll my eyes.

Khwezi: love you, bye

Nkosie: love you too

he hung up.

I started eating my food, I got done and I noticed a car standing by the gate, I went to see who it was.

it was Leroy, I greeted and buzzed him in.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I went to Nkosie's Study upstairs, I took the notes and the video tapes, I decided to work in his study.

I'm really happy that Zizi did this for me while I was gone, it's



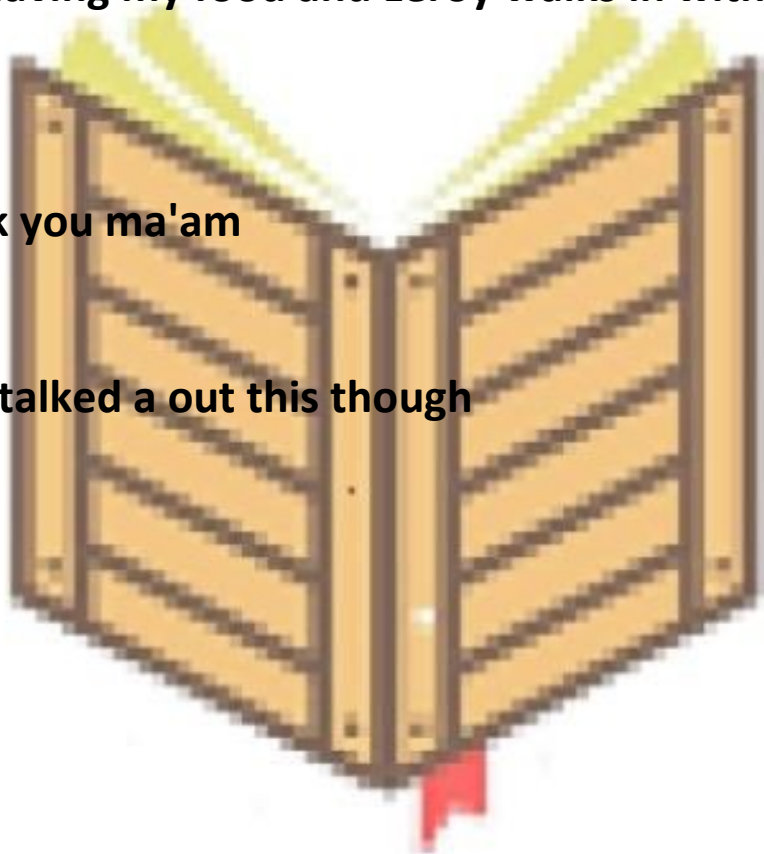
really helping.

I stayed in there studying for about 2 hours and I went downstairs to make some food, I made some for Leroy and gave it to him.

I set down having my food and Leroy walks in with his empty plate.

Leroy: thank you ma'am

Khwezi: we talked a out this though



NOVELSGURU.COM

Leroy: thank you Khwezi

Khwezi: it's a pleasure and if you want to watch some tv feel free

Leroy: I'm good outside

Khwezi: okay

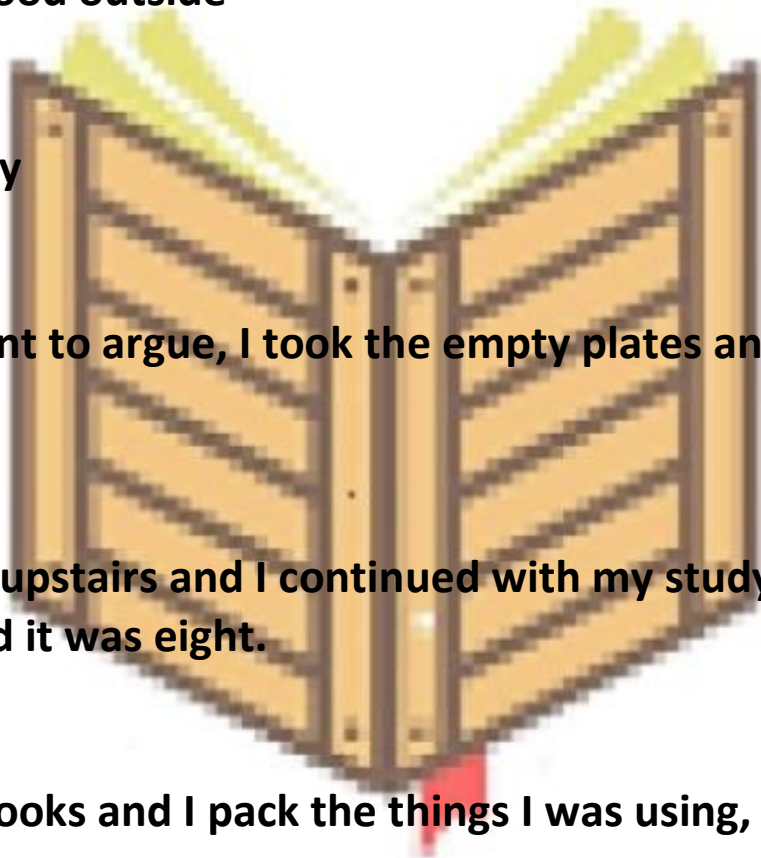
I did not want to argue, I took the empty plates and I wash them.

I went back upstairs and I continued with my study, I checked the time and it was eight.

I close my books and I pack the things I was using, I went to take a shower.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I wore one of Nkosie's shirts and sweatpants, I went downstairs and I started with the pots, I made dumplings I know how he is so obsessed with my food.



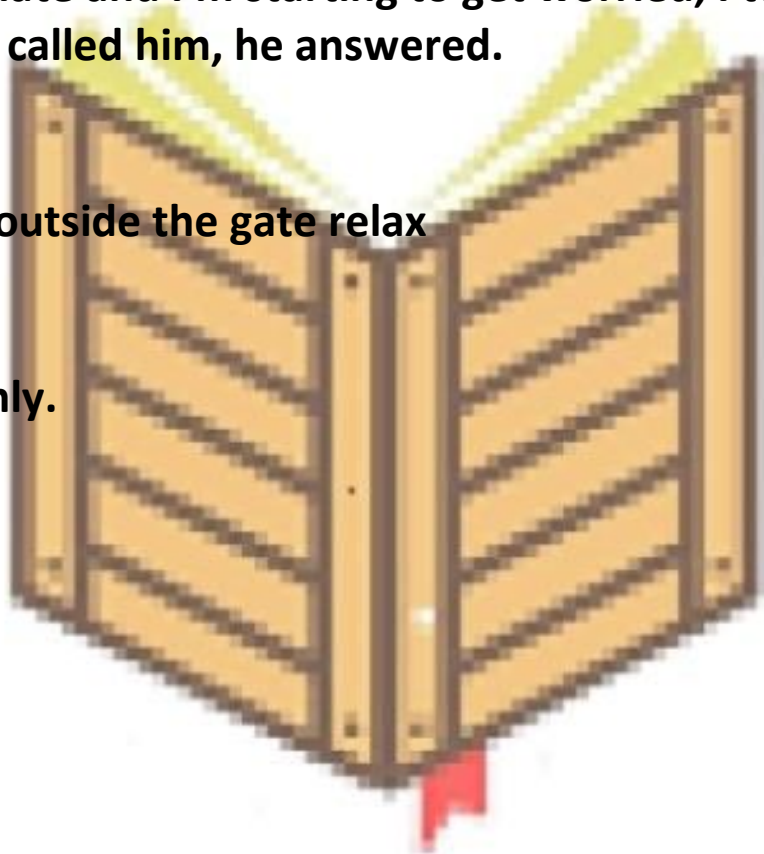
I got done cooking and I turn off the stove, I check the time and it's 21:30pm and still he is not back.

maybe if I wait a little while he will come back, I set down and I watched TV.

It got really late and I'm starting to get worried, I took out my phone and I called him, he answered.

Nkosie: I'm outside the gate relax

he says calmly.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I drop the call and set there folding my arms, what if he is cheating on me? nah he would do that though, he knows I would leave him.

he walks in and he takes off his leather jacket, he came to me and kissed me on the cheek.

his lips are cold.

Khwezi: I was so worried about you

Nkosie: I told you I was gonna come home late, the work was a lot and I'm really tired

Khwezi: I almost thought something had had happened

Nkosie: I'm back in one piece, stop stressing

NOVELSGURU.COM

he gave me a hug and kissed my forehead.

Khwezi: take a shower and come down to have some food

Nkosie: you did not eat?

Khwezi: I was waiting for you

I say playing with my fingers.

Nkosie: you shouldn't starve yourself next time okay

Khwezi: I just wanted to eat with you



NOVELSGURU.COM

he pecks me on the lips.

Nkosie: where were you all this time...

I smile.

Khwezi: I was waiting for you

i steal a kiss and he laugh, he went upstairs to take a shower, I start dishing up for the both of us, Leroy left but I made sure he ate.

few minutes later Nkosie came downstairs.

Khwezi: you did not bath I can sense it

I laugh a little.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I did, it was a quick one

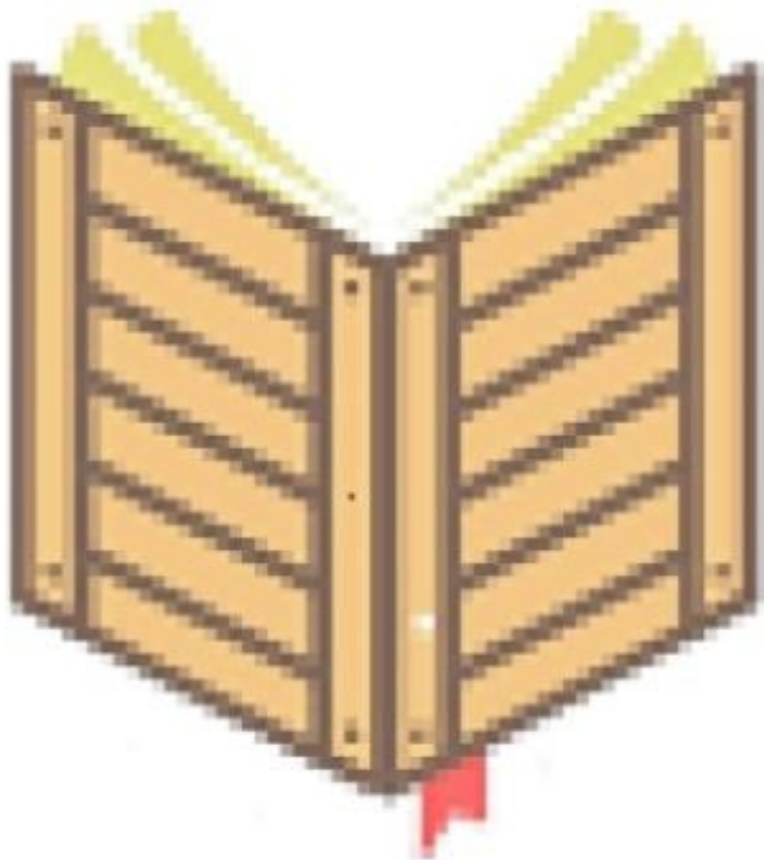
he smirks, I roll my eyes and we set down and ate.

.
.

•
FOREVA YENA

Insert 68

NKOSINATHI.



NOVELSGURU.COM

When I heard her cute snores I gently removed her from my chest, I made sure not to wake her up.

I got out of bed and I changed into black clothes, I took my phone and my gun. I went down stairs and I took my car keys, I drove to the warehouse.

I got there and my brothers are not here yet, I got out of the car and I went inside, I pass the workers there and I went to Toms office.

a girl was giving him a blow job, I clear my throat and the girl jumps and got off Tom.

Tom: hey homie, I wasn't expecting you here

he says wanting to touch my shoulder and I look at his hand that back it him, he stops.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Tom: what bring you here my friend?

Nkosie: you don't get to ask me that question, how far are you with the job?

Tom: you know King it's kinda hard to make that huge amount of cocaine in such a short period of time

Nkosie: you know I don't like it when you be denying shit I be telling you to do, I said I wasn't 200 bags of cocaine and you gonna give them to me

Tom: King like I said...

Nkosie: I didn't say speak nigga you get on my nerve

He sighs.

I started thinking.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: how long does it take you to process cocaine?

Tom: 12 hours

Nkosie: and how long does it to make alcohol?

Tom: well that's my specialty and...

I looks at him and he clears his throat.

Tom: three to five hours

Nkosie: okay then change of plan, we not supply any bags of cocaine but some liquid cocaine

Tom: I can't do that

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: Tom for fucks sakes can you stop sleeping on your brain for once

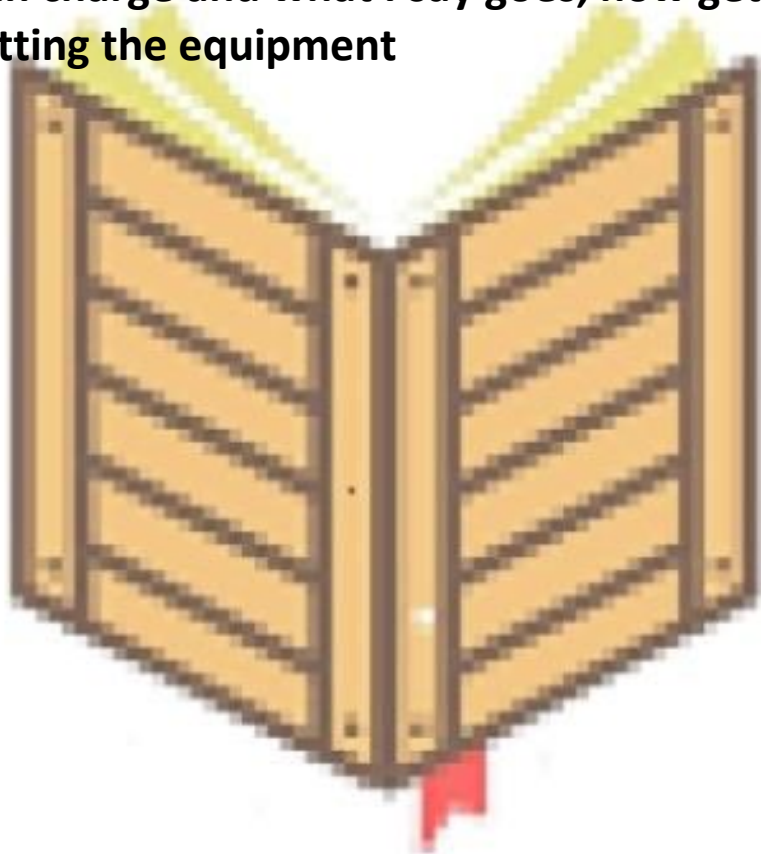
Tom: sorry King it's just that...

Nkosie: I will get somebody to help you out

Tom: we can't bring somebody from the outside here

Nkosie: I'm in charge and what I say goes, now get your ass up and start getting the equipment

Tom: sho



NOVELSGURU.COM

he got out.

I took out my phone and called an old friend of mine, she does not answer, I guess I have to go to her place then.

I walk out of Toms office and my brothers walk in.

Ntando: what did we miss?

Nkosie: a sudden change of plan, we won't be supply cocaine bags but liquid cocaine which we will make look and taste like alcohol

Sandile: sound fun

Ntando: wait but father never told us anything about a change of plan

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I changed the plan, I will speak to dad

Sya: I like were your plan is going

Nkosie: someone with brains, I will run the plan with you once I

get back

Nkanyezi: where are you going?

Nkosie: you will see who I come back

I chuckle and I walk out, I unlock my car and Ntando came to me.

Ntando: why do you always change our plans on the last minute?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: because they are better and they bring less police attention

Ntando: you not allowed to change plans everytime Nkosie

Nkosie: I really don't have time for this honestly

I sigh.

Ntando: you also can't boss us around like that, I'm the older brother and I say we go with dad's plan

Nkosie: and I'm in charge I think you forget that

I smirk and got inside the car, Ntando doesn't get why I'm doing this, I don't want attention from the people which are the police.

NOVELSGURU.COM

imagine transporting 200 bags of cocaine and we come across some road check up at night the they find the begs.

I mean that's being careless and acting brainless, those two

don't speak me.

I park outside the apartment and it's still the same, no change at all. I got out and I went to knock on the door.

I door opens and she atood there looking at me while biting her lower lip.

Her: what a pleasant surprise *smiles* haven't seen you in a while, should I get naked or you wanna take them off yourself

she touches my chest pulling me closer, I push her off me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I'm not here for that nonsense, I need you to do something for me

Her: more like "I need you help" that would sound better

I look at her.

Her: okay it's fine the way you said it though, I'm surprised you still remember my address

Nkosie: Spicy you don't want to fuck with my nerve right now

Spicy: what you want me to do?

Nkosie: I got some shit going in and I need you to help a friend of mine process some coke into liquid, more like alcohol

NOVELSGURU.COM

Spicy: you know I tried that shit back in the days and it did not work

Nkosie: you didn't have the best equipment and I do, come on you good at these things

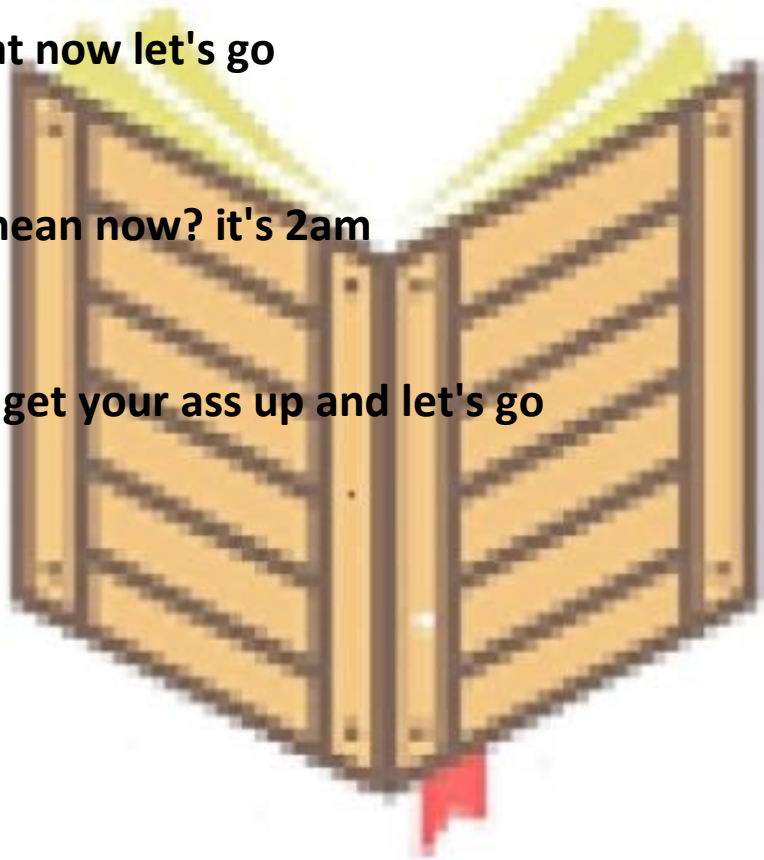
she smiles, well I shouldn't have said that.

Spicy: fine I will give it a try but don't blame me when shit goes side ways

Nkosie: great now let's go

Spicy: you mean now? it's 2am

Nkosie: just get your ass up and let's go



NOVELSGURU.COM

Spicy: sure you don't want us to have a small quickie

Nkosie: you will find me in the car

she chuckles.

I walk out and I got inside my car, she later came out, we drove back straight to the warehouse.

I trust Spicy plus she knows all the gang shit I be doing so we cool.

we walk inside the warehouse.

Sandile: Spice!! yow I thought you over dozed a d died

Spicy: come on don't go around believe fake how shit

Sandile: fuck you

Nkanyezi: she's gonna help?

Spicy: what? you got a problem cutie

Nknayezi rolls his eyes.

Spicy: so how much am I gonna get?

Nkosie: if it's worth it you know the drill



NOVELSGURU.COM

Spicy: let's get to work then

Tom walks in and they start doing their shit, it took like two hours and they were done.

Spicy: so if I drop this liquid in here and it turn blue it mean it worked meaning it's cocaine alcohol but if it turns green then...

she shrugs.

she drops three drops inside liquid and it turns blue, she screams in excitement.

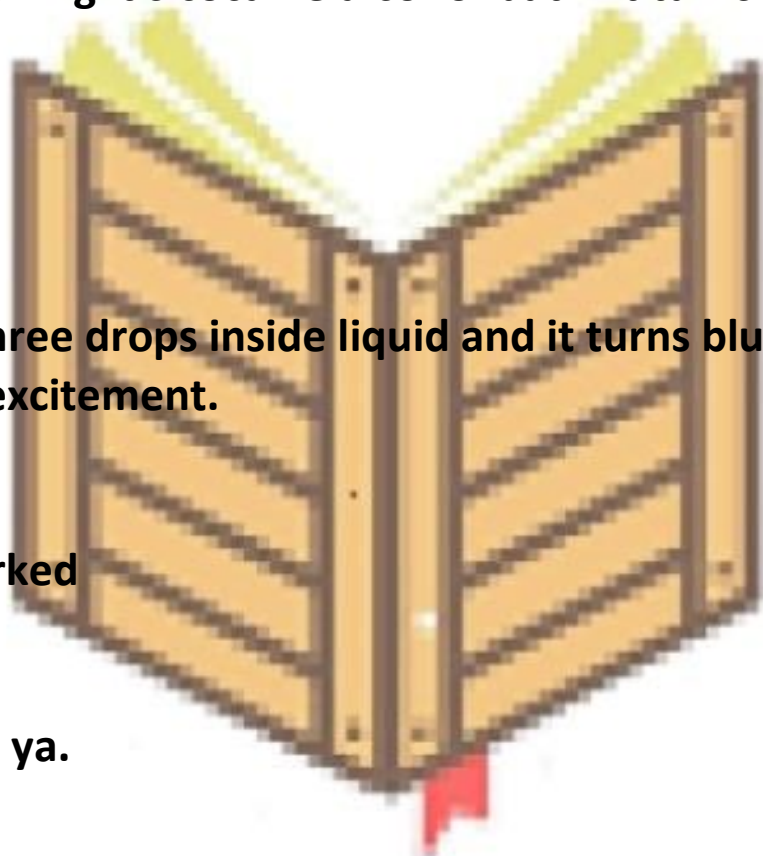
Spicy: it worked

Nkosie: told ya.

Nkanyezi: she's really good

he smiles.

Sya: you can say that again



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: now what do you day? will you be able to make 200 of those?

Spicy: give me three more days

I nod and I walks out, I take out my phone and I called someone.

Nkosie: sure listen. I need you to build a club for me. we will talk about the plan tomorrow I need it up in a week



NOVELSGURU.COM

I hung up.

I checked the time and it was 4am, I went and got inside my car, I drove straight home, luckily Khwezi was still asleep.

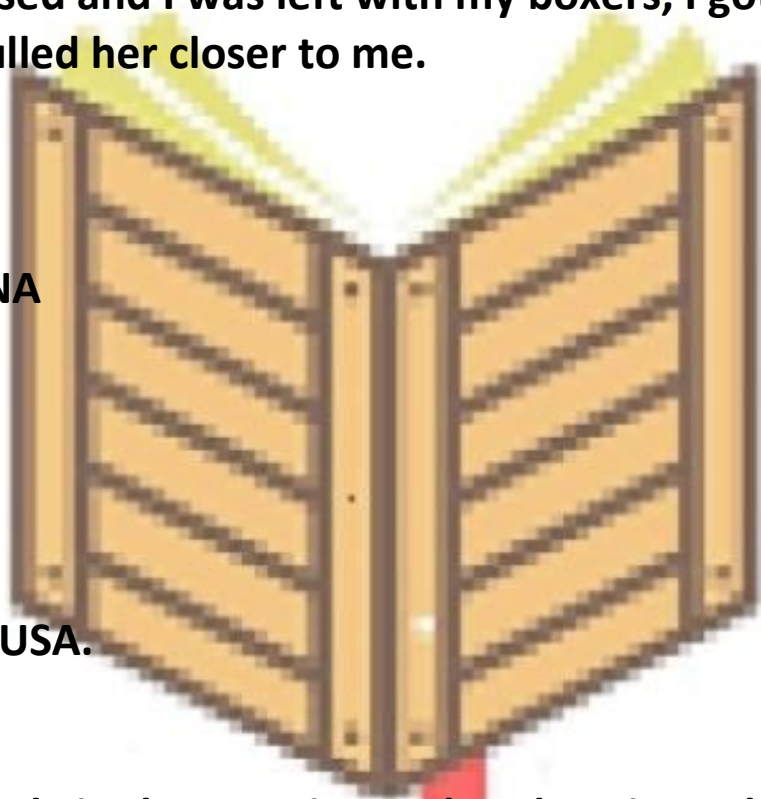
I got undressed and I was left with my boxers, I got inside the bed and I pulled her closer to me.

.
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 69

KHWEZILOKUSA.



I woke up early in the morning and at that time Nkosie is fast asleep, he has been busy lately and yesterday he snack out of the house at night. NOVELSGURU.COM

I did not want to ask him wassup so I remained quite not wanting to look like an obsessed girlfriend.

I got off the bed and I went to take a shower, I got done and I dried my body, I lotioned it and I wore a red skirt/short, at the back it looks like a short but at the front it's a skirt.

I wore a white oversized t-shirt, I wore white white shocks and some Nike sneakers.

I tried my hair and I went downstairs, I made the both of us some breakfast and I put his inside the microwave.

I set down and ate, I got done and I wash my plate and glass.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I went to his study and I started with recapping the work I missed, I set there doing my work and the study door opens.

Nkosi: babe I was looking for you everywhere but you here, I thought someone had broke in and kidnapped you

he smiles, I stay focus on my work not paying any attention to him.

I heard the door close and he got closer, he stood opposite me.

Nkosie: what's wrong?

Silence.

Nkosie: Khwezi I'm talking to you

NOVELSGURU.COM

Silence.

Nkosie: fuck Khwezi mahn answer me!



he bangs the table frustrated and I look at him, I close my books and I fold my arms.

Khwezi: don't shout at me Nkosie

Nkosie: you were not listening to me njena, I'm sorry

Khwezi: ok



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: what's bothering you? is everything okay?

Khwezi: everything is fine Nkosie

he looks at me for a second and if he is reading me, I kept a straight face.

Nkosie: it doesn't look like that to me, just tell me what's going on

he sighs.

Khwezi: if you don't mind really I got some work I need to do, if you would excuse me your presence here is kinda distracting

I say looking at him in the eyes, his jaw clenched as he looks at me frustrated that I'm dismissing him.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he walks out of the room and I open my books.

Khwezi: where was I?

I ask myself and I continued to study, after 2 hours of sitting

here my butt hurts because of this.

I close my book and I went downstairs for something to eat,
Nkosie is not in the house.

maybe he left frustrated at the way I talked to him but honestly
I don't care.

I ordered some food and it came after a few minutes of waiting,
I went to the living room and I set down eating my food.

the door bell rang and I roll my eyes getting up, who could it
be?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I went to the door and I open only to find Zizi standing there, I quickly close the door on her face.

she rang the bell again.

I really don't have the energy for her right now.

she kept on ringing the bell and I got angry, I opened the door.

Khwezi: what do you want Zizi?

Zizi: I came to apologise

Khwezi: you apologised njena, what are you here to apologise for?

Zizi: I just want us to fix our friendship, I don't like fighting with you and I need you back in my life cause it's been so fucked up without you, I know I did you wrong and I wasn't suppose to date your ex, I broke up with him because the relationship wouldn't mean anything if it had me breaking my friends heart and loosing her in the process *sighs* you mean a lot to me and I missed you so much



NOVELSOUPI.COM

she wipes her tears and I'm also crying, God I really missed her.

Zizi: I just want us to forget about what happened and start afresh

Khwezi: you should know for a fact that I did not miss you at all

she laughs and I give her a tight hug, we were both crying while exchanging words.

Zizi: you missed me and I know it



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: ain't gonna lie I did, come inside

I move letting her in, we went to the living room and she had a backpack with her meaning she just got back from her classes.

Zizi: so tell me what did I miss?

Khwezi: a lot but we will catch along the way

Zizi: cause I ain't going anywhere, I'm here to stay

Khwezi: period!!

we laugh.

Zizi: pregnancy is really treating you good *smiles* you are glowing and you gaining some weight

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: tell me about it

I giggle.

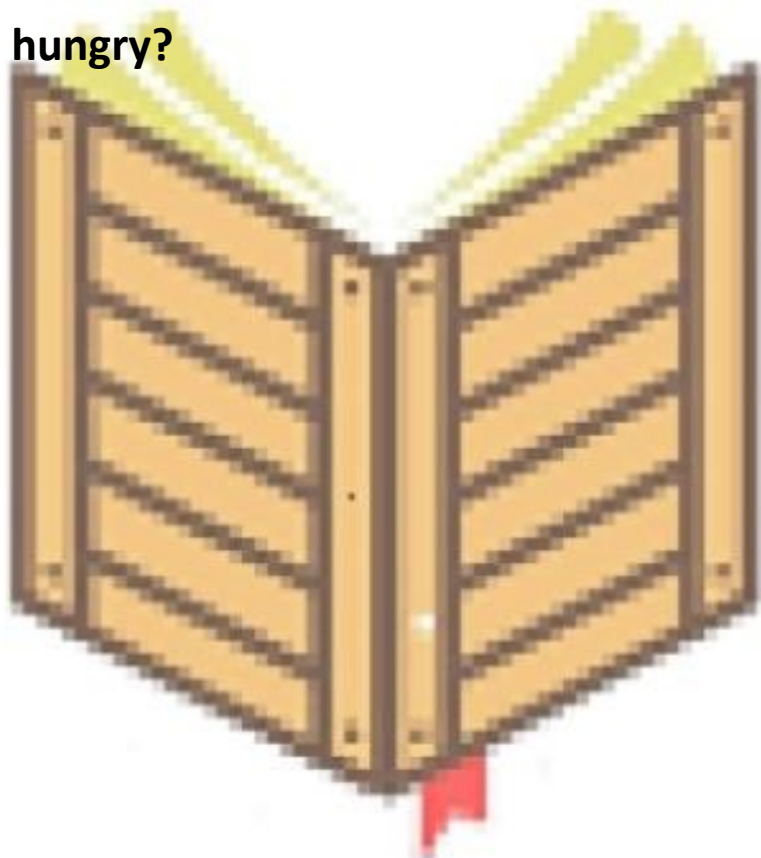


Zizi: where is Nkosie? I thought he was going to be here

Khwezi: I don't know where he is

Zizi: ohky

Khwezi: you hungry?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: nah but we can have some snacks

Khwezi: while watching a movie?

Zizi: anything you want prettyface

I smile, I missed her calling me that.

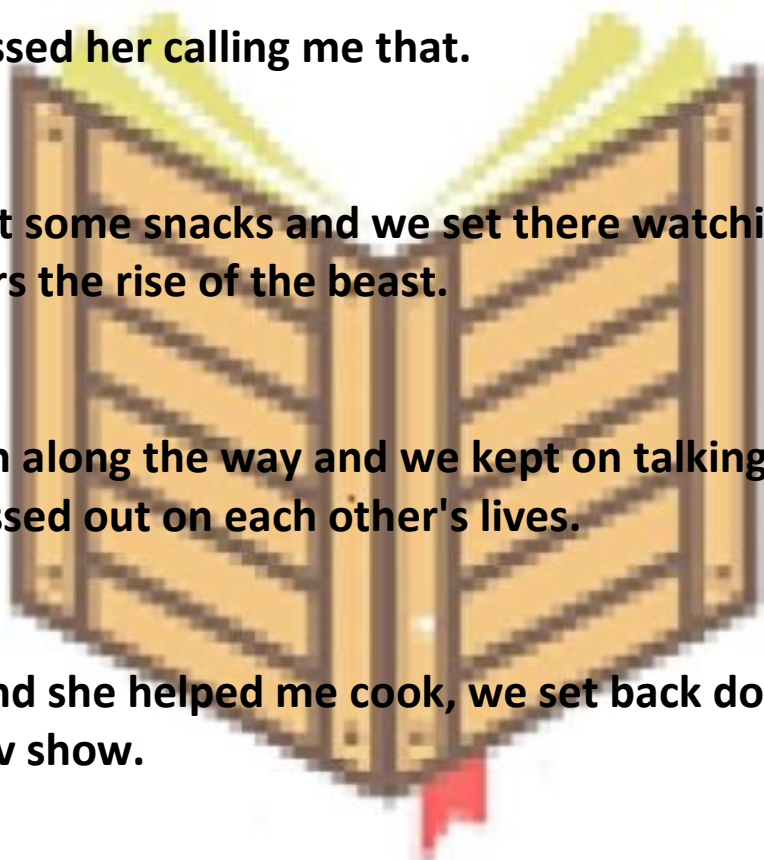
I went to get some snacks and we set there watching Transformers the rise of the beast.

it was action along the way and we kept on talking about the stuff we missed out on each other's lives.

it got late and she helped me cook, we set back down and we watched a tv show.

later Nkosie walks in, I watch him as he takes off his leather jacket and taking off his shoes.

he places his keys on the counter and he came to the living room.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: he pumpkin

Zizi: hey bhuti, where were you? I thought I was gonna find you here and ask you to take us to the mall

Nkosie: I was busy with something, babe...

he tried to kiss me on the cheek but I moved away, he sighs, Zizi noticed the tension.

Zizi: I need to use the bathroom

I look at her as she stood up and she shrugs.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: okay what did I do?

Khwezi: nothing

Nkosie: then why you acting like this?

Khwezi: I'm just not in the mood for you

Nkosie: technically there's something I did and you don't want to tell me what I did wrong

Khwezi: you cheating on me

he chuckles.

Nkosie: cheating? why would I be cheating on you?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I don't know but why you always sneaking out at night when I'm asleep? the non stop phone call, you out till late, you come home tired...what am I suppose to think? you don't even spend time with me no more

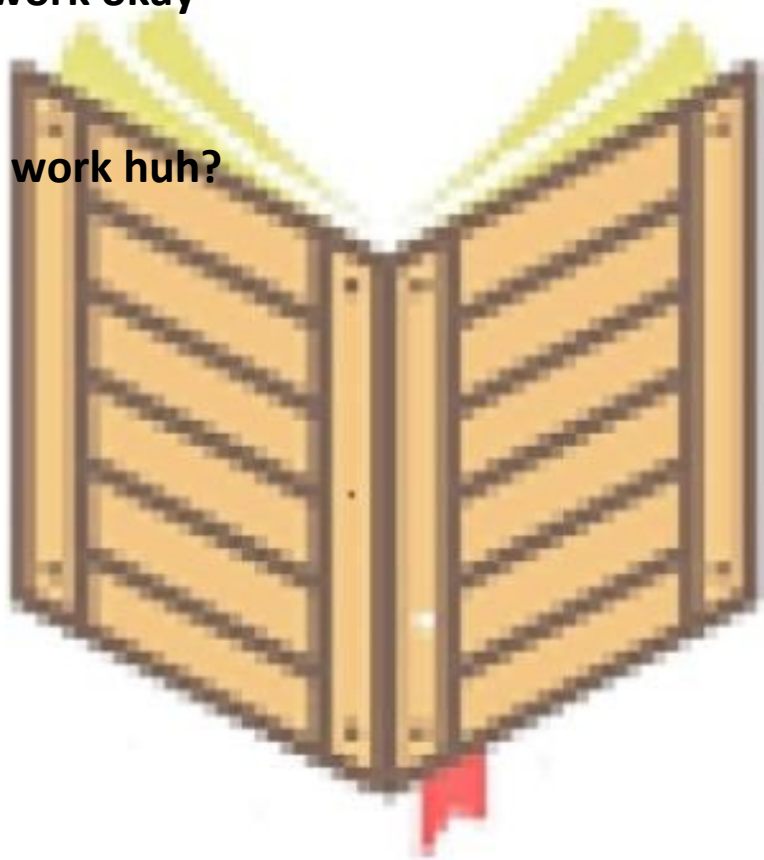


Nkosie: I'm not cheating on you

Khwezi: then explain why you be doing all that shit I just mentioned Nkosie?

Nkosie: it's work okay

Khwezi: just work huh?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: yes it's work

Khwezi: you fucking lying to me Nkosie...

I shout.

Nkosie: you ain't gonna talk to me like that, I'm the man here so you ain't gonna raise your voice at me

Khwezi: you the men here...explain why you came back home this other night smelling like a women? it seems like some girl was all over you and happened to leave some evidence

Nkosie: it's just work Babe

Khwezi: your work involves girls?

Nkosie: okay I'm really sorry for going out at night to do my job so I can be able to financially keep you and my family stable...

Khwezi: don't be acting like a victim here

Nkosie: what you want me to say? I'm telling you the truth but

you ain't want to believe me

Khwezi: I ain't want to believe you because I don't trust you...

I shout and I stop talking when I realized what I said, his jaw drops and he looks at me shocked.

Nkosie: see that's messed up as fuck

he shake a his head and clicks his tongue going upstaur, I stood there still shocked at what I said, I was angry and it just came out.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi came back.

Zizi: I could hear you two from upstairs, what's going on?

Khwezi: I just accused him of cheating

Zizi: what would make you think that?

Khwezi: he goes out late, he sneaks out of the house, he doesn't talk to me that much, he is always busy

Zizi: that's how Nkosie is *sighs* trust me in not taking his side on this but out of all my brothers Nkosie is the one whose mostly busy

Khwezi: with what Zizi?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: I don't know maybe ask him

Khwezi: he won't talk to me because I just told him I don't trust him

Zizi: you don't?

Khwezi: I don't know if I do...*sighs*

Zizi: listen boo a relationship is built on trust and if one of you doesn't trust the other that's a big flop for the relationship, meaning you both wasting your time cause where there is not trust there isn't nothing at all

Khwezi: I just know what kind of a person he is and...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: no you don't know what kind of person he is , you just think you do. you think you do that everytime you expect him to do a certain thing cause you think you know what type of person he is and what he is capable of doing whereas you just wrong...you just feeding your brain with wrong information and ruining shit for yourself

Khwezi: I don't know what to do now *sighs*

Zizi: just go and talk to him, try understanding each other and work things through...don't accuse him ask him first that way you will get a better response from him

Khwezi: thank you

Zizi: you know I'm always there for you prettyface

Khwezi: and I'm grateful

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: let me leave you two to fix whatever mess this is

Khwezi: I love you

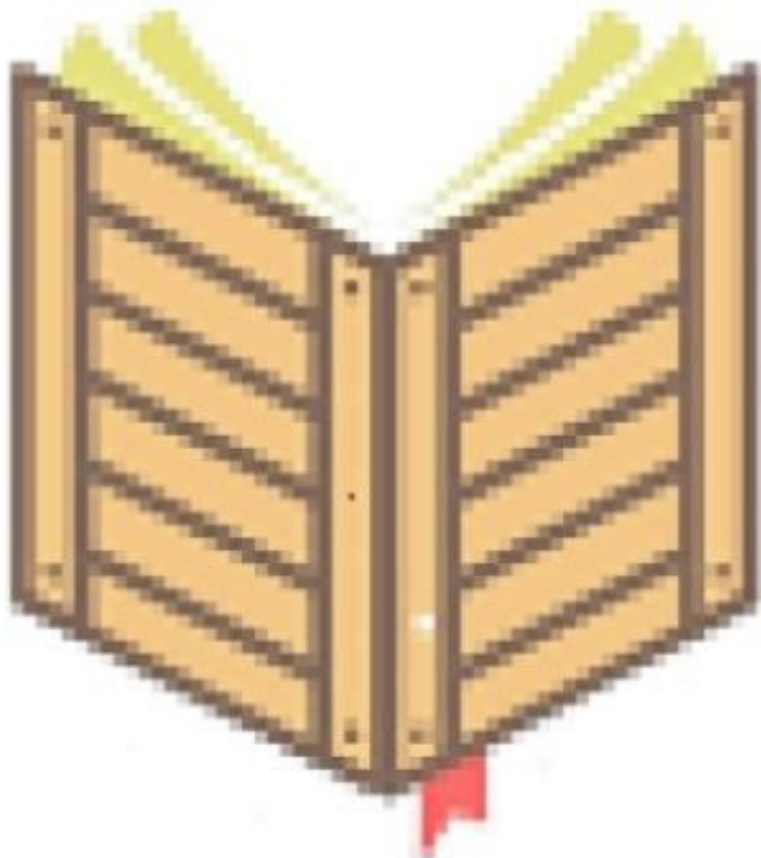
Zizi: I love you too

we hugged and she left, I sigh and went upstairs.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 70



NOVELSGURU.COM

NKOSINATHI.

I just went upstairs as much as I'm sad because of what she said ain't no way I'm gonna beg her and explain myself cause I told her the truth.

it's cool if she doesn't trust me.

I got done taking a shower and I walk out of the bathroom with a towel around my lower body, I found her sitting on the bed playing with her fingers looking sad.

honestly I felt for but ain't no way I'm telling her, she looks at me.

Khwezi: Nkosie can we talk

Nkosie: let me get dressed first

NOVELSGURU.COM

she nods and I lotion my body, I wore my shorts and a t-shirt, I went back to the main room and I set next to her.

Khwezi: I'm really sorry for accusing you of cheating it's just that *sighs* that night you smelt like a women I thought maybe

you had done something

well that was Spicey. she was all over me when we were at the club, she still thinks we have a chance though we don't. but nothing happened trust me, I respect my women and I love her.

Nkosie: nothing happened, you know girls love being all over me cause I look good of course

Khwezi: besides that, I should have asked you about the whole situation

Nkosie: facts but it's cool, but don't ever talk to me like that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I'm sorry

Nkosie: like I said it's cool, look I know I have been busy this week and I still am going to be busy cause there's a huge job I need to do

**Khwezi knows I'm a gangster, I guess...she does know right?
*side eyes***

Khwezi: what job? is it some business deal?

Nkosie: nope it's something else

Khwezi: oh okay

Nkosie: see I don't want you involved in the shady business I do, i don't want to risk your life and our babies so I suggest you stay out of it

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I won't ask about it again, but you know doing illegal stuff is gonna get you locked up

Nkosie: don't give me a lecture about law...I ain't really in the right mood for that

she laughs.

Khwezi: but honestly though...

Nkosie: I ain't doing no illegal stuff, everything I do is legit

damn no way it's not, I don't want her to know cause I might loose her if she finds out about the stuff I do.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: great now let me go take a shower

she stood up and I held her hand.

Nkosie: come on give me some love before you leave

she smiles and pecks me on the lips, I pull her even closer and the kiss got passionate, she wraps her arms around my neck.

I grabs her ass and she pulls out from the kiss.

Khwezi: if I continue with this one ain't no way I'm going to shower

she giggles.

Nkosie: just one round

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: no!

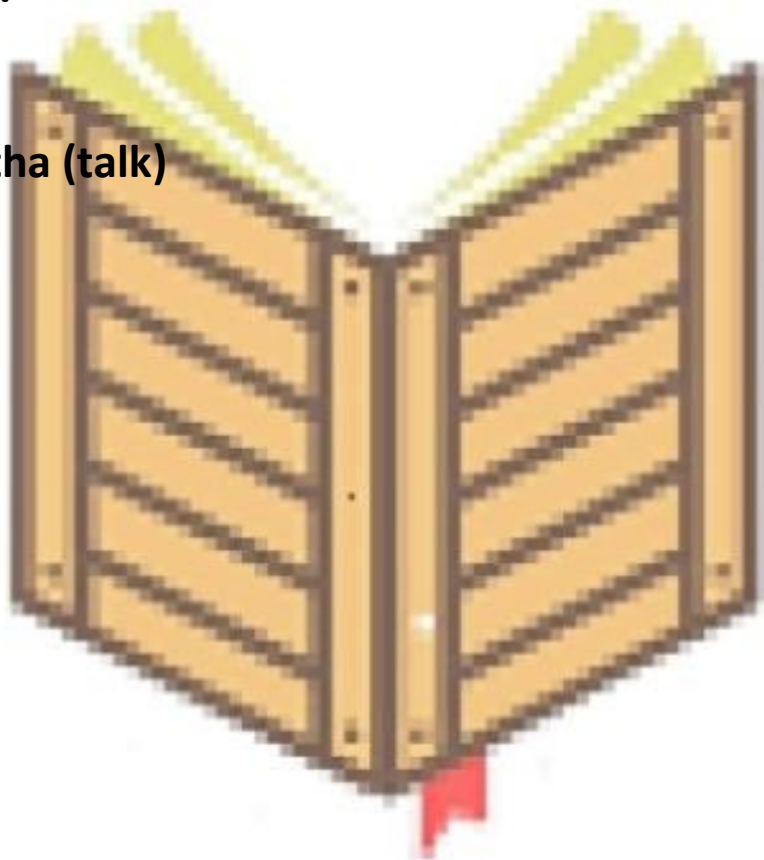
she pecks my lips and got off me, I bite my lower lip and I smack her ass.

Khwezi: Nkosie!!!

Nkosie: what?

she pouts and she heads to the bathroom, my phone rang and it was Leroy.

Nkosie: thetha (talk)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Leroy: we got 50 girls boss

Nkosie: you serious?

Leroy: yes we just finished up locking them in and they will be ready by tomorrow

Nkosie: great job, tell the boys to watch the girls no one must escape

Leroy: okay boss

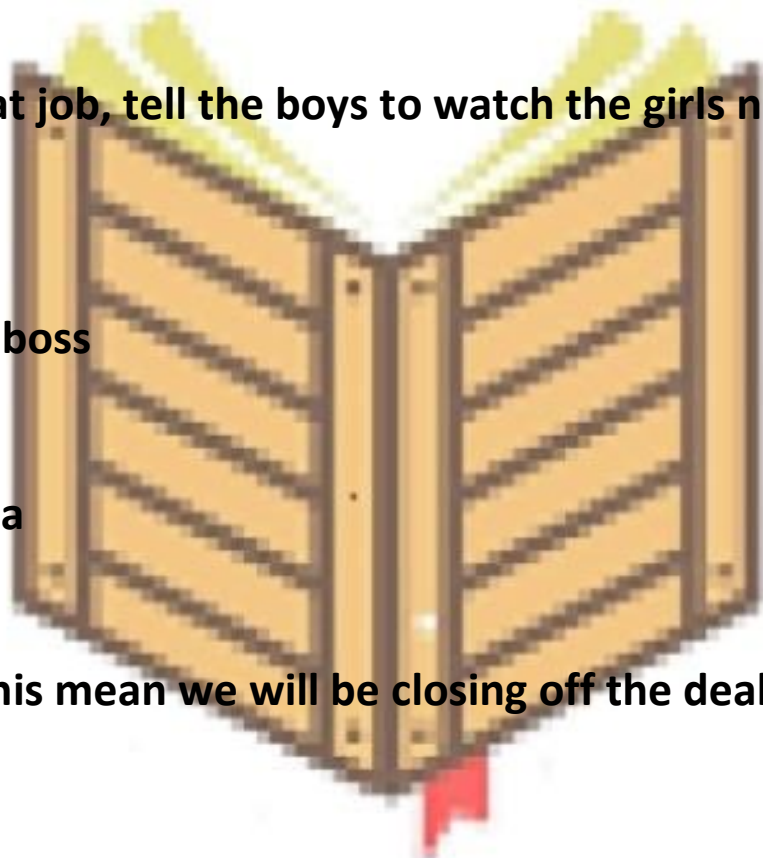
Nkosie: Moja

I hung up, this mean we will be closing off the deal by tomorrow.

I took out my phone and I called Tom, he did not answer so I called Spicey.

Spicey: hey daddy

Nkosie: I ain't got time for your shit, where is Tom?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Spicey: he's in the office banging some chick which leaves me to wonder *giggle* would you wanna slide it in me cause I sure damn did miss your big d

Nkosie: how far are you on the job?

Spicey: so you really gonna pretend as if you did not hear what I said

Nkosie: if you still want this job you gonna have to stop playing around cause I ain't gonna tolerate this



NOVELSGURU.COM

Spicey: jeez sorry, we are nearly done 20 more bottles to fill up then we good

Nkosie: perfect will drop by tonight to check if everything is good

Spicey: we gonna hit the club for celebration right?

I drop the call, Spicey is getting on my nerve. Khwezi got done showering and she got out of the bathroom, she had a towel around her body and she looks really good.

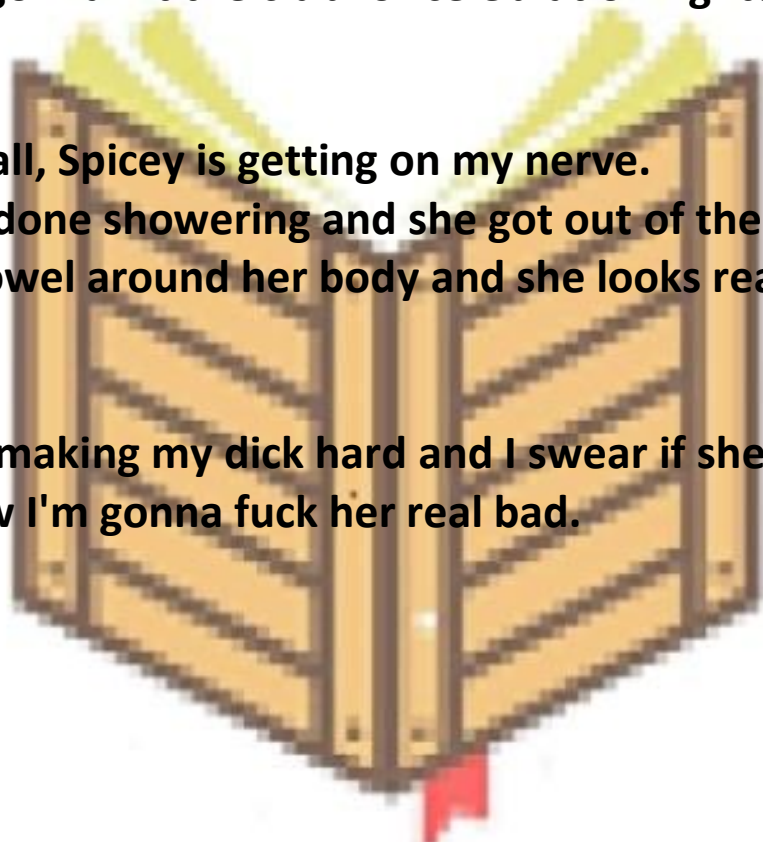
this sight is making my dick hard and I swear if she doesn't get dressed now I'm gonna fuck her real bad.

I groan.

she went to the closet and came back with some clothes, she places them on the bed and I pull her by he hand.

I made her stand in between my legs with my hands on her juicy ass, I bite my lower lip.

Khwezi: can we eat out?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: but you cooked

Khwezi: we gonna eat it tomorrow, I'm craving some meat

Nkosie: awungihaleli mina (you not craving me)

Khwezi: ngik'halele unani emnandi? (crave you? what do you have that's delicious)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: take off the towel and imma show you

Khwezi: I bet you can show it to me without me having to take off the towel

I chuckle.

I pull her even closer and I hand made it's way inside her towel. I slowly trace my finger on her thighs till reached her honey pot.

**.
. .**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 71

NKOSINATHI.

NOVELSGURU.COM

she's dripping yet she's out here acting tough, before I could slide a finger inside her she removed my hand.

Khwezi: I really am not gonna entertain this thing of yours



this women, why she acting up like this now? I stood up and I pick her up, she giggles.

I place her on the nightstand and I look at her in the eyes.

Nkosie: babe?

Khwezi: yes babe...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I want to be inside you

I kiss her on the neck and the I stop, I look at her in the eyes.

Khwezi: you do?

she bites her lower lip, I know she can see how much I wanna be inside her right now.

Nkosie: now will you let me or...

I slide two finger inside her and she let's out a moan.

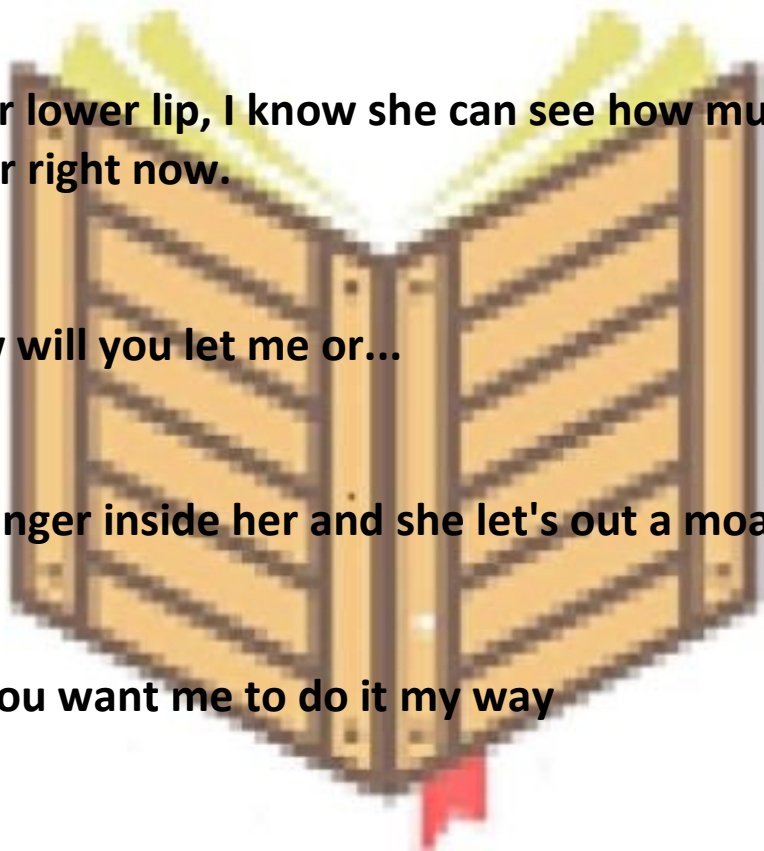
Nkosie: or you want me to do it my way

I look at her as she closes her eyes biting her lower lip as I fingered her.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: ahhh...you way sound...Ahh! better

I smile as I increased the phase and she cums, I took out my



fingers and I lick them.

we start of by kissing and her taking off my t-shirt, I took the towel off her and I threw it on the floor.

she pulls me back kissing me and her hands make it's way to my manhood, I grab her hand she gently pulls my lower lip pulling out from the kiss.

Khwezi: why you want to make me wait?

Nkosie: I thought you said you wasn't going to entertain me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: Nkosie!!

I smirk, I love it when she calls my name yet alone when she moans my name.

I lowered my shorts and I rub myself on her entrance, she moans and she squirts.

I enter inside her and she starts moaning as I thrust inside her, she goes crazy when I increase the phase.

Khwezi: Nkosie!! Nkosie!! Nkosie!!

she moans and I go in slower, she has her hands all over my body and I lift up her left leg going in deep.

Khwezi: ahhh Nkosie!

NOVELSGURU.COM

she moans and she closes her eyes.

Nkosie: look at me.

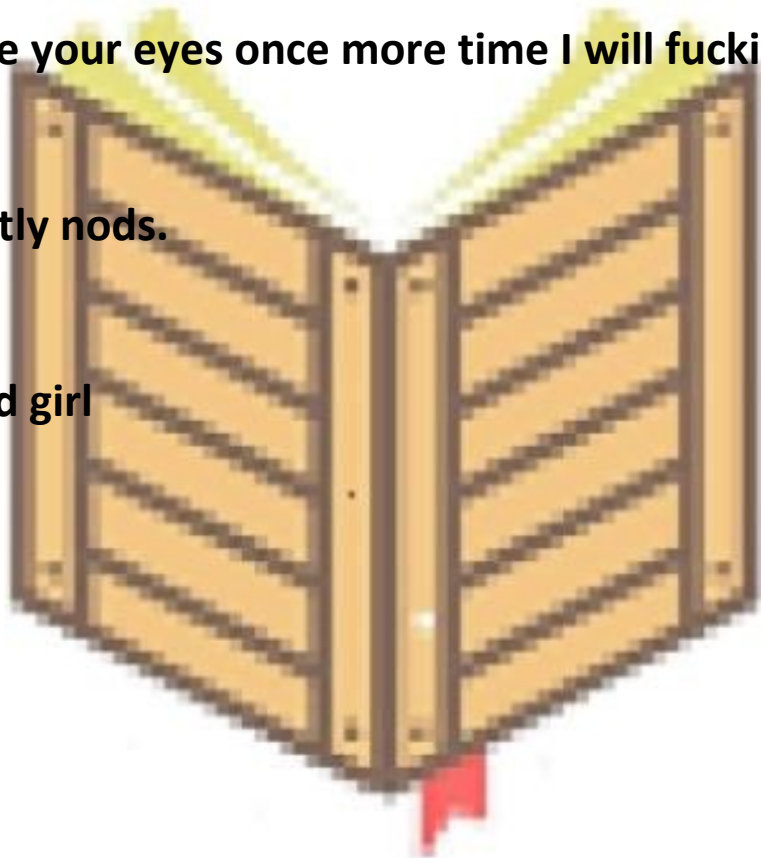
I groan as I continued to hit inside her, she still has her eyes closed, I pull out and slide back in.

I kept on doing that till she squirts once again, she opens her eyes.

Nkosie: close your eyes once more time I will fucking stop

she innocently nods.

Nkosie: good girl



NOVELSGURU.COM

I increased the phase while looking into her eyes as she moans and I groan, I could feel her body vibration so I went in deep.

I could also feel that I'm getting close, I have to hold it in, i want her to cum first.

I went in deep and hell those moans she let out got me weak, she cums and I follow right after her.

we both breathing heavily, she kisses me on the lips and pulls out.

Khwezi: you still taking me out

Nkosie: this late

Khwezi: Nkosie!!

NOVELSGURU.COM

I laugh.

Nkosie: I'm just joking.

we went to take a shower, we got done and dried our bodies.



we lotioned them and we got dressed.

we went downstairs and I took my car keys.

we got inside the car.

Khwezi: so where are we going?

Nkosie: I know a place and you gonna love it



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: as long as there's meet then I'm down

Nkosie: you sound like a Zulu man

Khwezi: no I don't

she laughs.

Nkosie: you do

she has the cutest laugh.

Khwezi: just drive and stop lying to me

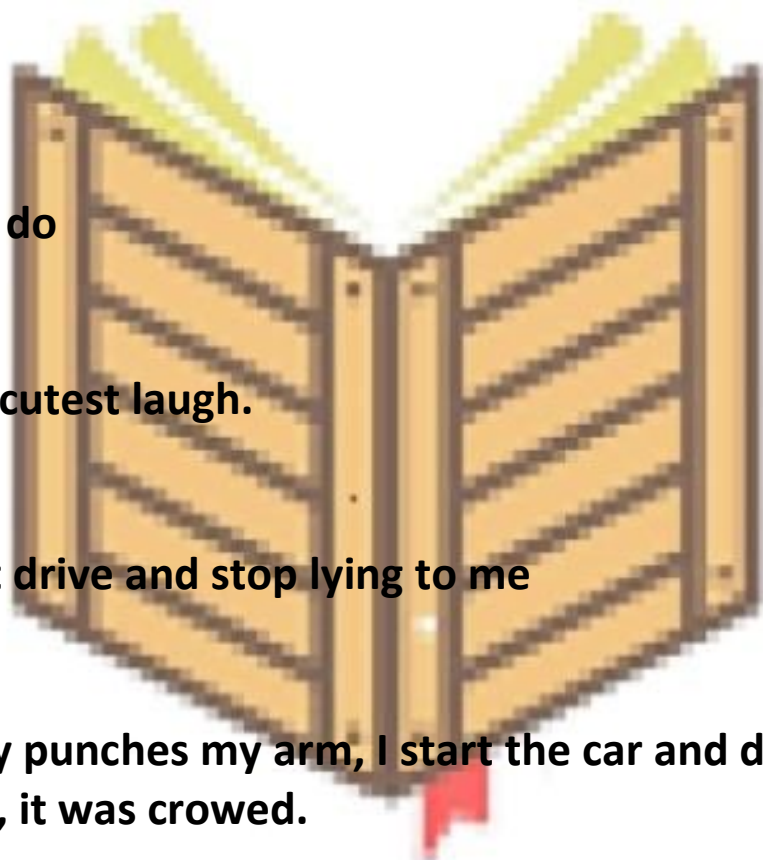
she playfully punches my arm, I start the car and drove to the shisanyama, it was crowed.

•
•
•

NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

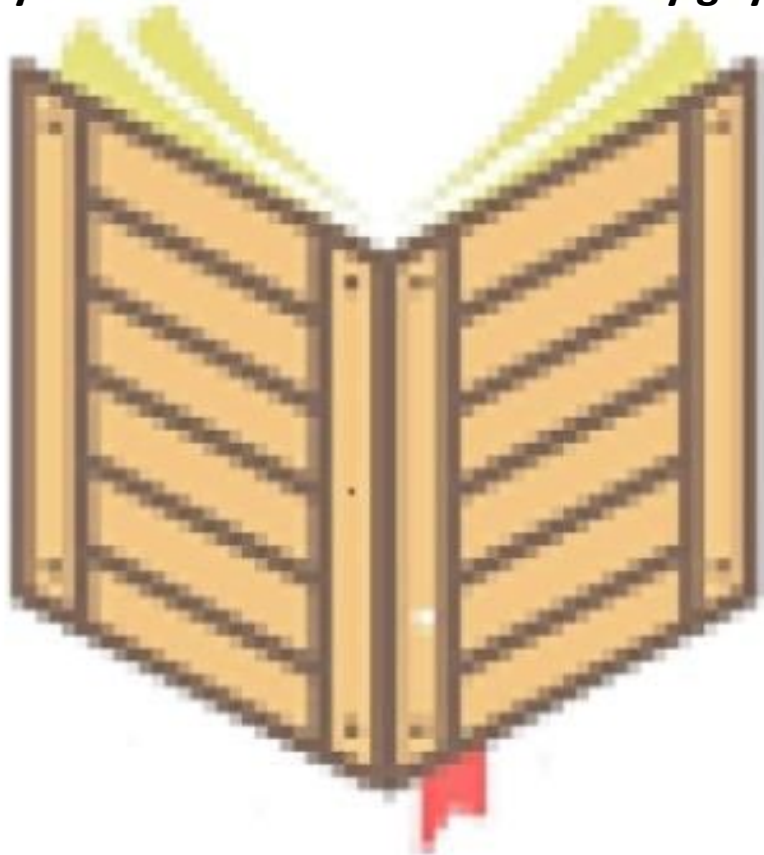
Insert 72



KHWEZILOKUSA.

we got out of the car, we went in and everyone was happy to see Nkosie. I'm surprised that he even knows all of them, they seemed to respect him.

I wonder why cause to me he is some ordinary guy.



NOVELSGURU.COM

we ordered some meat and we set down eating while having a chat, it was so much fun as he seemed to be enjoying himself.

I started to feel uncomfortable as I felt someone's eyes on me in an uncomfortable way, I drink my juice and I look at Nkosie.

his phone rang, he answered.

Nkosie: sho...talk...what? you did what?...how could you be so careless?...here?...fuck you man

he drops the call frustrated.

Nkosie: we need to leave

Khwezi: why? is everything okay?

Nkosie: no everything is not okay, we need to get out of here

he took out some money and payed, he pulled me by the hand and we walk out, I noticed a lot of car pulling over and some man getting out with guns.



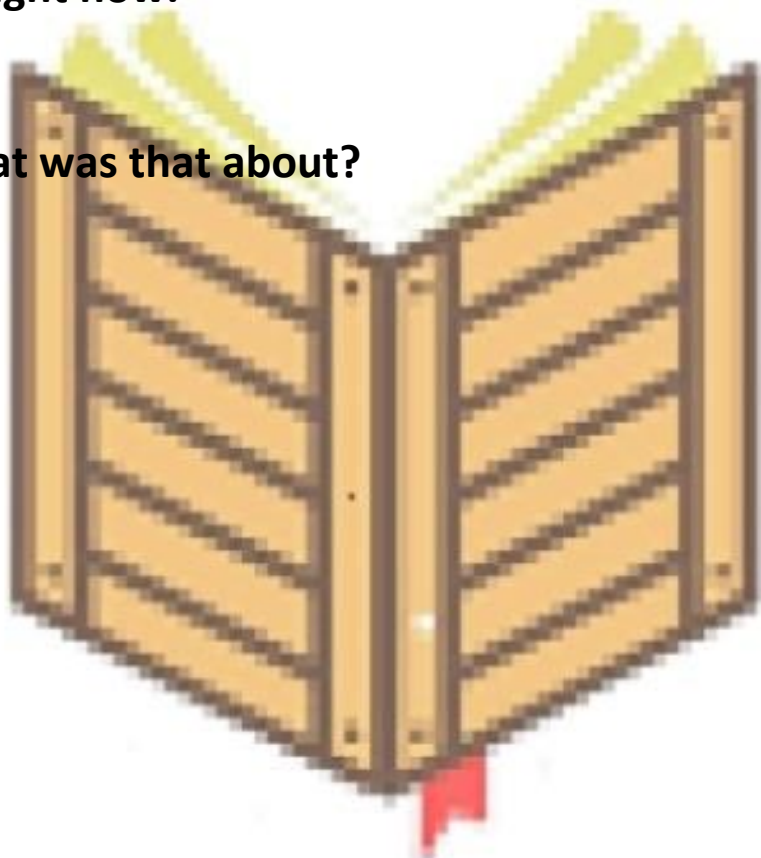
NOVELSOURU.COM

Nkosie: shit...get inside the car

**he opens the car and we went in without those man seeing us,
we drove off and few second I hear gunshots back at the
shisanyama.**

I'm scared right now.

Khwezi: what was that about?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: it's nothing

Khwezi: where those people looking for us?

Nkosie: nope...they were looking for me and if they find me with you...

Khwezi: I'm sure there must be a way to sort it out

Nkosie: death is the way...

I notice some cars following us.

Khwezi: Nkosie they are following us

Nkosie: I can see that fuck!! call Leroy

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: what?

Nkosie: take my phone and call fucking Leroy, tell him it's code red

He gave me his phone and my hands are shaking, he gave me his pin and my heart melted seeing me and him as the wallpaper and then seeing me as the home screen.

I called Leroy and he answered immediately.

Leroy: boss

Khwezi: Nkosie said I should tell you it's code red



NOVELSGURU.COM

Leroy: we on our way

he hung up.

I'm shaking, Nkosie is driving so fast and I swear he might get us killed if he continues like this.

he held my hand and looks at me.

Nkosie: I'm so sorry, we should have stayed home

Khwezi: what's going on?

he doesn't respond the next thing they start shopping at the car, then boom our car tier blust and the car starts spinning while trying to stop.

Nkosie placed his one arms over my chest as the car hits the tree, I start coughing the smoke coming from the front of the car seemed to be everywhere.

Khwezi: Nkosie!!



NOVELSGURU.COM

he was bleeding in the head but he seemed okay, he took off his seat belt and he got on top of me taking out his gun.

Nkosie: don't make a sound and stay in the car

I nod as tears came out of my eyes, the next thing he shot two guys who was opening both the door on different sides.

he got out of the car and started to shoot at the guys, the shooting stops and I get worried.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I take a peak and they are dragging him to some old man who is standing there with glasses on.

they seemed to be talking then they started to beat him up, kicking him and stepping on him, it was a lot to take in and I held my mouth looking at that.

then two guys came to me and they dragged me out of the car while I screamed, Nkosi was laying on the road bleeding real bad.

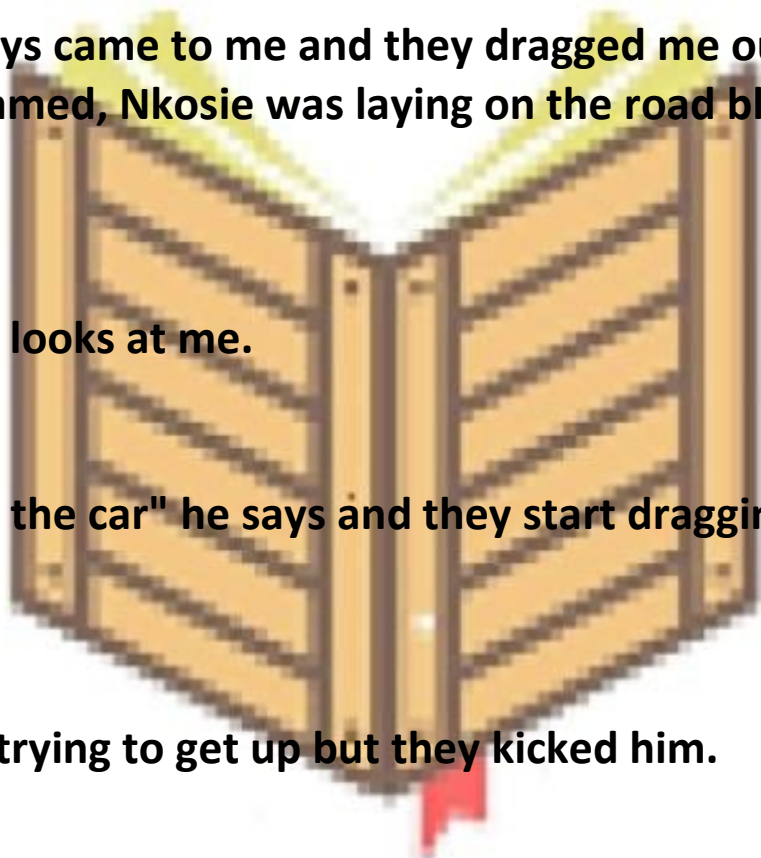
the old man looks at me.

"take her to the car" he says and they start dragging me to the car.

I saw Nkosi trying to get up but they kicked him.

as I was being pushed inside the car, I noticed some car driving our way and I knew that it was Nkosi's brother cause the number plates had "Mthembu on them"

they stop and got out of the car shooting at the gaurds, Sya shot the two guy who had me and he came to me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: you okay?

Khwezi: Nkosie...he is hurt

Sya: relax I will take you to the car while we sort this out

Khwezi: but Nkosie

Sya: he will be fine now let's go cover me!!



NOVELSGURU.COM

he tells his brothers as he took me to the car, I stayed there and I watch them shoot and fight with the guys who were causing us.

I noticed the old man getting inside his car and driving off, they shot at his car and Sya cursed cause the car was long gone.

the shooting stopped.

I got out of the car and I went to Nkosie, he was on the floor bleeding like crazy.

Khwezi: please don't die

I cried and he chuckles, he groans in pain cause he is hurt really bad.

.
. .
.

FOREVA YENA

NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 73

NARRATIVE.

They took Nkosie to the car and they drove to his place, they didn't want to go to their parents house cause they know how their mother gets over such things.

Nkosie is badly hurt and Khwezi is sitting at the back seat while brushing his hair and talking to him as he smiles and groans in pain.

Sya arrives at Nkosie's place and they went inside, they all park their cars outside and Ntando got out helping Sya take Nkosie inside.



NOVELSGURU.COM

they took him to the living room and made him to comfortably lay on the Sofia while Khwezi stayed in his sight not wanting to leave him in such state.

Nkanyezi: I just called the family doctor and he will be on his way

Sya: great now we need to talk about the attach

Sandile: let's just wait for the doctor to get here and help Nkosi then we can talk about what happened

Nkanyezi and Ntando nod agreeing with Sandile.

Khwezi: what is going on exactly? I wanna know what was the reason we almost lost our lives not to mention the baby I'm carrying, who were those people and what did they want?

NOVELSGURU.COM

they brothers remain silent cause they know how Nkosie strictly told them not to involve Khwezi in any of the business they are doing.

they are just following their brothers orders.

Khwezi: why are y'all silent? tell me what is going on?

Ntando: Khwezi please lower your voice and go upstairs to take a shower you look like a mess

Khwezi: don't tell me what to do bhut'Ntando, stop handling me like I'm some precious egg that can break any moment...

she sighs as she was about to continue her sentence noticing that she is shouting.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I'm sorry it's just that all this is kissing me off and y'all being quite and not telling me anything is making me more and more angrier

Ntando: we understand Khwezi but you shouldn't be under any stress right now you are busy stressing about something that non of your business

Khwezi: non of my business? you kidding me right now *laughs a little* I almost died for fucks sakes

Nkosie groans in pain as he tried to move and touch Khwezi's hand.

Nkosie: just listen to them okay

he says in a low tone looking into her eyes, he tried to sit up straight and she helped her.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: Nkosie...

Nkosie: listen Khwezi for once...

he shouts and groans in pain, Khwezi looks at him then back at

his brothers, she stood up and she went upstairs.

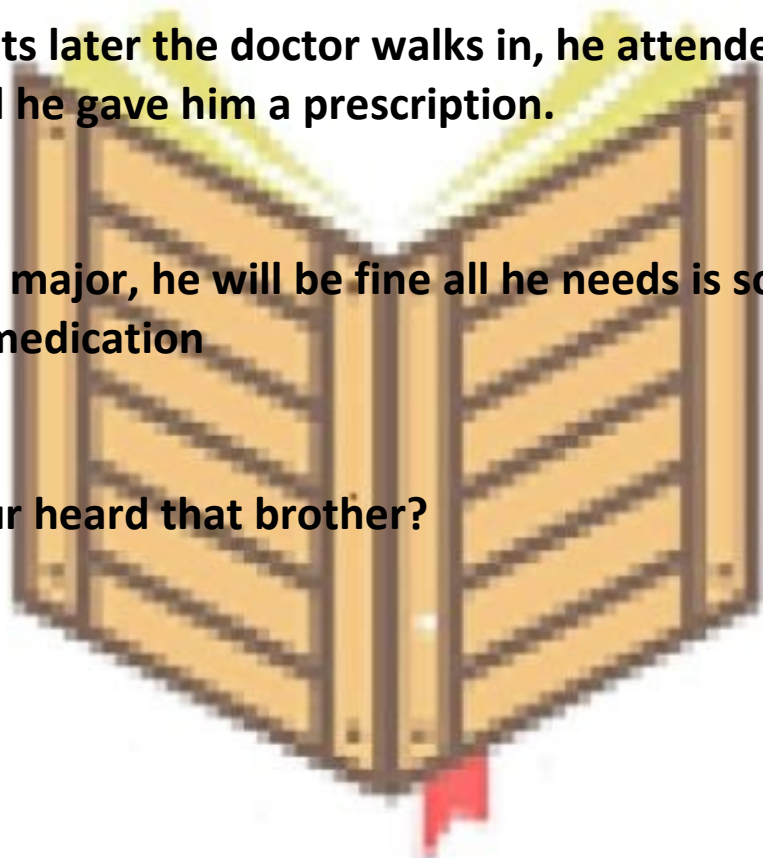
Sya: that girl right there is hard to handle. how do you manage?

they laugh and Nkosie tried but the pain was a lot.

few moments later the doctor walks in, he attended to Nkosie's wounds and he gave him a prescription.

Doc: it's not major, he will be fine all he needs is some rest and to take his medication

Sandile: your heard that brother?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie gave him a side eye, Ntando walks the doctor out.

Nkanyezi: now since you all up and good, let's talk about the attack

Sya: thank you...what was that about really?

he looks at Nkosie.

Nkosie: from the call I got from Leroy he told me that he kidnapped the wrong girl

Sandile: by "wrong girl" what do you mean?

Nkosie: he kidnapped Terminators daughter

Ntando: Terminator?

Nkosie: he is a ganglord from Cape Town, he runs that city from top to back...he doesn't like people who hurt his loved ones and we just took his daughter imagine the damage we caused



NOVELSGURU.COM

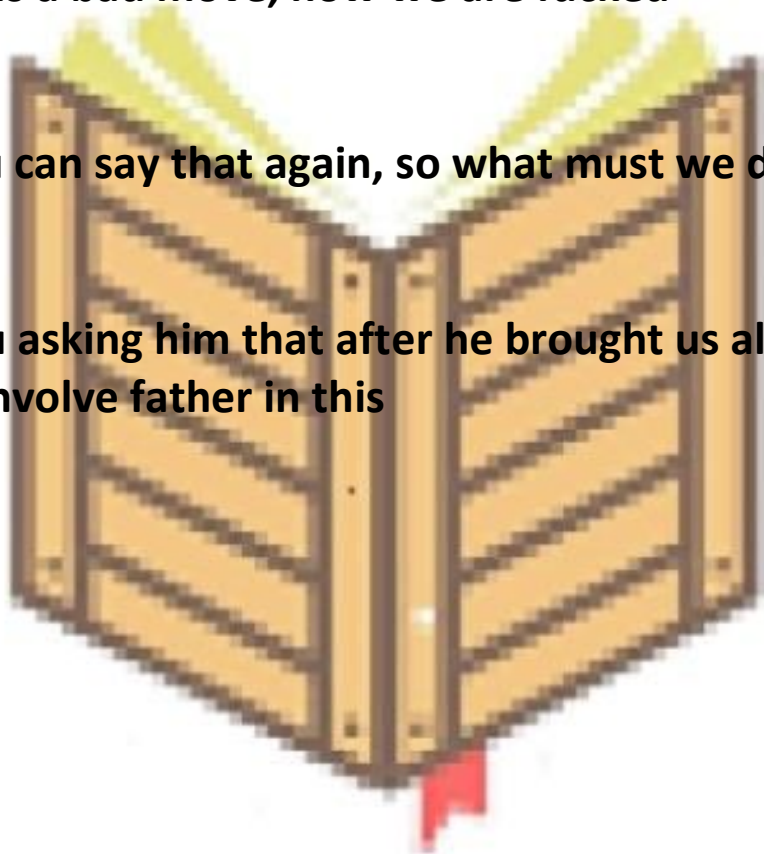
Ntando: what was Leroy doing in Cape Town?

Nkanyezi: we needed fifty girls maybe he was trying to increase the number

Sya: that was a bad move, now we are fucked

Sandile: you can say that again, so what must we do brother?

Ntando: you asking him that after he brought us all into this? we should involve father in this



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: usuyahlanya yini ekhanda Kungentando? (are you out of mind now Kungentando?)

Ntando: ungakhulumi nami kanjalo mfana uyangizwa? (don't talk to me like that boy you here me?)

**Nkosie: ubhiza bani ngomfana? yewena boy ngzokhombisa amasende emfene mina ungijwayela kabi fucking bastard
*clicks tongue***

Nkanyezi: you two should stop this nonsense

Ntando: nah he shouldn't be talking to me like that I'm the eldest here

Nkosie: then act like you one, look I will get this sorted tomorrow right now y'all should ensure that this doesn't get to father and also that the deal goes smoothly

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: Nkosie is right we shouldn't be here fighting about this, he will handle it like he said. and Ntando if you have a problem just say it now man and stop acting like this

Ntando: ain't got no problem here

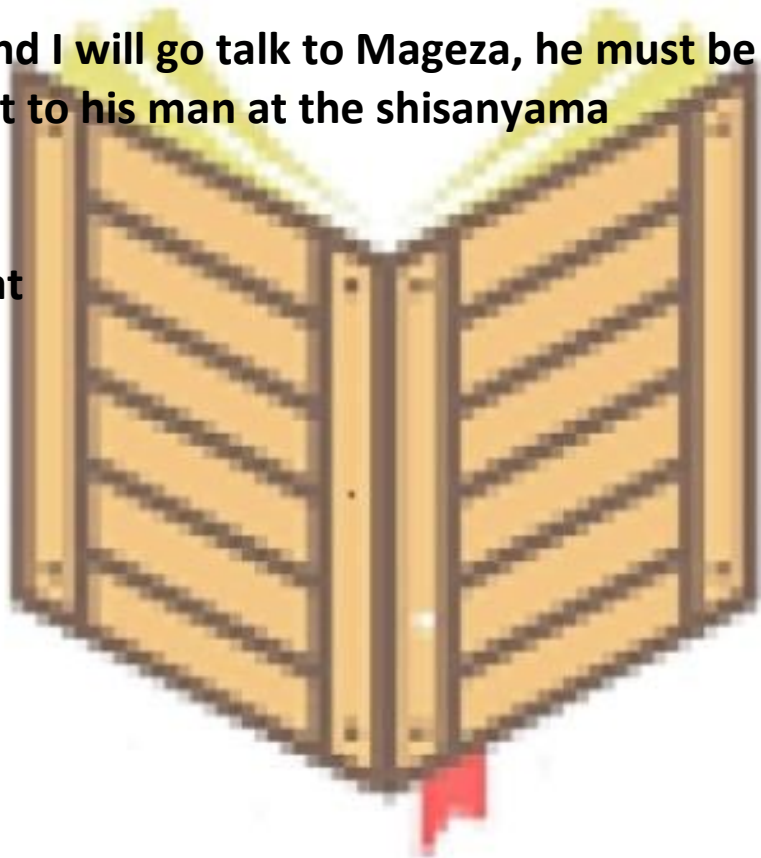
Sandile: perfect I will go check on Tom

Sya: I will go with Ntando to check on the girls

Nkanyezi: and I will go talk to Mageza, he must be pissed that they did that to his man at the shisanyama

Nkosie: great

he sighs.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: ohh and bro I will bring you the medication the doctor prescribed for you

Nkosie: dankie

they all got up.

Sya: get better bro

he smiles and he left, the rest of them also left.

Nkosie got up and he limped upstairs, it was painful and took a lot of time to get up the stairs.

he opens the room door and Khwezi is in bed crying, Nkosie sighs and he walks to the bed, he got inside.

Nkosie: Mapholoba

NOVELSGURU.COM

she sniff wiping her tears and she looks at him, she start all over again.

Nkosie: khuluma namii sthandwa samii (talk to me my love)

Khwezi: tonight was...I can't imagine the thought of you being beaten up like that and you being taken away from me

Nkosie's heart aches in pain as he remembers that he won't be in this world for that long and her words are making him really sad that he is going to lose her and she will lose him.

Nkosie: nothing happened to me my love, I'm fine as you can see these are just small wounds they will heal

Khwezi: I watched them beat you up and I couldn't do anything about it



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: sit properly and look at me

he said in a commanding yet calm tone, she set up straight and looked at him.

he cupped her face into his hand and used his thumbs to wipe her tears on her cheeks.

Nkosie: I'm sorry you had to go through that and see all that baby trust me if I could go back in time and fix all that then I would *sighs* but I can't...

Khwezi: if I could also change your faith then I would but I can't, the path you shall take is already decided for you and it hurts that in a few months you will be taken away from me

Nkosie held back his tears, deep down he knows that he wants to stay with her forever but he can't due to his health.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: look baby I might not give you a happy ending nor be with you forever but either way baby it will always be you and me till the end

Khwezi: this is so complicated baby and I just wish for God to uncomplicated it for us

Nkosie: I'm gonna die and you have to accept that

Khwezi is fighting her tears after he said that line, would you not cry if your loved one looked you in the eyes and told you that they are going to die? you would right?

Khwezi: there must be some other way

Nkosie: I don't want to take someone else's heart



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: but think about it, if you do the transplant then we will get to be together forever

Nkosie: I don't know baby...I really have been considering that but I don't think at this time I will find the right donor. it takes a long time to find one and I don't wanna hope on something that might not even end up happening

Khwezi: Ngyakuzwa Mvelase (I hear you)

Nkosie: now please stop crying cause you look really ugly

Khwezi laugh and he smiles.

Khwezi: Ngyakthanda Mvelase ngenhliziyo yamii yonke ukufa nakho akusoze kwashitsha imizwa yamii (I love you Mvelase with all my heart even death can't change the way I feel about you)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: uthandwa yimi mashiya Amahle ngathi azoshumayela, MaMvelase...

he smiles and pecks her on the lips.

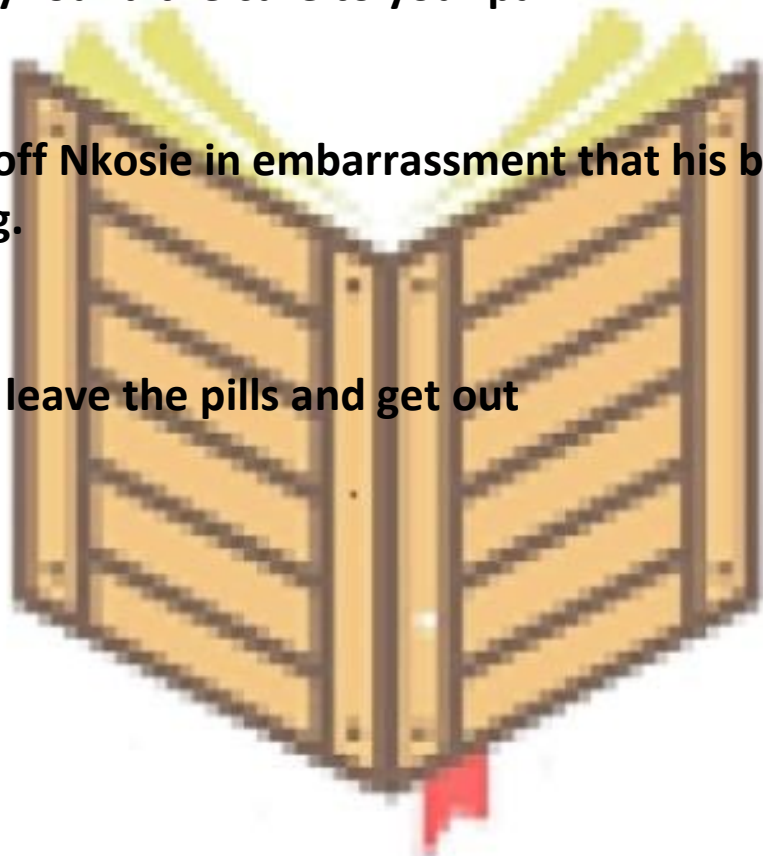
Khwezi got on top of him and gave him a steamy kiss the pain he felt immediately went away as he pulls her closer.

they are disturbed by Sandile walking in and clearing his throat.

Sandile: didn't mean to disturb y'all but I can see brother you have already found the cure to your pain

Khwezi got off Nkosie in embarrassment that his brother say them kissing.

Nkosie: just leave the pills and get out



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: you don't have to tell me twice

he place the pills on the chair and he left, Nkosie looks at Khwezi who was looking down playing with her fingers.

he smiles.

Nkosie: where were we?

Khwezi: where were we with what?

Nkosie: ungadlali ngamii Mapholoba (don't play with me)

Khwezi giggles and got off the bed taking to medication, she poured him some water and he drank his medication.

she stood there watching him drink his medication.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: so you not going to tell me what was the attack about?

Nkosie: it was just a misunderstanding with some client of mine

Khwezi: that they had to involve guns and almost kill us

Nkosie: I will fix it do not worry

Khwezi: you better I also did not like the way your brother talked to me

Nkosie: Ntando? I heard you two arguing, you handled him real good, he shouldn't have talked to you like that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: mxm

she rolls her eyes, they took a shower together and they got dressed.

they got undercover and Nkosie was drowsy, he layed on Khwezi's boobs while brushing her baby bump, they slept.

.
. .

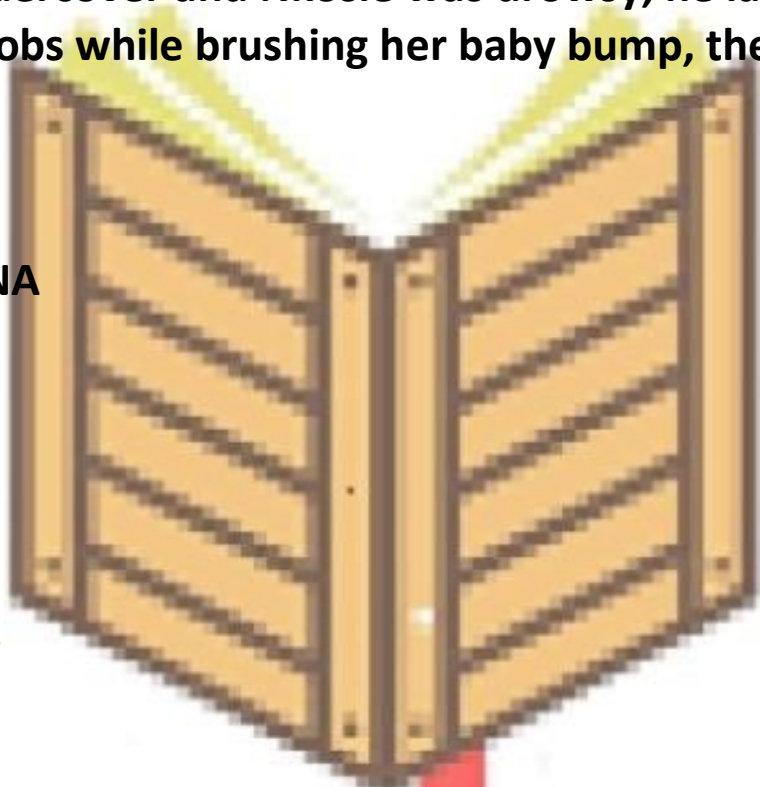
FOREVA YENA

Insert 74

NARRATIVE.

The following morning, the Mthembu brothers had everything sorted and everything was okay. Nkosie asked them to not release Terminators daughter.

he got up and his body was sore, the pain was ten times worse. Khwezi was still enjoying her sleep, He got up and limped to the bathroom.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he took a shower and he stood there for hours thinking about what happened yesterday, he turns off the tap and he steps out of the shower.

he takes a towel to dry his body and Khwezi walks in the bathroom yawning, she smiles when she sees Nkosie.

Nkosie: sthandwa samii



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi smiles.

Khwezi: are you okay?

Nkosie: I'm fine I just need to get dressed and head somewhere

Khwezi: Nkosie!!

Nkosie: Khwezi I need to fix what happened yesterday, I can't just let people walk on top of my head. they almost hurt you and I would be damned to let them live

Khwezi: Nkosie I'm okay as you can see, I don't want you to go out there hurting people because of me

Nkosie: I'm not gonna argue with you about this

Khwezi: Nkosie you are still hurt and you need to rest

Nkosie: I'm fine babe relax

he walks closer to Khwezi and held her by the waist looking into her eyes.

Nkosie: everything is going to be okay, I will be back trust me

Khwezi sighs.

Khwezi: as long as you going to be safe

Nkosie kisses her on the cheek.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I love you

Nkosie: I love you too

Khwezi: I love you more

Nkosie: I loved you first

Khwezi giggles.

Nkosie went back to the main room and Khwezi took a shower.

**Nkosie started of by lotioning his body and he got dressed,
Khwezi got out and she also got dressed.**

**Nkosie went downstairs with Khwezi, He took his car keys and
Khwezi looks at him.**

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you not going to have breakfast?

Nkosie: I'm rushing MaMthembu

Khwezi: did you take your medication?

Nkosie: no I don't need it

Khwezi: look at yourself

Nkosie is standing there with his one hand on the counter for support, his forehead got sweat.

Khwezi: just sit down and I'm going to make you something quick to eat



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: Khwezi ngithe ngikahle (I said I'm fine)

Khwezi: Mvelase ngyakucela (please)

Nkosie looks at her and he smiles a little.

Nkosie: I don't know what I would do without you

Khwezi: stop rushing a good day starts with some good breakfast which you will have right now

she smiles.

Nkosie: good breakfast you say?

he says with a naughty smile.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: behave yourself

Nkosie: I will try being at my best behaviour



he said in a deep tone and bites his lower lip, he set on the kitchen high chair.

Khwezi giggles and She started to make a sandwich for Nkosie, she added some meat to the dish, she poured him some juice.

Khwezi: here you go, I will go get your medicine

Nkosie took his food and Khwezi looks at him.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: what?

Khwezi: you forgetting something?

Nkosie: what am I forgetting?

Khwezi: really now?

she folds her arms, Nkosie smirks.

Nkosie: Ngyabonga Mapholoba

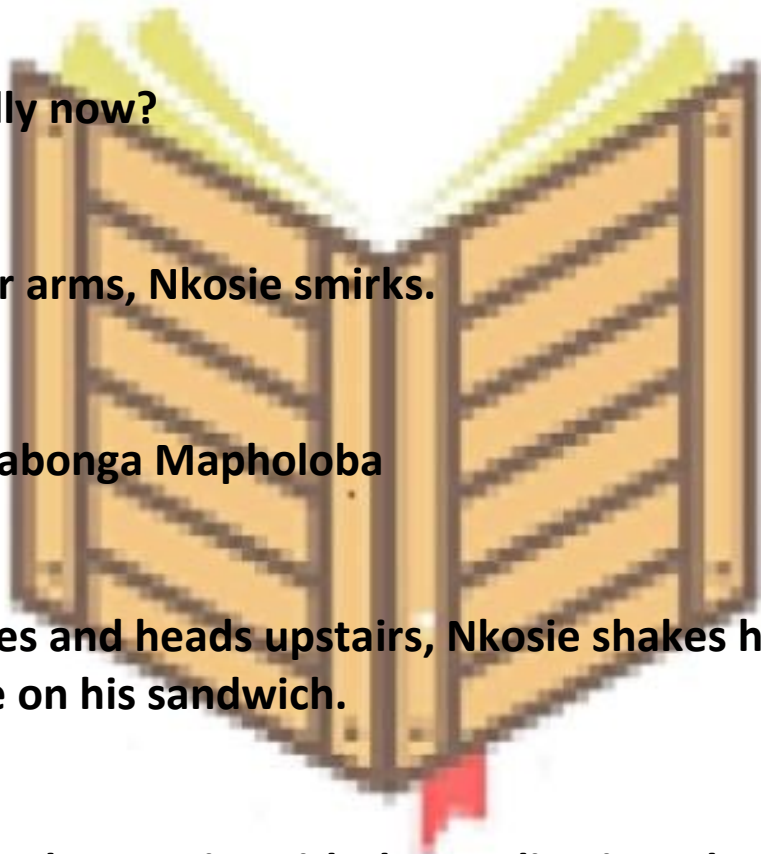
Khwezi smiles and heads upstairs, Nkosie shakes his head while taking a bite on his sandwich.

Khwezi came downstairs with the medication, she pours him some water.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: so when am I getting the other good breakfast?

he says taking one last bite on the sandwich.

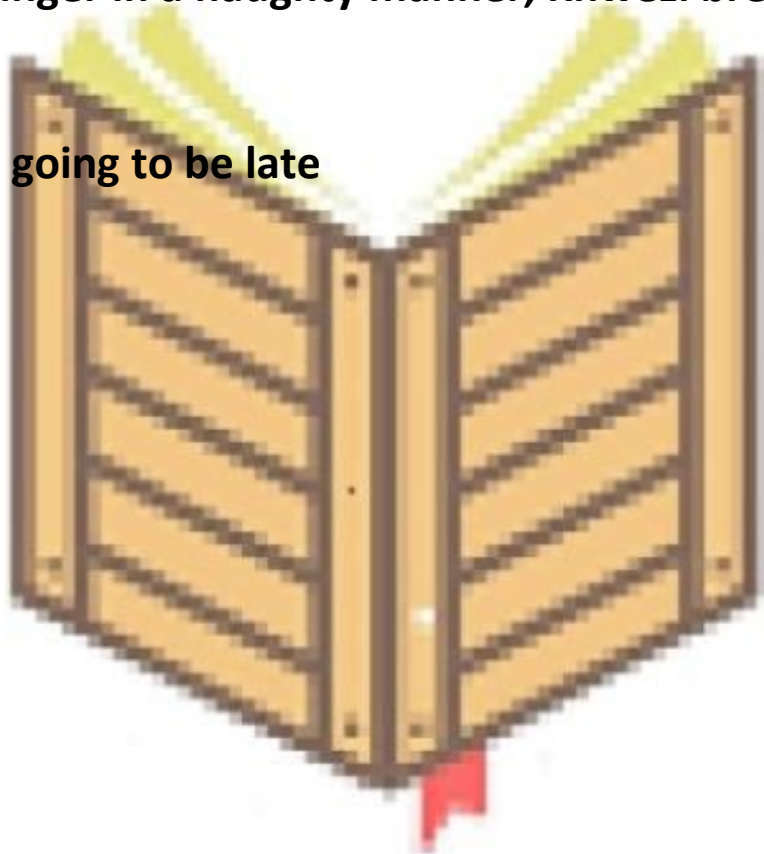


Khwezi: I don't know what you talking about

Nkosie: you know exactly what I'm talking about

he licks his finger in a naughty manner, Khwezi breaths in.

Khwezi: you going to be late



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: am I?

Khwezi: Nkosie!!

He laughs.

Nkosie: I'm just pulling your leg

Khwezi: mxm uyangihlupha yazii

Nkosie: if ungahlushwa yimi uzohlushwa ubani?

Khwezi: just take your medication

he smirks and finishes his food, she gave him a wet cloth to wipe his hand and he did. he took his medication and he thanks Khwezi.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: now you look better

Nkosie got up.

Khwezi: wait...you got something here

she took a cloth and she wipes something which was at the side of his mouth.

Nkosie pulls her closer to him.

Nkosie: marry me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi laughs a little.

Khwezi: you bluffing now, you need to go now

Nkosie: I'm serious, I want you to be my wife

Khwezi: do better then that maybe I will agree

Nkosie steals a kiss and grabs her ass, he got hard and pulls her even closer, she could feel his boner so she pulled out.

Nkosie's eyes were small so were Khwezi's, he bites his lower lip and She moves away from him.

Khwezi: *clears throat* you gonna be late

Nkosie doesn't say anything he kissed her on the forehead, he took his phone and car keys. he got out, he got inside his car and drove to meet Terminator.

he parks his car were he was told he could meet with Terminator, he took his gun and tucked it behind his jeans.

he slowly walks inside the building and two men came out of no were and pointed guns at him, he stops and he looks at them.

he continues to walks inside the building, there was the same old men who was there yesterday night when Nkosie was being beaten up.

they call him Terminator, he had a white beard and had black glasses on.

Terminator: King we meet again, my man didn't beat you up that bad I will tell them to do better next time



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: next time? *chuckles* there won't be a next time

Terminator smirks.

Nkosie: if you were the Terminator you say you are you would have done what you man did yourself but then...you just some pussy

Terminator got up and he took out his gun pointing it at Nkosie.

Terminator: you took my daughter

Nkosie: you better use that gun

Terminator: I will beat you up so bad boy you will wish to be unborn

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: let's talk like mature man shall we?

he set down.

**Nkosie: we have your daughter remember that and your man
laid their dirty hands on my wife...**

Terminator: you got a weakness finally

Nkosie: so do you...also don't disturb me when talking

Terminator: Kid do you even know who I am?

Nkosie: old man don't fuck with me...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Terminator: you really did take after your father

Nkosie clenched his jaw.

he looks at him and Terminator clicks his tongue.

Nkosie: your man touched my wife so imma put a little scratches on your spoilt brat

Terminator: if you dare touch her I will kill each and everyone of your family memebers

Nkosie: if you value your daughters life you won't do that unless you don't...

Nkosie smirks.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Terminator: if anything happens to my daughter you will be staring a very huge war

Nkosie: what if I told her THEY touch her a very long time ago?

Terminator got furious and Nkosie chuckles.

Nkosie: I think you kind of forget that you in my territory and I can make you and your precious daughter disappear with just one phone call

Terminator: King this is a last warning, give me back my daughter

Nkosie: you not getting your daughter



NOVELSGURU.COM

Terminator got furious and he got up from his seat, he took out his knife and he went to Nkosie who had a knife of his own under the table.

as Terminator was about to stab Nkosie, Nkosie stabbed him first, Terminator groans in pain as he froze, Nkosie twist the knife and pulls it out.

Nkosie: that's for touching my wife

he says looking at Terminator who was bleeding.

Terminator steps back holding the stab wound, he looks at the blood that was coming out of his stomach and he pulls out his gun aiming it at Nkosie.

" i would think twice if I were you" Mr Mthembu says walking inside looking dashing like always.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Terminator gaurds all fall down on the floor dead, Sya who was at the top of the roof in a building smiles as he packs his sniper back into it's bag.

Mr M: put that gun down

he says in a commanding tone taking off his back leather gloves.

Terminator: give me my daughter back or I kill this sperm of yours

Mr M: nigga I ain't going to repeat myself

Terminator lowers his gun.

Mr M: you okay son?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: yah I'm good

Mr M: fede fede, now look you gonna walk out that door and pretend as if nothing happened

Terminator: I'm not leaving without my daughter

Mr M: you want her in a coffin?

Terminator doesn't respond.

Mr M: thought so, get the fuck out of my sight I will get my man to bring back your daughter

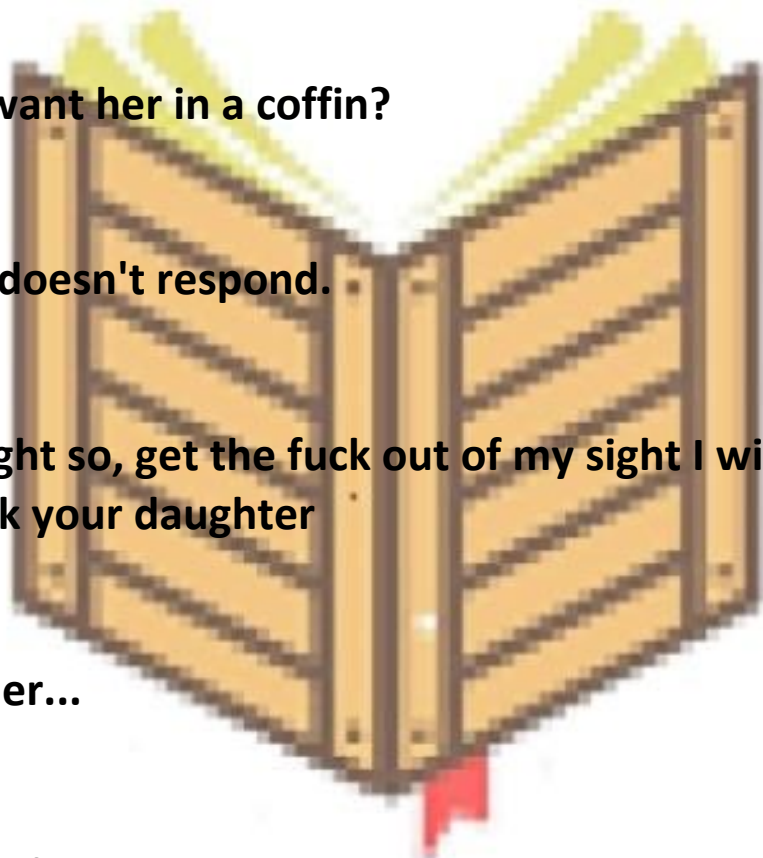
Nkosie: father...

Mr M: shut up

NOVELSGURU.COM

he looks at Nkosie and Terminator smirks, he walks out.

Mr M turns to look at Nkosie, he doesn't say anything he just walks out. Sya walks in and Nkosie looks at him.

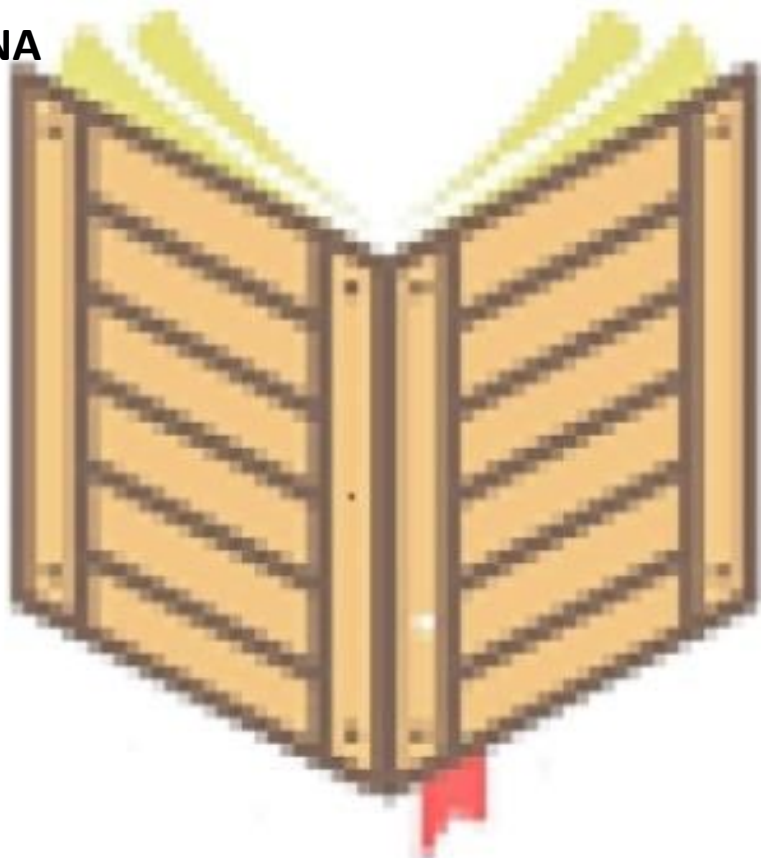


Nkosie: who told him?

Sya raises his hand in the air and Nkosie clicks his tongue walking out, Sya follows him.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 75

SANDILE.

I'm parking right outside my parents house father asked to meet us urgently and I know when he calls like this it's really urgent.

the rest of my brothers pull up, they look at me trying to figure out if I know anything but I'm just as lost as they are.

we walk in, Sya and Nkosie are already there, okay...

we took a seat and I could see that father is furious, nobody said a word cause they know how father is when he is angry.

Dad: I order you to do one clean job and I disappear for a few day to come back to this...*sighs*

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: but father I had everything handled

Dad: I don't remember saying you should speak Nkosinathi

he half shouts, Father never talks to Nkosie like this or maybe he does but not in front of us, I knew if this was happening a lot of us are going to get some of that.

Ntando: father I would like to apologise on their behalf, I had warned Nkosie to not make decisions without talking to you but you know how hard headed he is so he did not listen to me

Nkosie gives Ntando one dangerous look and he clenched his jaw, I did not like that look at all.

Dad: who ordered Leroy to go kidnap girls in Cape Town?



NOVELSGURU.COM

we all know Nkosie did but he did not tell us that, we all know he was doing it for a good reason, my palms are sweating right now.

Nkosie: I did

Dad: and who ordered the cocaine to be transformed into liquor?

Ntando: father, I had told Nkosie that it was a bad idea and he did not listen to me...I apologise on his behalf

Nkosie: just know that you the one apologising not me

Ntando: Nkosie stop being so hard headed and start listening...

Nkosie: and what wrong did I do?

NOVELSGURU.COM

the hand gesture his doing is gonna make me laugh.

Nkosie: sengibonile wena Ntando ukuthii unjani (I have seen what type of person you are Ntando)

he says pointing at him.

Dad: you two stop behaving like children

Nkosie: nah you need to remind him of his place or I will do it for you cause it seems like you unable to control your child

oh snap the heat in this room is too much.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: what did you just say to me Nkosinathi?

he looks at him.

Dad: repeat what you just said right now...

Nkosie: I said...

he got a hot slap from father, we all gasp in the room that's a first and I could see a smirk on Ntando's face.

this is all his doings, if he had not snitched on Nkosie this wouldn't be happening.

**Dad: talk to me like that once again and I will make sure to give you a way painful slap then that one
pauses&sighs you really don't know the damage that has been caused, Terminator is willing to go at any extent to get back his daughter**

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie is just seated there calm like he did not just receive a slap from father but you could see the anger in his eyes.

Dad: I will handle the Terminator issue right now I want y'all

focused on tomorrow nights deal that needs to be sealed are we clear?

Us: yah/sure

Nkosie didn't respond.

Nkosie: and Ntando should lead, I'm out

he stood up.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: we not done

Nkosie: I don't care if you done or not, you made your point so why should I stay

he walks out and we all look at him as he drives of, Father was really wrong to talk to him like that, to even hit him he was really out of line but I guess he really did cause a lot damage.

Father said a few things that needed to be done and we were dismissed, we walk out and Sya immediately grabs Ntando by the collar pushing him against the car.

Sya: you the one that sold Nkosie out, you do know what he was doing was for the best?

Ntando: get your hands off me, I don't care if it was for the best but he was getting a little too comfortable on that lead father gave him

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: fuck you dawg stop acting like a jealous chick whose fucking obsessed about a nigga she won't get

he clicks his tongue and got into his car.

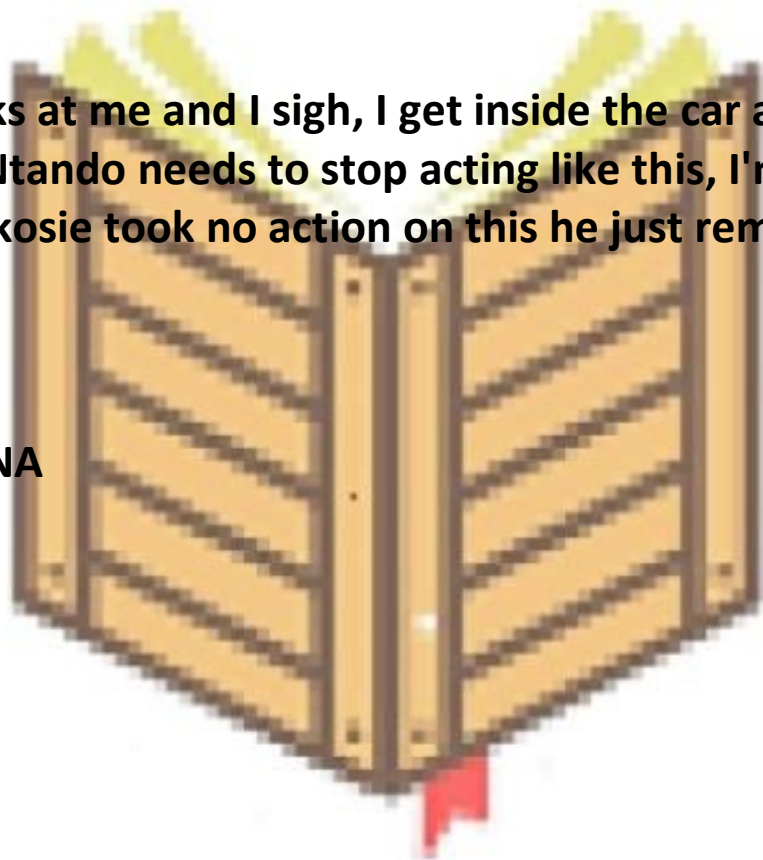
Nkanyezi: you never snitch on your bro man never

he shakes his head in disappointment and got inside his car driving off.

Ntando looks at me and I sigh, I get inside the car and I drove to my house, Ntando needs to stop acting like this, I'm even surprised Nkosie took no action on this he just remained silent.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 76

NKOSINATHI.

I don't know what speed I'm driving on, I can just feel the car moving fast just like the thoughts I have in my head.

how can father do that? in front of my brothers though? couldn't he maybe do it privately? this is messed up and Ntando acting all holy about this whole thing.

my phone ring and I know it is Khwezi, I just can't talk to her right now, I'm too angry and I don't want to end up saying the bad things.

I park outside my secrete location, it's a house, I got out and I got inside the house.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I place my car keys on the counter and I head upstairs, I took a cold shower and I got done, I wore some sweat pants and a white vest.

I went to the indoor gym, I walk inside and I wrap bandages

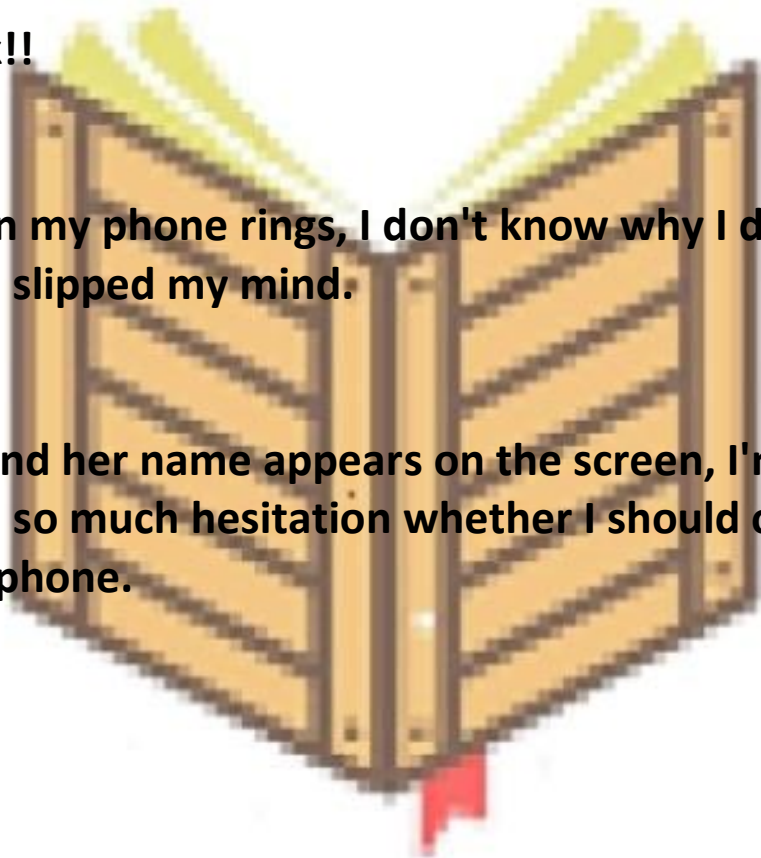
around my hand, I stand up and i look at the punching bag.

I start taking out all my anger and frustration on the beg, I couldn't feel anything but rage, my whole body is heating up and the only thing I want at this moment is to see blood, a lot of blood need to spill.

Nkosie: fuck!!

I shout when my phone rings, I don't know why I did not turn it off maybe it slipped my mind.

I pick it up and her name appears on the screen, I'm breathing heavily with so much hesitation whether I should or should not answer the phone.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I stare at the phone till it goes off, I switch it off and I place it down on the floor.

after staying the gym for hours I decided to take a break, even the pain from the being beaten up just went away.

I took a shower and I got dressed into some black tracksuits, I grab my phone and car keys, I check the time and it's 17:00.

I got inside my car and I drove straight home, I got there and I park the car inside the garage.

I enter the house on my way inside I'm welcomed by her laughter, she is seated in the living room with my sister.

When she saw me she immediately got up and gave me a tight hug while brushing the back of my head, I love it when she does that.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I was worried about you, why weren't you answering my calls?

Nkosie: I'm okay, I just needed some time to think

Khwezi: think? are you okay?

Nkosie: I'm fine just got a lot in my head

Khwezi: you want to talk about it?

Nkosie: not now, I'm hungry

Khwezi: I will dish up for you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: thank you

she let go of me and she goes to the kitchen.

Nkosie: pumpkin

Zizi: hey bhuti, how are you?

Nkosie: tired and you?

Zizi: I'm good, why you tired?

Nkosie: was at the gym

Zizi: ohh I see, you don't visit me anymore nor do you spend time with me

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I just got a lot in my plate

Zizi: I understand, look there are these sneakers I saw today at the mall and I'm wondering if you could buy them for me



I chuckle.

Nkosie: anything for you pumpkin

Zizi: thank you so we going to the mall tomorrow

Nkosie: yeah we sure are



NOVELSGURU.COM

she giggles and I head to the kitchen, Khwezi is dishing up for the three of us.

Khwezi: Sandile called asking if you are okay, are you sure you are okay Nkosie?

Nkosie: I'm fine stop worrying yourself

she pouts and I chuckle.

Nkosie: so when are we going for a check up? I want to see my baby boy

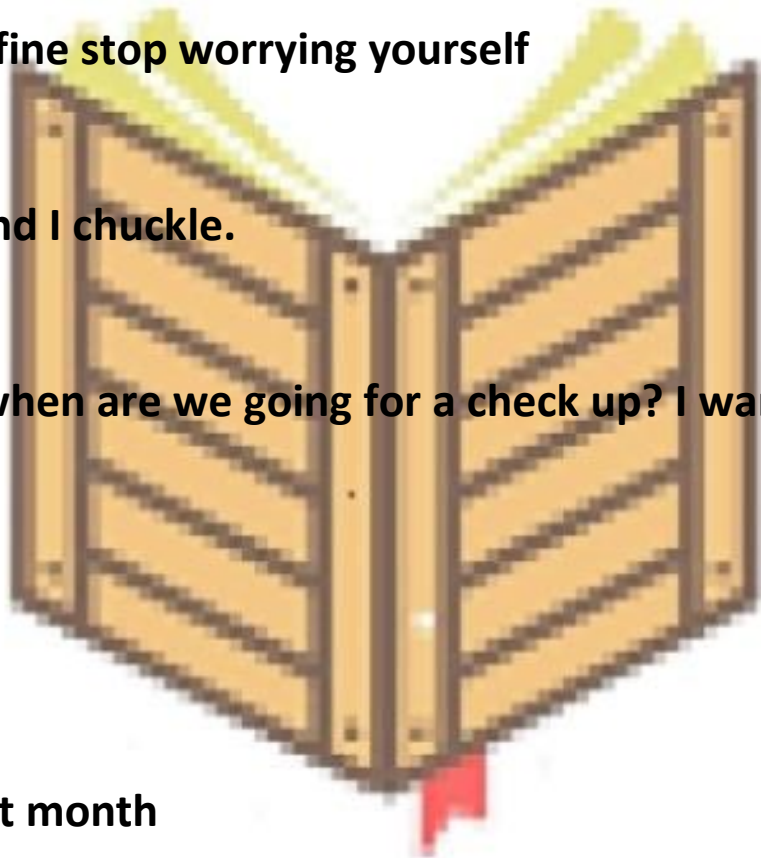
she smiles.

Khwezi: next month

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: that's far, I never got the chance to see him so I will ask the family doctor to organise something

Khwezi: that's a lovely idea



Zizi: y'all eating without me

Khwezi laughs.

Khwezi: I was about to call you

Zizi: you know how much i love your cooking prettyface

Khwezi: yeah yeah I know



NOVELSGURU.COM

she giggles.

we ate in a light conversation and I got to catch up with my sister, I really enjoy the company of my two favourite women well one is missing but nevermind.

we went to the living room and we watched a movie in the dark, Zizi was seated on her own couch and I was cuddling with Khwezi.

when the movie was over Zizi left, we went upstairs and we got undercover and slept, in the middle of the night she woke me up.

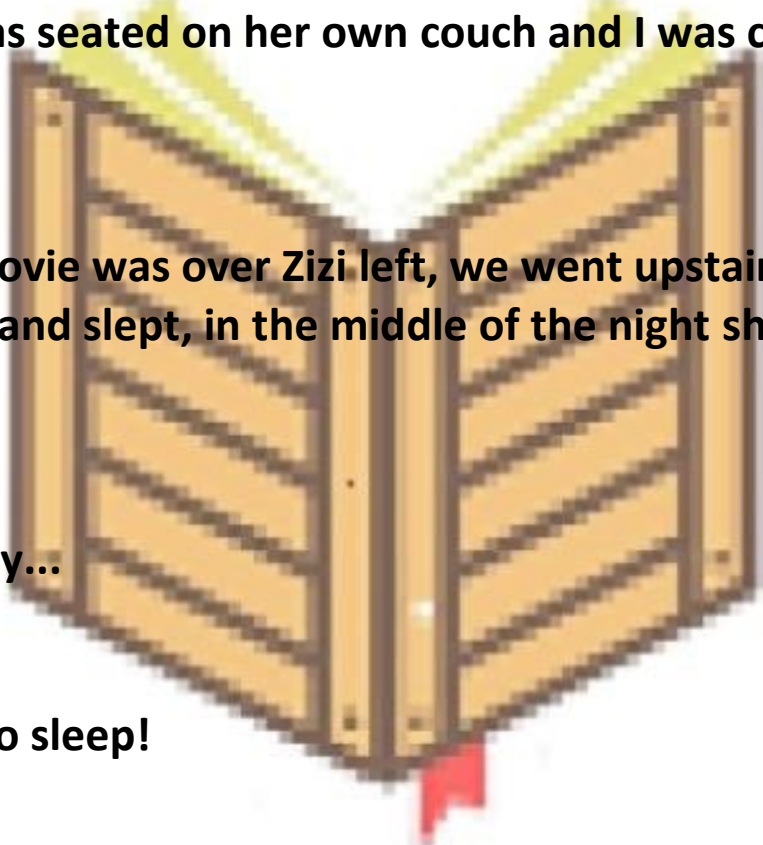
Khwezi: baby...

Nkosie: go to sleep!

I say closing my eyes but she shook me again.

Nkosie: I'm up baby, what you want?

Khwezi: I'm hungry



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: at this time?

Khwezi: yes your baby boy is making me hungry

Nkosie: what do you want I will order it for you

Khwezi: no I want you to make it for me

Nkosie: as in like I have to go to the kitchen right now and make you something to eat?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: yes baby please or else I'm going to die in hungry

Nkosie: die? you not gonna die

she starts crying.

Khwezi: baby please, I'm hungry

I wipe her tears and I give her a kiss on the forehead.

Nkosie: what you want me to make you?

**Khwezi: scrambled egg with some cheese and sausage, add a little bit of Peri Peri and some bread
smiles don't forget the juice**

Nkosie: okay I will be right back

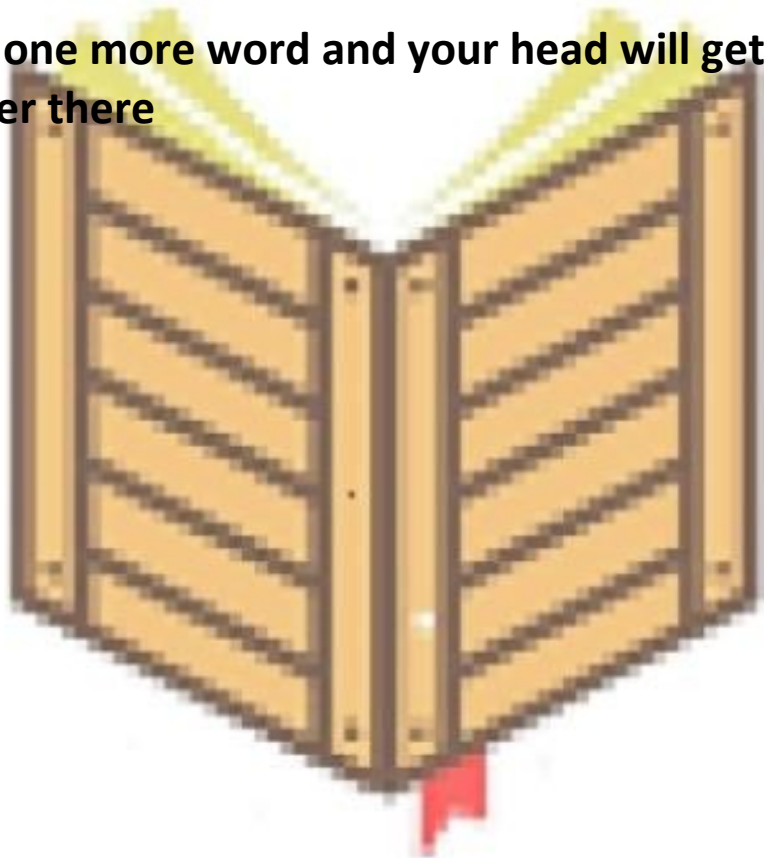
Khwezi: make it 6 egg and 4 sausages, 7 slices of white bread

Nkosie: you gonna eat all that? baby you...

Khwezi: I didn't not ask you to lecture me Nkosie

Nkosie: I'm not going to lecture you, just that what you asking is a lot...I mean who eats 6 egg? suwuchakide yini?

Khwezi: say one more word and your head will get smashed in that wall over there



NOVELSGURU.COM

she points at the walk and I smirk, I went downstairs and made her the food she wanted, I went back up and gave it to her, she started eating and I went back under cover.

Khwezi: babe wait for me to finish first you gonna sleep without me?

she pouts, I sigh and set up watching her eat, she ended up sharing her food with me and we went to back to sleep.

.
. .

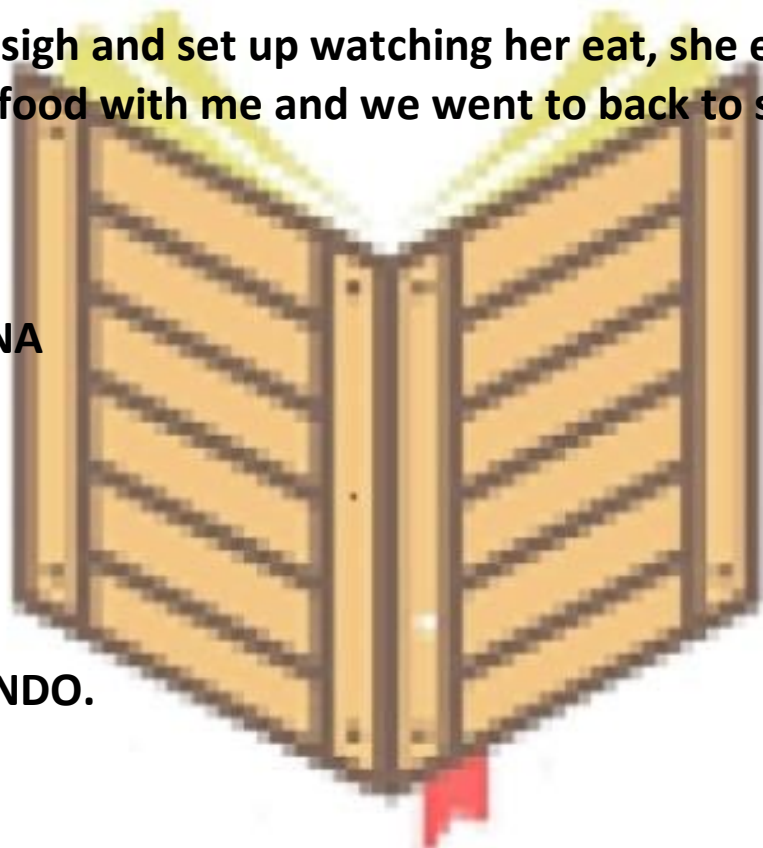
FOREVA YENA

Insert 77

KUNGENTANDO.

I woke up early in the morning and I took a shower, Me and Amahle are not using the same room because she has been annoying me lately.

I got done showering and I dried my body, I lotioned it and I got dressed to head to the warehouse.



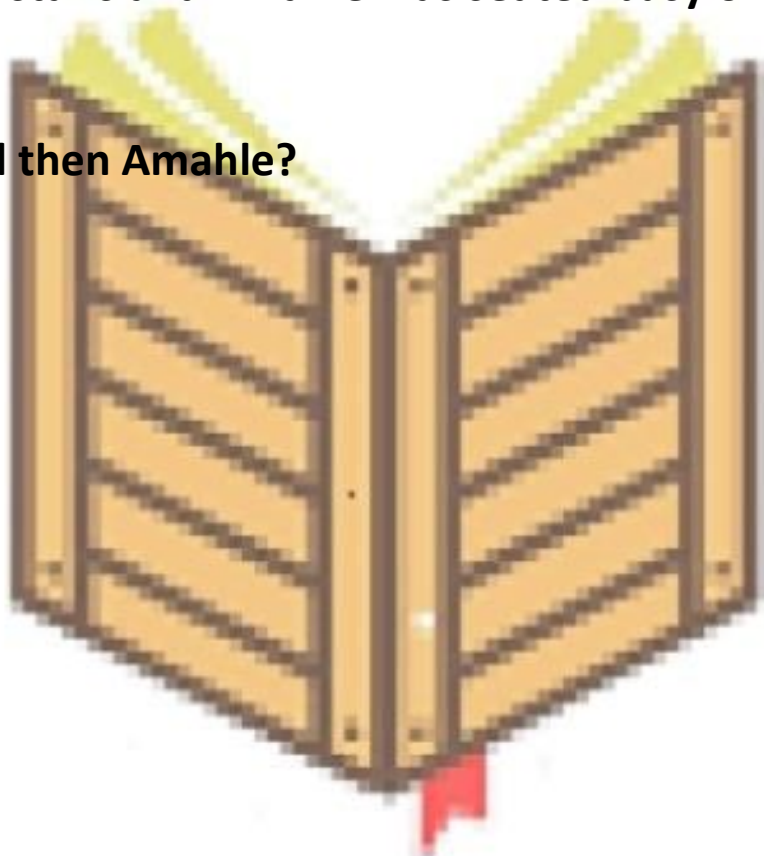
NOVELSGURU.COM

today I'm kinda in a good mood that I'm the one who will be handling the big job and closing off the deal.

It was a good thing I snitched on Nkosie cause look at me now, I'm flying high baby.

I went downstairs and Amahle was seated busy on her phone.

Ntando: and then Amahle?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amahle: and then ini? Good morning also

Ntando: where is breakfast?

Amahle: it's in the fridge uncooked, you know I can't cook

Ntando: then why didn't you order something for us?

Amahle: I can't be using my money when I can always use yours, you the man in the relationship

she smiles and I roll my eyes, Lol I me and Amahle haven't been getting along after the Sakhile incident, maybe her brother got into her head cause she has been doing things that really annoy me and make us fight.

Ntando: I will order on the way, I got places I need to be at

NOVELSGURU.COM

Amahle: excuse you what am I suppose to eat?

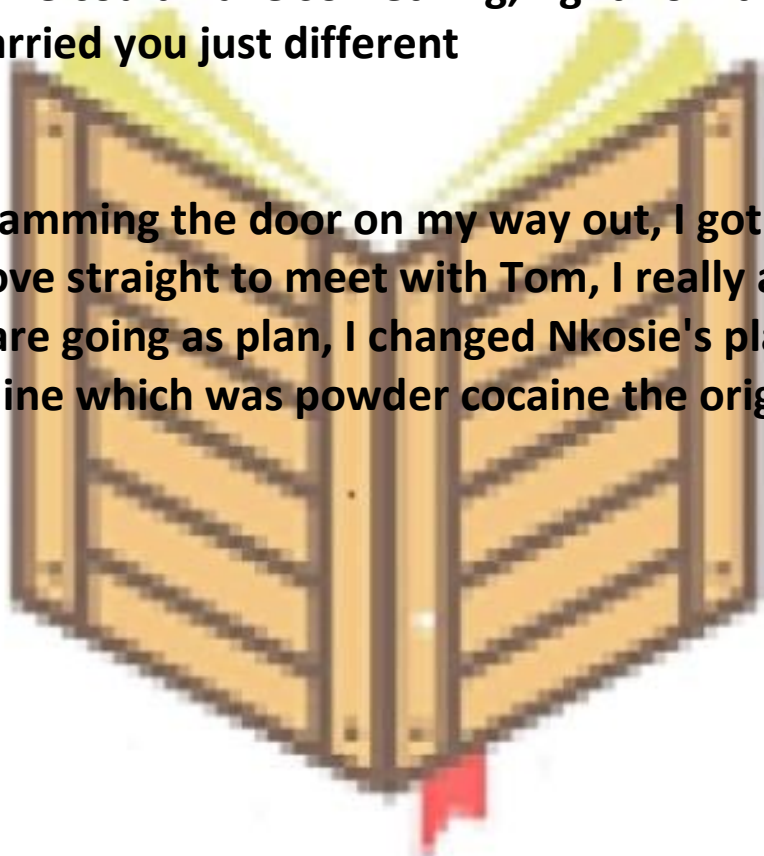
Ntando: I don't know figure that out on your own I'm leaving

I took my car keys.

Amahle: so this is why you married me? so you can treat me like trash huh? I would have just stayed home with my family that loves me

Ntando: I married you because I loved you Amahle and thought that maybe we could have something, right now this ain't the women I married you just different

I walk out slamming the door on my way out, I got inside the car and I drove straight to meet with Tom, I really am happy that things are going as plan, I changed Nkosie's plan and I sticked to mine which was powder cocaine the original.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ntando: hey Tom my man how is everything going?

Tom: not good really, I don't have enough time cause I have used all of my time to make the liquor cocaine

Ntando: come on Tom work harder, make a plan fast cave this deal is happening tonight

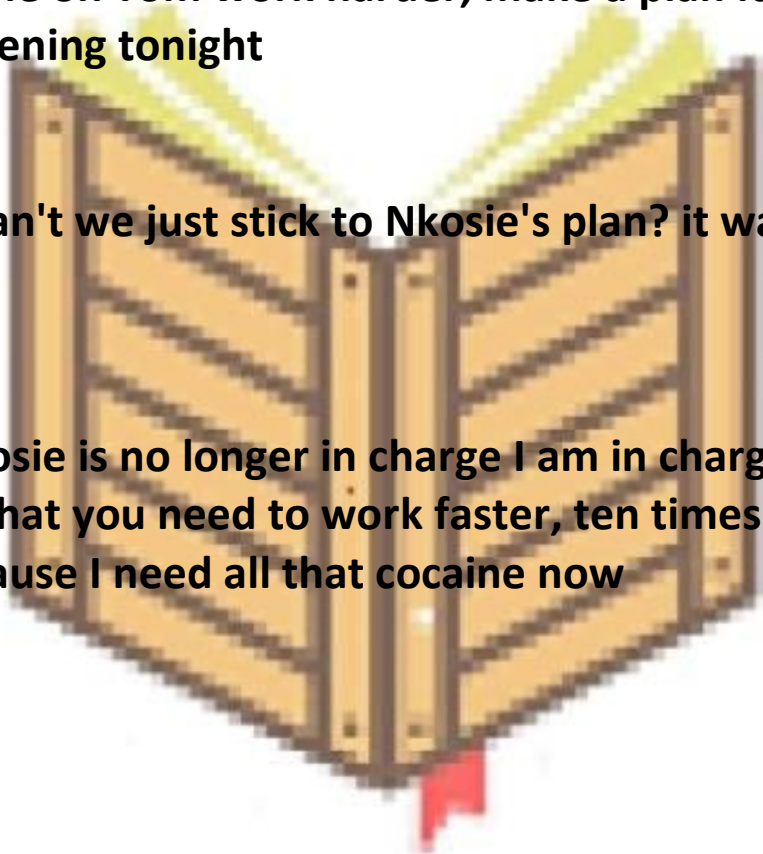
Tom: why can't we just stick to Nkosie's plan? it was nice and solid

Ntando: Nkosie is no longer in charge I am in charge and I'm telling you that you need to work faster, ten times then the shit you doing cause I need all that cocaine now

I shout.

Tom: whatever dude

he walks off, I wasn't even done talking to him, I left the warehouse and I went to check on the girls, everything was fine in that position.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Terminator girl was taken back to her father and we found a girl who replaced her, my plan is slowly falling into place, I can't wait for tonight.

•

•

. SANDILE.

I just woke up and I got a call from Nkosie that I should meet him at some place I don't even know of, I got up and I did my routine.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I wore a pair of jeans, a white t-shirt, a shirt to top up the look, I wore sneakers, I wore a cap and I went downstairs.

don't really have time for breakfast so yeah, I took my car keys and drove to the location. it was a huge building, which had 'Mthembu' on the outside.

Sandile: are we building a new family company or what?

Nkosie: nah this is our new family business

Sandile: New business? bro are you kidding? we got a lot of restaurants, hotels, companies, clubs etc now this...help me God I'm about to faint!!

I held my chest dramatically and Nkosie laughs a little shaking his head.

Nkosie: don't be dramatic, you see this is were we gonna have all our other clients dine

Sandile: it's huge

Nkosie: yes it is cause inside we will be advertising the new



NOVELSGURU.COM

cocaine liquor which is only available for the VIP and of course for tasting tonight

Sandile: wait did you just say tonight?

Nkosie: yes tonight, come let me show you

this dude is crazy, he is hosting an event and he is telling me now? I mean...what is wrong with you dude?

I plainly look at Nkosie as he shows me around.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: this will be the bar where all the drinks will be on display and...

Sandile: dude hold up, you hosting an event?

Nkosie: you rushing me I was gonna reach that part, you the one that's gonna hosts this event for us

Sandile: us?

Nkosie: yeah you also in the business dude, I hold 50%, Sya 10%, Nkanyezi 10%, Ntando 10% And you own 20%

Sandile: you kidding right?

Nkosie: no I ain't, let me show you your office

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: I got an office? damn this is gonna be good

I smile and I went to the office.

Sandile: you want me to work with you?

Nkosie: yeah why not? you have earned it plus your birthday is coming up soon

Sandile: you the best brother ever, thank you

I tried to hug Him but he moved back.

Nkosie: let's not be touchy okay?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: okay

I smile and I look at him, I just gave him a hug anyways.

Nkosie: what did I just say?

Sandile:" what did I just say?"

He chuckles.

Nkosie: no before that...

Sandile: well you know I don't listen so

Nkosie: mxm, you welcome kid I'm just doing my duties as a brother

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: and you doing them pretty well

I smile and I pull out from the hug.

Nkosie: now this is my office

Sandile: why is your office bigger then mine?

Nkosie: because you know I'm the boss

Sandile: thought I was the boss though



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you are when I'm gone though

Sandile: so unfare

Nkosie: it's very fare

I laugh, this dude.

Nkosie: so what do you think? you think you can get this place full by tonight?

Sandile: they don't call me Mseti inja yegame for nothing

Nkosie: they don't call you that

Sandile: don't ruin my moment

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: ohh sorry, shine I guess...

he shrugs and I just laugh, he joins me.

Sandile: this place will be filled trust me

Nkosie: I will send you the list of the VIP

Sandile: just email it to me, for now let's get this place to look good ohh do you have any stuff yet?

Nkosie: nope but you handle that kiddo

Sandile: I got you bro I got you!!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: great, I need to head home cause I need to drive my wife to school

Sandile: she was my wife first

Nkosie: focus in the event please before I take the 10% and give it to your wife

Sandile: I'm just kidding mahn, me and having a wife? God I'm too young

Nkosie laughs shaking his head, he walks out and I start making call, it was easier when I just said his name cause I get better response.

tonight is gonna be epic.

•
•
•

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 78

NARRATIVE.

The day went by very smoothly, Khwezi is in the study busy with her school work, there was a knock in the door and Nkosie walks in.

Nkosie: Sthandwa sami

Khwezi: hey *smiles* I was about to finish up then head down to start with the pots



NOVELSGURU.COM

she says finishing up and she got up, Nkosie stops her.

Nkosie: you know you don't have to cook everyday, you need to take some rest

Khwezi: but I love cooking and what are we going to eat? takeaway? never I'm not disable so I will cook

Nkosie: arguing with you about this ain't no use, so tonight I'm hosting an opening party at our families new club

Khwezi: the one you told me about? that good we should go then

Nkosie: I don't want you being around a lot of people plus you have school tomorrow

Khwezi: you can't take decisions for me, I also got to have a say in something since it's my life we talking about

Nkosie sighs and smiles.

Nkosie: be ready in 30 minutes then

Khwezi: sure

she got up and packed him on the lips, she went to take a shower, she got done and she dried her body and lotioned it.

she wore a tight long dress which was black in colour, she wore clear heels, she wore Nkosie's Diamond necklace around her neck.

she starting doing her hair and Nkosie walks in cause he has been waiting for an hour and Khwezi is still not done.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: baby kanti...*pause* damn baby you look good

Khwezi Smiles putting on her earrings, Nkosie came and held her by the waist breathing on her neck.

Khwezi: Nkosie you disturbing me I'm not done

she giggles as he kisses her on the neck.

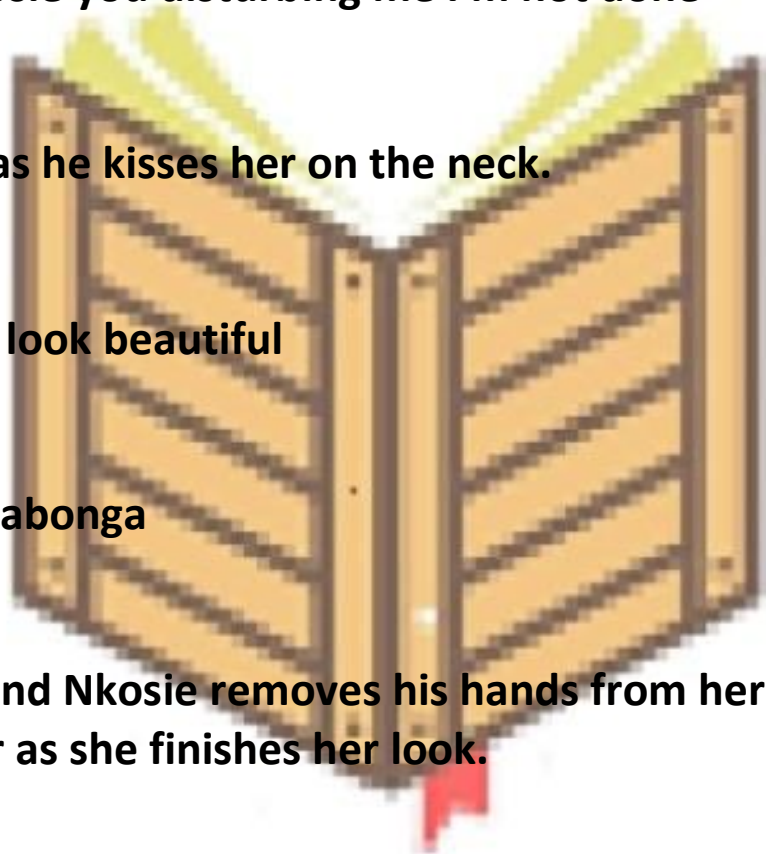
Nkosie: you look beautiful

Khwezi: ngyabonga

she smiles and Nkosie removes his hands from her waist, he watches her as she finishes her look.

they both went downstairs, Nkosie took his Rolls Royce car keys, he opens the car door for Khwezi.

Khwezi: you being a gentleman



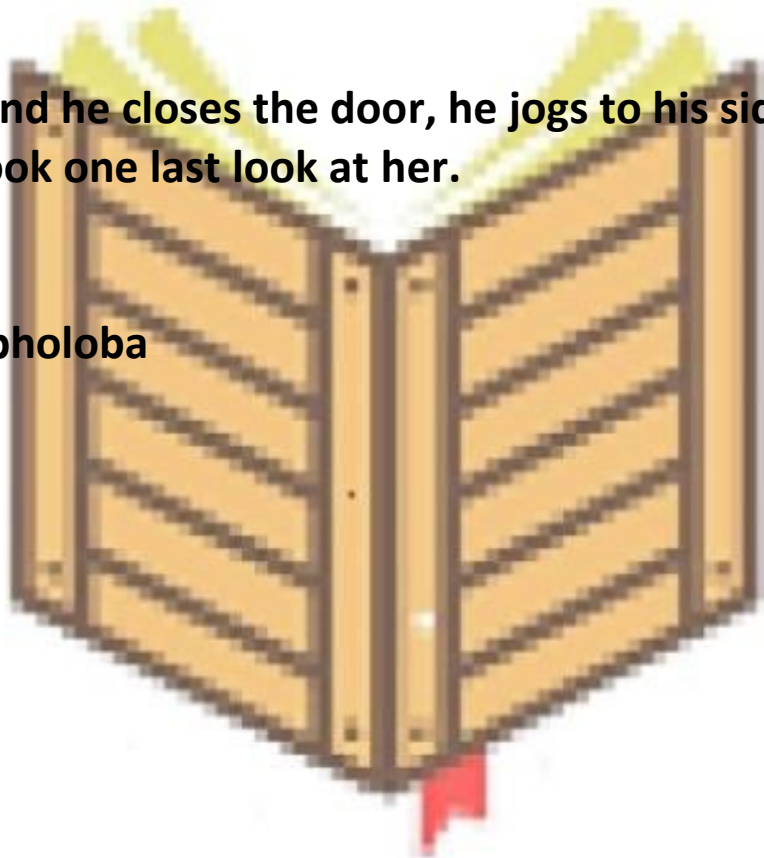
Nkosie: I'm always a gentle man what you tryin to say about me momma?

he smirks and Khwezi laughs.

Khwezi: ain't tryin to say nothing baby

she smiles and he closes the door, he jogs to his side and got inside, he took one last look at her.

Nkosie: Mapholoba



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: mmh?

she says while applying some lips gloss looking at herself in the mirror.

Nkosie: ngibuka phela mama (look at me)

Khwezi looks at him and the way he was looking at her, she got butterflies in her stomach.

Khwezi: stop looking at me like that, you making me feel wierd

Nkosie: looking at you like what?

Khwezi: like that...

she bites her lower lip looking into his eyes.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: this is how I look at you njena

Khwezi: no this look is different, you know what let's go

she looks away blushing, Nkosie made her to look at him and he got closer so did she, he takes the upper lip and she takes the bottom lip, they both close their eyes as they kiss.

the kiss was long and slow filled with lots of emotions, Khwezi was the one to pull out.

Nkosie: fuck!

he mumbles and he moved back, he was hard.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: we were leaving remember?

Nkosie: yeah yeah

he snaps out of it and starts the car, Khwezi giggles and watches him lick his lips or in other words he was licking the lip gloss?

the drive was slow and filled with laughter, he had his one hand brushing her thigh and the other on the wheel.

they arrived just in time, the place was packed with cars and a lot of people, some were still standing outside waiting to enter.

Nkosie parks his car on his spot and he went out to open the door for Khwezi, he took her hand as she got out of the car and everybody was watching.

some were taking pictures and some girls whispering at each other, Nkosie closes the door and locks the car.

They walks to the entrance, Nkosie nods at the gaurd who was at the door and he was allowed inside.

when he got inside the place was playing loud music and filled with lots of familiar and unfamiliar faces.

Sandile spots them and he went to them.

Sandile: bafo

they did a hand shake.

Sandile: hey you *smiles* looking good tonight



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I tried

she laughs.

Sandile: no you nailed it, I had your place set up and it's right this way

Khwezi: thank you, this place looks beautiful

Sandile: thank you and trust me we gonna make loads of money today

Khwezi: good for you guys

they went to the VIP section which was upstairs, there were a few people upstairs because it's a VIP of course, there is also a VIP section downstairs.

NOVELSGURU.COM

they set down.

Sandile: I will get a waiter for you guys

Nkosie: thank you bafo

Sandile: don't mention it

he walks away.

Nkosie: so what do you think?

Khwezi: I mean it not that bad



NOVELSGURU.COM

she pouts and Nkosie chuckles.

Nkosie: not that bad huh?

he pecks her on the lips.

Khwezi: Nkosie there are people here

Nkosie: so I can't kiss you? sudlala ngami Mapholoba

Khwezi giggles and they kiss, they are disturbed by the waiter.

Nkosie: get me a bottle of Hennessy and babe what do you want?

Khwezi: anything that's non-alcoholic

NOVELSGURU.COM

Waiter: that will be all?

Khwezi: is food available here?

Waiter: yes ma'am

Khwezi: get us some beef, wors and some chicken wings

Nkosie: add some pap

Waiter: I will be right back then



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: thank you

the waiter walks away, Nkosie pulls Khwezi closer to his and kisses her on the shoulder.

Khwezi: you really are forgetting we are in a public place

Nkosie: I don't care

they had a chat, late the food and drink came, they set there eating and having a small chat.

**.
. .
.**

[BACK AT THE WAREHOUSE]

They were packing the stuff inside the trucks ready for delivery, they had the girls inside a ship and it was heavily guarded.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Ntando: bafethu we need to leave in 20 minutes

he shouts, after a few minutes they got done, the trucks drove out to the location where they will be meeting with the buyers.

they safely arrive at the location and the buyers are already there, they three brothers got out of their cars.

the client was standi gathers waiting and he was heavily guarded.

Him: you are late

Ntando: we had a few problems and...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I don't care about your problems, where is King? your father told me I was meeting up with king but I don't see him here

Sya looks at Ntando.

Ntando: King is busy with a lot of stuff I'm the one in charge

Him: you? you kidding right? I don't do business with weak asses like you

he say and Ntando got angry.

Ntando: don't talk to me like that, are we doing this or not?

Him: I ain't doing no business without King here

NOVELSGURU.COM

Ntando: what's so important about King? I just told you that he is busy let's just get in with this deal and forget about King

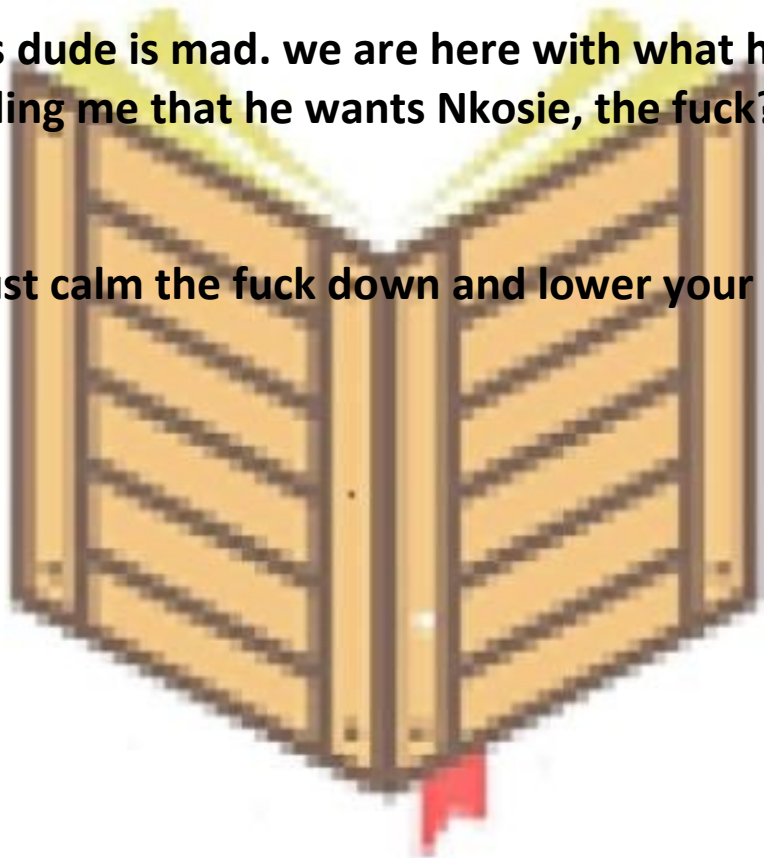
Him: there's no deal if King ain't here

Ntando pulls out his gun and points it at the guy, 27 guns were pointed at him.

Sya: Ntando this is not how we do shit, put the gun down you want to get us killed

Ntando: this dude is mad. we are here with what he requested but he is telling me that he wants Nkosie, the fuck?

Nkanyezi: just calm the fuck down and lower your gun



NOVELSGURU.COM

the Client just chuckles.

Him: I don't deal with such idiots, when you got King call me I really want to hear about this new liquor cocaine he talked about...don't bring the crazy guy next time

Ntando lowers his gun, the gaurds do the same, the client walks to his car and he drove off.

Sya: what is your problem Ntando?

Ntando: why does everyone make everything about Nkosie? what's so important about Him?

Nkanyezi: maybe this is a sign that you shouldn't have snitched on him, we would have gotten the cash if it wasn't for you now look the client left and we have to take the girls back to the warehouse

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: that's unsafe, we can come across police

Sya: fix your shit damn Ntando

he walks to his car and drives off, Nkanyezi also left.

Ntando was left standing there.

Ntando: drive the trucks back and take the girls back to the warehouse

Tom: what happened? the deal got canceled

Ntando: stop asking me stupid questions

he clicks his tongue, they packed up and the girls were taken out of the ship, they drove off at once and Ntando was really furious.



he got a call from Nkanyezi, he answers.

Ntando: what?

Nkanyezi: have you left the location?

Ntando: yes why?

Nkanyezi: there are police on the road

Ntando: shit!!

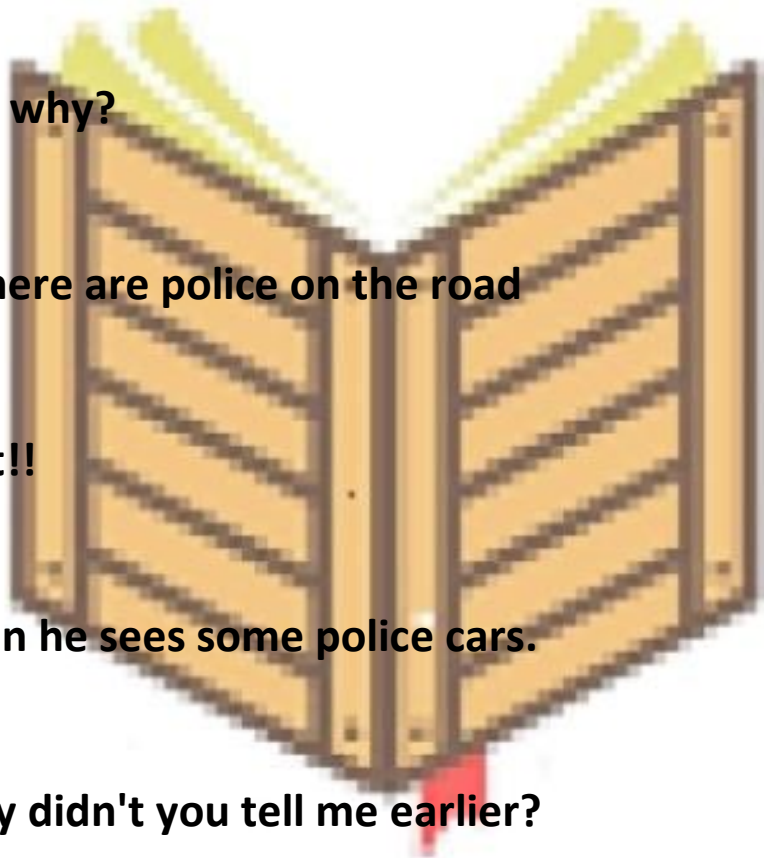
he says when he sees some police cars.

Ntando: why didn't you tell me earlier?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: there's no network there remember?

Ntando: I'm fucked

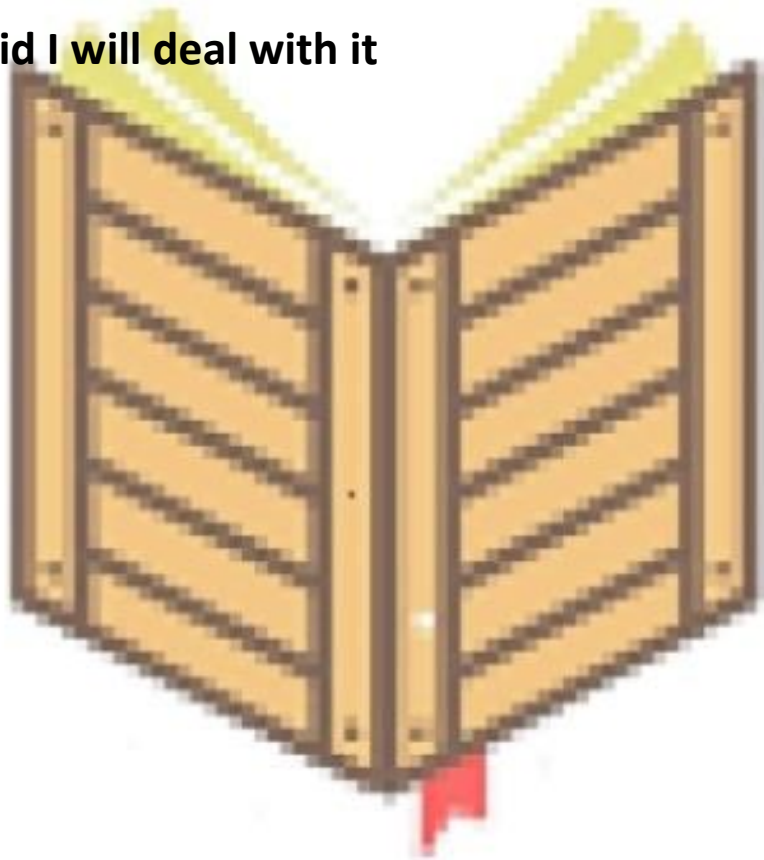


Nkanyezi: just turn around

Ntando: it's late for that, I will deal with it

Nkanyezi: Ntando just...

Ntando: I said I will deal with it



NOVELSGURU.COM

he hung up.

he warns the guys.

they made them to pull over.

he rolls down his window as a police officer came to him and the others were checking the rest of the card and the trucks.

officer: what are you doing out here so late?

Ntando: I was out for a drive

Officer: drive you say? and those trucks and cars behind you are they not yours?

Ntando: ohh those they are mine

NOVELSGURU.COM

Officer: what are they doing out here?

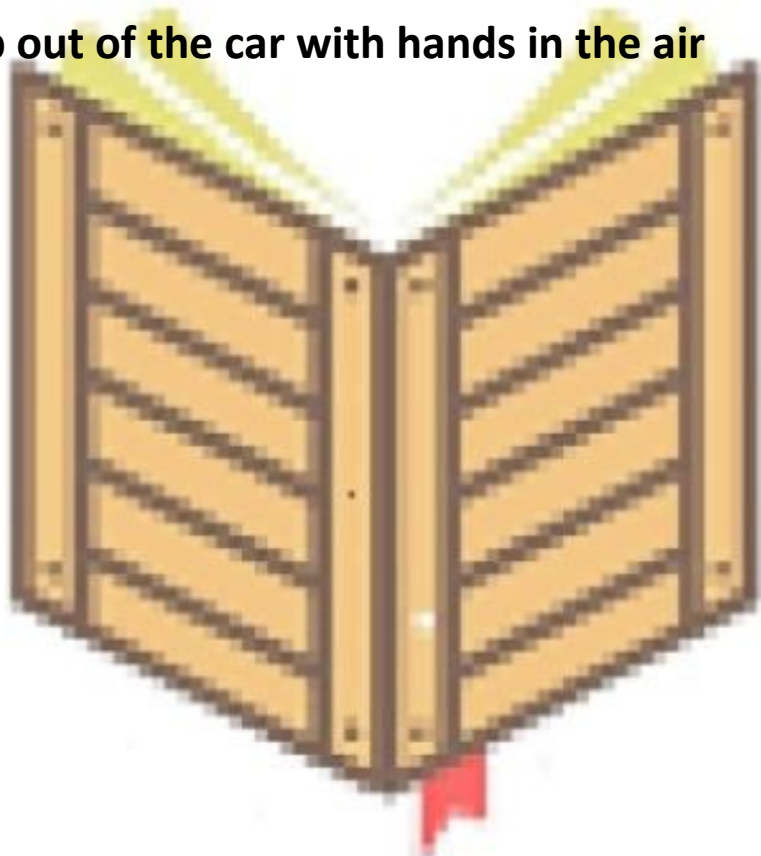
Ntando: it's a shipment for my business officer

Officer: so you weren't our for a drive?

Ntando: I was officer it's just that...

The officer pulls out his gun.

Officer: step out of the car with hands in the air



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ntando: officer look...

Officer: now!! *shouts*

Ntando got out of the car, the officer searched him.

Officer: ohh you take guns when you out for a drive? how nice

Ntando sighs.

the officers open the trucks and they find cocaine, they also find the girls and the drivers, gaurds and Tom were cuffed.

Ntando: we can talk things out officer

Office: you Mthembu boys think you rule the world, this is enough to send all of you to prison mthatheni!! (take him)

NOVELSGURU.COM

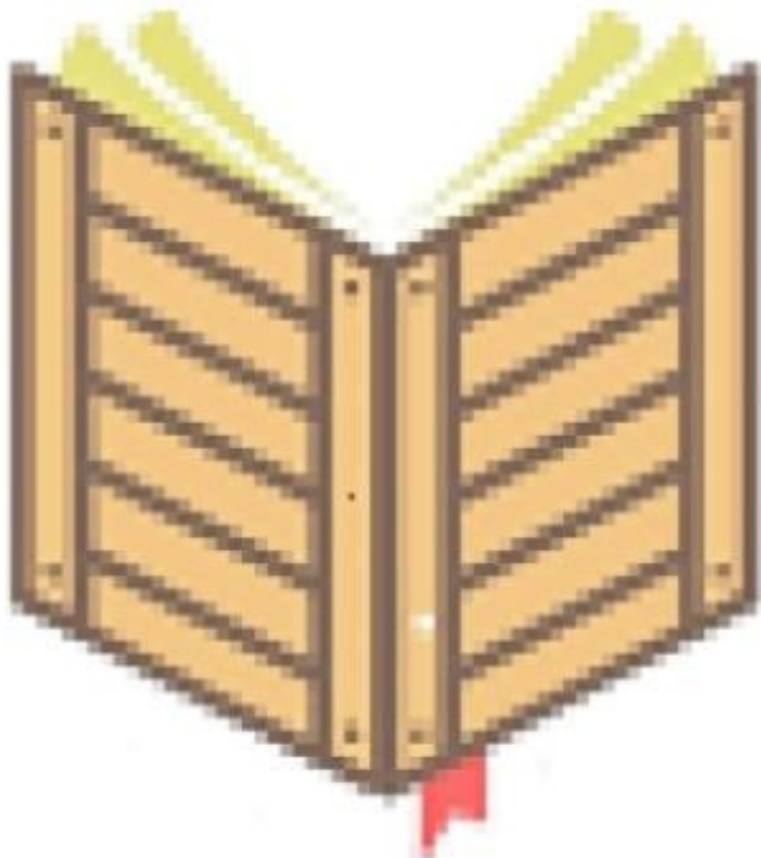
he cuffs Ntando and he was taken to the van, the trucks stayed there with a few officers so the can examine it and calculate the cocaine that's inside and the price for it not to mention the 50 girls.

this is a downfall for the Mthembu's, after years of doing clean jobs they got caught. what will happen now?

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 79



NOVELSGURU.COM

AMANDA.

I set down counting the only money I have left, ever since I broke up with Nkosie my life has turned into a disaster cause he is the one who used to give me money and I had nothing to worry about.

Amanda: fuck Amanda think of something

I say as I look at the money and thinking of the things I need to do then realising the money is not enough.

I took out my phone and I called Sphehile, she is my friend, she answers.

Sphe: hello?

Amanda: hey Sphe it's me Amanda

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sphe: ohh Amanda hey how are you?

Amanda: I'm good and you?

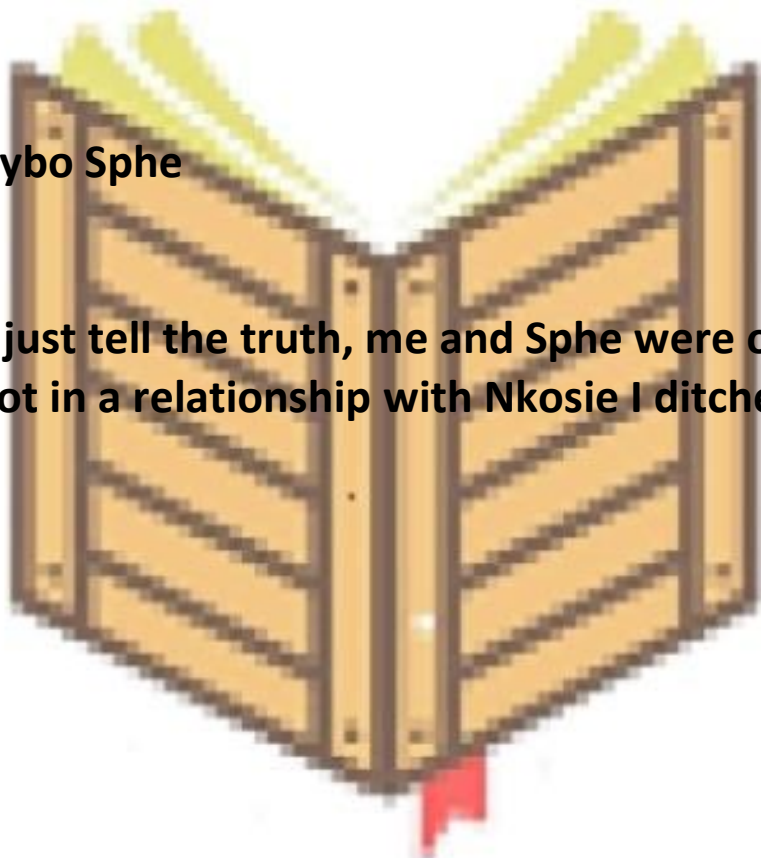
Sphe: I'm fine

Amanda: can you help me with something, I'm running low on cash

Sphe: after all these months Amanda you gonna call me asking for cash?

Amanda: haybo Sphe

okay let me just tell the truth, me and Sphe were once friends but since I got in a relationship with Nkosie I ditched her.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sphe: you left me when I needed you Amanda

Amanda: I'm sorry I was just blinded by love

**Sphe: love? you and Nkosie had love? *laughs* I'm really busy
Amanda I can't help you**

Amanda: it's fine, its not like you have the money and stuff

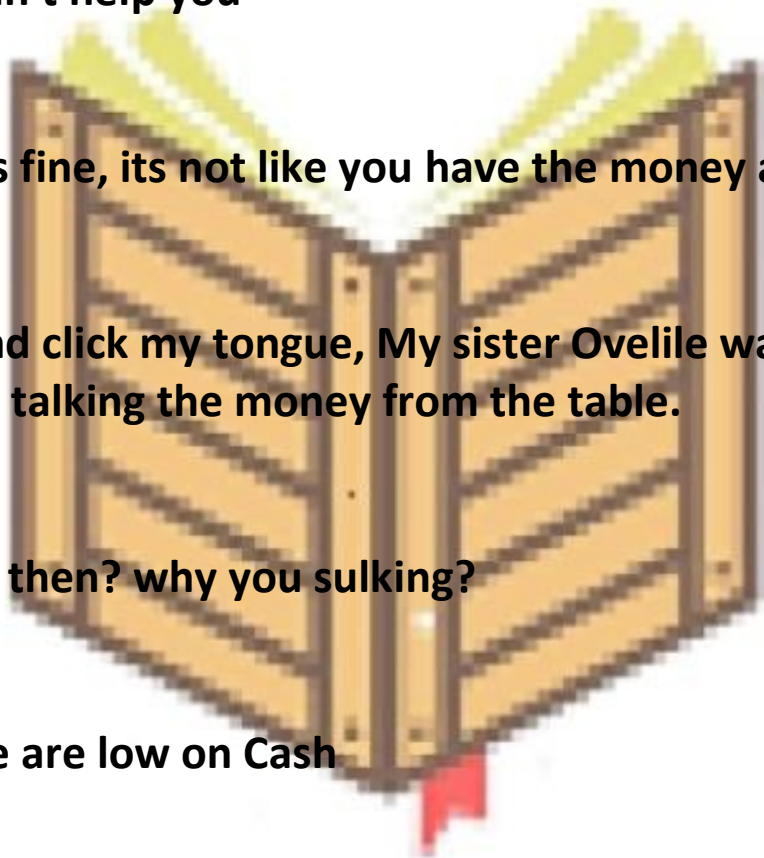
**I hung up and click my tongue, My sister Ovelile walks in and I
roll my eyes talking the money from the table.**

Ovelile: and then? why you sulking?

Amanda: we are low on Cash

Ovelile: how? I thought Nkosie had you covered though

**Amanda: me and Nkosie are no longer a thing, he left me for
that cry baby of his**



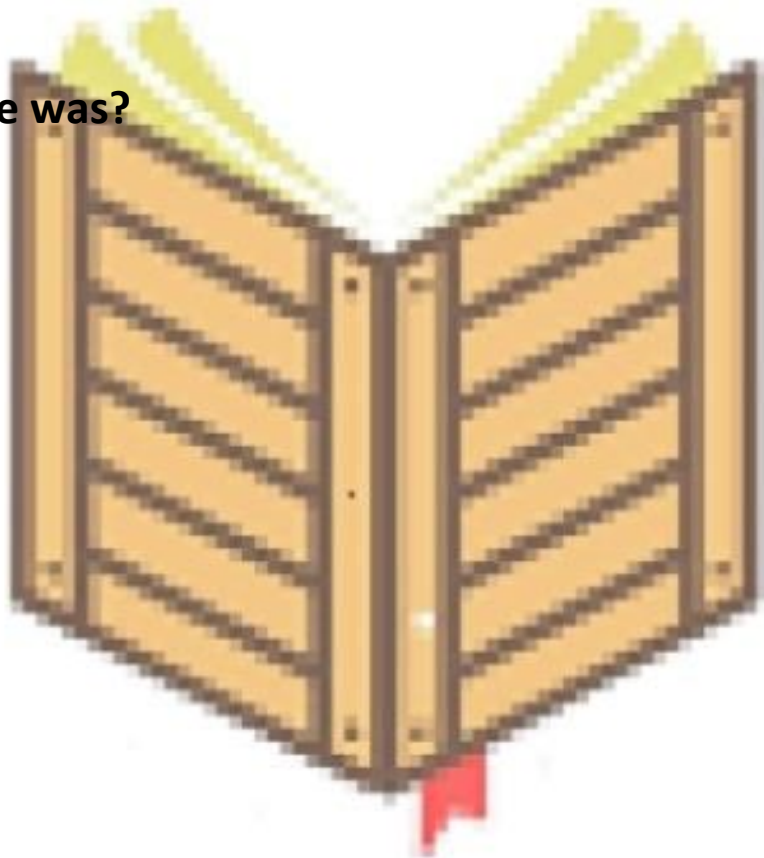
NOVELSGURU.COM

Ovelile: you mean Khwezi?

Amanda: you know her?

Ovelile: yes she was my room mate and damn that girl was reeking of poverty

Amanda: she was?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ovelile: girl couldn't even afford food not to mention the clothes she as lucky she became friends with Zizi and she started funding her

Amanda: so why is Nkosie with her?

Ovelile: I don't know but all I can say is that girl is poor and I hate her, imagine I went to apologise for being rude to her only for her to be rude to me *clicks tongue* ayyy I don't know what Nkosie sees in her

Amanda: that's what I'm saying, she is even out of his standard

Ovelile: at campus they day she us pregnant

Amanda: you lying? Nkosie didn't want me to have a child with him

Ovelile: guess what? he is having one with her

Amanda: what's so special about her? I mean I gave Nkosie everything and still he chose her over me

Ovelile: and you gonna let her take him from you?

Amanda: he doesn't want me no more, he almost killed me

Ovelile: ayyy I don't know mina

she claps her hands.

Amanda: just get out of my room, what you even doing here?

Ovelile: I needed a few things here



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: okay...

Ovelile: bye

she left the room, I set there thinking, if Nkosie doesn't want me then I have to make him want me. If I make him want me and he ends up in my bad, I take pictures and send them to his little cry baby and she will leave him in a blink of an eye.

what about the baby though? I will deal with it later.

I giggle, I'm getting my man back.

**.
.**

. NKOSINATHI.

I just woke up, yesterday I had the greatest time and everything went really good. I had my wife all night long and she is fast asleep cause she's tired after the rounds we did.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I got off the bed and I check my phone, it's off, I charge it and I went to take a shower.

I got done and I did my routine, after getting dressed I went

downstairs and I was shocked to find my father sitting in the kitchen.

Nkosie: the fuck? what are you doing here?

Dad: good morning to you too Nkosinathi

he looks at me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I thought I made myself clear about you inviting yourself inside my house

Dad: I'm your father don't talk to me like that

Nkosie: well you in my house and you need to respect my privacy

Dad: understood, where were you last night?

Nkosie: at the club, why you asking?

Dad: we were calling you all night but you did not answer

Nkosie: my phone was off

Dad: well the dealer backed down since he wanted to meet with you and not Ntando, he just like the cocaine liquor thingy and so did I

Nkosie: but it didn't look like it that other day



NOVELSGURU.COM

he sighs.

Dad: about that I did not mean to lay a hand on you and to talk to you like that

Nkosie: you know I respect you, if that wasn't the case I would have beaten you up but then it's water under the bridge, next time I won't be nice

Dad: I was surprised you kept quite and didn't say or do anything



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: well my wife taught me that something's are better unsaid

Dad: you really are blessed with that women, keep her and also put a ring on it then you can call her tour wife

Nkosie: I will soon

Dad: perfect, I wasn't here for the chit chat, your brother Ntando got arrested

Nkosie: that's likely to happen to Ntando

Dad: he was caught with the cocaine and the girls

Nkosie: what? we are fucked

Dad: this can't get to the news or else our image will be ruined

Nkosie: I will fix it trust me

Dad: you sure?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I got this, I can handle it just focus on mom and the business

Dad: great then I will leave you to it

Nkosie: fede fede (sharp sharp)

Dad: also we are having dinner tonight



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: Ntando will be there trust me

Dad: he better be or else your mother will go crazy you know her

Nkosie: trust me I do

we laugh, I accompanied him outside and he left, I went back in and Khwezi was making her way downstairs.

I smile.

Khwezi: who was that?

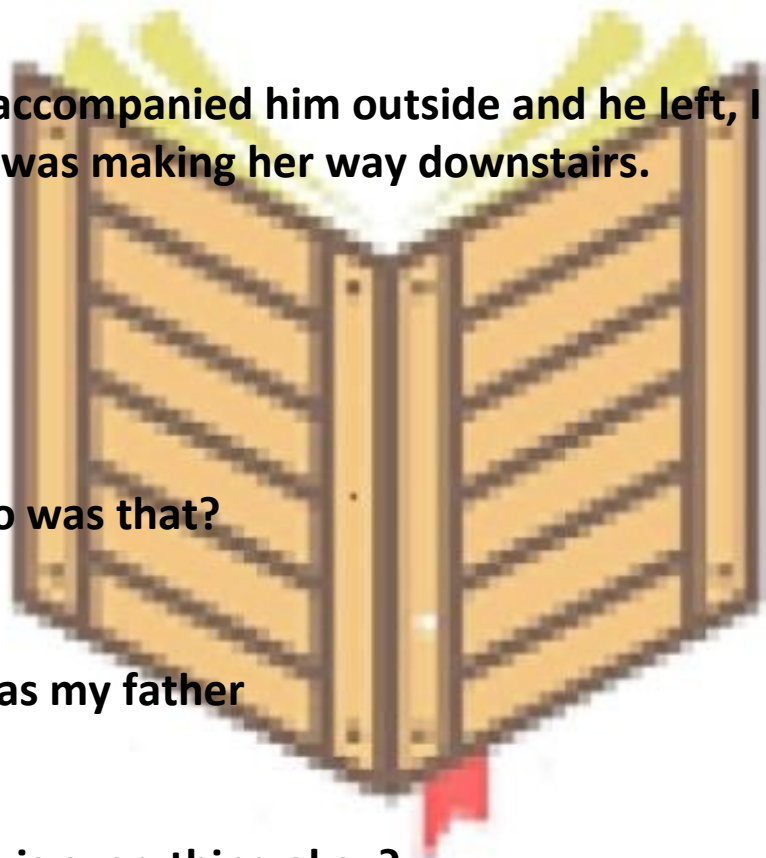
Nkosie: it was my father

Khwezi: ohh is everything okay?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: everything is fine, he just wants me to fix something

Khwezi: work?

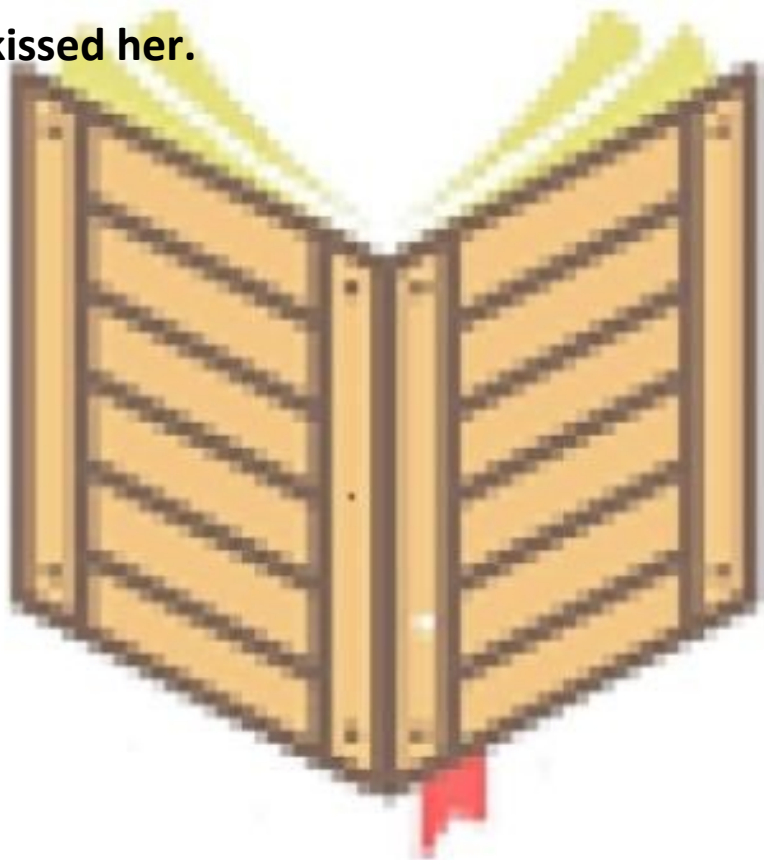


Nkosie: yeah

Khwezi: well you will drive me to school first right?

Nkosie: yeah I will, now give me some love

she grins, I kissed her.



NOVELSGURU.COM

She made breakfast for the both of us, we ate while talking about yesterday and his successful everything went.

she went upstairs to take a shower and I changed into something was good looking, she came out and her belly is getting big.

she is still a month pregnant yet it's getting bigger, not that big though but I can see the bump.

she took her bag and went left, I park outside.

Khwezi: don't worry about picking me I will go with Zizi

Nkosie: you sure? I wouldn't mind picking you up

Khwezi: yeah I'm sure we spending a day together

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: okay then, if you need anything baby just call me

Khwezi: I will I promise

Nkosie: I love you

Khwezi: I love you more

she kisses me in the lips and she got out, the thingy she applies on her lips make her lips taste good.

as soon as she was with Zizi I started the car and drove off, I went to the warehouse, my brothers were there.

Sandile: we missed out on a lot last night



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya look at him and he shakes his head.

Nkosie: so fill me in, what exactly happened last night?

Nkanyezi: we arrived at the location and we had everything set up, the girls were in the ship and the cocaine inside th truck,the client starts demanding to talk to you instead did Ntando

Sya: Ntando got pissed and he pulled out his gun pointing it at the client making the clients guard to point theirs at us

Sandile: Ntando is crazy...

Sya: we talked things through and the client left saying r should contact him once you available cause he doesn't make deals with idiots like Ntando

Nkanyezi: then the police thingy happened

Sandile: this is a lot, imagine if the media gets their hands on such information

Nkosie: they won't mark my words, Nkanyezi call the client and ask to meet with his tonight tell him I'm available this time

Nkanyezi: what about the police? they always on out tail and the girls?

Nkosie: I ain't afraid on the police just make the call, I will get the girls back trust me

Sya: how are you going to do that?

Nkosie: don't ask just watch



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: usile wena

we laugh.

I made a call.

Nkosie: put me on the line with the captain

"I'm sorry who you are?" the last asks

Nkosie: that's non of your business just put him on the line

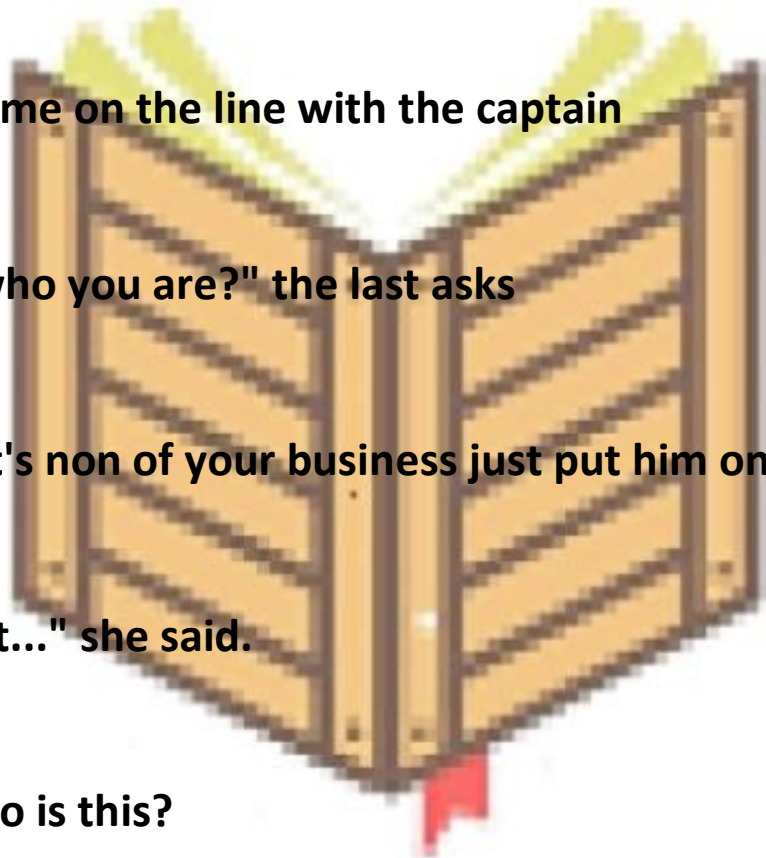
"please wait..." she said.

Captain: who is this?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: it's King yow I need you to do me something

Captain: if it's about your brother I can't



Nkosie: don't make me come there

Captain: what do you want?

Nkosie: I want those girls back

Captain: you can't have them back, their parents have been contacted meaning they have been taken back home



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: You know I don't like it when your rats stuck their noses in my business

Captain: sorry mahn, I would have helped but the situation is out of hand

Nkosie: Moja

I hung up.

Nkosie: you see what your brother has done?

Sya: what's wrong now?

Nkosie: the girls parents got contacted and they are taken back home

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: we just lost money

Sandile: Ntando ruined everything for us

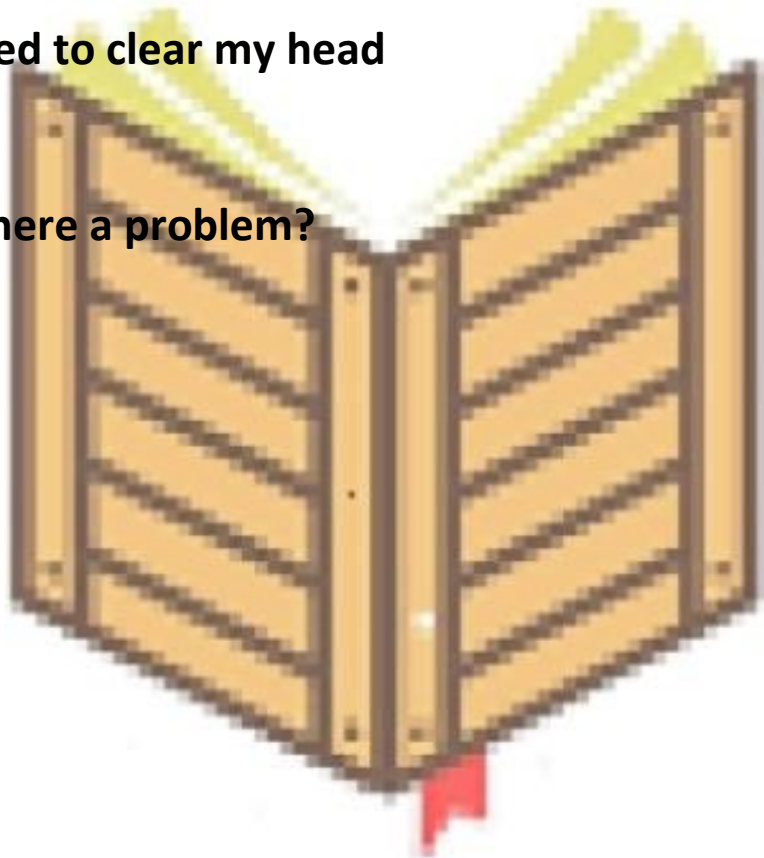


I kept quite thinking of a plan, no more girls meaning no more money. the police have the cocaine and they have Ntando, I need to convince the client with some other plan which will bring us more money.

but what is it? this is messed up.

Nkosie: I need to clear my head

Sandile: is there a problem?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: no there is no problem y'all should not worry okay, I will fix this, I won't let anything bad happen to the family image mark my words

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 80

NARRATIVE.

It's been hours and Nkosie has been trying to fix the whole issue but no luck at all, he set down in his office thinking of a plan while having some whiskey.

Leroy walks in with an ipad and the look he had in his face shows that he doesn't have good news at all, Nkosie looks at him.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you don't knock now?

Leroy: sorry boss it was urgent

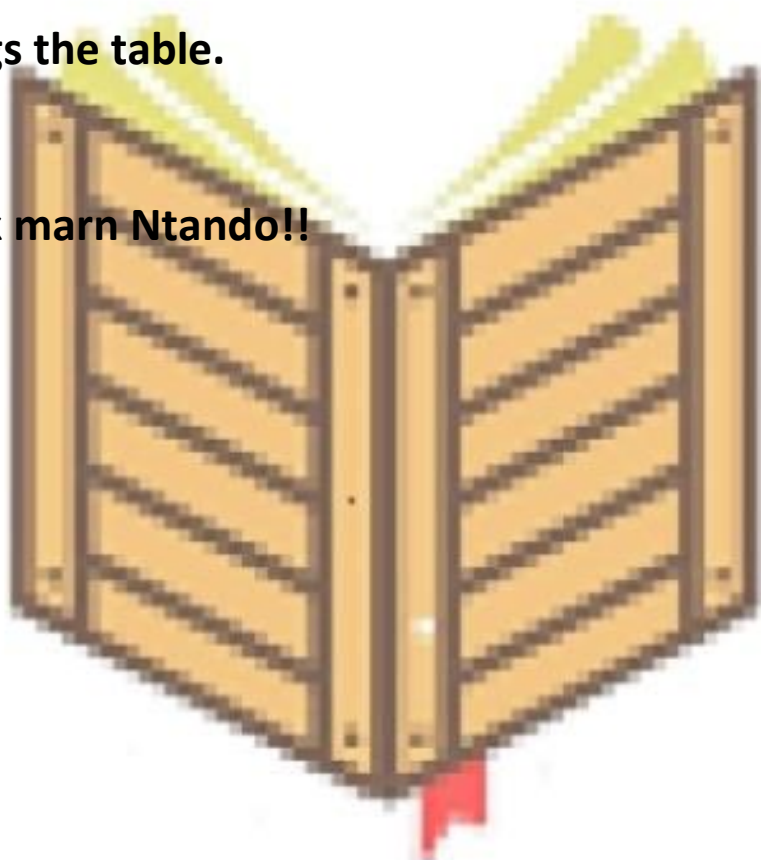
Nkosie: what is it?

Leroy: I think it's best if you see for yourself boss

he gave Nkosie the iPad, the news about the drugs and girls was all over the media.

Nkosie bangs the table.

Nkosie: fuck marn Ntando!!



NOVELSGURU.COM

he says frustrated.

Leroy: I'm afraid there's nothing we can do now boss, the media already knows and that's a bad thing

Nkosie: there has to be some way I can fix this, there is no way I'm letting this happen

then Nkosie thought about Khwezi, he thought maybe she has seen the news and he sighs, he took out his phone.

Nkosie: leave

Leroy left and Nkosie called Zizi, she answered.

Zizi: bhuti Nkosie

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: hey are you with Khwezi?

Zizi: yes I am



Nkosie: listen to me carefully, I need you two to switch off your phone's, the TV, you laptops and everything else don't leave the house until I get there

Khwezi: Is that Nkosie?

Zizi: yes it's him

I'm really fucked, I can't let her find out about this.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: now do as I say pumpkin, I'm on my way

Zizi: okay

Nkosie hung up, he stood up and took his car keys. he left the warehouse and drove to Zizi apartment.

.
. .
.

[AT THE APARTMENT]

Zizi just got off the phone and she is wondering what was that about, but she knows Nkosie has a valid reason for what he said.

Zizi: we gonna have to switch off our phones

Khwezi: it do we have to do that?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: Nkosie said so now give me your phone and we need to turn off the TV

she stood up and turned it off, Khwezi set there confused as to what was happening.

Khwezi: I'm not switching off my phone, I need it

Zizi: but Nkosie said...

Khwezi: I don't care what Nkosie said, he can't just order us like that, I need to do some of my work and I need my phone

Zizi: Khwezi if you would just listen



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I am listening...

Zizi: no you are not, just switch off the phone Nkosie is on the way and he will tell us the reason why we had to do this

Khwezi: come on really what could possibly be the problem

she chuckles and opens her Facebook wanting to check if she got any texts from anyone, she decided to scroll down.

the topic that was written in bold letters caught her eyes, she clicked the post and she was shocked as to what she saw.

Khwezi: one of the Mthembu brothers as caught...human trafficking...50 girls...cocaine

she said those words out while reading the post, she shook her head.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: no it can't be maybe they are mistaken

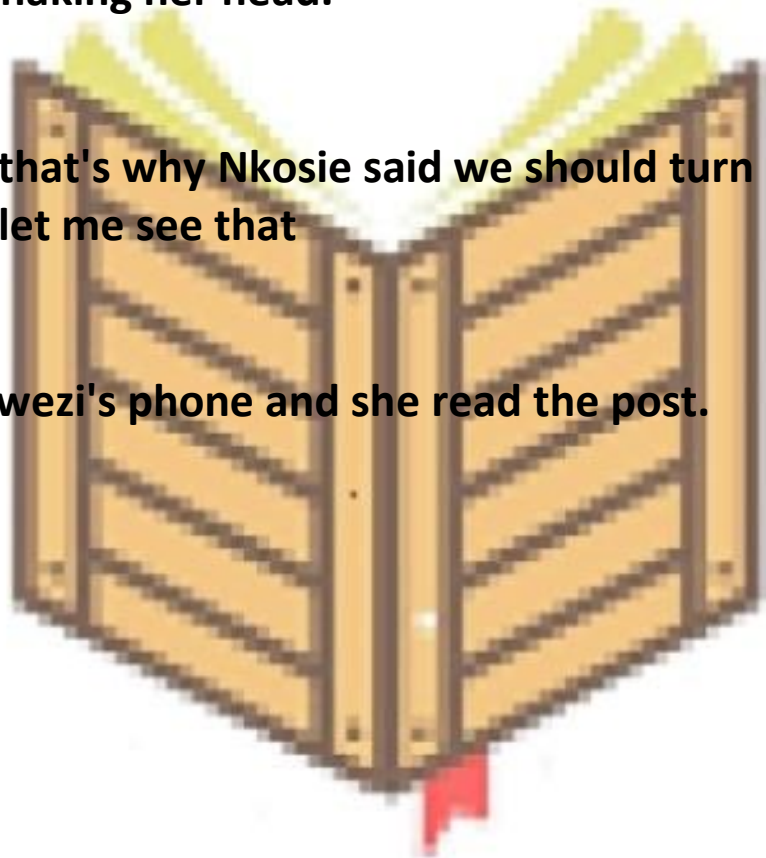
Zizi: what are you talking about?

Khwezi: you know how Facebook always tells false story, they say Ntando got caught with 50 girls he was going to traffic and some cocaine *chuckles* imagine, you know people love attention

she laughs shaking her head.

Zizi: maybe that's why Nkosie said we should turn off everything, let me see that

she took Khwezi's phone and she read the post.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: ohh shit, what is wrong with these people can't they look for something else to make themselves trend *clicks tongue*

Khwezi: you believe that? my Nkosie wouldn't do such

Zizi: I don't believe it, this is pure nonsense

Khwezi: I mean we both know they are doing legit business and Nkosie told me he didn't do anything illegal

Zizi: let's just wait for Nkosie

Zizi got a text from her phone "open the news now" it was a text from one of her class mates.

she turns on the TV and she opens the news channel and they are speaking about the same thing Khwezi read online.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: No...

she held her mouth as she looks at the girls being taken out of the truck and Ntando getting arrested.

Khwezi: they...wha...t? no

Zizi: there has to be some sort of mistake, I mean this is fucked up

Khwezi: they are trafficking girls? girls like us? the same age group as us? trafficked across the. no no no no

she shakes her head and tears came out of her eyes, the apartment door opens and Nkosie walks in.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi stood up and she looks at him with tears in her eyes, Nkosie knew at that moment that he was unable to stop her from finding out the truth.

Nkosie: I thought I told you to not open the TV

he says walking towards Khwezi and trying to hold her hand but she yanked it away.

Khwezi: no Nkosie no!!

Nkosie: baby please...

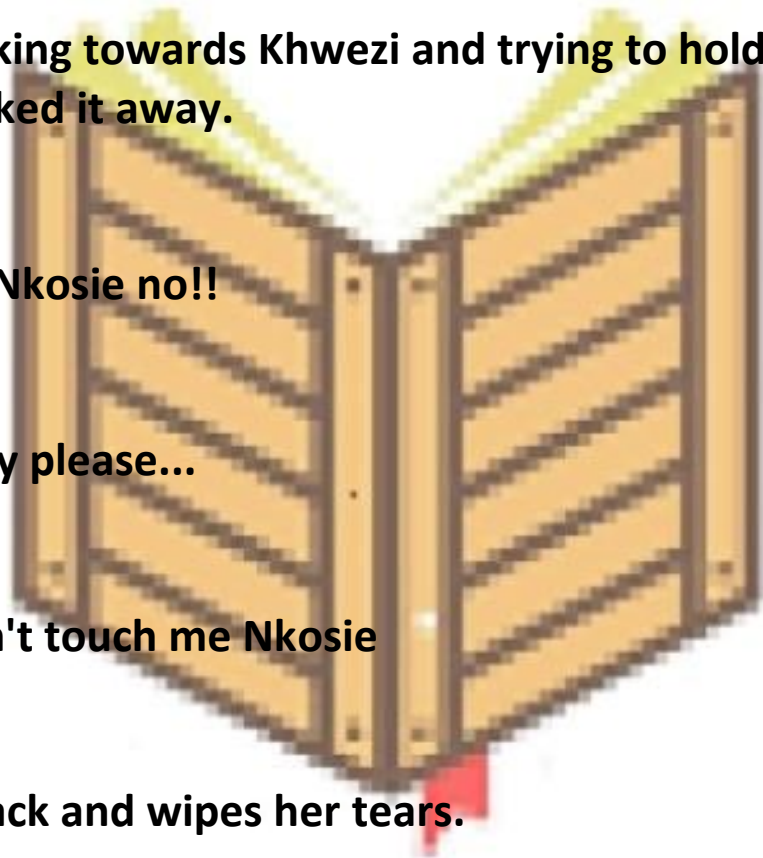
Khwezi: don't touch me Nkosie

she steps back and wipes her tears.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: just calm down and let me explain

Khwezi: so you...



she points at Nkosie.

Khwezi: all this time you have been lying to me

Nkosie: I wasn't lying to you Khwezi

Khwezi: you lying to me right now, right in front of my gave
Nkosie

Nkosie: baby look we can...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you sell girls? girls Nkosie!!

Nkosie: baby let's just go home and I will explain it to you

Khwezi: explain what? that you kidnap girls and take them away from their family for the rest of their lives, selling them to old man and God knows what they do to the poor souls

Nkosie: you don't understand

Khwezi: what's there to understand? huh? fucking tell me...what's there to understand in all this bullshit Nkosinathi speak up!!

she shouts and Nkosie clenched his jaw, he was getting furious.

Nkosie: lower your tone Khwezi

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: or what? you gonna sell me too? goddammit Nkosie what kind of a monster are you?

she looks at him with so much discuss.

Nkosie: baby just...

Khwezi: who are you? are you still the same guy I fell in love with or this is his clone? my Nkosie wouldn't do this

Nkosie: I am you Nkosie baby this is me

Khwezi: I don't think I can do this...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: baby just let me explain to you

Khwezi: please get out

Nkosie: you don't want me to get out, MaMvelase

Khwezi: get out Nkosie, I don't ever want to see your face okay...just leave forget about about me and ever seeing me again...you discuss me how can you do such?

Nkosie's heart started racing.

Nkosie: Khwezi please!

Zizi: you heard her get out

Nkosie: pumpkin look...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: I don't want to hear it Nkosie

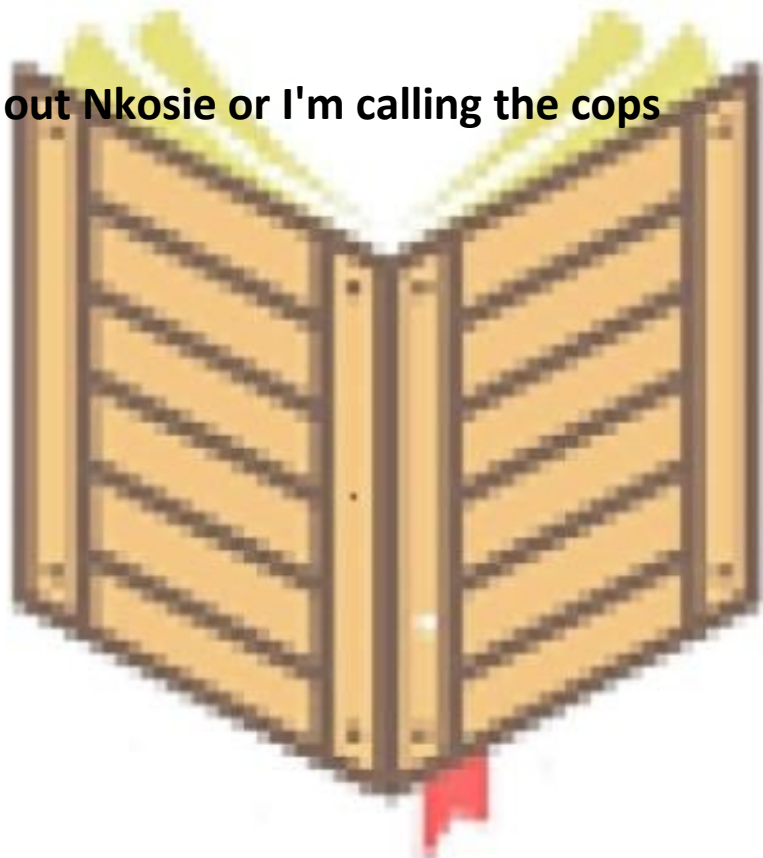
she wipes her tears then folds her arms.

Nkosie: I'm not leaving here without you

Khwezi: I'm not going anywhere with a killer, a human trafficker worst of all a gangster

Nkosie: you don't mean what you just said

Khwezi: get out Nkosie or I'm calling the cops



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you gonna call the cops on me mamma?

Khwezi: get out! get out! get out!

she pushed him out of the apartment.

Nkosie: baby...

she slams the door shut before he could say anything, she locks the door and she turns around.

she is shaking and she can't control her tears, she slide a down and she set down with her back facing the door.

Nkosie was outside and he kept on knocking while on the other hand Khwezi was crying, was he the man she thought he would be?

NOVELSGURU.COM

she doesn't know what to do at this point cause she knows that deep down she loves Nkosie bit what he did, hiping a huge secrete from her shows that he doesn't love her at all.

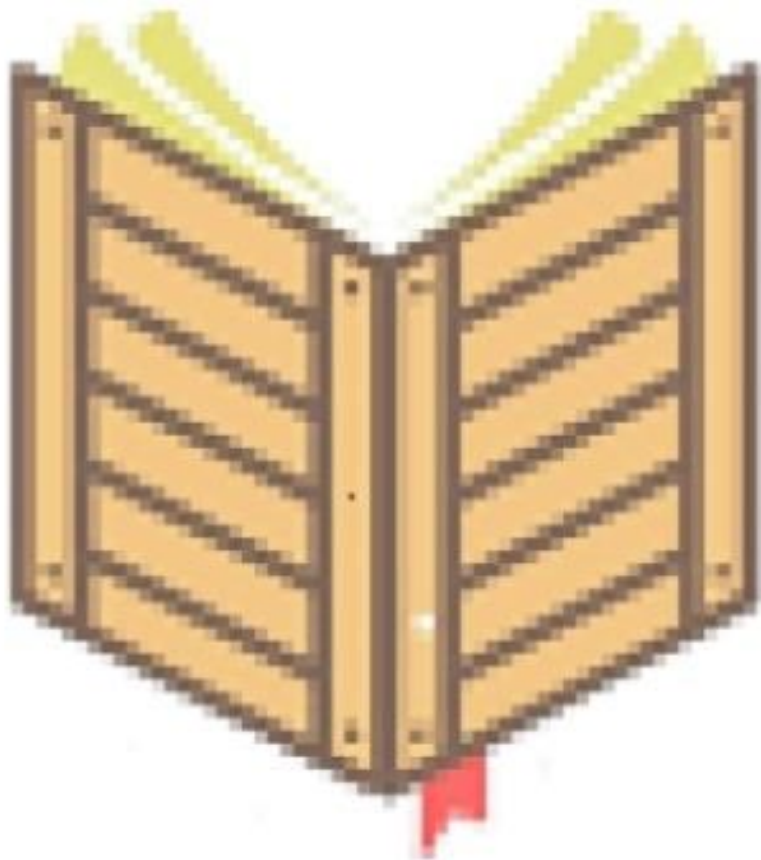
aren't relationships built on trust? they are right so what is it called if there ain't no trust in the relationship? is that love?

a lot of questions are creeping inside your head I know but the main question is, what will happen next?

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 81



NOVELSGURU.COM

NARRATIVE.

Nkosie stood outside the door knocking, he could here her cries and Zizi trying to get her to calm down.

he knew at this moment that he messed up, he walks away and his phone rang, it was a call from an unknown number.

he answered.

_: hello King...

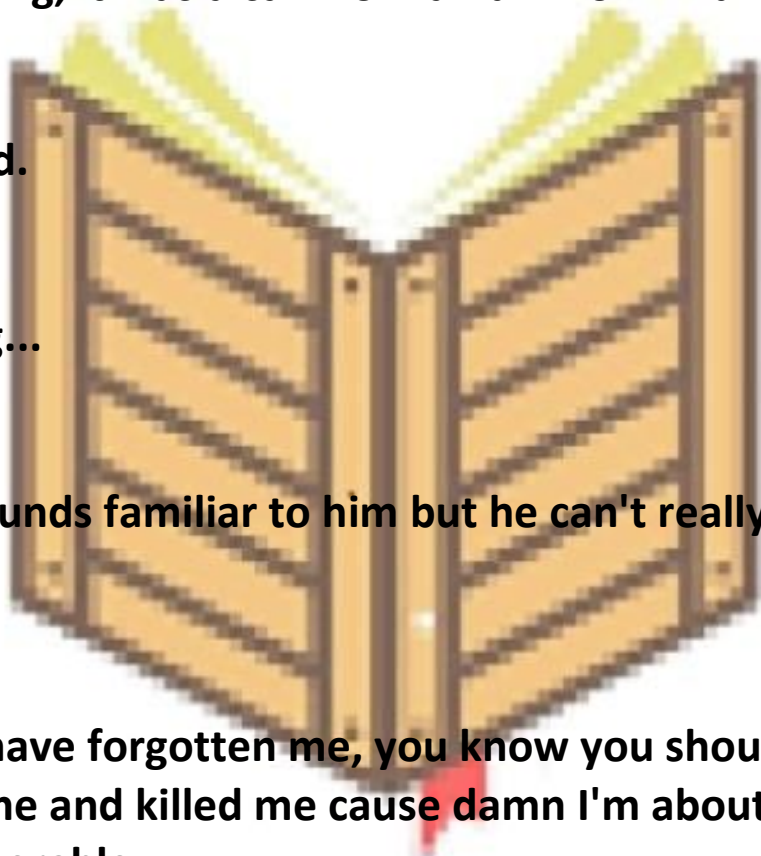
the voice sounds familiar to him but he can't really tell who it is.

_: ohh you have forgotten me, you know you should have looked for me and killed me cause damn I'm about to make your life miserable

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: make my life miserable? entlek who are you?

_: the person who kidnapped your precious Khwezi, my precious Khwezi *laughs*



Nkosie: you psycho, I'm gonna find you and...

Sakhile: you couldn't find me so don't try threatening me with that...

Nkosie: what do you want?

Sakhile: I wanna make you suffer, you took her from me and now I'm gonna take her and your baby away from you

Nkosie: trust me that won't happen



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: I'm just getting started...for sure you must be wondering how your families business got to the media

Nkosie: it was you? you selfish son of a bitch

Sakhile: I ain't the selfish one here you are, just know that she won't forgive you after this huge secret you hid from her

Nkosie: I'm gonna find you and when I do I will make sure to kill you this time

Sakhile: good luck with that *laughs*

Nkosie hung up, he felt his blood boiling and he looks at the apartment then back at the car.

he got inside his car and drive to the police station, he parks his car outside and he walks inside the station.

he went to the office that was at the front desk.

Officer: sir there is a line like you can see so please join the line

and wait for your turn

Nkosie: I don't give a fuck about the line I want to see my brother

Officer: sir you not as important just join the line or I will have you dragged out of here

Nkosie looks at the officer with a serious face.

Nkosie: do you know who I am?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Officer: I don't and I don't even want to know, now join the line sir

Nkosie chuckles, he grabs the officer by the collar and pulls him towards him, mind you the officer is on the other side of the desk and he is being pulled.

Nkosie: you don't want to see the other side of me trust me, now listen to me carefully...

Officer: I'm just doing my job sir, let go of me!!

the other officers are just looking at what was happening, they all don't want to cross Nkosie so they rather remain silent.

the captain walks in.

Captain: what is happening...King?

NOVELSGURU.COM

the Officer looks at Nkosie one more time when he heard the captain call him 'King'...

Officer: I'm so sorry

Captian: what is this nonsense now King? you can't just barge in here and insult my officer like that

Nkosie: he doesn't listen

he lets go of the officer.

Captain: come to my officer, sorry for that are you okay?

he asks the officer.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: his fine

he rolls his eyes.

Officer: yes yes I'm...fine

The captain looks at Nkosie and he sighs, they went to his office.

Captain: King you need to learn to control your anger

Nkosie: you don't tell me what to do, now I want to see my brother

Captain: that can be done but you know how we law people handle things

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: yes I do, where is this going?

Captain: you just assaulted a police officer and you can get arrested for that

Nkosie: he won't do that is he considers his little life, did any of the boys speak?

Captain: they have been silent ever since they go here and I'm surprised, you really do know how to keep your team in check

Nkosie: that's good news, how is the case going?

Captain: it's really bad, the parents of the girls y'all kidnapped want to open cases against you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: against me? how does my name get involve in all this? I mean I wasn't even involved in Ntando's shit

Captain: but we know that if one Mthembu brother is involve that means the rest is also involved

Nkosie: *clicks tongue* just let me see my brother

Captain: sure

they both stood up, Nkosie was taken to go see Ntando, he was seated in a room and he was cuffed.

Captain: you have 10 minutes

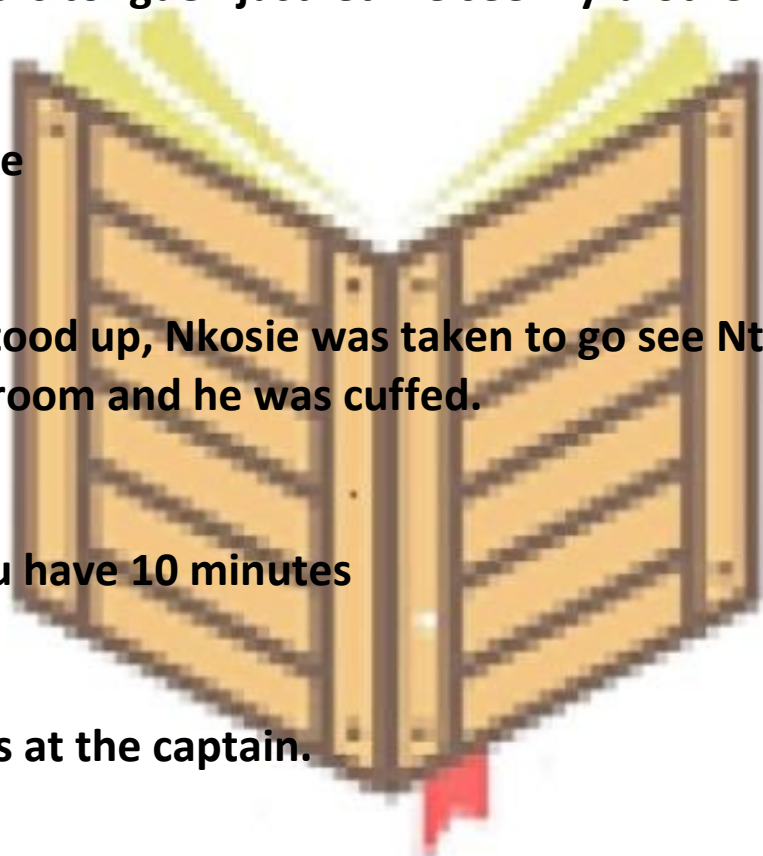
Nkosie looks at the captain.

Captain: sorry

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: don't fuck with me

he closes the door.



Nkosie: let me switch off my phone

he says that a little bit louder, he takes out a device that looks like a phone he turns it on, he knows very well that there are people behind that mirror who are watching a listening.

so the object will help neutralise all bugs that are planted inside the room, meaning they won't be able to hear a thing.

Ntando: finally you decided to come see me, get me out of here



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie set down and he looks at Ntando.

Nkosie: I don't take orders from you

Ntando: ohh I see you back to yourself *chuckles*

Nkosie: do you know the damage you have caused?

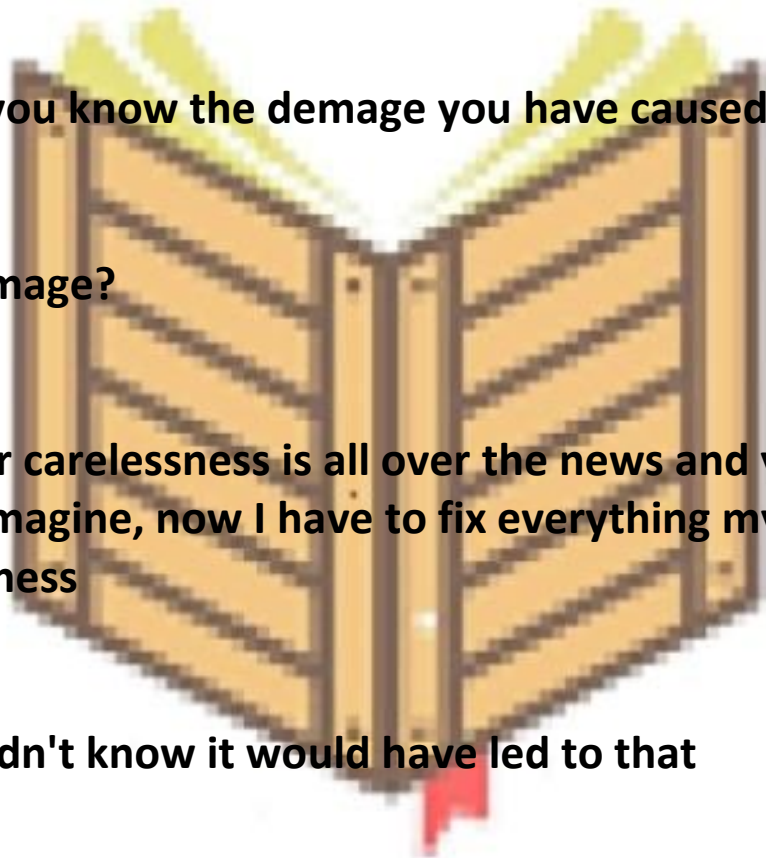
Ntando: demage?

Nkosie: your carelessness is all over the news and you ruined the family imagine, now I have to fix everything myself...I have to fix your mess

Ntando: I didn't know it would have led to that

Nkosie: that's because you don't listen Ntando, if we had done this my way non of this would have happened

Ntando: why are you the one to always leads? I also want to lead, I'm the first born I'm meant to be the leader not you



NOVELSOURU.COM

Nkosie: ohh so everything should be about you just cause you the first born? *chuckles* Ntando i have earned to be where I am, the position I have I earned it, I worked hard and I listened everytime I was being advice wena you don't do non of that

Ntando: okay I can see you not here to get me out, this is such a waste of time...you can leave now

Nkosie chuckles, he is frustrated but he is controlling his anger because he doesn't want to end up doing something bad to his brother.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I see you not even sorry about this, Zizi found out about this and what's worse mother might also find out and you know how she gets when such shit happens *sighs* Ntando you are just careless

Ntando: just get me out of here

Nkosie: *clicks tongue* fuck getting you out of here, are you even listening to what I'm saying to you? dammit I might loose the women I love because of your stupidity

Ntando: I don't fucking care Nkosinathi just get me out of here

the next thing Nkosie is on top of Ntando beating him up, the door opens and the captain walks I with other officers, they remove Nkosie off Ntando.

Nkosie: don't touch me dammit...you...

NOVELSGURU.COM

he points at Ntando wanting to say something then he realises that everyone is inside the room so he can't say anything.

Nkosie: if I loose her Ntando, i swear boy ngzoklimaza *clicks tongue*

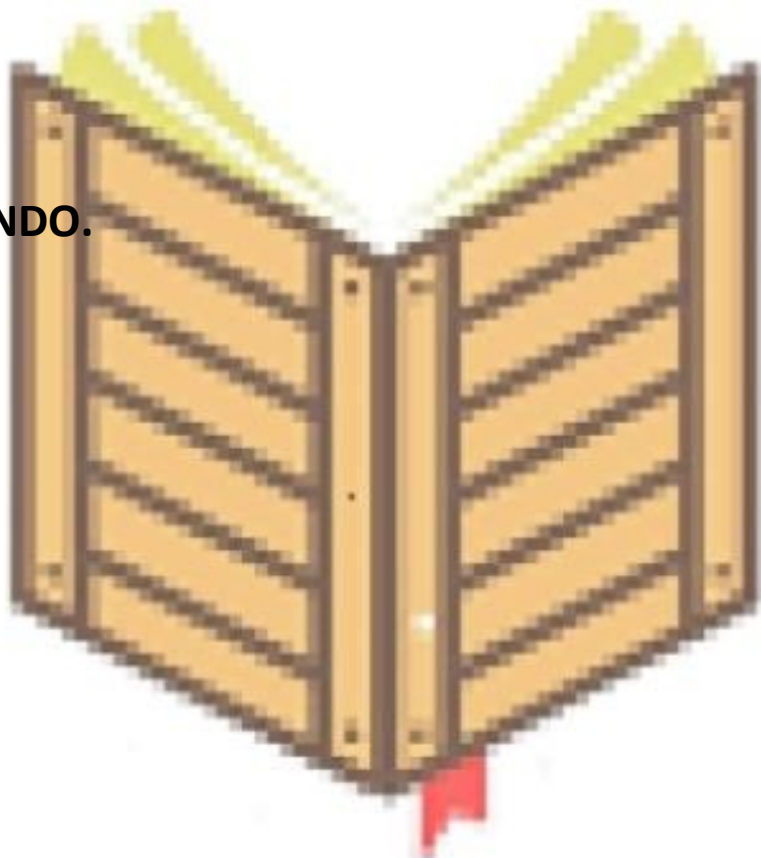
he pushes the captain who was holding him back and he took the device which was on top of the table, he walks out.

- .
- .
- .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 82

KUNGENTANDO.



NOVELSGURU.COM

It's sucks staying in a prison cell trust me and after the beating I got from Nkosie it made situations even harder for me.

I really don't get what is wrong with him, can't he just get me out of here without any drama caused.

yes I did somehow ruin the family image but what's done is done, he needs to get me out.

as I was laying on the uncomfortable bed, i was called, the officer said I got a visitor.

at that moment I thought I was getting out, I sigh and I got up, I walk out the call and they put hand cuffs to my hands.

this really sucks and I hope to get out soon, I walk to the visitors room and I wasn't pleaded as to who I was seeing seated there.

NOVELSGURU.COM

the person who kidnapped Khwezi or another words Amahle's brother, I never liked the guy anyways.

he had this smirk on his face, I set down.

Ntando: what are you doing here?

Sakhile: don't ask me that question, how are you doing brother in law?

Ntando: you know what I really don't have time for your nonsense, officer...

Sakhile: you want to get out of here don't you?

I look at him, I know Nkosie is going to get me out but I'm afraid he might take his time after the attitude I gave him yesterday.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: thought as much, now you going to sit down and we will talk

I set down and he smiles.

Sakhile: as you can see you really in a bad and tough situation and you gonna need my help

Ntando: I don't need your help

Sakhile: trust me you do, I can get you out of here in an hour or so

Ntando: you can do that? *chuckles* don't lie to me nigga

Sakhile: you don't trust me?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Ntando: what about the evidence they have against me?

Sakhile: I can also make it disappear but in order for that to happen we need to frame someone else

Ntando: and who is that?

**Sakhile: I think you know very well who I'm talking about
Ntando....**

Ntando: you mean Nkosie?

**Sakhile: yes that way when his in here you gonna be out there
leading and doing what you always wanted**

Ntando: what's the catch? I feel like there's something else



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: well in order for that to happen I just need you to sign these papers

he took out a huge brown envelop, he took out some documents and a pen.

Ntnado: hat do these documents say?

Sakhile: they say that you were framed and that you shouldn't be punished for something you did not do and you will get out of here in an hour

Ntando: it says just that?

Sakhile: yes, you want to get out of here right?

I nod.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: sign the papers

he gave me the pen, I know this is a very good deal so I took the pen and I signed the document.

I want to get out of here, if Nkosie can't do it then I have to do this myself.

Sakhile: perfect, I will get my lawyer to give you a visit and send in some clothes for you to change

he stood up.

Sakhile: you stink

Ntando: so how long do I have to wait?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: not that long trust me

Ntando: perfect, don't do anything stupid

Sakhile: trust me I won't

he smirks and walks out, I was then taken back to my cell and after a while some clothes were brought in for me.

I changed and I was released, the look the captain gave me when I walked out really seemed bad.

the media was outside so I had to hide my face and the officers cleared the path for me, I went to my car and I signed.

Ntando: I need a shower

NOVELSGURU.COM

I start the car and drive to my place.

.

.

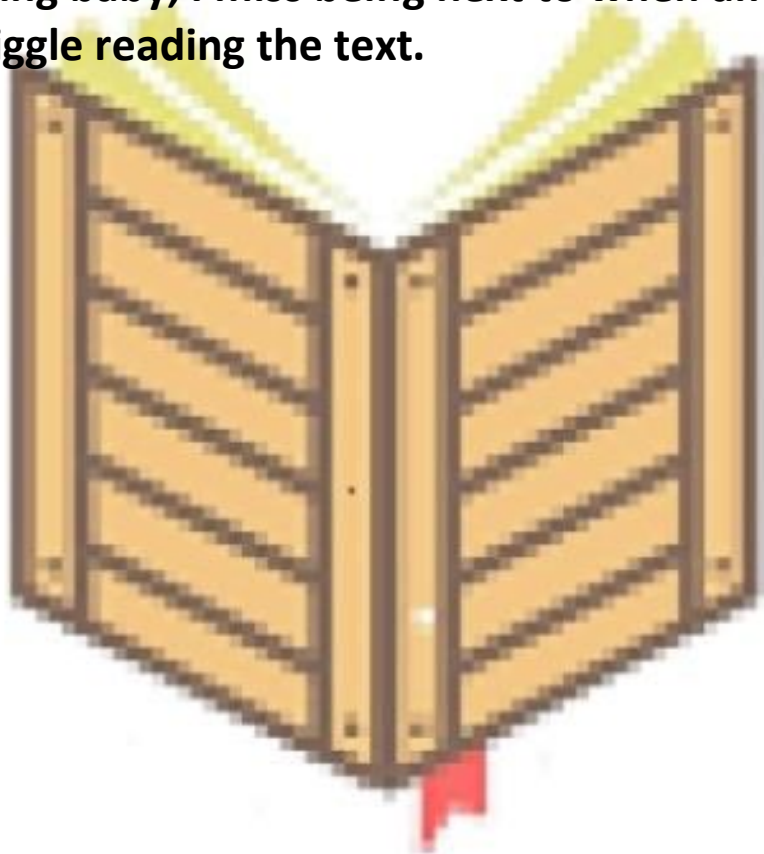
. ZIZIPHO.

Khwezi has been locking herself in her room and she hasn't said

a word, I don't blame her though. why would Nkosie hide such a thing? I really can't believe him.

I just finished with my morning routine and I'm making breakfast for the both of us, I got a text.

"good morning baby, I miss being next to when am I going to see you" I giggle reading the text.



NOVELSGURU.COM

"I miss you too, you gonna see me soon I'm just dealing with a lot right now" I answer and sigh.

"I know I saw the news, how are you coping?" he asks me.

" I'm struggling, I be getting calls every now and then and Khwezi on the other side is breaking down" I answer him and I heard Khwezi's room door open.

" y'all going to be fine, I still want to see you though to ensure that you okay" he texts.

" I will come to your place baby, I don't want her to see you here" I text back.

"I know, I love you my queen" I blush reading the text

"I love you too my king" I text back and I turn off my phone.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi walks in and she looks pale, she got red eyes and her hair is messy.

Zizi: awww prettyface

I went and have her a hug.

Khwezi: you gonna make me cry again

she says as I gave her a tight hug, she sniffs and I know she's crying once again.

Zizi: come on Prettyface you are carrying a baby and you can't be stressed out like this

Khwezi: I know but it's all a lot for me to handle, I mean human trafficking



NOVELSGURU.COM

it is indeed hard to take in but at the end of the day, they are my family and my brothers and I love them, plus it's the very same money that I'm using right now.

but still is sound wrong.

Zizi: I made you some breakfast

Khwezi: thank you, it's like you knew I was starving

I gave her the food and she smiles sitting down, she starts eating and I smile looking at her.

Zizi: I love you prettyface

Khwezi: I love you more pumpkin

she frowns cause she knows Nkosie usually calls me like that, she really misses him and I can see it all over her face.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 83

ZIZIPHO.

I woke up in his arms, that's one of the things I missed waking up and seeing him next to me.

we just finished having a morning quickie and I'm all exhausted once again, we spent time together last night catching up and I must say i really love him.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: so baby how are things going with your family?

Zizi: not good at all, Khwezi is having a break down after finding out about what Nkosie does

Lindani: did you know what your brother was doing?

Zizi: brothers! but no I did not know about any of this shit though I did suspect

Lindani: why you so calm about this then?

Zizi: I know for a fact that they do what they do just to get food on the table and help us survive, I mean a lot of people have different ways on how they survive so I can't judge them *smiles* they are my brothers plus I have been using the very same dirty money for years so why should I cry now? don't look at me as a bad person though, I'm just stating facts

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: you not a bad person plus I understand what you trying to say

Zizi: thank you, I missed being around you

Lindani: I also missed this but you the one that wants to hide all this from Khwezi

I mean look, I love Lindani and he makes me happy. I know I broke the girls code but Khwezi broke it first and I am not having a problem with her dating Nkosie, I love the both of them and they make a pretty food couple.

though I can't be putting her feeling first everytime, I might sound like a bad friend but I ain't.

She loved Lindani yes I agree but if it was ment to be it would have been, she is with Nkosie right now and she's happy...I also want to happy, is that a lot to ask for?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: I just don't want to ruin our friendship, I love her and she's the only best friend I have ever had

Lindani: I get you babe but she is gonna end up finding out either ways

Zizi: I know...*sighs* this is hard

Lindani: I also can't keep loving you in the dark baby, I want to take you out...spend quality time with outdoor and indoors

Zizi: I know but we need to wait for a while till things get a little bit better then we will talk about this with Khwezi

Lindani sighs.

Lindani: anything you want, I love you okay?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: I love you too

I gave him a kiss on the lips and he gently bites my lower lip pulling me on top of him, he grabs my ass and I let out a moan.

we still kissing and my whole body started to heat up, I don't know if it's me or I'm burning up.

I pull out from the kiss and I look at him with his small red eyes, I could feel his boner, I giggle.

Zizi: let's take a shower

Lindani: no we should stay in bed all day

Zizi: doing what fucking?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: it's making love baby, come here

he pulls me closer and he pecks my lip.

Zizi: you are a prince and you not suppose to stay in bed all day, so you highness get up

Lindani: ohh you gonna involve my title now, that's how it's gonna be?

I got off the bed giggling.

Zizi: maybe I don't know your highness

he bites his lower lip, looking at my naked body and damn those eyes.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani: okay fine we will take a shower then

Zizi: perfect

I smile and he came to me and he kisses me on the neck, I push him away and I went to the bathroom.

Lindani: you like ruining the fun

Zizi: there's no fun in that

I step inside the shower and I turn on the tap, he also steps in and he places his hands on my waist pulling me to him to feel how hard he was.

the rest was history, I don't kiss and tell.



NOVELSGURU.COM

.

.

. NKOSINATHI.

I woke up and I headed to the gym then I went to take a shower, I got done and I tried to call Khwezi but she keeps ignoring my calls.

I know its stupid of me to think she would answer my calls but I hope she does, I went to the apartment but she chased me away...well she didn't open the door.

I finished up taking a shower and I dried my body, I wrap a towel around my lower body and I went back to the main room.

I started to lotion my body and I got dressed, I wore black suit styled in a different way though.

I finished my outfit and I looked really good, I went downstairs and I went to the kitchen, I made myself a protein shake.

my phone rang, it was my personal assistance.

I answered.

Nkosie: speak

Her: boss we have a problem here at the office

Nkosie: ngilale nawe yini? (did I sleep with you?)

the problem can wait, I'm sure it's nothing I can't handle.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: I'm sorry sir, good morning Mr Mthembu

Nkosie: morning, now you may speak

The next time she won't be doing this ain't me bit with a client, I hate poor communication skills.

Her: Sir there is a man here at the office who says he owns some shares in the company and he has been ordering some stuff to move your stuff out of your office

Nkosie: I'm on my way

I hung up.

who in the world would do such, I left the protein shake and I took my gun, I took my cat keys and I went out.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I drove to the company, I park my car right outside and ordered the guy to park it for me properly.

I went inside and everyone was giving me the bad looks.

Nkosie: the fuck you looking at? I don't pay you to stare at me get to work dammit

I shout and they get back to work, I walk to the elevator and I press the open button, I stepped inside and the elevator door closes.

I arrive at the floor were my office is at and I was taken by suprise that my stuff are being moved out.

I walk inside my office only to find Sakhile seated on my chair having my whiskey, I took my gun and pointed it at him.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: eyy futsek marn get out!!

the people who were packing my stuff got out in a hurry, I look at Sakhile.

Sakhile: by cause some drama now?

Nkosie: give me one reason not to kill you right now

Sakhile: stop playing games here King

I shot the glass he had in his hand and the bottle of whiskey next to him, he jumps.

Nkosie: I don't like repeating myself, the next one is gonna enter your skull now talk!!

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: *smirks* the shares Ntando owned? I own them now and everything that has his name on it is all mine

what did Ntando do now? fuck this brother of mine.

Nkosie: what?

Sakhile: yes we partners now and if you do anything to me, I will end you and your business *chuckles* I ain't going down alone, this business and everything you worked for is going down with me

Nkosie: I ain't your okay mate boy go look for some other people to play aroind with, this is fire you playing with and Kids don't play with fire

Sakhile: you can say all you want but it won't change the fact that as much as you want to end me right here, you can't do that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: get out of my office

Sakhile: it's my office now

Nkosie: uyanya!!

I went to him and grabbed him by the collar dragging him out, I don't want to say any word as I still so pissed that I can't fucking do anything about this.

**.
.
.**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 84

KHWEZILOKUSA.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I just got out of class, Zizi is not here, I actually allowed her to leave since I knew she wanted to go somewhere.

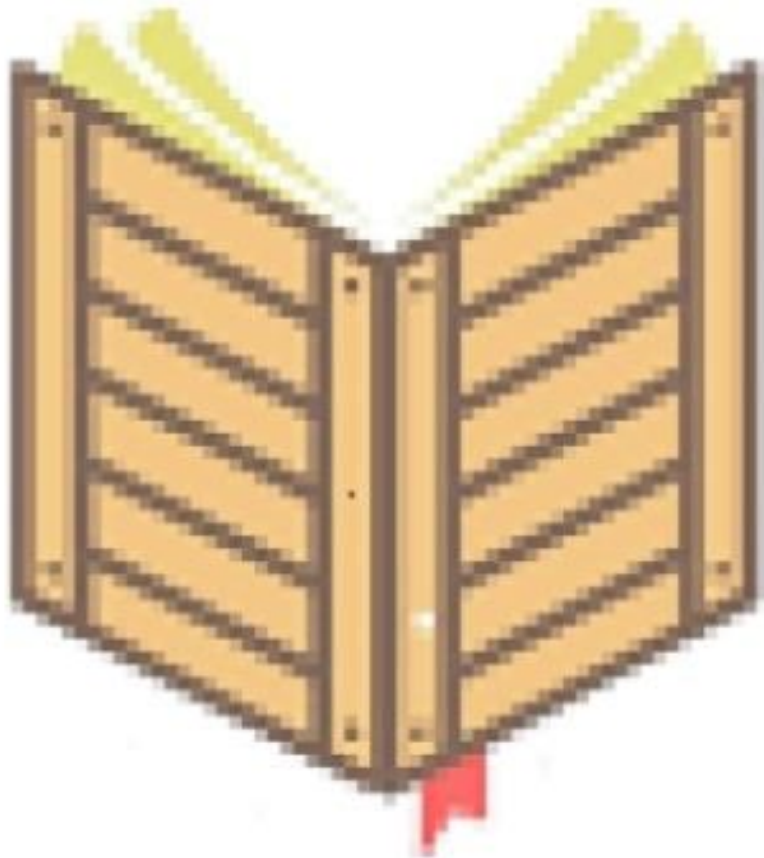
I couldn't really have the space I need so it's best that she left, I have been feeling these sharp pain on my stomach and my



shoulders hurt, my feet hurts and I have a headache.

it's a lot, all this drama is a lot.

I have to hide myself since the media be going around wanted to ask questions and I have been avoiding Nkosie.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I pack my stuff and I head out, I can't even walk properly, I went to stand by the poles as I was feeling dizzy.

"MaMvelase" he said, i miss hearing him call me that though I ain't giving out that easily.

I take a few deep breaths and I turn to look at him.

Khwezi: what are you doing here Nkosie? I don't want to spotted with you cause if I do the annoy media will come running here and flashing their cheap cameras at me

he laughs a little.

Nkosie: you don't look okay, what's going on?

Khwezi: all this is giving me a lot of stress and I'm just tired, I need some air and I don't want you here

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you carrying my baby and you are my wife, let's carry all this pain, stress, tiredness together

I roll my eyes.

Khwezi: stop this nonsense King

Nkosie: don't call me that Khwezi, I don't like you calling me that

Khwezi: okay Nkosie just give me some space

Nkosie: I hear you and trust me I do, but I wouldn't be able to live with myself if anything happens to you and my baby

Khwezi: nothing will happen but if you continue to cause me so much stress I will have a...



NOVELSGURU.COM

He places a finger in my lips stopping me from continuing the sentence.

Nkosie: come home with me, we can fix this

Khwezi: I'm hungry first get me some food

Nkosie: you coming home with me?

Khwezi: yes but that doesn't mean we in good terms

he smirks.

Nkosie: okay cool, let me carry your beg

Khwezi: carry me instead

NOVELSGURU.COM

I laugh and he looks at me, the next thing he lifts me up and carries me in bridal style.

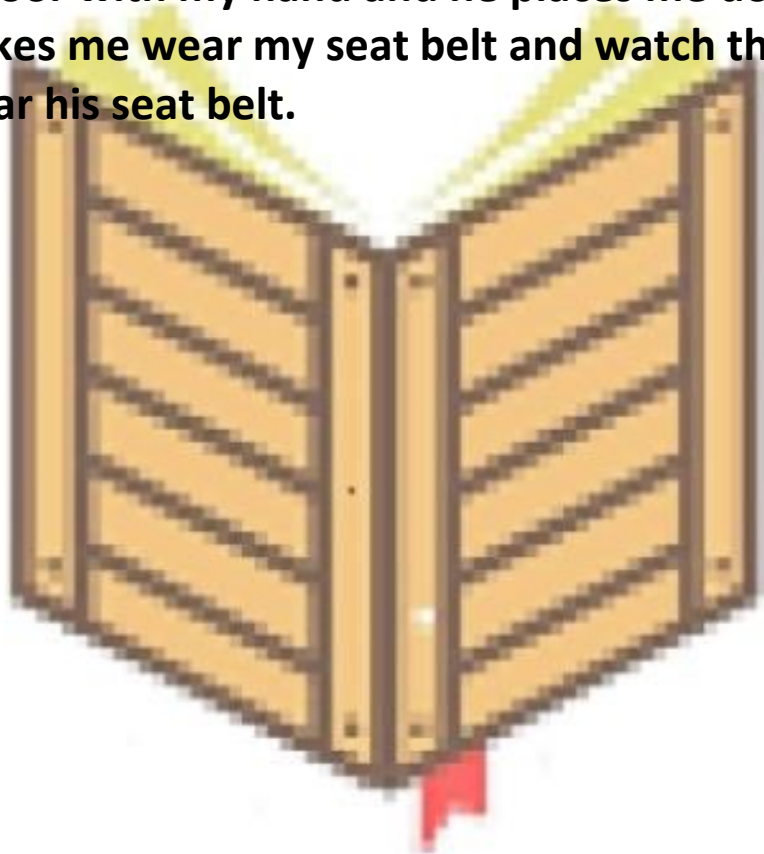
Khwezi: I was joking Nkosie



Nkosie: I don't care, your feet are swollen

Khwezi: I know

I open the door with my hand and he places me down on the seat, he makes me wear my seat belt and watch this he ain't going to wear his seat belt.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he got inside the car and he looks at me, I don't bother to look at him at all unjust got busy on my phone.

Nkosie: what do you want to eat?

Khwezi: dunked wings, some Nandos full chicken and something to drink

Nkosie: okay then

he started the car and he drove to the mall, the drive was quite and I know he wanted to say something but I honestly don't want to hear anything.

he places his hand on my thigh and I look at him, he looks at me and I look away, I remove his hand.

he places the hand back on my thighs and he start brushing it gently while he drove, I let him be and I didn't argue with him.

we arrive at the mall and he opens the door for me, I got out of the car and we went inside the mall.

we went to Nandos first and we ordered the chicken, he ended

up buying some extra things there.

We set down and he held my hand.

Nkosie: ngyakthanda Mapholoba

Khwezi: okay

I quickly reply and I got busy on my phone removing my hand from his, I love him I really do but he doesn't trust me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

our order came and we left with the food, we decided to go on a drive through on KFC.

Nkosie: Baby why you doing this to me though?

Khwezi: doing what?

Nkosie: not talking to me, ignoring me, I can't even touch you plus I just told you that I love you and you said okay what the fuck is that suppose to make me feel huh?

Khwezi: I don't care okay let's just get discovery with, I'm exhausted

he didn't say anything, we ordered the food and we drove to his place, I couldn't wait till we got home so I was eating in the car.

the headache is still there so is the pain, he parks the car outside and I got out, he follows behind with my beg.

he opens the door and I got inside.

Nkosie: you know your way around the house

Khwezi: I need a long bath, my feet and body hurt

Nkosie: can I join you?

Khwezi: no Nkosie!

I shook my head and I went upstairs, I heard him chuckle, I went to his room and I went to the bathroom.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I prepared a bath for myself and I soaked myself inside, I stayed there for a long time, I got out since the water was starting to get cold.

I took a towel and I dried my body, I wrap a towel around my body and I head out.

I started to lotion my body and I got dressed, I had to pick between my hoodie and his...guess whose hoodie I chose...

I went downstairs and he was seated in the living room staring at the blank wall, I stood in a distance and I fold my arms staring at him.

he really looks good, I ain't gonna lie but all light skinned gents don't look good but this guy right here he looks handsome and beautiful.

Nkosie: how long are you going to stare at me?

NOVELSGURU.COM

he turns and looks at me.

Khwezi: I wasn't looking at you

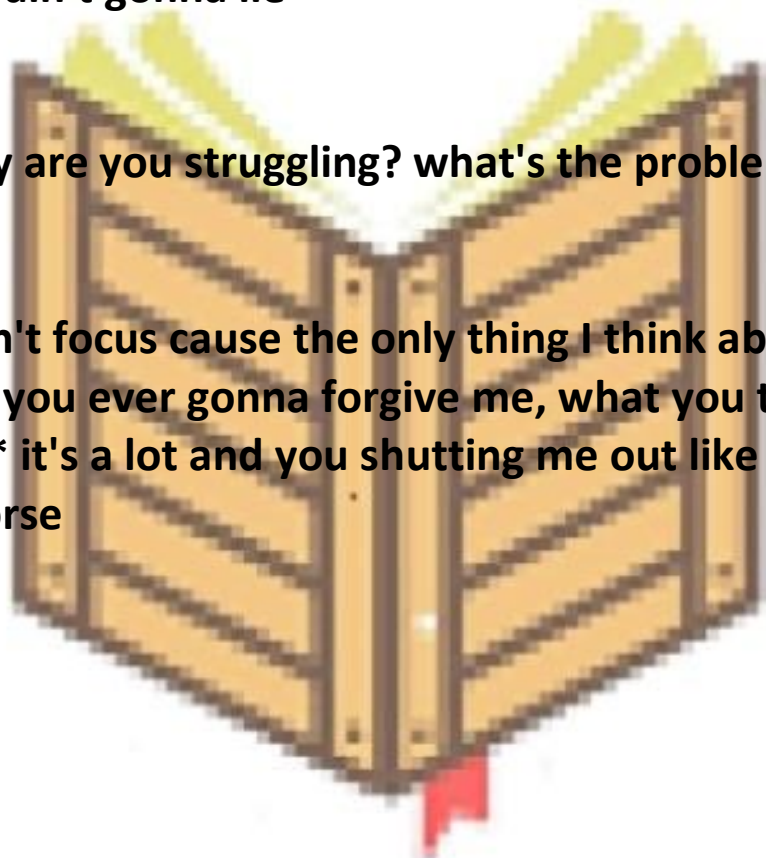
he chuckles and I set down next to him.

Khwezi: what are you thinking about?

Nkosie: how fucked up things are right now *laughs a little* you know in would have found a solution for all this but I'm struggling, I ain't gonna lie

Khwezi: why are you struggling? what's the problem?

Nkosie: I can't focus cause the only thing I think about is you, if you okay, if you ever gonna forgive me, what you think of me...*sighs* it's a lot and you shutting me out like this really makes it worse



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: so I'm making you loose focus, perfect *smiles*

Nkosie: perfect? ohh so this is a good thing to you?

Khwezi: I don't know...maybe I mean...*shrugs*

Nkosie: you are sick in the head

Khwezi: person can't be sick in the head

Nkosie: but seriously though let's talk

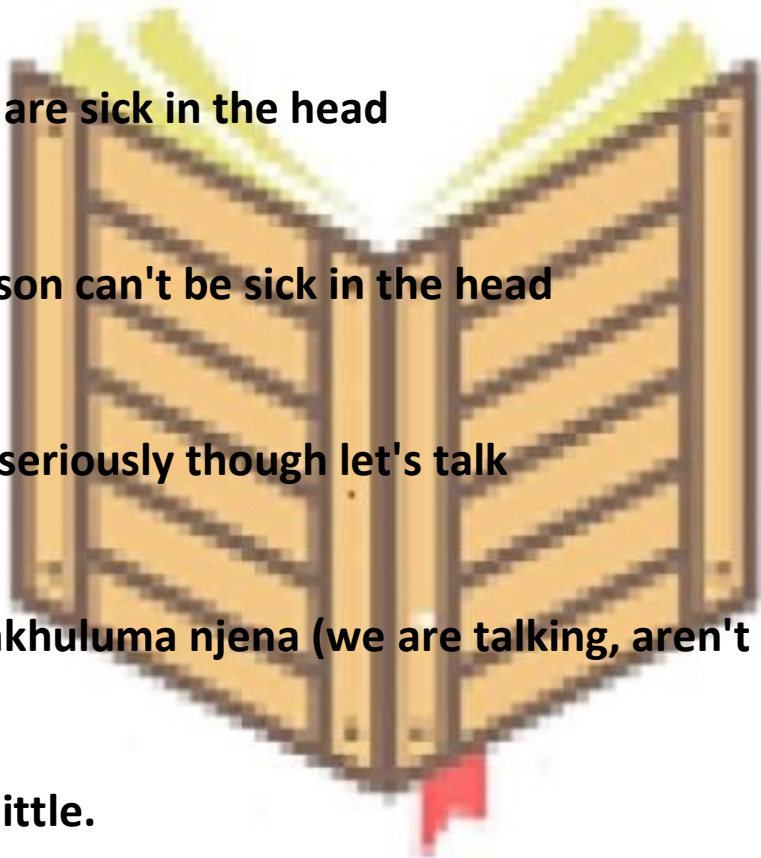
Khwezi: siyakhuluma njena (we are talking, aren't we?)

he smiles a little.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I want us to talk about our situation

Khwezi: what's there to talk about? it's not like if we talk it's gonna change anything about you and who you are



Nkosie: I know it won't change any of that, I just want you back into my life Khwezi not because you carrying my baby, because I love you and I can't seem to imagine a moment without you by my side and everything is...

Khwezi: slow down *giggles*

I place my hand in his cheek, he looks at me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: this is all hard to take in but I want to hear you out, so I'm all ears

he looks at me, I remove my hand from his cheek.

Nkosie: you know the main thing I want is to always keep you protected at all cost right?

Khwezi: yes

Nkosie: that is what I was doing, I'm not a perfect person and I have my ups and downs, I have my own demons and a dark side I do not ever want you to see...I just wanted to protect you cause if the people I work with find out about you they will know that you my weakness and they will use you to get to me by that I mean they will kill you *sighs* so don't blame a man trying to protect the love of his life...

Khwezi: I get that you were trying to protect me but you won't always be there to protect me Nkosie, so I had to know about all this

Nkosie: I have my own way of doing thing and I ain't about to change them, can't you just be like the rest of them...don't ask any questions and...

Khwezi: so you comparing me with your hoes now? *laughs a little* wow you full of shit you know

Nkosie: I did not mean it like that, I'm sorry I just...*sighs* you just different

Khwezi: what is your other business about?

Nkosie: Khwezi!

he looks at me.

Khwezi: what Nkosie? I'm about to bring a baby into this world so I need to know what happens in this world of yours



NOVELSGURU.COM

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 85

NKOSINATHI.

I look at her, I really can't believe after I just told her that I want to protect her from my world, instead of understanding she wants to know about it.

God what took you so long to get me this beautiful hardheaded women? I'm in love.

Nkosie: you don't want to know

Khwezi: Nkosie I'm not stupid okay, you gonna keep going back and forth and you gonna try to make me forget so please speak up because I'm loosing my patience

Nkosie: I deal with drug, I mix them and seek them to buyers, I sell weapons and I do human trafficking

Khwezi: what you do, do you love it?

Nkosie: I don't, you gotta do what you have to do to survive

Khwezi: you know there are other options right?

Nkosie: don't try changing me, I'm good just the way I am



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I'm not trying to...*pauses* baby the people you traffic have family

Nkosie: and I have a family that need to stay fed, I got a baby on the way and I need to live something for him

Khwezi: I get you but from now on wards don't hide things from me

Nkosie: no hiding things

I can't really tell her about Sakhile, I have added enough stress for her, I will just wait for the right time then I will tell her do now I need to make sure she's safe and protected at all times.

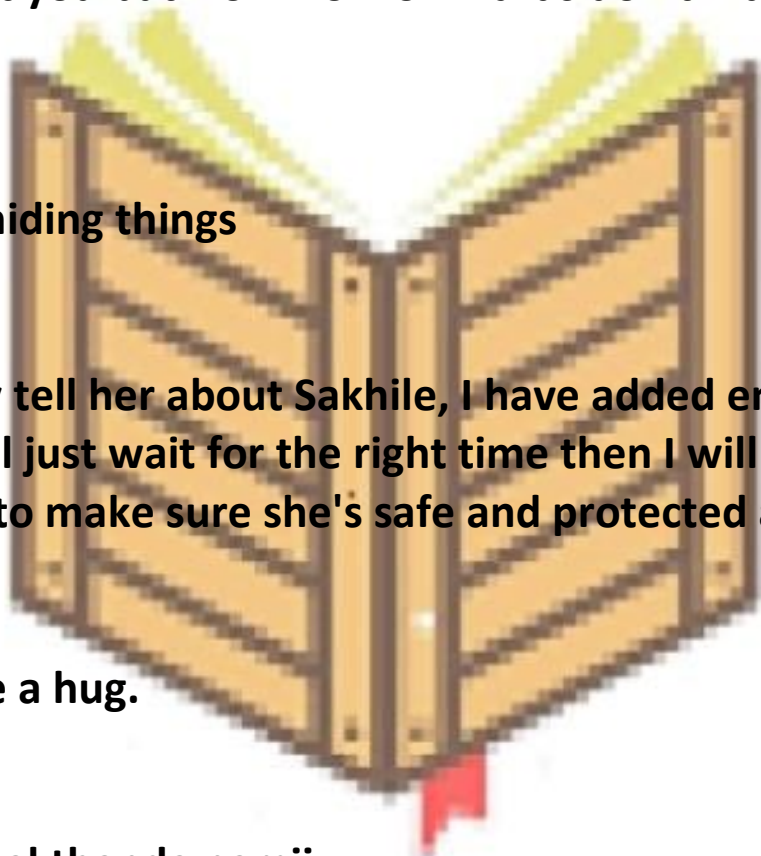
she gave me a hug.

Khwezi: Ngyakthanda namii

NOVELSGURU.COM

I chuckle, she's answering me now? This girl

Nkosie: what took you so long?



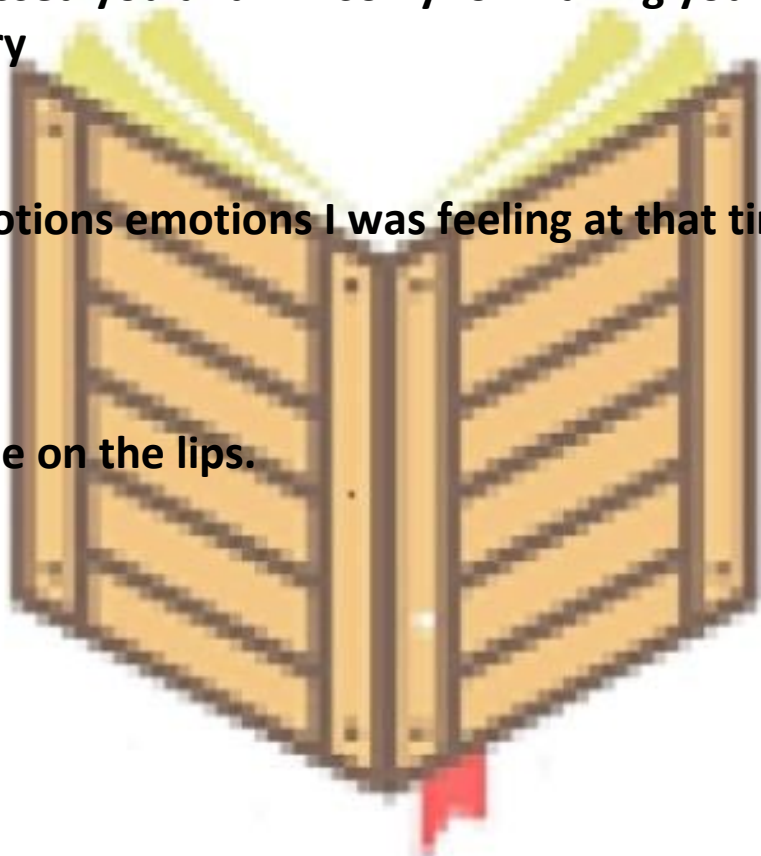
Khwezi: I don't know just had to think about a few things then yeah

she pulls out from the hug and she bites her lower lip, I want to bite it for her though.

Nkosie: I missed you and I'm sorry for making you cry, I hate it when you cry

Khwezi: emotions emotions I was feeling at that time, I missed you more

she pecks me on the lips.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: don't play with me

Khwezi: hawu

she pouts looking at me and I smile.

Khwezi: what?

Nkosie: umuhle (you beautiful)

she blushes.

Khwezi: thank you

Nkosie: what about me?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you are fine

Nkosie: what? you gotta do better than that

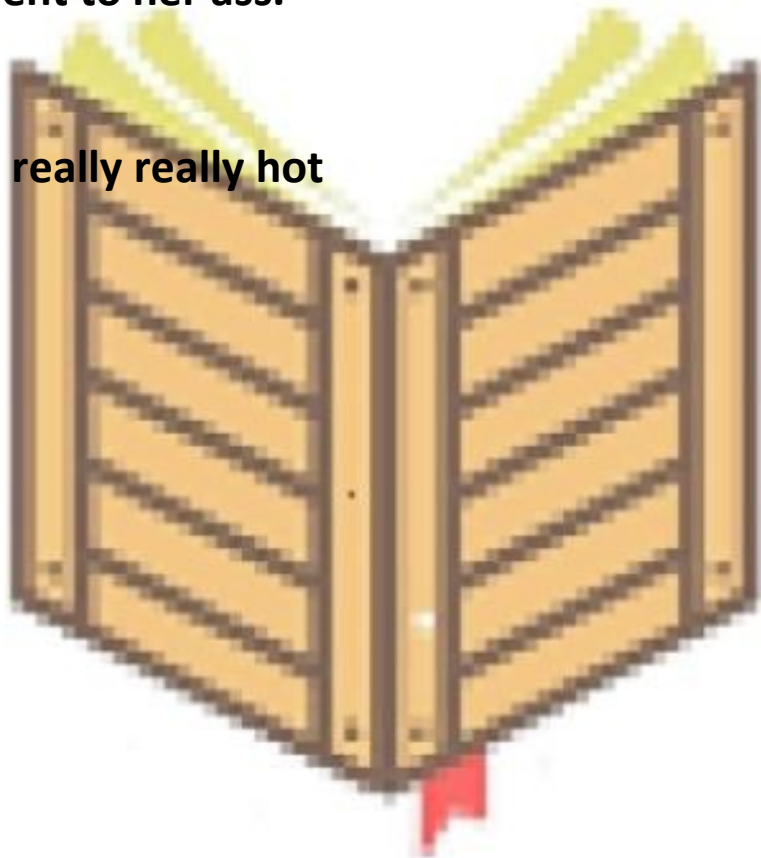


Khwezi: you not that bad

I pull her to me and she sits on top of me, she pecked my lips and she started to kiss me on the neck giving me those wet kisses.

My hands went to her ass.

Khwezi: you really really hot



NOVELSGURU.COM

she whispers to my ear and she licks my ear, she giggles, my body is starting to heat up and I'm slowly getting turned on.

she continues to kiss my neck and I groan, she stops kissing my neck and she came to my lips, she French kisses me.

my hands are still on her fat ass and she is slowly moving her waist while on top of me, I got hard and I gently pull her lower lip.

as I was about to get back to the kiss she moves away, I look at her and she bites her lip once again.

Nkosie: and then?

Khwezi: I'm hungry

Nkosie: you can have ma th have the other food later

I say and kiss her neck.

Khwezi: I'm exhausted baby



NOVELSGURU.COM

she pecks my lip and indeed she is exhausted, I nod and she got off me, we cuddled.

I order something for her to eat, there's no way she's carrying one baby, she can't be hungry very now and then.

the food came and she ate.

Nkosie: you happy now?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: yes but I will be much happier if I sleep on my name chest after I'm done eating

Nkosie: you wanna sleep on my chest now? lol yazii lol

Khwezi: don't be boring

Nkosie: there's no way you sleeping on my chest sisi

Khwezi: why not? you got someone else sleeping on it?

Nkosie: yes I do and she wouldn't want someone else taking her spot

Khwezi: ngabe you want me to cut off your balls and penis

I laugh.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you would want to cut this? never I know you

Khwezi: shut up

she gives me a side eye and I laugh out loud

Khwezi: wonakele koda Nkosie

Nkosie: mina? you the one whose rotin here

Khwezi: when you put it in English baby you make it sound so wierd *laughs*



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you the wierd one eat your food

she stood laughing and she looks at me.

Khwezi: angizwanii nomuntu ovedane aphaphe mina (I don't like a person who becomes forward for no particular reason)

Nkosie: you talking to me njalo?

Khwezi: no baby I'm taking to the walls *smiles*

I shook my head a laugh, she thinks I'm a fool.

she finishes with her food and I was scrolling on Netflix looking for a movie, she got on top of me and she lays on my chest.

Khwezi: kumnandi esfubeni sendoda

NOVELSGURU.COM

I just chuckle, she pecks my lip and we watched a movie together.

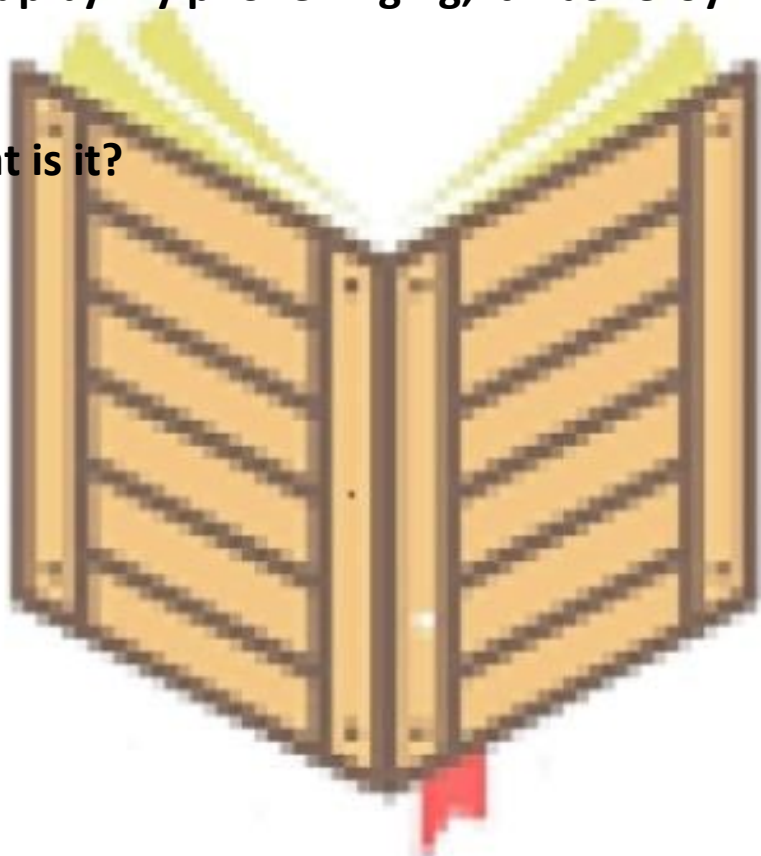
the movie ended up watching us cause we were so focused on taking to each other and teasing each other every now and

then.

I messaged her swollen feets and she ended up talking a sleep, I also slept cause I was bored and her cute snores sound really good.

I was woke up by my phone ringing, it was Leroy.

Nkosie: what is it?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Leroy: the shipment just arrived do you want to check it?

Nkosie: no you check it for me and of anything doesn't look good you call me

Leroy: okay boss, about the girls?

Nkosie: we gonna sort that out tomorrow and I need you to keep an eye on someone for me

Leroy: say the word boss and I'm on it

I look at Khwezi who was fast asleep.

Nkosie: I will send it to you instead

Leroy: fede fede (sharp sharp)

NOVELSGURU.COM

I hung up, I sent him the name and he agreed.

I went back to sleep.

.

.

•
FOREVA YENA

Insert 86

SYATHOKOZA.

**I woke up early in the morning and my room is messed up,
bottles of alcohol and some left over pizza.**



NOVELSGURU.COM

three girls are in my bed now that's making me wonder what happened yesterday night, I move this one girl off my chest and I went to the bathroom.

I ain't the dating type and I don't think I will ever be, I'm the smash and pass type, I also don't believe in love and relationships at all.

it's all a waste of time imagine spending a whole life time with the very same person, eating the same coochie every single day...hell no not while there's still a billion ladies out there.

I wash my face with cold water and my head hurts, I took a towel and I dry my face, I went back to the main room and I went to the closet.

I took out a stash of cash and I went to wake up the girls.

Sya: come on this ain't your mother's house now get dressed, take this cash and get the fuck out of my house

I threw the money at them, I know how thirsty these hoes are and they would do anything for money.

Girl1: you not gonna give us a ride home?

Sya: do I look like a uber driver to you? the fuck no ain't taking you anywhere

Girl3: but we had fun tonight and you promised to give us a ride back

Sya: look I was drunk and high, I don't even remember smashing any of your pussies so you can kindly do me a favour of getting out of my house or I will have you dragged out

Girl1: wow



NOVELSGURU.COM

one says and I just charge my phone, I notice a missed call from Nkosie, I will call him after taking a shower.

Sya: don't even think of stealing any of my stuff

I point at them and I went to the bathroom. I took a shower and I got done after a while, I got out and i dried my body.

I walk out of the bathroom naked, I know I stay alone and I knew the girls already left.

I started to lotion my body and I got dressed, I wore a pair of black jeans, a oversized Gucci brown t- shirt, I wore my air Jordan's.

I took my phone and I went downstairs, I got a call from Nkosie, shit I was suppose to call him back, but he won't mind won't he, it's not like is some emergency.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: my blood

Nkosie: how many times have I been calling you Sya?

Sya: geez dude so early in the morning you breathing fire, what

is she not giving you some?

Nkosie: I'm not in the mood also don't talk about my wife like that

Sya: so she does give it to you, I though pregnant women can't have sex

Nkosie: Sya you don't want me to come there a fuck up your face, don't talk about my wife

Sya: I was just joking, so what's going on?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: Sakhile is going on, I need you to come to the warehouse real quick we got some huge shit we need to talk about

Sya: you finally got Ntnado out?

Nkosie: just come to the warehouse we will talk there, cool?

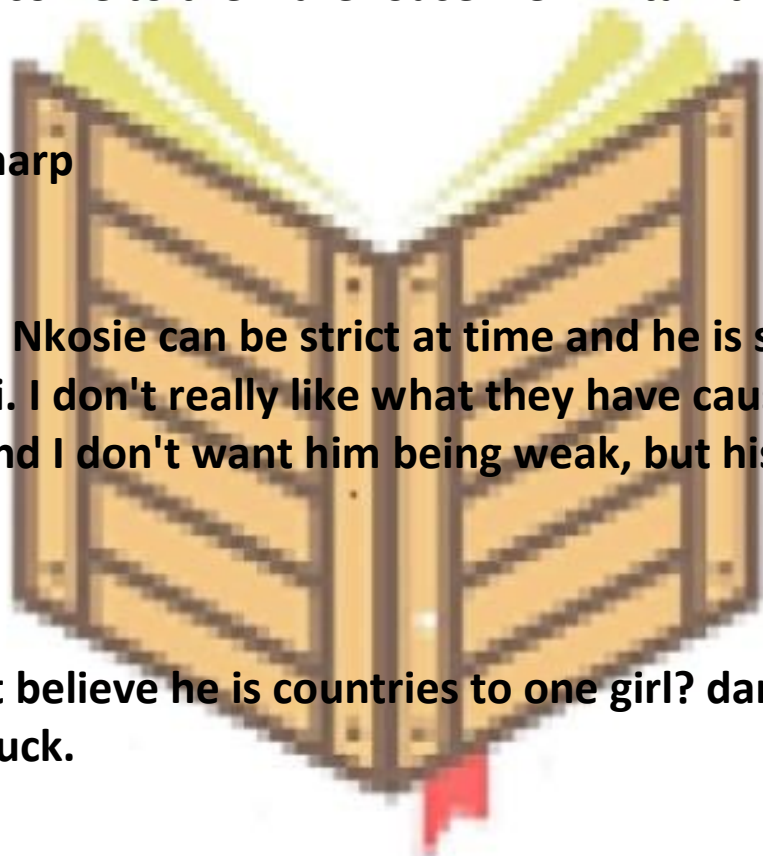
Sya: yeah sharp

He hung up, Nkosie can be strict at time and he is so in love with Khwezi. I don't really like what they have cause it's making him weak and I don't want him being weak, but his happy atleast.

I really can't believe he is countries to one girl? damn that mist be hard as fuck.

I made myself a hangover drink and I drank it, I had a sandwich and I took my car keys when I was done eating.

I lock the door and I went inside my car, o drove straight to the warehouse, I wonder what's this is about.



I arrive and the rest of my brothers cars are parked outside, I park mine next to Sandile's car and I got out.

I went inside the warehouse and they are all there.

Sya: so what's the deal?

Nkosie: Ntando made another careless well stupid decision

Nkanyezi: God what did he do now?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: he is out of jail but I did not get him out but his brother in law AKA the insane Ndlovu boy did

Sandile: what? Sakhile is back?

Sya: hold up what? how did he get him out?

Nkosie: he made him sign some papers which he did not read but decided to sign immediately which lead us to the very huge problem I was talking about

he sighs, we all look at him waiting for him to say something

Nkosie: in those papers he signed he was transferring all of his shares, money, cars, houses and everything else he owns to the one and only...

Sya: Sakhile *clicks tongue*

Sandile: kanti zithatha kanjani ekhanda laNtando?

he looks pissed.

Nkosie: found him at the office moving my things out of my office saying it is his now

Nkanyezi: tell me you put a bullet in his skull

Nkosie: I didn't, if we take him down, he is going down with us and the business also...so we must think before trying to make a move on him, remember that guy is insane and he would do anything

Sandile: even the unthinkable *sighs* fuck! this is messed up



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: tell me about it so what we going to do?

Nkosie: we gonna hire some security at our places, some personal gaurds for Zizi and Khwezi, also mom

Nkanyezi: that's a good idea, in the meantime we have to think of a way to eliminate this guy

Sya: I second that, ain't no way we gonna let a fucker like him walk all over our heads and we ain't gon do nothing about it

Sandile: ain't no way we letting this slide

Nkosie: and I will deal with Ntando myself, he better pray that he stays hiddin wherever he is cause if I find him... *shakes head*

okay this is really bad, Ntando can really make foolish moves looks now.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: I will track him down

Nkosie: sure case, also have y'all heard from Tom and his crew?

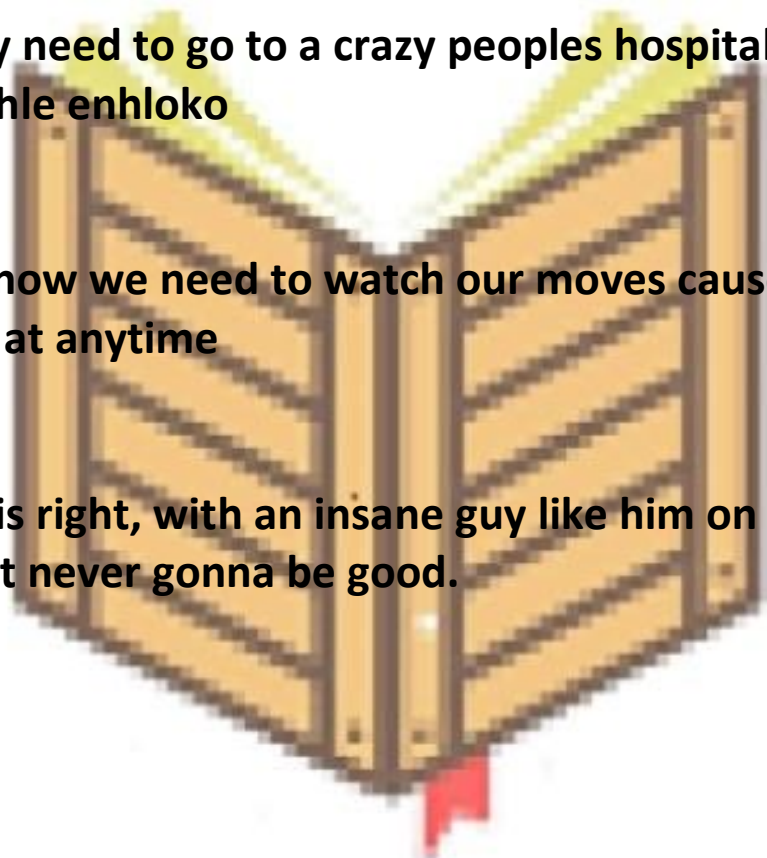
Sandile: nah but they must be out already, I mean the insane dude made everything disappear

Nkosie: not everything, a little birdie told me he wants to frame everything on me

Sya: this guy need to go to a crazy peoples hospital cause nah, azithathi kahle enhloko

Nkosie: for now we need to watch our moves cause anything can happen at anytime

we nod, he is right, with an insane guy like him on the loose nothing ain't never gonna be good.



NOVELSGURU.COM

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 87

KHWEZILOKUSA.

We in class and the lecturers is busy teaching, I'm all focused and Zizi is busy on her phone giggling while texting with somebody.

she has been bubbly ever since she got back from wherever she was, she is also glowing, am I missing something here?

the class ends and the lecturer walks out, we pack out stuff.

Khwezi: girl you seem smiley today

NOVELSGURU.COM

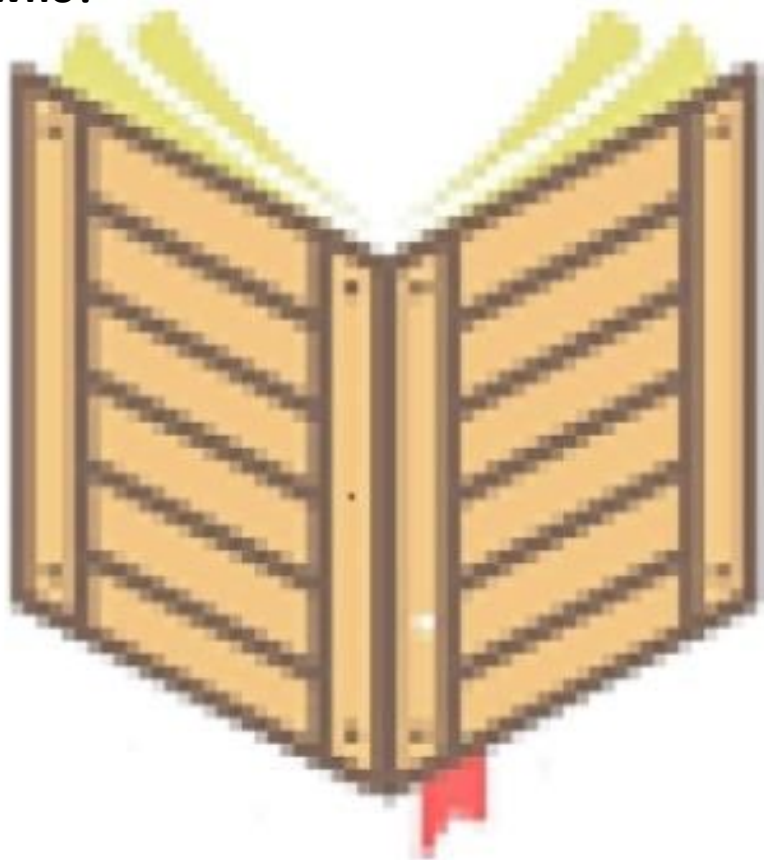
Zizi: what?

she looks at me, she is not even focused, whoever that is I can tell with those giggles that it's a boy.

Khwezi: so who is he?

I ask as we walk out of the class.

Zizi: who is who?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: cut the act Zizi, you have been happy eve since you came back yesterday and those giggles mean something

Zizi: can't I laugh and not be suspected of something

Khwezi: girl who you trying to fool here?

Zizi: okay fine *smiles* so I met this guy and he is supper cute, handsome, caring, loving and best of all he loves me and I love him

Khwezi: haybo hamba wena *giggles* I'm so happy for you

Zizi: thank you

Khwezi: so when am I meeting the guy?

Zizi: meeting the guy? I mean we just met don't you think it's still early to be meeting with friends or close people to me

Khwezi: i get you but I want you to tell the guy if he her breaks your heart, you know what me and your brother are gonna do



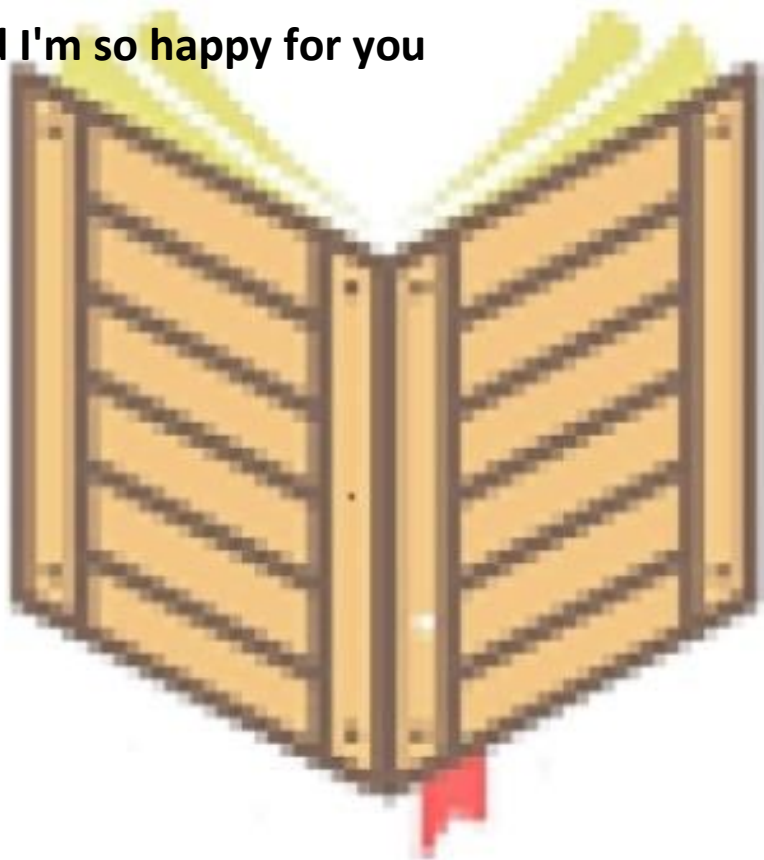
NOVELSCORNER.COM

Zizi kaughs.

Zizi: I will tell him

she smiles, I give her a hug.

Khwezi: God I'm so happy for you



NOVELSGURU.COM

I kiss her cheek.

my phone rang and it was Nkosie, I pull away from the hug and I answer the phone.

Khwezi: Nkosie

I say in a low tone.

Nkosie: hawu sengiwu Nkosie manje? (ohh, I'm NKOSIE now?)

I laugh a little.

Nkosie: uhlekani? (what you laughing at?)

Khwezi: okay Baby *giggles* you happy?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: *chuckles* I'm outside, I came to fetch you

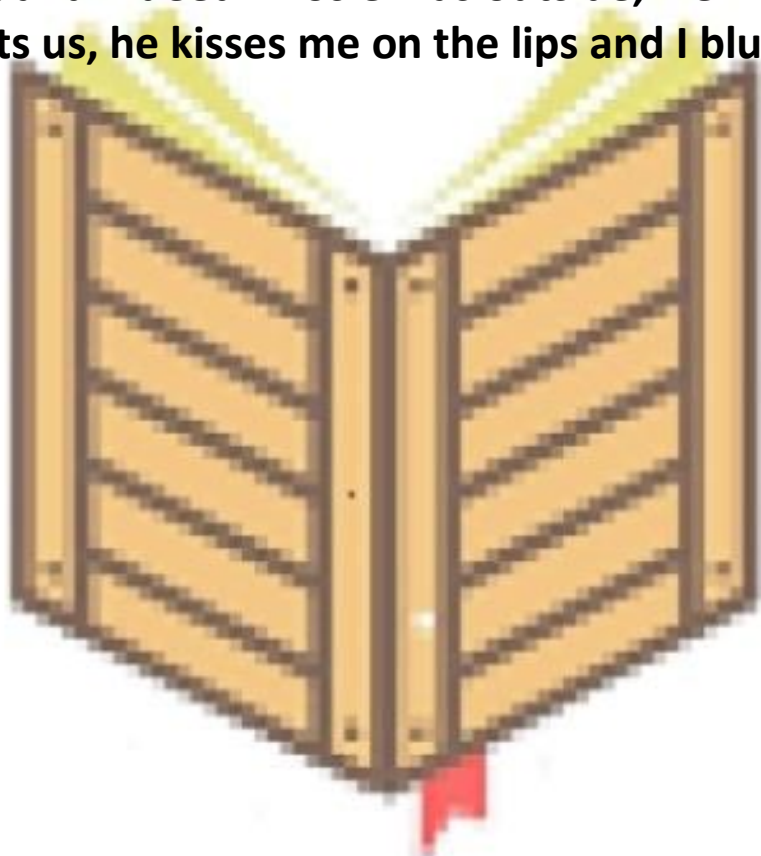
Khwezi: we on our way out

Nkosie: okay...

he hung up, geez this guy.

I shake my head.

we walk out and indeed Nkosie was outside, we walk to him and he greets us, he kisses me on the lips and I blush.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I look down shy, in front of his sister though? this guy!!

Nkosie: how are you doing?

Zizi: we are good and I have to leave, I need to be somewhere

Nkosie: somewhere huh?

Zizi: get your nose out of my business

Nkosie: I'm just protecting you

Zizi: I didn't ask you to protect me

Nkosie: speaking of protection y'all will be having body gaurds to watch you, don't worry though you don't even know they are there

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: what are they for? is there something wrong?

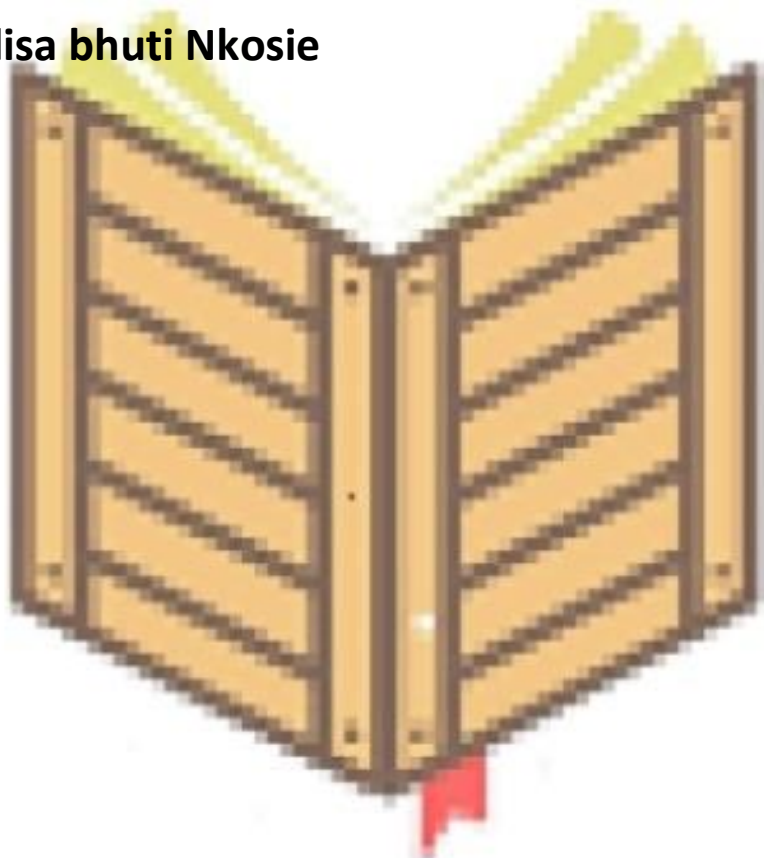
Nkosie: I just want to keep you two safe that's all

he kisses my cheek, he is lying to me and I can tell.

Zizi: as long as they gonna stay the fuck away from my business

Nkosie: you don't swear when you taking to me

Zizi: ngyaxolisa bhuti Nkosie



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you sound so innocent yet you not

Zizi: mxm

she rolls her eyes and Nkosie laughs, they share a hug and she left.

The minute she was fine I turn to look at Nkosie and I fold my arms.

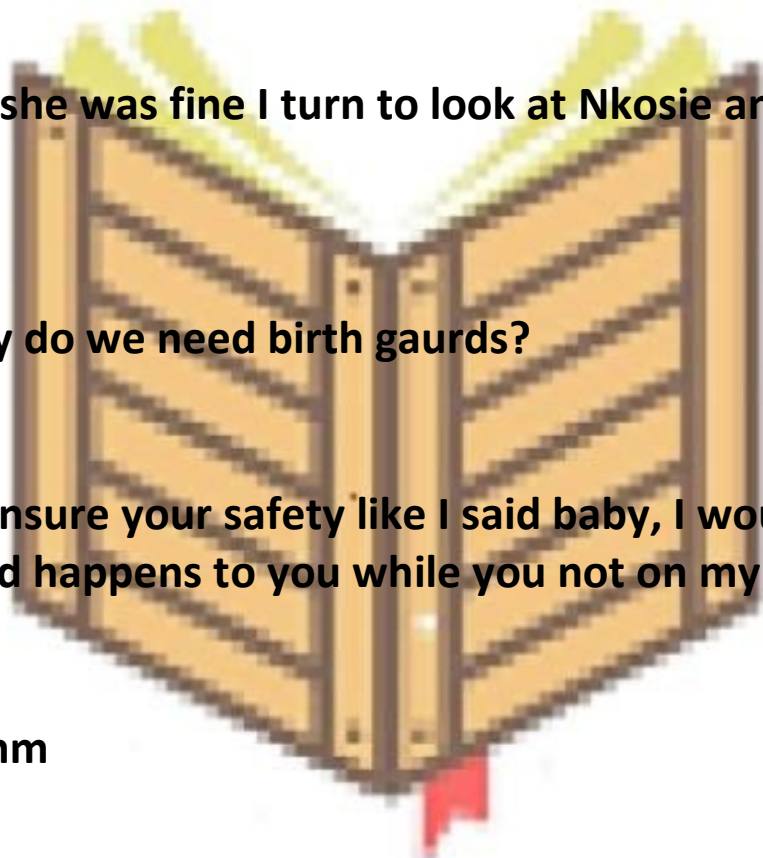
Khwezi: why do we need birth gaurds?

Nkosie: to ensure your safety like I said baby, I would hate if anything bad happens to you while you not on my watch

Khwezi: Mmm

I pout, he held me by the waist and he pulls me closer to him, he attaches me with a kiss and I respond effective immediately.

His lips are soft and cold, I wrap my arms aroindnhis neck and stood on my toes as I tried to reach to his tall ass.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he pulls me a little more closer to him, he grabs my ass and spoke in between the kiss.

Khwezi: the people...

then you could here those sounds of us sucking each other's lips, tongue...whatever but that sound.

his lips formed a smile and he continued to grab my ass, I felt this shiver right at the back of my spine.

I remove my hands from his neck and I now had them on his chest, grabbing his t-shirt while kissing him.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I felt something poking me and I pull out from the kiss, he groans and he lays his head on my shoulder and he sighs.

I bite my lower lip and he kisses my neck, he looks at me with his reddish half closed eyes.

Khwezi: I love you

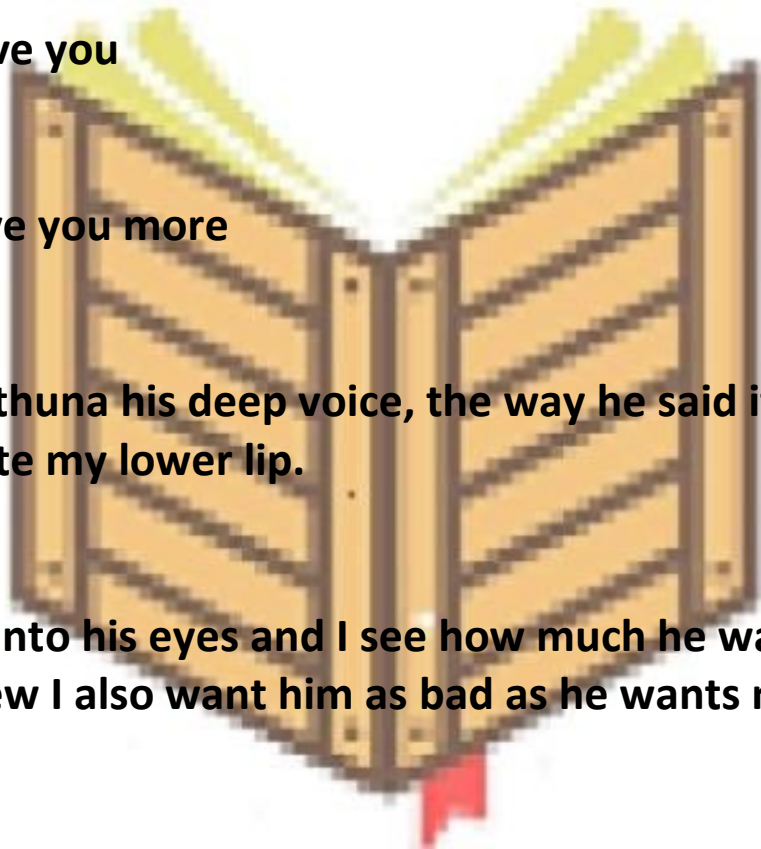
Nkosie: I love you more

his voice bethuna his deep voice, the way he said it; it for me wet and I bite my lower lip.

I'm looking into his eyes and I see how much he wants me, on my if he knew I also want him as bad as he wants me.

he opens the door for me and I got inside the car, he jogs to his side and he got inside, he struggles to fix his pants as he was still hard.

My poor man though, he reaches his hand to the back and he took a box of pizza and he gave it to me along with some milkshake.

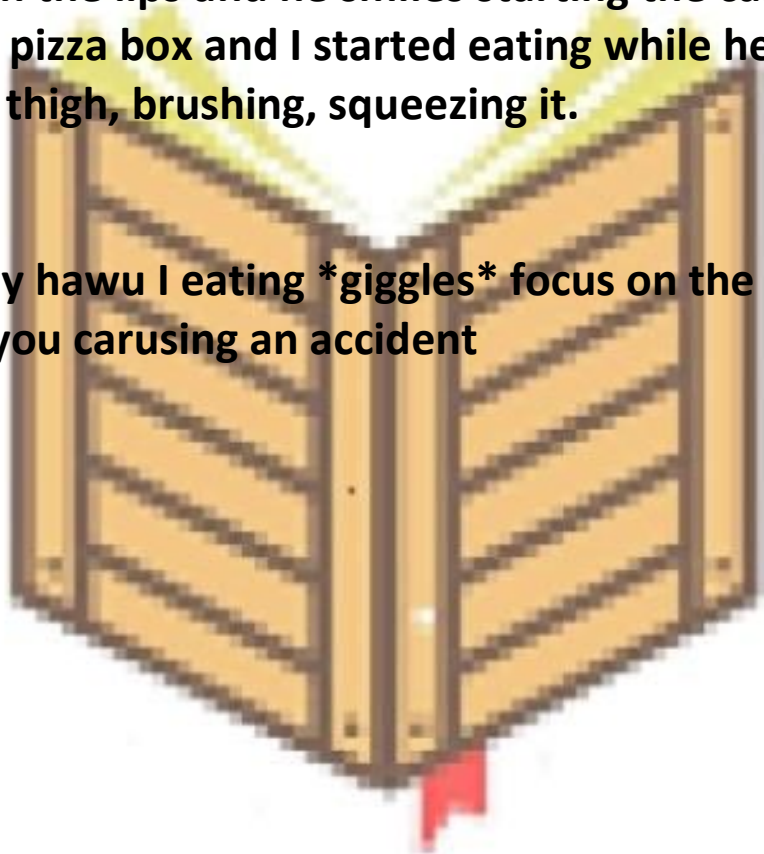


I smile.

Khwezi: thank you baby, you the best

I peck him on the lips and he smiles starting the car, I giggle opening the pizza box and I started eating while he had his hand on my thigh, brushing, squeezing it.

Khwezi: baby hawu I eating *giggles* focus on the driving, I don't want you carusing an accident



NOVELSGURU.COM

he doesn't answer, he just continues to brush my thigh, I finished up eating and I'm now having my milkshake.

Nkosie hand slowly reaches the inside of my skirt, why did i wear a skirt again? I remove his hand.

Khwezi: drive Nkosie

I say and the heat in this car is a lot, even this milkshake is not helping, we stop since the robot has turned red.

Nkosie just pulls me to him and he kisses me, that took me by surprise but I repond and his hand makes it way inside my side.

I found myself opening my legs wider and he slides my panty to the side and he slides his finger inside me.

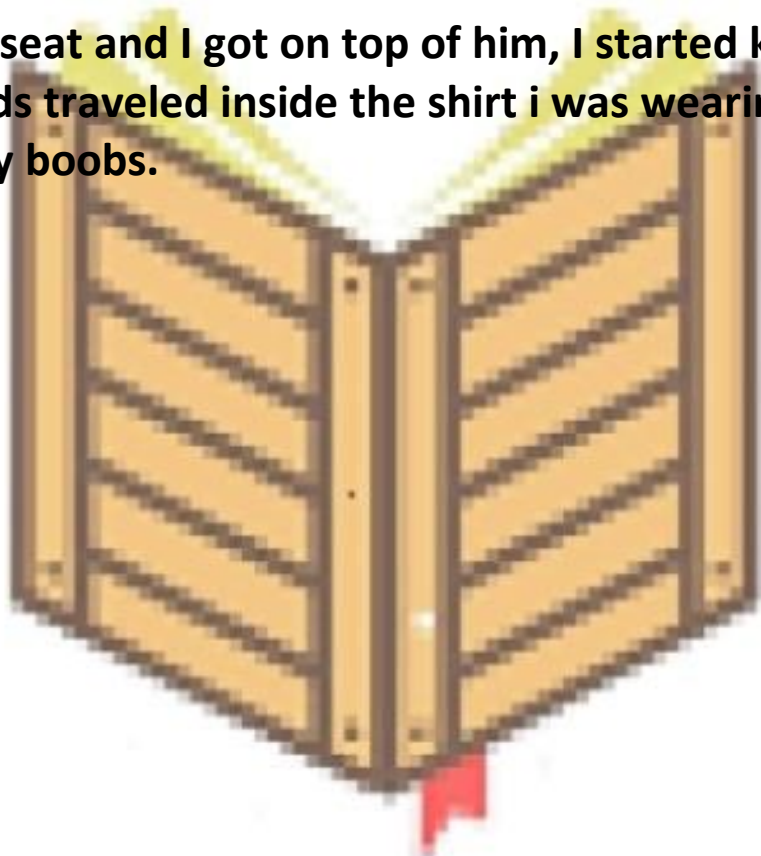
I let out a moan and I drop the empty milkshake cup on the floor, I pull away from the kiss and bite my lower lip.

the next thing the cars a hooting at us and I open my eyes, the robot is green, I push Nkosie's hand out of me and he licks his fingers with a smirk.

he starts driving and I fix my skirt, my cheeks hurt and oh my God I'm horny, I remained quite the whole ride till we got home.

The car stops and I look at Nkosie, he unbuckles his seatbelt and he moved his seat back, this guys knows me well.

I got off my seat and I got on top of him, I started kissing him and his hands traveled inside the shirt i was wearing and he squeezes my boobs.



NOVELSGURU.COM

on the other hand my hands are inside his pants, I pull out his hard d*ck and he groans, I slide my panty to the side and I entered him inside me.

my vagina walls expand as he is half way in and I let out a moan when I set fully on top of him with him fully inside me.

I slowly move my waist slowly in circles and he groans, he grabs my ass and I grab his hair, I slowly ride him and I bite my lower lip.

I started to increase the motion and my moans got louder, he was grabbing me tighter, he takes off the shirt I was wear and he starts sucking my boobs while I'm on top of him riding him.

he takes in control this time and he moves my waist slowly as he groans enjoying it, I moan and I started to kiss him though I struggled, the pleasure kicks in and I pull out from the kiss, I moan as I start bumping my ass on top of him and that made him to go insane.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I could feel him deep inside me and the car windows are fool of the mist, the temperature in this car is very hot and hard to handle.

I felt this urge of peeing and I got weak, he held my ass and

made me to moving up and down once again on top of him and I lost it, I burst and let everything out, he followed after me.

I held him close to my great as both are breathing heavily and he is still inside me, after a while I got off him and I went back to my seat.

Nkosie: Ngyakthanda Mapholoba

Khwezi: Ngyakthanda namii Mnis'wemvula

he smiles and he fixes himself and got out of the car, he came to my side and he carried me out of the car and whispered to my ear.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: round 2?

I bite my lower lip, he carries me inside and we'll you know what happened.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 88

NKOSINATHI.

Khwezi is fast asleep and she looks really cute when she is asleep, she's laying on my chest while a played with her hair.

I enjoy every moment with her and if I had lost her in my life I don't know what I would have done, I look at her and my phone rings.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I gently move her off me and I went to answer my phone, it was Leroy, I answered.

Nkosie: what's up?

Leroy: we found him

Nkosie: found who? be specific

Leroy: we found Ntando, I have contacted the rest of your brothers

Nkosie: I'm on my way, make sure that you don't lose him cause if you do, you should also get lost.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Leroy: I will make sure that I don't lose him

Nkosie: good

I hung up and I look at Khwezi and she was sitting you straight rubbing her eyes, I think I woke her up.

Khwezi: baby come back to bed

Nkosie: I need to do something real quick

Khwezi: what is it? is everything okay?

Nkosie: Ntando has been spotted somewhere around Joburg, I need to get there and deal with him

I told her everything about Ntando and what he did.

Khwezi: baby he is your brother remember that, you don't have to hurt him



NOVELSGURU.COM

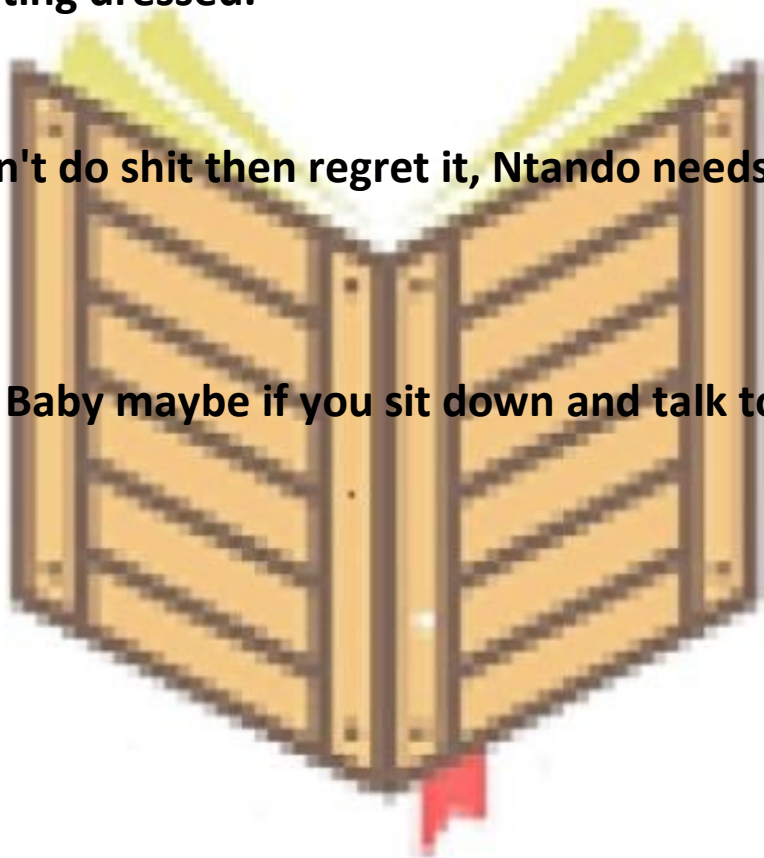
Nkosie: I have my own way of doing things, so please will you be okay if I left you here?

Khwezi: no *sighs* I mean that...i don't want you doing something you going to regret later

I started getting dressed.

Nkosie: I don't do shit then regret it, Ntando needs to be taught a lesson

Khwezi: but Baby maybe if you sit down and talk to him



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I don't talk Khwezi, I act, i don't have time for talking

I took out my gun from the drawer and she got up from the bed and she held my hand and I look at her.

Nkosie: Mapholoba ngyakucela

Khwezi: namii ngyakucela Mvelase, don't do this

I tuck my gun at the back on my pants, I kissed her on the forehead and I gently removed her hands off me.

I took my car keys and I went downstairs, she was following me and I could see the fair in her eyes.

I left the house and drove to the location, my brother are already there, I park my car and I got out.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I walk to them and they all looked worried, it's not like I'm gonna kill him.

Sandile: Nkosie you need to think about this

Sya: there's nothing to think about here, Ntando fucked up

Nkanyezi: but that doesn't give him the right to kill him, does father know about this?

Nkosie: I won't kill him but my gun will

I was about to walk away when Nkanyezi held me, I gave him a look and he quickly removed his hands off me.

Nkosie: you ain't want some of this shit trust me



NOVELSGURU.COM

he raises his hands in the air in surrender, I click my tongue and I make my way inside the building, I got inside and he is seated by the bar having shots.

the place slowly started to clear up as I took out my gun, they didn't waste any time, they just left.

I went to Ntando and I point my gun at his head.

Ntando: what the fuck do you even know who I am? you busy pointing your cheap gun at me

I chuckle.

Nkosie: I know exactly who you are, you thought I wouldn't find you huh?

Ntando: Nkosie NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: Lucifer himself, boy I told you to play far away from me now you went and made the situation worse

Ntando: what do you mean?

I shot in the air once and Ntando jumped, I grab him by the shirt and I push him to the floor.

Nkosie: since when you sign papers without reading?

Ntando: you know about that? what don't you know?

I'm tired of talking, he doesn't listen and right now my blood is boiling and all I want at this moment is to hear him up God knows if I will end up killing him.



NOVELSGURU.COM

while at my thoughts I found myself on top of him and throwing punch after punch, he was blocking his face with his arms.

I got even more anger, I punch him on his ribs since he thought I would stop cause he was covering his face.

I drag him outside and when my brother saw us they came to us, Ntando got up and he started to fight back.

a punch landed on my face but I paid back with a punch and kick on the balls. he landed on the floor again and I marinade him, they are shouting my name to stop but I can't seem to stop.

Sya: Nkosie you gonna kill him stop

I could hear him but I couldn't control what I'm doing, in my head I wanted to stop but heart hasn't yet gotten the satisfaction it wants.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I got up finally and I took out my gun pointing it at him, my hands are bloody and his face looks good after the whole make over.

Nkosie: you signed everything off to that fool, you have nothing left

Ntando groans in pain.

Ntando: you want to kill me?

he tries to sit up but he couldn't, he keep groaning and crying in pain.

Ntando: kill me...*groans* get rid of your problem but just know that in a few months you also gonna die



NOVELSGURU.COM

my heart skips a beat, I look at the rest of my brothers.

Sandile: what does he mean by that? hold up put the gun down and tell me what he means

he is being emotional right now and he is tears in his eyes, I look at Ntando furiously getting ready to pull the trigger.

I noticed father's car pulling over and he got out, he was with Khwezi, what is she doing here? so she told father about this.

Dad: son put the gun down

Nkosie: no I ain't putting no gun down, Ntando needs to pay for what he did

Dad: just put the gun down



NOVELSGURU.COM

I look back at Ntando and I shot at the ground.

Nkosie: any last words?

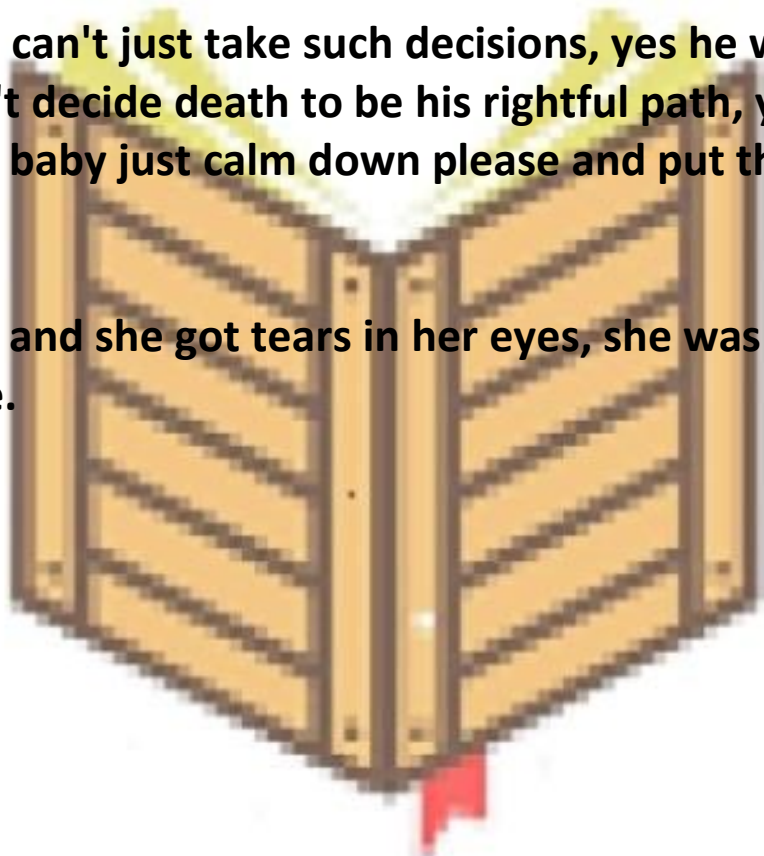
Khwezi: Nkosie baby please put the gun down

the worry in her voice makes me shiver.

Nkosie: he keeps fucking up our lived and I'm not gonna let his fuck it up again

Khwezi: you can't just take such decisions, yes he was wrong but you can't decide death to be his rightful path, you are not God *sighs* baby just calm down please and put the gun down

I look at her and she got tears in her eyes, she was getting closer to me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: ngyakucela Mvelase

she held the hand that had the gun and she looks at me in the eyes, yes she is my weakness and I hate it sometimes.

i lower the gun and Sya takes it from my hand, She gave me a hug and I held on tight, she smiles real good, I burry my face on her neck and she brushes the back of my head.

the next thing I heard a gun shot, I'm brought back to life as Khwezi's grib around my neck got weak, I pull out from the hug and I could feel something wet on her back.

I look at her and she had a tear coming out of her left eye and her mouth wide open, it's blood.

Dad: Ntando what did you do?

NOVELSGURU.COM

What just happened? Ntando shot Khwezi?

Nkosie: MaMvelase!!

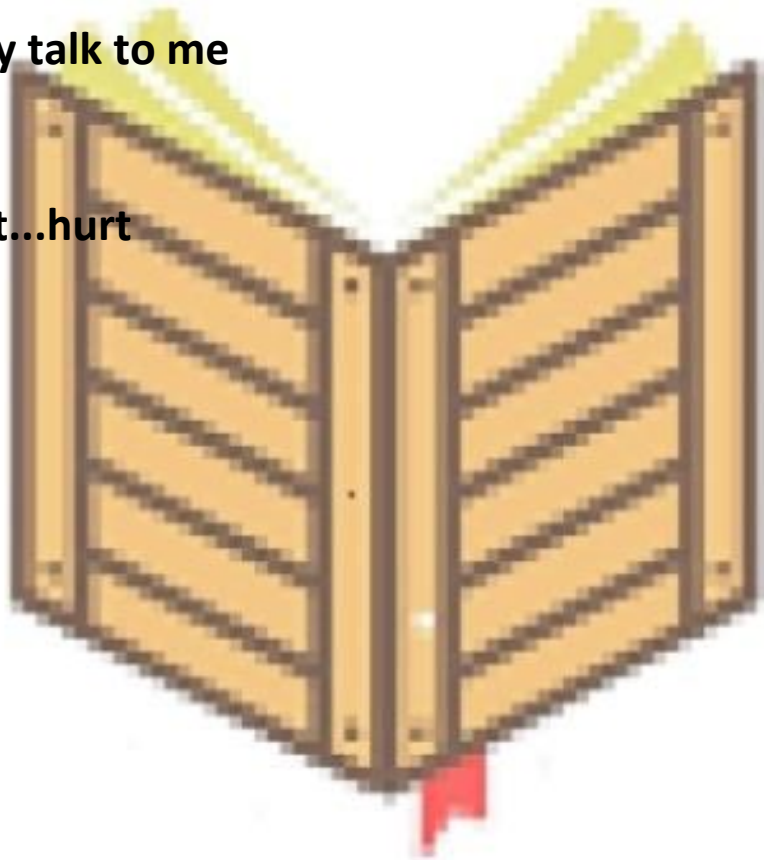
her body got weak and I held her.

Nkosie: fuck!! Sya get the car

I shout and I slao her cheek.

Nkosie: baby talk to me

Khwezi: it..it...hurt



NOVELSGURU.COM

she says tearing coming out of her eyes.

Nkosie: Ntando what did you do man, what did you do? fuck!

Ntando: I'm sorry bro

I lift Khwezi up and took her to the car, Aya drive us to the hospital while the others followed behind us.

Nkosie: baby don't close your eyes

khwezi: my baby...

she slowly says and held her baby bump.

.
. .
.

FOREVA YENA

NOVELSGURU.COM

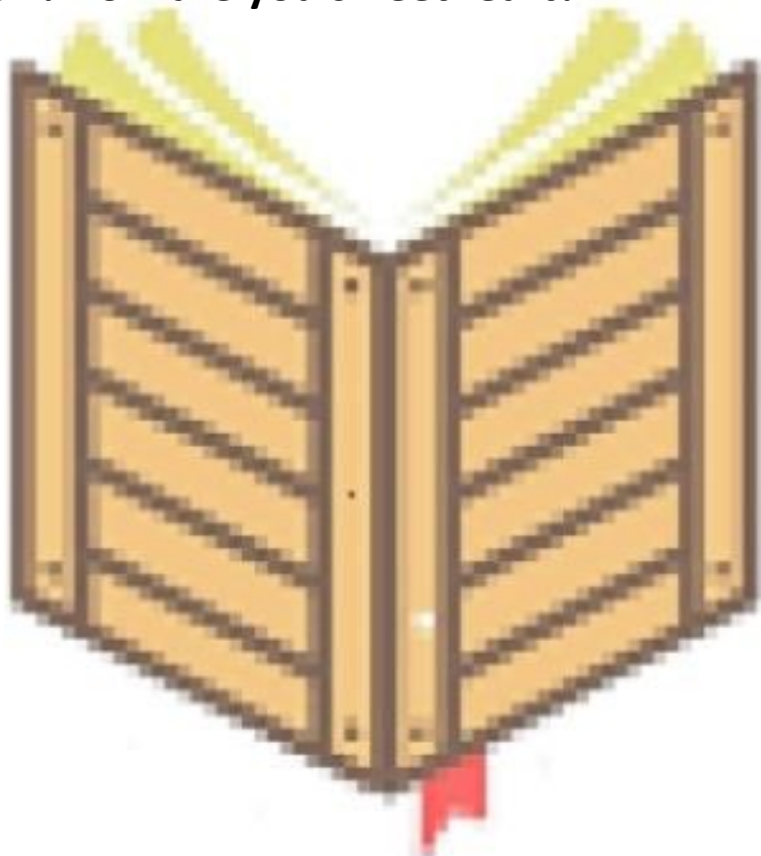
Insert 89

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I have never seen Nkosie like this, I'm really scared though. I don't want him doing something bad and maybe he might get hurt.

I took out my phone and I called his father,. he answered.

Mr M: Khwezi? how are you sweetheart?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: Mr Mthembu I'm okay thanks, I'm sorry for calling this late but there is a problem

Mr M: is Nkosie not treating you good? is he okay?

Khwezi: it's not of that but I don't think he will be okay, he got a call saying they found Ntando and Sir I have never seen him this way, he couldn't even talk to me properly no look at me in the eyes like he usually did

Mr M: thank you for calling me and telling me about this, I will go and sort it out

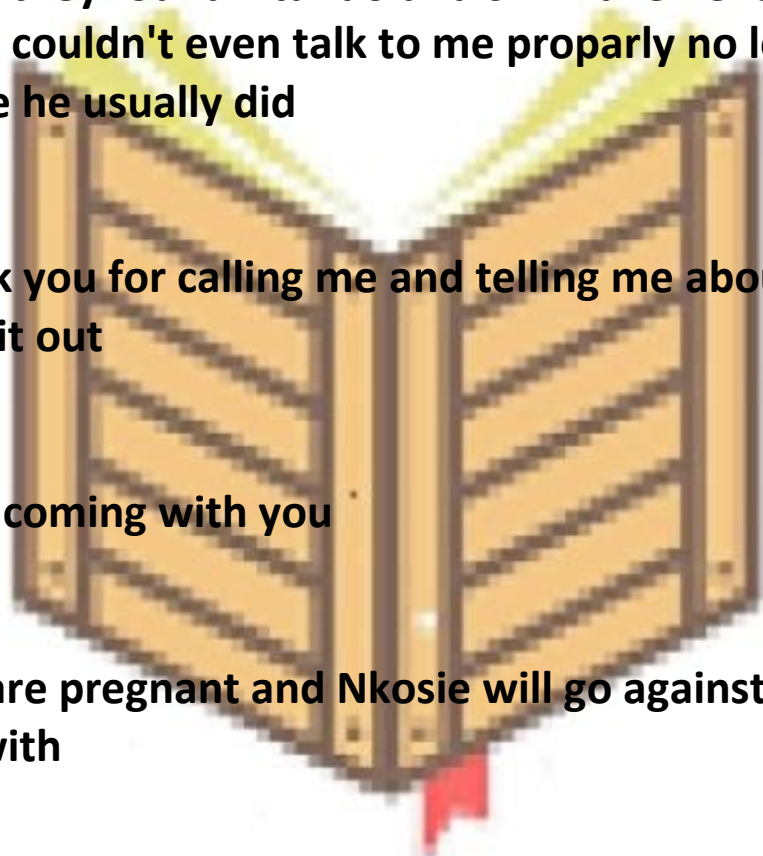
Khwezi: I'm coming with you

Mr M: you are pregnant and Nkosie will go against the fact that I took you with

Khwezi: nonsense I'm coming with you and that's final

Mr M: I will pick you up on a few

Khwezi: sure



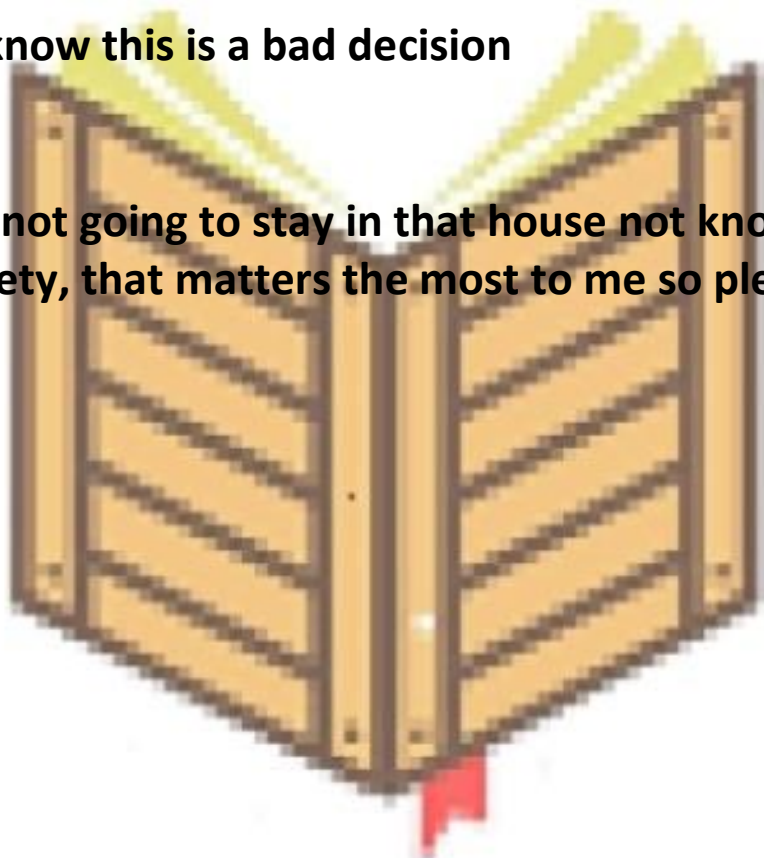
NOVELSGURU.COM

I hung up, I set where biting my nails while feeling stressed, I got up and I got dressed, I went downstairs as the car drive inside the yard.

I got out to the house and I went to the car.

Mr M: you know this is a bad decision

Khwezi: I'm not going to stay in that house not knowing about Nkosie's safety, that matters the most to me so please *sighs*



NOVELSGURU.COM

he nods and starts the car, he drove in such speed we arrived at the location, my heart started to beat so fast when I saw him pointing a gun at Ntando.

the first thing i said in my head was "no!!!", I got out of the car after Mr Mthembu got out, I walk to where they were.

I watch as they try to convince him to out the gun down but as hardheaded as he is, he did not listen.

Khwezi: Nkosie baby please put the gun down

my voice is shaky and I'm scared like crazy.

Nkosie: he keeps fucking up our lived and I'm not gonna let his fuck it up again

Khwezi: you can't just take such decisions, yes he was wrong but you can't decide death to be his rightful path, you are not God *sighs* baby just calm down please and put the gun down

he looks at me and I got walk closer to him.

Khwezi: ngyakucela Mvelase

i held the hand that had the gun and i looks at him in the eyes, I could see the anger in his eyes.

he lowers the gun and Sya takes it from his hand, i gave him a hug and he held on tight, he buries his face on my neck and i brushes the back of his head.

the next thing I heard a gun shot and this sharp pain on my back, my body started to get weak.

he looks at me and I felt something hot on my left cheek, am I crying? but it hurts I have to cry.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: Ntando what did you do?

my vision started to get blur and I couldn't feel my legs.

Nkosie: MaMvelase!!

that's all I heard, there's this sound on my ears that's making it difficult for me to hear what he is saying.

Nkosie: baby talk to me

I watch as his lips move, the pain is hard for me to bare.

Khwezi: it..it...hurt

the next thing he lifts me up and takes me to the car, my eyes feel heavy and I want to sleep.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: baby don't close your eyes

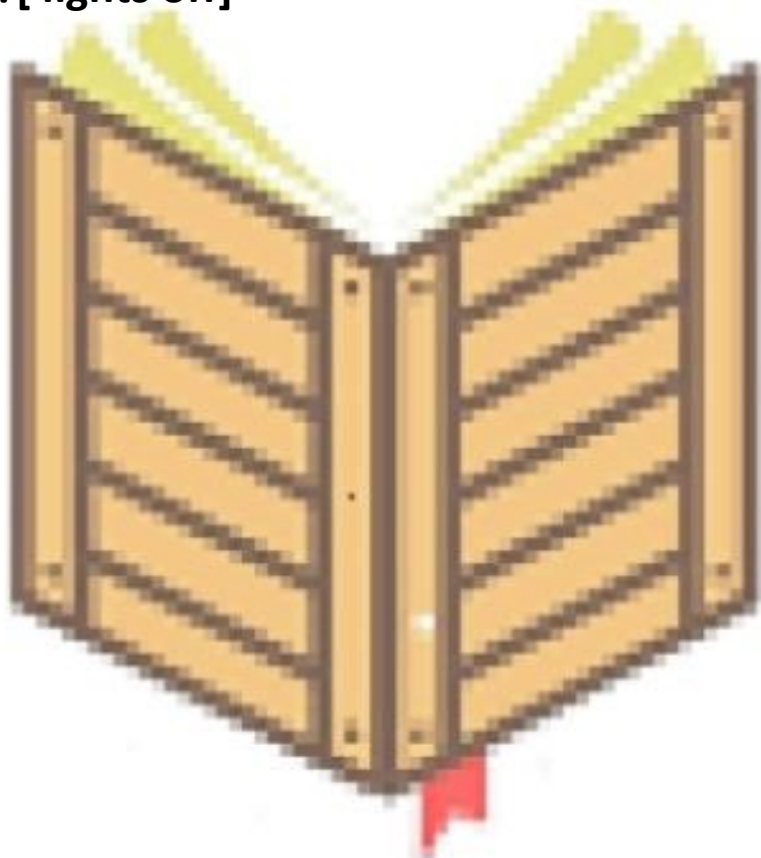
khwezi: my baby...

that's all I could think of at this moment, this baby means the world to me and I don't want anything to happen to it.

Khwezi: I love you

I managed to say as I wanted to rest my eyes for a while, am I going to die?[lights off]

-
-
-



NOVELSGURU.COM

NARRATIVE.

Nkosie starts panicking as Khwezi closes her eyes after she said "I love you" are those her last words?

questions drift in his mind as they drove to the hospital, they arrive there and he got out of the car with Khwezi who is bleeding really bad.

she was taken and they were asked to wait, Mr Mthembu, Sandile and Nkanyezi walk in.

Ntando was not there, Nkosie is standing there with his mind not focused at all.

Mr M: she is going to be fine

Nkosie: why did you bring her?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mr M: she called me worried about you and she wanted to come to ensure that you safe

Nkosie: and you let her come? are you out of your mind?

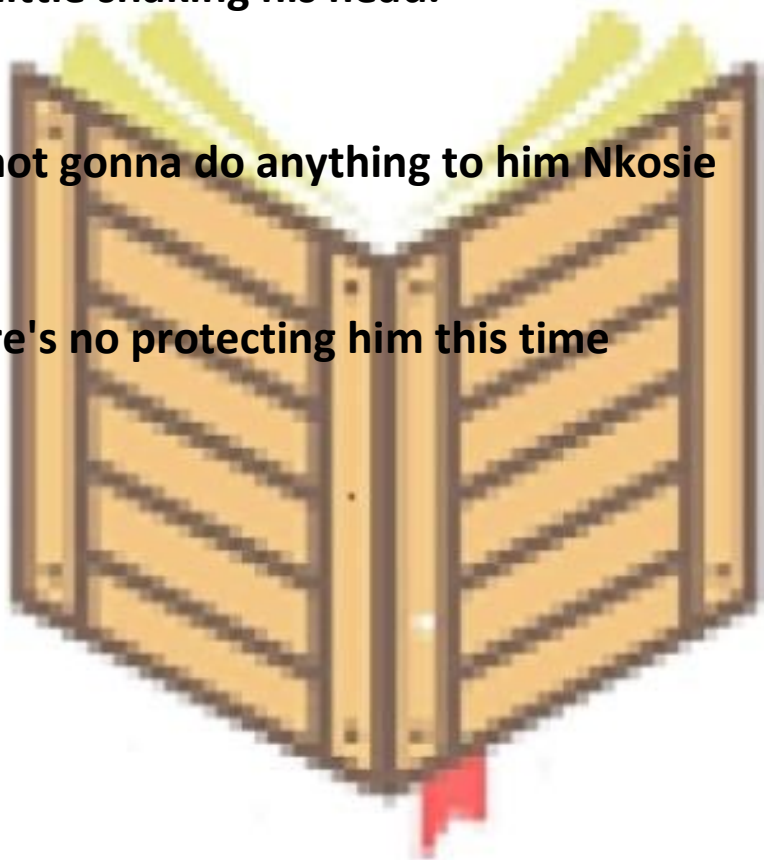
Mr M: don't you dare talk to me like that

Nkosie: I doubt i give a tiny little fucking shit, you better hide your son and make sure I don't find him cause...

he laughs a little shaking his head.

Mr M: you not gonna do anything to him Nkosie

Nkosie: there's no protecting him this time



NOVELSGURU.COM

he set down and he buries his face on his bloody hands,
Nkanyezi sits next to him and he brushes his back.

after a few hours Nkosie got impatient and he started to ask
everyone of the workers about Khwezi.

Nkosie: she has been in there for an hour, somebody tell me
what is going on

he shouts at the receptionist.

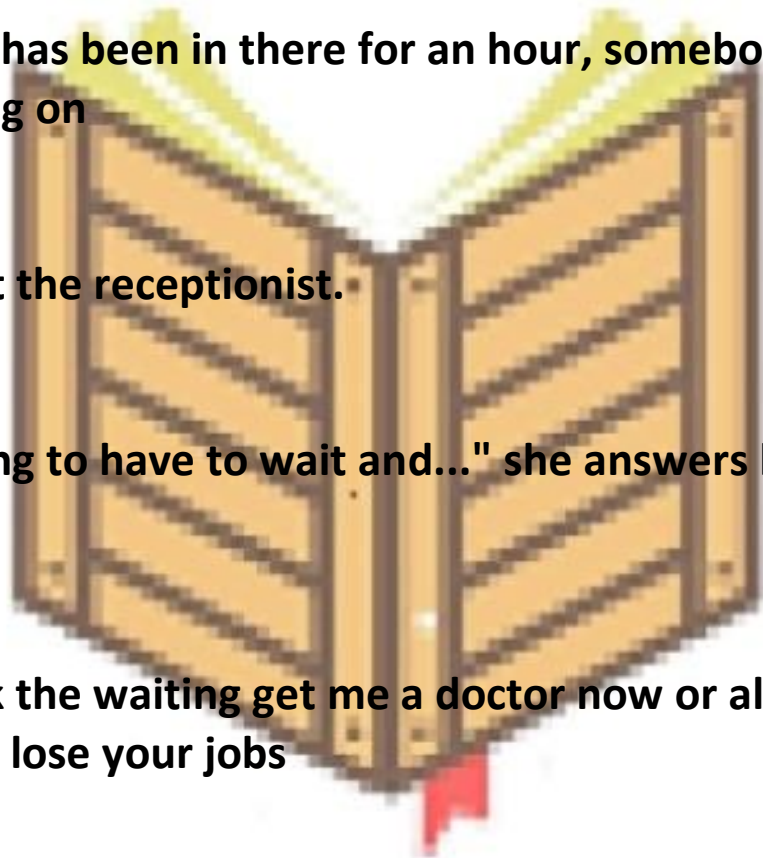
"sir you going to have to wait and..." she answers but Nkosie
snaps.

Nkosie: fuck the waiting get me a doctor now or all of your here
are going to lose your jobs

Sya: Nkosie you causing drama

Nkosie: hlukana namii Syathokoza!

he said in a calmly but you could tell he was getting annoyed.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs Mthembu and Zizi walk in.

Zizi: where is she?

Sandile: the doctors are busy with her

Zizi: what? no who shot her?

there was silence.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs M: aww my baby, are you okay?

she looks at Nkosie, he clenched his jaw and his hands form fists.

Mrs M: she is going to be okay, she and the baby trust me

Zizi: nobody is answering my question, who the fuck shot her?

"I did" Ntando walks in and Nkosie walks to him but his father stands in between them.

Mr M: you not gonna cause drama in a public place

Zizi: you shot prettyface? but why?

she had tears in her eyes.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I'm gonna hurt him! just get your dog out of here

he says in between his teeth, he had this look on his face, even

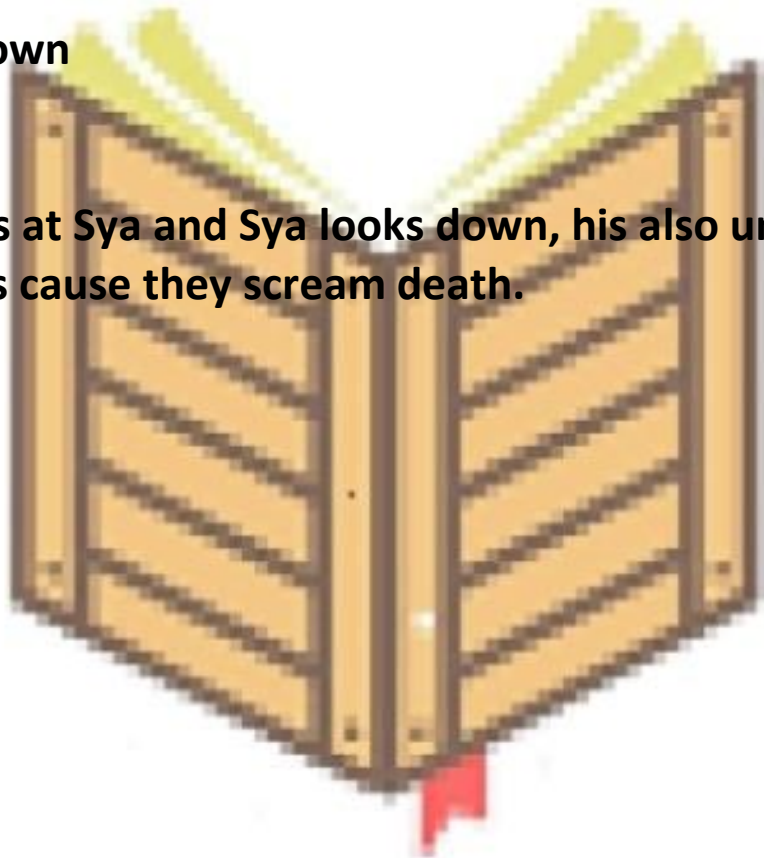
his mother is unable to look at him.

Ntando: I'm sorry, I didn't know she was gonna get shot

Nkosie laughs a little, Sya went to Nkosie.

Sya: calm down

Nkosie looks at Sya and Sya looks down, his also unable to look into his eyes cause they scream death.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I said get this mother fucker out of my sight.

he stands there looking at Ntando.

Ntando: I'm sorry

Nkosie: one hour, I need you out of this town in a hour...I don't care where you get the money but I need you out of this town if you still value your life cause boy if I find you...I will show you hell it self mark my words

he walks away and he sits alone by the corner with that very same deadly look on his face while clenching his jaw.

Mr M: leave now, you know Nkosie...he is you g to kill you

Ntando: but I don't have any money

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mr M: I will organize a jet for you and you will find a bag of cash, now leave

Ntando: I'm sorry father

Mr M: your apology isn't going to help, you see that look on his face, his hungry for your blood, related or not you just don't mess with him

Ntando: he was never like this

Mr M: that's because he did not have somebody he cared about at that time but right now he does and you hurt that person...his gonna hunt you down and kill you there's no way of stopping him

Ntando: I'm his brother



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mr M: that doesn't count, get the hell out of here

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 90

NARRATIVE.

It's been 4 hours and they haven't heard from the doctors, Nkosie has been sitting at the corner minding his own business.

the doctor walks out of the ICU, he had this sad facial expression, he called out Nkosie's but he did not stand up.

Mrs M: he is with us, he is just dealing with the trauma

NOVELSGURU.COM

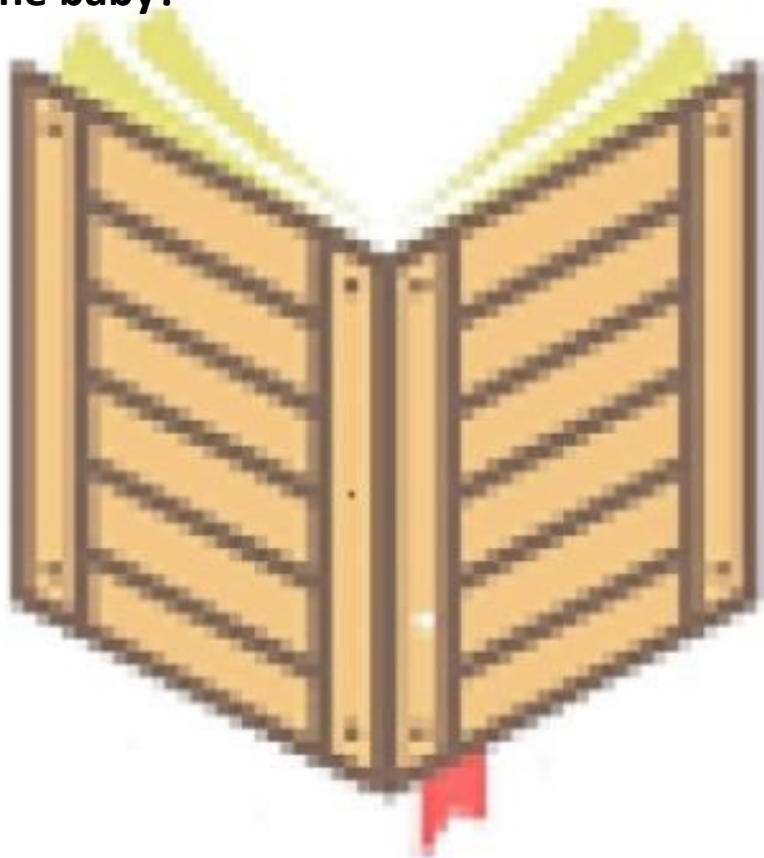
Zizi: how is my friend?

Doc: she was shot next to the spine which will cause a problem when she wakes up and has to walk but she will be able to use her legs after a few weeks

Mrs M: she's okay?

Doc: she's a strong lady, she's gonna be fine

Mr M: and the baby?



NOVELSGURU.COM

he asks and looks at Nkosie who is looking down but listening to what they are saying.

Doc: the babies are fine, three healthy babies and one good mother

Zizi: triplets? wow, I thought it was one baby but three? yohh

Doc: but...

Sya: nangoke sithi syajabula

Doc: her blood pressure is high and for a women carrying triplets that's not good at all, so she is going to stay here with us till her blood pressure goes to normal

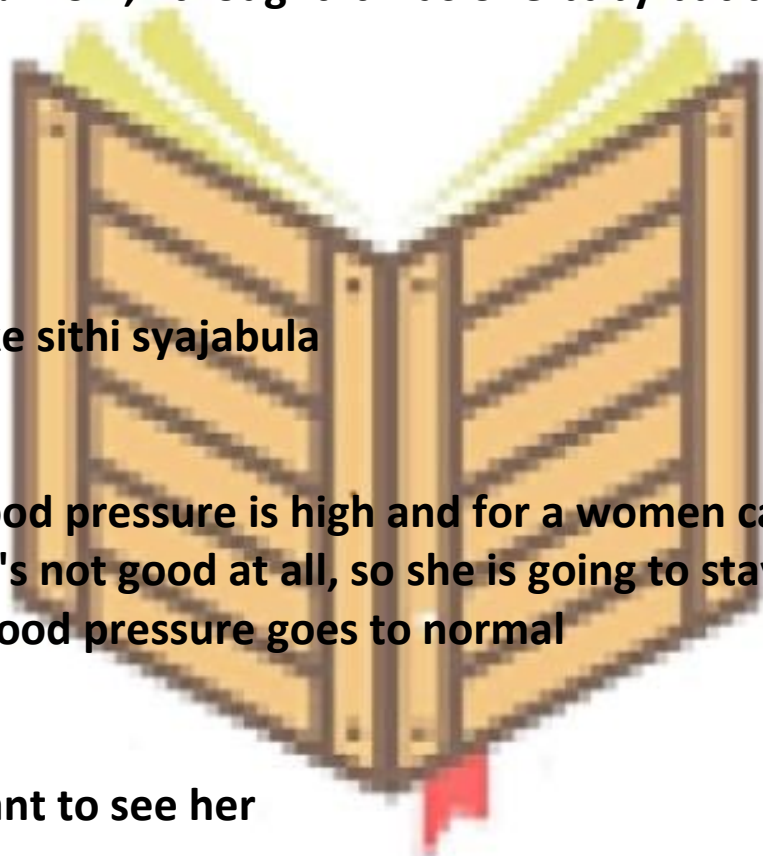
Nkosie: I want to see her

NOVELSGURU.COM

Doc: she is asleep right now sir

Nkosie: I wasn't asking

Doc: right, this way sir

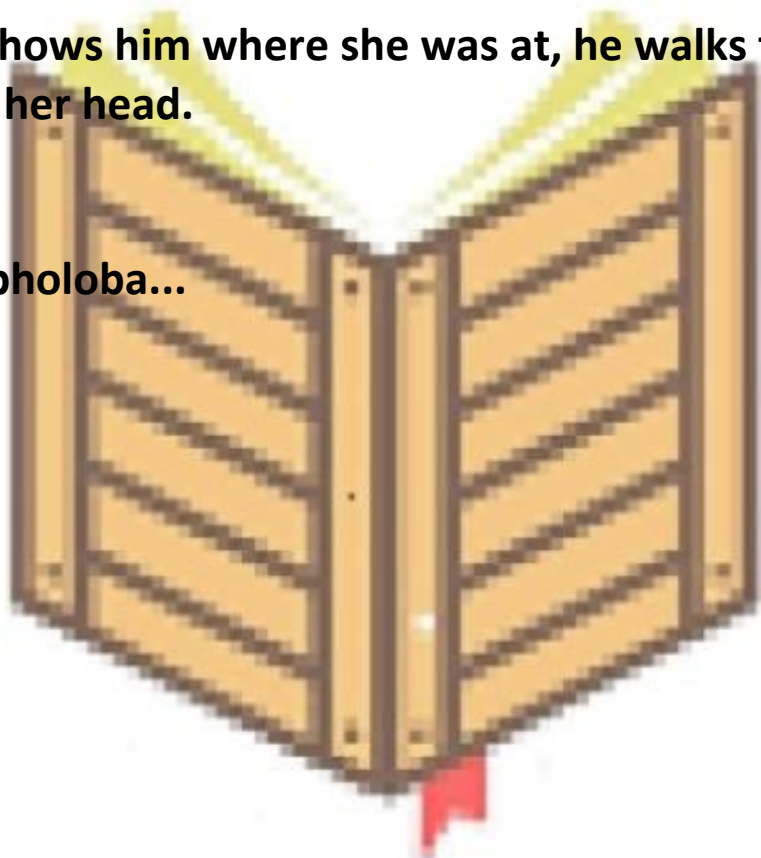


Mrs M: I'm so happy for you son

Nkosie didn't say anything, he just wanted to see the live of his life.

the doctor shows him where she was at, he walks to her bad and he held her head.

Nkosie: Mapholoba...



NOVELSGURU.COM

he kisses her hand.

Nkosie: you are strong and you gonna get through this, thank you so much for baring me not just one but three babies

he smiles.

Nkosie: I will do my best to protect you guys and I won't let anything bad happen to you ever again, I don't like seeing you laying in this bed you look better laying on my chest not here

he chuckles at his silky thoughts.

Nkosie: iyakuthanda njalo indoda

he kisses her on the forehead.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he set there for a while taking to Khwezi who is fast asleep but could hear what was being said. he stood up and pecks her on the lips, he took out his phone while walking out.

he calls Leroy and he answers.

Nkosie: did he leave?

Leroy: yes boss

Nkosie: ok

he hung up, his family was outside waiting for him.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: is she okay?

Nkosie nods.

Zizi: don't be like that bhuti Nkosie, don't go back back to that old Nkosie *smiles* she is going to be fine

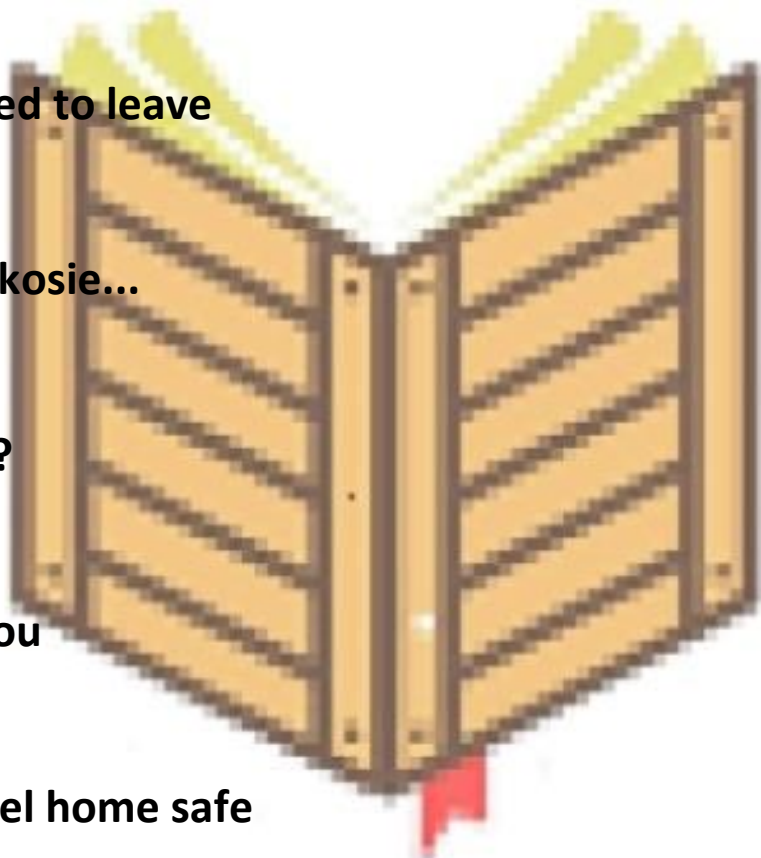
Nkosie: I need to leave

Zizi: Bhuti Nkosie...

Nkosie: yah?

Zizi: I love you

Nkosie: travel home safe



NOVELSGURU.COM

he walks away, right now he ain't in the mood for anything, he stops on his steps and turns around.

Nkosie: come here

he opens his arms and Zizi giggles, she ran to his arms and they shared a hug.

Nkosie: you know I love you pumpkin

Zizi giggles as he plants a kiss on her forehead.

Sandile: come on don't leave me out

he went to join in the hug.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: you not gonna say you love me?

Nkanyezi laughs.

Nkosie: I will pretend I didn't hear that

Sandile: but you heard it, you can't just pretend

Nkosie: trust me I can, Sya call in some security to watch the hospital and Khwezi's ward

Sya: sure

Sandile: so about that part...

he smiles.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I'm not gonna say anything Mseti

Sandile: mxm uyabhora yazii

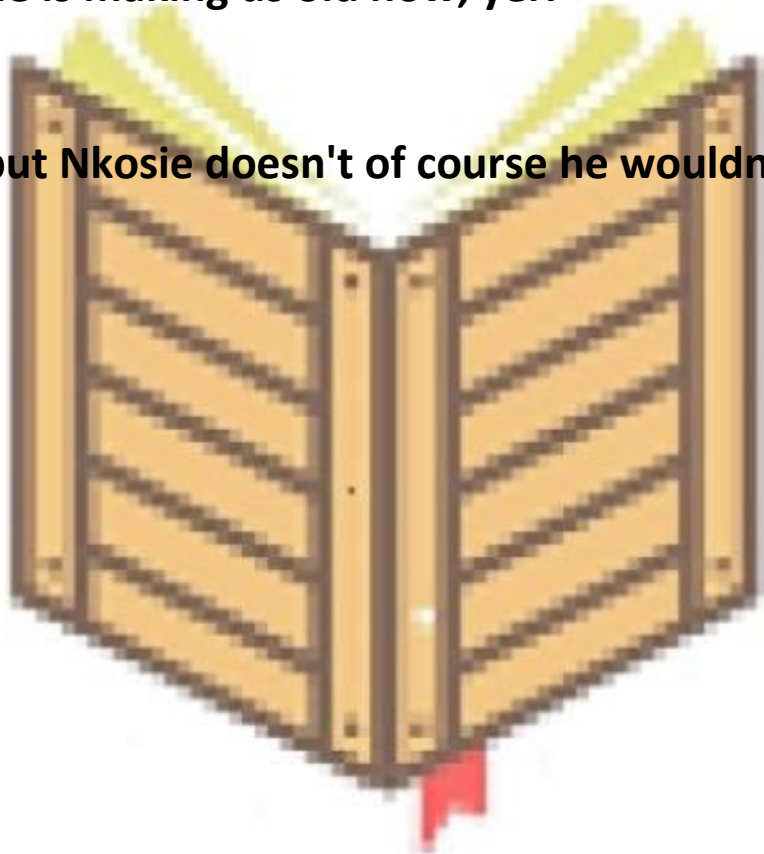


Nkosie rolls his eyes.

Mrs M: I'm really happy that I will be having three grandchildren

Mr M: Nkosie is making us old now, yerr

they laugh but Nkosie doesn't of course he wouldn't laugh, he is Nkosie.



NOVELSGURU.COM

they left leaving Sya there waiting for the security.

A short chubby light skinned girl with short hair, big beautiful eyes, beautiful eyebrows, medium sized pink lips.

she is a doctor and she works at the hospital, she was busy on a call walking with some files in her hand.

she wasn't watching her step when she tripped and fell right in front of Syathokoza who just rolls his eyes.

"ouch!!" she cries

Sya: yohh savelelwa abantu sebaba busy kuma foni emsebenzini beze bengaboni ukuthi bahambaphi

he gave her his hand and she took it, he helps her up.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: are you okay?

Her: thank you, I'm fine

she looks at him in the eyes and the guy just froze, in his entire

life he has never seen such a beautiful women.

Her: hello?

she snaps her fingers infront of her face

Sya: what?

Her: did you hear what I just said?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: what did you say?

she laughs.

Her: I was thanking you for helping me up

Sya: ohh that? don't mention it

Her: can you pick up those girls for me my knees hurt

Sya: sure

he picks up the files for her.

Sya: here you go, so uhm...you work here?

NOVELSGURU.COM

she gave him the "what the fuck" look.

Her: I'm wearing like the doctors working in this hospital for sure that must give you a clue

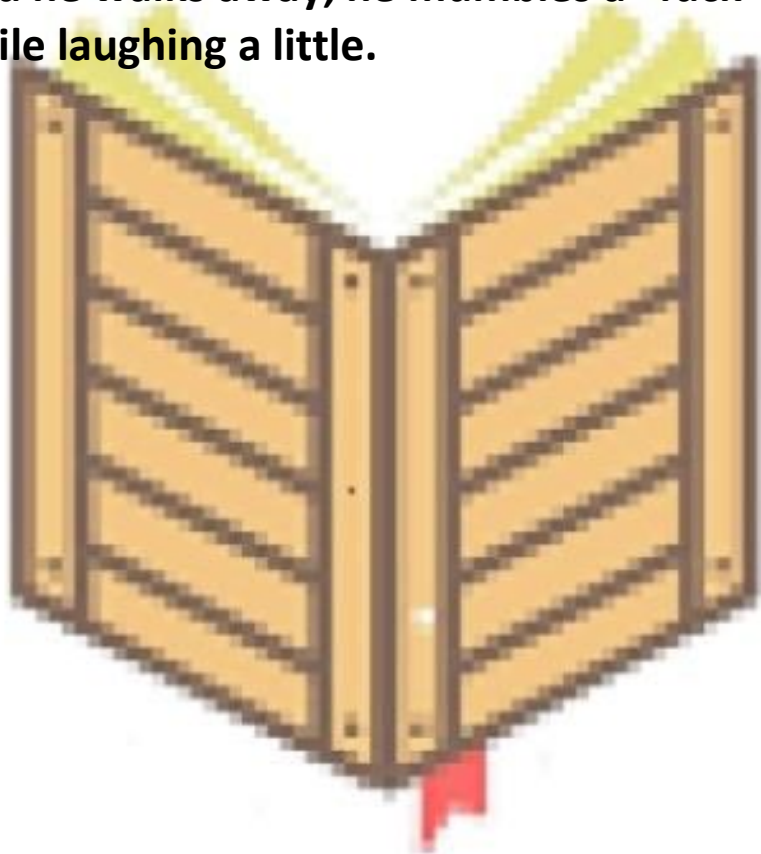


Sya: right, I need to head somewhere, it was nice meeting you though

Her: thank you again

Sya nods and he walks away, he mumbles a "fuck" and shakes his head while laughing a little.

-
-
-



NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 91

NARRATIVE.

The following day Nkosie woke up early in the morning and he went to the gym, he was in no mood at all.

what happened to Khwezi still upsets him and he doesn't know what to do to calm himself down.

he stays by the gym for two hours lifting up some weights and doing other work outs, he got done and went to take a cold shower.

he got done and he dried his body, he lotioned his body and he wore a white Nike t-shirt and a black shirt which he did not button up.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he wore white thorns jeans and he wore black sneakers, he wore a diamond chain aroind his neck and he combed his hair.

he took him phone from the charger and he went downstairs,

As he walks down the stairs he felt this sharp pain on his heart and he set down on the steps.

his breathing started to change and he took out his phone from his pocket with his hands shaking, he was even sweating.

he called his doctor, he answers.

Doc: good morning Mr...

Nkosie: I'm in pain



NOVELSGURU.COM

Doc: what? where are you?

Nkosie: my house

Doc: I'm on my way

Nkosie places the phone down as the pain continued to get worse, he set there with his hand on his heart.

few moments later the doctor walks in, he rushes to Nkosie and he started checking him up.

Doc: you are stressed, have you been taking your medication?

Nkosie: I'm fine, I don't need any medication...I'm gonna die anyways what's the use?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Doc: the medication helps keep such things from happening

Nkosie: well I'm fine

Doc: you do realize that you running out of time

Nkosie: I'm okay now you can leave

the doctor sighs.

Doc: you still don't want us to find a donor for you?

Nkosie: I hate repeating myslef dude the fuck



NOVELSGURU.COM

Doc: still sturbon I see

he chuckles and packs his stuff.

Doc: call me when you need anything

Nkosie: sure

the doctor left, Nkosie got up and he went to the kitchen and made himself a protein.

he drank it while scrolling on his phone and he saw a post saying Sakhile is gonna host a party welcoming himself as the new share owner.

Nkosie chuckles and switches the phone off, he puts the huge glass on the sunk and he took his car keys.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he drove to the hospital, he drove while listening to his playlist.

he arrives after some minutes of driving and he parks his car, he got out and he locks the car.

he walks inside the hospital and he bumps into Sya who was leaving, Nkosie stops.

Nkosie: what are you doing here?

Sya: ohh hey bro, I just came to see Khwezi

Nkosie: for what reason?

Sya: she's my sister you know that right?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: is she awake?

Sya laughs nervously cause he knows he was not here to see Khwezi.

Sya: I really didn't get inside the ward and all that

Nkosie: but you said you here to see Khwezi

Sya: I said that? I need to rush somewhere

Nkosie: you good?

Sya: yeah I'm fine

he smiles and he walks away, Nkosie shakes his head and he went to Khwezi's ward, he walks inside and found the doctor busy checking her up.

she was awake and she looked good, Khwezi Smiles at Nkosie and Nkosie returns the smile.



Doc: well Miss you are doing okay

Khwezi: but I can't feel my legs

Doc: physiotherapy will do, after a week you going to be fine

Khwezi: so I won't be able to use my legs for a well?

Doc: I'm afraid so



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi frowns, the doctor excuses herself and Nkosie walks to Khwezi's bad.

Nkosie: sthandwa sami

he took her hand and kissed it.

Khwezi: Nkosie *sighs* did you hear what the doctor said? I won't be able to use my legs for a WEEK!! can you imagine?

Nkosie: I heard, it's all going to be okay

Khwezi: it won't be okay, I'm writing in a week Nkosie and I need to go to school but guess what? I won't be going cause I'm fucking paralyzed

tears start coming out of her eyes.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you not paralyzed it's just for a WEEK baby you going to recover and use your legs again

Khwezi: mina I can't shame, I really can't

she continues to cry and Nkosie sighs.

Nkosie: look at me...

he places his hand under her chin and made her to look at him,
he uses his other hand to wipe the tears on her cheeks.

Nkosie: you look ugly when crying



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi chuckles.

Nkosie: don't stress about it, your man is here to take care for you

Khwezi: my man?

she smiles.

Nkosie: yes your man, now stop stressing yourself that's not good for our babies

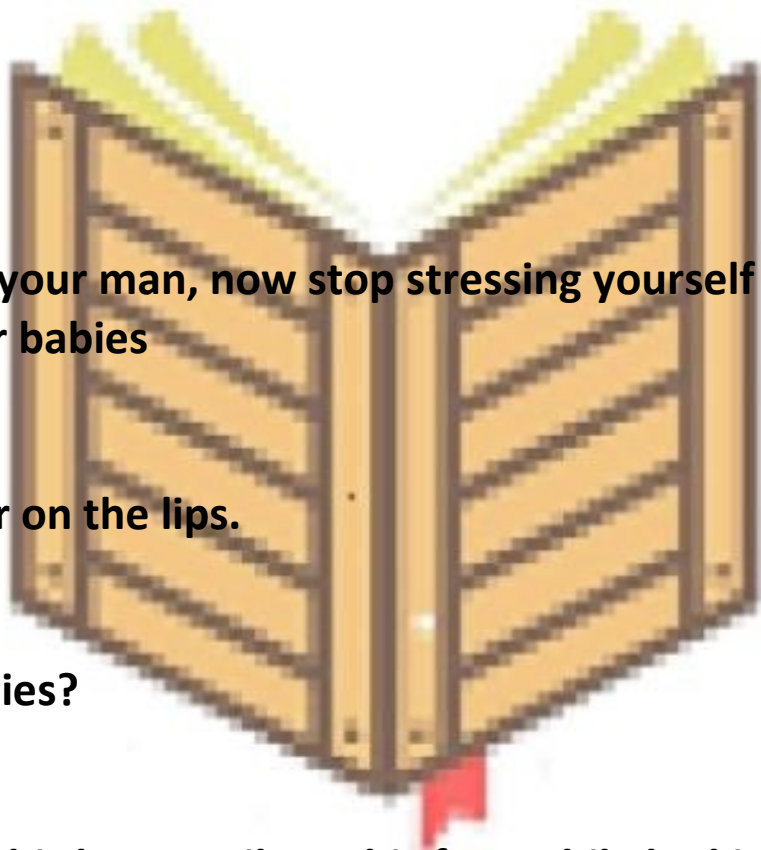
he pecks her on the lips.

Khwezi: babies?

Nkosie had this huge smile on his face while looking at Khwezi who was so confused.

Khwezi: why you smiling like that? tell me

Nkosie: we having triplets



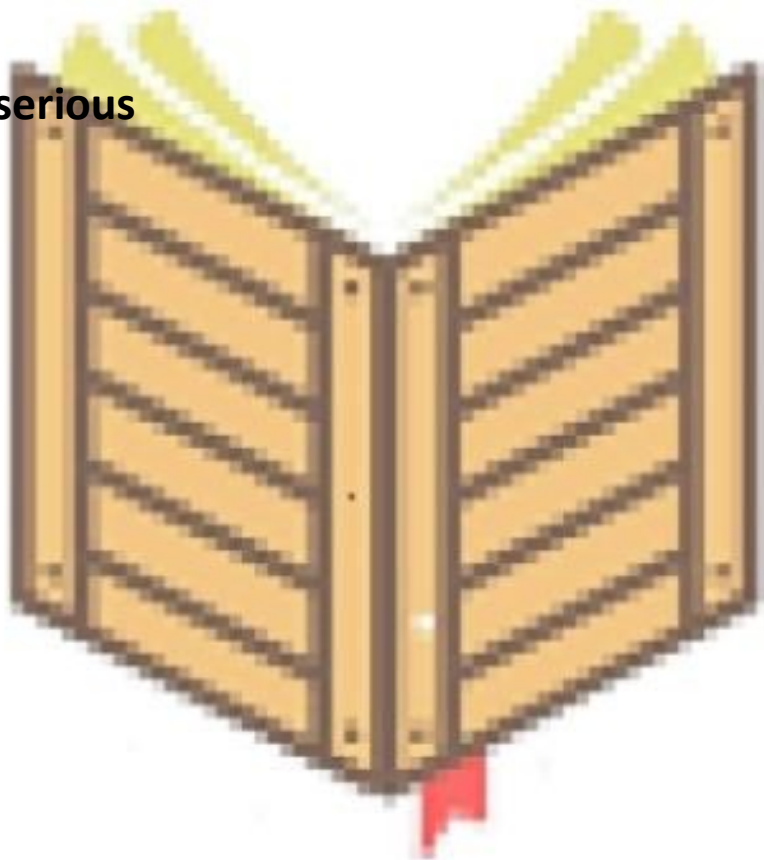
NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi gasps.

Khwezi: triple what? no baby you joking

she covers her mouth with her hand.

Nkosie: I'm serious



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi pulls Nkosie closer to her by the shirt and she kisses him on the lips, Nkosie groans and he places his hand on her neck.

Khwezi pulls out from the kiss.

Khwezi: we got blessed three times

Nkosie: thank you sthandwa samii

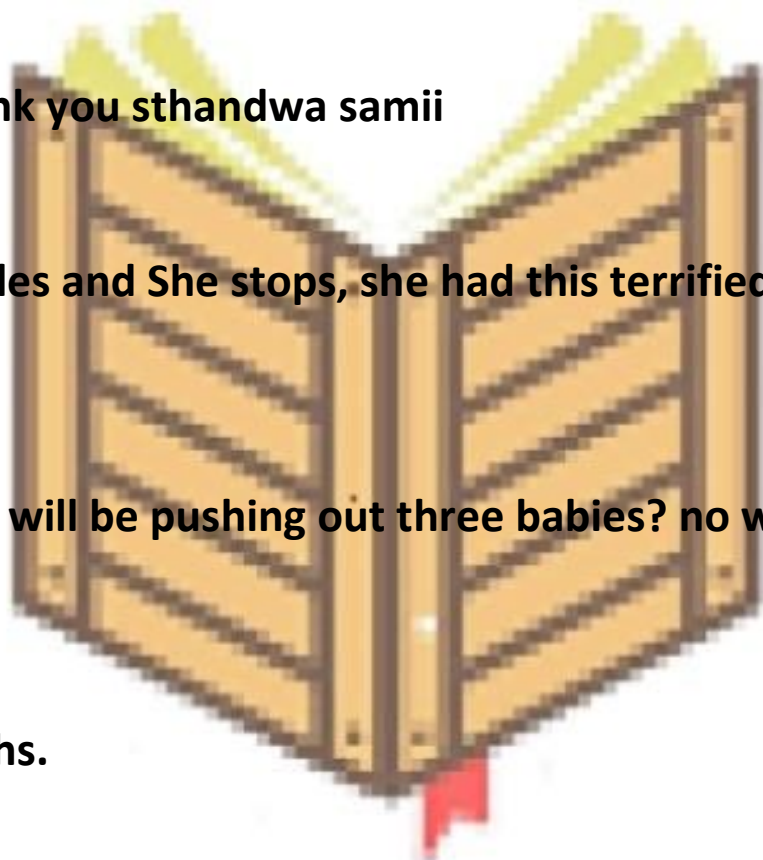
Khwezi giggles and She stops, she had this terrified look on her face.

Khwezi: so I will be pushing out three babies? no ways Nkosie no

Nkosie laughs.

Khwezi: you laughing whilst my vagina is gonna turn into a huge cave

Nkosie laughs even harder, Khwezi folds her arms with a serious look on her face.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: unyanyile yini? (are you angry)

he wipes a tear from his left eyes and he stops laughing.

Khwezi: chaa (no)

Nkosie: manje pho kwenzenjani mama? (so what's wrong ?)

Khwezi: angazii (I don't know)



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie smirks.

Nkosie: I was just joking baby don't be mad

Khwezi: mmmh.

she rolls her eyes.

Nkosie: hawu ma'

Khwezi looks at him from top to toe and she rolls her eyes once again.

Nkosie: wenzela mina njalo lokho?

Khwezi doesn't say anything.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: ngikhuluma nawe Mapholoba (I'm talking to you Mapholoba)

Khwezi: angifune kukhuluma nawe mina



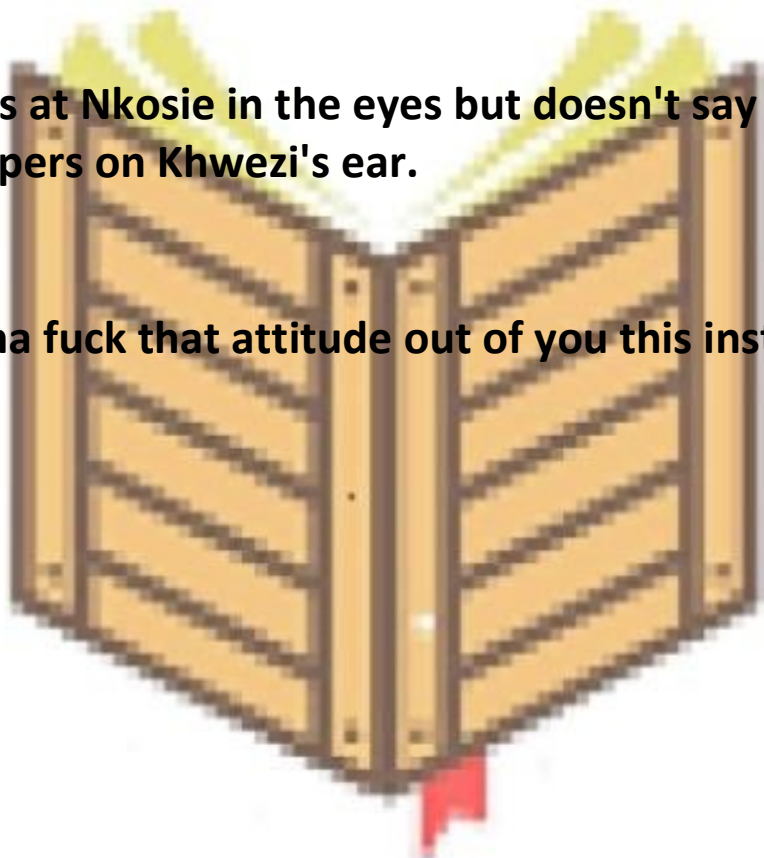
Nkosie: awu Mashiy'amahle ngazuthi azoshumayela

Khwezi Smiles a little.

Nkosie: nje nakho uyahleka mama, khuluma nendoda yakho phela

Khwezi looks at Nkosie in the eyes but doesn't say anything, Nkosie whispers on Khwezi's ear.

Nkosie: imma fuck that attitude out of you this instant



NOVELSGURU.COM

he says a in a deep voice and he kisses Khwezi on the neck.

Khwezi: mmmh.

her breathing changes and Nkosie moves away, he kisses her on the lips and she doesn't respond at all, Nkosie squeezes her breast and her mouth opens letting out a moan and he took that chance.

she couldn't resistance the kiss, she places her hands on his waist and Nkosie pulls out from the kiss.

Khwezi bites her lower lip.

Khwezi: why did you stop?

she held his shirt while looking deep into his eyes, he smirks.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: suyangikhulumisa manje, nje uthe awungikhulumisi

Khwezi pouts and Nkosie peck her lip.

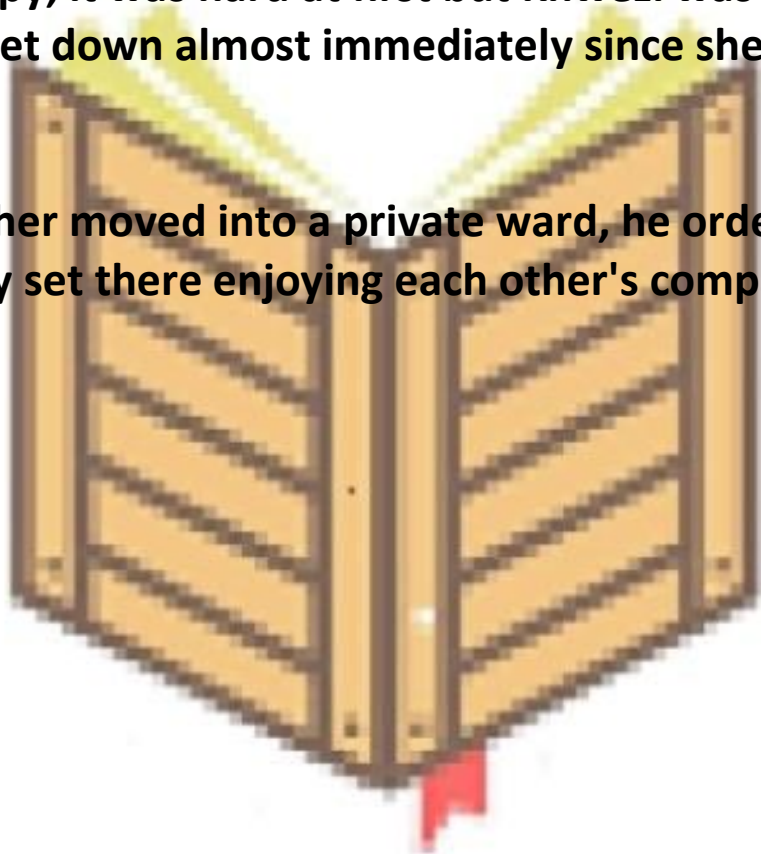
Khwezi: Ngyakthanda Nkosie

Nkosie: Ngyakthanda namii MaMthembu

they started chatting and Nkosie took Khwezi for the physiotherapy, it was hard at first but Khwezi was able to stand up but she set down almost immediately since she was in pain.

Nkosie had her moved into a private ward, he orders food for her and they set there enjoying each other's company.

.



NOVELSGURU.COM

.
.

FOREVA YENA

Insert 92

SYATHOKOZA.

I'm at my house changing channels on the TV and so far there's nothing interesting to watch.

I sigh and I switch off the TV, my mind drifted to that light skinned short doctor at the hospital, I went to the hospital to look for her but I couldn't find her.

I guess she is off or something.

I laugh remembering how wierd I was, I'm never like that but that day I was really scared maybe it's because I have never seen a women this beautiful in my life.

I might be exaggerating but damn that girl looks good.

I got up and I changed into a huge outfit, I took my car keyed

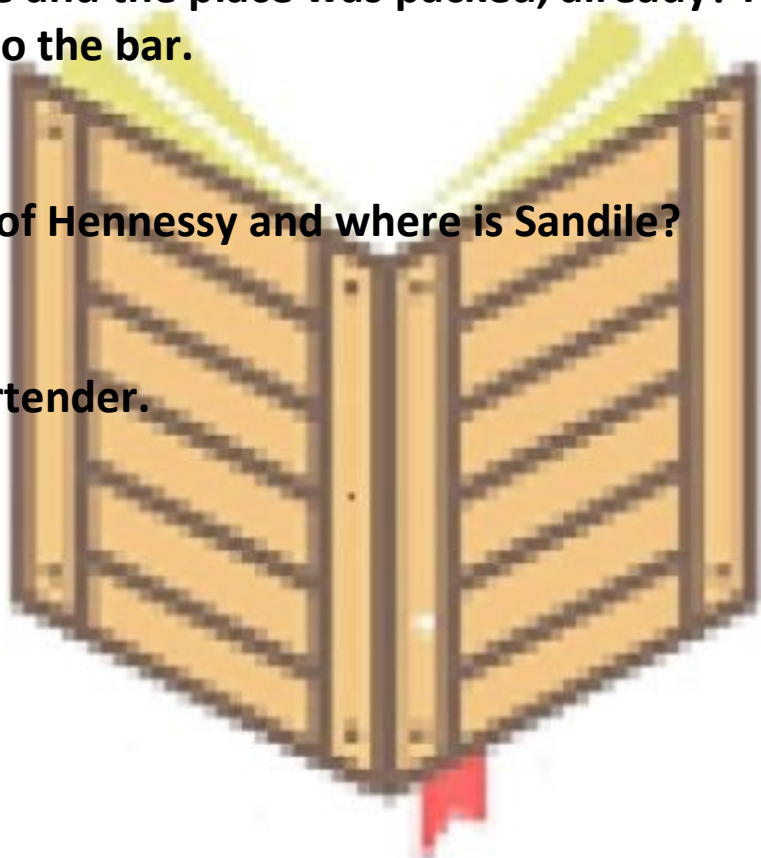
and I went to Sandile's work place, I also own the place but I'm not that interested.

I just enjoy the free drinks since I'm the boss also, I park my car right at my spot and I walk out.

I went inside and the place was packed, already? I mean it is six pm, I went to the bar.

Sya: a glass of Hennessy and where is Sandile?

I ask the bartender.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Bartender: he is in his office

Sya: okay

she gave me the drink and I took a sip while scanning the room for a lady to take home with me tonight.

my eyes meet with this girl who was wearing a tight short purple dress, she looked good and I drink the rest of the whiskey as I make my way to the girl.

I held her by the waist and she did not remove my hand, what a hoe? I mean you gonna allow a stranger to hold you like that.

Sya: hey sexy

Her: hey handsome *giggles*

NOVELSGURU.COM

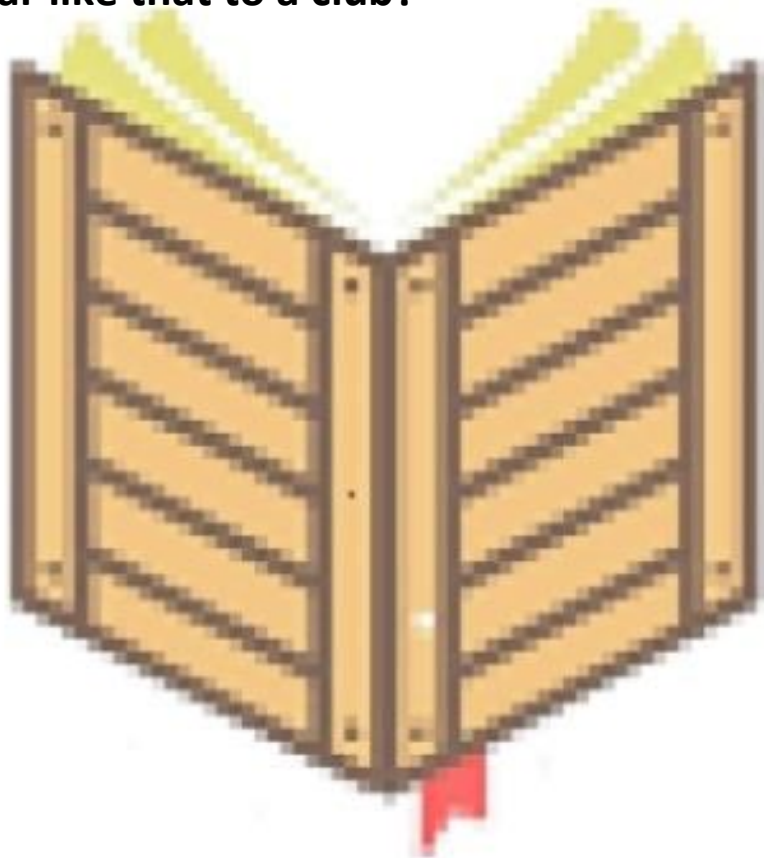
she turns to look at me and she really looks like the type I would smash, just hope she doesn't cause any problem for me cause I ain't want no strings getting attached here.

"okay friend I got us the drinks and..." this angelic voice said, I raise my head to see who it was and it was her.

the doctor from the hospital, she was dressed in grey sweatpants, sneakers, oversized t-shirt and she looked good.

but who wear like that to a club?

I chuckle.



NOVELSGURU.COM

"ohh it's you" she smiles looking at me

Sya: we meet again

I remove my hand from her friends waist and clear my throat.

"you know each other?" the gorgeous doctor's friend asks

"nah he is the wierd guy I was telling you about...the one who helped me at the hospital" she tells her friends.

she talked about me? how wonderful, I mean who would forget such a handsome face.

" ohh him, but his mine now" her friend says hugging me.

hell no girl you not gonna ruin this for me.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: you know I'm really drunk and I just thought you looked like somebody I know

I say and I smile nervously, the doctor just had this smirk on her face.

Sya: so I didn't get your name

I quickly ask the doctor wanting to get out of the topic of almost hooking up with her friend.

"I'm Nosipho" she says.

Sya: Nosipho nice to meet you, I'm Syathokoza it you can call me Sya



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: it's a pleasure

her friend clears her throat.

Her: and I'm Philisiwe

I don't care who you are dude.

Sya: sho, do you mind if I join you?

Nosi: nope we don't unless Siwe has a problem

Siwe: I don't have a problem, you can join us handsome

God!!

Sya: lead the way then, let me hold that for you

Nosi: thank you

she gave me her small bag and her drink, she walks in front of me leading me to the VIP section.



NOVELSGURU.COM

forgive me but I was focused at her nyash (ass)

we arrived and she set down, I was about to sit next to her but her friend just went and ruined everything.

I decided to sit on the single couch opposite them.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: here you go

she took her drink and purse, Sandile came to our table.

Sandile: Ouu bafo you no longer call me when you occupied by such beautiful ladies, Sanbonani boLove

he says with a smile and I look at him shaking my head, I signaled him about Nosi and he understood.

Sandile: ohhh my bad, what can i get you guys?

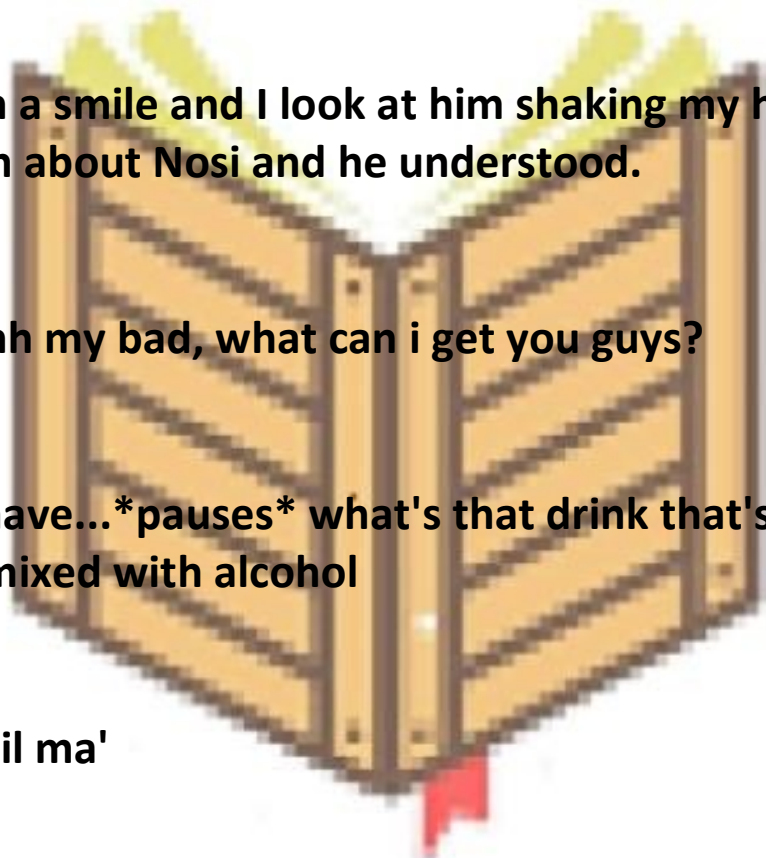
Nosi: can I have...*pauses* what's that drink that's almost like a juice but mixed with alcohol

Sya: iCocktail ma'

Nosi: it's Nosi no need for that, thanks *smiles* can I have another one of those and today's Special

shit, why did she do me like that? huh?

Siwe: and I need you



she bites her lower lip looking at Sandile.

Sandile: and I need to go get your orders, Bafo?

Sya: uyangazii mos (you know me)

Sandile: fede fede

he walks away and Nosi looks at me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: what?

Nosi: nothing

she smiles and she took a sip on her drink,Philisiwe was busy dancing, she decided to go dance with the other people since we were not interested.

Sya: sweat pants huh?

Nosi: excuse me? the music is loud I can't hear you

she uses her hands and shouts, I got up and set next to her.

Sya: I'm just saying, I'm surprised by your outfit I mean who wear sweatpants to a club

NOVELSGURU.COM

she laughs and while laughing she places her hand on my thigh, she shouldn't have done that.

I sit properly and she removes her hand still laughing, she stops.

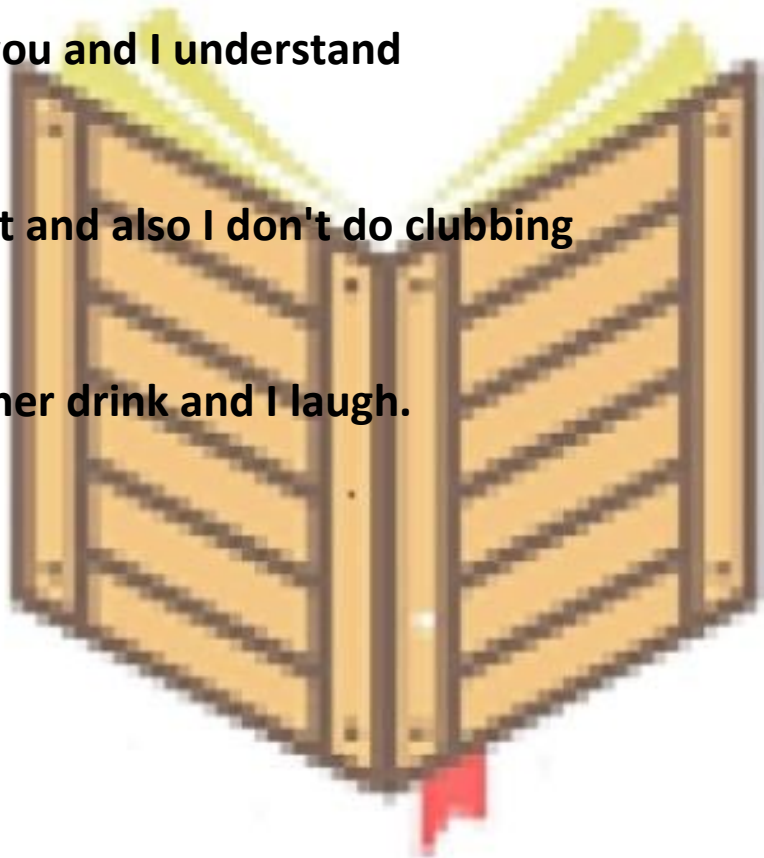
Nosi: I know it kinda makes me look wierd that's because I ain't want no males attention

I chuckle, but she got my attention.

Sya: I hear you and I understand

Nosi: perfect and also I don't do clubbing

she sips on her drink and I laugh.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: look whose talking

Nosi: I'm serious, I just wanted to get my mind off things work can be stressing sometimes

Sya: tell me about it, so what kind of doctor are you?

Nosi: I'm a surgeon

Sya: ohh look at you, I feel like I have seen you somewhere

Nosi: me? hell no you lying

Sya: I'm telling you

Nosi: no you just making that up

NOVELSGURU.COM

she giggles, our drinks and food came, Philisiwe came back.

Siwe: whats with you guys and sitting here bored? let's go dance

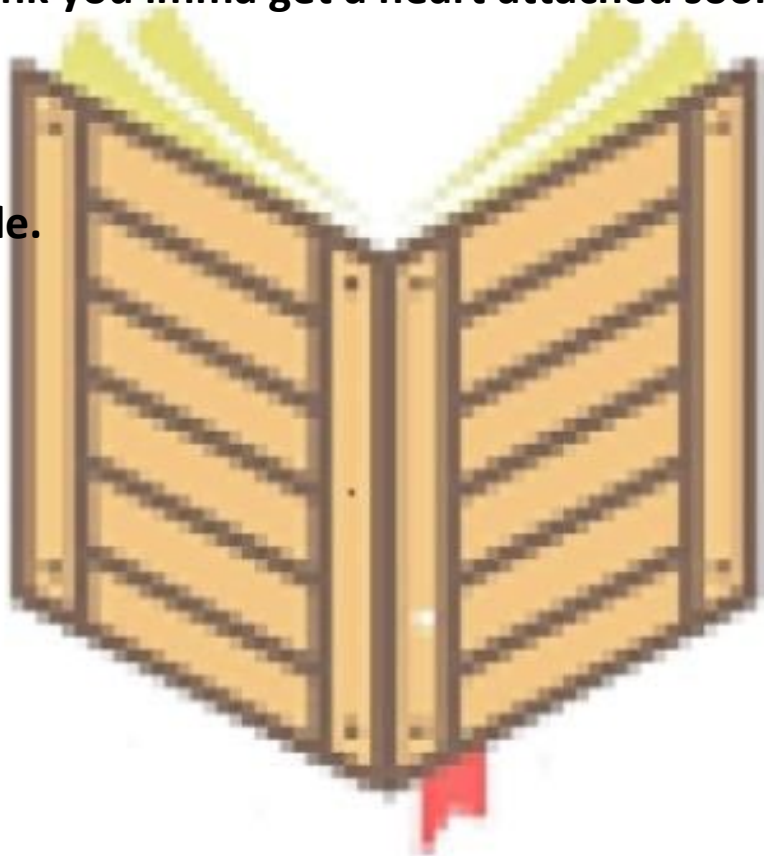


Sya: I don't dance

Siwe: come on chommie?

Nosi: no thank you imma get a heart attached soon as I get into that ground

i laugh a little.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Siwe: suit yourself, don't finish the food

she left once again.

Me and Nosi set down talking more like getting to know each other and I must say she is very good company.

she talks a lot, likes laughing and smiling, very touchy and comfortable around me for some reason I don't know.

I was feeling drunk and I knew that I need to leave.

Sya: where you your friend? it's late and we need to leave

Nosi: you came here alone bhuti

Sya: I know but you missy got work tomorrow

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: shit, what time is it?

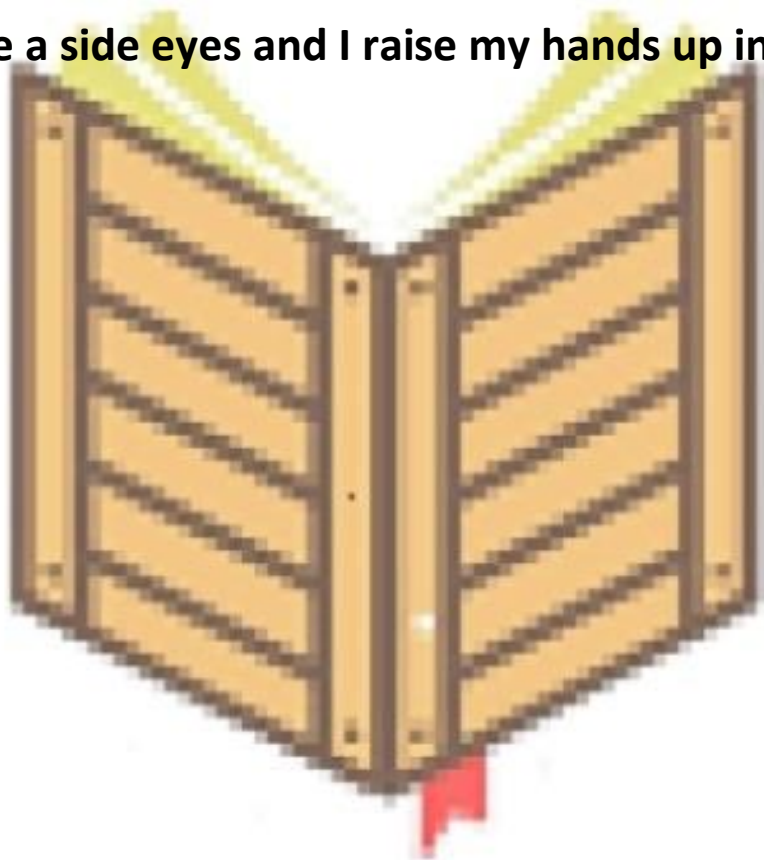
I took out my phone and it's twelve.

Sya: twelve

Nosi: fuck I got work at six

Sya: told you we have to leave

she gives me a side eyes and I raise my hands up in the air.



NOVELSGURU.COM

she gathered her stuff and she called her friend telling her she is leaving, Philisiwe showed up with messy hair, she was smashing.

Nosi: we need to leave, it's late

Siwe: you go I will take an uber

Nosi: you are drunk and you are getting inside that car with me, I'm not leaving you here

Siwe: relax I'm going to be fine

Nosi: Philisiwe

Siwe: trust me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi sighs, I just look at her.

Nosi: fine but text me when you get home and be safe

Siwe: I will. love you

Nosi: love you too

Philisiwe left, Nosi looks at me.

Nosi: well I will see you around

Sya: let me drive you home



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: I got my own car

Sya: ohh right, see you then

Nosi: bye

I watch her as she walks to her car, no hug? but sure I will get it next time.

I went to my car and I drove home.

.
. .
.

FOREVA YENA

Insert 93

KHWEZILOKUSA. NOVELSGURU.COM

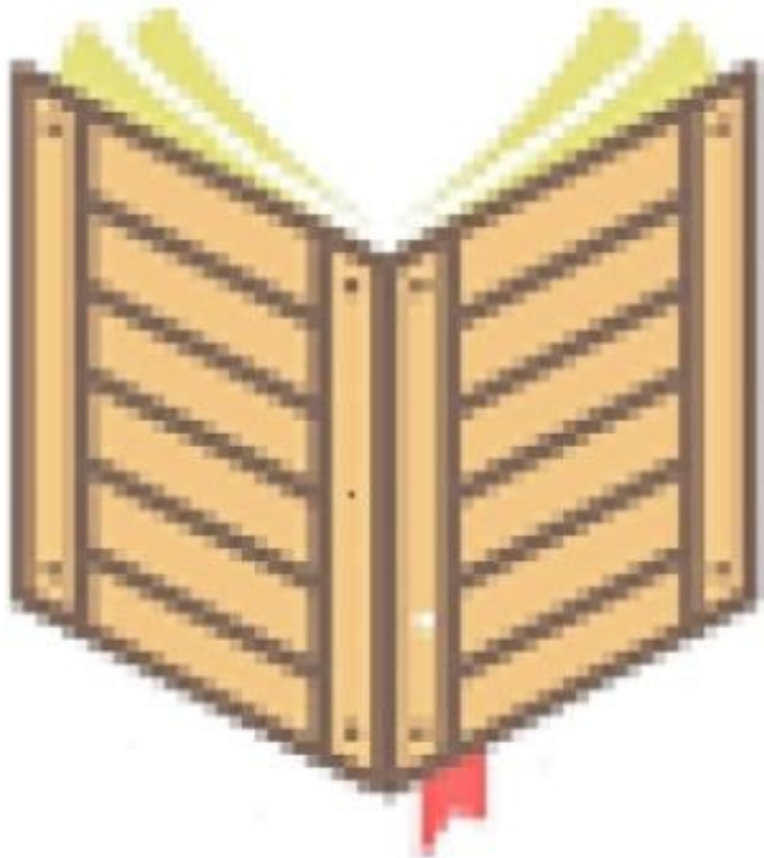
I woke up early in the morning and the nurse help me bath, I was not comfortable at all.



after bathing she lotioned my body and I wore some clean clothes, I went back to bed, that's what I be doing lately.

my legs really hurt but I'm improving a little, I set there staring at the ceiling and my man walks in with a brown bag.

I smile.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: muntu wami

I blush.

Khwezi: babe

he kisses me on the lips.

Nkosie: how are you today?

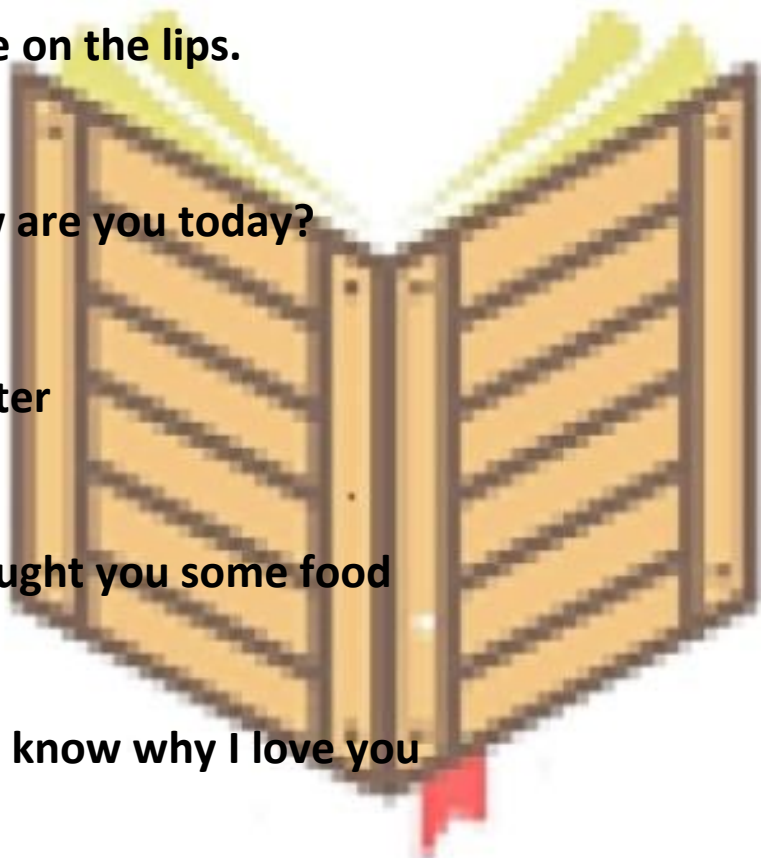
Khwezi: better

Nkosie: I bought you some food

Khwezi: you know why I love you

I giggle and he gave me the brown paper bag, I opens the beg and I started eating my food while he set down on the chair with his arms folded looking at me with a smile on his face.

Khwezi: did I do something wrong?



Nkosie: no, umuhle (you beautiful)

Khwezi: thank you babe

I smile and continue to eat my food, I got done after some minutes and I set there enjoying my banana milkshake.

Khwezi: so how is everybody at home and how is work?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: everything is fine

Khwezi: great and Zizi?

Nkosie: she's also fine sthandwa samii don't worry, I wanted us to talk about something

Khwezi: sounds serious, okay...

I set properly and he stands up, he held my hand.

Nkosie: I want to make you mine

Khwezi: I'm already yours Mvelase

Nkosie: you know what I mean baby, I want to do right by you and pay for the damage I have made

Khwezi: you know these traditional things are just ridiculous

Nkosie: they not mama, I'm a Zulu man who follows the culture



NOVELSCURU.COM

and I should have done this a long time ago

Khwezi: I hear you

Nkosie: thank you, I will send my uncle's to your place.

Khwezi: let me recover first then we can start with all that, I also need to sleep

Nkosie: phumula sthandwa samii



NOVELSGURU.COM

he kisses my forehead, my eyes started to get heavy, I drift off to sleep.

.
.

. NOSIPHO.

Hey there I'm Nosipho Mhlongo and I'm 25 years old, I went to Durban girls secondary school and I graduated at the university of Johannesburg.

I'm a doctor (surgeon), I used to live with my mother and father who still treat me like their little princess since I'm the only girl they got.

I have a big brother but he stays in USA and only comes during the December holidays, we don't hear that much from him so yeah.

I have a boyfriend and his name is Mvelo, we have been together since varsity, our love is very strong and I love him.

NOVELSGURU.COM

you will know more about me and ohh I live in a apartment, I just moved out and it has been going great for me.

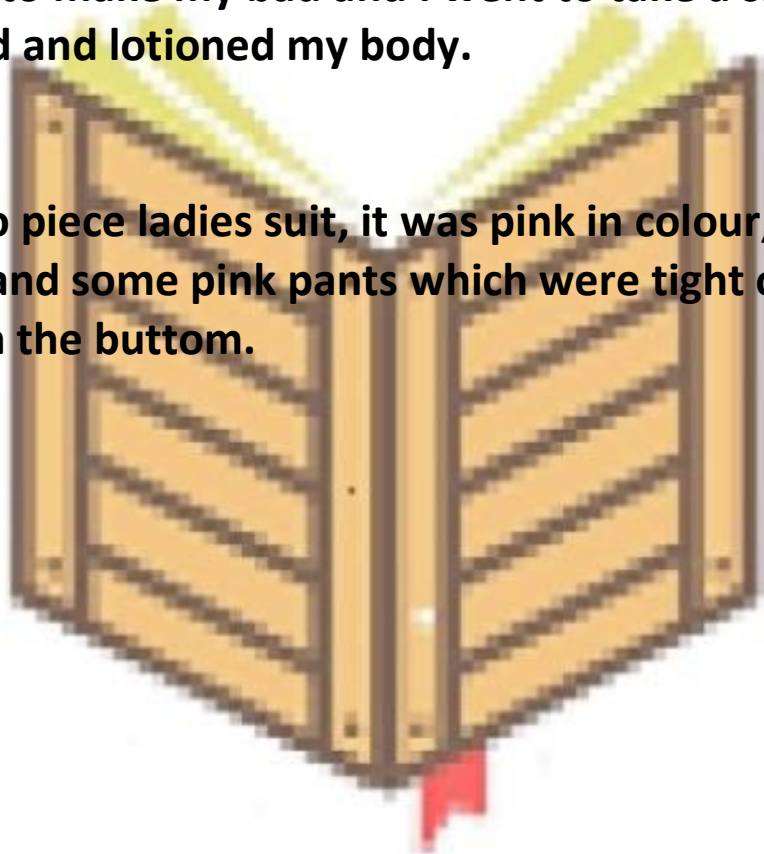
I was woken up by my alarm and my head hurts real bad, I'm

never going out while having to go to work the following day.

I really had fun but the head ache? Iyasho mfana, I got out of bed and I went to the bathroom, I wash my face, I brush my teeth.

I went back to make my bed and I went to take a shower, I got done, I dried and lotioned my body.

I wore a two piece ladies suit, it was pink in colour, it wore a white shirt and some pink pants which were tight on my thighs then free on the bottom.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I wore my blazer and I wore some plain pair of heels, I quickly drank packed my bag and I put some cereal on my mouth and I drank some milk along with it.

don't look at me like that, I'm late for work. I took my car keys, bag, locked the apartment and I went to my car.

I got inside and I drove to work, I got there and I park my car outside, I rush inside and I pass the reception showin her my card and I quickly rushed to my office.

I place my stuff down and I sigh, shit there's a meeting today, I groan in frustration as I left my office going to the room where the Meetings are usually held.

I storm inside and everyone looks at me, I clear my throat and I acted professional.

"as I was saying..." he give she a side eye, that's my boss and he doesn't like late comers and people who disturb him.

we had a small briefing and we were dismissed, I didn't even hear what was being said as my mind is not focused at all.

"you look sick or should I say you look like you have a hangover, a doctor that drinks" she shook her head and she laughs with her team.

well that over there is the bitch with a huge mouth that can't even mind her own business.

I just roll my eyes, I walk out but I was called by the boss.

"Miss Mhlongo can we have a small talk" he said and I sigh, I followed him to his office.

Nosi: sir I'm really sorry, I didn't mean to be late it's just that I lost track of time and my alarm...



NOVELSGURU.COM

he chuckles, did I say something funny? If I had said something I would have chuckled at my crazy thought.

Him: calm down, it's not about that though I didn't appreciate you interrupting me

I told you, I nod.

Him: the surgery you did two day back was successful and the patient is doing well, I'm surprised but well done

Nosi: thank you sir *smiles* I was just doing my job

Him: your first surgery and I'm impressed, I'm looking forward to having you work long side with me

Nosi: ohh my god really, thank you sir

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: it's a pleasure, I should get to work now

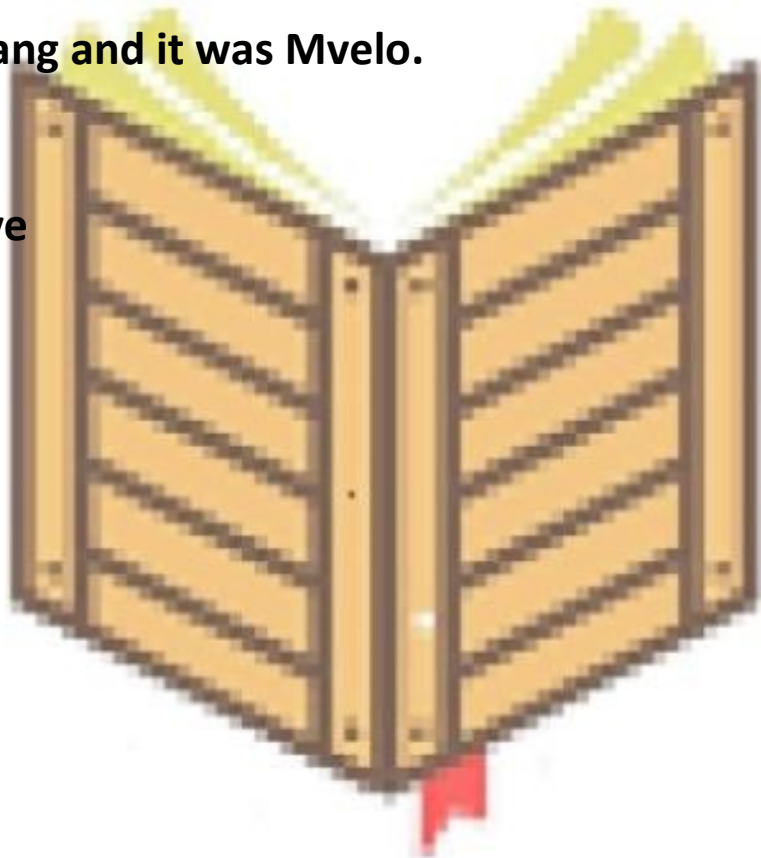
Nosi: ohh yaah

I smile and left, I just got a compliment from my boss, God!! he is one of the top surgeons and he is a multi millionaire.

I went to my office with a smile on my face, I set down and I sighed, I started getting busy with my paper work.

my phone rang and it was Mvelo.

Nosi: my love



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mvelo: hey you, I miss you, how are you?

I giggle.

Nosi: I missed you too baby, I'm fine and you?

Mvelo: I just miss you. do you mind if I come over to see you during lunch, I want us to catch up and I got a suprise for you

Nosi: you now got my attention with the suprise thingy, what is it? you know I'm not good with surprises, tell me though what is it?

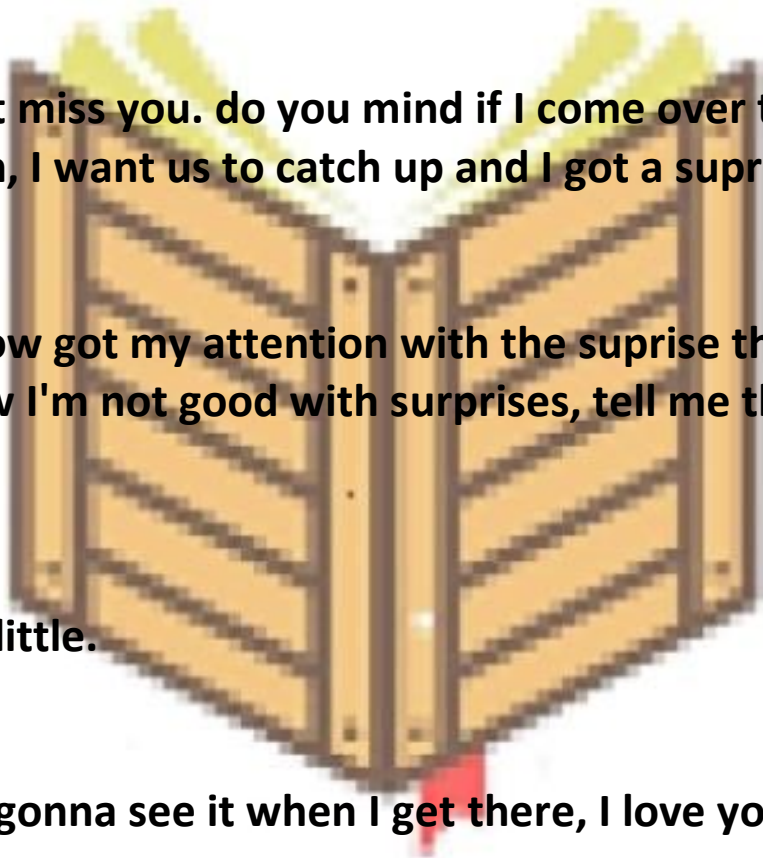
he laughs a little.

Mvelo: you gonna see it when I get there, I love you

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: love you too

he hung up.



Now I'm gonna be impatient throughout the whole day thinking about the surprise, God why did he tell me?

I worked my was off for the past few hours while having some coffee, it was now my lunch time and I heard some commotion outside so I stood up going to check.

"I told you I want to see Nosipho, can't you hear me? fucking use your brain and do you thing" Sya said frustrated, I told my arms and I look at him.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I shake my head, this guy though.

Nosi: it's okay sisi I know him

Sya: you see?

he frustratingly says and follows me to my office, I heard the door close behind me.

Nosi: Sya how can I help you?

Sya: you don't have to be professional about the whole thing

Nosi: I'm at work and I have to be professional

he smirks.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: once again how can I help you?

Sya: I have a headache

I chuckle.



Nosi: okay so?

Sya: I want you to treat me

I just laugh.

Nosi: Sya I'm not that type of doctor that deal with such situations. I'm a surgeon, I do operations



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: ohh right, then operate my head

I laugh once again.

Nosi: be serious for once, what exactly do you want?

Sya: I want to take you out

Nosi: you can't take me out, I got work plus you have a headache

Sya: don't play such games with me

Nosi: I'm afraid I'm loosing you here, what games?

he smirks.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: you know I really do have a headache

Nosi: sit down and I will look for painkillers, I don't know if I have any



Sya: thanks

he set down and I went through my beg, I couldn't find the pain killers.

Nosi: well I can't find the painkillers

Sya: dang, it's cool I will just drink the water



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: or I can go ask for them from the pharmacy

Sya: no I'm good, sit down

my boyfriend can walk in here any moment.

Nosi: Sya I got work and...

Sya: hlala phansi Nosipho (sit down Nosipho)

he commands in this deep voice, I set down opposite him.

Sya: how are you?

Nosi: you made me sit to ask me that *laughs a little* I really don't...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: phendula umbuzo mama (answer the question)

I melted.

Nosi: I'm doing fine and you?

Sya: good, your day so far?

Nosi: Syatho...

Sya: chabo ma njena syaxoxa lana ungangijahi (no, we are talking so don't rush me)

this guy who does he think he is?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: *sighs* can you believe it, I was late for work and I had this huge headache and my boss complimented me *smiles* I'm so happy

Sya: that's great, Nosi look don't get me wrong but I just want to talk to you that's all so don't cut me off nor short

Nosi: got you but I'm kinda waiting on someone right now

Sya: cool, I need to go somewhere anyways

he stood up, okay I feel bad now.

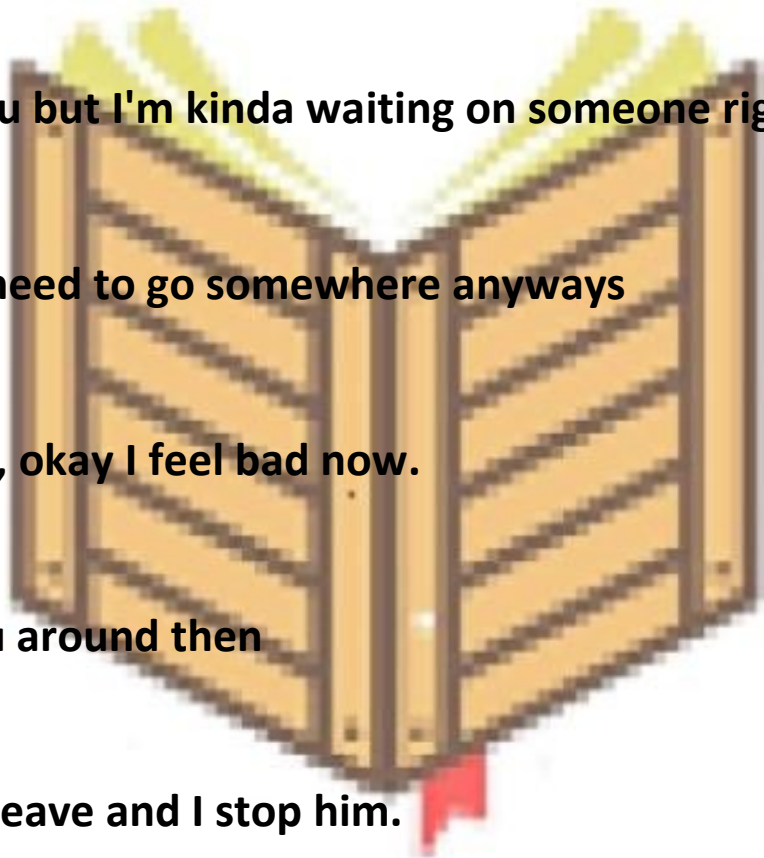
Sya: see you around then

he turns to leave and I stop him.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: wait...

I took out a piece of paper and I wrote my number on it, I gave it to him.



Nosi: next time call me so you don't have a problem at the reception

Sya: I will keep that in mind.

he smiles and he left.

-
-
-



NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 94

KUNGENTANDO.

I woke up in the small room house I'm living in, I have never lived in such a small tiny house in my life.

I can't even breath properly, one room is not enough at all for me but what will I do with a big house.

I don't even have any moment of my own, Amahle doesn't answer my calls she just ghosted me.

who does that to their husband? but ibrralky messed up big time, I don't know what got to me.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I don't have anyone to help me out in this situation, my credit cards are all empty and...yohh it's a lot.

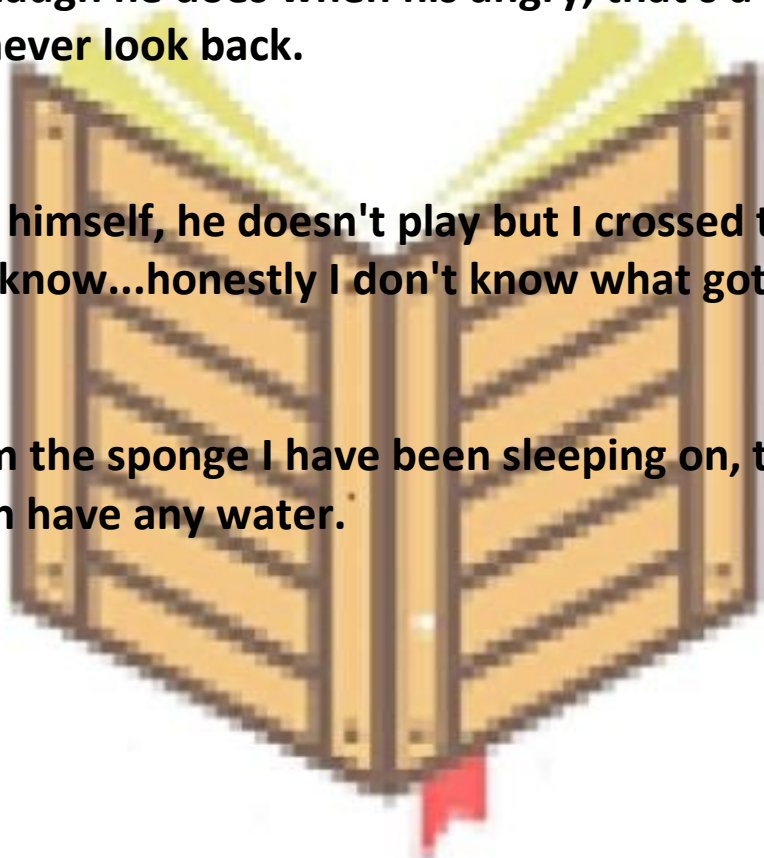
when they say a person ruined their own life they talking about me, I was living one luxurious life till this jealousy of mine took over.

Nkosie just be hunting me down, Nkosie has his own dark side and the last time I saw it a lot of blood got spilled in the process.

I saw that side of him again, he would have killed me bit he didn't, that laugh he does when his angry, that's a sign for you to run and never look back.

he is Lucifer himself, he doesn't play but I crossed the line, I really don't know...honestly I don't know what got into me.

I got up from the sponge I have been sleeping on, this place doesn't even have any water.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I took my towel and a small bucket, I went to the tap outside and the bucket only filled halfway.

there's no soap, I sigh making my way into the house, I bathe with the cold water and I got dressed into the very same clothes.

I got up with my stomach making those funny sounds, it's begging for food and I don't have any food.

I walk out with the hoodie hat covering me, I walked to the market.

it's a busy place where people from the village go to buy veggies and other stuff, it is always packed and it's the right place to get a meal.

I stood by the corner eating some dry grass and I spot thus lady walking with some plastics, I noticed that the plastic had some delicious food.

NOVELSGURU.COM

she's my target I guess, I followed her till it was only the two of us walking, I quickly rush and snatch the plastic from her hand and ran off.

"sizanii! ohh nkosie(help!! oh god)" she shouts.

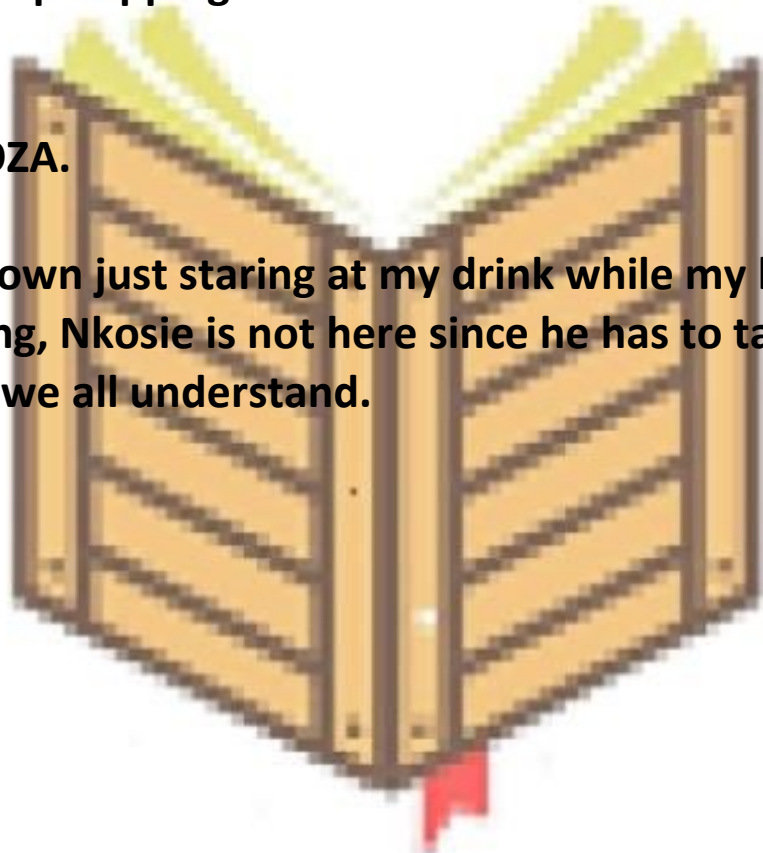
I don't care about her cries right now, I just need some food and the plastic has all the goodies.

I walk to this tall three and I set down, I started eating the food and I ended up napping there because I was full.

.
.

. SYATHOKOZA.

I'm sitting down just staring at my drink while my brothers were chatting, Nkosie is not here since he has to take care for Khwezi and we all understand.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I'm so deep in my thoughts I can't even hear what they saying, Nkanyezi snaps his finger right infront of my face.

Sya: dude you crazy?

Nkanyezi: what you thinking about?

Sya: nothing, I don't know, eish

Sandile: eversince you got here you have been quite, you still holding the same drink

Sya: I just got a lot in my mind right now

Nkanyezi: Ouu! look at you, talk to us, what's bothering you?

Sya: I'm not bothered, eish don't talk have something else to do? y'all all over my business

Sandile: we just worried, you are never like this



NOVELGURU.COM

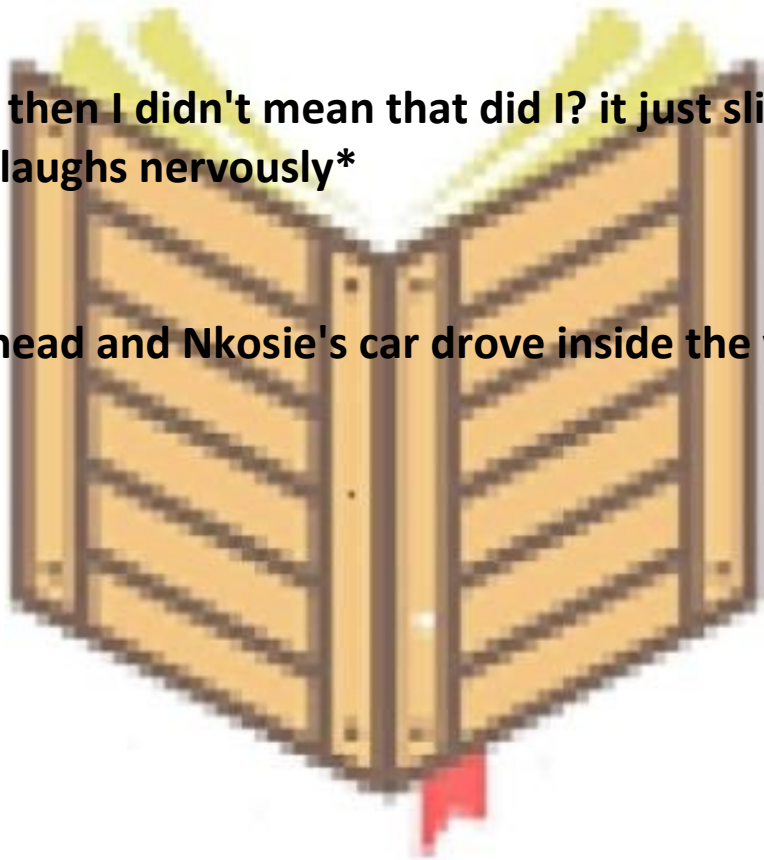
Sya: so I never think that's what you saying?

Sandile: it's not really what I'm saying but sometimes you don't...

I give him a dead stare.

Sandile: but then I didn't mean that did I? it just slipped out of my mouth *laughs nervously*

I shook my head and Nkosie's car drove inside the yard.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: razo

Nkosie: sho, talk drinking without me?

he saying getti g out of his car.

Sya: phela thina we thought you not coming since your girl is in the hospital and you need to stay by her side

Nkosie: you believe it when I tell you that she chased me out

Sandile: why would she do that?

Nkosie: pass me the beer

he set down and Nkanyezi gave him the beer and he opens it, he took a sip.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: she said I'm suffocating her

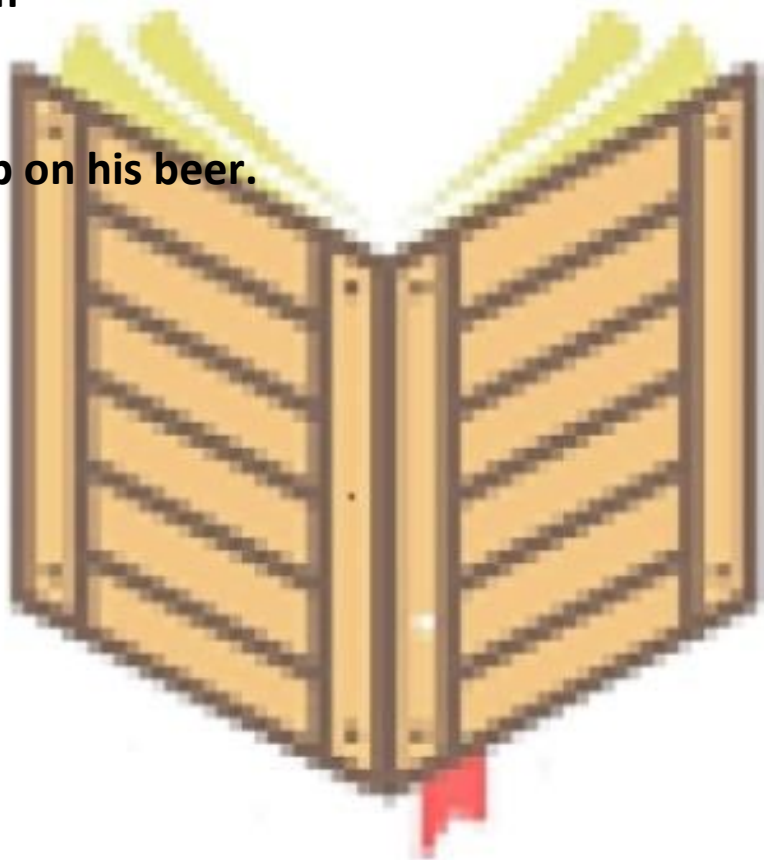
Nkanyezi: *laughs* she's tired of you already?

Nkosie: she did not say that

Sya: but she meant that

Nkosie: mxm

he took a sip on his beer.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: so I want to go pay damages and also Lobola Khwezi, she's the one majita

Sandile: I second that, you love that girl and she loves you

Nkosie: and I can't imagine and world...

Sya: don't start with your boring romantic shit

Nkosie laughs.

Nkosie: you also gonna fall in love and you gonna be talking the same way I'm talking about my women

Sya: not happening, I smash and pass nothing more

Nkosie: weeh uzofa

we laugh.

Nkanyezi: so you gonna marry Khwezi?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: yes but I have to propose first and I don't know what to do

Sandile: prepare a dinner date

Sya: suwazii amaDinner date manje Mseti (you now know Dinner dates Mseti?)

Sandile: what do you take me for?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: suzenza juice ngathi wena la

Sandile: phela vede ngiJuicy hawu

I shake my head, I took a beer and I drank it.

Sya: or maybe take her out on a vacation

Nkosie: that sounds like a great idea but what if she says no?

Nkanyezi: we murder her

Nkosie: imma murder you instead

we laugh, this guy is whipped.

**Sandile: since we got that problem sorted we got another issue
I think y'all have been ignoring**

Sya: what issue?

Sandile: the Sakhile issue, that nigga be walking inside every

club we own and doing as he pleases, having free drinks, he is just doing as he pleases

Nkosie: your brother fucked it up and I ain't got no energy for that nigga right now I'm focused on my women, y'all need to learn to fix some problems for yourselves

Sya: we kill him that's simple

Nkanyezi: I'm with Sya, he needs to disappear for good this time



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: *chuckles* you can't just come up with such stupid plans, in maths you evaluate the problem aker? calculate your steps before reaching to your answer, you can't just say you gonna kill him, you gotta think about how you gonna do it, when, should it be an accident or suicide so you don't become the suspect, what does he have on you that might effect this 'kill him plan'

Nkosie sigh.

Nkosie: take your time and think cause killing a person like that doesn't need just a bullet, it also needs brains

Sandile: yohhh

Nkosie: now you see how much work I be doing?

Nkanyezi: loads of work

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: and excuse me i need to go be with my wife

he stood up and places his beer down, we did our bro shake and he left.

we set there till it got late, I was also drunk. I got up and I took my car keys, I can drive when drunk and I usually do drive sir it won't be a problem.

I arrive home and I walk inside, I turn on the lights and took off my shoes, I place my keyed on the table and I went to the living room.

I set down and I took out my phone, for some reason I ended up calling Nosipho, it rang.

-
-
-



NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 95

NOSIPHO.

I'm at Mvelo's apartment and we are having a movie night, we are cuddling while watching the movie in silence till that silence got broken by my phone ringing.

I checked who it was and it was an unsaved number, I choose not to answer but the phone rings again.

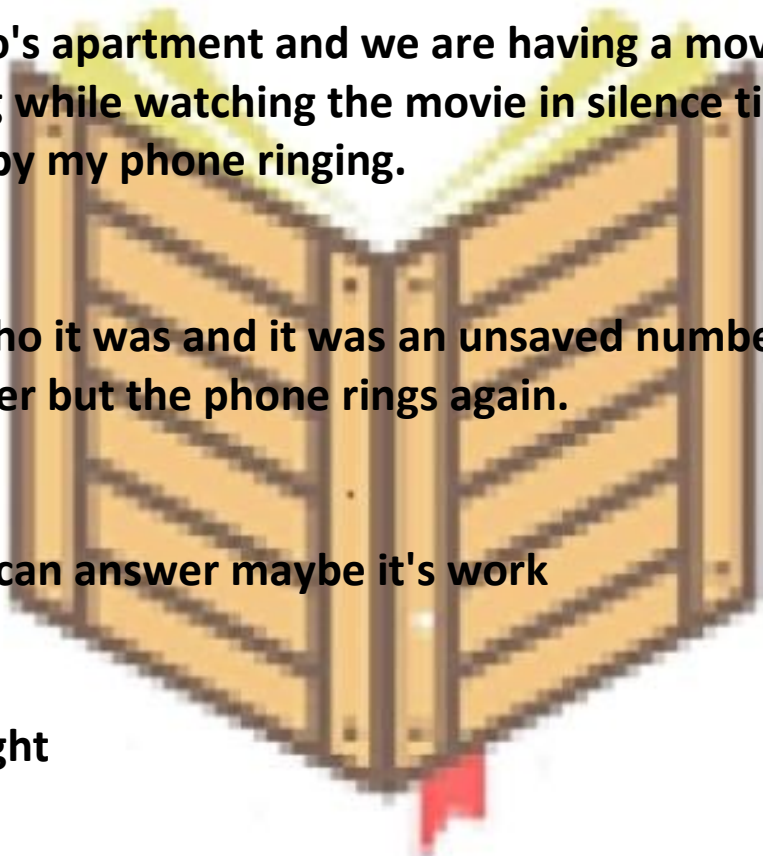
Mvelo: you can answer maybe it's work

Nosi: you right

I got up and kissed him on the lips, I wore my slippers and went to answer the call.

Nosi: hello Nosipho Mhlongo speaking

Sya: MaMhlongo



I folded, I bite my lower lip.

Nosi: who is this?

Sya: you no longer recognise my voice now

oh it's Syathokoza, his voice sounds way deeper.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: hey what you doing up at this hour?

Sya: I'm thinking about you

Nosi: you can't be doing that

Sya: but I am right now as we speak, I can't seem to get you out of my mind

Nosi: Sya honestly you can't be saying such, I have a boyfriend and he is in the living room as we speak

Sya: qoma mina

Nosi: you are drunk aren't you?

Sya: I just had a few drinks but I'm serious

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: good night Sya and please don't call me ever in this hour

Sya: koda ma...

I hung up.

that was rude of me but he can't be courting me, I have a boyfriend and I love him, he loves me, I'm happy with him, I can't let some guy I met few days ago change the way I feel about Mvelo.

I pull myself together and as I was about to walk back to the living room, my phone rang again, it was the same number.

I just declined the call and switch off my phone, I went back to the living room.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mvelo: who was it?

Nosi: just my work friend telling me about her new boyfriend

I lie and I layed on his chest.

Mvelo: I love you okay?

Nosi: I know, I love you more

he kisses me on the forehead and we continued to watch the movie.

we didn't finish the movie cause Mvelo started being one naughty guys, we eneded up making out.

we went to sleep after that.

the following morning I woke up early and Mvelo is still fast asleep, I went to take a shower, I dried my body, I lotioned it.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I wore a pair of thorn jeans, a white Nike t-shirt, white air force sneakers, I pack up my beg for work.

I went to make breakfast and Mvelo held me from behind while I was dishing up for the both of us.

Nosi: baby I'm going to be late

he loses me on the neck, I bite my lower lip.

Mvelo: good morning



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: morning, eat up before it gets cold

he kisses my cheek and he went to sit on the high chair, he started eating and I joined him.

Mvelo: can I drive you to work?

Nosi: sure

I smile and continued to eat, he finishes first and he went upstairs to shower, I did the dishes and he came back all dressed up.

I took my thing and we went out, I inside the car, he drove me to work.

he parks outside and I mean over for a kiss.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mvelo: I will pick you up okay?

Nosi: okay

I got out of the car and I walk inside the hospital. I greet the women who was cleaning the floors, I greet the reception and I went to my office.

it took me by surprise, Syathokoza was in my office, seated on the chair with his leg on top of the other.

Nosi: Sya what are you doing here?

Sya: you hung up on me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: what? so you thought I was gonna stay on call with a drunk guy busy talking nonsense

Sya: so I was talking nonsense

he got up and walks closer to me, I swallow, Jesus christ help me please.

Nosi: y...yes Sya

Sya: noma ngathiwa ngeqwe ukudla MaMhlongo ungalinge uvale ifoni ngisakhuluma (no matter how drunk I am MaMhlongo don't ever hung up on me)

I nod.

Sya: ngyakhuluma njena mama ngiphendule (I'm talking so answer me)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: I hear you Sya

Sya: you never gonna do it right?

Nosi: never, so you came all this way to say this? you Zulu man are so dramatic at times I really...

he pulls me closer by the waist, his lips touch with mine, they are soft yet cold, I respond to the kiss. I found myself wrapping my arm around his neck, he deepened the kiss, I let out a moan, he groans and he started kissing me hungrily.

I did not want to pull away bit I had to, this is cheating in broad daylight, I pull out from the kiss.

I step away.

Nosi: *clears throat*



NOVELSGURU.COM

the door opens and Mvelo walls in, my heart starts racing, he looks at me then back at Sya.

Mvelo: you forgot your phone

Nosi: thank you

Mvelo leans over for a kiss and I look at him then back at Sya who looked like he was about to explode.

Sya: don't disrespect me boy

I swallow, I look at Mvelo in the eyes, he decides to leave and I breath out.

Nosi: please leave



NOVELSGURU.COM

he looks at me.

Nosi: I don't want you ruining my relationship okay? so please whay happened was a mistake and please stay away from me

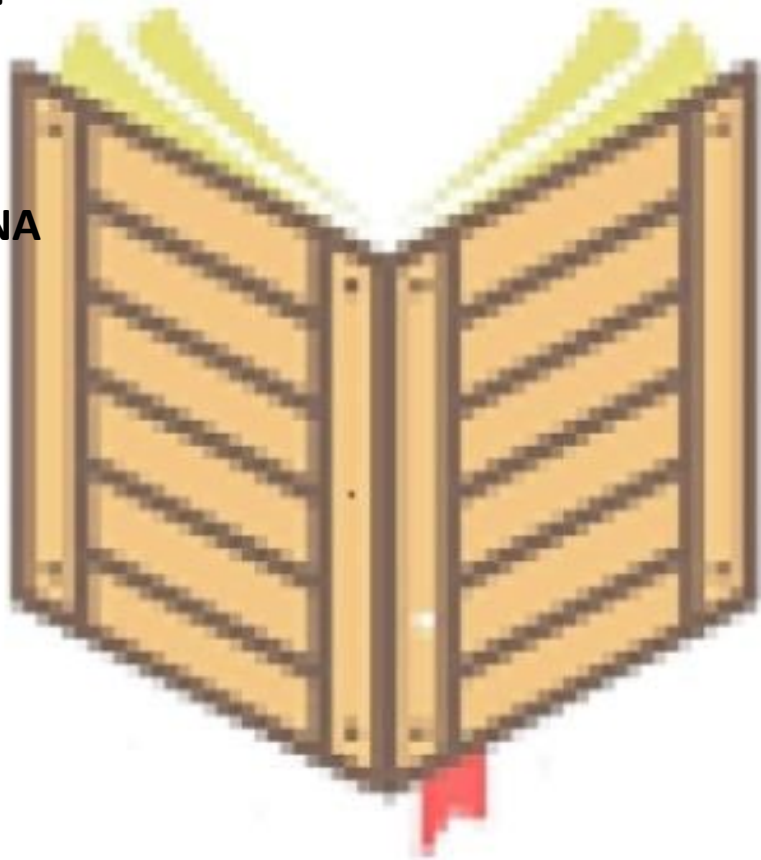
he doesn't say anything but walks out, I set down and held my head.

Nosi: you kissed him back Nosipho, what were you thinking?

I ask myself.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 96

NARRATIVE.

It's been a week since the incident that made Khwezi to land in hospital, she has been struggling to use her legs but the physiotherapy helped her.

she is now able to use her legs though she gets some pain there and there, today the doctor said she will be discharged.

Khwezi can't wait to get out of these walls and get back to her ordinary life, Nkosie walks in with a bag.

he smiles at Khwezi who was off the bed standing by the window with one hand on her waist.

he places the beg down and he went to Khwezi, he held her from behind and kissed her on the neck.

Nkosie: Sthandwa samii

Khwezi: Mvelase

**she turns around and she wraps her hands around his neck, he
hand his hands on her waist.**

Nkosie: you look better

Khwezi: I feel better *smiles*

Nkosie: my bad will no longer feel cold



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: who knows maybe you brought in some girls to give you some company while I was in here

Nkosie: ohh I forgot to tell you, I brought some model to come keep me some company

Khwezi gives Nkosie a dead stare, she moves away from him.

Nkosie: I'm joking but don't ever start shit you won't handle

Khwezi: Mmmh

Nkosie: I also missed making love to you in every party of our house

Khwezi: ohh is that so?

she smirks and packs him on the lips.

Nkosie: don't tease me like that

Khwezi giggles.



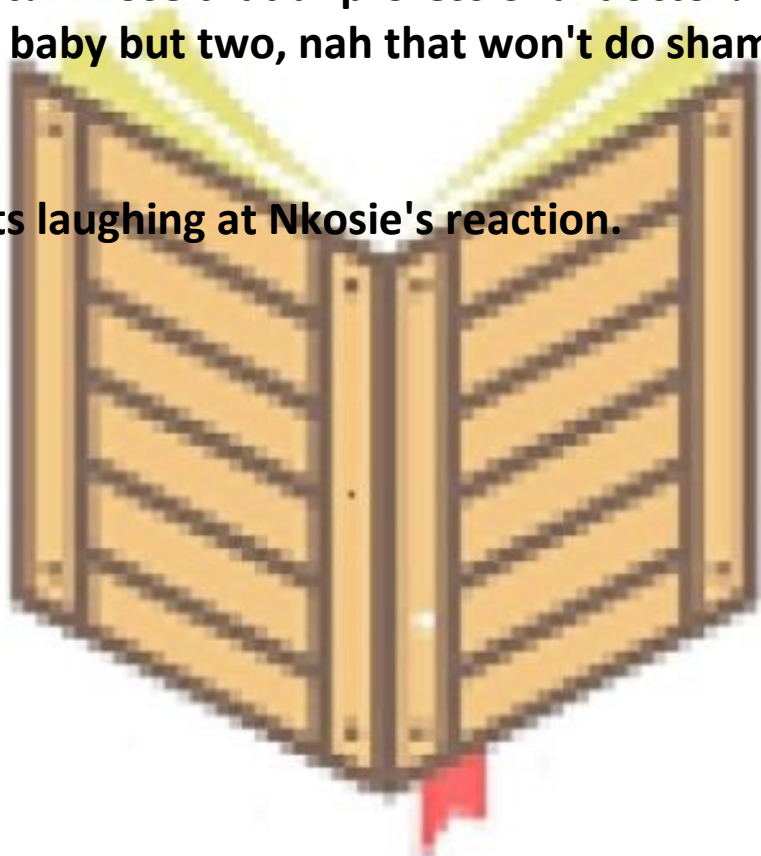
NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: the things I want to do to you when we get home

Khwezi: those things are gonna have to wait, the doctor said no sex for 2 weeks

Nkosie: what? whose that unprofessional doctor? one week was enough baby but two, nah that won't do shame

Khwezi starts laughing at Nkosie's reaction.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you laughing, great, this is not funny you know

Khwezi: koda Mvelase...*laughs* that's what the doctor said

Nkosie: whose that doctor?

Khwezi: I forgot her name

Nkosie: this is bullshit, I want to have my women, can't I have you in piece baby come on don't tell me you agreed to this

Khwezi: I can't go against the doctors will

she went to the beg Nkosie came with a took out the clothes he brought.

Nkosie: this has to be some sort of sick joke, it can't be, you know how irresistible you are baby

Khwezi laughs while looking down and she looks at Nkosie with a serious face.

Khwezi: I'm telling you the truth



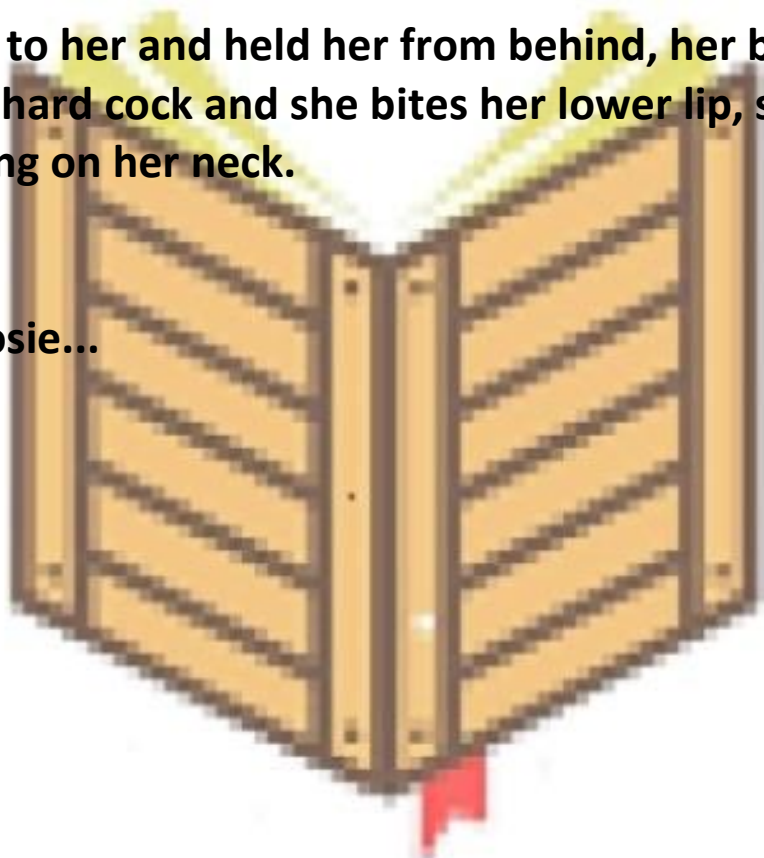
NOVELSGURU.COM

she started undressing and Nkosie couldn't stop staring at her body, Khwezi got dressed.

Nkosie: you see what I'm taking about?

he walks up to her and held her from behind, her booty touched his hard cock and she bites her lower lip, she could feel him breathing on her neck.

Khwezi: Nkosie...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: that's my name

Khwezi: can I get dressed?

Nkosie: yini ekuvimbile? sthembe akusimina (what's stopping you? I hope it's not me)

he said in a low tone right next to her ear, she inhales some air with her eyes closed.

Khwezi: Mvelase!

Nkosie kissed her shoulder and he steps back, he went to stand by the window looking outside, Khwezi was done and Zizi walks in.

Zizi: prettyface

NOVELSGURU.COM

she went to give her a hug, they both cried.

Zizi: I thought i was gonna lose you

Khwezi: and leave you with who? huh?

Zizi: I love you prettyface and I don't know what I would have done if I had lost you

Khwezi: I love you more

Nkosie clears his throat.

Zizi: don't be jealous



NOVELSGURU.COM

she rolls her eyes and Nkosie doesn't say anything at all, he just stares at his beautiful women.

the doctor walks in wanting to examine Khwezi before she leaves, Nkosie went to the doctor.

Nkosie: doctor what's this you told my wife not to do?

the doctor looks at Nkosie confused, Khwezi swallowed real hard and she held Nkosie's hand.

Doc: I'm lost here, what are you talking about sir?

Khwezi: it's nothing doctor

she looks at Nkosie and giggles, Nkosie laughs a little, he knew Khwezi was playing with him.

NOVELSGURU.COM

the doctor left and Nkosie helped Khwezi off the bed, they walk out holding hands, Nkosie's family walks in the hospital and Nkosie pulls Khwezi by the waist and whispered to her ear.

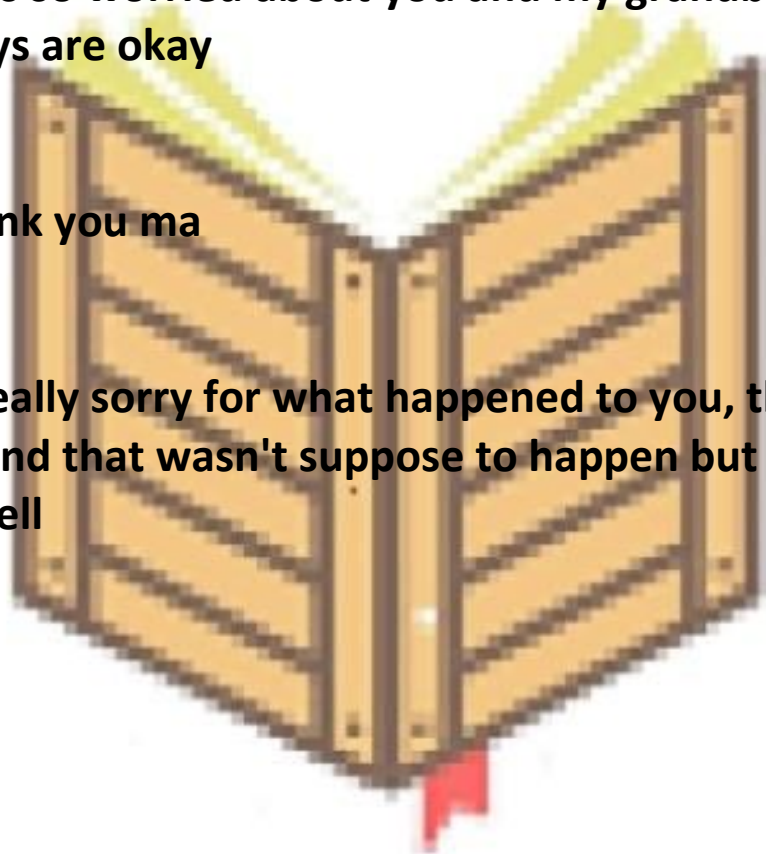
Nkosie: I'm still gonna get you for what you did, imma get you really good

He removes his hand, Khwezi's cheeks flush, she knew what he ment, Mrs Mthembu gave Khwezi a hug.

Mrs M: I was so worried about you and my grandbabies, thank God you guys are okay

Khwezi: thank you ma

Mr M: we really sorry for what happened to you, things went out of line and that wasn't suppose to happen but I'm glad you are doing well



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I'm also glad, I would have not lived if something bad had happened to my babies

Nkosie: nothing happened right? so please don't speak like that ever again

Khwezi: it's the truth Mvelase

Nkosie looks at Khwezi and doesn't say anything.

Sandile: three babies though? ayy ngeke

Khwezi: I'm still pissed at your brother, he can't let me live my life in piece *rolls eyes* he decided to put three babies inside me

Nkosie: and that's my line to leave

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi gives him a side eyes and she laughs a little.

Sandile: you were enjoying it though when he was...

Mrs M hits Sandile on the arms and he gasps.

Sandile: Ouch! that hurts

Mrs M: inhlonipho Sandile yayaphi? (where did the respect go?)

Sandile: sorry mama

Mrs M shakes her head and Mr M just smirks.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: you talk to much wena Sandile

Sandile: says who? you the last person to talk to me about whom being talkative and what so ever

Nkanyezi: you crazy, mama you said you wanted to go to the mall

Mrs M: ohh yes, Zizi you want to tag in?

Zizi: I would love to but I need to go somewhere

Nkosie: you have been busy these days, I wonder what is this that you busy with

he walks in and looks at her while pulling Khwezi by the waist.

Mrs M: leave my baby alone wena

**Zizi: you heard the Queen mother, now I have to leave
frowns I will see you soon prettyface**

Khwezi: don't be a stranger



NOVELSGURU.COM

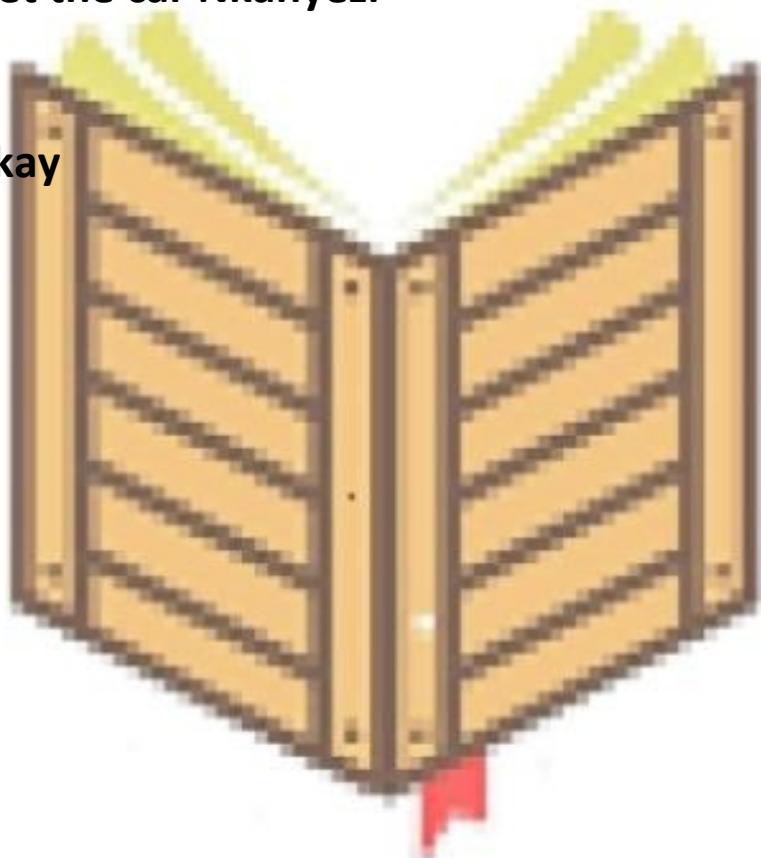
Zizi: I won't

she kissed her on the cheek and she left.

Mrs M: go get the car Nkanyezi

Nkanyezi: okay

he left.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs M: Syathokoza are you okay? you haven't said a word eversince we got here, what's going on?

Mrs Mthembu is talking to herself, Sya's mind is far away to the fact that he can't even hear a word her mother is saying, he has been staring at Nosi who is standing there with a group of colleagues.

Mrs M: thethelela Nkosi (help God)

she left with her husband.

Nkosie: Sya uSharp? (are you okay?)

Sya: yah yah ngiSharp (yeah yeah I'm okay)

he answers with his eyes still locked at Nosi, Nkosie noticed and he shook his head. NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: asambeni MaMvelase wami

Khwezi: MaMvelase onjani?



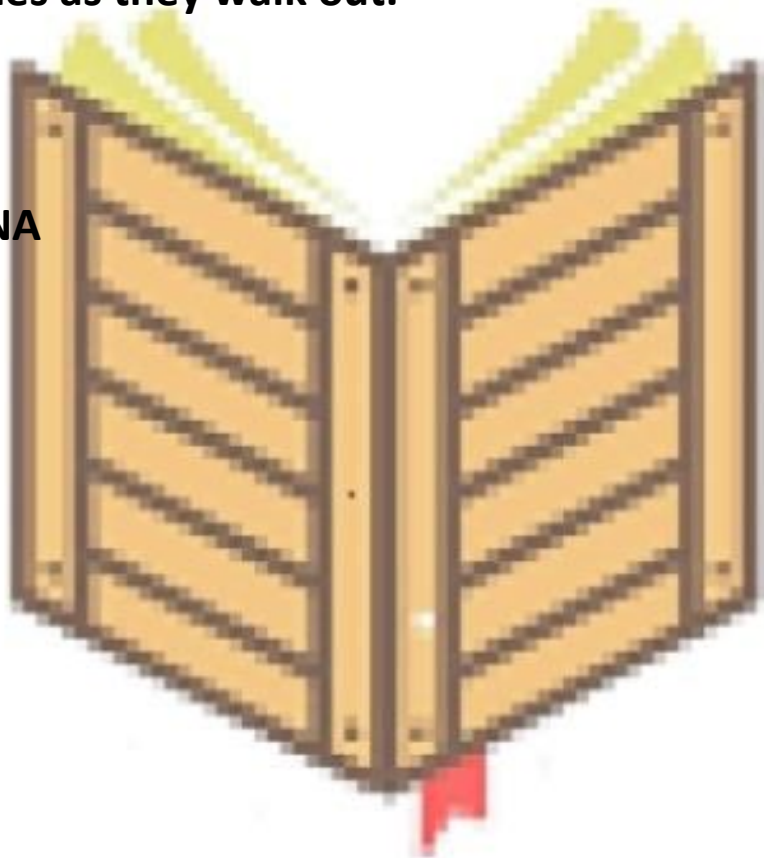
Nkosie smiles.

Nkosie: you heard me

Khwezi giggles as they walk out.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 97

SYATHOKOZA.

I just stood there looking at her, I have never seen a beautiful lady like this, I watch her as she laughs while talking to her colleagues.

I walk up to them and her smile fades away when she sees me.

Nosi: I will see you guys later, I got a lot of work

she took the document that was on the desk and she started walking away, I chuckle and followed her.

Nosi: why you following me?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: why you walking away from me?

Nosi: because I don't want to talk to you neither do I want to see your face

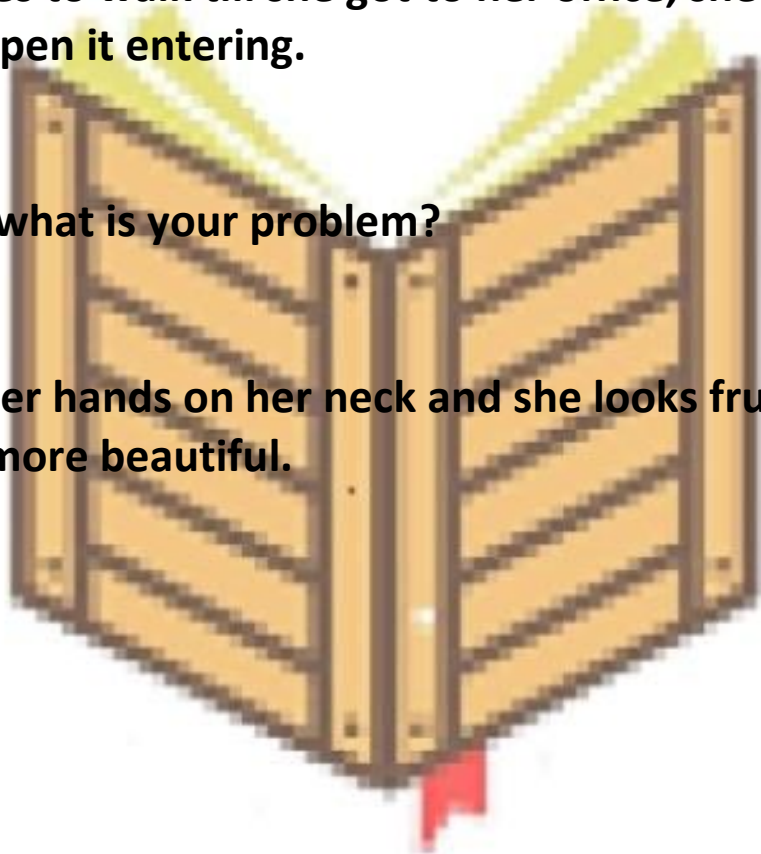
Sya: Nosipho calm down, you really walking to fast and you might trip

Nosi: I don't care as long as I'm far away from you Sya

she continues to walk till she got to her office, she closes the door and I open it entering.

Nosi: Geez, what is your problem?

she places her hands on her neck and she looks frustrated, she looks even more beautiful.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: uyazi uvedane ube muhle kanjani mese unyanyile (you become even more beautiful when you angry)

she rolls her eyes.

Nosi: Syathokoza bandla ngyakucela phuma empilweni yami (Syathokoza please just get out of my life)

Sya: ingabe yikhona lokho MaNjomane okufunayo? ngiphume nje kanjalo (is that what you want MaNjomane? you want me to leave you just like that)

Nosi: Sya please. I have a boyfriend and I love him, he also

Sya: I don't care about your boyfriend, mina ngifuna wena (I want you)

she sighs.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: get out okay, what happened between me and you was a mistake so please leave

**Sya: okay let's say it was a mistake but was it a mistake
MaNjomane**

Nosi: I don't like that Clan name, stop calling me that

**Sya: apologies, Makhedama ngiphendule phela (Makhedama
answer me)**

Nosi: it was a mistake Sya let's just forget about it

**Sya: I will forget about it if you allow me to take you out
tonight**



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: that's not happening

Sya: it wasn't a mistake then

I smirk, she rolls her eyes.

Nosi: I'm not going out with you, I have a boyfriend

Sya: don't use that boy as an excuse

Nosi: I'm not, I just don't want to go out with you Syathokoza

Sya: ngyakuzwa, ube nosuku oluhle yezwa?

Nosi: Mmmh

Sya: phendula kahle MaNjomane (answer properly MaNjomane)

Nosi: angifunii (I don't want to)

I chuckle and I walk out.



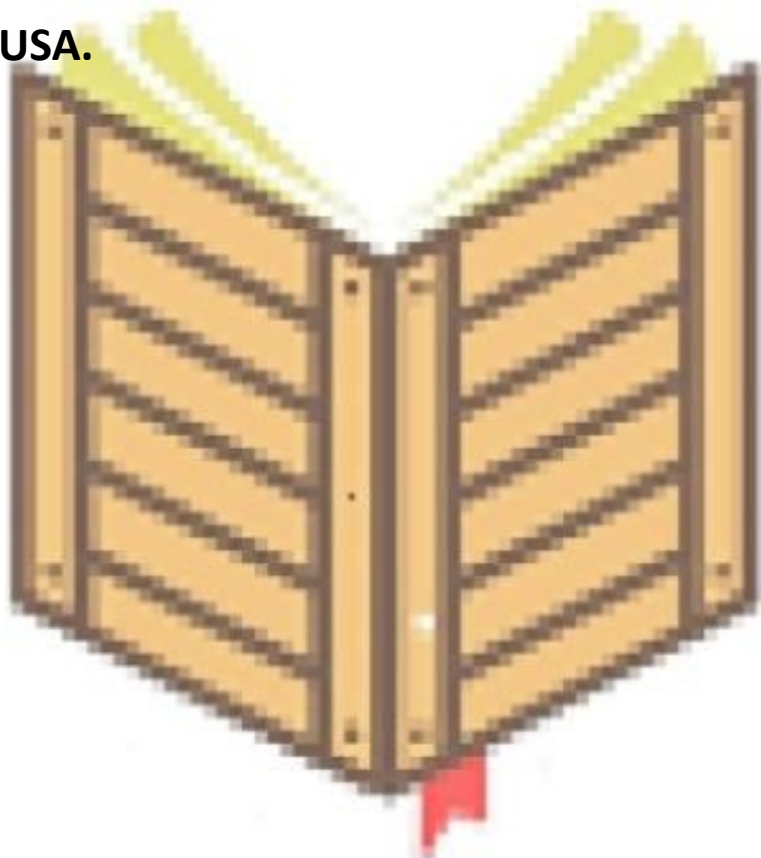
NOVELSGURU.COM

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 98

KHWEZILOKUSA.



NOVELSGURU.COM

We drove home while having small chats, I missed my man and I ain't gonna lie about that, I missed his laughter, his cute smile, those lips...ohh God I missed him.

we drove inside the yard and he parks right outside the door steps, he got out and he opens the door for me.

you see what I missed? the gentleman he is, he helped me out of the car and I took those little begs.

i make my way inside the house and I went straight to the kitchen, I took out some things to make a sandwich with.

Nkosie: you didn't tell me you were hungry, i would have drove to the mall to get you something

Khwezi: I'm a pregant women,I'm suppose to be hungry

NOVELSGURU.COM

he chuckles and he hugs me from behind.

Nkosie: I missed you

Khwezi: I missed you too

he starts kissing me on the neck, my breathing changed and I held on the counter while he touched those spots, I let out a moan.

Khwezi: Mvelase!!

Nkosie: Mmmh

he says sucking my neck, he stops and he kisses my cheek.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I will make you something to eat, you go take a shower

Khwezi: let's finish this first

I turn to give him a kiss and his lips formed a smile, he pulled out from the kiss, I was enjoying that you know...

Nkosie: sthandwa samii

he looks at me in the eyes, I bite my lower lip not wanting to cry cause I'm definitely going to cry, does he know how much i want him right now.

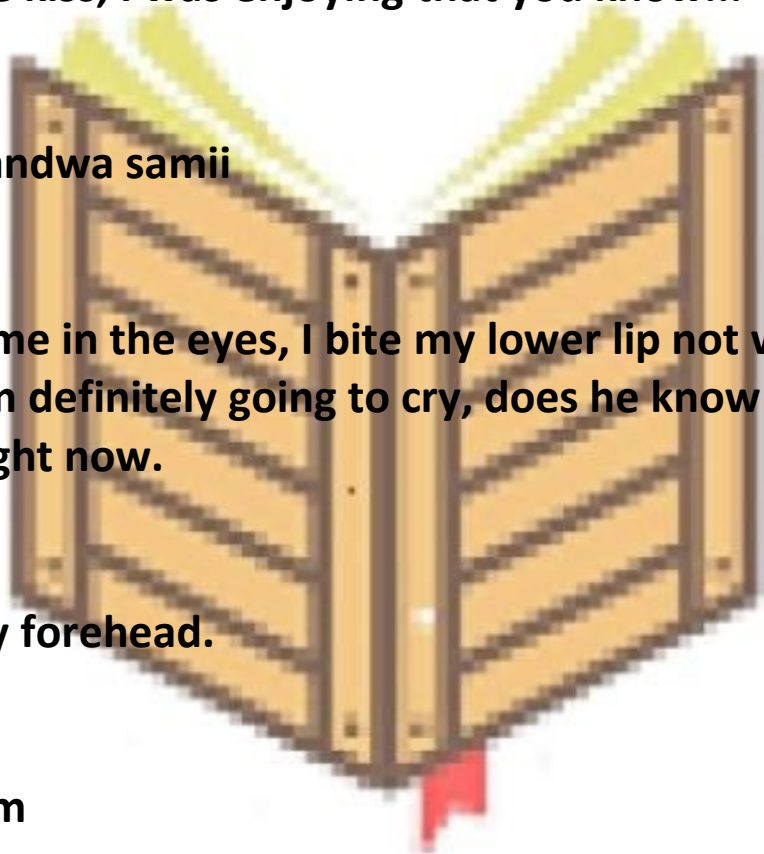
he kisses my forehead.

Khwezi: mxm

NOVELSGURU.COM

I took my phone and I walk away, I heard him chuckle, this guy though.

I arrived upstairs and I stepped naked, I walked to the bathroom and I stepped into the shower, I turn on the tap and I



let the water pour.

I took a sponge and washed my body with it, I stayed there for a couple of minutes till I felt clean enough.

the wound on my back hasn't healed yet, it still hurts, I turn off the taps and I step out of the shower.

I dry my body and I wrap a towel around my body, I went back to the main room and I remove the towel.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I stood there looking at my baby bump, the black line on my belly, I smile and tears started to blind my eyes when the thought of Nkosie's health condition came up.

Khwezi: God please make a plan and save my love, the father of my children, I love him and I can't do this without him

I wipe the tears and I look at Nkosie who is leaning by the door frame with his arms folded, he is looking at me through the mirror.

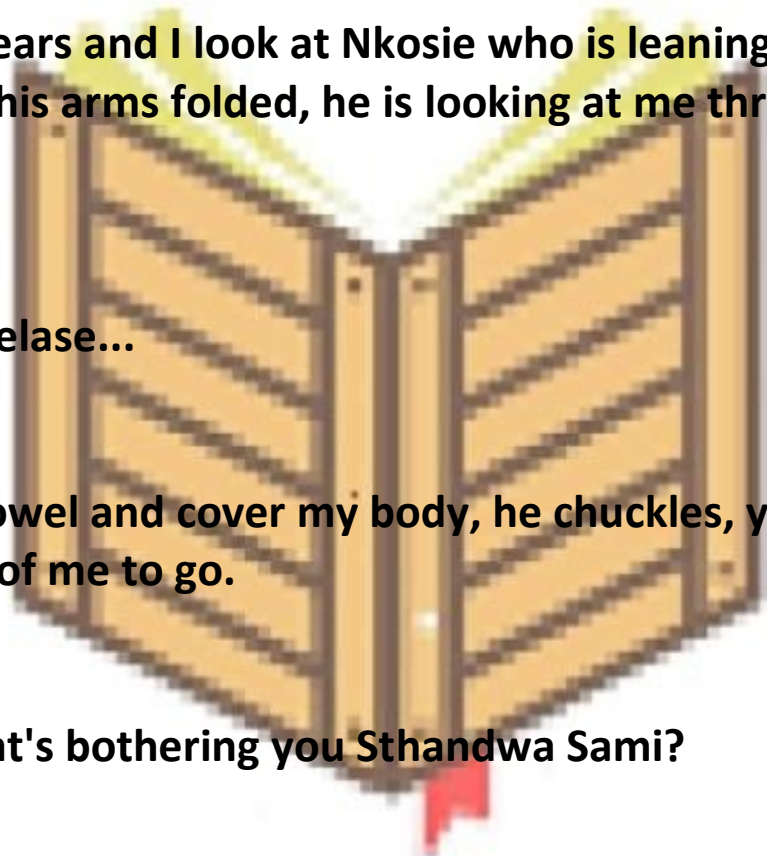
Khwezi: Mvelase...

I took the towel and cover my body, he chuckles, yes that was very stupid of me to go.

Nkosie: what's bothering you Sthandwa Sami?

Khwezi: it's nothing, I'm just thinking about what would have happened if I left this world

Nkosie: let's not think about that right now, what matters more is that you and our babies are okay



NOVELSGURU.COM

I smile.

Khwezi: you are right

Nkosie: and I wanted to talk to you about something but it's gonna have to wait, cause this i can't ignore

he places his hands on my waist, I look at him through the mirror and I smile.

Khwezi: what you thinking about now?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: this towel is at the wrong place

he says removing it and pulls my ass closer to feel his boner, he starts kissing my neck, my left hand held the back of his head while he kisses my neck.

I bite my lower lip looking up and he hands make their way to my boobs, he squeezes them both while still kissing my neck.

I remove his hand off me, I turn around and wrap my arms around his neck, I look deep into his eyes and the way his looking at me right now.

it's like I'm the only thing that matters to him, the look in his eyes say everything.

Khwezi: you remember that you cooking right?

Nkosie: who said I cooked?

NOVELSGURU.COM

I laugh.

Khwezi: Nkosie you are full of games

he squeezes my ass.

Khwezi: Ahh...

I let out a moan and his eyes are getting small, I leaned closer to her, our lips touched, we start of in a slow phase.

he was getting impatient but I just continued with the slow phase wanting to piss him off.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkose: mama

he says in between the kiss.

Khwezi: mmmh!

that came out a moan, not what I was intending, the kiss got heated up and we were now kissing each other hungrily.

I want him and he also wants me.

he lifts me up and places me on the bed, the pain on my back is no longer there, it has been filled with his love.

he is in between my legs, kissing me so good as I could feel his hard cock slightly picking my nana, I pull out from the kiss and he is already high.

NOVELSGURU.COM

with his small red eyes, I giggle and he goes down leaving kisses all over my body, sucking my breasts, his warm tongue traveling down till it reached my nana.

I open wider for him and he gently starts rubbing my clit, I bite my lower lip.

Khwezi: Mmm...

I held in the moan, he increased the phase and that got me screaming his name.

Khwezi: Nkosie ahhh...

I moaned and grab the sheets.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: yes baby, talk to me

Khwezi: ahhhhh fuck!

my toes curl, I squirt, I'm breathing heavily, he wipes me and I could feel his warm tongue right on my clit.

I took a deep breath.

he starts doing his tongue job, doing it real good, pleasing me, I felt like I was in heaven.

Khwezi: Ahhh Mvelase

I moan, he ate me up, i had my one hand on his head, I could feel some pressure on my body and I know I'm nearly there.

Khwezi: Ahh Nkos...fuck!

NOVELSGURU.COM

he presses on my clit and my whole body starts vibrating, he kept on doing that and I released all my juices.

he came back to me and he gave me a kiss, I could taste myself

in his mouth and I taste good, he sucks my tongue and I giggle pulling out.

he takes out his manhood and he slowly inserts himself inside me.

Khwezi: ohhh Mvelase!!!

I grab the shits, he entered fully and he went in slowly, he groans, I moan, he increased the phase sending me to straight to meet Jesus.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: ahhhhhh ahhhh

I'm sweating but the pleasure feels good, he stops and he places my one leg on his shoulder, he goes in deeper.

Khwezi: fuuuuuck!! Nkosie

I moan, he thrust inside me in a slow yet hard phase, the sound of our flashes meeting every now and then.

Nkosie: I love you baby, damn you feel so good

Khwezi: I love you too

I bite my lower lip, we reached our edge and we both cummed, he wipes me and he lays next to me.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: baby?

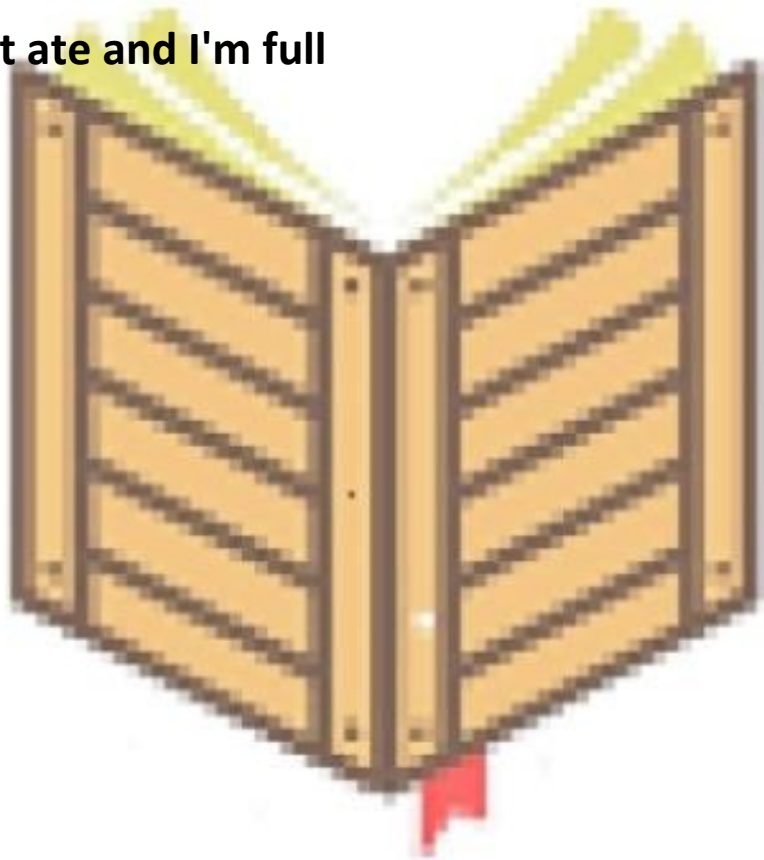
Nkosie: MaMvelase

Khwezi: you did cook right?

Nkosie: I ordered

Khwezi: let's take a shower then go eat

Nkosie: I just ate and I'm full



NOVELSGURU.COM

he bites his lower lip looking at me, i hit him with a pillow getting off the bed.

Khwezi: get up mister

Nkosie: Ngyakthanda yezwa Mkami

Khwezi: ehena ke asigezeni (yes then let's bath)

Nkosie: ngithe ngyakthanda MaMvelase

Khwezi: *smiles* ngikthanda kakhulu mina Mvelase

he got up and he carried me to the bathroom, we took a shower and we got dressed after we were done, we went downstairs and I wish up for the both of us.

we set down in the living room eating while watching tv.

Khwezi: so baby i have been meaning to ask here

Nkosie: yeah?

he took a bite on his burger.

Khwezi: what happened to Ntando? Did you kill him?

he looks at me and doesn't say anything.

Khwezi: Baby please tell me you didn't



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: he left

Khwezi: you chased him away?

Nkosie: yes I did, you wanted me to kill him trust me I would have but I don't kill my blood, why we talking about this anyways?

he clicks his tongue, places his food on the table and stood up heading upstairs, I sigh and ate my food.

**.
. .**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 99

NOSIPHO.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I just got done with work and I'm packing all my stuff so I can leave, it's 7pm and I have to rest since I got a fist big day with my boss who will allow me to watch him do a surgery.

well I will be assisting him, that is what he said, I close the office and I walk out, I say my goodbyes to the colleagues that

are still here.

As I walk out the hospital building I noticed Sya's car and he is standing outside leaning on it with his arms folded, black shades on.

I just pass him and went to my car, I unlocked it and as I was making my way to the drivers side, I sighed.

I shut the door close and I lock the car, I walked to Sya who smiles and opens the door for me, trust me I'm not a rude person.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I got inside the car.

Sya: uhleli kahle? (are you sitting well?)

I look at him and sigh, why am I doing this again? let me guess I was unable to reject a kiss from him, felt really bad for leaving hanging while he was outside waiting for me.

Nosi: yes I'm seated well

Sya: good

he gently closes the door and he jogs to his side of the car, he got inside the car and when he got in the car was filled with his cologne which spent really good.

it's giving that 'notice me' kinda vibe and I am noticing it.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he starts the car and drove to wherever he was going.

Nosi: Sya?

Sya: yebo Nosipho?

Nosi: don't make me regret this

he chuckles.

Sya: I won't touch you nor do anything inappropriate, I know how to treat the right women the right way



NOVELSGURU.COM

the right women? i remain silent and stared outside the window, he drove to this beautiful restaurant which was empty for my surprise.

he got out and opened the door for me, he is being a gentleman and it's cute, we walk inside the restaurant and we had a guy waiting at the door.

Him: good evening, your table is ready for you, I will send in a waiter for you guys real soon

he gave us a card.

Nosi: sorry but why is this place empty?

Him: Sir over here booked the whole place for the night *smiles* have a good evening ma'am

Nosi: thank you

NOVELSGURU.COM

I look at Sya.

Sya: is there a problem Nosi?

Nosi: you really didn't have to do all this

Sya: I wanted to but if you don't like it, I can drive you back home

Nosi: nah it's cool

he smiles, we made our way to our table, the place was decorated really beautifully and I'm surprised.

Mvelo does take me out but this kinda outing takes the cup.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: Sya come on, this is too much, all this for me

Sya: you special and you deserve beautiful things just like you, there must be a resembles

Nosi: thank you

Sya: it's only a pleasure

he opens a chair for me and I set down, he went to his side and he set down, we looked at the menu.

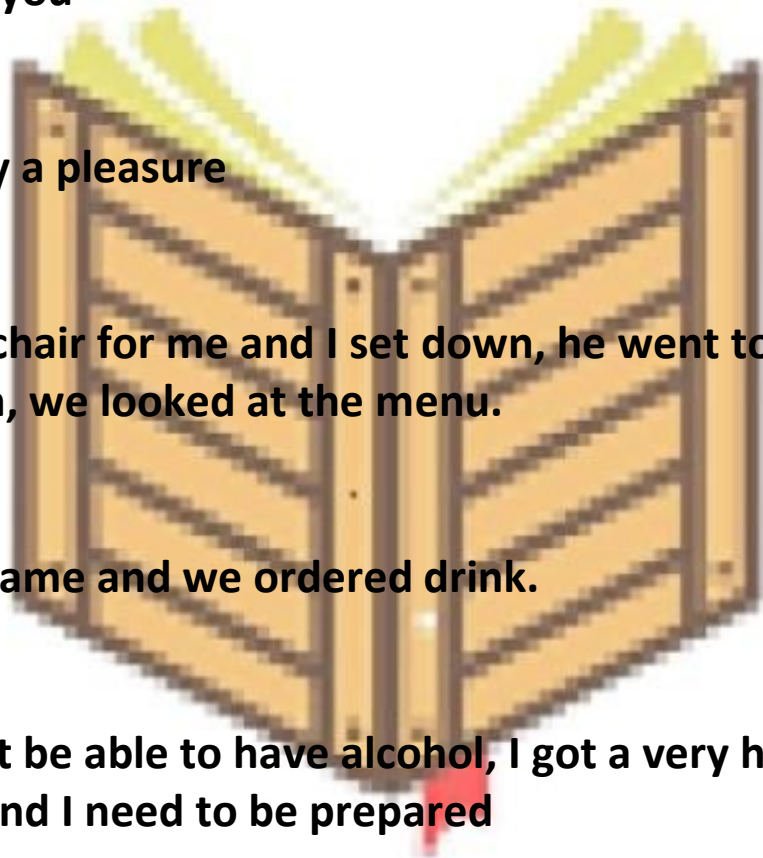
the waiter came and we ordered drink.

Nosi: I won't be able to have alcohol, I got a very huge day tomorrow and I need to be prepared

NOVELSGURU.COM

Waiter: yes ma'am, so what can I get you?

Nosi: cranberry juice



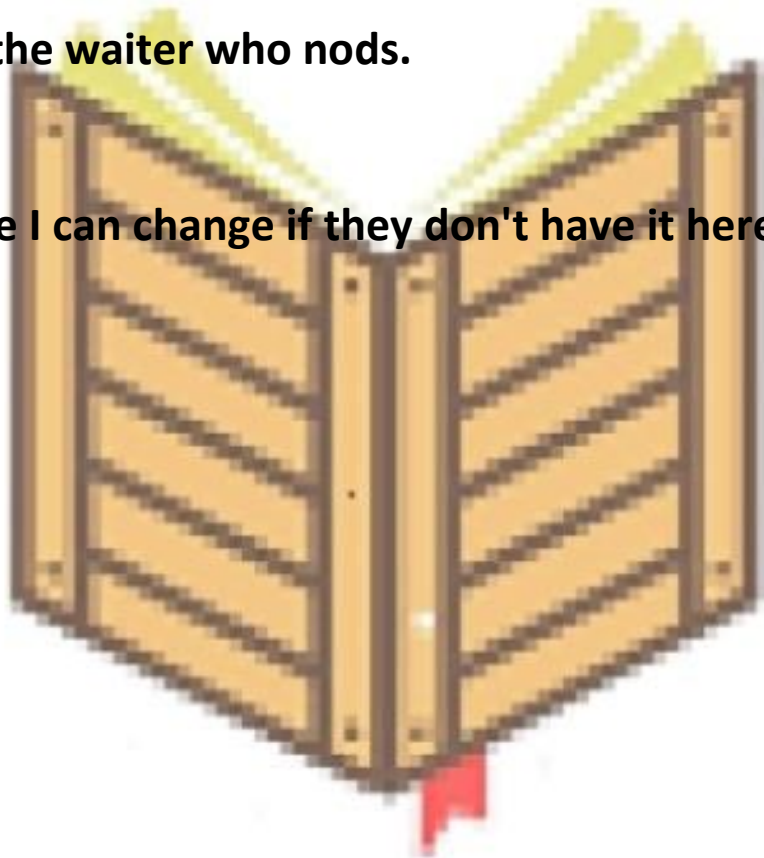
Waiter: we don't have that here

Nosi: ohh can I...

Sya: get her the cranberry juice

he looks at the waiter who nods.

Nosi: it's fine I can change if they don't have it here



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: they do, don't worry

we ordered food and our drink came first while we waited for the food.

Sya: so you say you have a huge day tomorrow, what's happening?

Nosi: well as you know my boss is a top surgeon, so he invited me to come assist him since he was impressed by the work I did on my first surgery

Sya: that big

Nosi: I know right? I hope it goes well cause I would hate for it not going well

Sya: you got this

NOVELSGURU.COM

he looks into my eyes and I smile.

Nosi: so Sya what do you do for a living?

Sya: a lot of things actually, I own a share a in all the family business, I mean hotels, clubs etc. and this restaurant is mine

Nosi: you now I see why you were able to pull all this

he chuckles and I laugh a little.

Sya: I could do this in any other restaurant if you will be my date and if you'd let me

Nosi: not happening again trust me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: never say never

Nosi: you just said never

we laughed.

Sya: how is work for you? your first day how was it?

Nosi: it's was really bad, everyone there does not like me they still don't. there are o my a free that like me, they just thunk a girl like me coming from a good financially stable family can't be what I am, by that I mean I can't be a doctor

Sya: who are those people?

Nosi: almost everybody, they Thu ini did not work for my place here they think my dad's money payed for all this and the position I have but no, Sya I worked for this for yrars

Sya: people will always talk Nosi all you gotta do is silent their voices and listen to your own, don't mind their negativity just do you and you gonna be good

Nosi: thank you, for the first time you said something worth listening to

Sya: uthini manje MaNjomane? (what are you saying now?)

Nosi: I'm joking but thanks

our food came and we ate in a light conversation, Sya is a very good guy and he talks a lot if you let him, he is a fun person being around but I would keep him as a friend nothing more.



NOVELSGURU.COM

we set there till it got late and he and to drive me to my apartment, after arguing about him letting me style half of the bill, he ended up paying.

Sya: don't do that ever again

Nosi: do what?

Sya: doubt that I can't pay the bills, I can take care of you and you don't have to worry about it

Nosi: that's the thing, I can take care of myself

he doesn't say anything he opens the door for me, I could see that he is angry, I got inside and he walks slowly to his side, he shuts the door roughly and starts the car.

he was quite all the way.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: where do you live?

I directed him and that's the only word he said, it was quite after that, he parks outside my apartment.

I take off the seatbelt and I look at him.

Nosi: Syathokoza

he doesn't say anything.

Nosi: Sya talk to me, don't be like this

he looks at me and I smile a little.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: i was the one who asked you out and I was gonna settle the bill, you doubted me Nosi

Nosi: no I didn't, I just...okay fine, I'm sorry

Sya: akunasmokwe (no problem)

I smile, he got out of the car and he opens the door for me, I got out while holding on to his one hand, I close the door come I was out.

Nosi: thank you for the dinner, i had fun

Sya: I aim to please now give me a hug

Nosi: you like commanding for things wena

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: is it a crime asking for what's mine

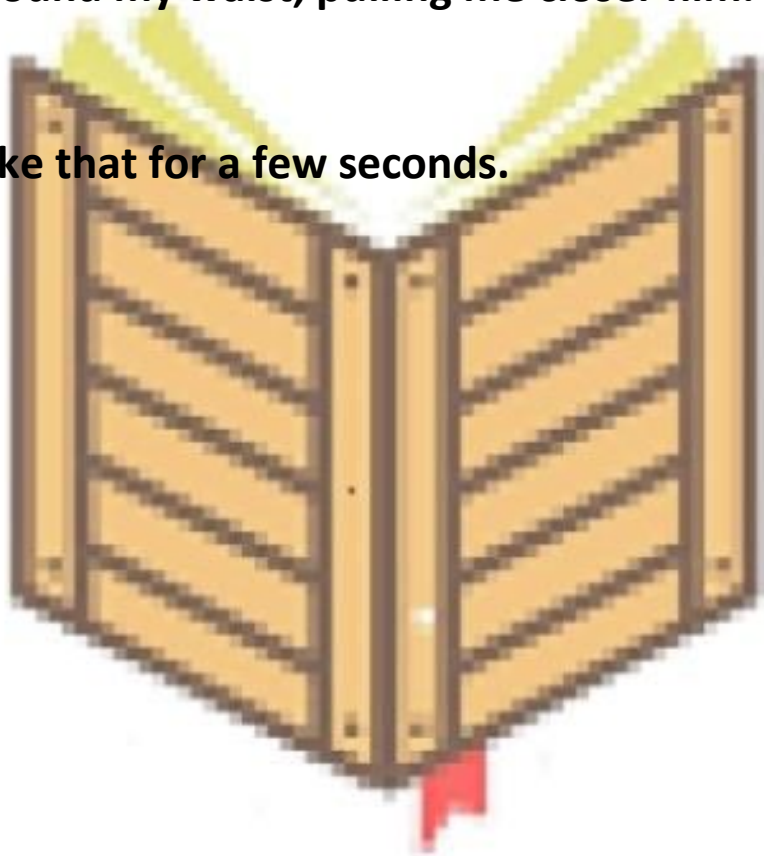
Nosi: nope, don't,ungalinge (don't you dare)

he laughs.

Sya: I'm joking *smiles* woza koda phela (come)

I look at him in the eyes, I ended up giving in,.he is taller then me, I stood on my toes and I wrap my arms around his neck, he wraps his around my waist, pulling me closer him.

we stayed like that for a few seconds.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: Sya!!

I pull out from the hug, to my surprise he still has his hand on my waist.

Sya: be mine

Nosi: *laughs* I can't be yours Sya

Sya: it's fine *smiles* have a good night

Nosi: same to you Sya

he looks at me in the eyes, this is the moment we here I leave but he doesn't want to let go.

Nosi: Sya please let go

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: umuhle MaNjomane

I look down and blush, I thought I didn't like that Clan name but when he says it, it sounds so right.

Nosi: let go now, thank you

he lets go and I walk away, I could feel his eyes on me but I kept on walking till I got inside the house, that's when his car drove off.

I place my beg on the counter and I took my phone, I charged it and I went to take a shower, I wore my pajamas once I was done.

I then spelt.



NOVELSGURU.COM

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 100

NKOSINATHI.

I was woken up by Khwezi getting off the bed, I rub my eyes and it's morning, I still feel sleepy, I shut my eyes trying to recover my sleep.

Khwezi climbs back into bed, I open my eyes and look at her, she has her back facing me, what's wrong with her?

Nkosie: Khwezi?

Khwezi: Nkosinathi

NOVELSGURU.COM

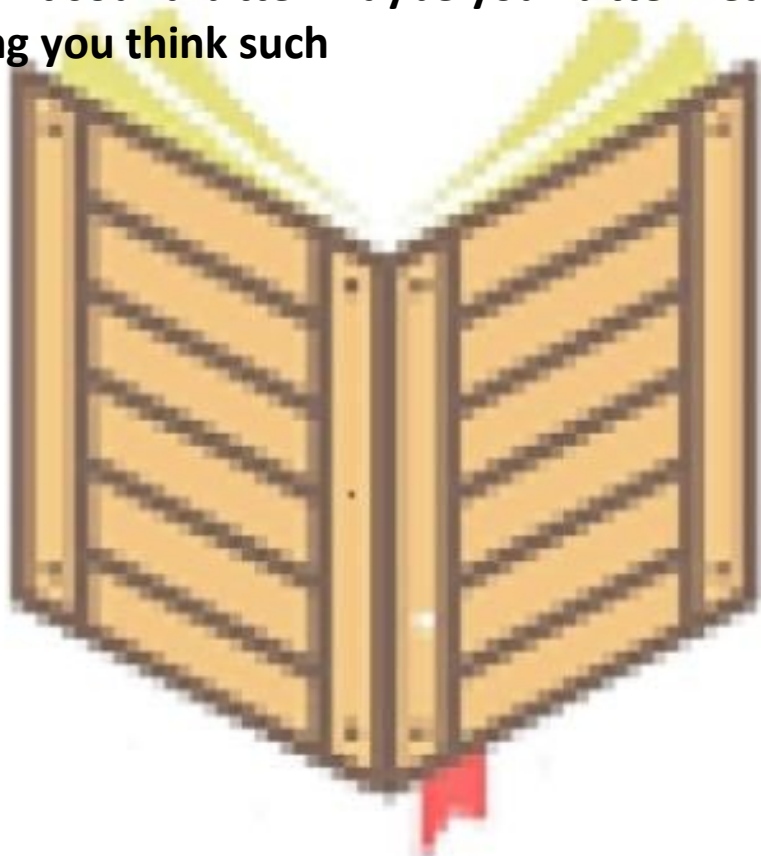
she says, I knew something was wrong, I love closer to her and I place my hand on her shoulder and tried to look at her face.

Nkosie: what's bothering you my love?

Khwezi: nothing is bothering me

Nkosie: why do you sound bitter then?

Khwezi: I don't sound bitter maybe your bitter heart is the one that's making you think such



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: the hell...

I say in a lower tone, she got off the bed and walks to the bathroom, I got off the bed and I went to the bathroom.

Nkosie: Khwezi we were talking, why did you walk out on me?

Khwezi: like you said, we were talking and we stopped that why I left

she turn on the tap and she looks at herself in the mirror, she goes to the who were and she opened the tap, the sink tap is still open and the water is pouring out.

I watch her as she walks around in the bathroom looking for something, I went and turned the sink tap off and the shower tap.

Nkosie: baby what's going on?

Khwezi: get out of my hair Nkosie!!

she shouts and hold her head in frustration, I walk to her and I held her hands, she yanked them away and folds her arms.

Nkosie: yabo, I don't get what you think I'm suppose to do? I'm trying here and you not making things any better

she looks at me and tears build up in her eyes, they stream down her cheeks and I pulls her to my chest, i hugged her, she cried even louder.

Nkosie: what is it sthandwa Sami? why you crying?

Khwezi: I can't sleep Nkosie...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: what do you mean you can't sleep?

Khwezi: it's you Nkosie...

Nkosie: it's me? what...haibo

she pulls out from the hug and wipes her tears.

Khwezi: a second doesn't go by with me not thinking about you dying and leaving me...

I close my eyes and I release a very deep sigh.

Khwezi: Nkosie we have kids on the way and I need you to be by my side when they arrive, i want you to be there when they start talking, I want you to change diapers with me, I want to have sleepless nights with you and the babies, I want you to...

NOVELSGURU.COM

she chokes in tears.

Khwezi: I want you Nkosie, every second, every moment I just...*sniffs* I can't do all this without you Nkosie

Nkosie: sthandwa samii I understand how you feel and...

she cuts me short.

Khwezi: no you don't understand anything

she says between her teeth pointing at me.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: you don't Nkosie, if you did understand my feeling you would call the doctor and tell him you want to do the transplant

Nkosie: you can't force me to do something I don't want

Khwezi: so you don't want to be with me forever?

Nkosie: there's no forever and you know that

she scoffs.

Khwezi: wow you really unbelievable

she wipes her tears and she walks out, I set down on the toilet seat and I sigh.

I don't want to do the surgery why can't she accept that and just move on, I don't want to go around living my life with someone else's heart.

I loved her with my heart, I don't want to lose that heart and replace with somebody else's, I don't even know if I'm making any sense.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I got up and went back to the main room, she walks in and she doesn't even look at me, she goes to the bathroom and I hear the shower water.

she comes out of the bathroom after a while, she got dressed.

Nkosie: Khwezi...

she raises her hand to stop me from talking, I look at her and she shook her head, I got up and went to take a shower.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I got done and I went back to the main room, I found Khwezi all dressed up and she was looking good, I smile.

Khwezi: I'm going to out with your mother

she took her bag and she pack it up with the things shed gonna need.

Nkosie: let me get dressed I will drive you

Khwezi: no need, the uber is already outside

Nkosie: I don't trust the uber, I will take you myself

Khwezi: I'm going Nkosinathi, I don't care if you don't like it

indeed she did it care, she took it beg and she walks out, did I really piss her off.

.
.

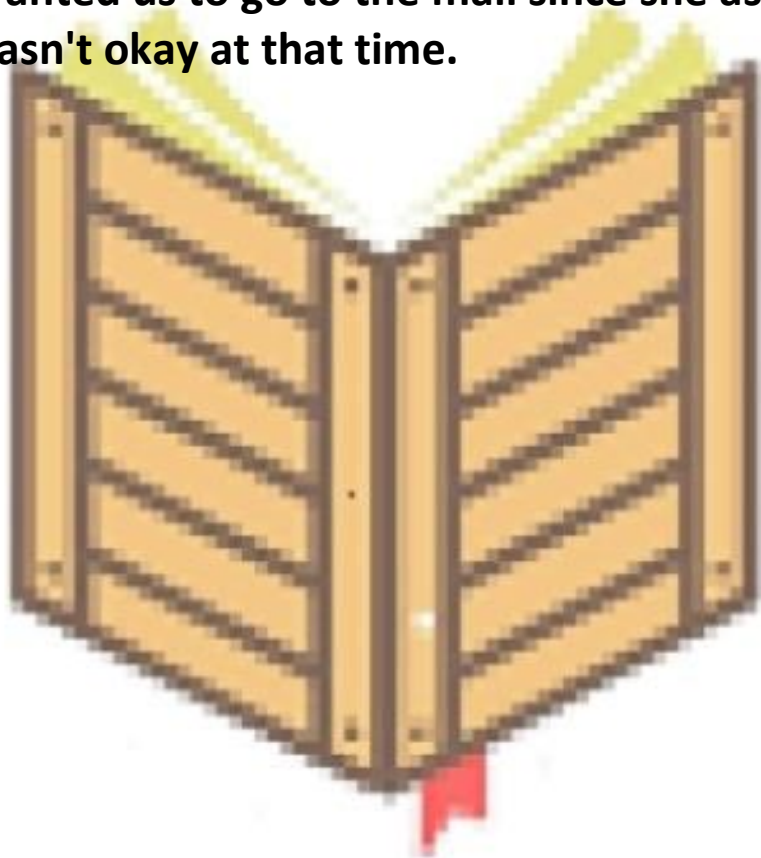
. KHWEZILOKUSA.

when I'm talking about somebody whose selfish, I'm talking

about Nkosie, he is not even considering what I said to him.

I can't raise three babies alone, he can't do me like that, he needs to stay by my side and help me raise the kids.

the uber dropped me off outside Nkosie's parents house, Mrs Mthembu wanted us to go to the mall since she asked the other day well I wasn't okay at that time.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I walk in the house and I'm welcomed by her walking down the stairs.

Mrs M: Makoti, how are you baby?

Khwezi: I'm good and you ma?

Mrs M: I'm fine, oh my God where you crying? please don't tell me he hurt you, what did he do? that boy of mine is gonna know me today...

I laugh a little.

Khwezi: he didn't do anything but he said something

Mrs M: let's talk about it while driving to the mall, let me go fetch my beg

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: okay ma

she went upstairs and came back with her beg, her husband was also there.

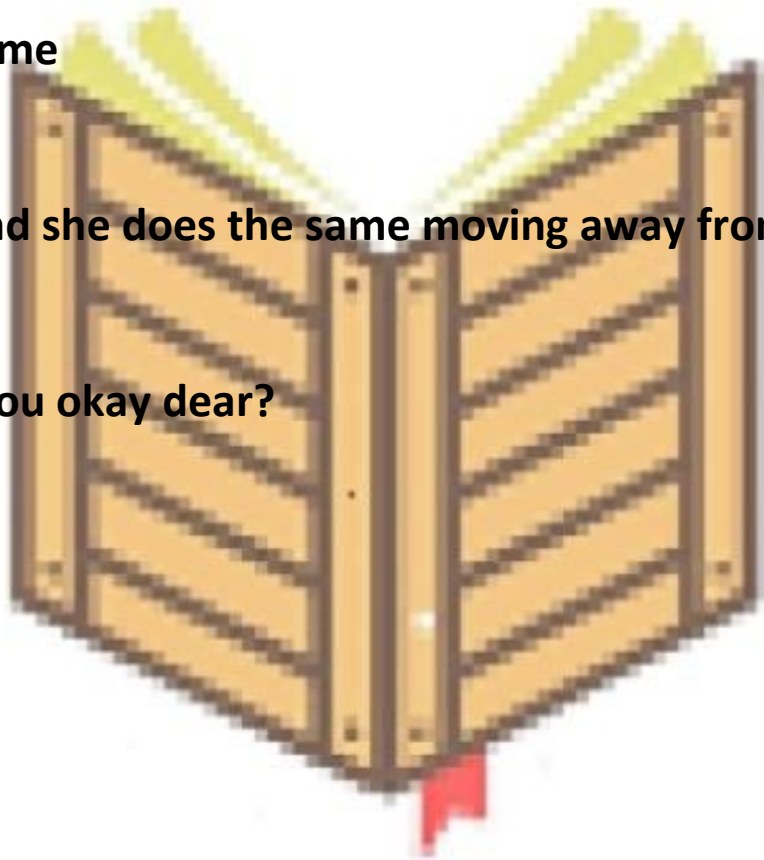
Mrs M: I will see you when I get back baby

she kissed him and I looked down, these two really love each other.

Mr M: miss me

he smiles and she does the same moving away from him.

Mr M: are you okay dear?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I'm fine

I smiled, Mrs M held my hand and I was surprised, we walked out and the driver was outside waiting for us.

we got inside the car and she looks at me, I guess she wanted me to start talking.

Khwezi: so we were talking about the thing that he might die in a couple of months, I was telling him to do the transplant since I need him to take care for the babies with me *sighs* ma you know I can't do this alone

Mrs M: yes I know dear, what did he say?

Khwezi: he said he understood my feelings which I highly doubt, he said I can't force him to do something he doesn't want, he also said there's no forever

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs M: that's deep but I understand both your sides but still he is wrong, y'all need to sit down and talk about it, Nkosie might be hard headed, he might have his demons but my baby is soft when it comes to you, he has a soft spot for you and I know wherever he is...he is thinking about what you said

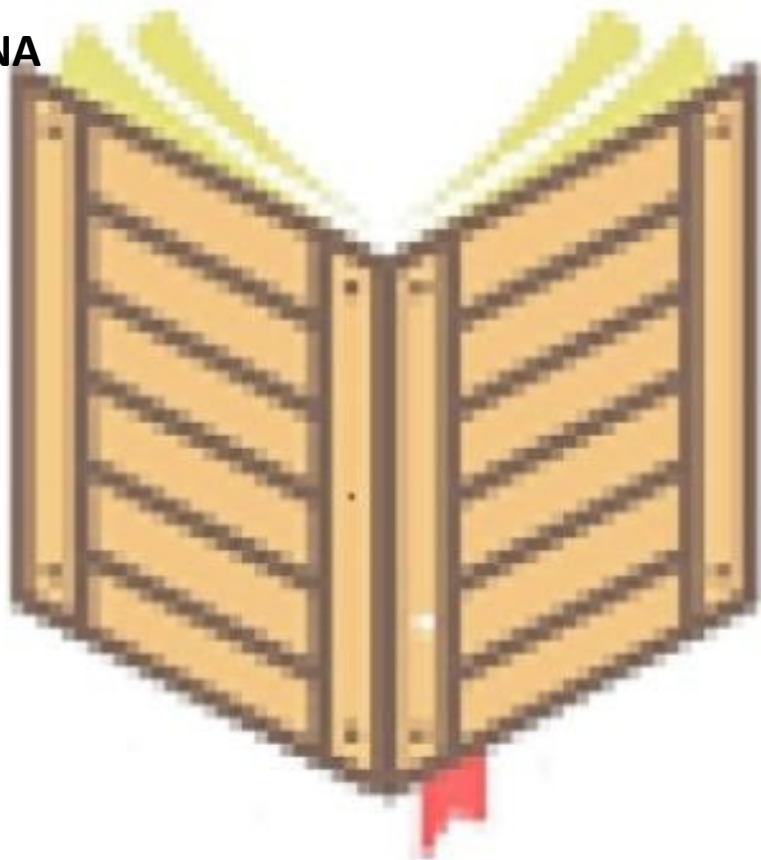
Khwezi: I hope he is

I sigh.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 101



NOVELSGURU.COM

NKOSINATHI.

I don't know what Khwezi wants me to do, she doesn't know how I really want to be part of our children's life but it might happen that the surgery doesn't go as planned.

complications might happen and I don't want to keep her hopes high then disappoint her at the end.

I just want the both of us to live our happy lives without thinking about my death can she do that for me? no she can't.

I park my car outside my parents house, I walk inside I was hoping to see Khwezi but she's not here.

I went up to my father's office, I knock and I walk inside the office, he was seated wearing his glasses while reading some paper.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: Son what did I do to get a visit from you or should I say what did you do?

he smirks, I laugh and set down.

Nkosie: she told you? dang didn't know news travel this fast

Dad: you know how your mother is, she couldn't keep her mouth shut and she was angry

Nkosie: tell me about it, how are you guys doing?

Dad: besides the shit that's happening in my company, we good

Nkosie: about that...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: yes about that, why haven't you got rid of that boy and when are you going to bring back your brother?

Nkosie: I will get rid of Sakhile and I'm not gonna communicate with Ntando

Dad: you know he didn't mean to shoot her

Nkosie: if you taking his side I would be glad to leave cause I ain't gonna sit and listen to your shit

I say frustrated, he can't be taking his side.

Dad: firstly don't talk to me like that I ain't your friend

he points his finger at me.

Nkosie: you know I did not come here to argue with you but I needed your advice

Dad: I'm listening

Nkosie: since you know the whole story, what should I do? I

don't want to lose her

Dad: that's not my decision to make but yours

Nkosie: you not helping

he laughs a little.

Dad: that girl loves you and she ain't gonna leave you, that I know



NOVELSGURU.COM

I smile.

Dad: don't be too happy but try understanding each other then maybe you will come up with a solution

Nkosie: that's the thing, she doesn't listen, she's stubborn

Dad: not as your mother

we both laugh.

Dad: she will come around though

Nkosie: yeah, I also want to talk to you about paying damages and lobola for Khwezi, I want to make her mine

Dad: i will talk to your uncle's

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I don't want them involved, just you and my brothers that will be fine

Dad: they are your family Nkosinathi

Nkosie: I don't like greedy people

Dad: so where is the ring?

Nkosie: that shall be sorted soon

Dad: I'm proud of you son



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: thank you, I have to bounce

Dad: sho

I stood up and he did a fist bump, I walk to the door.

Dad: ohh Nkosie, fix that shit in the office or imma fix it myself

I nod and walk out, I know what he meant by that.

I got inside my car and drove to the family company, I park my car and make my way inside the building.

the place is messed up and all the workers are busy having chit chats, they froze when they saw me.

Nkosie: what is this nonsense? do I pay y'all to relax your flat ugly asses all day

NOVELSGURU.COM

they remain silent.

Nkosie: I ain't talking alone somebody give me an answer or y'all fired

"sir Mr Ndlovu said..."

Nkosie: whose the boss?

"you are sir"

Nkosie: I'm gonna walk into that office when I come out I need y'all out of this building cause y'all don't work here anymore



NOVELSGURU.COM

they all gasped and started talking all together, I just looked at them.

Nkosie: y'all won't be getting any salary either, I hope I made myself clear

I walk to Sakhile's office and left them workers talking and some packing.

he was seated with his feet on the table.

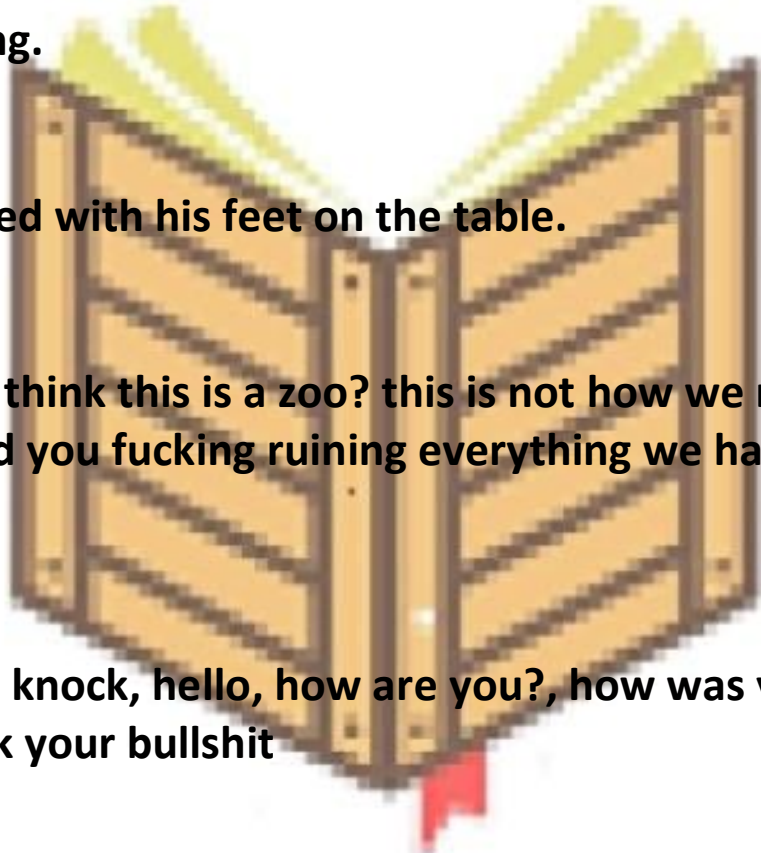
Nkosie: you think this is a zoo? this is not how we run the business and you fucking ruining everything we have worked hard for

Sakhile: you knock, hello, how are you?, how was your day? then you ask your bullshit

Nkosie: you are testing my patient Sakhile

Sakhile: ncoah sorry, ohh before I forget do your remember that little sex tape of yours and your girl

Nkosie: ohh you want to play that game now huh?



NOVELSGURO.COM

Sakhile: I can go even deeper and make those girls you kidnapped go live and blabber all about your dirty business

I remain silent not because I don't have anything to say just because my blood is boiling right now, the clothes I'm wearing are making me feel really hot, I'm gonna kill this motherfucker and the day I lay my hands on him, I'm gonna mop all of Jozi with his blood.

Sakhile: cat caught your tongue, that's the thing about you, you talk to much

I look at him.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you know what, let's play your game just play your cards right or else one wrong move you down

he smirks.

I walk out of the room and the building is empty, I know they wouldn't want to see the other side of me, I looked around.

I took out my phone and posted on the business page about Job applications that are open, I close my phone and I went out, I bumped into Amahle.

Amahle: hey handsome

she stood in front of me and I look at her with a straight face.

Amahle: why you being so serious? what did I do wrong?

NOVELSGURU.COM

I push her to the side and I walk out, I don't care if she fell down to the floor.

I drove back home and I set there bored waiting for Khwezi to come back, I saw a car driving in and it was mother's driver.

I hope mom is not inside the car, I walk out and stood by the door, luckily Khwezi got out of the car, she had three shopping begs.

she thanks the driver and she walks to me, she looks at me and sighs.

Nkosie: can we talk

Khwezi: I'm tired and I need to sleep Nkosinathi, we will talk later



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: sho

i move from the door and she walks in, she walks upstairs with the shopping begs, I just went back to the living room and set down.

Khwezi came downstairs.

Khwezi: I don't want to sleep while we angry so let's resolve this cause I don't want you strangling me in my dream

she set down and I chuckled.

**.
. .
. .**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 102

NOVELSGURU.COM

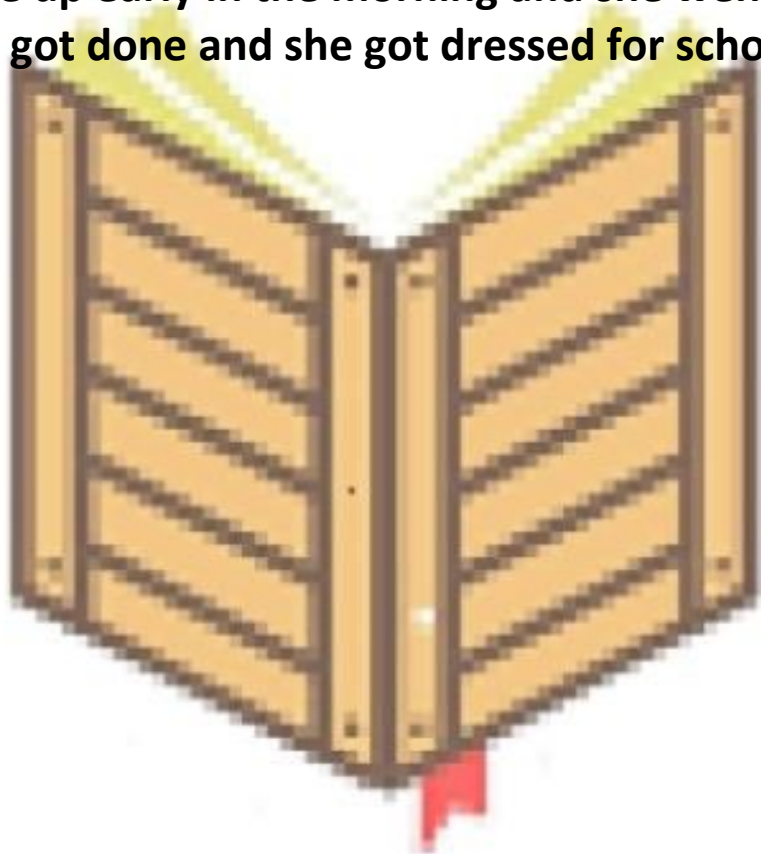
NARRATIVE.

It's been two days and Nkosie hasn't said a word to Khwezi same goes for Khwezi, they would greet each other and that's

the end of it.

eversince the talk about Nkosie not doing the transplant and the argument they had, things just changed for the both of them.

Khwezi woke up early in the morning and she went to take a shower, she got done and she got dressed for school.



NOVELSGURU.COM

she wore a pair of baggy jeans, a oversized white t-shirt with green printings, she wore some white Nike sneakers, she let go of her afro hair, she wore a free Nike cap, she wore bracelets and a watch, she went downstairs with her bag.

Nkosie was at the kitchen having a cup of coffee while seated reading a document, Khwezi passed him and went to the fridge.

she took out plain yoghurt and she took out some Muesli from the cardboard, she poured it on the bowl and added a few berries, she adds the plain yoghurt and mixed it.

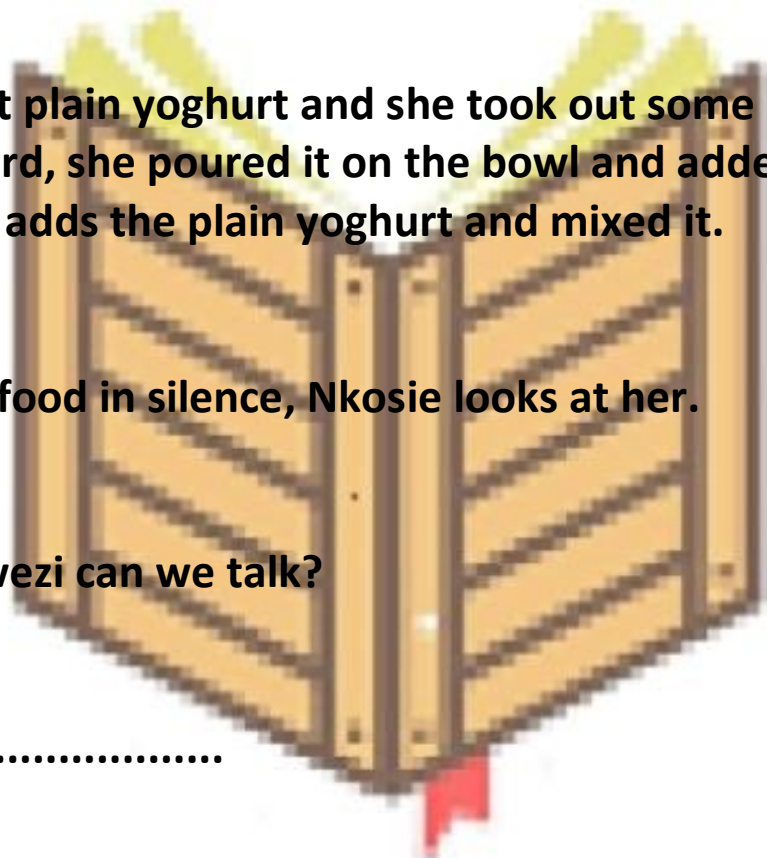
she ate her food in silence, Nkosie looks at her.

Nkosie: Khwezi can we talk?

Khwezi:

she doesn't even look at him, she's all focused on her food.

Nkosie: what do you want me to do? we can't just keep ignoring each other like this, we are grown ups and we can do better then this



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi:

she still remains quite.

Nkosie: I'm sorry for taking to you like that, I didn't mean to lash out on you the way I did, I was just frustrated

She looks at Nkosie and she took her last spoon, she rinses her bowl and takes her bag, she walks out without saying a word.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie sighed.

Khwezi went out and Leroy was waiting outside.

Leroy: good morning ma'am

Khwezi: morning

she got inside the car and Leroy drove her to school, she was silent along the way busy brushing her bump.

Leroy parks outside the school.

Leroy: I will pick you up once you done ma'am, have a good day

Khwezi: same to you

NOVELSGURU.COM

she got out of the car and Zizi was outside waiting for her by the gate, Khwezi walks to Zizi who smiles and gives her a hug.

Zizi: I swear pregnancy looks good on you

Khwezi: *smiles* really?

Zizi: yes baby you glowing

Khwezi giggles, they were chatting when Ovelile passed with her sister Amanda who gave Khwezi a dirty look.

Khwezi: and then? what is up with them?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: I don't know but what I know is that I'm ready for war, they can bring it

Khwezi laughs, they walk to class and they bump into Amanda who was leaving.

Amanda: Mrs Mthembu *chuckles* I mean Miss Ngcobo, I mean he hasn't put a ring on it yet

Zizi: and where do you enter? learn to mind your own business

Amanda gives Zizi a dirty look and she looks at Khwezi.

Amanda: I see you really enjoying your time with Nkosie but it won't last for long, you just warming up my seat

she giggles.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi wanted to say something but went against it, she just stared at Amanda blankly.

Zizi: stop day dreaming bitch and wake up, this ain't no tv show

this is reality and reality says that Nkosie broke up with you because you can't keep your leg closed and that you are a money sucking machine....

Khwezi pinches Zizi wanting her to stop.

Zizi: no friend you might not say anything but I won't let a low life bitch talk to you like that, she should know her place and your place sweetheart is not with my brother so fill that inside your stupid head and stop being a cockroach

Amanda: you talking to me like that? bitch you don't know me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: how about you show me who you are, come on, friend hold my beg I think this bitch wants to have some of

she gave Khwezi her beg, Amanda rolls her eyes.

Amanda: my time is coming just keep that in mind

she clicks her tongue and walks away.

Khwezi: you just gave her the attention she needed

Zizi: nah I ain't gonna let her talk to us like that

Khwezi: whatever let's go to class we already late busy attending to all that

she raises her hands in the air dramatically and they went to class, they set down and the lesson started.

-
-
-

Nkosie was in his office, he just got out of a meeting and he is fixing a lot of loose ends in the business.

Nkosie: just disappeared for a few weeks and this stupid boy ruined everything

he says frustrated looking at the files and the money flow chart, he got a call from the reception.

Nkosie: what is it?

Her: sir there is a lady here that wants to see you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: did she make an appointment?

Her: no sir but she says...

Nkosie: then I won't be attending to her

Her: she doesn't want to leave sir

he hung up and stood up wanting to see who has the guts to come here and demand to talk to him without an appointment.

"people now walk all over my head as if I'm nothing, I swear they starting to forget who I am"

he mumbles getting out of the elevator, there stood Amanda in a tight short dress, She smiled when she saw Nkosie.

Nkosie: how may I help you?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: Nkosie finnaly you came to see me, you receptionist here us very annoying and doesn't know her work

she rolls her eyes.

Nkosie: it's Mr Mthembu to you, once again I'm asking you how may I help you?

Amanda: Nkosie... *clears throat* I mean Mr Mthembu, can we talk?

Nkosie: am I rapping right now?

Amanda: You know what I mean



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I'm afraid I don't follow, I hate repeating myself but I will since I don't want to lose my temper and end up doing the unthinkable, how may I help you?

Amanda: let's just go to your office and talk

Nkosie: you wasting my time, state your business or walk out that door, which one is it going to be?

Amanda looks defeated.

Nkosie: do you have my calls and messages written down?

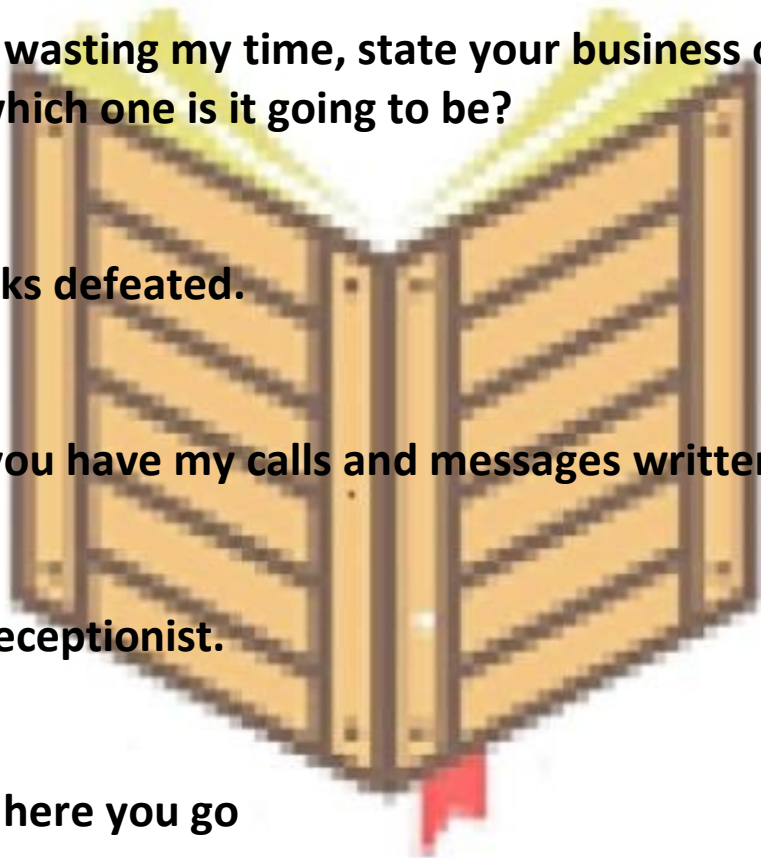
he ask the receptionist.

Her: yes sir, here you go

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: get the security to get this Lady out of my property before I drag her out myself

Amanda: Nkosie!!

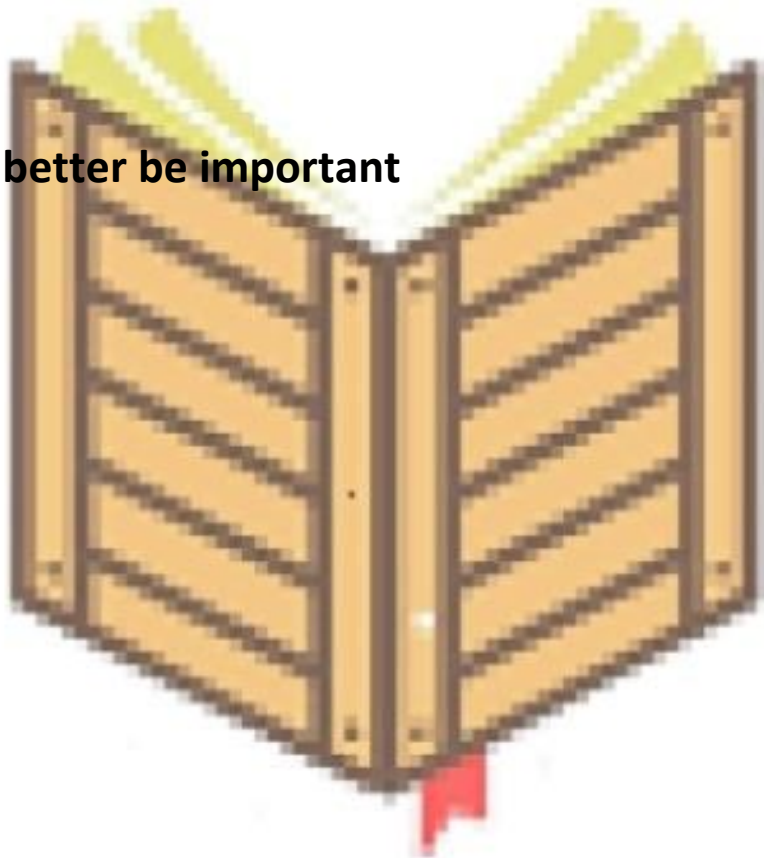


she begs but Nkosie had non of it, he walks back to the elevator going to his office. the security came and took Amanda.

Nkosie arrives at his office and he receives a call from Leroy.

Leroy: Boss?

Nkosie: this better be important



NOVELSGURU.COM

Leroy: Its is boss, I just got information that Tom got out prison and he went to the safe and stole some cash

Nkosie: he did what? where us he right now?

Leroy: not far away from me, I think he is planning on fleeing the country

Nkosie: keep your eyes on him

Leroy: I will boss

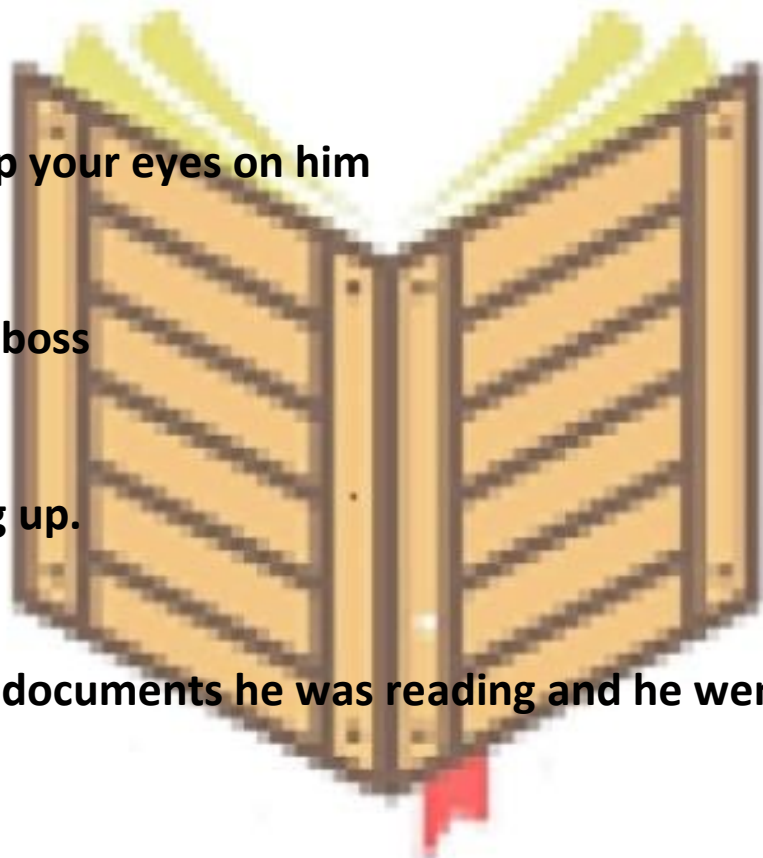
Nkosie hung up.

he took the documents he was reading and he went to Sakhiles office.

Sakhile: ohh my business partner

Nkosie: what's this nonsense?

he threw the documents at Sakhile, he took them and read them.



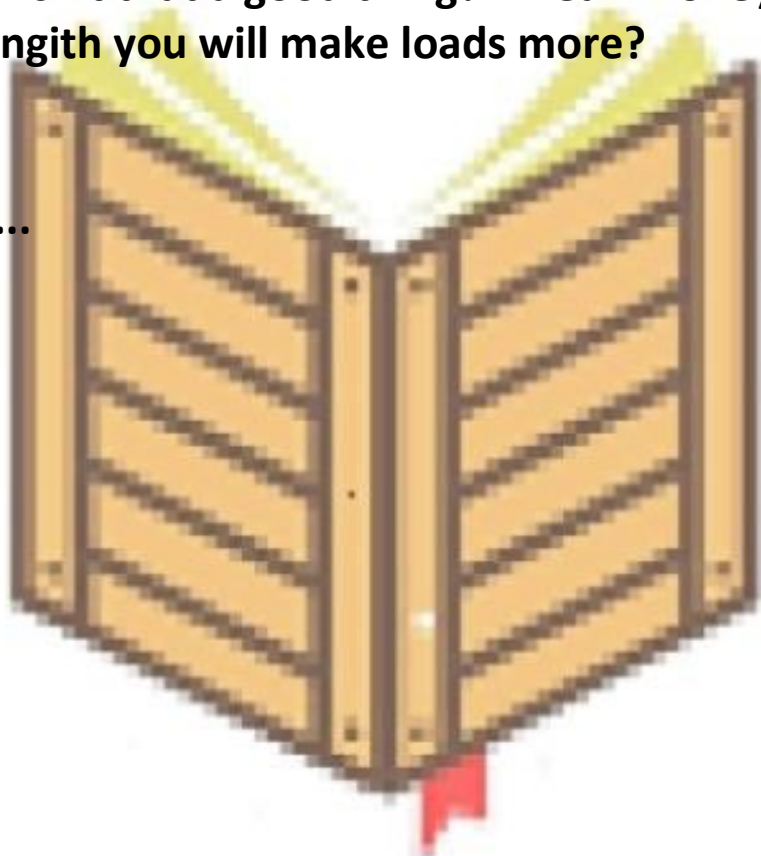
NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: what must I do with this?

Nkosie: you are wasting the companies money

Sakhile: well isn't that a good thing? I mean money is meant to be wasted angith you will make loads more?

Nkosie: you...



NOVELSGURU.COM

he clenched his jaw and his hands form a fist, he was getting angry.

Sakhile: relax stop stressing

Nkosie calmly walks out of Sakhiles office, he took out his phone and called Nkanyezi.

Nkanyezi: bafo you okay?

Nkosie: I'm not, I want you to freeze to freeze all the Ndlovu family memebers bank cards

Nkanyezi: okay cool I will do that

Nkosie: sure, notify your brothers that we need to meet at the car race at 12:00

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: what's going on now?

Nkosie: just do what I told you to do and stop asking me questions

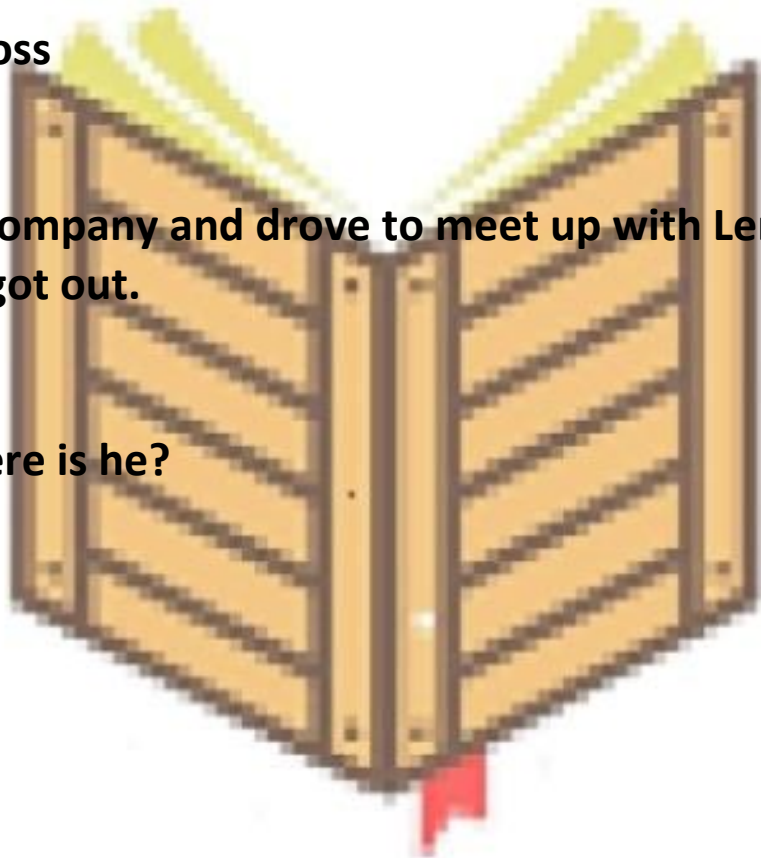
he hung up, he wore his blazer and he took his car keys, he went down.

Nkosie: cancel all my meeting and calls

Her: okay boss

he left the company and drove to meet up with Leroy, he parks his car and got out.

Nkosie: where is he?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Leroy: not far away but I got the guys to keep an eyes on me

Nkosie: tell them to not loose him and call the others to surround the area he is in but make sure that he does not suspect anything

Leroy: fede fede

they both got into their cars and drive off to where Tom was at, indeed Nkosie's nan surrounded the area where Tom was at.

he was walking in the streets wearing a hoodie cover his face with any with him, Nkosie looks at him from afar and then his man got out and pointed their guns at Tom who was shocked.

Nkosie parks his car right outside and he got out, the fear was written on Tom's eyes.

Nkosie: my friend, you now don't tell that you out of prison

Tom: King *laughs nervously* I was going to tell you but I was kinda rushing somewhere

Nkosie: I see, how about we take a small drive and talk?

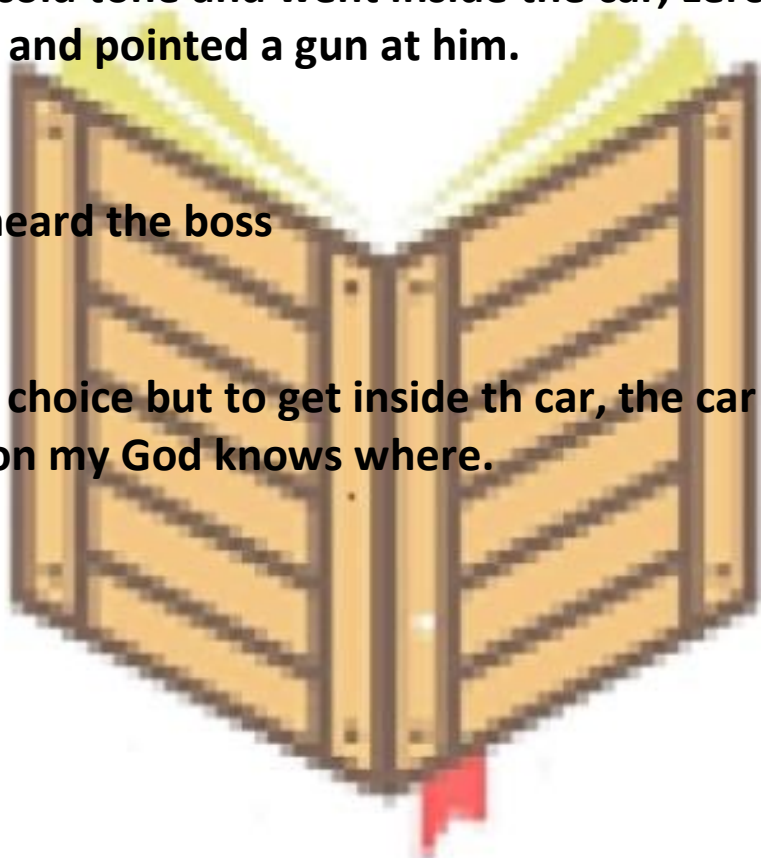
Tom: talk? what's there to talk about?

Nkosie: get in the fucking car!

he said in a cold tone and went inside the car, Leroy came from behind Tom and pointed a gun at him.

Leroy: you heard the boss

Tom had no choice but to get inside th car, the car starts and they drove on my God knows where.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: so when did you get out?

Tom: a few days ago

Nkosie: I see *smiles* you my friend and you know that

Tom: yes I do...

Nkosie: and you do know what I do to people who betray me?

his smile fades and his voice changes, Tom swallows.

Tom: yes I know, you don't spare them at all

Nkosie: so why should I spare you?

NOVELSGURU.COM

he mumbles and Tom looks at him with his forehead swearing.

Tom: don't do this mahn

Nkosie: don't do what?

Tom: I'm sorry I didn't mean to steal from you, I just needed the money and...

Nkosie: and you thought it was best to steal my money?

Tom: I wasn't thinking please spare me boss



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: spare you? aren't you the one that said I don't spare those who mess with me, why should I spare you? what's so special about you?

Tom: I'm the only guy you got that can does your cocaine

Nkosie: while you were behind bars who was doing all that? you thought you the backbone of my business, don't think such thoughts

he took out his gun and Tom knew he was going to meet his ancestors soon.

Tom: don't do this mahn and...

a gun goes off and Tom bleeds on the skull, the car is filled with blood and Nkosie looks at the body.

Nkosie: get rid of this

NOVELSGURU.COM

the car stops and he got out, Leroy was behind following them, Nkosie got inside Leroy's car.

Nkosie: take me to the car race

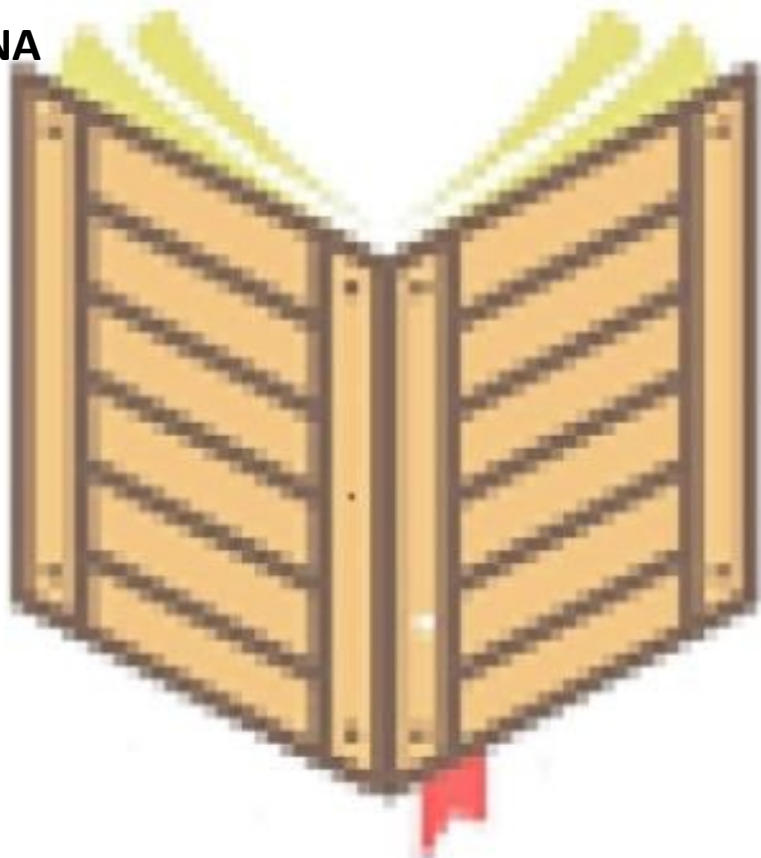
Leroy: alright boss

Nkosie set back and got busy on his phone.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 103



NOVELSGURU.COM

NARRATIVE.

Nkosie arrives at the car race and he parks his car where the other cars are parked, it's quite noisy as the people are racing and some cheering.

Nkosie walks out and he has this straight face with his hands on his pocket, he walks to his brothers and they all cheer.

Sandile: King!

Nkosie: sure, we need to talk business

they look at each other and Nkosie pours himself some whiskey.

Nkanyezi: sound serious

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: it seems like we have been losing money rather than making money and that's not a good thing at all

Sya: then let's do heists

Sandile: aren't we suppose to lay low after the Ntando incident, you know we almost got caught

Nkanyezi: but we didn't, the police are our tail though

Nkosie: but we always do a clean job then we out, we gotta do big brothers bigger then ever, we gotta make our presence known

Sandile: I feel you



NOVELSGURU.COM

he smiles.

Nkosie: so what y'all have in mind? I was thinking a car heist, I got clients knocking left right and center

Sya: how about we rob a bank?

Nkanyezi: that's boring every gang robs banks, cars, sell drugs, weapons

Nkosie: but we can do it ten times better than them, we can even sell those diamonds I stole

Sya: so you admiring now that you stole Nqaba's diamonds and killed those innocent men

Nkosie: that's all in the past, we now focused on the futher

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: so how is it going to go? we gonna do all these jobs once?

Nkosie: that will risk us getting caught, how about we make a

routine, we sell weapons for a WEEK, the following week cocaine, the next diamonds and the next we go big and steal cars

Sya: that sounds crazy but I'm down

Sandile: so am i

Nkosie: what about you Nkanyezi? having doubts? are you in?

Nkanyezi: of course I'm in, I wouldn't miss it for the world

Nkosie: let's gather up clients, suppliers, let's get to work and start making money



NOVELSGURU.COM

they cheered and had their drinks while watching the race.

Nkosie checked the time cause he wanted to pick up Khwezi today since he really wants to talk to her, he told Leroy to take him home.

he got there and he took his car, he drove to the university to fetch Khwezi.

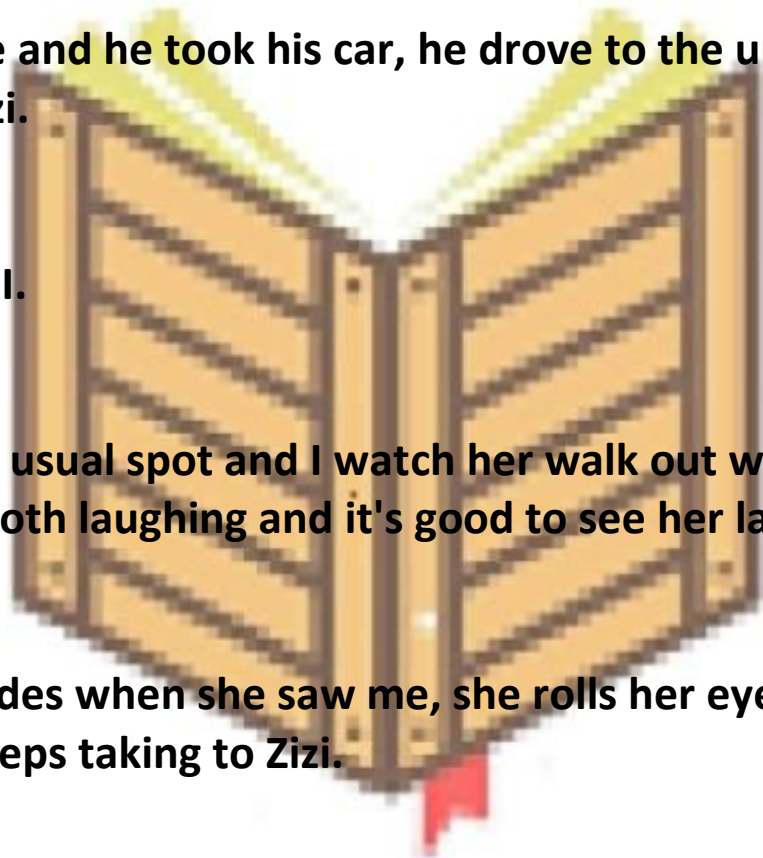
NKOSINATHI.

I park at my usual spot and I watch her walk out with my sister, they were both laughing and it's good to see her laugh.

her smile fades when she saw me, she rolls her eyes and walks down the steps taking to Zizi.

I got out of the car and I got those stares bit I'm used to it, I went to them.

Nkosie: pumkin



NOVELSOURU.COM

Zizi: Big bro *smiles* I will see you later friend

she was about to leave when Khwezi grabbed her arm stopping her.

Khwezi: no need to leave, what are you doing here?

Nkosie: I came to pick you up

Khwezi: did I ask you to pick me up?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you don't have to ask

Khwezi:

Nkosie: I just want us to talk and fix things, I miss you and I miss us

Khwezi: we talked the other day and I heard enough, I don't want to talk to you no more what's the point? you not willing to try angisho wena?

Nkosie: that's not what I said

Khwezi: so what you thought those words were implying? so you saying I'm a fool

Nkosie: you putting words inside my mouth

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: ohhh I am?

Nkosie: yes you are, let's go home and resolve this

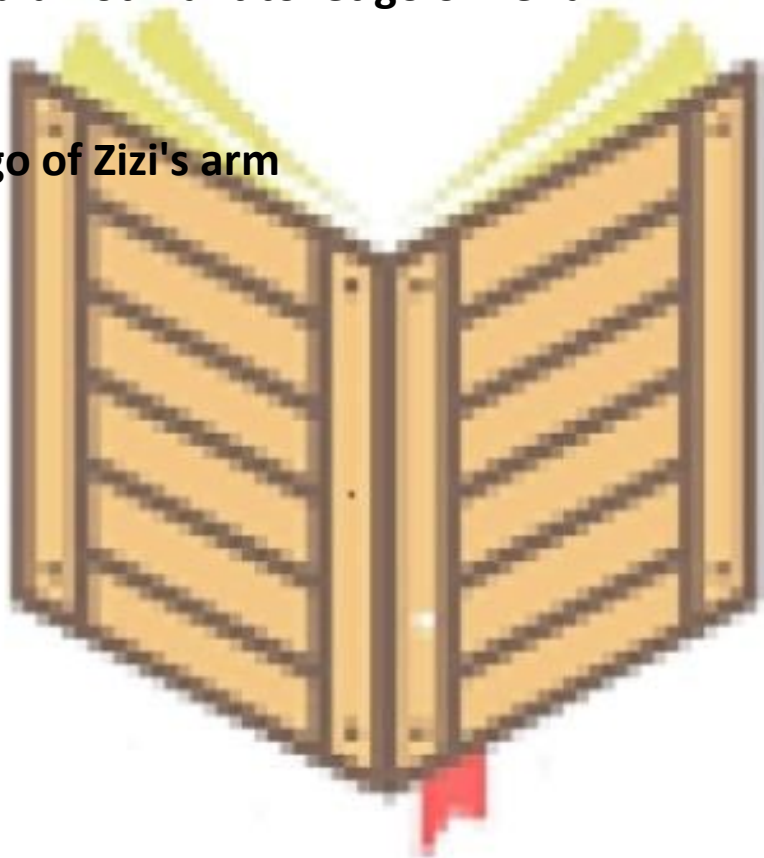
Khwezi: I don't want to go home with you Nkosie

I'm frustrated right now.

Zizi: I think I should leave honestly

but Khwezi did not want to let go of her arm.

Nkosie: let go of Zizi's arm



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi looks at Zizi who nods and she let's go of her, she leaves.

Nkosie: let's just talk about this

Khwezi just walks to the car and she got inside, I smiled and went to the car, I got inside.

i look at her and she is looking the other direction, i start the car and I drove straight home, she was the first to exit the car when we got home.

I sighed and went inside the house.

Nkosie: so for how long are we gonna do this? you ignoring me and running away from me, when will it stop cause I'm tired of it

she stops as she was about to climb the stairs.

Nkosie: you think I'm enjoying this, I ain't and trust me I meant all those word I said that other day, there is no forever Khwezi and you might think there is but to me there isn't, I really did not choose to have this diseases and trust me if it was for me I would I undo all this, I never asked for it but when I met you

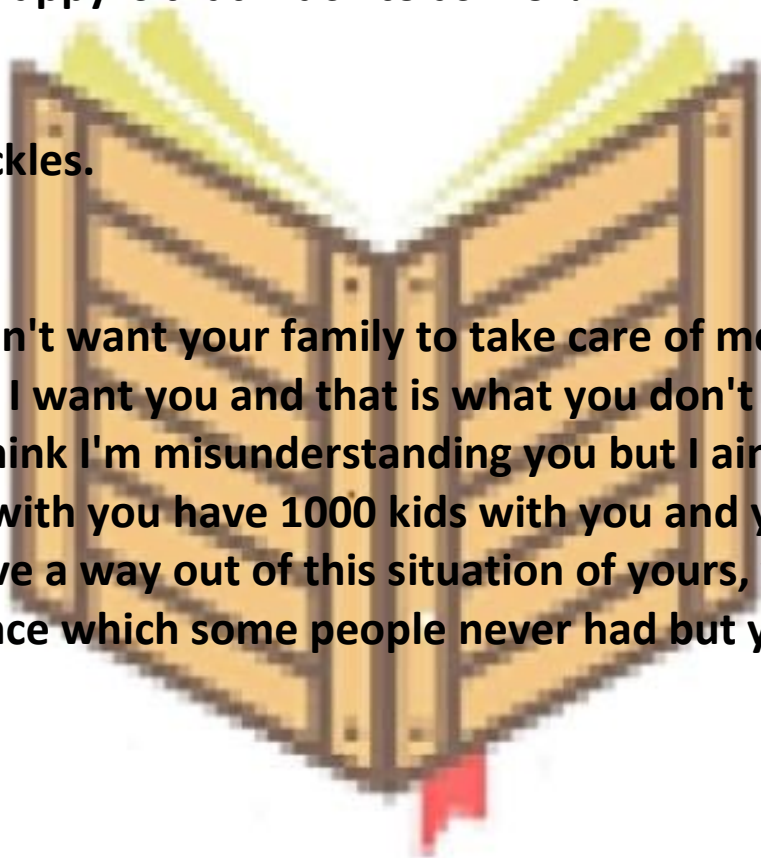
baby...

I sigh.

Nkosie: I saw my final destination, all I want is to live my last days happy, my family will be there for you and the kids...I just want to be happy is that much to ask for?

Khwezi chuckles.

Khwezi: I don't want your family to take care of me and the kids, Nkosie I want you and that is what you don't understand, I know you think I'm misunderstanding you but I ain't, I want to live my life with you have 1000 kids with you and you just lucky that you have a way out of this situation of yours, you have a second chance which some people never had but you just won't take it



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: just accept my decision as it is

Khwezi:

she doesn't say anything, I just sigh, she doesn't understand me, she just doesn't, I knew it. this is why I never wanted to commit into all this but right now I'm so attached to her I don't even think I will be able to handle it if I loose her.

Nkosie: we back to that again? I hope you enjoying this

she walks up the stairs and doesn't say anything, I felt my blood boil and I walk out of the house and got inside my car.

I set there till it got dark, I was maintaining my anger , my head hurts and my hands are shaking, my whole body is hot.

maybe a shower will help, I got out of the car and I lock it. I made my ways inside the house and the living room is empty.

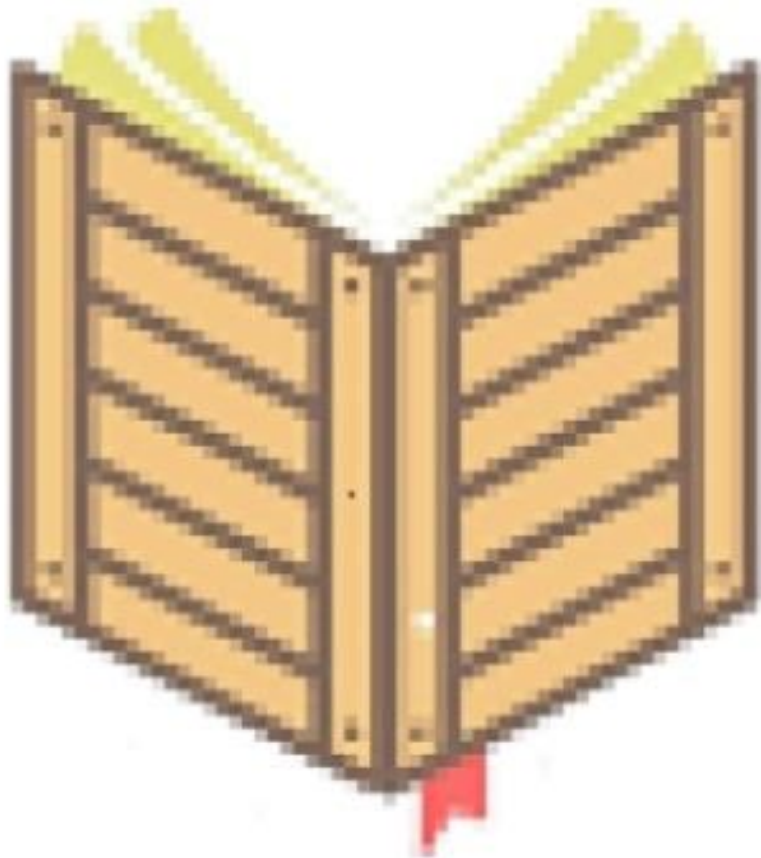
I went upstairs to my room and she was not there, what did I expect though? I went and took a shower.

I then got dressed when i was done, I set down down on my bed facing the ceiling, I ended up dozing off.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 104



NOVELSGURU.COM

SYATHOKOZA.

It's late at night and I'm out clubbing, I really need to clear my head before this whole mission starts.

Nosipho has been avoiding me and I don't have the time or energy to chase her around, I set by the VIP section and I had girls by my side.

we were having drinks while their hands move all over my body and kissing me, well I don't mind cause one of them are going home with me.

that's when I noticed Amanda in the crowd she kept on eying me and I don't know why she is doing that.

I kept on minding my own business with my girls, we drank all night and I was feeling tipsy, we went to dance and it was lit.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I was dancing with this girl who couldn't keep her hands off me which I liked that's when Amanda came and bumped into me on purpose.

Sya: the hell watch where you going

I shout in frustration and she looks at me, she bites her lower lip and does a sign, she goes to the bathroom.

Sya: I will be back

I whisper to the girl I'm dancing with and she nods, I make my way to the bathroom and found Amanda washing her hands.

Sya: that stunt you just pulled out there is not cool at all



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: if it wasn't cool you wouldn't be here

She turns and she looks at me, right now I'm standing by the sink and she places her hands on my chest.

Amanda: I heard rumours that say you know your sex game pretty well *smiles* but those are just rumours though...

she touches my manhood.

Sya: you don't want to start something you won't finish

Amanda: who said I won't finish it huh?

Sya: Amanda firstly my brother smashed you and I ain't about to do the...

Amanda: shhhhhh! are you afraid of this? come on I don't bite, plus it's gonna be a one night thing just take me out of my misery

she kisses my neck and I push her off me.



NOVELSGURO.COM

Amanda: seriously? you that afraid of coochie?

She's testing me this one, she a hoe she? well imma give her what she once plus who says no to free coochie.

I walk to her and she kept on stepping back, I smirk, i pin her against the wall and I breath on her neck.

Sya: what were you saying?

okay I'm drunk, I shouldn't be doing this.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: I forgot, why don't you remind me?

I took her lips onto mine and I lift her up, the kiss was intense and I went to place her on the sink, I stood in between her legs while we kissed.

my hands travel to her mini skirt and she's not wearing any panties, I smirk, I slide my hand on her wet coochie and she moans.

she pulls out from the kiss and she breaths on my neck while I fingered her, I entered a second finger and she grabs on tight.

Sya: you gonna ruin my shirt!

I say and she loosens the grip, my hand went to her shirt and I squeeze her left breast, her moans fill the toilet, I pull out my fingers.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: Sya...*breathing heavily*

Sya: only she can call me by name now, you want me to do this or not?

Amanda: yes daddy

Sya: you gonna be a good girl and make no sound right?

she nods biting her lower lip, I wasn't feeling all this in on my doing it for the sake of smashing, I unzip my pants and lower them. I took my shaft out and i wore a condom, i dont trust this bitch...I aim it on her vagina entrance.

she moans as I enter inside her, I starts fucking her so hard she even forgot she was suppose to make no sound.



NOVELSGURU.COM

she kept on moaning and I kept on fucking even harder, I wasn't feeling her nor her vagina. I was nearly close and I could see she was about to cum, I slow down the phase and she grabs tight on me.

she released and I follow after her, I pull out and took out the condom, I flushed it in the toilet, I fix myself and she set on the toilet sink catching her breath.

Sya: nothing happened

I put my hands inside my pocket and I was about to walk out, she called my name.

Amanda: Sya come on, all that wasn't for free

Sya: angihlangene

NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: I ain't got no money Sya

Sya: how is that my problem? entlek you fucking with me right now

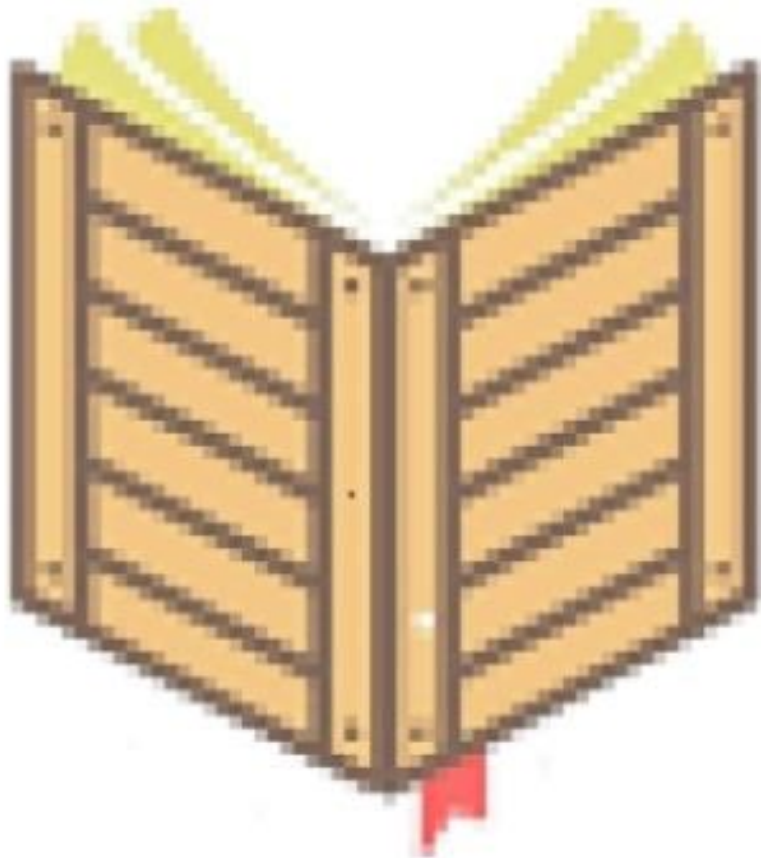
I click my tongue and walk out, I pretended as if nothing happened, I was feeling drunk already so I decided to go home.

I drove slowly as I was drunk and did not want to cause an accident, I arrive and went straight to my room.

I slept.

**.
.**

. NOSIPHO.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I woke up early in the morning, today I'm having breakfast with my parents before I go to work and start with my shift.

I made my bed and I checked my phone, no missed call from Mvelo but I noticed a missed call from Sya, I wonder what he wanted.

I put my phone on the charger and I went to take a shower, I got done and I dried my body, I went and lotioned my body.

today I'm going to wear green, I wore a pair of light green pants which were tight on my hips and ass but loose at the bottom.

I wore a white vest which was not revealing at all, I wore a blazer matching the pants cause this was a two piece outfit.

I wore a pair of green heels and I took my green side bag, I stuffed it with the things I will need and I took my phone out of the charger.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I went down and I took my car keys, I went out and locked my apartment, I drove to the restaurant.

I park my car outside and as I was getting out I got a call from Sya, I decided to ignore him cause well I don't want to talk to him, I'm not angry at him but I just don't feel like talking to him.

I walk inside the restaurant and I went to my parents who were already there, my mother stood up and gave me a hug.

Mom: look at you all gorgeous and glowing

Nosi: Mom...hey dad

I gave him a hug.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: hey sweetheart, we have missed you that because you no longer visit us you just forgot about us

we set down and Mom hits dad playfully.

Mom: come on Dad you know how caught up I get with work and I love my work, I also love you guys but I have to work in order to become what I want to become

Dad: I hear you my dear, I didn't know of this motivational side of you

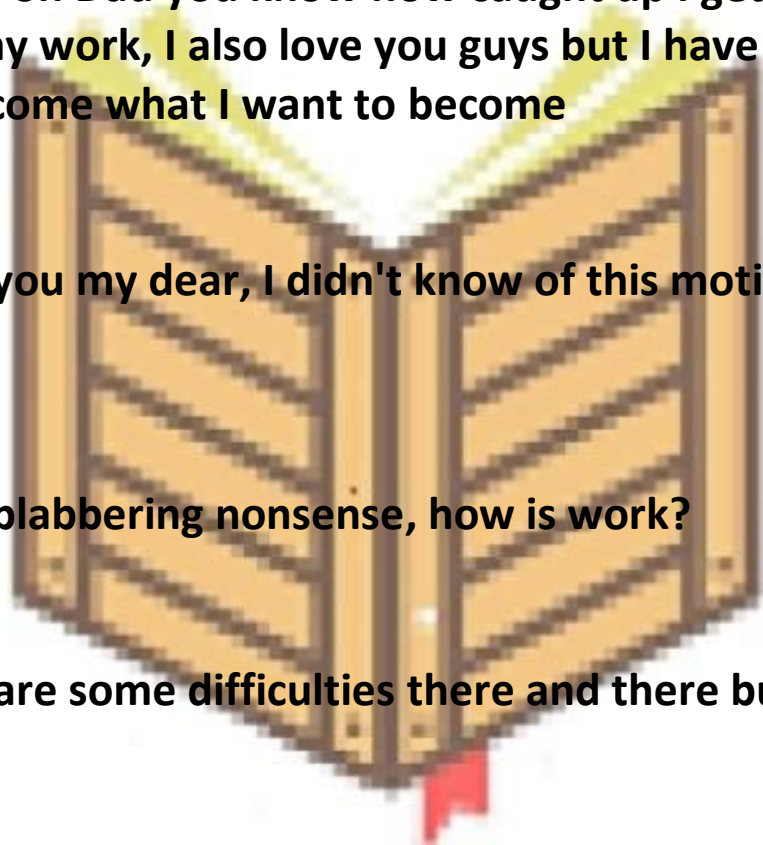
Mom: stop blabbering nonsense, how is work?

Nosi: there are some difficulties there and there but I'm fine

Dad: you should tell me when they give you problems I would mind knocking each and every one of them

Nosi: Dad!!

We ordered breakfasts and we set down catching up.



NOVELSOURU.COM

Mom: so how are things between you and your boyfriend?

Nosi: oh Mvelo? we are fine, everything is good mom

Dad: that boy should marry you, I can't have my daughter wasting her time with a person who won't marry her

Nosi: Dad stop thinking like that, plus me and Mvelo are not yet ready for marriage we are just working on making money and living happily



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: that's great my dear, I love that boy for you

Dad: he better be treating you well...

he adds, my dad is super protective when it comes to me. he would do anything for me and I mean anything.

you know what? he made Mvelo answer a million questions about what he had planned for us in the future and it was intense I tell you.

I check the time and I need to get going to work.

Nosi: look at the time, I would love to stay and talk with guys but you know we doing dinner tonight so I will see you later

Dad: okay princess, have a good day at work and don't let no man handle you anyway they like

Nosi: I won't dad, ohh I love you guys

I gave them both a hug and they kissed me on the cheek, I said

my final goodbyes and I left.

I drove to work and I was surprised to see Sya's car parked outside, what is he doing here now?

I step out of the car and I walk inside the building, I greet everyone and the receptionist shows me Sya who is seated with some flowers in hand and a gift bag.

he stood up and smiled when he saw me.

Nosi: thanks I will see you later



NOVELSGURU.COM

I said to the receptionist and went to Sya.

Nosi: what are you doing here?

I was whispering and looked around to see if Mvelo is not around.

Sya: I came to see you

Nosi: you came to see me? with this?

I flap my hands in the air pointing and the gifts he had.

Sya: well these are for you

Nosi: I don't want them

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: but I bought them for you

Nosi: I got a boyfriend and he can buy me flowers, I don't want your flowers



I notice the love bite on his neck, I close my eyes.

Nosi: it's non of my business

I say breathing and I looked at Sya smiling.

Sya: what's non of your business?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: nothing, please leave Sya I'm at work

Sya: I'm sad, you know I heard that women love flowers

Nosi: well I'm not a women because I don't love flowers

I fold my arms and he smirks.

Sya: I bought them out of kindness

Nosi: keep your kindness Sya

Sya: look I'm just trying to be a good friend here

Nosi: with a bouquet of roses and chocolate? that say something else mister

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: I don't follow, what does it say? explain it to me

he got closer to me and I'm looking into his eyes, I set back and I look down.

Nosi: Sya please leave

Sya: whatever you want but please accept my gifts

Nosi: fine but don't ever do this again

I took the roses and the gift beg.

Sya: I ain't promising



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: Sya...

Sya: hawu yini ngyadlala (what? I'm joking)

he laughs and I join him, he looks into my eyes again, I looked down.

Sya: let me not waste your time and let you do the work, enjoy the food in there and take care of those flowers and yourself

Nosi: thank you

I smile and he left, I watch him walk with his hands on his pocket, his walk itself drives me crazy.

not crazy in a I want you way but I like his walk.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I giggle and went to my office.

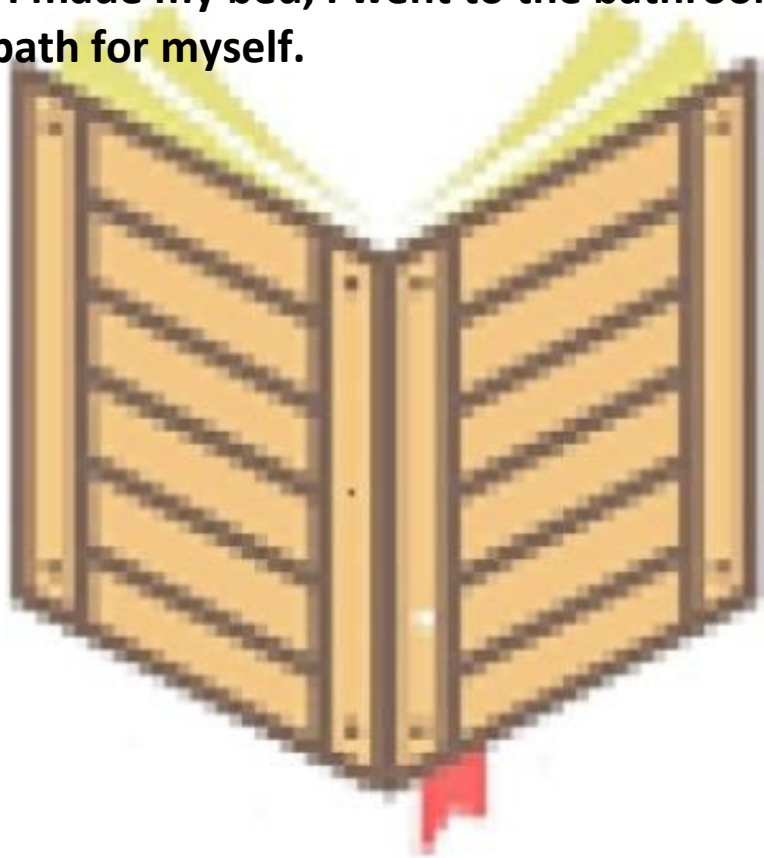
**.
.
.**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 105

KHWEZILOKUSA.

**I woke up and I checked the time, it's 09:00 and I'm still in bed.
I got up and I made my bed, I went to the bathroom and I
prepared a bath for myself.**



NOVELSGURU.COM

I have been using the guest room and so far I have no problem with that, I went and soaked myself inside the bath.

I set there for a while and I started bathing, I got up and I drained out the water from the bathtub.

I dried my body and I wrap a towel around my body, I went back to the main room.

I lotioned my body and I got dressed, I wore a velvet ling tight dress, I love how my bump showed in the dress and I look good.

I went downstairs and there was no sign of Nkosie, I went to the kitchen and I started to make myself something to eat.

I got done and I set down eating my food, the front door opens and the brothers walk in talking to each other.

Sandile: wifey!!

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: husby!!

he came to me and gave me a tight hug as if he forgot I was shot and that I'm still in pain.

Sandile: how are you doing and girl!! you are gaining

he said it in a savage voice, I didn't know he could be like this, I laughed.

Khwezi: I will take that as a compliment thanks

Nkanyezi: muntu ka Nkosie, we missed you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: and your cooking of course

Khwezi: I missed you guys too, y'all should visit me since I get bored in this house nowadays

I look at Nkosie who just had a straight face standing by the fridge, hands in his pocket, you would swear he was about to kill someone, well I don't care.

Sandile: how come you get bored while brother is here? brother what is this?

Nkosie: shit you shouldn't be concerning yourself about

he said that looking at me, they noticed the tension between the two of us.

Nkanyezi: maybe we can do this some other time

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: oh don't stop on my account, you guys go and get in with whatever you came here to do and I will make you a delicious meal

Sya: this is why we missed you

I smiled and they went upstairs, Nkosie didn't even say a word, not that I care.

I finished eating the food and I washed the things I was using, I started cooking for the guys and it was hectic, I got done after a few hours and I went to the living room.

I craved some ice cream so I decided to go dish up some for myself, I went and dish up on a bowl, I ate a little while at the kitchen.

I heard the door bell ring.



NOVELSGURU.COM

i went to see who it was and when I saw the person, the bowl slipped out of my hands and landed on the floor.

it was Sakhile, I started to panic and he smiles, I could see him since it was a glass door.

he took out his gun and he points it at me, I couldn't move and all I did was scream.

BANG!

a gun goes off and the next I hear loud footsteps coming downstairs, I'm just standing there and the glass door has a crack.

Sakhile is no longer there.

Nkosie: baby what's wrong?

NOVELSGURU.COM

I wanted to smile because he called me so nicely but I remembered I'm still very very angry with him.

Khwezi: Sakhile...he...he was here



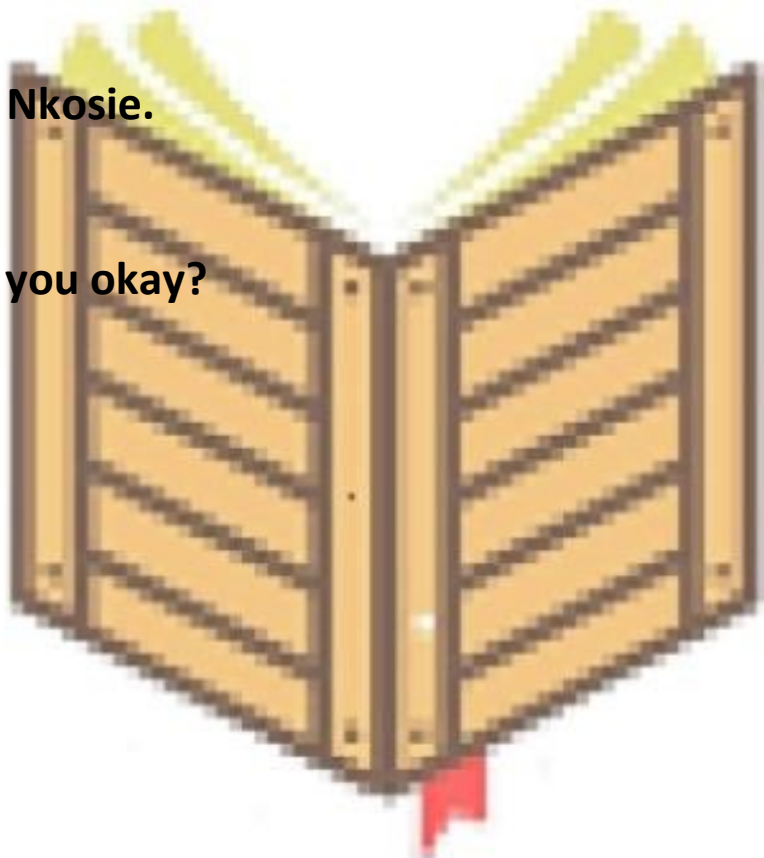
Nkosie: bastard....

Sya: I will go check for him, he is not far

Nkosie: don't bother

Sya looks at Nkosie.

Sandile: are you okay?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I nod, I look at Nkosie who is has this scary look on his face I have never seen before, he us standing so far away from me as if his keeping his distance so that he does not hurt me.

Sya: Nkosie?

Nkosie:

he doesn't say anything.

I look at them and they are not shocked that Sakhile is back, I'm the only one whose shaking, wait did they know?

Khwezi: did you guys know that Sakhile is back?

they look down except for Nkosie who is just standing there.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: somebody bloody answer me, so all this time y'all knew he was back and do not bother to tell me

Nkosie: tell you then you would have done what? I was protecting you so you don't become stressed cause I would be

damned to let you loose our babies

Khwezi: Nkosie I deserved to know

Nkosie: well now you know, I will sort this one out, y'all stay here and make sure that his hard doesn't come back here

Khwezi: and where are you going?



NOVELSGURU.COM

he doesn't answer, he just took his gun and car keys, he walks out of the house.

Khwezi: Nkosie!!!

Sya: let him be

Khwezi: what if something happens to him?

Sandile: he can take care of himself, you need to stop worrying

Khwezi: easy for you to say

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 106

NOVELSGURU.COM

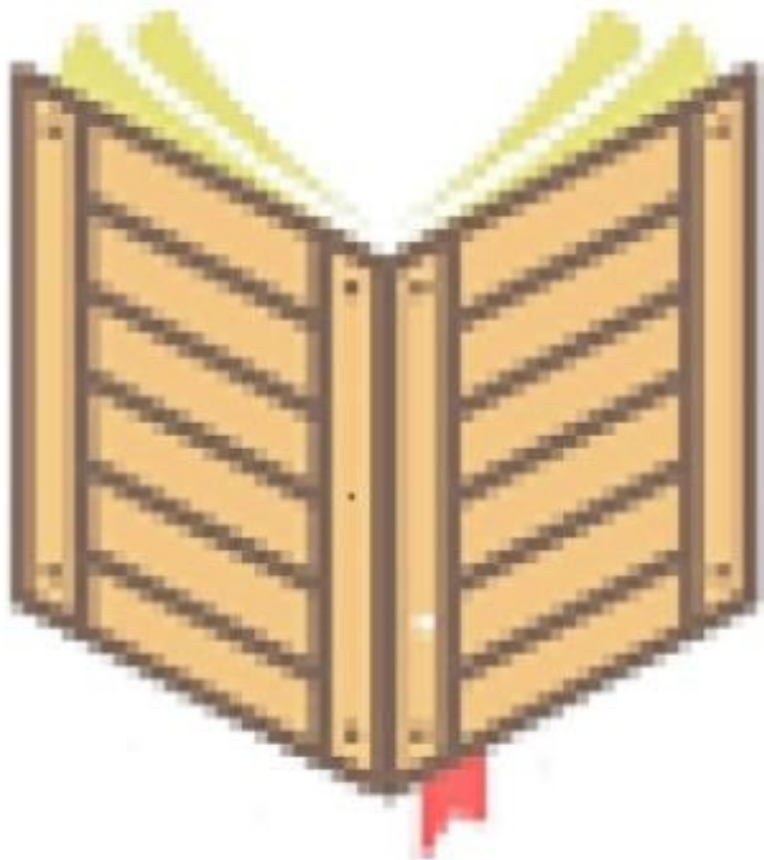
NARRATIVE.

Amahle was at the salon, she just got her nails and hair done, she takes out her black card to pay and the lady at the reception takes it.

Her: I'm sorry ma'am bit your card declined

Amahle: it did what? try it again

Her: sure



NOVELSGURU.COM

she tried th card again but it kept on declining, the lady looks at Amahle.

Amahle: there has to be some mistake, let me call my brother
smiles

she took out her phone and moved futher away from the lady so she does not hear the convisation, Sakhile answered.

Sakhile: Amahle?

Amahle: hey, I'm at the salon here and I'm having a problem with my card it keep declining

Sakhile: don't you have any cash with you?

Amahle: I wouldn't be calling you if I had any, what's going on?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: Nkosie froze all our bank cards, even mom at home is having problems with her card

Amahle: he did what? did you sort this out? I mean you have to sort it out I need to pay

Sakhile: he did just that, tell you what send me your location and I will come pay for you with the cash I have with me

Amahle: th reason I love my brother

Sakhile: whatever

Amahle hung up, she went back to the lady.

Amahle: my brother is on the way, I will wait for him then he will pay



NOVELSGURU.COM

Her: okay ma'am

Amahle set down and sent Sakhile the location, few minutes later Sakhile walks in and he pays.

Amahle: took you long enough

Sakhile: that's because we have a problem, I kinda went to Nkosie's house and tried to kill his little girlfriends but the glass door was bullet proof.

Amahle: you did...what? yohh are you trying to get us killed?

Sakhile: I wasn't thinking, I just needed some money

Amahle: yohhh

NOVELSGURU.COM

[BACK TO NKOSIE]

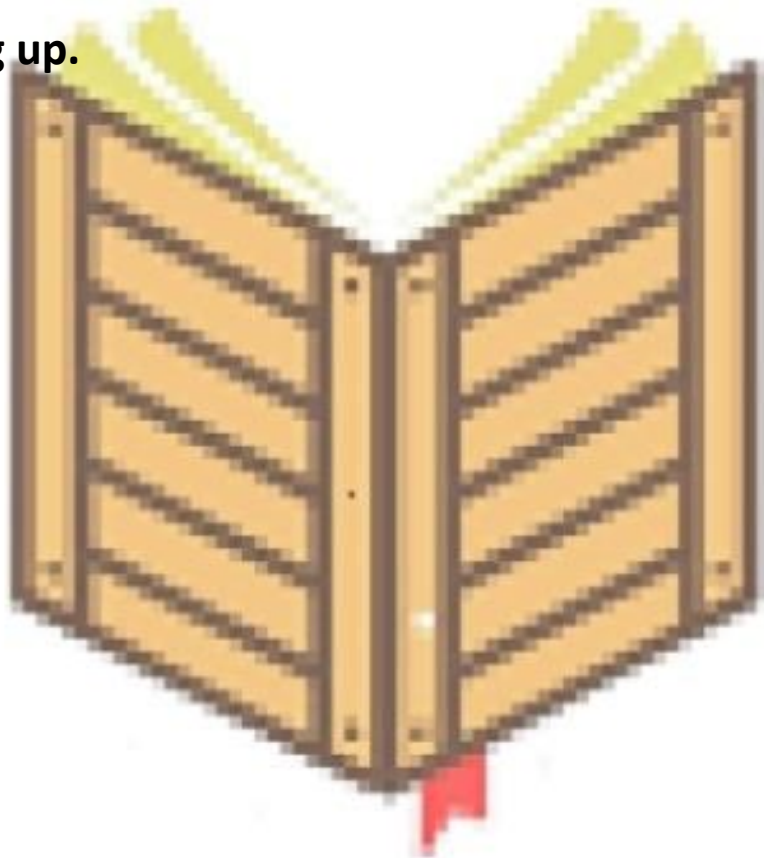
he was in his car driving while talking on the phone with Leroy.

Leroy: yes boss we got the place surrounded

Nkosie: make sure that women doesn't exit that house

Leroy: sure case boss

Nkosie hung up.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he drove to KZN and it was now dark when he got there, he parks right outside the Ndlovu gate, he wore his black gloves and he took out his small laptop.

he typed a few things and then he could see where Sakhile is, Nkosie smirks.

he took out his gun and he puts on a silencer, he got out his car and he walks inside the yard.

he went a knocked on the door.

"who is it?" Sakhile's mom asks.

Nkosie: sorry ma'am I'm lost can you help me

he rolls his eyes and the door opens, he points the gun at the women.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: don't make a sound, get inside

she had her hands up in the air and she walks inside, he closes the door with his foot.

Her: please don't kill me, I got some money if you want it

Nkosie: do I look like I want your money? sit your ass down!

he pushes the women to the couch, right now he doesnt care if she is an elder he just wants his revenge.

Nkosie: who else is in the house?

Mom: it's just me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: ohh, if I search this house I won't find any would cause if I will end their lives right in front of you

the women starts shaking.

Nkosie took out his phone and made a call.

Nkosie: the father is not inside the house, find him and get some men to search the house

he hung up.

his men walks in and they start searching the house, Nkosie went to the kitchen and he went to the fridge.

he took out some grapes and he washed them while the men searched the house, he placed then in a bowl and he went to the living room. **NOVELSGURU.COM**

Sakhile's mother set there scared wondering what will happen next.

Nkosie set down and he folds his legs eating his grapes one by one while staring at Sakhile's mom who kept on looking down.

Leroy walked in with Sakhile's father.

Him: who is this?

he looks at his wife who doesn't answer, he looks at Nkosie.

Him: who are you and what do you want from my family?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: your son will answer that now sit your ass down

he said and continued to eat his grapes, the house was empty and Nkosie looked at his watch.

Leroy: boss maybe he won't come

Nkosie: let a wait a little, he will come

he said and smiled.

Her: what do you want from us? what did we do to you?

Sakhile's mother asks.

Nkosie: your son messed with me and all this time I let him go and let him be but this time he went out of line

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: Sakhile? he wouldn't do any bad thing, he is a good boy

Nkosie: good boy? the good boy of yours kidnapped my wife for months, torturing her and he even raped her...



Sakhile's mother gasps.

Nkosie: I let him be and he continued to play his games but this is the end of it, I ain't gonna let no mother fucker walk and do as he please

as he was talking Sakhile walks in with her sister and Nkosie's gaurds follow.

Sakhile: Nkosie?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amahle: Nkosie?

Nkosie smirks.

Nkosie: I'm flattered, please join us we were just discussing about the 100 days you gonna die and planning your funeral

he says with an evil smile.

Sakhile: if you do anything to my family I will...

Nkosie: you will what? trust me the shit you want to use against me? I wipes all of that out on your computer now tell me you were saying you gonna do what? I'm eager to hear your plan, please sit down and narrate it to me

the gaurds pushed Sakhile and Amahle to the floor, Amahle starts crying.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: you won't get away with this

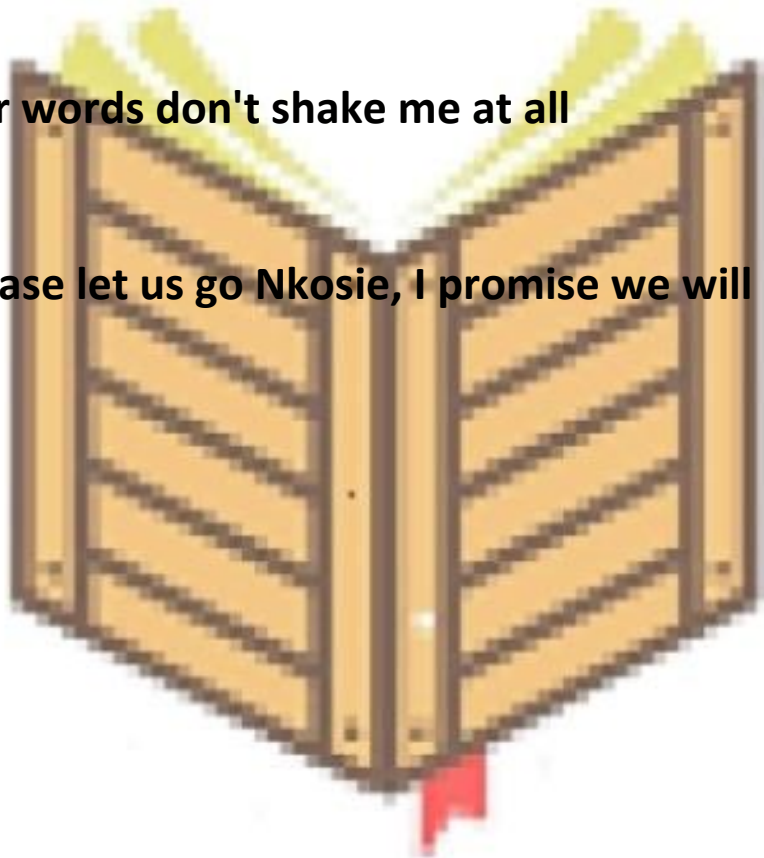
Nkosie: let me see...*smirks* ohh I will boy

Sakhile: you think you better then everyone huh? well wait till you meet someone whose your match and you will know that day if you are the top dog you say you are or just some pussy

Nkosie just looked at him calm as hell.

Nkosie: your words don't shake me at all

Amahle: please let us go Nkosie, I promise we will never bother you again



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: ekse, take them to the location and let's get this bloodshed party started...

he ate his last grape and he stood up.

Nkosie: ohh and burn this place to the ground.

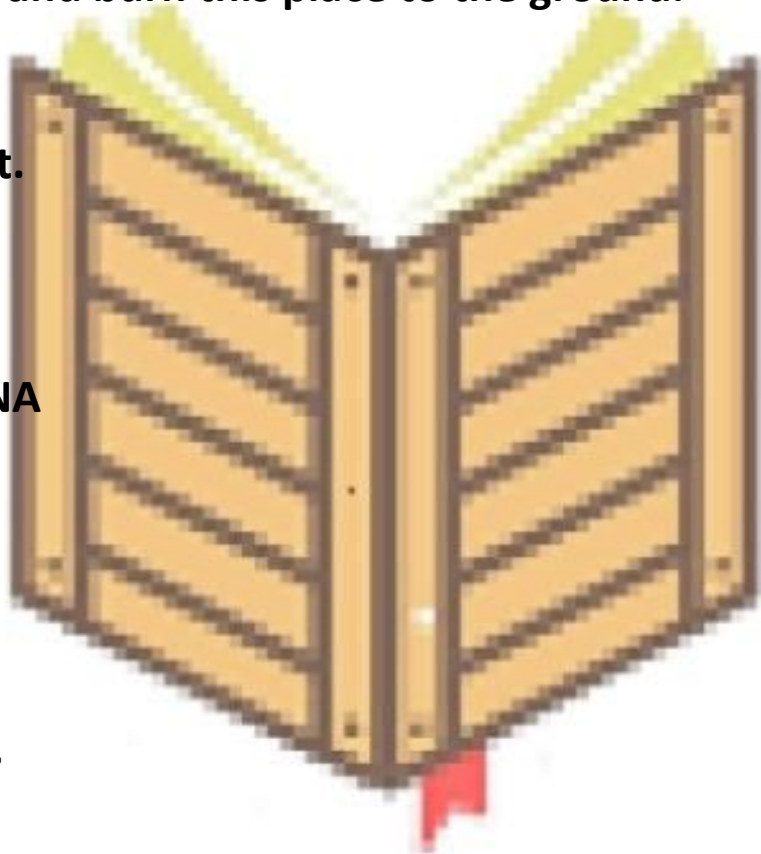
he walks out.

**.
. .**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 107

NARRATIVE.



Nkosie got inside his car and his men took the Ndlovu family in one car, the cars drive out in a line and as soon as they were far away the house exploded.

Nkosie was just sitting at the back of the car while Leroy drove to the warehouse, few moments later they arrive.

the Ndlovu family was brought in and they were tied in the chairs while they beg for mercy, Nkosie didn't care about that all he wanted was for blood to spill.

Amahle: Nkosie please don't kill us please

she begs with tears in her eyes.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amahle: I'm your brother wife's

Nkosie: just a very good reason why I want to kill you

Amahle: Nkosie!

Nkosie: I'm not your men so stop calling me like I am one

he stood there and looks at them.

Nkosie: get me a knife and untie him

he points at Sakhile.

Sakhile: why are you...

Nkosie: shut up! NOVELSGURU.COM

he says coldly and Sakhile remains shut.

Nkosie: I won't kill your parents trust me I ain't want their blood on my hands but you gonna do me the favour, you gonna



kill them one by one and I won't kill you after that, I will make you live for a while and think about what you did, I want it to haunt you and then I will slowly kill you, if I end you now that will be easy...my wife endured a lot of pain because of you now take the knife and stab your mother on the stomach

he took the knife from Leroy and gave it to Sakhile, Sakhile looks at the knife then back at Nkosie then looks at his mother.

Nkosie: I would also think twice before making a stupid decision



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile: I'm not gonna stab my mother, are you crazy?

a hot slap landed on Sakhile's face, he wanted to use the knife on Nkosie but he knew the consequences that will come after that.

he thoughts twice.

Nkosie: I wasn't asking you now I won't repeat myself, azishe!

Her: please son don't do this, please don't let my son kill me

Nkosie did not respond, he looks at Sakhile and he clicks his tongue.

he went to Sakhile and started to beat him up, Sakhile layed on the floor as Nkosie kicked him on the stomach.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: make it snappy

he steps back and he fixes his suit, he folds his arms.

Sakhile got up and he slowly walks to his mother looking at her in the eyes, she kept on shaking her head while Sakhile said a low "sorry" as the knife cut into her stomach making her to scream in pain.

Nkosie: again...

Amahle on the other side was crying and so was the father, Leroy just stood there watching.

Nkosie: I said again...



NOVELSGURU.COM

he said grinding his teeth.

Sakhile pulls out the knife and he stabs her mother once again.

Nkosie: that's not how you do it, angithii you like making people suffer, you are a rapist wena and you also abuse women...use that power you had all those months while you ill treated my wife

Sakhile: Nkosie please she's my mother...

he cries.

Nkosie: I DON'T GIVE A DAMN! I said what I said now listen to me boy or else I will do worse then that

Sakhile stabbed his mother and he stabs her on the heart, he went down on his knees and cried.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: next...

he points at Sakhile's father.

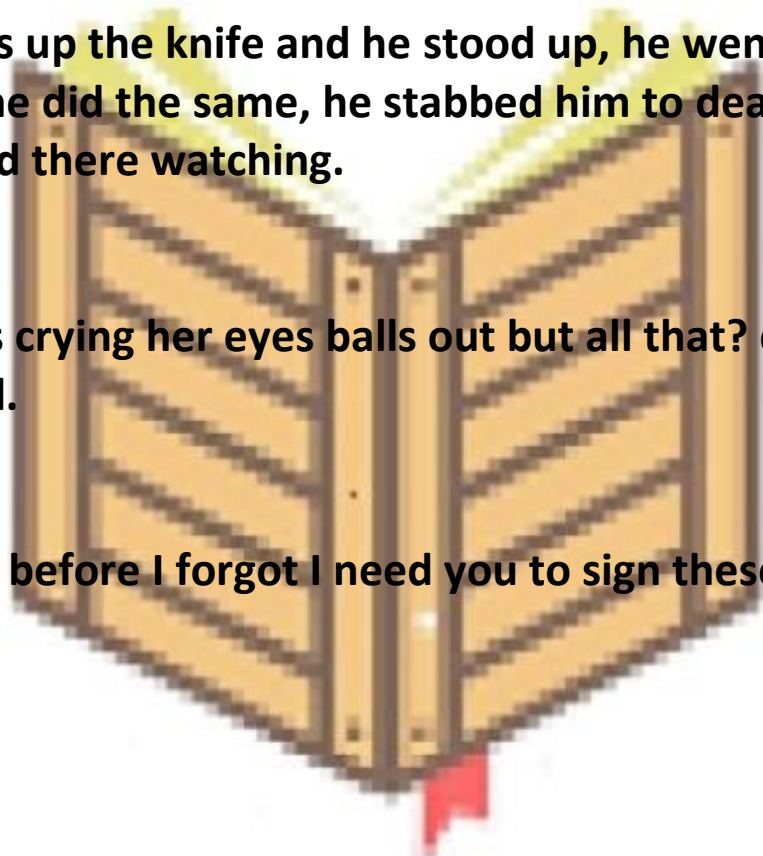
Sakhile: Nkosie please who will I have left? I already killed my mother what more do you want?

Nkosie: did you give me a choice while you had my wife hostage? huh? *silence* thought so now keep the job going I don't have all day

Sakhile picks up the knife and he stood up, he went to his father and he did the same, he stabbed him to death while Nkosie stood there watching.

Amahle was crying her eyes balls out but all that? did not shake Nkosie at all.

Nkosie: ohh before I forgot I need you to sign these papers for me



he signals Leroy to bring the documents, he took them and gave them to Nkosie.

Nkosie: sign

he threw the papers to Sakhile.

Sakhile: what do they say?

Nkosie: that's non of your concern, now sign

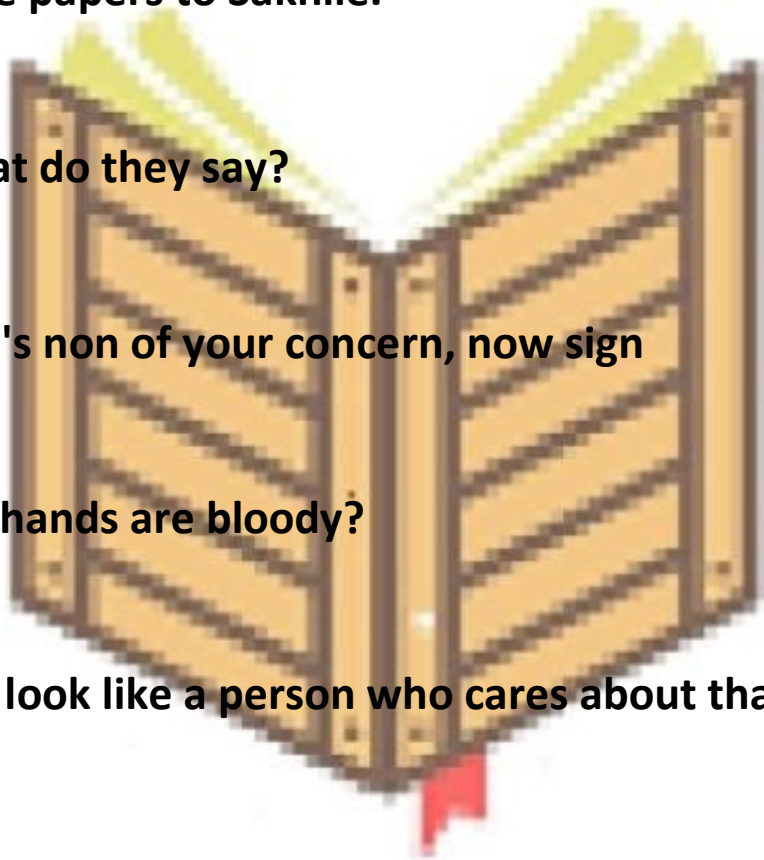
Sakhile: my hands are bloody?

Nkosie: do I look like a person who cares about that at the moment?

Sakhile sighed and he signed the papers.

Sakhile: you happy?

Nkosie: futsek, kill Her!



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amahle cries out loud.

Amahle: Nkosie please, Nkosie, please no no no!

she shouts.

Nkosie: you begging the wrong person darling



NOVELSGURU.COM

he smirks.

Nkosie: ohh and don't make it fast on this one, I want you to look into her eyes in each stab

Sakhile looks at Nkosie with anger in his eyes all Nkosie did was keep on a straight face.

Sakhile got up and went to Nkosie to stab him but Nkosie kicked him in the balls, the knife dropped and Sakhile dropped on his feets,Nkosie immiediately picks up the knife and stab Sakhile on the shoulder, he groans in pain.

Nkosie: don't...*pause*

he twists the knife.

Nkosie: go against my orders, you hear me?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile nods as Nkosie continues to twist the knife, he removed the knife and gives it to Sakhile.

Sakhile got up with one hand on his wound and the other holding the knife, he looks at Amahle in the eyes.

Sakhile: I love you okay?

Amahle: please don't do this brother *cries*

Sakhile: I'm sorry

he stabs her while looking into her eye as she cried, the knife goes in for the second time then the third time, the fourth time was in the heart.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile just cried, Nkosie claps his hands.

Nkosie: now that, that I enjoyed

Sakhile: you are so cruel

Nkosie: tell me something I don't know, now you gonna wait for your turn while waiting you gonna stay here with your family that you killed

Sakhile continues to cry.

Nkosie: trust me I did nothing this is all your fault if you had stayed away from and my wife especially they would be alive but then...

Nkosie shrugs.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I hope you have very good dreams while sleeping cause they ain't coming back

Leroy took the knife from Sakhile and Nkosie walks out with his hands on his pocket.

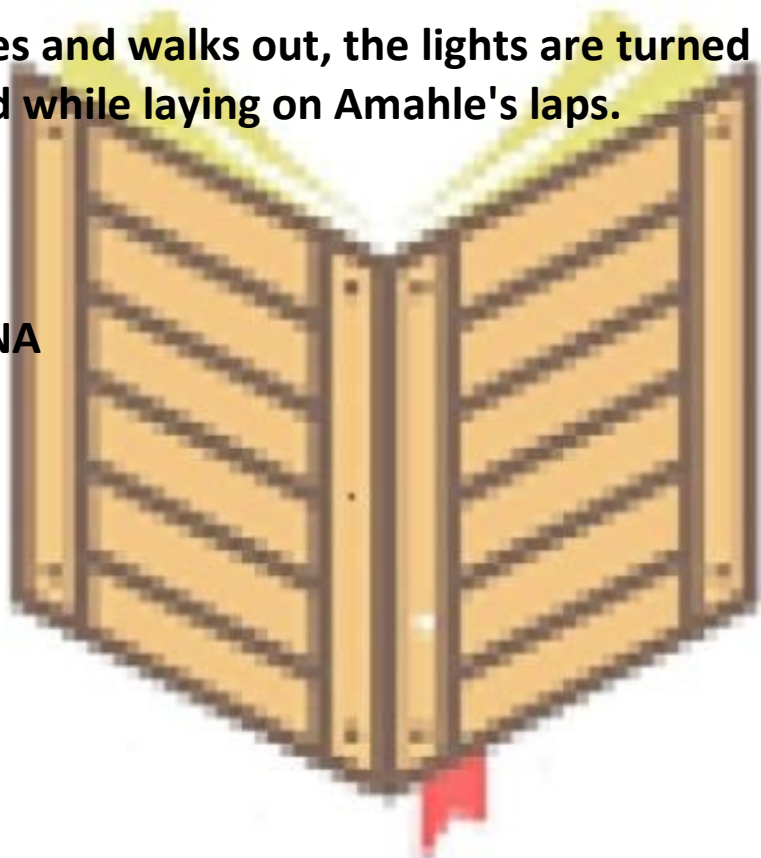
he stops.

Nkosie: and ohh before I forgot all your family memebers from both your parents side are dead, it's your fault, your doings now live with it

Nkosie smiles and walks out, the lights are turned off and Sakhile cried while laying on Amahle's laps.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 108

KHWEZILOKUSA.

I'm sitting in the guest room worried sick about Nkosie, ever since the incident he just walked out and it's late now.

I'm worried about him, I set there eating some chips and I heard the car pulling over.

I got off the bed and I stood by the window, I watch him walk out of his car and he looks really tired.

I went and set down the bed, i released a sigh.

I wore my slippers and I went out the guest room, I walk to his room and the door is closed, I walk in without knocking and his not there.

NOVELSGURU.COM

but the lights are on in the bathroom, he walks out unbuttoning his shirt.

Nkosie: you now barge in without knocking?

he said that without looking at me, I know he doesn't mean that, he would have killed at me if he did.

Khwezi: Nkosie I was so worried about you

Nkosie: I'm a grown man and I can take care of myself

Khwezi: Nkosie you know what I mean *sighs*



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I don't, why don't you lay it down for me

he took off his shirt and was left with his vest, he took off his pants and he was left with his boxers, he walks to his closet.

Khwezi: can we just talk?

he comes out of the closet.

Nkosie: so since you in a good mood you want us to talk? cute

he said that in a straight and it made it hard for me to figure if he meant the 'cute' part or he just said it to mock me.

Nkosie: I really have a long day tomorrow, close the door on your way out

Khwezi: Nkosie I'm sorry

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I ain't need your sorry, just walk out that door cause right now I'm so fucking angry so I don't want to end up hurting you cause...*sighs* fuck Khwezi just leave!

he said that a little louder and I jumped.

Khwezi: Nkosie!

he looks down and I slowly walk closer to him.

Khwezi: you not gonna hurt me, you know why I'm saying this?

I stood in front of him and made him to look at me, he kept clenching his jaw.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: that's because you love me and you wouldn't do anything to make a sad, angry or to see me hurt

he doesn't want to look at me in the eyes.

Khwezi: baby I'm sorry for not talking to you all these days, I was angry at you because of your selfish reasons which I don't like at all...

he looks at me in the eyes.

Khwezi: but I thought about it all, it's your life and your decision though your decision will affect two people but it's cool as long as you happy *smiles* when you confessed you love for me, you told me it's not gonna be easy to love you and you told me to hold on, be patient with you and that's exactly what I'm going *smiles* I love you Nkosie thought I don't want to loose you but I also don't want to fight with you and end up making you take bad decisions just because of me, you have your reasons and I respectfully understand that

he had tears in his eyes, he pulls me closer to him and gave me a hug, I could feel his tears on my shoulder and his not breath.

Khwezi: baby are you crying?

he sniffs, it's rare to find Nkosie crying.

Khwezi: Mvelase?

Nkosie: I'm sorry for being hard towards you and outting you guys in danger, I know I shouldn't have lashed out on you the way I did, I'm sorry

Khwezi: it's all in the past, right now let's get inside the bed and sleep



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I thought you was gonna say the complete opposite

I pinch him and he laughs pulling out from the hug though he still had his hands on my waist.

Khwezi: you still being silly while crying?

Nkosie: I'm not being silly, I missed you

Khwezi: yet you kept on being mean towards me, yazi you are one complicated creature

I said climbing inside the bed and he stood there looking at me.

Khwezi: what?

Nkosie: you making yourself comfortable already?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: ain't I suppose to do that?

he smiles and got inside the bed, he layed on my boobs and I play with his hair, he had his hands on my baby bump and he kissed it.

Nkosie: even though you one hard headed women who challenges me all the time, I love you

**Khwezi: let's erase the first ugly points you came up with
smiles I love you, too**

He yawns, he must so tired.

Khwezi: so what did you do with Sakhile?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: taught him a lesson he will never forget

Khwezi: what do you mean my that?

Nkosie: just that, baby I'm tired

he slides his hand on my shirt, I smile.

the next thing I heard was his cute snores, I giggle and I also ended up dozing off.

**.
.**

. NOSIPHO.

I just finished off having dinner with my parents and I must tell you, it was a blast, I really missed them though I'm sad I have to leave.

I got a message from Sya telling me he is outside my apartment, I then told him I was at my parents house and he said he is going to wait.

Nosi: mom, Dad I will see you guys soon

Mom: take care of yourself

Nosi: you also do the same, Dad?

Dad: yes sweetheart

Nosi: take care of mom



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: relax she is in good hands

I smile as he kisses her on the cheek, I gave them a hug and got inside my car, I drove to my apartment and I noticed Sya's car outside.

he didn't leave.

I park my car and got out, I lock it and I went to his car, I knocked on the window since he was asleep.

he woke up and he opens his door, I chuckle.

Nosi: you know you could have left, I mean the hour it took me to come here

Sya: it was worth the wait

NOVELSGURU.COM

he smiles.

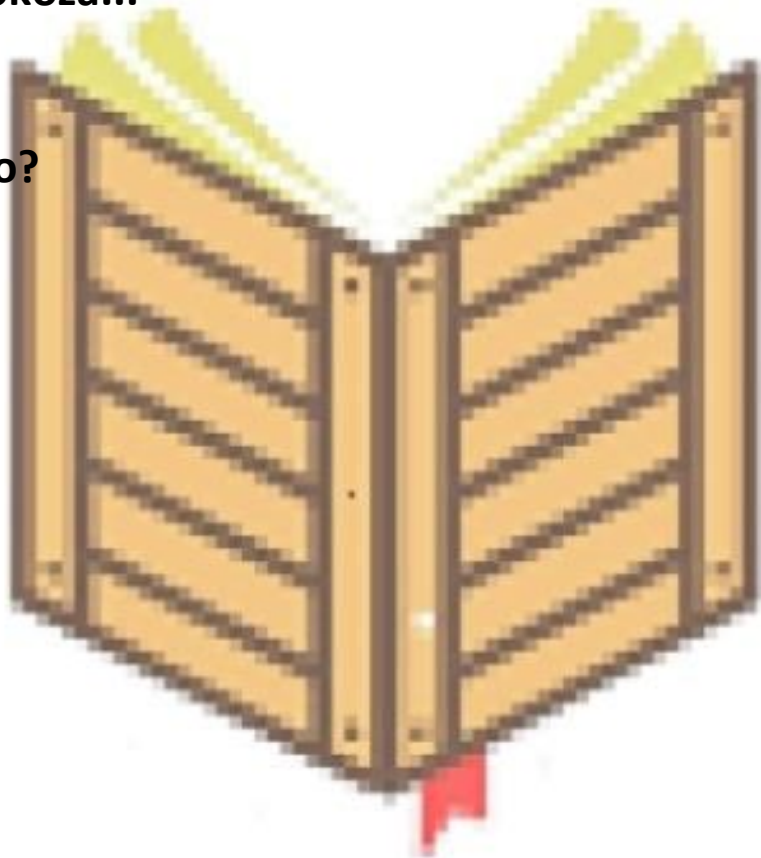
Nosi: how can I help you then Mr Mthembu?

Sya: I thought you are only allowed to be professional at work, I didn't know you were suppose to be professional at home

I laugh a little.

Nosi: Syathokoza...

Sya: Nosipho?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: what do you want?

Sya: I couldn't sleep, I thought of coming to see you as a friend nothing more before you start chopping my head

Nosi: me chopping your head? soze you just making me a bad person

Sya: so you wouldn't mind if I held you in a very inappropriate way?

Nosi: how inappropriate?

Sya: woza nhikutshengise (come let me show you)

Nosi: nope not gonna happen, you saw me now you can leave

Sya: you not gonna invite me in?

Nosi: for what?

Sya: I don't know maybe some coffee then watch a movie



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: I got work tomorrow

**Sya: I also got work, I just want to spend some time with you
nothing much**

Nosi: ohky, sure come in

**I step back and he smiles, he got out of his car and he locks it,
he follows me to the apartment.**



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: you make yourself at home, I need to shower first then I will come join you

Sya: join me huh?

Nosi: you gonna leave I'm telling

Sya: I'm joking

he laughs, I went to my room and I showered, I lotioned my body and I wore a night dress, I wore a my socks and slippers, I went downstairs and he has ordered food.

this guy.

Nosi: when I said make yourself at home I meant, make your own food not order, you being lazy

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: I mean the women who would have made me the food was busy so I thought of plan be

Nosi: I'm not your maid

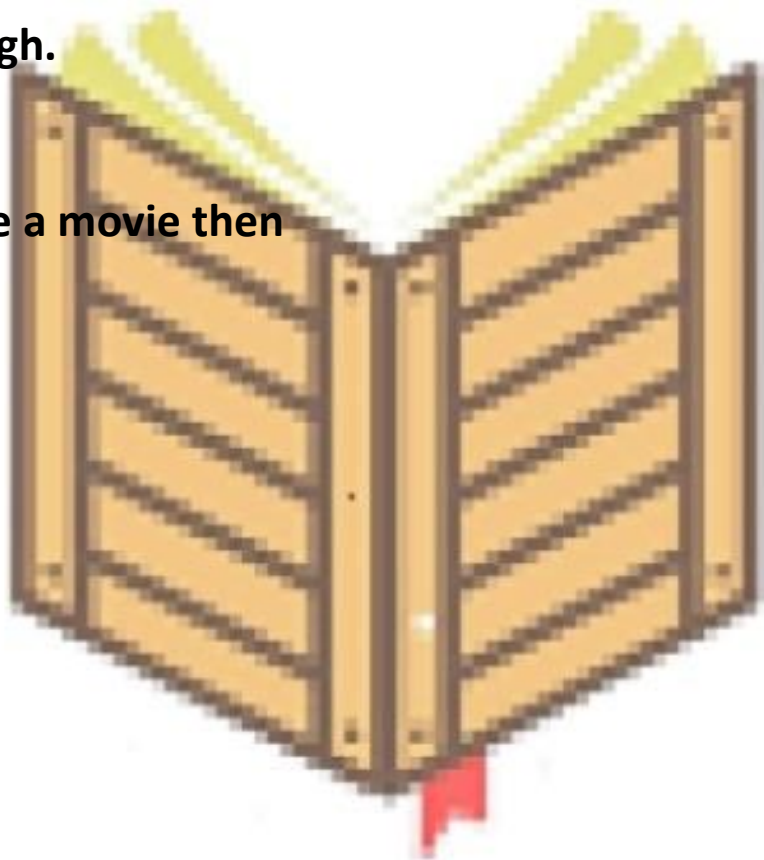
Sya: I didn't say that

Nosi: I also did not say you said it

Sya: yohh!

we both laugh.

Nosi: choose a movie then



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: no you choose but I will choose if you want us to watch action throughout the whole movie

Nosi: hell no give me the remote

I snatch it from him and laugh, he smiles.

I chose a movie and we set there watching, Aya couldn't stop talking and his interrupting me as I'm watching the movie.

Nosi: Sya I want to focus on the movie, wa rasa (you making noise)

Sya: want me to stop?

I look at him and he and this look on his face.

Nosi: hell no you sneaky ass is up to something

Sya: I ain't it's just that it's cold here and you so far away from me, maybe if we cuddle it will be way better

Nosi: it's not happening



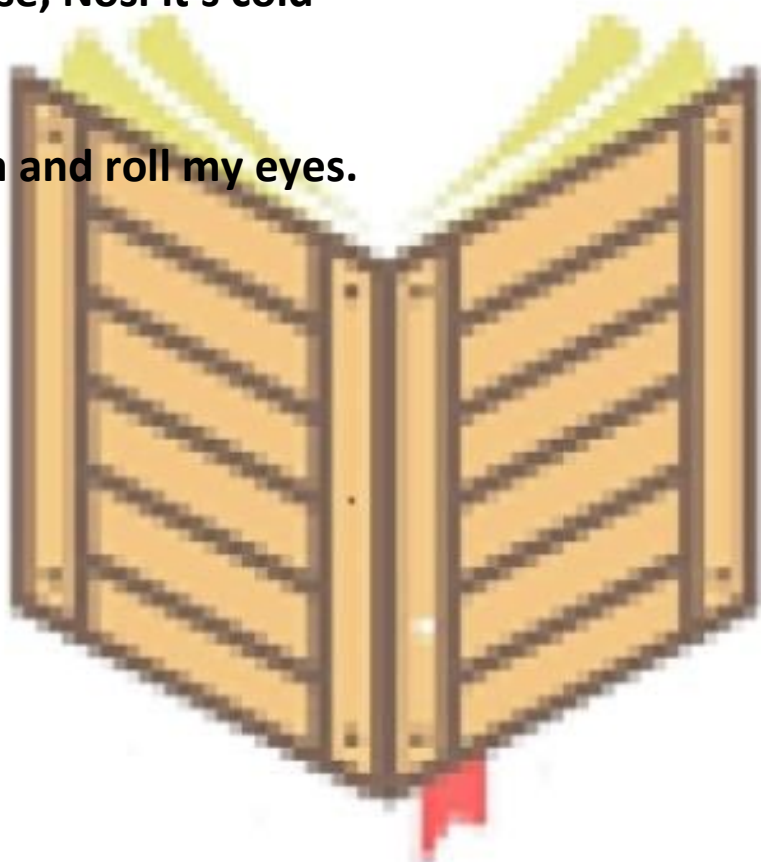
NOVELSBURU.COM

Sya: come on, I won't touch you it's just an innocent cuddle

Nosi: with you? I don't believe that

Sya: I promise, Nosi it's cold

I look at him and roll my eyes.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: mxm

I got closer to him and ended up laying on his chest, he kept his word and did not touch me at all.

he wraps his hand around my waist and I let him be since I wanted to focus on the movie that's when I felt sleepy.

this is why you shouldn't cuddle while watching a movie, I love a little and I buried my face on his neck.

Nosi: Sya?

Sya: Nosi?

Nosi: ngifuna ukulala (I want to sleep)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: relax

he brushes my back and I relax, I close my eyes and slept.

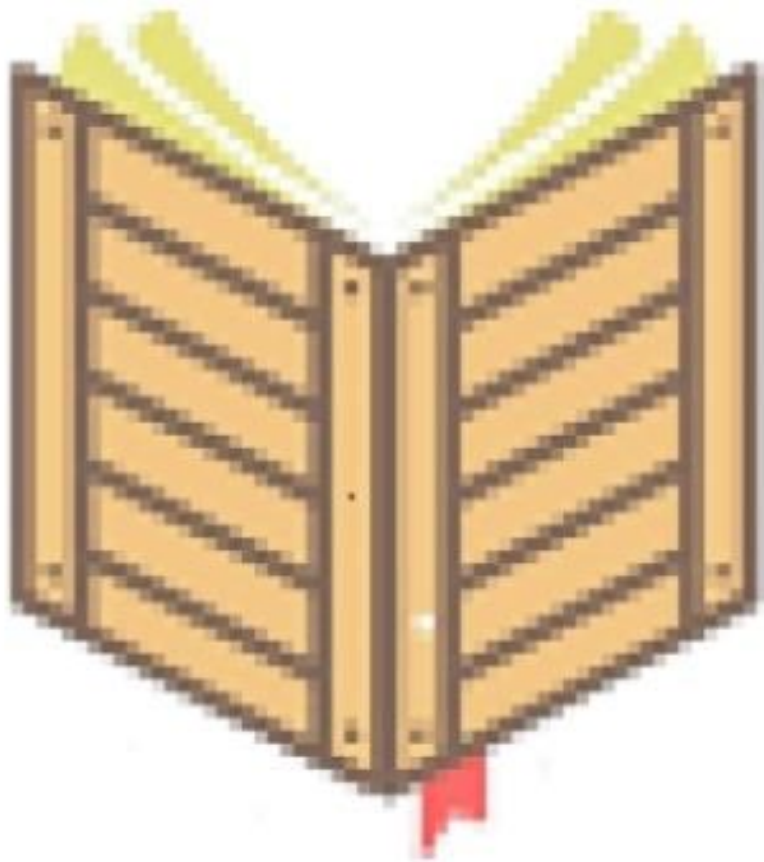
.

.

•
FOREVA YENA

Insert 109

NOSIPHO.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I woke up and I look at Sya who is fast asleep, I remove his hands from me. I got up and I went to my room to take a shower.

I got done and I dried my body, I wore a towel around my body and I exit the bathroom.

I lotioned my body, I started thinking about last night, I really enjoyed myself and Sya is a very good...well friend.

I look at myself in the mirror and I noticed a smile on my face. Nosipho girl why are you letting this man control your feelings? I mean the way he talks politely with me.

he is so patient with me and he smells really good, snap out of it!

I got up and started to get dressed, I wore a purple tight long dress and some matching heels, I combed my short hair nicely.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I took my beg and stuffed it with things I'm going to need at work then I went out. Sya is still sleeping in the couch, I smile.

I checked the time and I'm early so I decided to make breakfast for the both of us, I dish up and he walks inside the kitchen

scratching his head.

Sya: it smells good *smiles* good morning

Nosi: morning Sya

Sya: I suppose this is mine

he set down on the high chair and he took his plate, I pout, he laughs.

Sya: you know you look good when you do that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: whatever, you better eat up before I run late for work

Sya: you really gonna go to work dressed like that?

Nosi: what's wrong with my dress?

Sya: I mean the nyash is out, the curves and damn you built so good

he smiles and I look down, I blush.

Nosi: I'm gonna kick you out

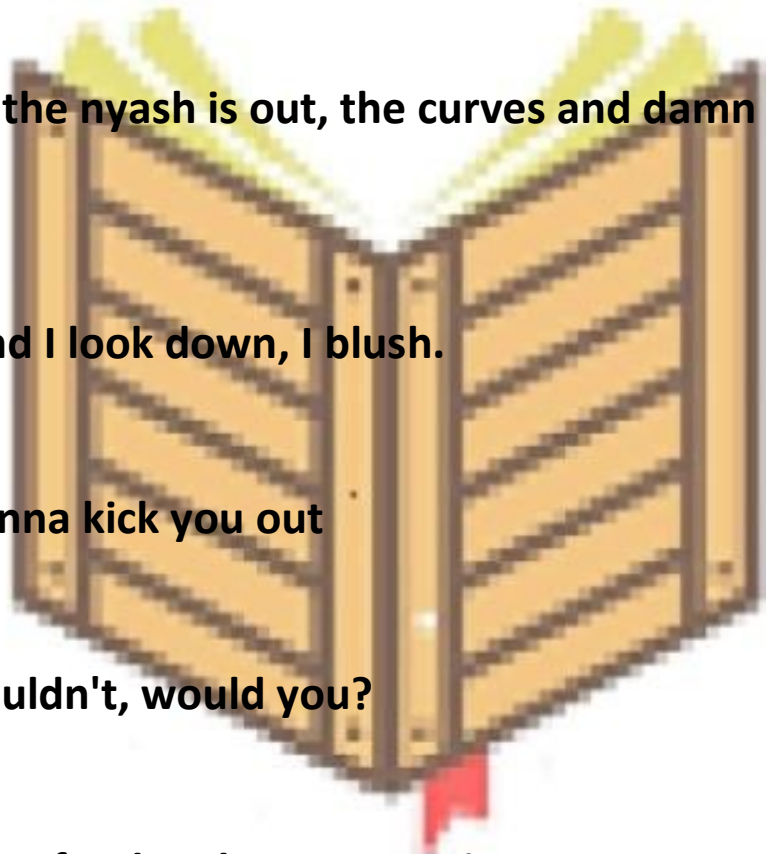
Sya: you wouldn't, would you?

Nosi: eat your food and stop annoying me

NOVELSGURU.COM

I set down and ate my food, he chuckles and ate.

we got done eating and I did the dishes, As I was washing the dishes I his hands on my waist, him breathing on my neck, my

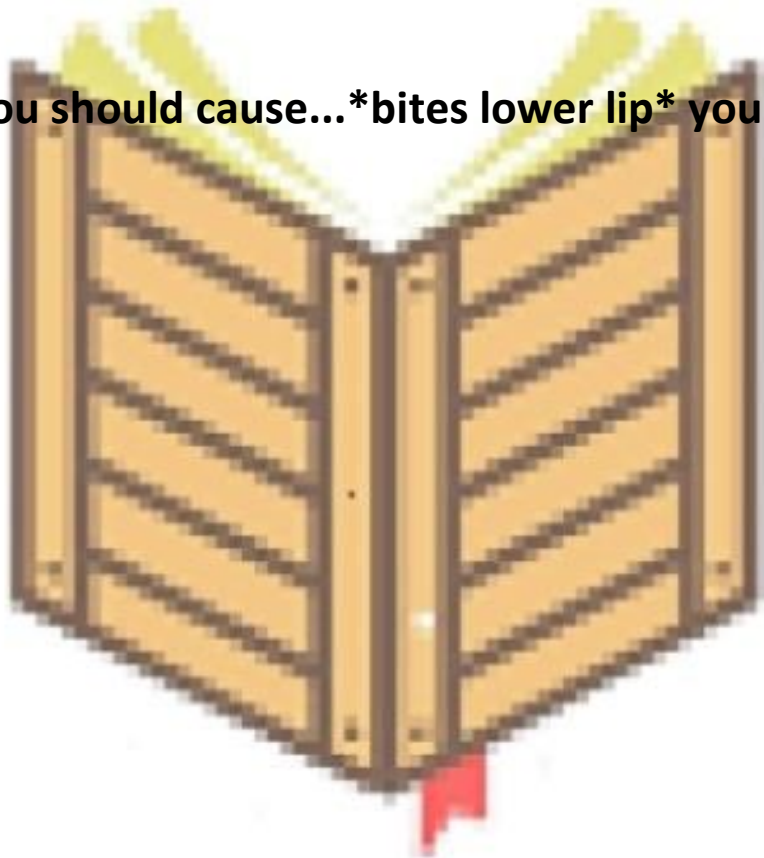


breathing changes, I tilt my head a little.

I place down the wet cloth and I release a heavy sigh.

Sya: I know I promised to be on my good behaviour but you look so good and I can't seem to control myself

Nosi: well you should cause...*bites lower lip* you ain't allowed to do this



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: why ain't I allowed?

he chuckles and that chuckle went a shiver on my whole body.

Nosi: Sya!

he continues to kiss my neck and I let out a moan, This might be tempting but I ain't gonna open them wide just like that.

I could feel his boner which tells me he wants this as much as I want it, I'm wet super wet right now.

he groans.

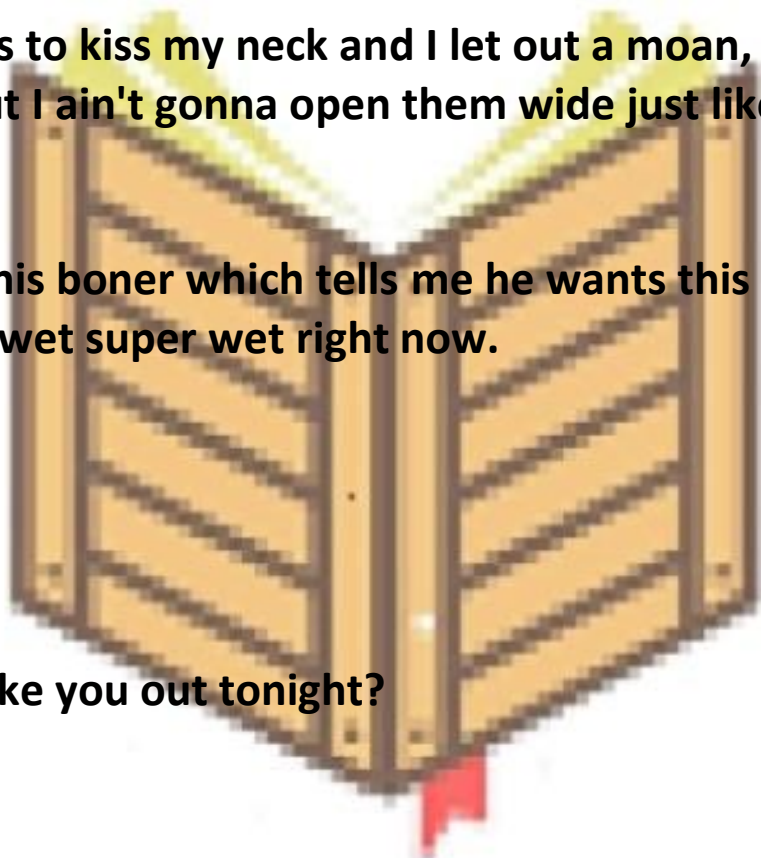
Sya: can I take you out tonight?

Nosi: again?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: come on, don't be like that

I bite my lower lip.



Nosi: I will think about it

he smirks, he kisses my neck one last time and he moves away I turn around and he is just standing there with lazy eyes.

Nosi: I need to use the toilet

I quickly rush to the toilet, I set on the seat and I sighed.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: what the fuck was that?

I wipe myself and indeed it was an ocean down there.

I got out and he was standing by the door.

Sya: I'm sorry...it's just, I don't know what got into me

Nosi: I'm late for work

he smiles and he follows me outside with his jacket in hand.

Sya: so about me taking you out?

Nosi: I said I'm gonna think about it

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: I will hear from you then

I got inside my car and he went to his, we drove to our separate ways.

I arrived at the hospital and I park my car, I walk inside and I noticed everyone was looking at me.

do I look that good? I walk to the receptionist and she smiles at me.

Her: such a huge smile? what happened? did you win a lotto?

huge smile? ohh my cheeks hurt right now, well I guess I am smiling a lot.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: non of the above, I just woke up in a very good mood

Her: I can tell *giggles*

Nosi: what do you mean?

Her: the love bites

Nosi: what? that motherfucker!

the receptionist giggled and she gave me a pic of paper, I went to my office and indeed I had those so called love bites on my neck.

Mvelo can't see this, God I don't want to hurt the poor guy.

I managed to cover them up with some make up, they were no longer visible.

NOVELSGURU.COM

.

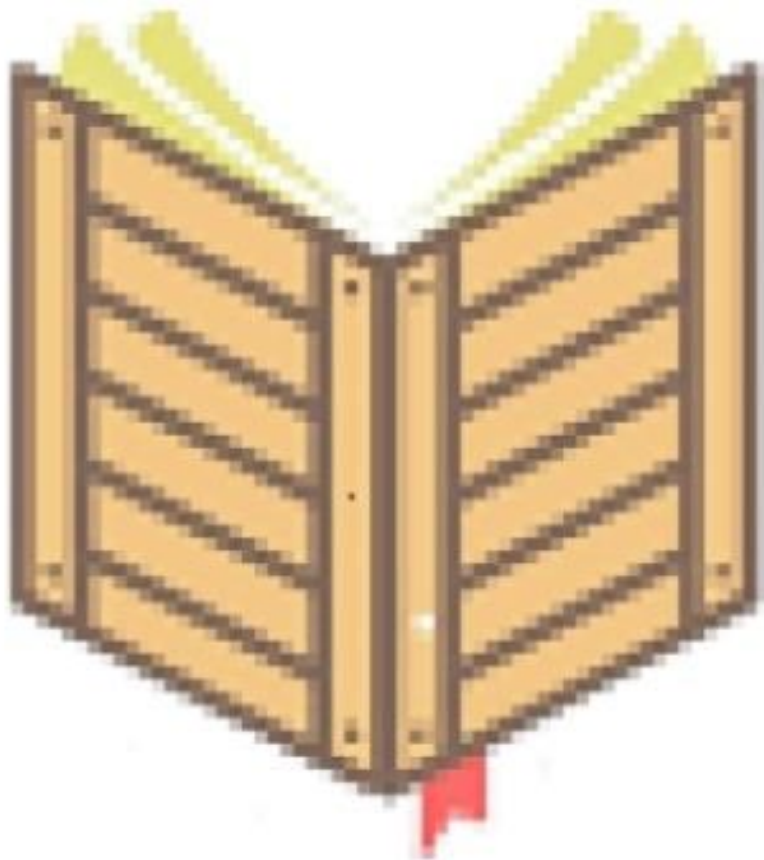
.

. NKOSINATHI.

I dropped Khwezi off at school and I drove straight to the warehouse, my brothers were already there so we went through the plan.

Nkanyezi: so I spoke to our supplier in Russia, we all know that those people are wild when it comes to weapon

Sya nods agreeing with him.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: they will be here with the weapons we asked for tonight and by tomorrow we will be starting with the job

Nkosie: tonight, nah we are starting the job tonight

Sandile: why are you in a hurry?

Nkosie: I'm not, we gotta make money and a lot of money we can't chill all day doing nothing we gotta work

Nkanyezi: but still we don't have enough time to get the weapons shipped in such short period of time

Nkosie: pass me the numbers I will talk to their boss

Sandile: okay once we done with the job for the week then we are moving to another?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkanyezi: yep

Sandile: sounds simple and cool

Nkosie: not that simple, we need to make sure we don't get

caught

Sya: we never get caught so we cool, so when are we meeting again?

Nkosie: I will send you the time once I'm done with the call, for now I got something's I need to deal with

Nkanyezi: like what? get Sakhile to kill himself

he laughs a little.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you really need to work on minding your own business brother

Nkanyezi: oh come on, we all saw the way you left the house after he pointed a gun at Khwezi

Sandile: I was also scared for my life, what did you do to the guy?

Sya: you won't believe it

he shakes his head.

Sandile: come on tell me, you guys like hiding such stuff from me

Nkanyezi: that's because you don't know how to handle it

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: what did he do man? come on stop it

Sya: he made Sakhile kill his parents then his beloved sister and did not kill him afterwards

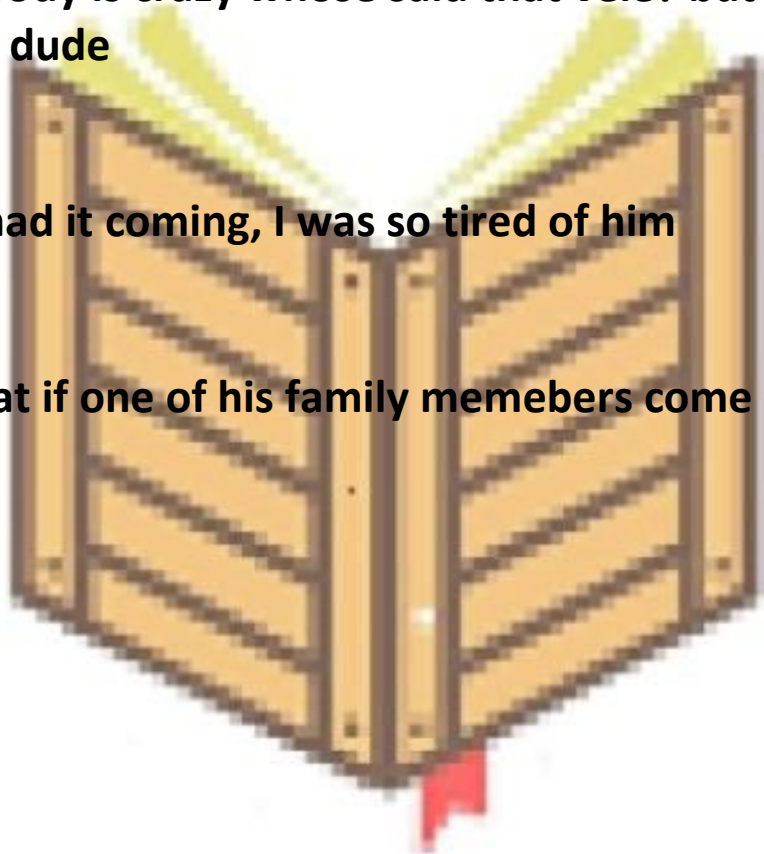
Sandile: are you crazy Nkosie? you made him kill...God...

Nkosie: whose crazy I didn't hear that?

Sandile: nobody is crazy whose said that vele? but still Nkosie you so cruel dude

Nkosie: he had it coming, I was so tired of him

Sandile: what if one of his family memebers come after us?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: if they will be able to rise up from the dead

I smirk.

Sandile: rise from the dead? wait you also...tell me he didn't do what I think he did

Sya: what are you thinking?

Sandile: that....that...he...

he stutters.

Nkanyezi: see now that's why we don't tell you this type of shit

Sandile: but that completely wrong Nkosie

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: put yourself in my shoes then you will know it was the right thing to do.

I walk out leaving them there, Sandile is very sensitive and I hate that, this is the reason I don't involve him in most of the things.

the reason I make sure he lives his good life and doesn't get involve in the dirty work, my brother is one sensitive, kindest soul ever.

I got inside my car and my phone rang, it was Leroy.

Nkosie: I'm listening

Leroy: Sir what should we do with the bodies and the guy?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: get rid of the bodies make sure there are no loose ends

Leroy: and the guy?

**Nkosie: starve him don't even give him a single drop of water,
I'm gonna see him in a week**

Leroy: sure thing boss

Nkosie: and Leroy...

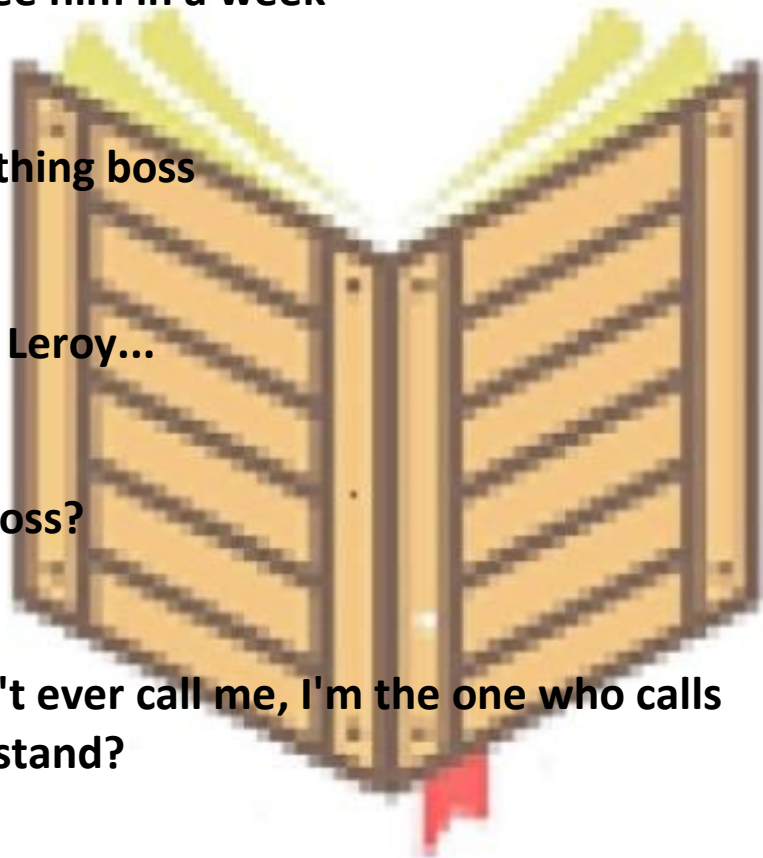
Leroy: yes boss?

**Nkosie: don't ever call me, I'm the one who calls
you...understand?**

Leroy: yes boss, sorry boss

I hung up.

I start the car and drove to the company, first thing i did when I



NOVELSGURU.COM

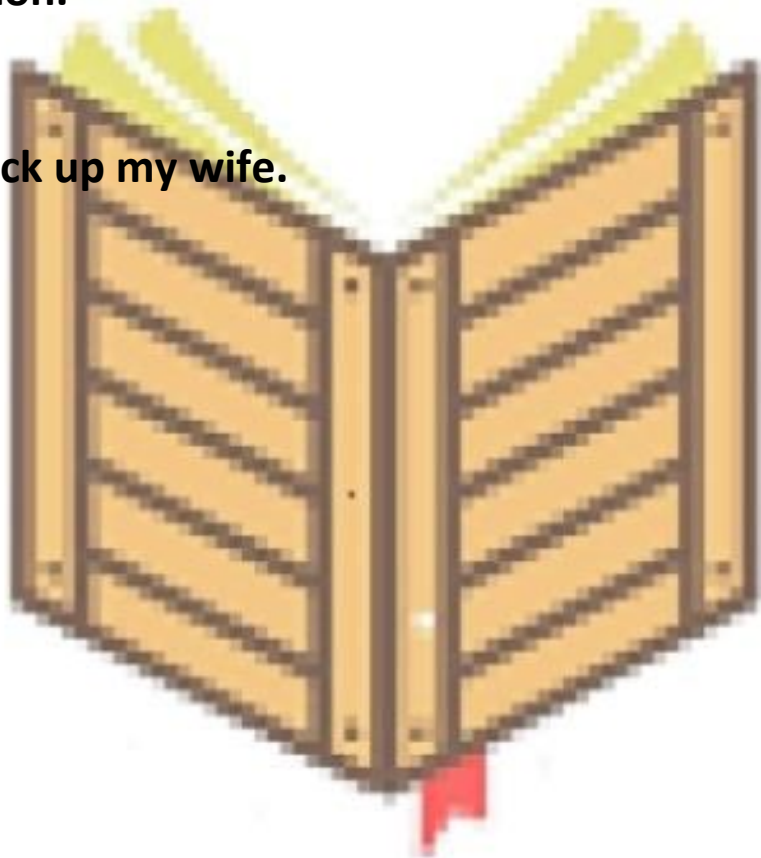
got there I fired everyone.

I don't want any of Sakhiles dirty links to come back at me, I want to work with new people, fresh faces.

I close down the company and I put up an advertisement for job application.

I drove to pick up my wife.

-
-
-



NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 110

NARRATIVE.

Zizi just got back from her classes well she had plans of going out with Khwezi but her brother kinda showed up and stole that chance for her

you know how Nkosie becomes when it comes to what belongs to him, don't take that in a wrong way, he doesn't at all believe or treat Khwezi like an object.

it's just how I like to put it.

the driver drops Zizi off at her apartment and she went to take a shower, she doesn't remember the last time she had a sleep over with her friend.

she smiles remembering those little moments they had together.

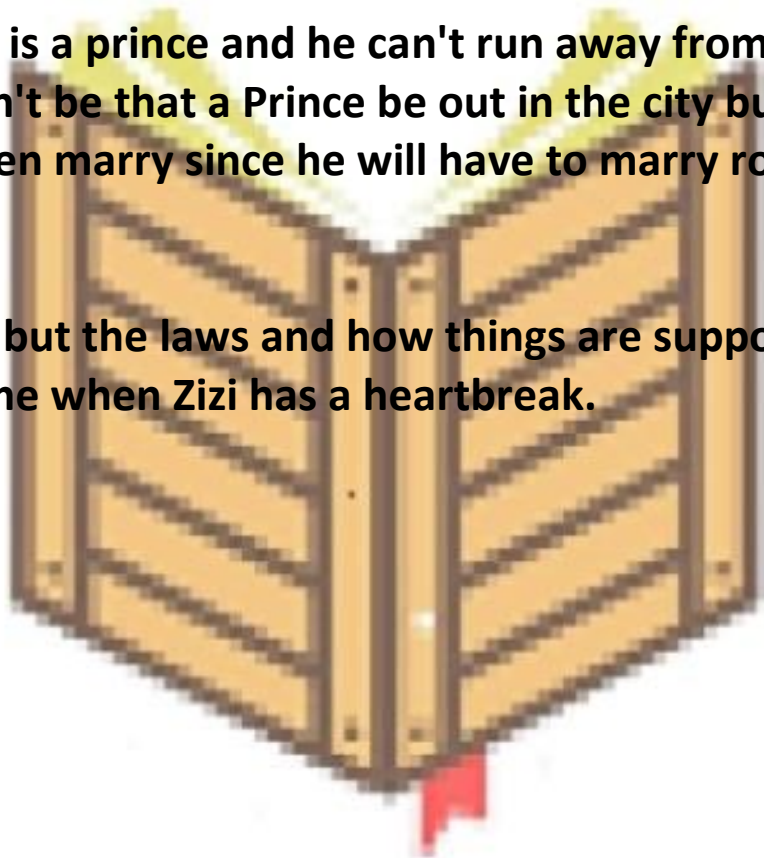
she got done, she dried her body and lotioned it. she wore

some comfortable clothes and she went to make herself a meal.

Let's see for the past few months all she does is, get busy with school work, sleeps a lot, watches movies and the long distance relationship with Lindani.

well Lindani is a prince and he can't run away from his princely duties, it can't be that a Prince be out in the city busy with a girl he won't even marry since he will have to marry royalty.

it's ain't me but the laws and how things are suppose to go, don't hate me when Zizi has a heartbreak.



NOVELSGURU.COM

while she set there having her noodles, she received a call from Lindani, she places the bowl down and wipes her mouth looking at her phone on the couch with so much excitement written in her eyes.

she picks up her phone and covers her mouth, she answers and breaths in.

Lindani: My queen

she smiles.

Zizi: my heart owner, baby I miss you

Lindani: If it was for me I would be there with you

Zizi: then come

NOVELSGURU.COM

she bites her arms knowing that he won't agree to that, not that he doesn't want to but because he has a lot of things he needs to take care of.

Lindani: I want to baby trust me but things here in the palace are a lot and I need to be here to help out with everything



Zizi: I get you babe, I knew what I was putting myself into when I fell in love with you

Lindani: what are you trying to say to me now baby?

Zizi: nothing, so you not gonna come bad anytime soon?

Lindani: I will make a plan, you know I always do

Zizi: yeah I know, I hope you eating well and they are taking care of you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Lindani laughs.

Lindani: I'm okay no need to worry darling

Zizi: Mhm

Lindani: I love you so much baby and I promise I will be by your side as soon as I'm done with this bullshit

Zizi giggles.

Zizi: I love you more

they stayed on the phone and continued to chat.

[UNKNOWN POV]

NOVELSGURU.COM

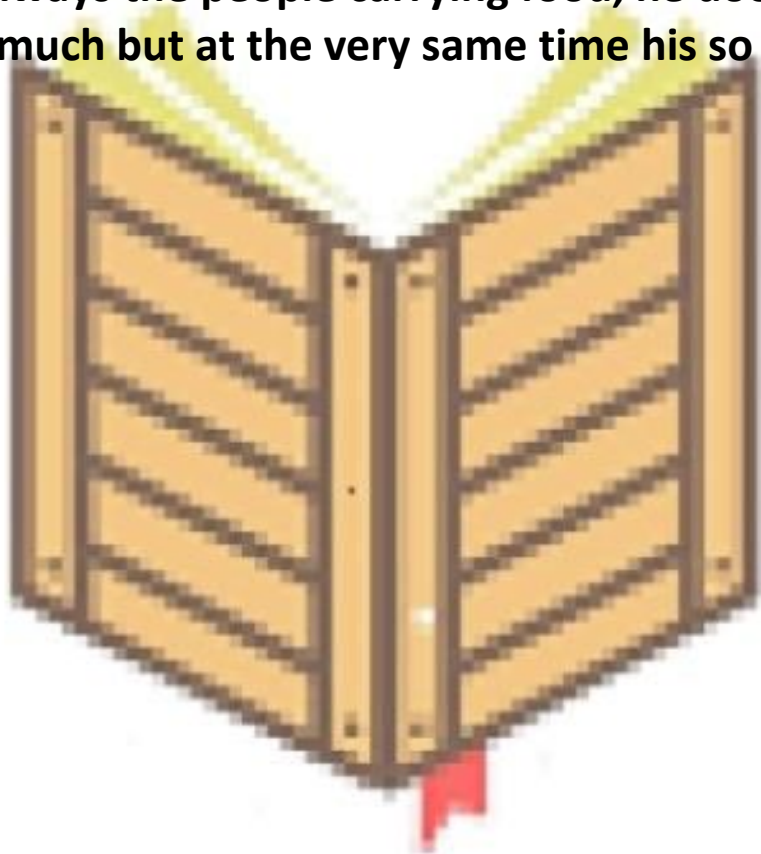
She watches him as he goes around walking not know where his heading but his walking with his head down and his hands stuffed on his dirty hoodie.



you could feel your nose getting blocked while looking at the hoodie cause all you know is that it smells really bad.

She has noticed his he goes around mugging everyone, he doesn't hurt them but he just takes what he needs.

mostly it's always the people carrying food, he doesn't talk, he doesn't say much but at the very same time his so observant.



NOVELSGURU.COM

the way he sits by the corner each days calculating his next move, who is he going to steal from again? she asked herself.

right ad she was thinking the guy got up and snatched the plastic from an old lady, the poor lady was left there shouting and crying.

who does such? she asked herself once again shaking her head as she continues to pick up the veggies she was sent to get by her aunty.

.
. .

Nkosie set in his study while Khwezi was downstairs busy with her school work, he made a call to the suppliers boss.

the phone rang and he kept on playing with his pen waiting for the phone to be answered.

it was answered.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: Dain we need to talk if...

"sorry sir but Mr Dain is not here, but I can leave a massage for him" the lady answers the call.

Nkosie: Listen get your ass up right now and go tell your boss if he knows what's good for him, he would drag his was and come talk to me on the phone, get that?

he says in a calm down yet it was demanding, he continued to play with his pen while staring at the blank wall.

"I will get him for you sir, who is this calling?" she asks.

Nkosie: tell him it's King



NOVELSGURU.COM

he smiles a little while saying his name, see Nkosie doesn't appreciate being called by his original name but he prefers King.

he takes it as a name of respect.

Dain: King, I'm kinda busy at the moment with something

Nkosie: but for sure you can led me a little of your time, it won't be that long trust me unless you gonna argue about it

Dain: I wouldn't dare argue with you, now how may I help you?

Nkosie: I need those weapons transported to me in 5 hours, I need them asap

Dain: you know that's not how it works King

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I don't care how things work right now I'm the clients and what I say goes unless you want me to subtract a huge amount of money from the money I will be paying you?

Dian: no no no don't do that but what I'm...

Nkosie: get me my stuff Dain or we gonna have a very huge problem, I got eyes everywhere and I got my people that side. you don't want to be written on my book of bad people now do you?

Dain: *sighs* I will we what I can do

Nkosie: don't be late

he hung up.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he stood up and pours himself some whiskey, he checks the time and the delivery will be made at 20:00pm.

he notified his brothers and he continued with his work files, everything is a mess and there's a lot of clients that were unattended and a lot of people dropping out from the partnership they had with the Mthembu Company because of Sakhile.

but fear not Nkosie will fix everything.

there was a knock on the door, he doesn't lift his head up at all he is just focused on his work.

Khwezi walks in and she leans on the door frame, folds her arms and looks at her man whose been working ever since he picked her up.

Khwezi: Mvelase... NOVELSGURU.COM

she says in a low tone and Nkosie doesn't respond at all, here's a thing once Nkosie starts with his work he does not want to be disturbed at all.

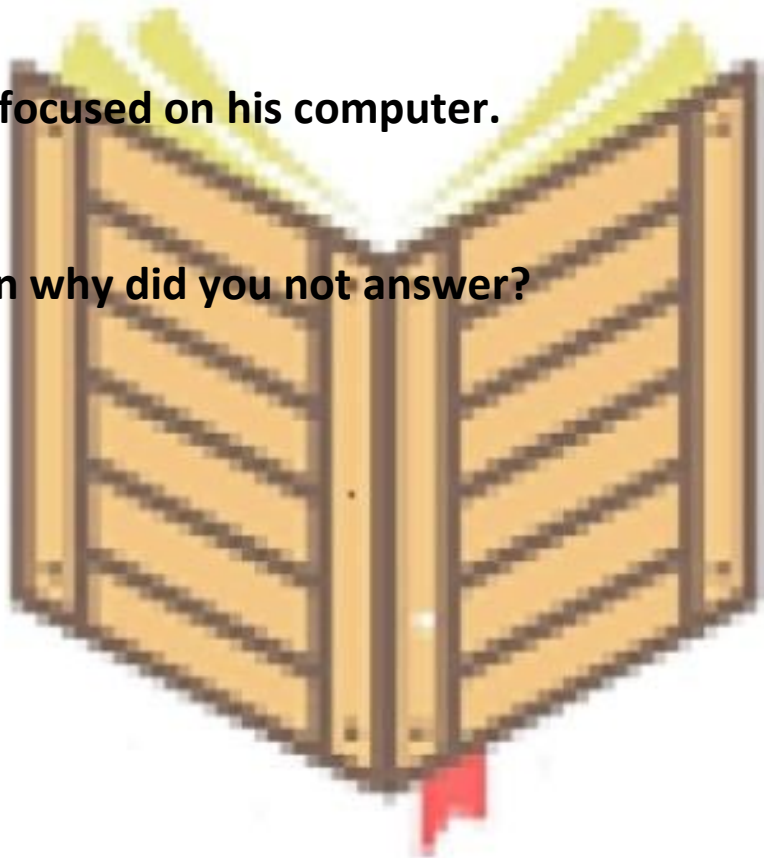
Khwezi: Mvelase...

she says once again but a little louder.

Nkosie: you know I heard you the first time

he says still focused on his computer.

Khwezi: then why did you not answer?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I don't know maybe I'm just busy

Khwezi: ohh but you have been busy eversince we got here, you havens kissed, touched, or said a word to me since

she says then releases a heavy sigh.

Nkosie: we talking ain't we, baby look I'm kinda busy at the moment and can you close the door on your way out

Khwezi looks at her man and she frowns.

Khwezi: it's okay I will leave you with your work, make sure that you continue dating with that work, marry that work and I wish you a happy marriage and I hope it gives you a lot of babies

she says a walks out, Nkosie smiles a little, he got up from his chair and rushes to Khwezi whose walking by the hallways with her arms folded.

Nkosie: baby?

she continues to walk.

Nkosie: baby, look at me

he gently grabs her by the arms and she turns to face him, he smiles looking deep into her eyes and drawn in by her beauty.

Nkosie: sorry baby I didn't mean it like that, I just got a lot of work I need to take care of and I didn't mean to talk like that with you

Khwezi: you done with your work? I thought you was busy



NOVELSGURU.COM

she rolls her eyes and looks the other direction, Nkosie laughs a little.

Nkosie: ngyaxolisa njena Mapholoba (I'm deeply sorry Mapholoba)

she glances at him, she fights the smile but she's unable to win.

Khwezi: I hate it when you work yourself like this, I really do love a smart, hard working man but baby you need to take a break

Nkosie: you love smart man? mmmh that means you love me

Khwezi: Nkosie don't flatter yourself, I did not say I love you *smiles* I just said I love snark and hard working man, there are a lot of smart and hard working man in this planet

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: but you only got your eyes on one right?

he held her by the waist and they lock eyes, she smiles and bites her lower lip, he looks at the way she bites her lip and he had those little thoughts of how he would love to bite that lip

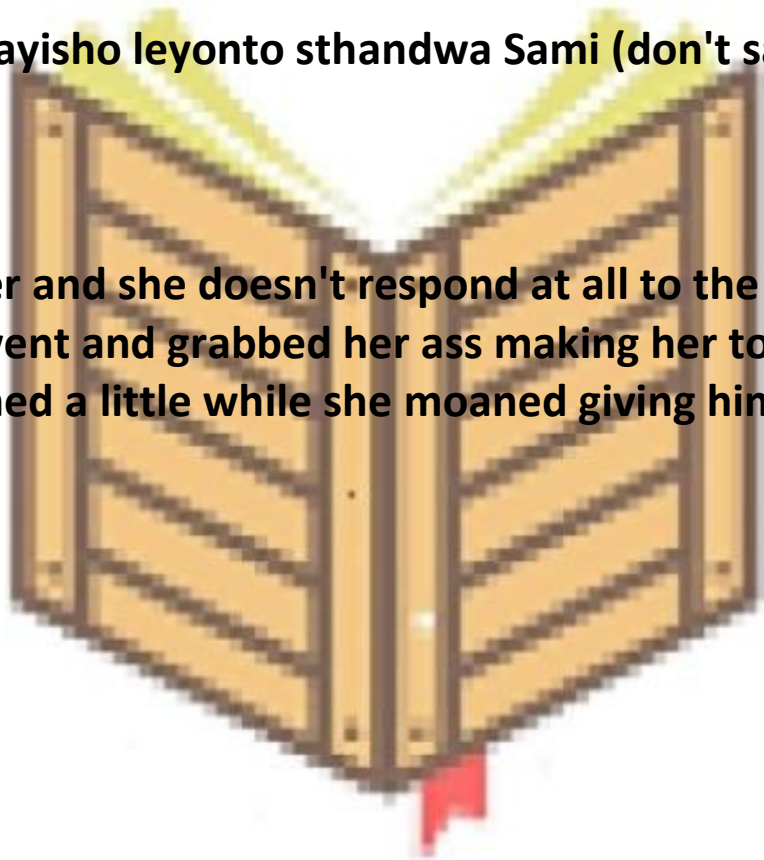
for her.

Khwezi: yeah I do but his now to busy to pay attention to me

Nkosie pulls her in for a kiss.

Nkosie: ungayisho leyonto sthandwa Sami (don't say that my love)

he kissed her and she doesn't respond at all to the kiss, he smiles, he went and grabbed her ass making her to moan, her mouth opened a little while she moaned giving him access.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he takes her lower lip and she takes the top lip, she doesn't give in at fist but the temptation was hard for her to resist.

she kisses him back and all you could here was the sound of them kissing, how beautiful is that.

Khwezi was so in the kiss but Nkosie decided to pull out.

Nkosie: give me 10 more minutes baby and I will be yours

Khwezi: ten minutes that's a lot, 6 minutes then

Nkosie: that's a little mos MaMvelase

Khwezi: cause you complaining I'm gonna make it 4 minutes

Nkosie: ngenzeni koda le engaka mama (what crime did I commit momma?)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: the crime of being busy

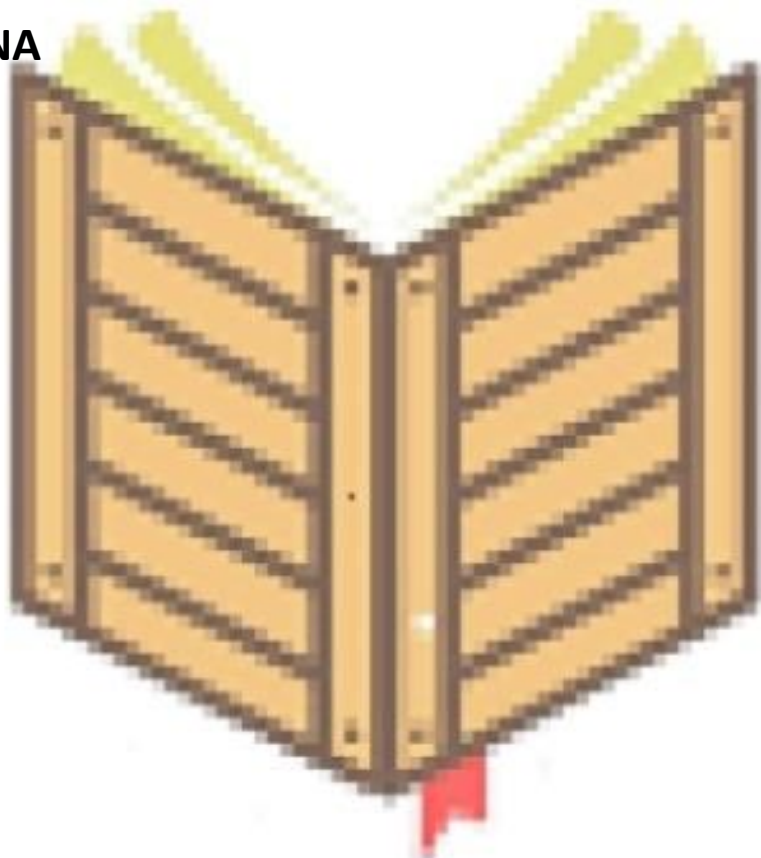
she giggles and Nkosie steals a kiss, Khwezi pulls out.

Khwezi: you have four minutes mister

she says heading downstairs leaving Nkosie, he walks back to his study and he finished up with his work.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 111

NARRATIVE.

After the four minutes Nkosie went downstairs, Khwezi was in the living room watching cartoons.

Nkosie: cartoons, really baby?

Khwezi: you got anything better we can watch while we wait for my busy man

she says and cuddles the couch pillow while looking sad, Nkosie chuckled.

he set next to her, the couch is big enough for them to sit or even lay down.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he pulls her closer to him and she lays in between his legs with the back of her head on his chest.

he places his one arms on her left shoulder and kisses her all over her face to lighten her up, she laughs and giggles.

Khwezi: Nkosie!!

she held his arms which was on her shoulder, she looks up and him, he accidentally kisses her nose.

she giggles.

Khwezi: buka uyageja (look you missed)

Nkosie: I didn't, I wanted to kiss this English nose of yours



NOVELSGURU.COM

he kisses the nose again.

Khwezi: you lying

Nkosie: indoda ayiwaqambi amanga (a man doesn't lie)

Khwezi: and then the conversation dies

Nkosie laughs.

Nkosie: give me kiss

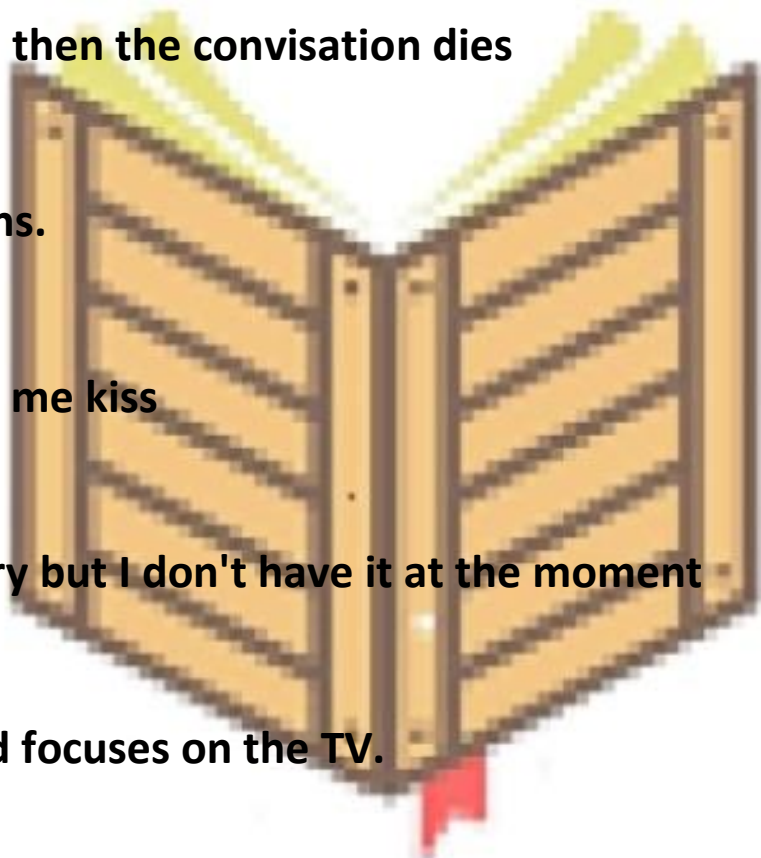
Khwezi: sorry but I don't have it at the moment

she says and focuses on the TV.

Nkosie: don't be ice cream baby come on

he kissed her on the cheek and she smiles, he noticed that smile and kissed her on the cheek once again.

Khwezi: just because I want one



NOVELSGURU.COM

she turns around to face him and Nkosie smiles at how cute his women is being right now, she's now kneeling in between his legs.

he had his hands on her waist while looking at her eyes then down at her lips, both their chest touching each other.

Imagine Khwezi arching her back a little bit and her baby bump showing at the bottom of the t-shirt as it's lifted a little.



NOVELSGURU.COM

their lips touch and they share a long passionate kiss filled with lots of emotions, both their bodies responding to each other.

Khwezi didn't want to take it any further so she pulled out, Nkosie pulling her back for a kiss with his eyes half closed.

Khwezi: Mvelase...

she bites her lower lip resisting to go any further, Nkosie licks his lips, he opens his eyes few moments later.

Nkosie: go get ready

Khwezi: get ready? why should I go get ready?

Nkosie: because I want to take you out

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: hello who are you? and what have you done to my man?

Nkosie: what have I...girl what you trying to say about me?

he says in a sassy voice, Khwezi laughs cause she did not know that side even existed.

Khwezi: you never take me out well you used to, you don't even buy me flowers

Nkosie: so you telling me I never bought you flowers?

Khwezi: maybe I don't remember but if you did buy me flowers that means you did it once



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: hhayi ke over to you my dhiye

he claps his hands, Khwezi laughs even louder.

Khwezi: are you serious babe?

Nkosie: yes go get ready

Khwezi: you do know we use the same room right and you also have to get ready

Nkosie: yes I know darling

Khwezi: come get ready with me then

she looks into his eyes.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: get ready with you huh?

he asked as she stood up and played with her fingers while looking down.



Nkosie: I like your idea

Khwezi: don't get ahead of yourself

she folds her arms and Nkosie smirks.

Nkosie: shhhh baby let's go take a shower

he held her from behind and they walked slowly upstairs since Nkosie was holding onto Khwezi.



NOVELSGURU.COM

they arrived and Khwezi went to the bathroom, she stripped naked and got inside the shower, she started of by washing her hair since she undid her braids.

she got done and Nkosie steps inside the shower, he pulls her closer to his and held both her arms while he kissed her neck.

Nkosie: you were saying?

Khwezi: I think this was a very good idea

Nkosie: you think? baby you just had the right thing in mind

he says in a deep voice, she turns around, smashes her lips on his, he responds almost immediately. he lifts her one leg and then the actions began.

the rest was history. NOVELSGURU.COM

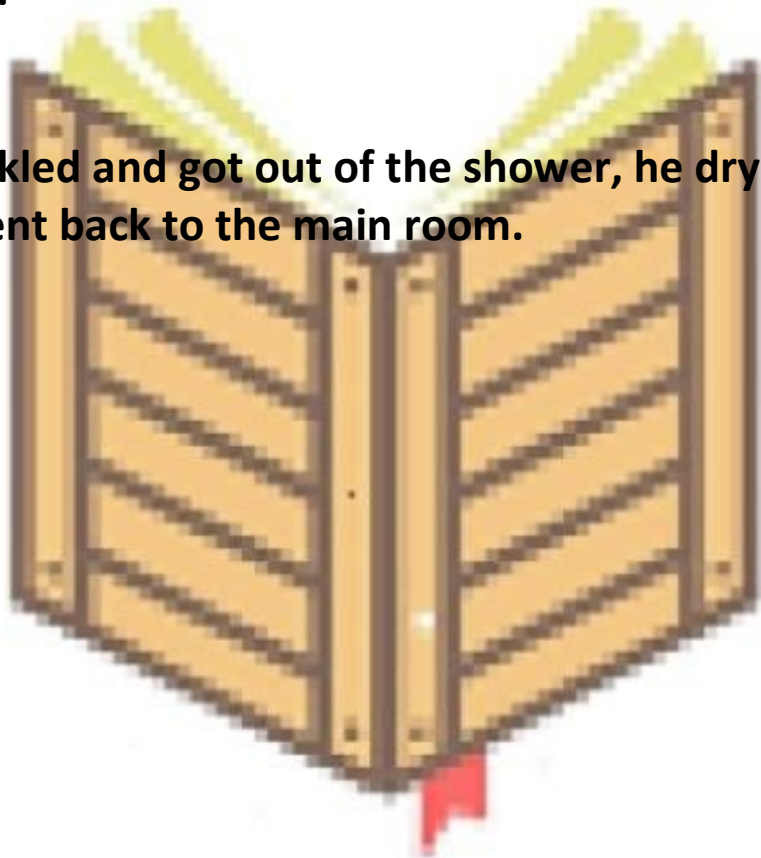
after the steamy session they both bathed, Khwezi was the first to step out of the shower and dry her body.

Nkosie stayed there for a few minutes cooking himself off, Khwezi watches him and the water drips on his well built body.

Nkosie: you want to have some again?

he asks and she turns around pretending as if she wasn't looking at it.

Nkosie chuckled and got out of the shower, he dries his body and they went back to the main room.



NOVELSGURU.COM

they lotioned their bodies.

Khwezi: baby what was it that you were so busy with?

Nkosie: it's work I told you didn't I babe?

Khwezi: I know for a fact that ain't work related, what's up? y'all having problems with clients or something...

Nkosie: *sighs* baby let's not talk about THAT work, I don't want you involved in it

Khwezi: you promised to not hide anything from me

she pouts, Nkosie sighs.

Nkosie: it's just the jobs we are working on, we still conducting the first job and baby I'm gonna be busy for a while

Khwezi: for how long?

Nkosie: three or four weeks



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: mood spoilt

she set on the bed and she sighed.

Nkosie: I know its gonna be unfare for you but I will make time for us baby

Khwezi: I know you will what I worried about is the appointment we have next week



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: relax I wouldn't miss that baby

Khwez: Mhm

Nkosie: now please stop being sad cause I ain't like it when you sad baby

he went and kissed her on the cheek, she smiles.

they got dressed and wore matching outfits, they took a couple of pictures which they posted.

Nkosie drove to the mall and he parks the car outside, the sun was setting and they walk inside the mall hand in hand.

the stares they got were a lot but they continued to walk.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: so what you want us to do baby?

Khwezi: hawu kanti futhi I have to choose?

Nkosie: anything you want baby

Khwezi: anything as in like anything like yohh anything baby?

Nkosie: okay I'm gonna regret this

he mumbles and Khwezi looked excited.

-
-



NOVELSGURU.COM

.
FOREVA YENA

Insert 112

NARRATIVE.

It was night time and the weapons were all delivered to Nkosie safely and they arrived in time.

Nkosie had his me surround the area just in case the buyer decides to double cross or have a plan B which is to kill them right at the spot.

Sya was right next to Nkosie with his gun ready to take down any motherfucker who decides yo do anything stupid.

Sandile was in charge of making sure that the weapons are being guarded by the truck and that every weapon is in place.

Nkanyezi is standing on the left next to Nkosie with his gun in hand.

the client stood opposite Nkosie.

Him: well if it isn't the Mthembu brothers

he chuckles.

Nkosie: gentleman let's get to business shall we

Him: ohh don't rush me King, we got all day why you in a hurry?



NOVELSGURU.COM

he says looking at Nkosie whose facial expression reads NO EMOTIONS .

Nkosie: you not the only person I'm dealing with, so give me my money and I will give you your weapons then we will go our separate ways simple as that

Him: you really are a hard person to find

Nkosie remains silent and looks at the client in the eyes.

Him: okay okay *laugh a little* get him the money before he starts crying

Nkosie smirks.

Sya: now we talking business

NOVELSGURU.COM

he smiles a little looking at Nkosie who doesn't smile at all, the guys came with the money which were in three large bags, they opened the begs and placed them infront of Nkosie.

Nkosie: check the money

He said to Nkanyezi who nods, he placed his gun at the back of his pants and reached out for one beg.

he signaled the rest of his team to take the begs, they checked the money and everything was sorted.

Nkanyezi went and whispered to Nkosie.

Him: well give me my stuff

Nkanyezi: everything is good



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you sure?

Nkanyezi: yes I'm sure

Nkosie nods and Nkanyezi steps back.

Him: and then? you have your money now give me my stuff

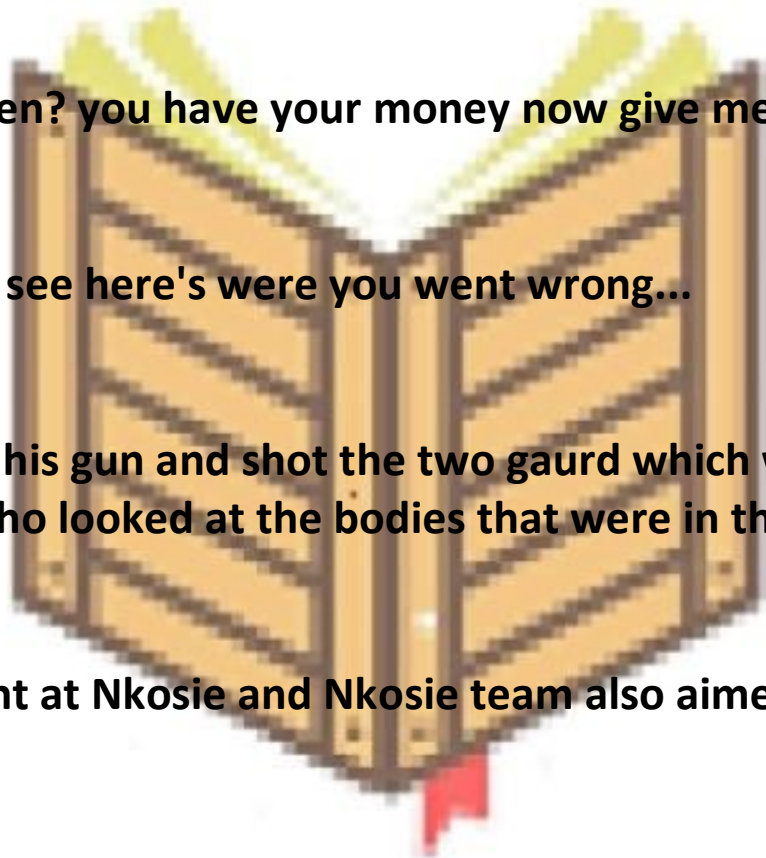
Nkosie: you see here's were you went wrong...

he took out his gun and shot the two gaurd which were next to the client who looked at the bodies that were in the floor.

all guns point at Nkosie and Nkosie team also aimed at the client.

Nkosie: you don't order me around and you don't get to talk to me as you please

Him: what the fuck?



NOVELGURU.COM

Nkosie: next time imma aim right at you, your weapons are in the truck and don't ever contact me, I ain't got time to do business with people who ain't know the meaning of business

he clicks his tongue and walks inside his car, he drove and Nkanyezi took the cash, she got inside his car and so did Sandile.

the gaurds followed the brothers as they all drove out, the client got his weapons though he was a little sad he won't be doing business with Nkosie again.

I guess he ruined shit for himself.



NOVELSGURU.COM

they drove to the warehouse and Nkosie gave the gaurd their share of money, he put the ready of the money in the safe.

THE FOLLOWING DAY.

Nkosie woke up early in the morning and he took a shower, Khwezi was still asleep so he had something in mind.

he went and prepared breakfast for his women once he was done getting dressed.

he made her a Friday breakfast and he was in a very good mood, Khwezi came downstairs dressed in his shirt which was big on her.

she rubs her eyes.

Khwezi: baby *yawns* it's smells good

she smiles and places her hand on her chin looking at Nkosie.

Nkosie: yes I decided to make breakfast for the most beautiful

women who stole my heart out of a billion women in this world

Khwezi giggles.

Khwezi: baby you didn't have to, you are going to be late for work

Nkosie: I'm the boss baby I'm never late, plus I wanted to spoil you a little I feel like I haven't been doing much lately



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: ncoah baby thank you

she moved to his side and gave him a hug then followed by a kiss on the lip.

Khwezi: I love you

Nkosie: I love you more

he smiles.

Khwezi: enough of the loving, seriously though there has to be an occasion did you crack a business deal or something

Nkosie: can't I spoil baby? tell me and I will stop

Khwezi: no no no I'm just asking

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: there is non baby

he dishes up for the both of them and set down and ate.

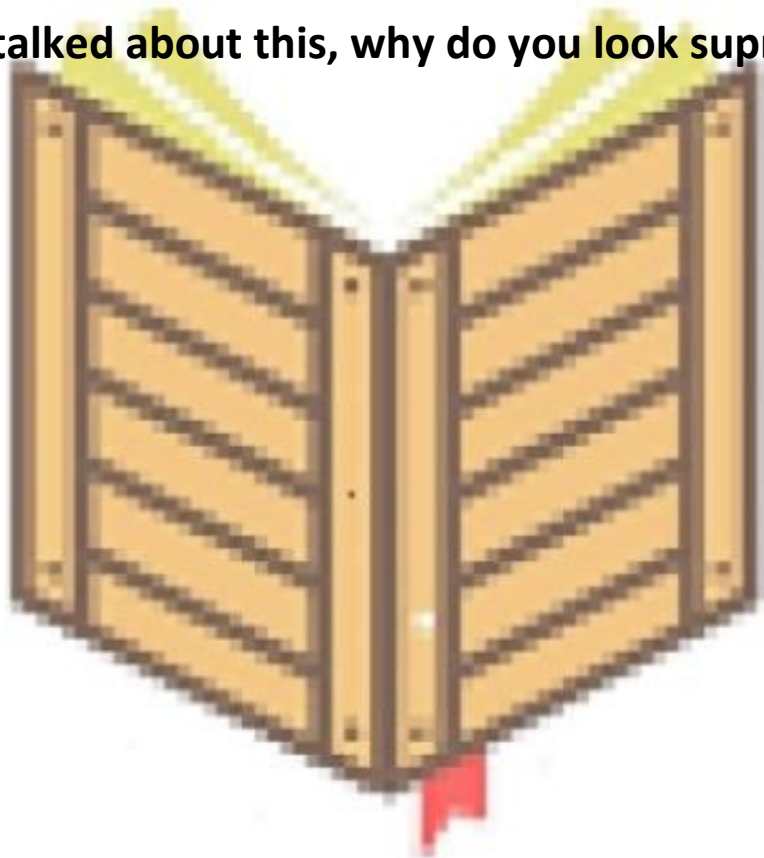


Nkosie: so my father has sent a letter to your family

Khwezi: y'all did what?!

she says out loud, that took her by suprise

Nkosie: we talked about this, why do you look suprised?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: yes we did talk about it but we agreed on talking about it before you guys send the letter, do you know how dramatic my mother can be? the questions Nkosie?

Nkosie laughs a little.

Nkosie: for a second there I thought you are mad at me, also don't worry about it she won't panic and as soon as she sees me she will love me

Khwezi: do you know my mother? she won't even like you for the fact that you got me pregnant then married me

Nkosie: ohh that, but baby she will have to love me

Khwezi shakes her head.

Khwezi: just wait and see, you know when we talking about a dramatic women...that's my mother there

Nkosie: you just over exaggerating

Khwezi: watch and see baby watch and see



NOVELS.GURU.COM

she took a bite on her toast, she made a sandwich once she was fine eating the breakfast, she set down and ate while Nkosie was still eating.

Nkosie: uyadla mfana (you eat shame(

Khwezi: I'm eating for four baby

Nkosie: iyafuhlela mfana



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi gives him a side eyes.

Khwezi: you the one that out these three babies inside me

Nkosie: I feel like I should have put seven

Khwezi's eyes go wide.

Khwezi: you the one who was gonna give birth to them, haybo seven? you are insane with whose vagina...yohh

Nkosie laughs.

Khwezi: and then you laugh, you man have no mentality

Nkosie: sukungibedela wena

NOVELSGURU.COM

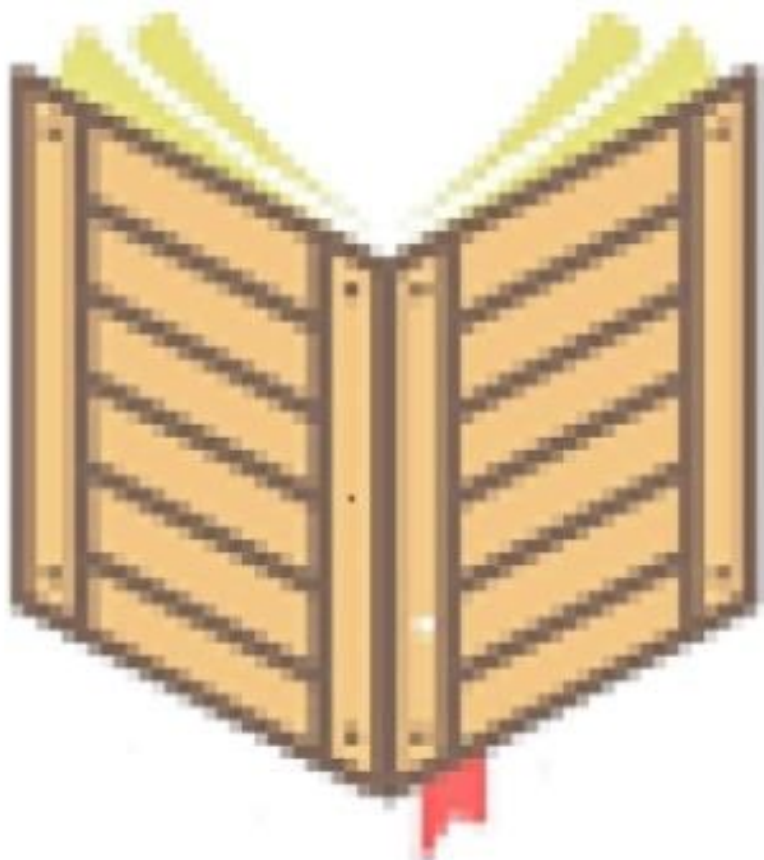
Khwezi pouts and walks out shaking her booty.

Nkosie: ngadla mina!!

he whistles and Khwezi died in laughter.

-
-
-
-

Nosi just got done with a surgery and she is exhausted, she hasn't talked to Sya eversince she said no on going out with him.



NOVELSGURU.COM

she feels like it's wrong of her to go out with other man while she has a boyfriend whom she's starting to question herself if she really loves him or not.

she did not eat anything in the morning since she was so stressed out about the surgery, it was her first time performing and gold stone removal surgery.

she got inside her office and set down on her chair and sighed, she took out her phone and she called Mvelo.

it went straight to voicemail and she tried again but still, so she gathered the courage and she called Sya.

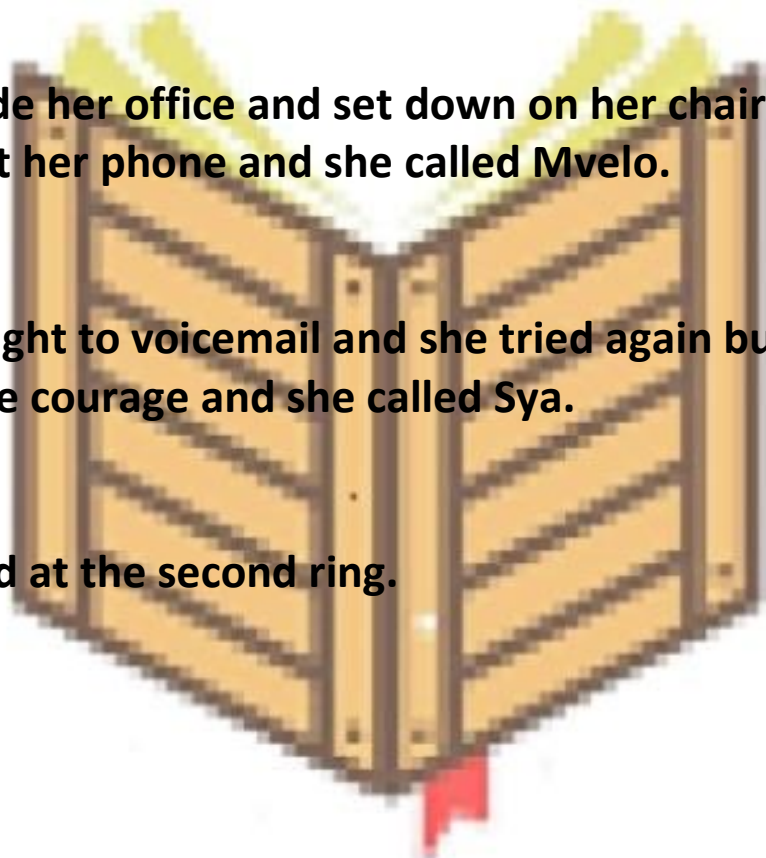
he answered at the second ring.

Sya: sho

Nosi: sho? hello bhuti you know who you talking to?

there was some laughing at the background.

Sya: shit, Nosi? God I did not check who was calling, how are you? are you okay?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: it seems like I'm disturbing you...I can call another time

Sya: you not disturbing me trust me I have been looking for an excuse to leave these rats

Nosi: ohh, you remember that foot massage you wanted to give me but I denied

Sya: yes what about it?

Nosi: is the offer still standing or I'm late



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: you are very late but I would agree on one condition though

Nosi: what condition?

Sya: go out with me

Nosi: I would rather die in foot pain, why do you always want to go out with me? I mean I went with you the other time

Sya: I can also take you out for the third or hundredth time as long as you there, I really enjoy spending time with you and every moment spent with you seems like...

Nosi: but I have a boyfriend

Sya: please Nosi don't bring a their person into this, we are friend right so I'm just taking you out as a friend

Nosi: what if you end up not being able to hold yourself like the last time?



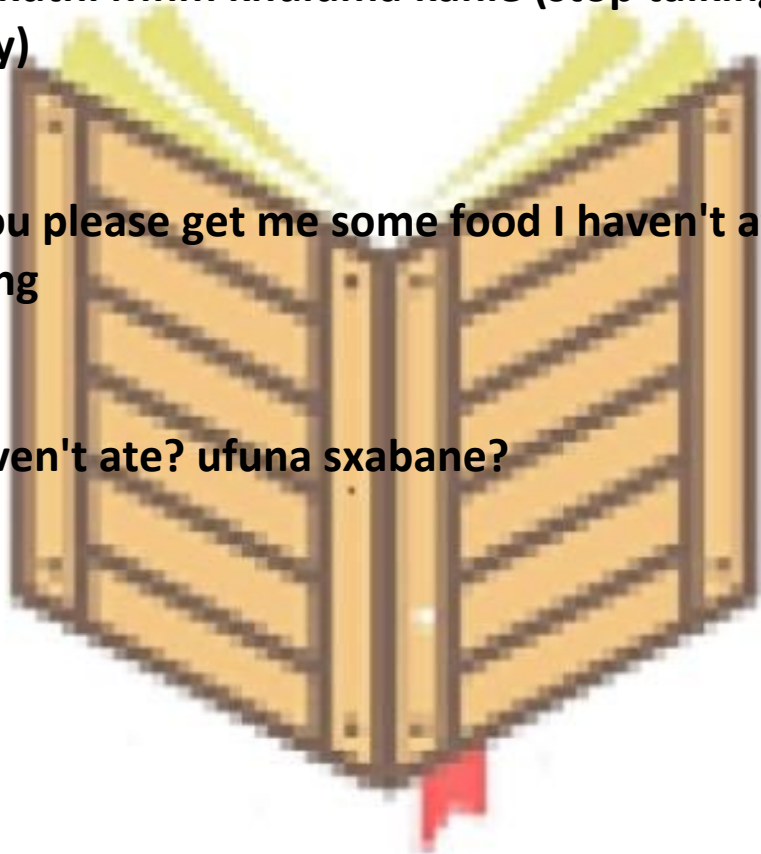
Sya: then I don't know but you can't deny to go out with me because you have a boyfriend, I just want to take you out as a friend and spend some time with you

Nosi: Mhm

Sya: musa ukuthi Mhm khuluma kahle (stop talking like that, talk properly)

Nosi: Can you please get me some food I haven't ate anything since morning

Sya: you haven't ate? ufuna sxabane?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: what will lead us to arguing?

Sya: you did not eat

Nosi: I was stressed

Sya: but you can't just leave without eating, how is your brain suppose to function, you a doctor infact and surgeon...

Nosi: okay best friend come feed me then I'm starving

Sya: uyabheda yazii

he laughs a little.

Nosi: bring me something nice and don't forget some ice cream

NOVELSGURU.COM

sya: it will melt along the way

Nosi: I want it melted then I don't care

Sya: you are a psycho

Nosi: I'm hanging up

Sya: I will be there soon, eat an apple or something while waiting

Nosi: fine I will, don't keep me waiting



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: stop being a cry baby sisi

Nosi: mxm bye

she hung up and smiled.

•
•
•

FOREVA YENA

Insert 113

NOSIPHO.



She playing a game on her phone when her office door opened and Sya walks in with a Spur brown beg.

Nosi giggles.

NOVELSGURU.COM

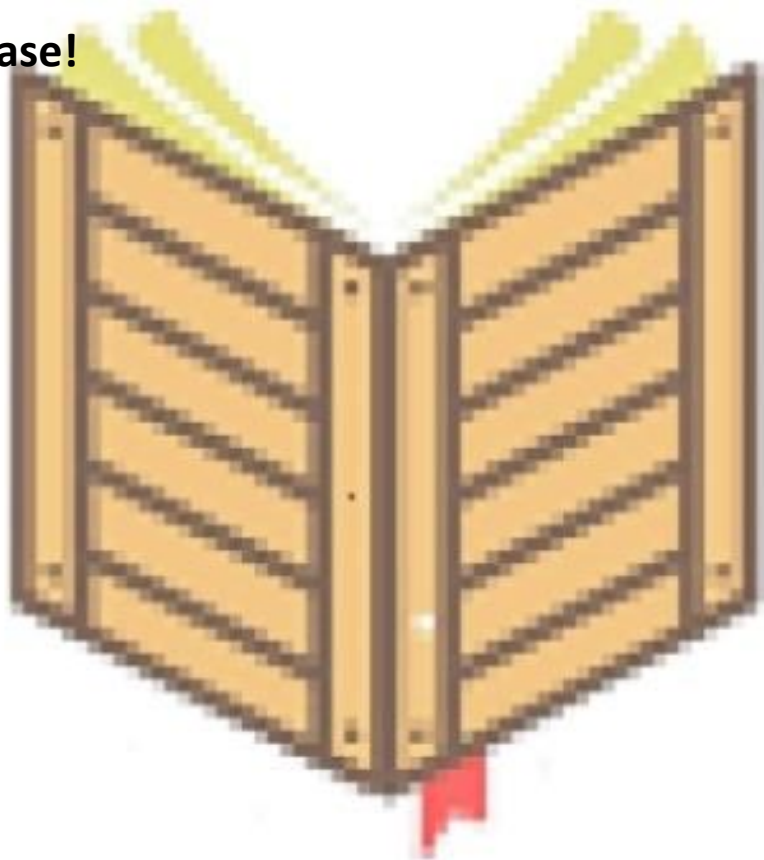
Sya: don't be forward

Nosi: Sya I'm hungry hawu

she says, Sya shook his head and Nosi stood up, she went pushed Sya in a way of teasing him.

Sya: you are testing me

Nosi: oh please!



NOVELSGURU.COM

she rolls her eyes and giggles, Sya watches her, they went to the couch. Nosi's office is very big, it had a desk which has a her chair and two visitors chairs.

there's a beautiful view of the city, a two seat couch, a mini table and a shelf.

Sya: please don't starve yourself

Nosi: please stop making it a big deal, I was just stressed that's all plus you are here to calm down my stress

Sya: more like add to it

Nosi pinches him.

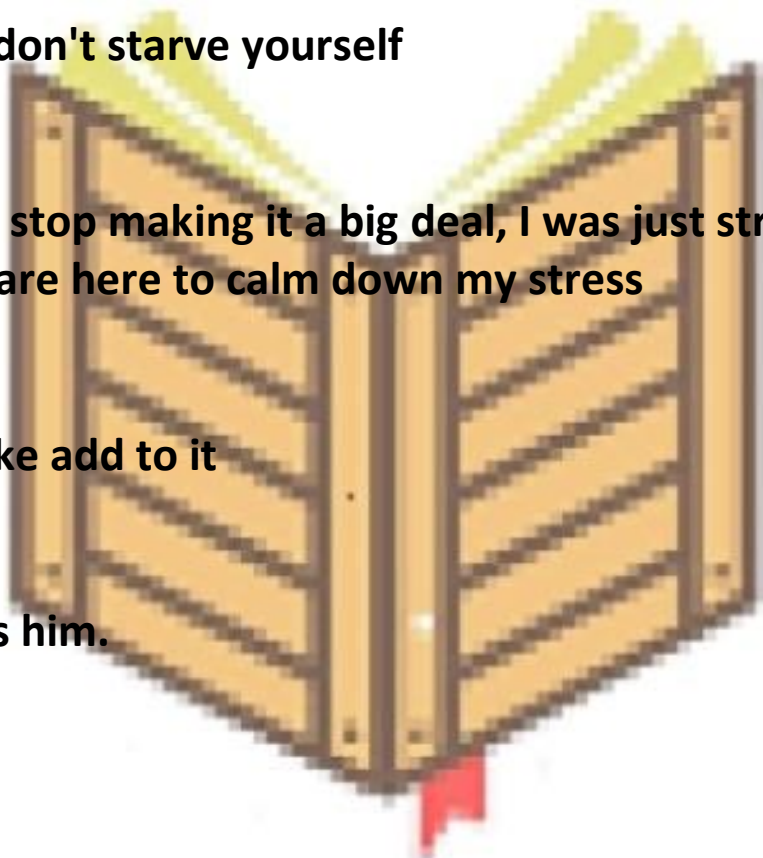
Sya: Ouch!!

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: I have never met a forward guy like you

Sya: I'm the best of them trust me

Nosi rolls her eyes and lays her head on his shoulder.



Sya: so tell me, you gonna go out with me?

Nosi: when we go out what we gonna do cause you ait always gonna take me to candle light dinners right?

Sya: *chuckles* so you want me to take you to a club?

Nosi: hell naw that place is nosey and I hate nose



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: I'm joking maybe we can go to paris

Nosi: Paris, a day thing Siya be serious man

Sya: I can't really tell you the plans cause that's me spoiling everything for you

Nosi: ohh come on

Sya: but it will be during the day because I got work at night

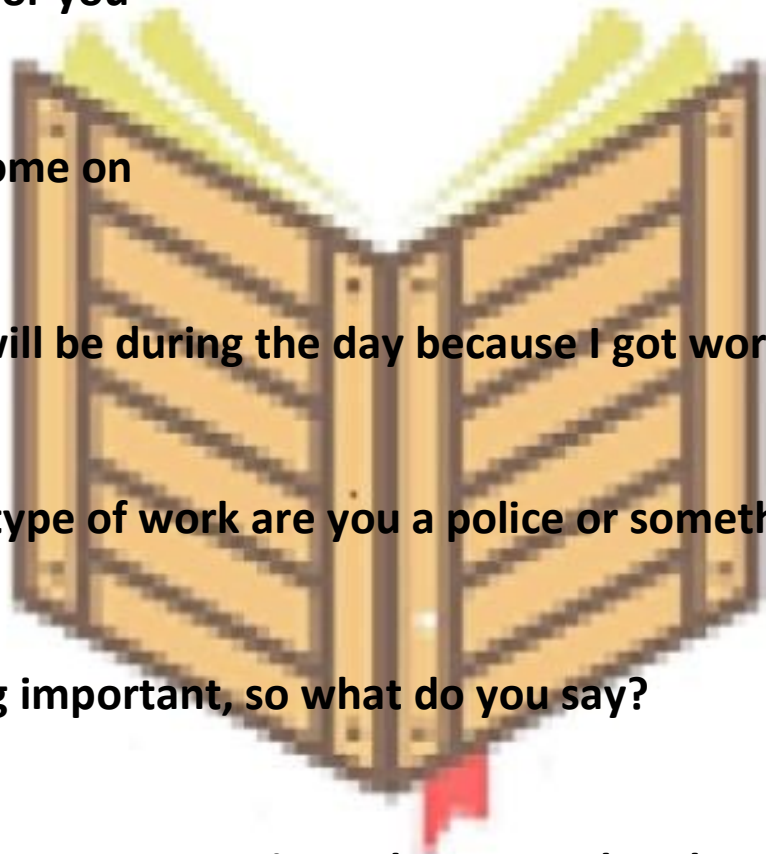
Nosi: what type of work are you a police or something?

Sya: nothing important, so what do you say?

Nosi: as long as you promise to keep your hands to yourself and I'm serious this time

Sya: ohh keep my hands to myself

he asks looking at Nosi.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: uyadika yazi

she folds her arms.

Sya: I like it when you sad

Nosi: well I don't like it also



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sta starts tickling Nosi whose laugh filled the whole room.

Nosi: Sya Sya stop dude the fuck...

she laughs as Sya continued.

Nosi: stop!

still laughing, Sya stops after a few minutes.

Nosi was catching her breath.

Nosi: you are a motherfucker shame

Sya: kahle kahle nje sisi

Nosi: why would you do that though?

Sya: I wanted to hear your beautiful laugh

they lock eyes.



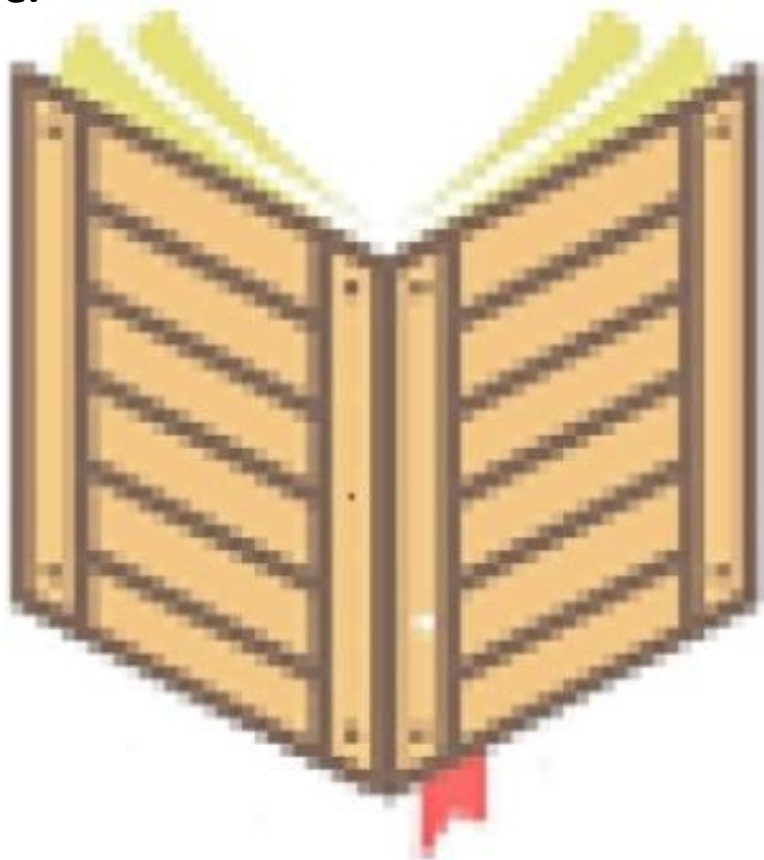
NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi looks away.

Nosi: my laugh ain't cute trust me I have been told

as they were sitting Mvelo walked in and he saw how comfy the two were.

Nosi: babe



NOVELSGURU.COM

she smirks and got up to give him a hug.

Sya just set on the couch fixing himself.

Mvelo: it's a coincidence that this guys us always in your office

Nosi: Him? he is just a friend of mine

Mvelo: he doesn't have a name?

Sya: it's Sya if you don't mind don't talk to her like that, she's your women

Mvelo: telling me about my women, do you even have a girlfriend?

Sya looks at Nosi. NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: yes I do have a girlfriend

that took Nosi by suprise.



Mvelo: then you would be feeling the same way I'm feeling if you found your girl with a other man

Sya: I wouldn't because I trust her and know she wouldn't do anything as such

Mvelo chuckles.

Mvelo: you must really love your girl



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: wholeheartedly

he says that looking at Nosi not that Mvelo noticed, it was in a low key way.

Mvelo: how about you guys join me and my women on a date tomorrow

Nosi: baby Sya has work tomorrow

Mvelo: you even know that he has work

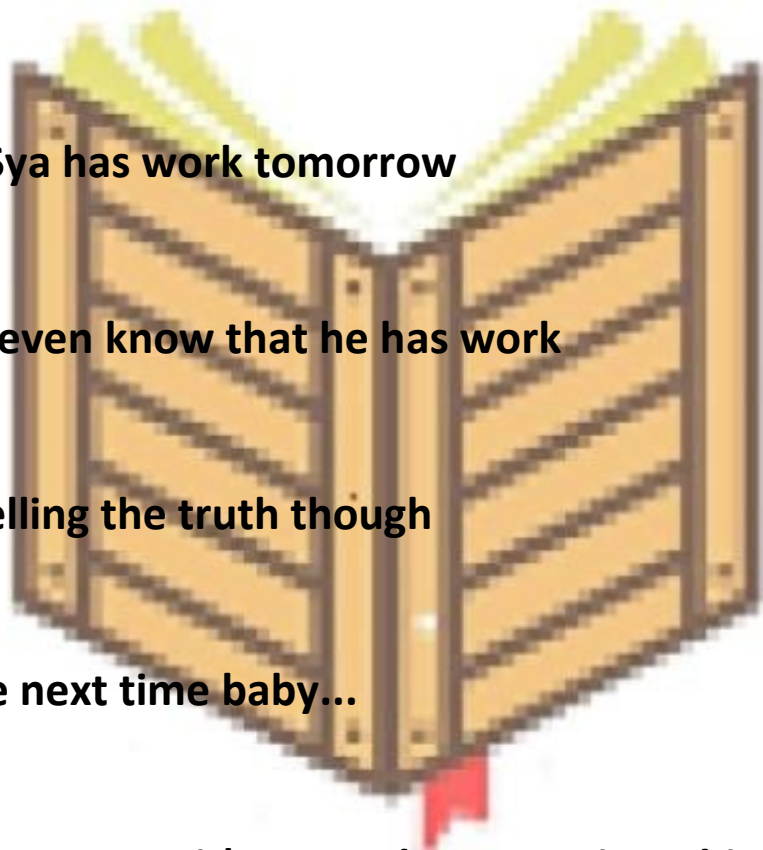
Sya: she's telling the truth though

Nosi: maybe next time baby...

Mvelo: ohh come on, it's gonna be a one time thing and I'm sure the two ladies wouldn't mind getting to know each other and I would also love to get to know you bro

Sya: I don't do friends but why not, it's cool I will talk to my girl

Mvelo: great then see yah

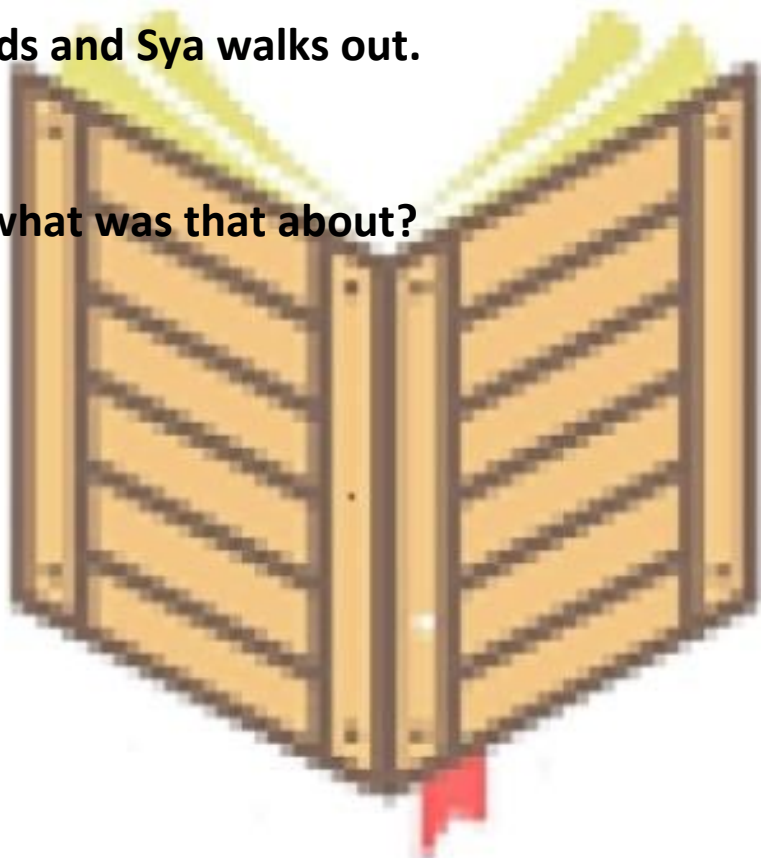


Nosi just stood there with questions that need answers, she rolls her eyes.

Sya: I will see you okay?

Nosi just nods and Sya walks out.

Nosi: babe what was that about?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mvelo: just wanted to make sure of something.

.
.

. SYATHOKAZA.

He got inside his car and started to think what he is you g to do about the situations his in. firstly why did he lie? that's what he is asking himself cause he does not have any girlfriend.

Sya: fuck!

he starts his car.

.
.

. KHWEZILOKUSA.

She and Zizi just got out of class, they decided to go to McDonalds to get something nice to eat.

the driver drops them off at the mall and they went inside, they went to McDonalds.

NOVELSGURU.COM

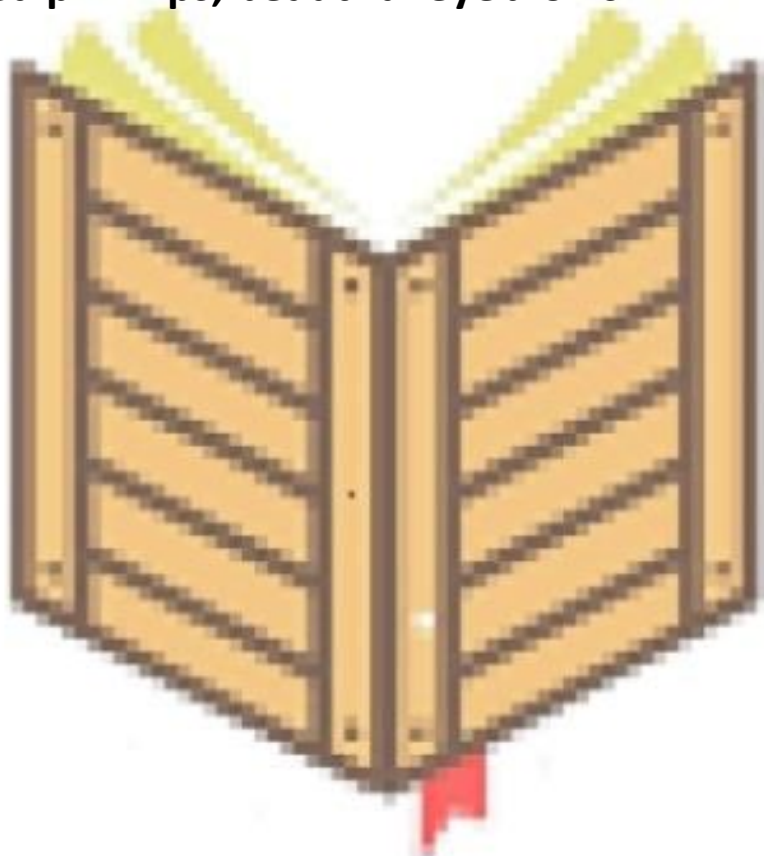
Khwezi was the one who went up to take the order since she wanted to.

while she was standing in the lime she felt someone tap her on the shoulder, she did not bother to turn around nor pay

attention to the person but got irritated when the person taps her again.

she turns only for her eyes to meet with this incredibly handsome dark chocolate guy with brown eyes.

medium sized pink lips, beautiful eyebrows.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he smirks.

Him: hey

Khwezi: I ignored you for a reason so stop

Him: why did you ignore me?

Khwezi: I don't like people tapping my shoulder

Him: I'm sorry then

Khwezi: whatever

He smiles.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: what's your name?

Khwezi: I don't have one

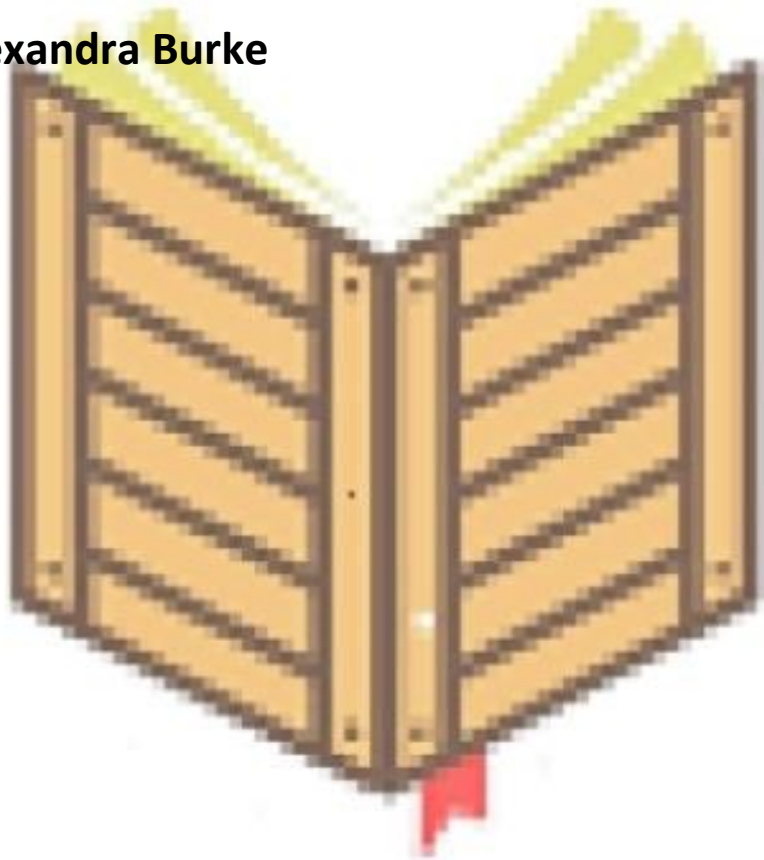


He chuckles.

Him: oh come on

Khwezi: who wants to know?

Him: I'm Alexandra Burke



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: okay then

she turns and folds her arms.

Alex: has anyone ever told you how beautiful you are

Khwezi: yeah my man did

she says with a smile and the women in front of her chuckles.

Alex: you really are beautiful though

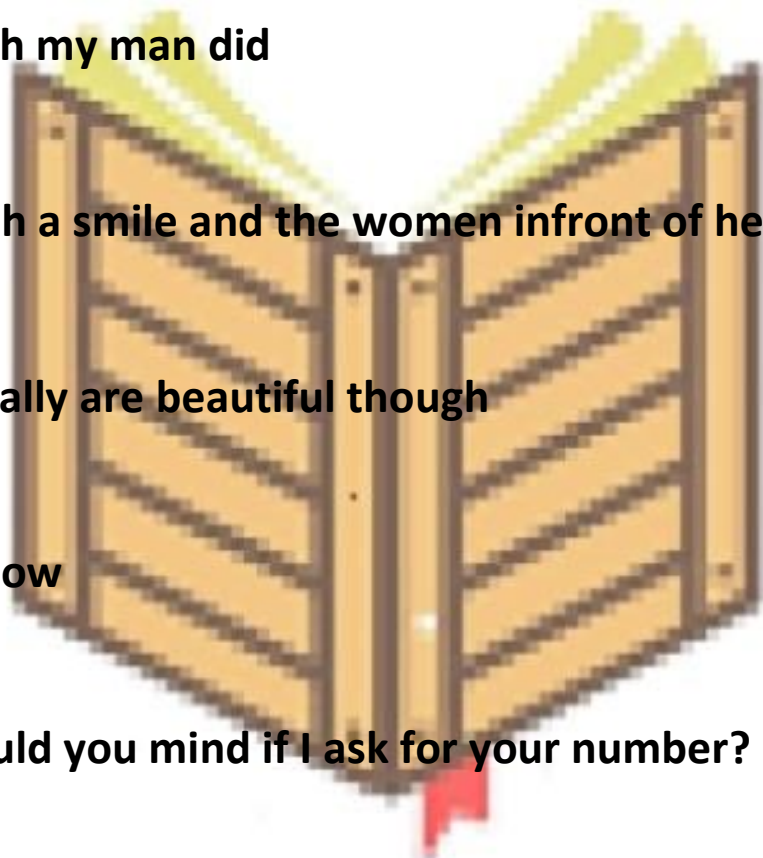
Khwezi: I know

Alex: so would you mind if I ask for your number?

Khwezi: I do mind ke

Alex: ohh come on, I want to call you

Khwezi: I don't have a phone



NOVELSGURU.COM

Alex: you have it right in your hand

Khwezi: ohh

she looks at the phone.

Khwezi: yazi I didn't know, shuthi I have a phone



NOVELSGURU.COM

the guys chuckles.

Alex: so?

Khwezi: so what? I don't want you so stop annoying me jeez, I'm even hungry yerr

she held shouts, she went and took her order, she went to Zizi.

Zizi: what is it friend?

Khwezi: next time you gonna go order cause this guy in the line really annoyed the hell out of me

she took out her phone and got busy while she had the annoyed look on her face.

NOVELSGURU.COM

their order came and they set down eating, though she could feel someone eyes on her she couldn't tell who it was.

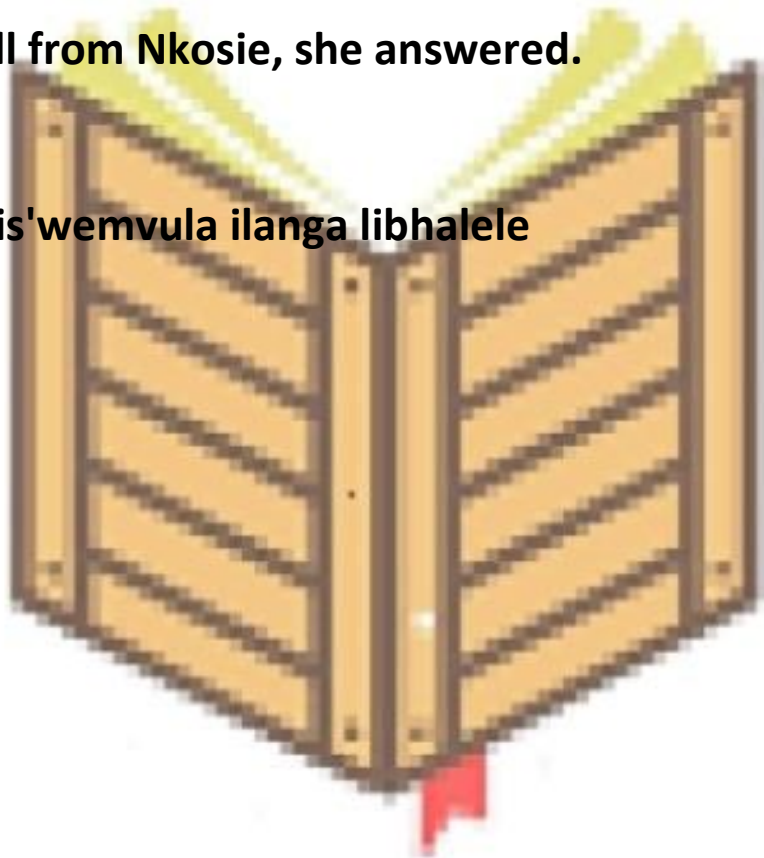
they did a little shopping then Khwezi was taken home.

she got there and the first thing she did was make something to eat, Nkosie is not home, she got done eating and she went to take a shower.

she wore Nkosie's clothes and she set down doing her work.

she got a call from Nkosie, she answered.

Khwezi: Mnis'wemvula ilanga libhalele



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: Mapholoba, you good?

Khwezi: I'm good and you?

Nkosie I'm fine, phuma la ngaphandle uzolanda lezinto zakho lezi (come outside and get these things of yours)

Khwezi laughs.

Khwezi: what thing baby?

Nkosie: the delivery guy is on his way

indeed the door bell rang and it was a bouquet of roses with a letter.

"sorry imma be home late, don't wait up, I love you and have a very good day"

NOVELSGURU.COM

the letter said.

Khwezi: baby!

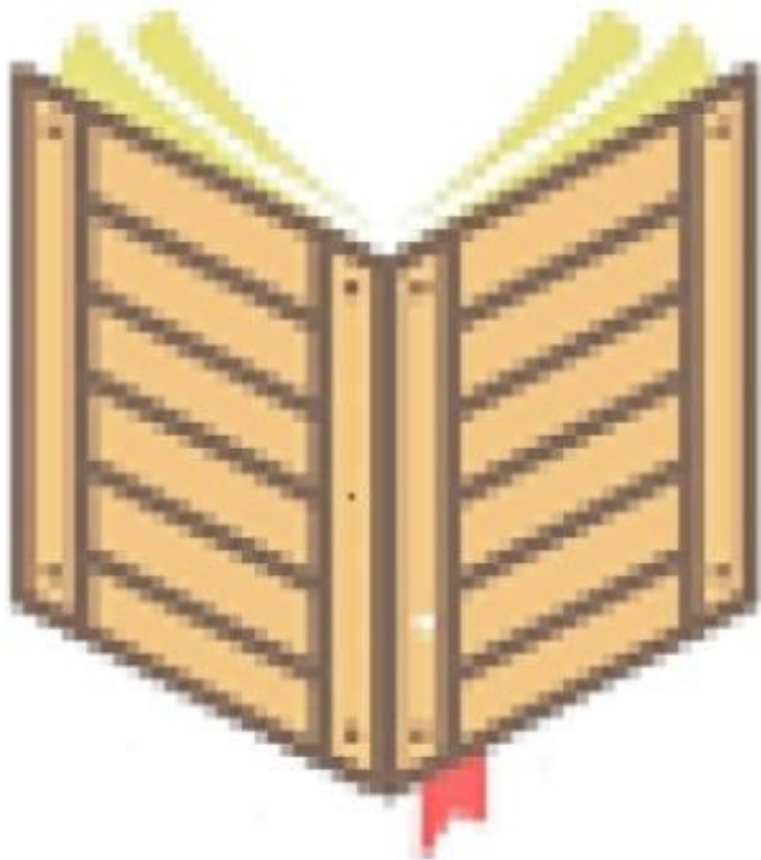


she says over the phone.

Nkosie: don't get bored and if you do ask Zizi to come over

Khwezi: you know me baby, I love you more

-
-
-



NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 114

NKOSINATHI.

THE FOLLOWING DAY.

He had to work on two jobs yesterday night, one in the city and one out of the country that why he had bought Khwezi those flowers.

the plane landed and he got out with his crew, the others got out first and went to their homes.

Nkosie was the one to walk out last, he looked exhausted, he wears his shades and he walk to his car.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he got inside and he drove home while his security escorted him.

he arrives by the gate and the gate opens, he drove in and he parks his car outside.

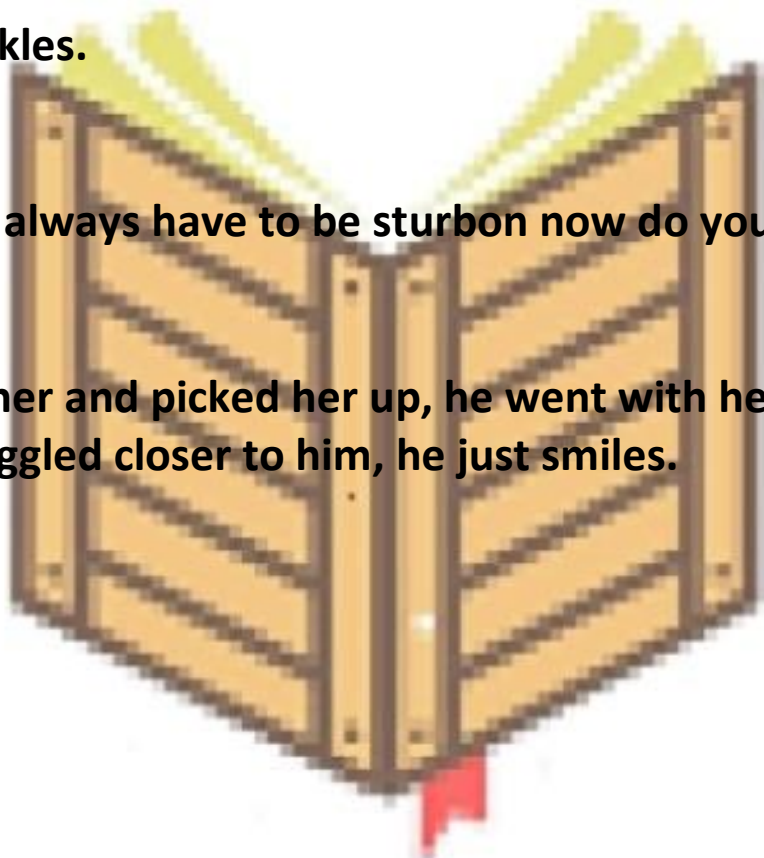
he got out of the car and took his bag, his black jacket. He locks the car and walks inside the house.

when he got there he was amazed to find Khwezi sleeping on the couch with a packet of chips open next to her.

Nkosie chuckles.

Nkosie: you always have to be stubborn now do you?

he went to her and picked her up, he went with her upstairs and she snuggled closer to him, he just smiles.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: baby is that you?

she asked in a low sleepy tone, Nkosie arrived at the room and kicked the door which was slightly open.

Nkosie: it's me, don't wake up take some rest

he places her on the bed and kissed her on the forehead, she slept peacefully.

he walked to the bathroom and he took off his cloths, he turns on the warm water and steps inside the shower.

Nkosie: fuck...

he says as the water felt good on his skin, he is so exhausted and if it was for him he would finish up with all these jobs.

NOVELSGURU.COM

after taking a shower he dried his body, he wore his boxers and went undercover.

he went to cuddled Khwezi from behind while gently rubbing

her baby bump.

he dozed off.

he was woken by his phone ringing and he reached his arms out to answer.

he did not check the caller ID.

Nkosie: hello?



NOVELSGURU.COM

"ohh so you do know how to answer a call properly?"

Nkosie: who the fuck...

he removes the phone from his ear and he checked who it's was and it was Amanda.

Nkosie: what do you want?

Amanda: you back to your grumpy self

Nkosie: you just disturbed my sleep now tell me what the fuck you want?

Amanda: I want us to talk Nkosie

Nkosie: about?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: us, I know we broke up but I need some closure

Nkosie we need to talk and lay down our differences and why we broke up

Nkosie: how long has it been? a month and to correct you cause

it seems like you have forgotten, we weren't dating

he changed his position and he looked up the ceiling, he noticed Khwezi is not in bed.

Amanda: Nkosie please...

Nkosie: argh what time?

Amanda: tonight at seven



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: why does it have to be at night? you know what just come by my office around twelve

Amanda: sure I will, don't get me kicked out again and...

Nkosie hung up.

Khwezi walked in.

Nkosie: Mapholoba

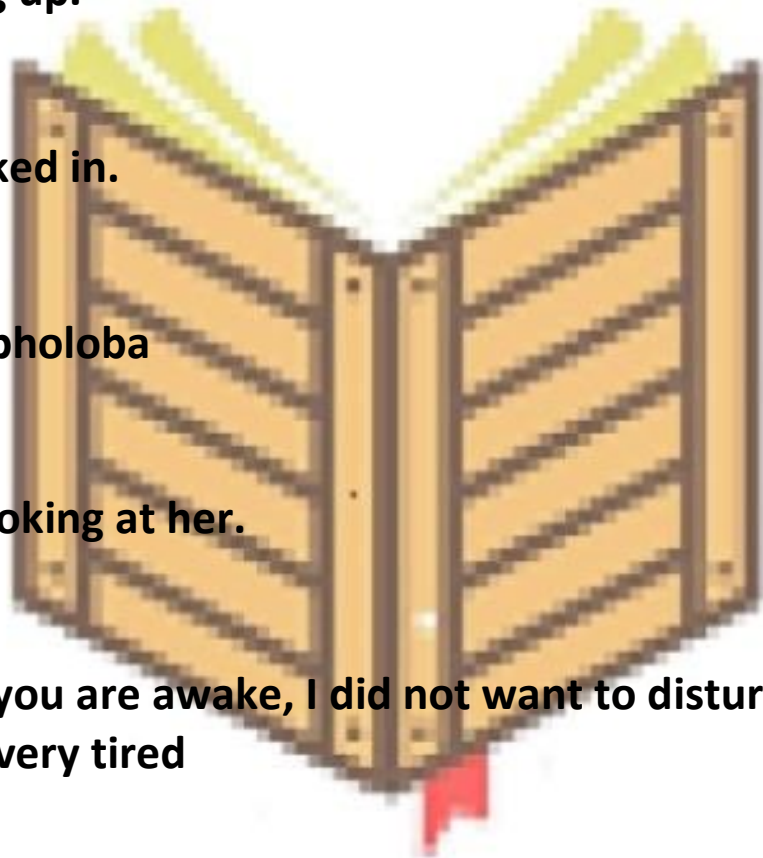
he smiles looking at her.

Khwezi: oh you are awake, I did not want to disturb you since you looked very tired

Nkosie: thank you, come here

he opened his arms, she went and layed on his chest.

Nkosie: I missed you baby



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I missed you too, I even stayed up thinking maybe you will come back late and find me awake

Nkosie: you did not have to do that Bunny

he kissed her cheek.

Khwezi: I wanted to sleep next to you babe, you know how cold the bed gets when you not there



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: and do you know how I missed being buried inside you

he whispered on her ear, she just moved and clapped her hands getting off the bed.

Khwezi: Nkosie o rata tlof tlof wena

Nkosie laughs.

Nkosie: baby you making me sound like a porn star, porn stars love sex not me, I'm an ordinary man

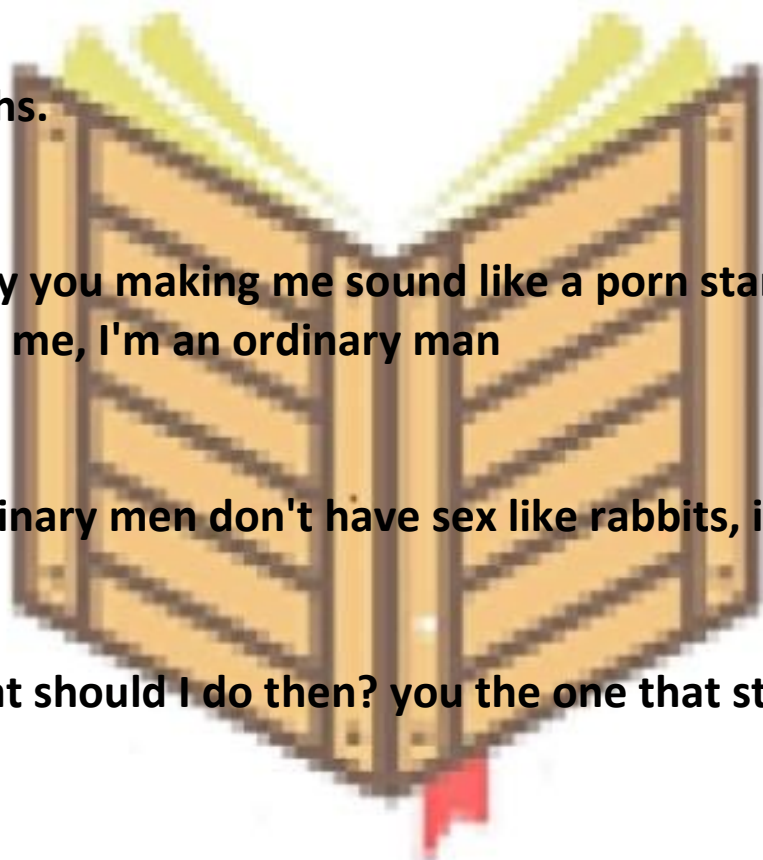
Khwezi: ordinary men don't have sex like rabbits, it's too much

Nkosie: what should I do then? you the one that starts all this anyways

Khwezi: me? ohh hell no don't be painting all this on me

Nkosie: okay baby please come back to bed then

Khwezi: did you check the time? it's nine in the morning and you still want to sleep?



NOVELS360.COM

Nkosie: I want to sleep with you

Khwezi: sleep alone, I'm going to take a shower

Nkosie: Bunny come on

Khwezi: don't call me that!!

she shouts going inside the bathroom, Nkosie laughs and got out from bed.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he made the bed and he went to bathroom, Khwezi was in the shower bathing her body.

she had her phone and she was playing 24 hours by Kaylow, Nkosie smiles remembering their first dance.

he steps inside the shower and she went to him, she wrapped her hands around his neck, his on the waist with his face buried on her neck

Nkosie: you remember dancing to this song?

Khwezi: *giggles* ohh baby don't remind me of that moment

Nkosie: you looked so beautiful

Khwezi: you didn't tell me that though, why?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I don't know, I guess I was scared that you would find out that I have fallen for you

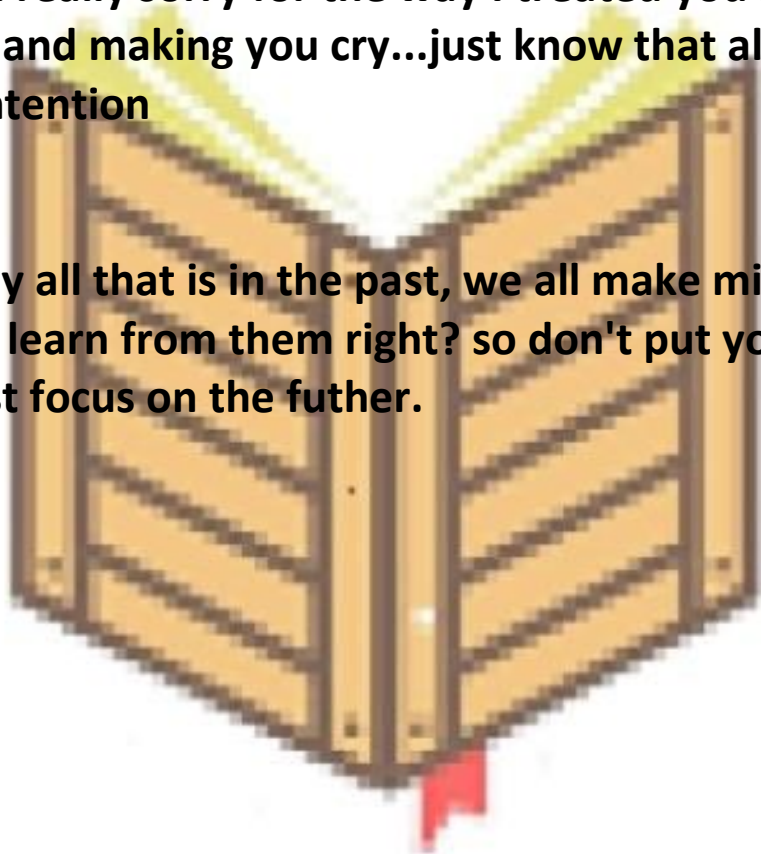
Khwezi: ncoah baby...

Nkosie: sthandwa sami...

he looks at her .

Nkosie: I am really sorry for the way I treated you before, for being a jerk and making you cry...just know that all that wasn't any of my intention

Khwezi: baby all that is in the past, we all make mistakes right? and we also learn from them right? so don't put your focus on the past, just focus on the futher.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I'm really blessed to have you in my life

Khwezi: Ngyakthanda Mvelase

Nkosie cupped her face and kissed her, she grabs his hair while they kissed, his hands moved from her face to her waist, pulling her closer to him.

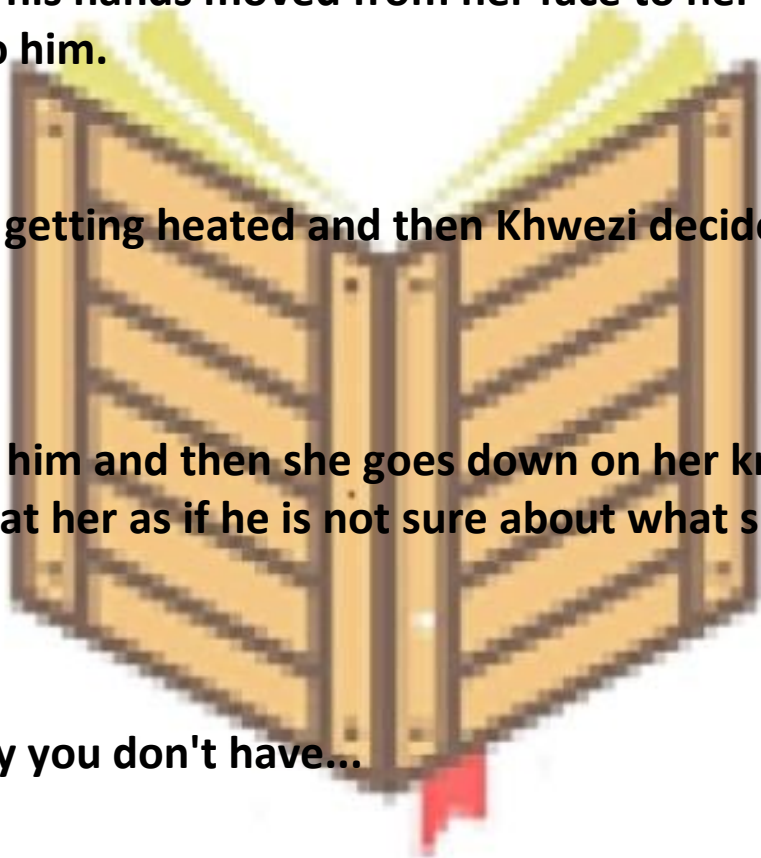
things were getting heated and then Khwezi decided to pull out.

she looks at him and then she goes down on her knees, Nkosie looks down at her as if he is not sure about what she's about to do.

Nkosie: baby you don't have...

while he was talking Khwezi immediately took him in by mouth, he groans.

she starts sucking him and he held her hair while she took him in deep inside her throat, he kept on groaning as it felt.



NOVELSOURU.COM

they were disturbed by Khwezi's phone ringing.

Nkosie: don't answer it

he says looking down at her, she moves away from him and wipes her mouth.

she goes out and she looks at the phone, it's her mother, she looks t Nkosie.

Khwezi: it's my mother



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: well she doesn't have timing

he says and turns his back switching the tap water from warm to cold, Khwezi answered the phone.

Khwezi: hello mom

Mom: i see, this is how you answer your phone now? you go to joburg and you get pregnant for a man who'll treat you, makes you cry and then I wake up to get a letter that they want to pay damage and lobola you, how old are you going lady ? remind me

Khwezi looks down and sighs.

Khwezi: mom I thought we talked about this, Nkosie is a very good guy and he did not mean all those things he did

Mom: I don't care just come home we need to talk about this

Khwezi: I got school, can I come during the weekend?

Mom: why ask for my permission? you do as you please angithii wena Khwezi? you no longer a child...I just want you home

please

Khwezi: mom why are you talking like this with Me? we talked about my situation when I was home and you accepted it

Mom: I did but I ain't going to allow you to marry a guy who makes you cry, how many times did you run back home when he broke your heart? he even got you pregnant, you not done with your studies and you already carrying a baby for a guy, I'm sorry but this is not how I raised you

Khwezi: I'm sorry for disappointing you mom, I will come home so we can talk about this



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: *sighs* remember that I love you okay? I might be hard on you but that's what mother's are suppose to be like

Khwezi: I know I love you more, how is dad doing?

Mom: he is doing fine and thank you for the furniture you brought in, the house looks more alive my child thank you

Khwezi: just doing my duty as a daughter, stay safe mom I'm gonna see you soon

Mom: okay take care

she hung up.

Khwezi sighs and places her phone down, Nkosie steps out of the shower.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: is it that bad?

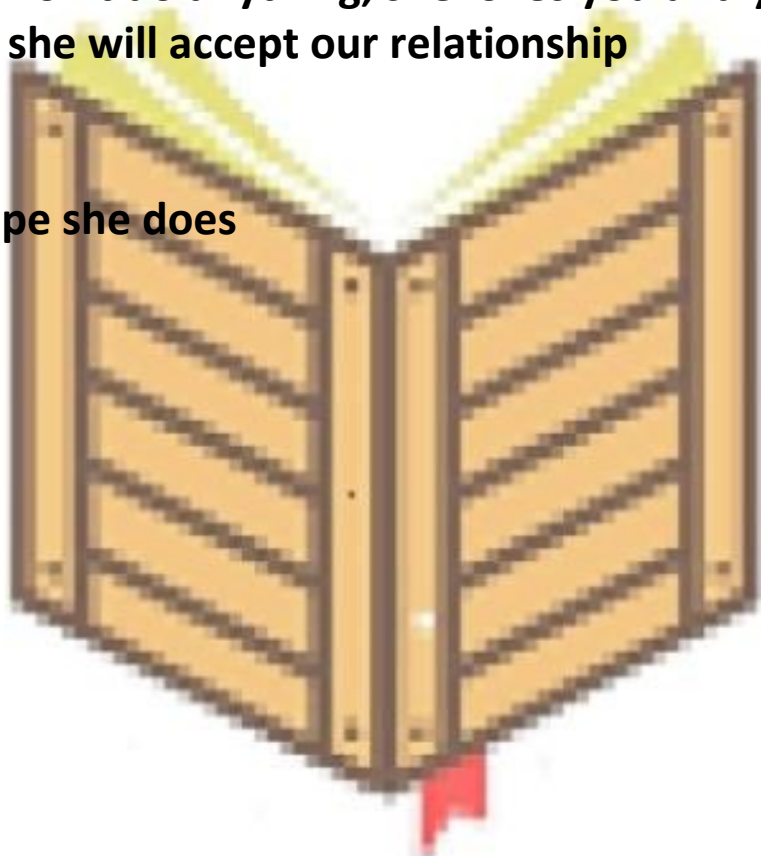
Khwezi: you have no idea, she thinks you not the right guy for me

Nkosie: ohh I understand where she comes from, I mean I have hurt you a couple of time and got your pregant

Khwezi: but she has to accept our relationship either ways, I love you and she's not gonna make me unlove you baby

Nkosie: she won't do anything, she loves you and you are her daughter so she will accept our relationship

Khwezi: I hope she does



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: now stop stressing and take a shower

he kisses her on the cheek and she smiles, she got up and she went to shower.

Nkosie went back to the main room while trying his body, he lotioned his body and he wore a white shirt and blank pants.

he wore his sneakers and unbuttoned the top of his shirt, he wore his rolex, while he was to fishing his look his phone rang.

it was Leroy.

he answered.

Nkosie: Zoshani? (what's going on?)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Leroy: Sir we have a problem that boy Sakhile is making the whole place stink with his odor, what should we do?

Nkosie: get the place cleaned up and pour him with some water, I will be there in a few

Leroy: okay boss

Nkosie hung up.

Khwezi walks out of the shower and she also started to get dressed.

Nkosie: so babe I got to be at work in a few minutes but imma drop you off



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: okay cool but we gonna have to eat first

Nkosie: sure

they finished getting dressed and they went downstairs, Khwezi made breakfast and they ate.

Khwezi: babe you remember that we have an appointment next week?

Nkosie: yes I remember babe, I'm gonna be there relax

Khwezi: I'm just reminding you cause you busy lately and I don't want you to forget

Nkosie: I won't forget

Khwezi: mhm

NOVELSGURU.COM

they got done and Nkosie did the dishes, he took the car keys while Khwezi took her beg.

they went out and got inside the car, Nkosie drove Khwezi go

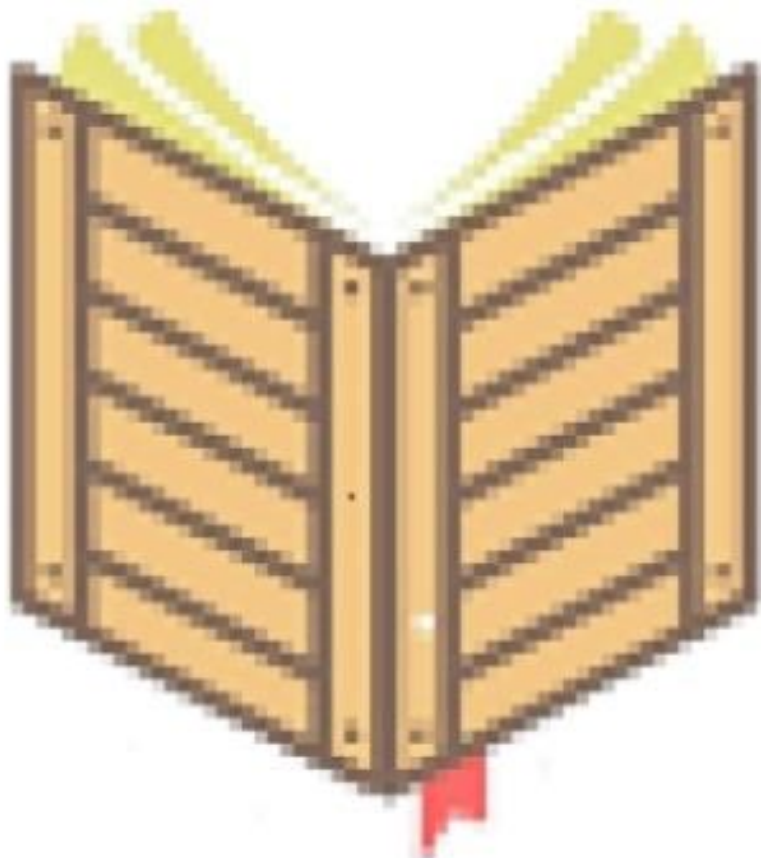
her classes and he drove to check on the company and also meet up with Amanda.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 115

AMANDA.



NOVELSGURU.COM

She woke up in the morning in a very good mood, she couldn't wait to meet up with Nkosie. It's been a long time since she wanted to do this finally the day has come.

she got dressed and wore a tight red dress which reached below her knees, she wore a pair of heels, she did her hair and make up.

she took her bag and phone, she requested an uber and it drove her to the Mthembu company.

the uber driver drops her off and she went inside, she went to the receptionist.

Amanda: good morning *smiles* I'm here to meet with Nkosie

receptionist: Mr Mthembu, he has been waiting for you, he is inside his office

NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda wanted to jump when she heard that he was already waiting for her, she felt really important.

she smiles and went to Nkosie office, she stood by the door and squeezed her boobs together, she also checked her breath.

she then walked in.

Amanda: hey you *smiles*

she walks to him as he was seated on the couch having some whiskey, he looks at her from top to toe and shook his head.

Nkosie: let's make thus fast I got places to be at

he places the glass on the small table and looks at Amanda who is now seated down.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: how are you doing Nkosie? it has been long since we set down and talked

Nkosie: I'm good and you?

Amanda: I'm perfectly fine *smiles*

Nkosie: so get on with it

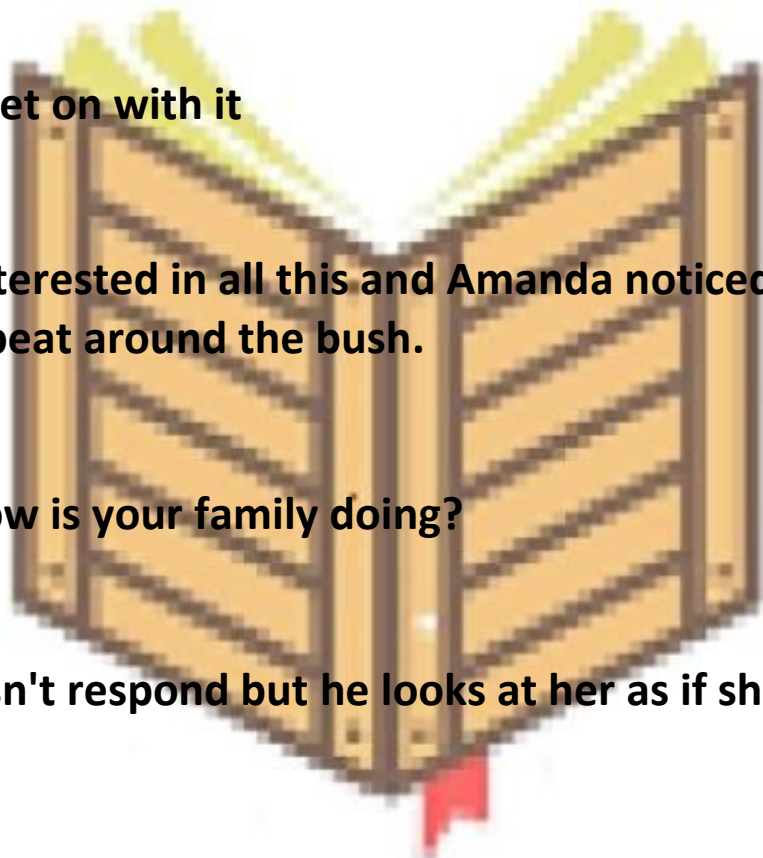
he wants interested in all this and Amanda noticed, so she decided to beat around the bush.

Amanda: how is your family doing?

Nkosie doesn't respond but he looks at her as if she has gone crazy.

Amanda: why you looking at me like that? it's just a simple question

Nkosie: stop asking about stuff that don't concern you, now talk



NOVELSGURU.COM

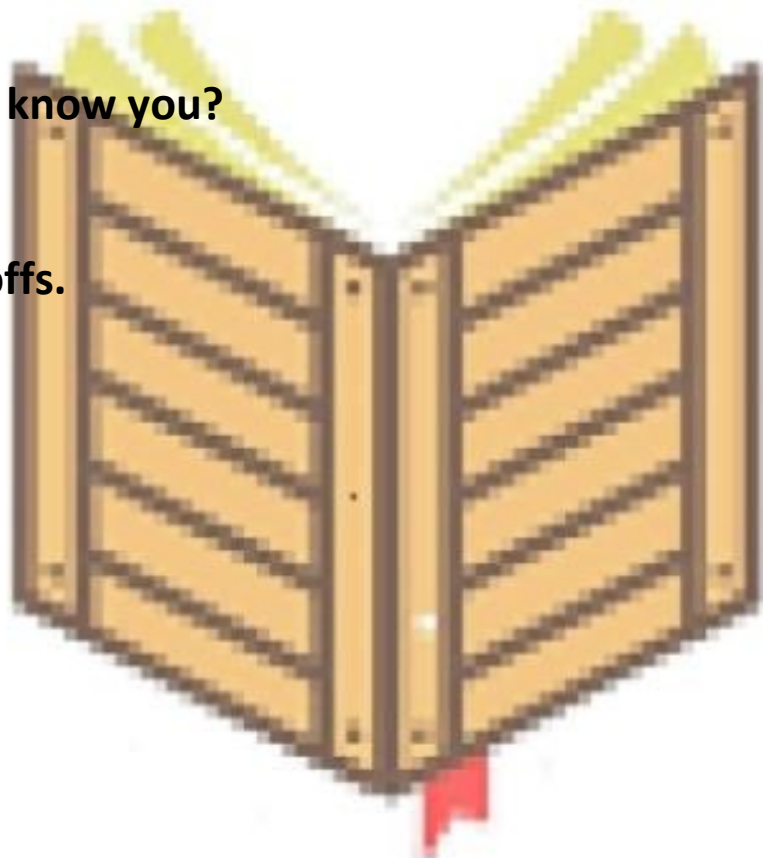
Amanda: Nkosie *sighs* why are you treating me like this?

Nkosie: how am I treating you? be specific

Amanda: as if I have done something wrong to you, as if you don't know me at all

Nkosie: do I know you?

Amanda scoffs.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: stop being like this, why are you so different with her? you were never like this with me, why her?

Nkosie: I love her and she doesn't make me feel used at all, she's very support and she doesn't think about herself

Amanda: but Nkosie I have always put you first

Nkosie: you always do everything I tell you to, I want a women who challenges me and that's my wife not you, she's just the right person for me

Amanda: challenges you? I always challenge you baby...*clears throat* Nkosie

Nkosie: you were after my money and you were sleeping with other man, to save you the trouble and cut it short you just a hoe

NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda gasped.

Amanda: I'm not...Nkosie I love you

Nkosie: no you love my money not me, there's a difference

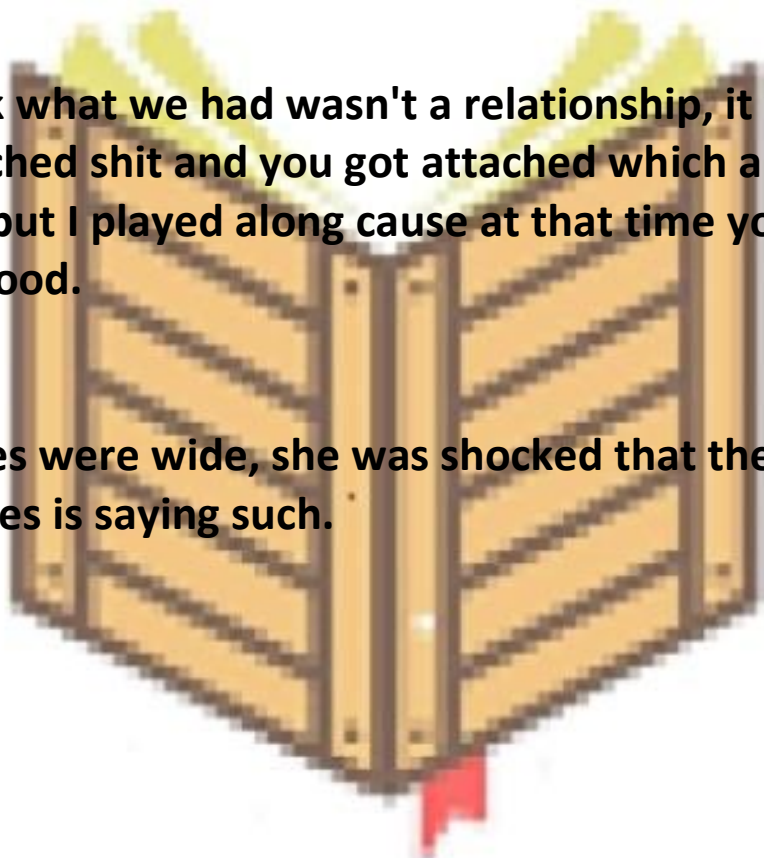
between loving a person and loving what a person owns and does for you

Amanda: but Nkosie we would have made things work

Nkosie felt annoyed.

Nkosie: look what we had wasn't a relationship, it was a no strings attached shit and you got attached which annoyed me to the core but I played along cause at that time your pussy game was good.

Amanda eyes were wide, she was shocked that the very same man she loves is saying such.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: there's nothing special about you, I never loved you and I never will love you so do yourself a favour and stop obsessing over me, it's not cute but annoying you hear me?

he said the last part a little bit louder

Amanda: you are mine Nkosie, I don't care what you think of me and your words don't mean anything, I want to be with you

Nkosie: I don't though

Amanda: I love you Nkosie

Nkosie: you slept with me and slept with my brother thought that will make me feel bad but nah, that's just you proving that you a hoe and you would do anything

he stood up.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Amanda: Nkosie! I didn't mean to sleep with him

Nkosie: it's non of my business okay? look we done talking and

do me a favour and play as far away from me cause if you do any stupid shit I'm gonna kill you trust me

he smiles.

Nkosie: hope you had your closure now get the fuck out of my face

he said in a cold tone and went to our himself another glass of whisky.

Amanda stood up.



NOVELSGURU.COM

**Amanda: can I get a good bye hug at least?
Nkosie gave her a dead stare, she got out wiping her tears.**

he clicks his tongue.

Amanda stood outside the door with tears streaming down her cheeks, that didn't go as planned.

she noticed everyone watching her so she immediately wiped her tears.

she walks out with his head held up high as if nothing happened though her heart ached.

**.
.**

. NKOSINATHI.

After attending a few meeting he went to the warehouse to check on Sakhile, he wasn't in a good mood at all, he had this look on his face.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he got inside and Leroy was playing cards with the gaurds, they wanted to talk freely with the boss but they noticed his facial expression so they remained quite.

Nkosis: is he cleaned up?

Leroy: yes boss

Nkosie nods and he walks inside the room, found Sakhile sitting at the corner eating his nails and mumbling something.

Nkosie: look at you looking cute as ever



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sakhile raises his head and looks at Nkosie.

Nkosie: now you know how it feels neh? I haven't done nothing this just the beginning

Sakhile: just kill me please...

his voice was weak and shaky as he spoke.

Nkosie: nah I want you to die slowly while thinking of all the bad shit you did to me and my family

Sakhile: please...

Nkosie: two more days then you gonna have food and water, it's a pitty you weren't there to bury your family

NOVELSGURU.COM

he chuckles and walks out while Sakhile begged him for food and water, he did not care.

Nkosie: give him food after two days make sure he doesn't escape or else you will all be dead

he walks out and drove off.

he went to his parents house, he parks his car outside and he went inside.

found his mother making some food, he went and kissed her on the cheek.

Nkosie: Nozala, how are you MaMthembu?

she smiles.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs M: with you coming to visit me, I feel much better

Nkosie: were you not okay?

Mrs M: it's just a stomach ache but I'm fine now, I also miss my kids, only Sandile and Zizi come over to see me but the rest of y'all don't want me no more

Nkosie went to the fridge and took out an apple, he set on the kitchen chair.

Nkosie: it's not that we don't want you mom, we just busy that all

he took a bite on his Apple.

Mrs M: how is Makoti doing?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: she's doing fine though she's kinda stressed about her mother not accepting our relationship

Mrs M: why won't she accept it?

Nkosie: she saw that I have been hurting Khwezi and I got a pregnant mom, wouldn't you hate a guy who does that to Zizi?

Mrs M: I would but nawe Nkosie, you really did I hurt that girl I don't know why she's still with you, you don't deserve her

Nkosie: don't turn your back on me mom come on

Mrs M: but she loves you and I can see it, treat her good my son



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I am *smiles* so when is the food going to be ready?

Mrs M: you have a wife, don't ask me such questions

Nkosie laughs a little.

his father walks in.

he went to his wife and kissed her on the lips, Nkosie watches them as they talk while eating his Apple.

Mr M: Son. how are you?

Nkosie: good and you?

Mr M: I'm okay, want us to talk?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: yeah unless you busy though I can come back another time

Mr M: I'm never busy for you son, let me go change and I will meet you in the study

Nkosie: sure old man

His father shook his head while laughing a little, he went upstairs.

Mrs M: your father really does love you

Nkosie: whuu, let me leave



NOVELSGURU.COM

he puts the Apple on the bun and he went to the study, he set down and got busy on his phone while waiting for his father.

speaking of the devil he shall enter.

Mr M: let's talk business, it's been a minute he smiles and set down.

.
.

FOREVA YENA

Insert 116

SYATHOKOZA.



He is seated at a restaurant having breakfast by himself while scrolling on his phone looking for a girl who will be his date tonight.

NOVELSGURU.COM

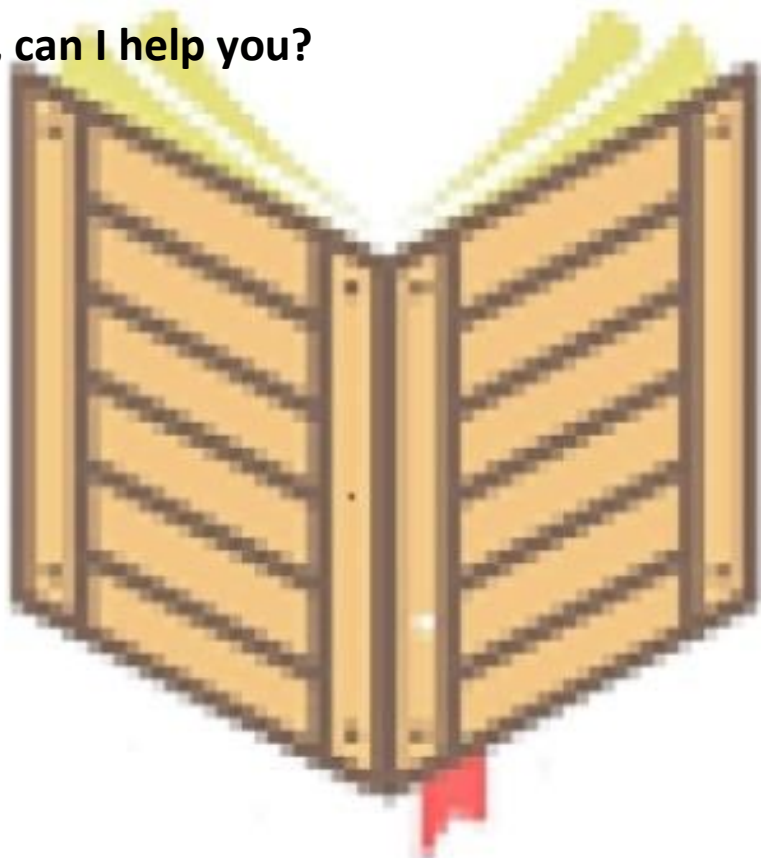
he wasn't paying attention when this girl noticed him sitting alone, she walks up to him with a huge smile in her face she greets.

Her: hello, I'm Charlotte

Sya stops looking at the phone and he looks at the girl, he doesn't even know the girl and he is super confused.

who comes up to a stranger and introduces themselves as if they asked you to.

Sya: uhm hi, can I help you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Charlotte: oh no I just noticed you sitting alone all bored and I was wondering if I could join you

Sya: sure I don't mind at all

he says placing down his phone, he scans the girl from top to toe and she looks like his type though she is a coloured.

Sya: what did you say your name was again?

Charlotte giggled.

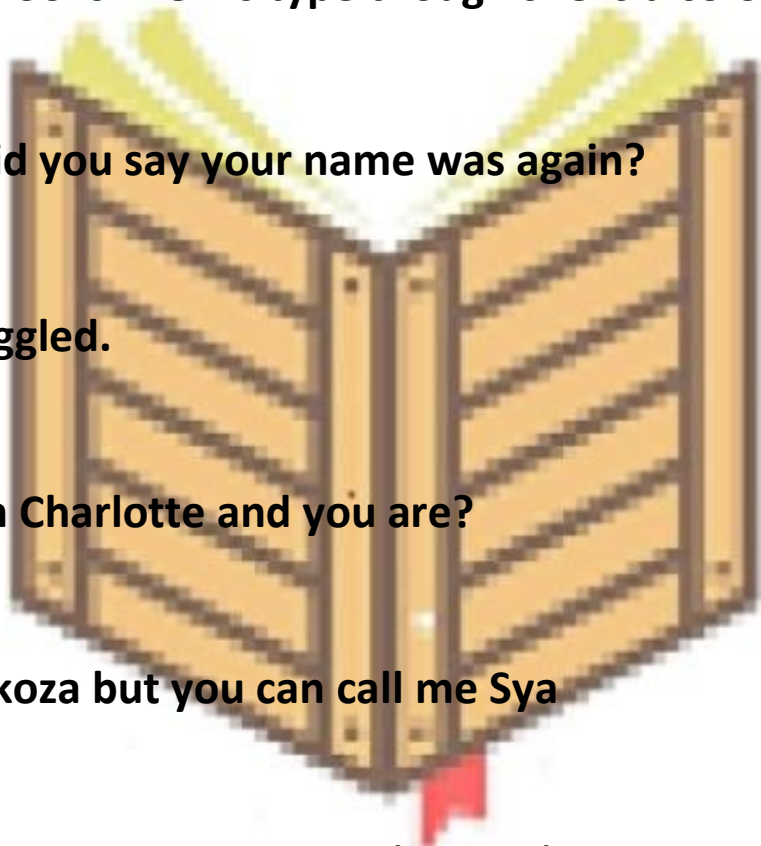
Charlotte: I'm Charlotte and you are?

Sya: Syathokoza but you can call me Sya

Charlotte: it's nice to meet you *smiles* so tell me why you having breakfast alone?

Sya: I don't have anyone to share a table with

Charlotte: no girlfriend?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: non at all, I'm not the dating type

Charlotte: ohh I see so you that type that does a once of thing?

Sya: that's me, let me call a waiter for you

he raises his hand up and the waiter arrives, Charlotte took her order.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Charlotte: thanks, you know either ways gonna have to settle down right?

Sya: it's not a must so I'm good

Charlotte chuckles.

her food came and they ate while getting to know each other, while they were talking a guy walks up to them.

Him: you are now dating Charlotte?

Charlotte: mind your own business Zann

Zann: excuse you but we just broke up and already out having breakfast with guys

Sta cleared his throat.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Charlotte: like I said its non of your business

Zann: you discuss me

he clicks his tongue and walks away.

Charlotte: I'm really sorry about that, his my ex

Sya: what was that about though?

Charlotte: he cheated on me with my sister and even got her pregnant *chuckles* I was so blinded by love I couldn't see



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: stay single like me and nothing like that will ever bother you

Charlotte: imma thunk about that

she laughs a little.

they continued to have a chat till it was time for Charlotte to leave.

Sya: I will walk your out

he took out a card and paid for their meal, he then walks out with Charlotte.

Sya clears his throat.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: I know we just met but I was wondering if you could do me a favour

he looks at Charlotte.



Charlotte: ohky what is it?

Sya: so I kinda got myself into this mess where I lied about having a girlfriend and now I need to go out tonight on a double date with my friend but the problem is that I don't have a girlfriend, I was wondering if...

Charlotte: if I could be tour girlfriend, well pretend girlfriend

Sya: yes if you don't mind though



NOVELSGURU.COM

Charlotte: I don't mind plus I don't have any plans tonight

she smiles.

Sya: thank you so much, you don't know what this mean to me

Charlotte: I'm just happy to help a friend out, so what time are we leaving?

Sya: at seven pm, I will come pick you up

Charlotte: give me your phone

Sya: why?

Charlotte: just give it to me



NOVELSGURU.COM

she giggles, Sya gave her his phone.

she saved her number as "baby" with a heart, she gave the phone to Syawho chuckled.

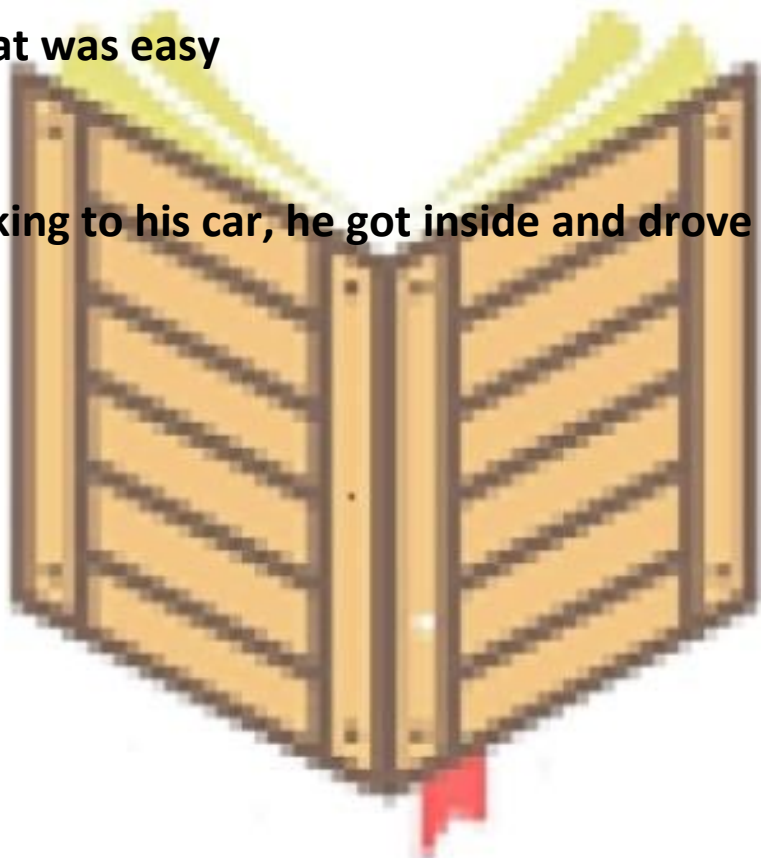
Sya: I see what you did there, I will call you when I get home

Charlotte: sure, see you then boyfriend

she smiles and walks away.

Sya: well that was easy

he says walking to his car, he got inside and drove to his house.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he got home and he decided to go for a swim, he changed and he went to the pool.

he stayed there for a few minutes and he got out, he took a shower and he wore clean clothes.

he took his phone and decided to call Charlotte.

she answers.

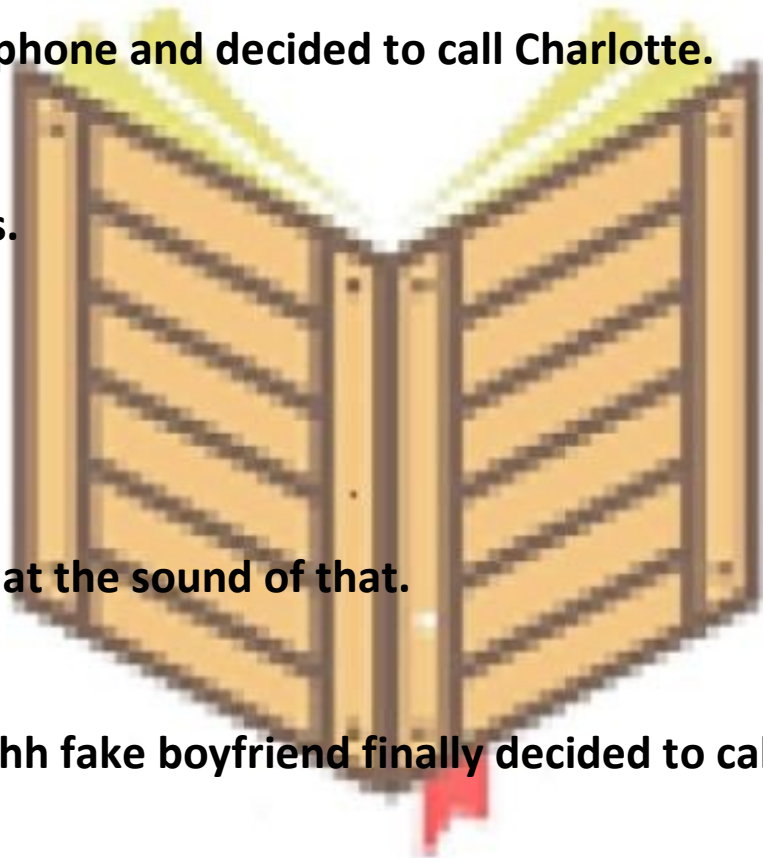
Sya: Baby

he chuckles at the sound of that.

Charlotte: ohh fake boyfriend finally decided to call

Sya: ohh that's my name now? how are you?

Charlotte: you saw me few hours ago but then I'm okay and you?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: I'm fine, so you really gonna do this right?

Charlotte: yes I will, you having second thoughts

Sya: nah I just want to make sure you know

Charlotte: okay cool, so you know they gonna ask us questions right?

Sya: I know but we will be able to do this



NOVELSGURU.COM

Charlotte: okay then where did we meet?

Sya: at a restaurant

Charlotte giggled.

Charlotte: that's a good one

Sya: I won't touch you or do anything to you unless you want me too just for the sake of making it look real

Charlotte: so we gonna kiss?

Sya: it's not gonna mean anything though

Charlotte: I know I'm just asking

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: yeah I guess we will have to kiss

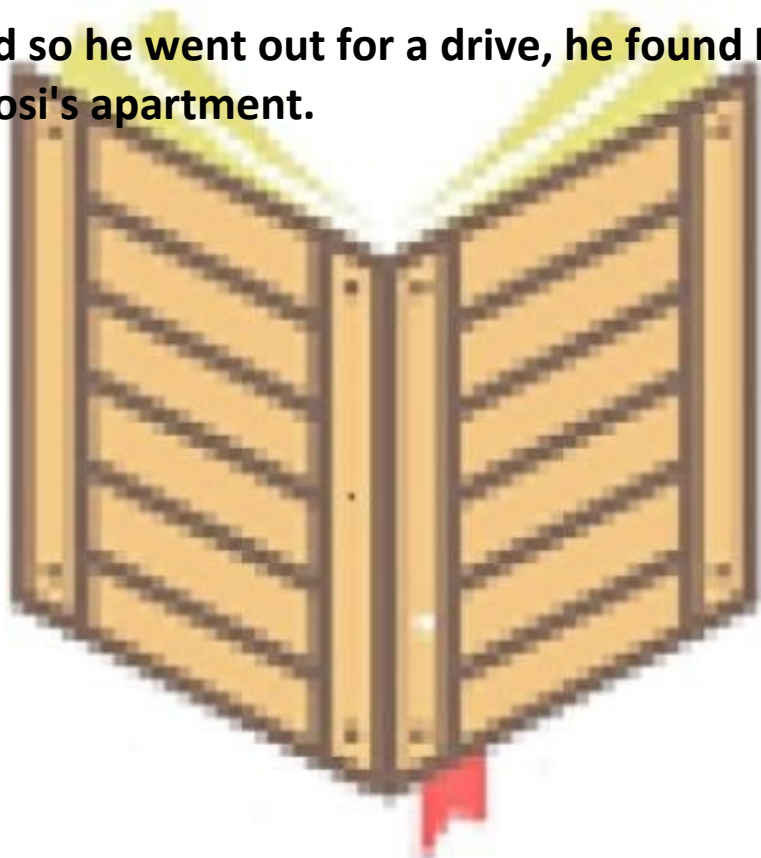
Charlotte: mmm, let me get ready then

Sya: sure I will leave you to it

he hung up.

he went downstairs and made himself something nice to eat,
he set in the living room watching a movie while eating.

he felt bored so he went out for a drive, he found himself
driving to Nosi's apartment.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he knocks on the door.

she opens, luckily Mvelo is not there.

Nosi: Sya what are you doing here?

Sya: I came to see you

Nosi: you do know that if Mvelo finds you here, he is gonna loose it

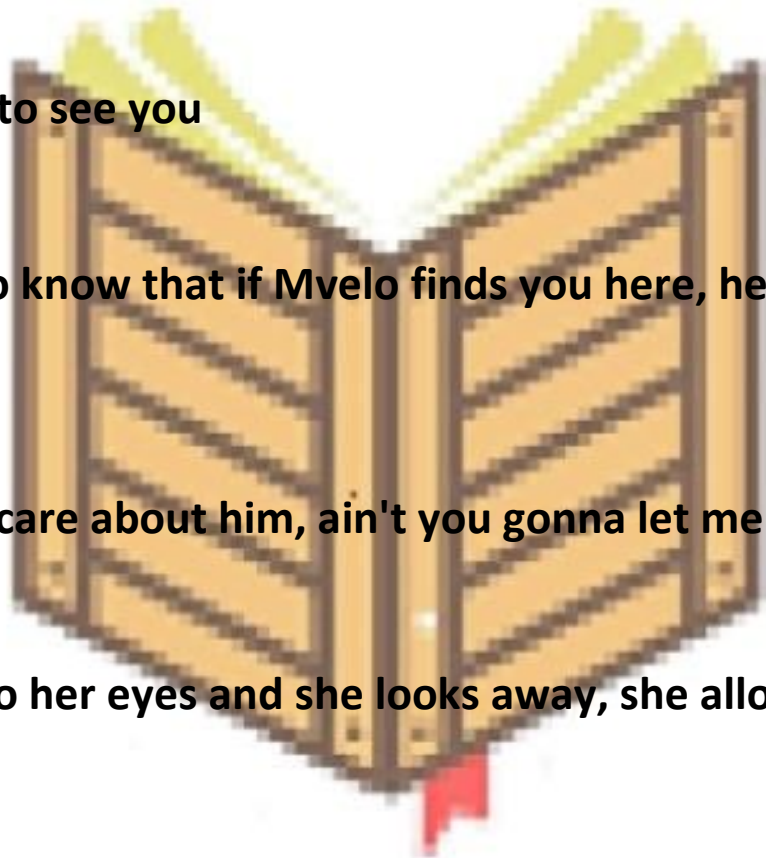
Sya: I don't care about him, ain't you gonna let me in?

he looks into her eyes and she looks away, she allowed him to come in.

Nosi: please make it fast Mvelo is gonna return here soon

Sya: can I kiss you?

Nosi: Sya no! we talked about this and we agreed that it won't



NOVELSGURU.COM

happen again

Sya: ngyazidlalela mina (I'm just joking around)

Nosi gives him a side eye.

Sya: I missed seeing your cute face

Nosi: I'm not cute



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: woah hold up women what are you saying, you the words most cutest creature

she blushes.

Nosi: okay that's enough please leave

Sya: why you in a rush?

Nosi: Mvelo is...

Sya: like I said I don't care about Mvelo, come here

he opens his arms and she hesitates at first but she went to his embrace.

Sya: I missed you

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: I missed you too, wait what you gonna do about tonight's date?

Sya: I got it sorted



Nosi: so you have a girlfriend?

she pulls out from the hung.

**Sya: even if I did that ain't gonna make you feel any type of way
right because we are just friends**

she swallows, his using her words against her.

Nosi: yes we just friends



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: stop fussing then

he held her by the waist pulling her closer to his, he looks at her in the eyes and as much as he wanted to squeeze that juicy ass he held himself.

Sya: see you tonight then

Nosi: don't go

Sya: your little boyfriend is gonna be here

Nosi: I was joking I just wanted you to leave

Sya: what changed your mind then?

Nosi: I don't know NOVELSGURU.COM

she held her breath as his face came closer to hers, he whispers.



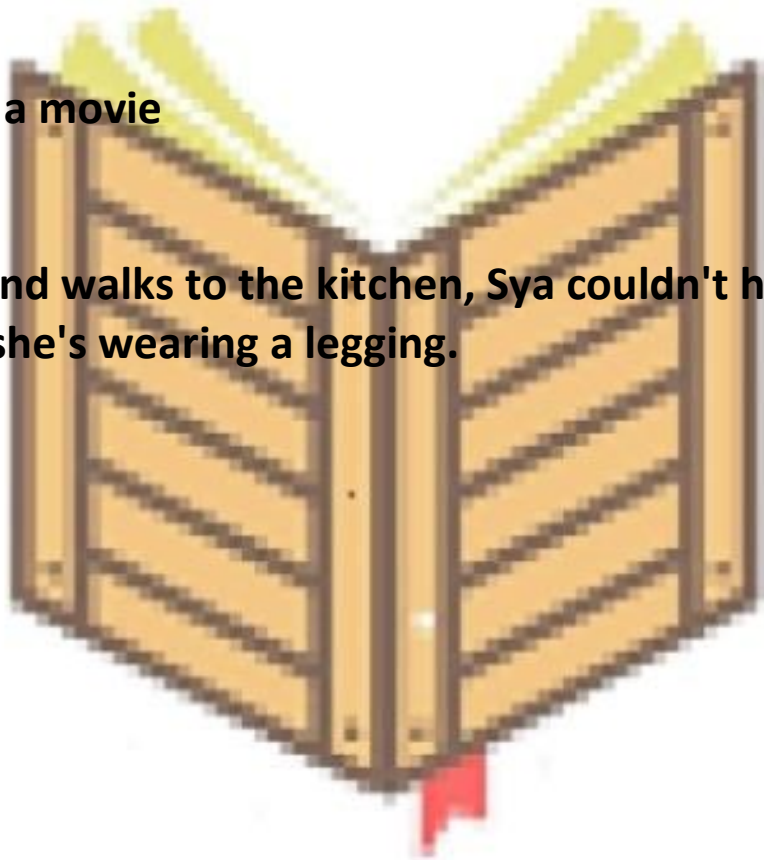
Sya: okay I will stay but I don't know of I will be at my best behaviour

she bites her lower lip, he moves away.

Sya: so what are we going to do?

Nosi: watch a movie

she smiles and walks to the kitchen, Sya couldn't help but notice that she's wearing a legging.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: damn girl those legs

Nosi: fuseg!

she says and Say laughs, he went and layed on the couch and she came back with some snacks.

she decided to sit on top of him with her legs crossed, he could feel her butt.

Sya: you know you sitting on a very dangerous spot

Nosi: what spot?

Sya: you gonna feel it soon

Nosi: you...

NOVELSGURU.COM

she throws pop corn at him and he laughs.

Nosi: shut up and let's watch the movie

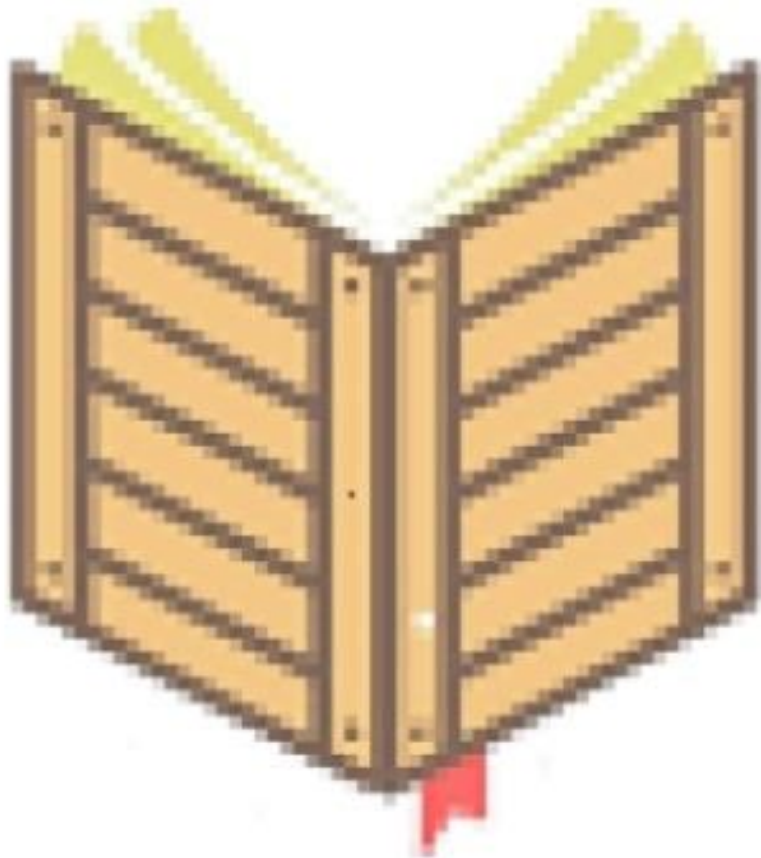


she says and they watched the movie.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 117



NOVELSGURU.COM

NARRATIVE.

It got late and Syathokoza left to get ready for dinner, when he got to his place and he took a warm relaxing shower.

he turn off the taps and steps out of the shower, he took a towel and dried his body. he wraps a towel around his lower body and he went to the main room.

he removes the towel from his body and he starts lotioning it, he started getting dressed, he wore a white long sleeved shirt and black bottoms.

he wore a black tie, he wore a black jacket(blazer), he wore his shoes matching with his suit.

he wore his watch and a ring on his left finger, he looked really good, he checked the time and he went downstairs, he went to his garage and picked his ride.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he chose white Audi R8 and he drove to Charlotte's place, he parked right outside and called her.

she answered.

Sya: I'm outside

Charlotte: okay I'm coming

Sya: sure

he hung up.

he stood outside his car leaning on it while waiting for Charlotte, she came out wearing a red glittery dress, she looked really good, her make up was on point.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: wow you look beautiful

she smiles.

Charlotte: thank you, you also look good

Sya: shall we?

he opens the car door for her, she smiles and got inside, he jogs to his side and he got inside.

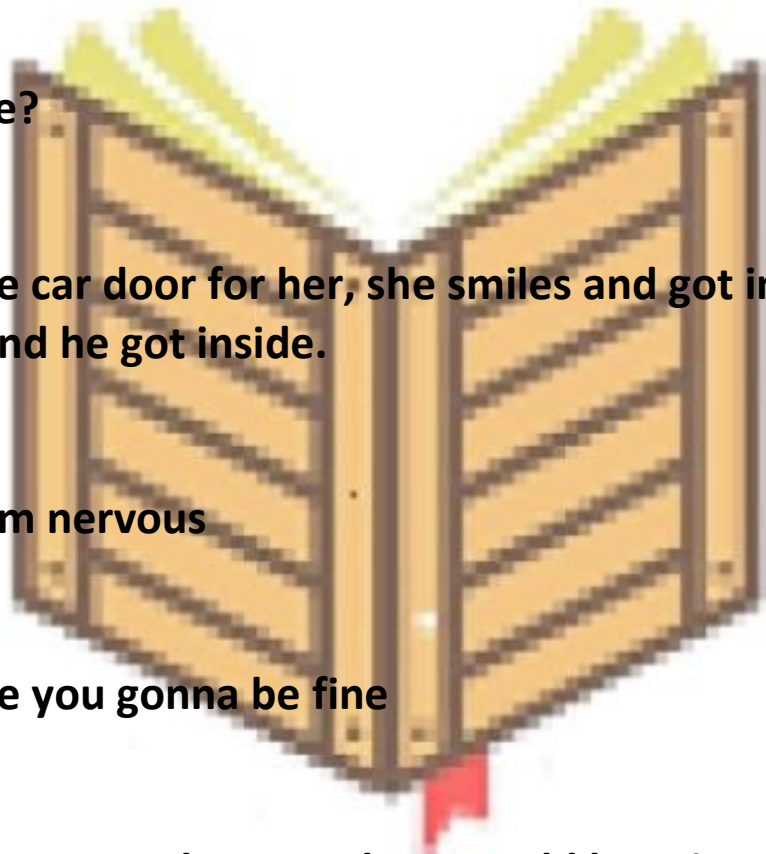
Charlotte: I'm nervous

Sya: don't be you gonna be fine

she nods, Sya starts the car and you could hear it roar to life, he drove to the restaurant they ate meeting at.

he parks outside and he got out to open the door for Charlotte.

they walk to the restaurant and Nosi was there with her



NOVELSGURU.COM

boyfriend.

there was a sudden change of wind as Sya walks in and meets eyes with Nosi who looks stunning.

she has her short hair done in curls and there's a small line at the side, she has no make up just lip gloss.

she's wearing a white long tight dress exposing her curves, it was a shoulders out dressed and it had a V shape between her boobs, you could see her well shaped boobs.



NOVELSGURU.COM

the dress was plain yet it looked beautiful on her, her beautiful brown eyes and that lip gloss is making those pink lips look even more pinker.

Sta swallows, he was out of words.

Mvelo: finally you guys arrived

Sya: mmh *clear throat* yeah, so uhm babe this Mvelo and his girlfriend Nosipho *smiles* this is my girl Charlotte

Charlotte smiles.

Charlotte: it's nice to meet you guys and thank you for inviting us to come join you

Nosi: it's a pleasure

NOVELSGURU.COM

they went and set down.

they were given their menus.

Nosi: so tell me how did you guys meet?

Charlotte: it's a funny story actually *giggles* we met at the restaurant were I saw him sitting there alone looking yummy as hell and I asked to join him

Mvelo: so you made the first move huh?

Charlotte: it's nothing like that really

Nosi: so who made the first move?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: I did, I mean I wouldn't let a beautiful lady like this pass me just like that plus she very good company and caring, I just love her

Nosi fakes a smile, she's getting annoyed.

Nosi: I think we gonna need some wine

Charlotte: you are right

they ordered some wine.

Mvelo: and what do you want to have?

he asks Sya.

Sya: whiskey will be fine

Mvelo: then whisky it is *smiles*

Sya: anyways how did you two meet?

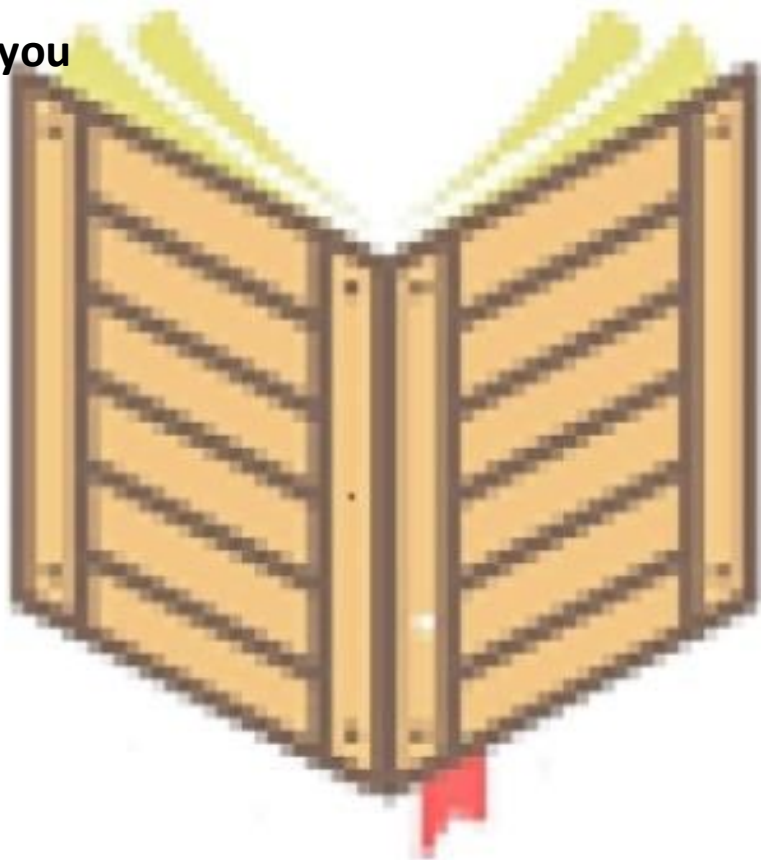


NOVELSGURU.COM

Mvelo: ohh us, we met in high school then it grew and grew till we got here

Charlotte: that's so cute, y'all look cute together by the way

Nosi: thank you



NOVELSGURU.COM

she took a sip on her wine, she was focused on Charlotte who couldn't keep her hands off Sya who also could help himself.

Nosi clears her throat.

Nosi: what do you do for a living?

Charlotte: oh I don't work

Nosi: why not?

Charlotte: I got all the money I need, why work?

Nosi: so you just sit all day and do nothing?

Charlotte: Nope, why do I feel like you judging me?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: I'm not we just trying to know each other here nothing serious

Charlotte: it's cool anyways what do you do?

Nosi: I'm a Surgeon

Charlotte: that's boring, I hate blood

**Nosi: well it's my choice of career i don't know why it's boring
you cause I'm the one whose doing it**

Charlotte: I didn't mean it like that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: ladies calm down

Nosi looks at Sya and she pours herself another glass.

Mvelo: so I have heard that your family is a family of billionaires

Sya: I guess you can put it like that

he shrugs.

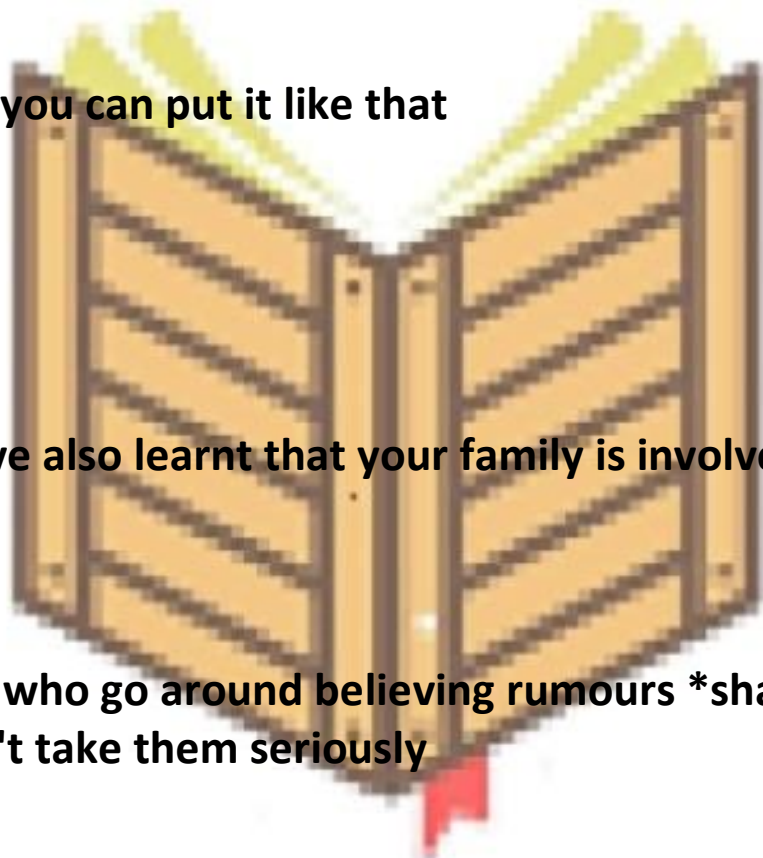
Mvelo: I have also learnt that your family is involved in illegal business

Sya: people who go around believing rumours *shakes his head* I don't take them seriously

he took a sip on his whiskey.

Mvelo: so you not involved in illegal stuff?

Sya: why you so obsessed about what my family does, dude if you want to believe whatever that's being said online then do



NOVELSGURU.COM

so just don't ask me such questions because you don't want to see me loosing my temper

he said in a calm yet threatening tone.

Mvelo: we just talking mahn nothing big

he laughs a little.

Sya looks at him and doesn't say anything, their food came and they ate, they got done a they went to dessert.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Charlotte: Baby you don't have to eat that much dessert leave space for another one

she giggles and winks, Nosi just rolls her eyes and drank her wine.

Sya: ohh there's another dessert?

Charlotte: yep

she nods.

Nosi: y'all know that we still here right?

Charlotte: sorry hun

Mvelo: you know it's getting late and it was nice seeing you guys

Sya: thank you once again



NOVELS.GURU.COM

they settled the bill and Nosi was just sitting there having her glass of wine.

Charlotte: Nosi we should go out as girls sometimes and have fun, you really are beautiful and I love your make up

she chuckles.

Nosi: I don't have the time and ohh I don't do make up

she gulps down the last one and places the glass on the table, she grabs her purse and walks out.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya was pissed.

Mvelo: forgive her she's just drunk, see y'all next time

he smiles and left following Nosi who kept on walking.

Mvelo: Nosipho?

Nosi: what?

she shouts.

Mvelo: what was that about?

Nosi: I don't know maybe it's that I told I did not want to go and you forced me to go cause you thought I have a thing with Syathokoza *sighs* dude you don't trust me

she shouts with tears in her eyes.

Mvelo: get in the car you causing a scene



he clicks his tongue and unlocks his car, she got inside and so did he.

she set there with her arms folded with tears in her eyes, he drove to her apartment.

Nosi: Baby I'm sorry for talking to you like that, I'm drunk and...

Mvelo: no need to apologise



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: let's go inside

she got out of the car and Mvelo followed her, she took off her heels and got inside the house.

she set on the couch and Mvelo walks in with his hands in his pocket.

Nosi: you sleeping over right?

she smiles looking at Mvelo.

he doesn't respond.

Nosi: Baby what's going on?

He doesn't say anything.

Nosi: Baby talk to me...

Mvelo: you know I'm tired of pretending so imma get on with



NOVELSGURU.COM

it, see I got a job offer in USA and I'm leaving tomorrow

Nosi: wait what? why you telling me this now? the fuck?

Mvelo: well I didn't see any reason to tell you and...

Nosi: you didn't see a reason to tell me, are you insane?

Mvelo: don't talk to me like that



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: Mvelo I'm your girlfriend

Mvelo: well about that, you not my only girl, I have been dating this girl behind your back and she's actually my straight girl you just...

Nosi: hold up what? Mvelo what are you saying? repeat that for me I think I'm hearing things

she said with tears in her eyes.

Mvelo: I'm saying I never loved you, I was just using you so you can give me money since you have money you know and I had no job

Nosi: wait wait...wh..what?

she stutters tears streaming down her cheeks.

Mvelo: see I loved you at first but all that love changed, you are spoiled to much and you annoy me honestly I just had to keep the act



NOVELSOURU.COM

Nosi: so all this time you were lying to me?

Mvelo: I guess, look I need to leave so yeah sure

he turns to leave and Nosi runs to stop him.

Nosi: no no no you can't just drop that bombshell on me like that, baby please maybe there's something wrong I did...I'm sorry baby I love you don't do this to me, don't do this to us

Mvelo: I'm sorry dude but I can't anymore



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: is it because maybe you found out that I kissed Sya, baby it was a mistake and I did not mean to hurt you, I don't love him but I love you

Mvelo: please just let go

he pushes her off himself and he walks out, Nosi drops down on her knees right at the door step and she cried her lungs out watching the car drive off.

**.
. .
. .**

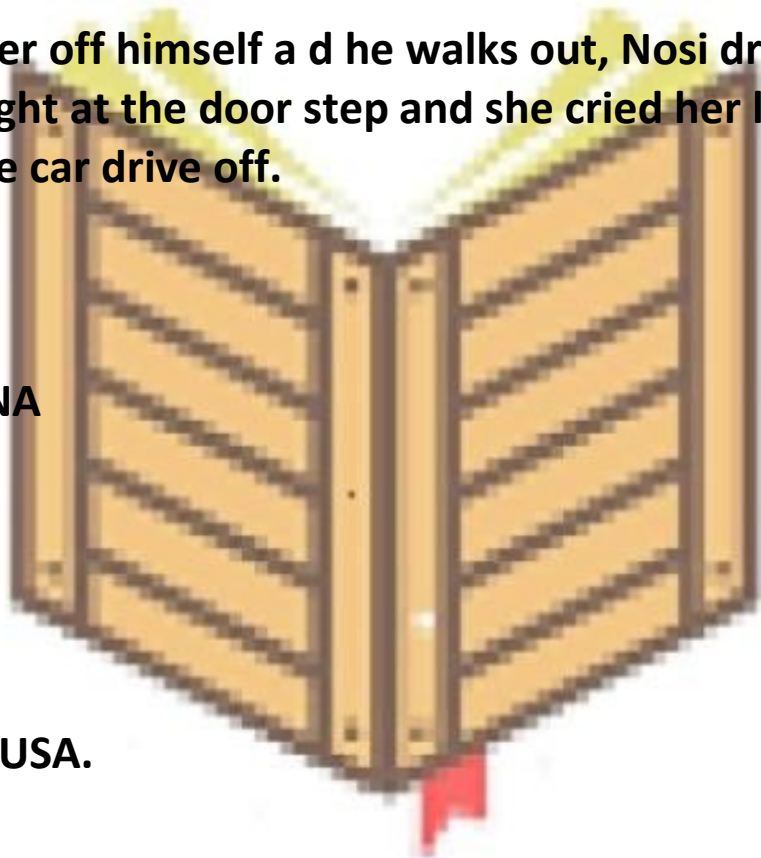
FOREVA YENA

Insert 118

KHWEZILOKUSA.

It was the weekend and Nkosie is taking Khwezi to KZN. Khwezi can't even think straight cause she knows she's gonna get judged by her peers once she gets to the village.

they woke up early so they can cover the time, they showered, got dressed and Khwezi packed her bags while Nkosie was busy



NOVELSOURU.COM

with a call in the balcony.

Khwezi got done and she looks at Nkosie whose talking seriously on the phone, she couldn't help but admire how handsome he looks.

especially when his serious, he becomes really hot by that I mean steaming hot, she folds her arms and looks at him.

he got done with the call and he turns around he leaned on the fence, he noticed Khwezi staring at him, their eyes met.



NOVELSGURU.COM

she smiles and walks to him.

Nkosie: you like staring

he kissed her on the forehead.

Khwezi: I'm staring at what's mine and baby you look handsome

she hugs him and she placed her chin on his chest, he pecked her on the lips.

Nkosie: I mean I'm a Mthembu after all

Khwezi: don't be arrogant

he chuckles.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you don't seem fine, talk to me what's bothering you Sthandwa Sami?



Khwezi: it's this thing that I might get a lot of attention from the people since I'm pregnant

Nkosie: it's non of their business though

Khwezi: Baby you don't know village people, they can make you feel bad about something that's not even a big deal

Nkosie: you my wife and nobody makes my wife feel bad about herself, so if any of them give you any trouble just give me a call and I will get you out of there



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi giggles.

Khwezi: I like it when you over protective

Nkosie: you my baby and nobody messes with what's mine

Khwezi: Ngyakthanda Nkosinathi Mthembu

she looks at him in the eyes, there's this Thing about love you as the people can see the love two beings have for each other but only the two who are emotionally attached to one's soul can feel the love.

It's the words most beautiful thing but imagine losing somebody you love? it's gonna be a hard journey for Khwezi.

back to the story though.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: Ngyakthanda namii MaMthembu

she stood on her toes and wrapped her arms around his neck while his hands were in her waist.

their lips touched and they shared a passionate kiss filled with lots of emotions.

the touch of their skin brought an electric spark onto their bodies, she wanted more of him and so did he.

Khwezi pulls out from the kiss and bites her lower lip.

Khwezi: we gonna be late

he groans while grabbing her booty, she giggles when she felt his boner.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: you laughing at my situation, bad girl

Khwezi: you like it when I'm bad though, right?

she looks into his eyes which are now small and reddish, he went down to her neck and kissed her, he whispered.

Nkosie: yeah I do, mind showing me how bad you can be?

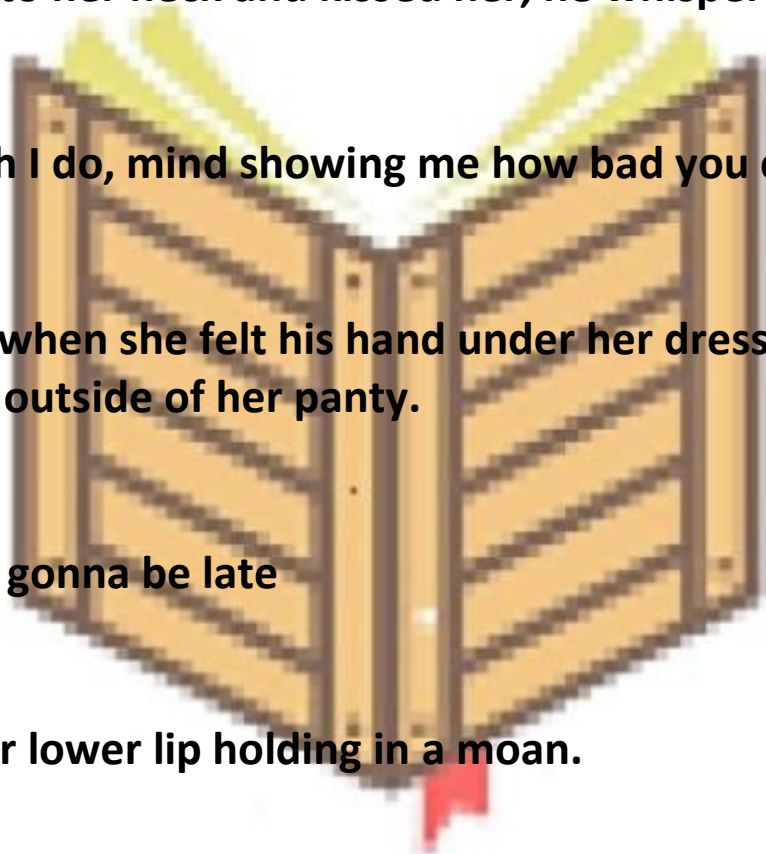
She gasped when she felt his hand under her dress slowly rubbing the outside of her panty.

Khwezi: We gonna be late

she bites her lower lip holding in a moan.

Nkosie: these days you depriving me from having access into my palace

he moves her panty aside, she was already dripping wet, he smiled and starts rubbing her clit.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: Nkosie!!

she shouts and grabs the collar of his shirt.

Nkosie: you gonna iron that shirt, I'm telling you

he moves away from her neck and looks at her biting her lower lip.

he increases the phase and let's out a moan, he smirks cause he knew she was holding that in.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he insert a finger inside her and he starts digging in deep.

Khwezi: Nkosie!!

she moans.

Nkosie: only I have the key baby, just let me in

she shakes her head and he inserts a second finger, she moans his name even louder.

Khwezi: Nkosie...

she swallow as she wasn't able to finish the sentence, he kept on touching the right spots and she cummed on his hands.

he didn't stop but kept on going.

her legs for weak and she was breathing heavily, Nkosie chose to lift her up and carried her inside the room.



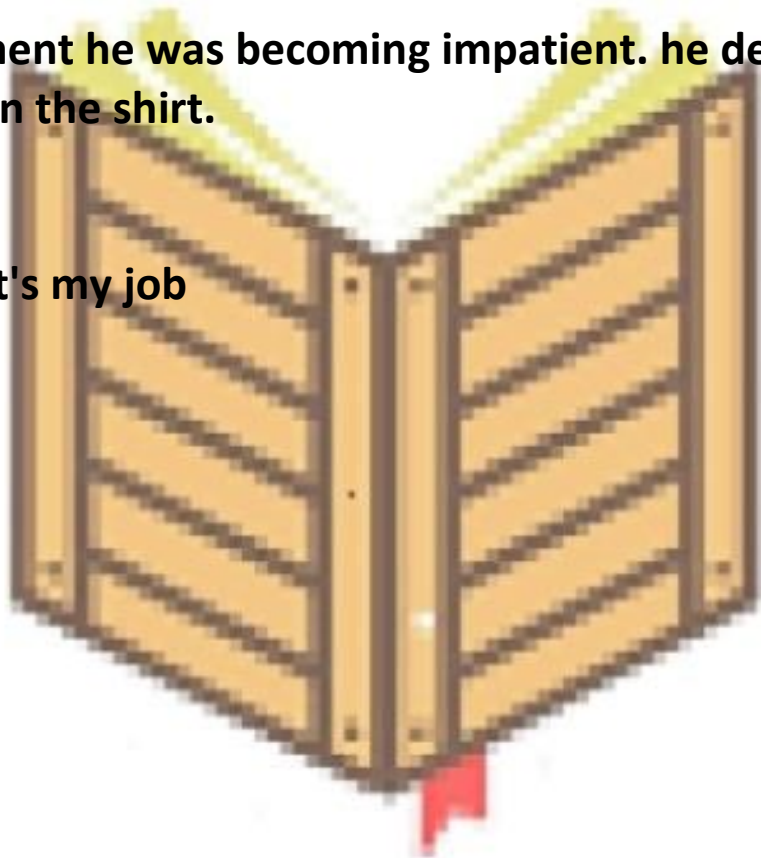
NOVELSGURU.COM

he places her down and he locks his fingers, Khwezi pushed him to the bed and she got on top of him.

his hands move from her thigh to her ass and they did not stop with the eye contact, she kissed him, she slowly unbuttons his shirt.

at that moment he was becoming impatient. he decided to help her unbutton the shirt.

Khwezi: that's my job



NOVELSGURU.COM

she pecks him on the lips and continued to slowly unbutton the shirt till she got to the button, she removes his shirt.

her tiny hands touched his chest area and she slowly went down till she reached his V line.

he looks at her with a smirk on his face, she slowly removed his belt.

Nkosie: you really take your time

his voice was now getting deeper.

Khwezi: they say don't rush when you eating cause you might choke on your food

Nkosie: choke huh?



NOVELSGURU.COM

he groans as she finally had his pants open and her hand went inside and she came out with his hard cock.

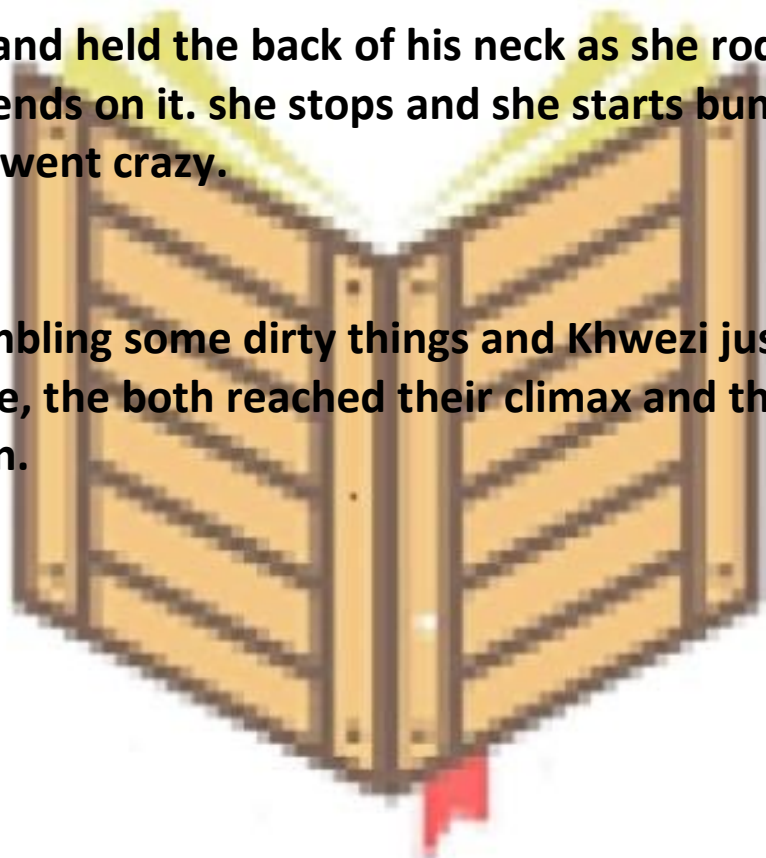
she directs him right on her vaginal opening, she moans as he entered inside her, she moves her wait in circular motion.

she moans, he groans, their breathing changes and so does the temperature in the room. It was steaming hot and Khwezi's dress was now on the floor.

he cupped her boob with his hand and sucked it.

She moans and held the back of his neck as she rode him as if her life depends on it. she stops and she starts bumping on his dick and he went crazy.

he was mumbling some dirty things and Khwezi just moaned out his name, the both reached their climax and they stayed in that position.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi got off him and he went to fetch a wet towel to clean her up, she breaths out.

Nkosie: you suprise me everyday baby

Khwezi: don't start with me, imma remind you to the shit you were mumbling

Nkosie: you wouldn't dare

Khwezi: " fuck baby you so warm"

she laughs and he silences her with a kiss, he pulls out.

Nkosie: you the warmest place I have ever been in

she rolls her eyes and smiles, they took a shower again and wore clean clothes, they went to have breakfast and they were off to KZN.

after a few hours of driving, he parks outside her yard, the house is a little bigger since Extra room.were added.



NOVELSOURU.COM

it looked more of a home then it was before all thanks to a loving future son-in-law called Nkosie.

Nkosie: I hate that I have to leave without you

Khwezi: come on you gonna be here when you family comes here right

Nkosie: though I won't be allowed to see you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi frowns.

Khwezi: such a bummer

Nkosie: yeah but I will call every chance I get

she unbuckles her seat belt and cups Nkosie's face.

Khwezi: please be safe for me Mvelase

Nkosie: safe is my middle name

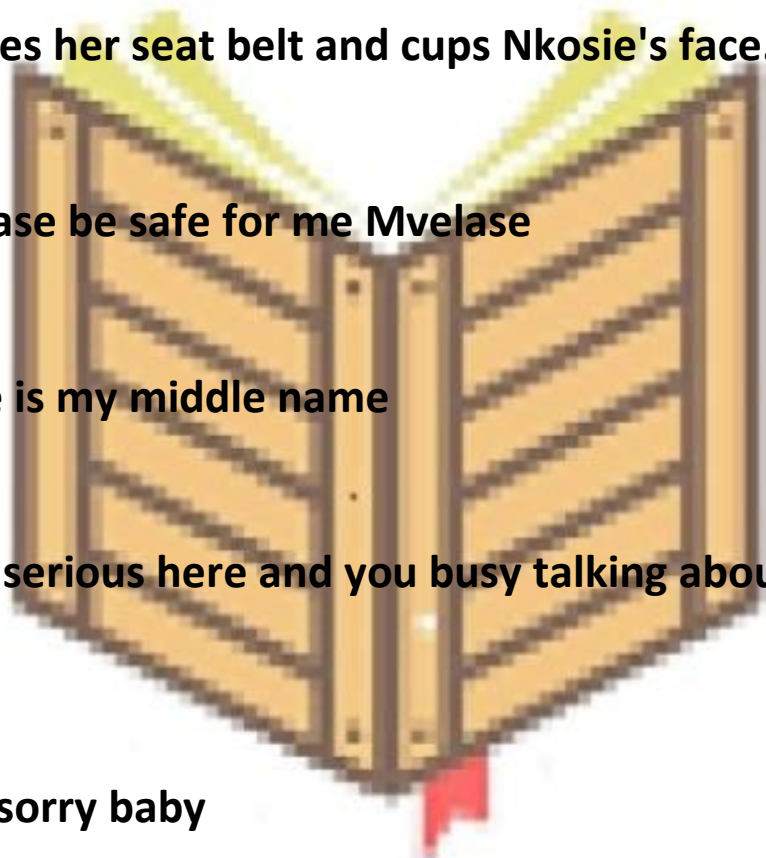
Khwezi: I'm serious here and you busy talking about middle names

Nkosie: I'm sorry baby

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I would hate if anything happens while I'm not by your side just promise you going to be safe

Nkosie: I promise



he removes her one hand from his face and he kissed it.

Khwezi: I love you

Nkosie: I love you more

Khwezi: I loved you first

Nkosie: yeah you did, ave uCatch.a tjoo



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi pinches him and he laughs, she joins in.

Khwezi: call me when you get home

Nkosie: I will, i don't want you to go though

Khwezi: God I won't get out of this car, bye baby

she gave him a hug then followed by a kiss in which he did not want to pull out from.

He finnaly pulls out.

Nkosie: go before I turn this car around with you inside

Khwezi giggles and got out, she took her begs and walks inside the yard, some neighbours were looking since they saw an expensive car parked outside Khwezi's house.

Nkosie drove off as soon as she got inside the house.

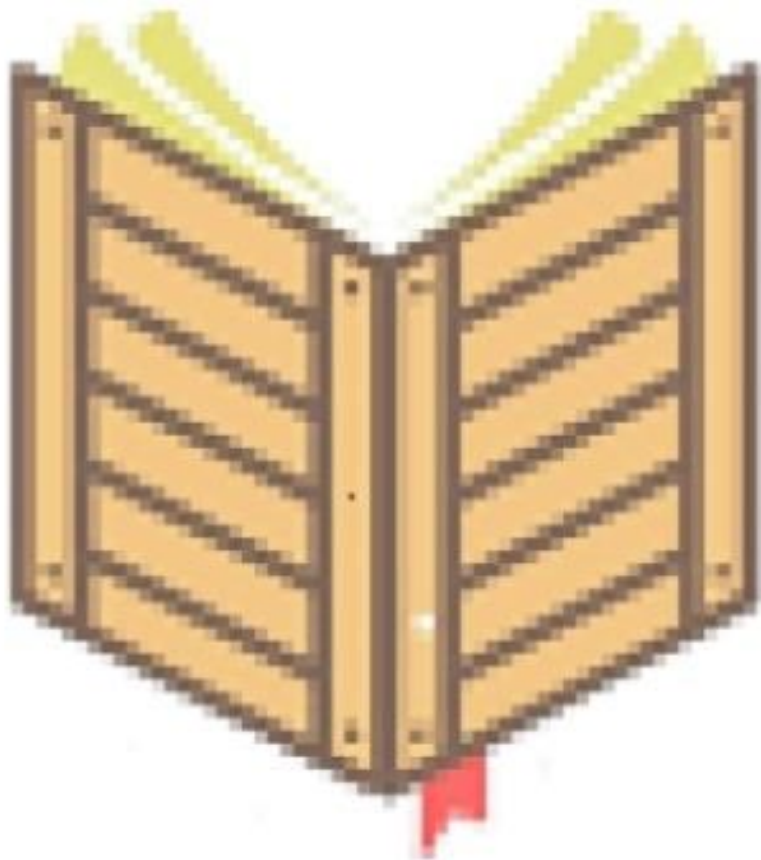


Khwezi Smiles when she saw her father.

Khwezi: daddy!

she drops her begs on the floor and went to hug her father who was having his favourite drink(if you know what I mean *winks*)

-
-
-



NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 119

SYATHOKOZA.

He woke up early in the morning and he went to the gym, he got back and he tried to call Nosi but she did not answer.

he has been trying to call her ever since dinner but she wouldn't answer, he was so pissed at the way Charlotte talked to Nosi.

he wanted to apologise, he thought of going to her house but he did not want to ruin things for Nosi.

he went and he took a shower, he got done and he dried his body, he lotioned it and he got dressed.

NOVELSGURU.COM

he wore a black NASA hoodie and some black sweat pants, he wore white sock and he wore his white sneakers.

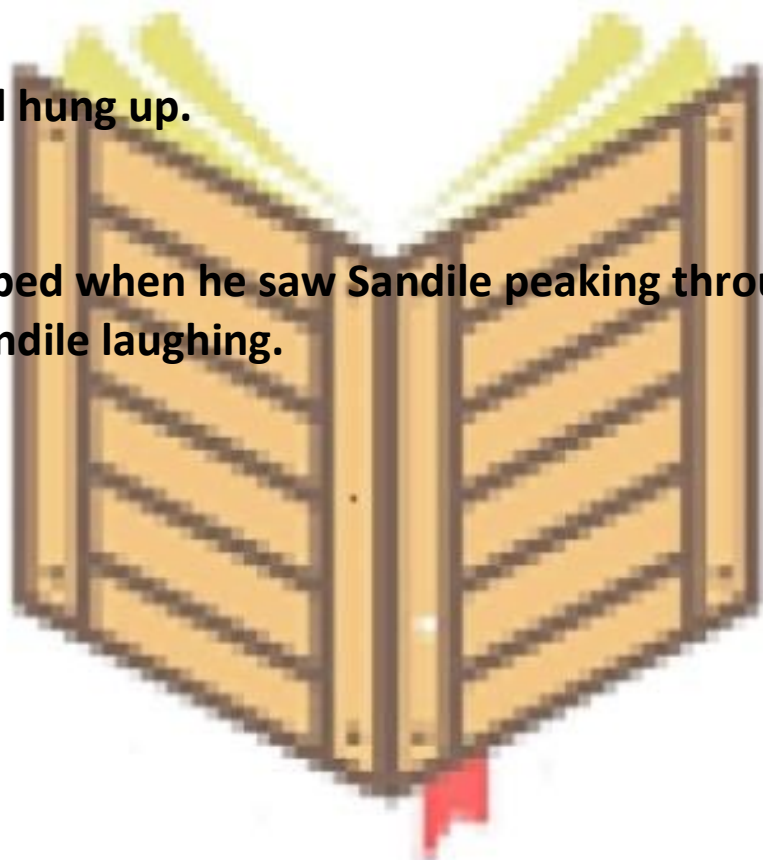
he went downstairs and he made himself something to eat, he took his car keys and he drove to his parents house since they are having a meeting.

he parks outside and took out his phone, he called Nosi but it went straight to voicemail.

Sya: Nosi please answer the phone, I'm really sorry for last night, I just want to hear your voice and I miss you cute face

he sighs and hung up.

he was jumped when he saw Sandile peaking through his car window, Sandile laughing.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: motherfucker

he curses opening his car door.

Sya: you scared me dude the fuck

Sandile: sorry I didn't mean to scare you but why you looked so serious while on a call?

Sya: it's just something I need to fix

Sandile: I can help you fix it

Sya: you can't now stop

Sandile: don't be harsh on me

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: sorry dude, I just got a lot on my plate and she's adding into it

Sandile: life is like...wait did you say she?



Sya: I did? no I did not

Sandile: nah you just said she's adding into it

Sya: you heard me wrong bro

Sandile: you have a girlfriend?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: why can't you mind your own business?

Sandile: you are my brother and you are my business, so I'm minding you

Sya: just shut up

Sandile: I thought you not the dating type

Nkanyezi: whose not the dating type?

he asked coming out of the house.

Sya: nobody, I don't know what his talking about

Nkanyezi: well we are waiting for you inside and we'll it seemed like y'all were taking your time since you were busy chit chatting

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: ohh sorry we did not know y'all.were waiting for us

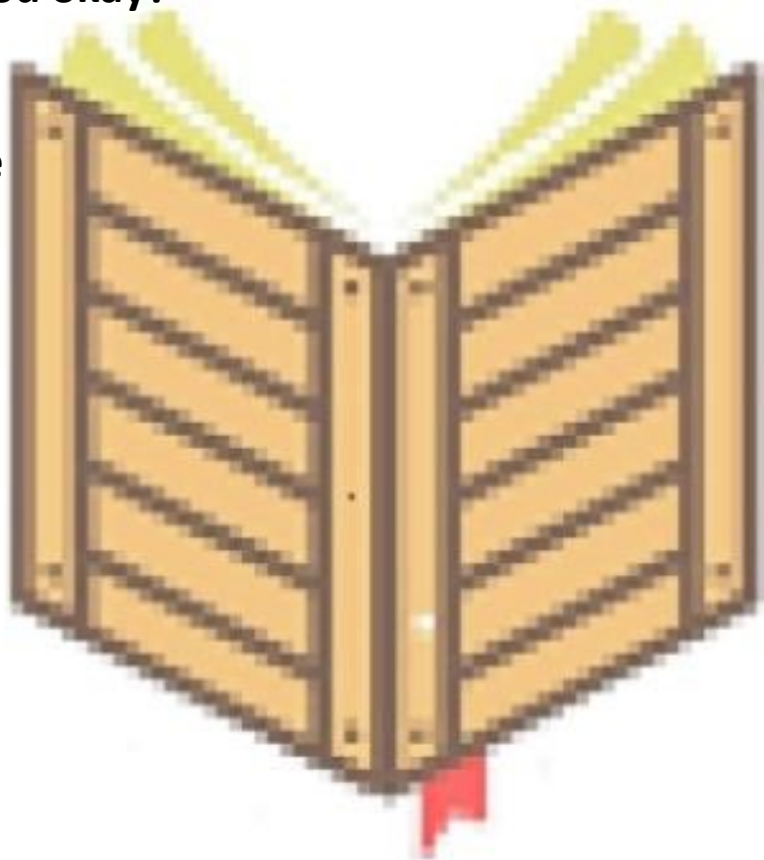
Nkanyezi: now you do

they walked inside, Sya checked his phone and he signed putting it inside his pocket.

his family was gathered in the living room.

Mom: are you okay?

Sya: I'm fine



NOVELSGURU.COM

he set down next to Nkosie.

Mr M: so as y'all know that your brother Nkosie u madly in love with this girl named Khwezi

Sandile: Ouuuu! mysterious

they look at him.

Mrs M: imma slap that mysterious out of your tiny little brain

Sandile: sorry mom

he frowns and his siblings laugh a little.

Mr M: so we gonna be leaving tomorrow to go pay the damages and also lobola your brothers beloved

NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: and I will be leaving today to start preparing with her, I'm her friend after all

Sandile: can I also come?

Zizi: where you going to sleep?

Ssndile: ohh...

Zizi: exactly

Nkanyezi: next time little brother

Mrs M: before we all get excited, what about Ntando? isn't he suppose to be here with us?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: that's how the nice family reunion died

Nkanyezi: true that, Ntando showed that he cannot be part of this family all he does is drift each and everyone of us apart

Zizi: he is our brother but he hurt prettyface, what did she do wrong? nothing so mom please don't ruin a very good moment for my brother by bringing Ntando up

Mrs M sighs.

Mrs M: his my son I can't help it though, I miss him

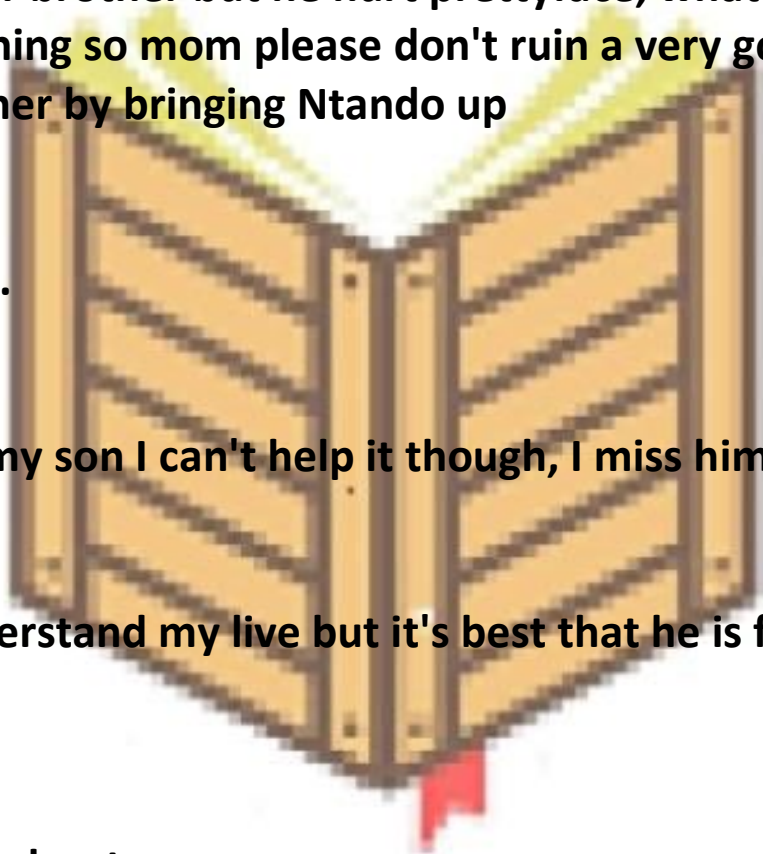
Mr M: I understand my live but it's best that he is far away from us

Mrs M wipes her tears.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mrs M: let's have eat and catch up

she smiles.



Sya: I'm sorry but I can't stay, I need to be somewhere

Mrs M: what's so important that you have to leave now?

Sya: mom please

he stood up and went to kiss his mother's cheek.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sandile: it's a girl

he whispers and everyone looks at Sya.

Sya: don't listen to him

he walks out, he got inside his car and drove to the hospital to check on Nosi since he knows she's usually there.

he went to the receptionists.

Sya: good morning, I'm here to see Dr Mhlongo

"I'm sorry sir but she did not come in today"

Sya: ohh

NOVELSGURU.COM

"but I can ask another doctor to help you out if you don't mind sir"

she says.

Sya: no I'm good

he walks out.

Sya: fuck Nosi why do this go me

he got inside his car and drove to her apartment, he knocks and nobody answers.



NOVELSGURU.COM

he knocks again but still no answer, he placed his forehead and a fist on the door.

he looks down and he could see a shadow of someone standing behind the door.

Sya: Nosipho? I know you are in here just open the door for me

silence.

silence..

silence...



Sya: Baby I can see your shadow, ngivulele mama ngyakucela (open for me please)

he begs while his heart kept on pounding, he heard the key turn and he signed in releaf.

the door opens and there stood Nosi with puffy eyes, she sniffed.

Nosi: what do you want?

Sya: Sthandwa sami...

Nosi: the name is Nosipho *wipes tears* how may I help you sir?

Sya: why are you crying?

Nosi: that's non of your concern, now can I help you with anything else?

she's fighting her tears.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: what did I do?

Nosi: does it always have to be about you?

Sya: you not answering my question

Nosi: neither are you, look I don't have time *sighs* I'm kinda busy so please can you leave

Sya: this is not you

Nosi: ohh trust me it is, it's just that some people did a little upgrade on me

she shuts the door on his face.

Sya: Nosipho open this door this instant

he knocks once again.

Sya: Nosipho?



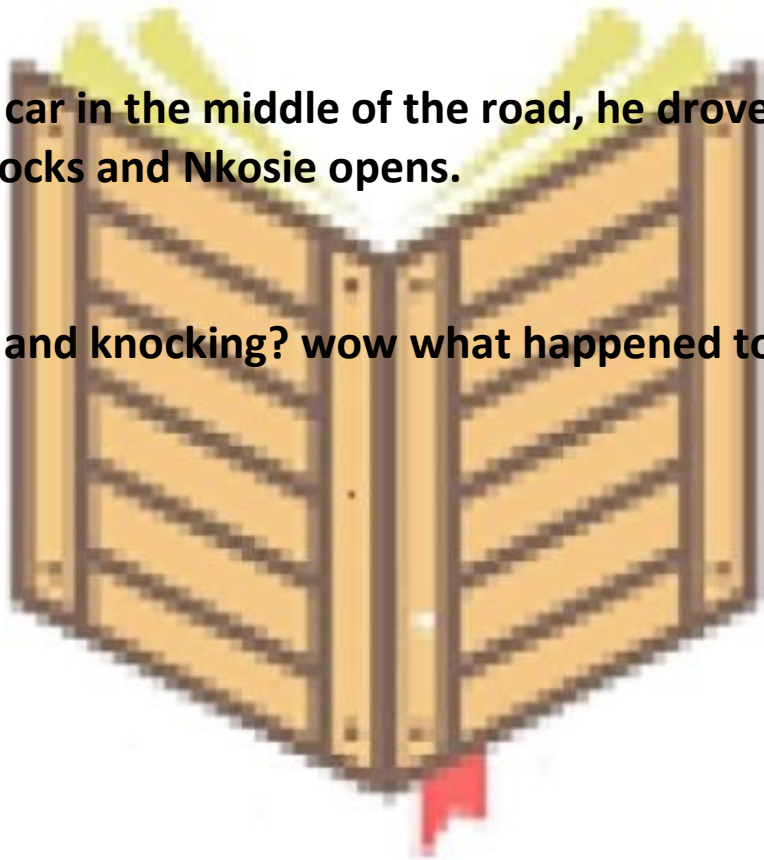
NOVELSGURU.COM

nobody answers.

he clicks his tongue and walks away, he got inside his car and he started the car, he drove in a high speed while his heart kept on pounding and pounder faster and faster.

he stops his car in the middle of the road, he drove to Nkosie's place, he knocks and Nkosie opens.

Nkosie: you and knocking? wow what happened toda...you good?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya just gave Nkosie a hug.

Nkosie: hell nah, are you drunk?

Sya did not respond.

Nkosie: dude what's going on?

he heard Sya sniff meaning his crying, he knew at that moment that it was serious.

he tightened the hug and walked inside with Sya still not wanting to let go.

Nkosie: just tell me who did what and imma sort them out, ion give a fuck

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya pulls out from the hug and wipes his tears, he fakes a smile.

Nkosie: nah this ain't you and don't try to fake it or come up with a lie

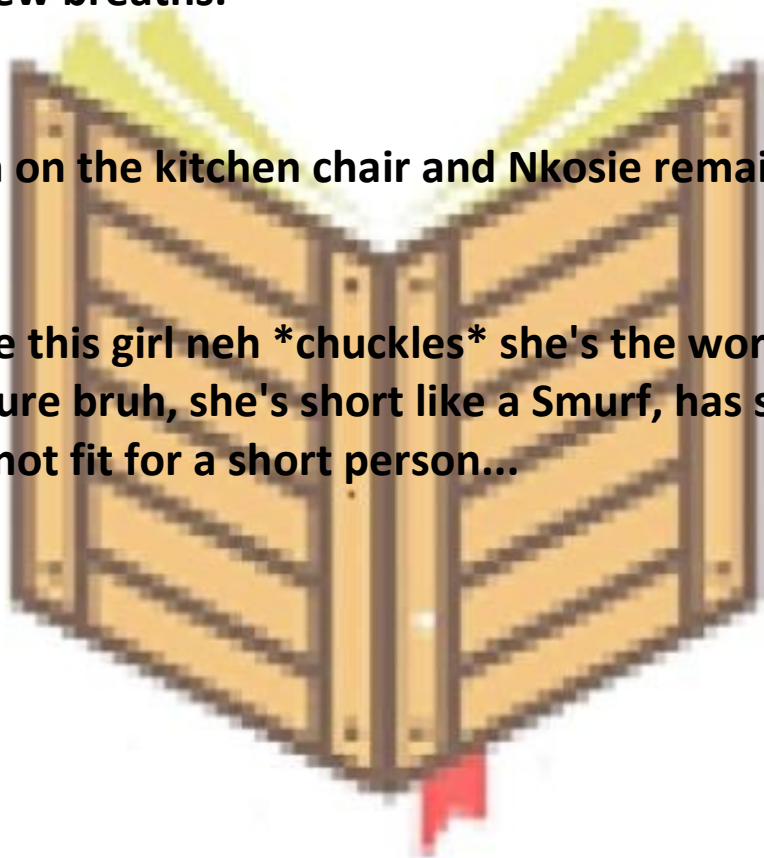
he poured Sya some water and he drank it.

Nkosie: you gonna be fine, just breath then tell me what's going on

Sya took a few breaths.

he set down on the kitchen chair and Nkosie remains standing.

Sya: so there this girl neh *chuckles* she's the words most cutest creature bruh, she's short like a Smurf, has short hair and an attitude not fit for a short person...



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie just smiled.

Sya: she means the world to me and right now I don't know what wrong I did to her, she's crying bruh and seeing her tears makes my heart ache...I just...

he sighs.

Nkosie: welcome to the team

Sya: nah nah we not dating, we just friends

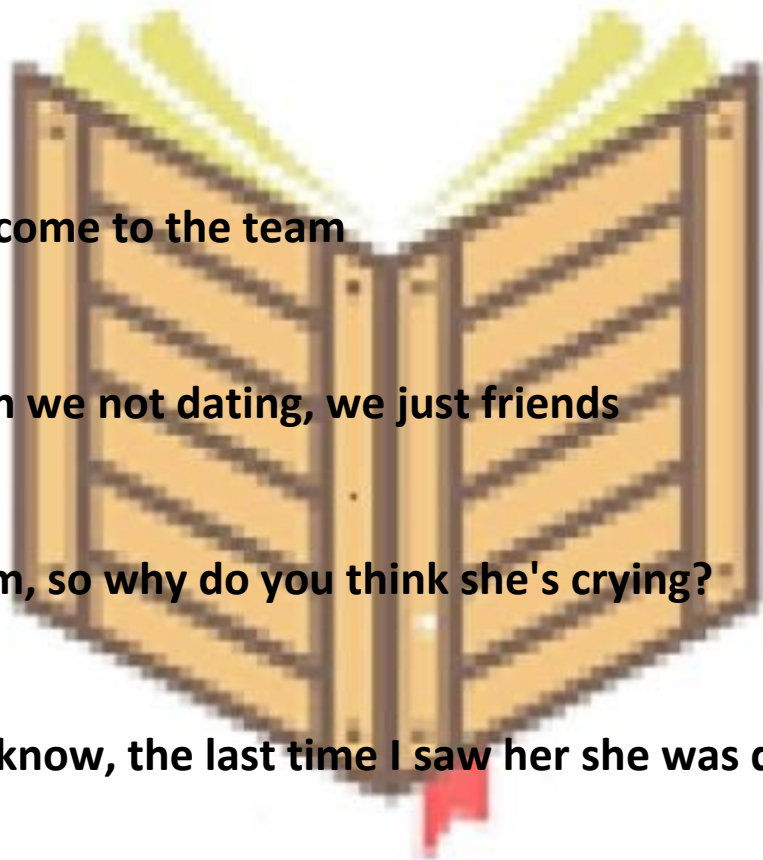
Nkosie: mhm, so why do you think she's crying?

Sya: I don't know, the last time I saw her she was doing good I guess

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I don't know how I can help, what do you want me to do?

Sya: give me some advice, see I love her with everything in me it's just that don't want to hurt her, I get bored quickly and I'm



afraid I'm gonna make my bad habits make me to loose her

Nkosie: you wouldn't hurt someone you love Sya just know that

Sya: you don't understand Nkosie

Nkosie: trust me I get you

Sya: she doesn't want to talk to me



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: give her some time to cool down and then talk to her

Sya: *sighs*

Nkosie: relax *smiles*

Sya: just for the record I did not hug you

Nkosie: trust me I don't even know who that was

they laughed.

Nkosie: let's watch a match and talk about tonight's plan

Sya: sure

they took some glasses, Nkosie came with the ice and bottle of Hennessy.

they set down and had a chat,.they called the rest of the brothers to join, when it was late they did their jobs, did three jobs in one night and made a lot of money though Sya mind wasn't there, he was thinking about his beloved.

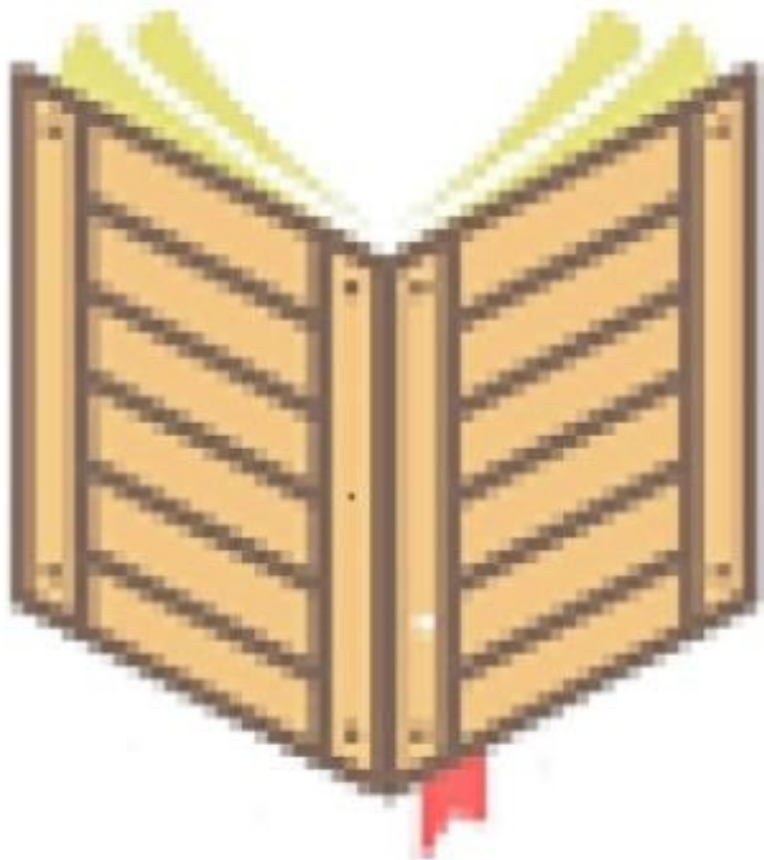


NOVELSGURU.COM

-
-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 120



NOVELSGURU.COM

KHWEZILOKUSA.

She woke up early in the morning and bathed, she needs to start preparing for the visit of the Mthembu family and she is must very nervous.

she got dressed and wore a long tight navy blue dress, she went out and her mom was in the kitchen cooking breakfast.

Khwezi: good morning mom

her mother looks at her and smiles.

Mom: morning how are you? did you sleep okay?

Khwezi: I'm okay mom and I slept really fine thank you

Mom: that's good *sighs* you do know I did not mean to be hard on you last night

Khwezi looks down and plays with her fingers, well on the day of her arrival she had a very steamy chat with her mother.



Khwezi: I know mom and I'm really sorry for disappointing you

Mom: I forgive you my child, what's done is done all I want is for you to be happy

Khwezi: thank you mom

she went and gave her mother a hug.

Mom: your stomach is very big, how far you are?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: three months

Mom: wow, it's really big I thought you were five months

Khwezi: I'm having triplets

Mom: what is that now?

Khwezi: *giggles* I'm having three babies

Mom: three what? so I'm gonna be a granny three times

Khwezi nods while giggling.

Mom: I'm so happy for you baby

NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: happy for what now?

he walks in looking like a mess, he gave his daughter a kiss on the cheek and went to his wife who moved away as soon as he got closer.

Khwezi noticed and cleared her throat.

Khwezi: so Dad you still drinking?

Dad: how can I leave my daily fruit?

Khwezi: you do know that you can get sick and die because of this drinking addiction of yours



NOVELSGURU.COM

Dad: don't lecture me child, I know what I'm doing kanti who is the elder here?

Khwezi: you are but all I'm trying to say is that I don't want to loose you father, I still want you to live and see me get married not to mansion you being there for your grandchildren

Dad: grandchildren?

Mom: she is having three babies

Dad: at the same time?

Khwezi: yes father at the same time, imagine how much you you would be missing if anything bad happens to you

Dad: nothing will happen to me sweetheart and that boy is gonna have to pay millions, my baby girl can't be carrying three babies and he pays peanuts never

Khwezi and her mother laugh as the father makes his way to the living room.

Mom: oh did I tell you about what happened in the village a few months back?

Khwezi: what happened?

Mom: the Ndlovu house was burnt down and all the family members were found dead

Khwezi places her hand on her mouth in shock

Khwezi: you lying?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mom: I'm telling you, I'm really glad they got to pay for what they did to you

khwezi: with death? mom that's not how it should be?

Dad: if I had to kill them myself I would have done the same

Khwezi: baba! (Dad)

her father shrugs.

Khwezi then realised that Nkosie might be behind all this, she asked her self as to why he killed all the family members though.

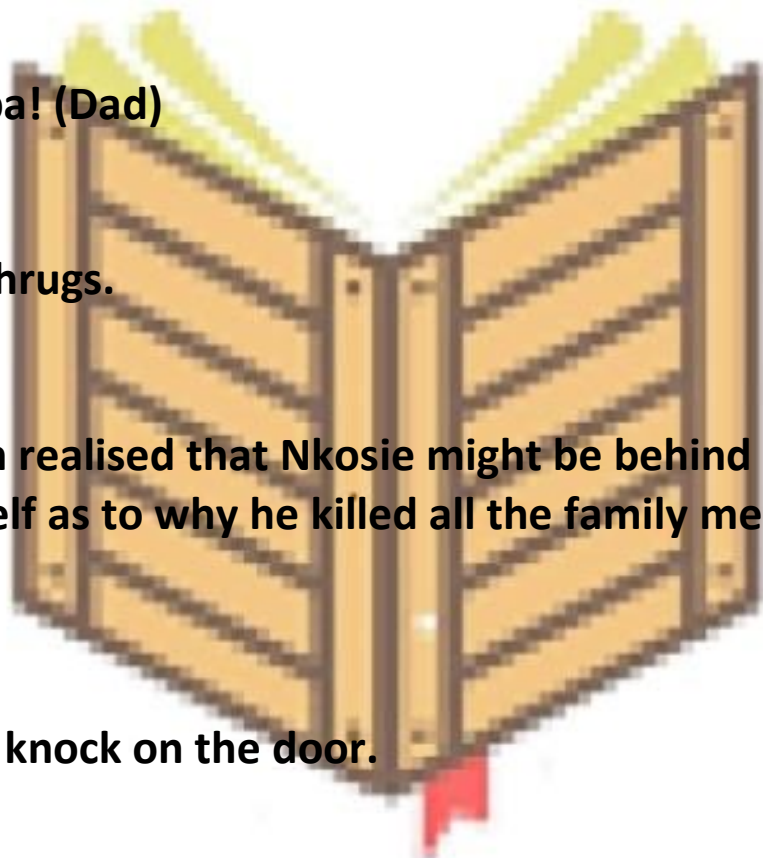
there was a knock on the door.

Khwezi: I will get it

NOVELSGURU.COM

she went to the door and she was suprised to see Zizi.

Khwezi: Zizi? what are you...?



Zizi: hey prettyface a little bird told me you missed me

Khwezi: and that bird was indeed telling the truth.

they shared a long hug.

Khwezi: I missed you so much



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi: tell me about it

they pull out.

Khwezi: I thought you were going to come with your family

Zizi: I wanted to land you an extra hand, knew you would need it

Khwezi: thank you so much, please come in

Zizi: someone is in the car waiting for you

Khwezi: let me guess it's Nkosie?

Zizi: in the flash



NOVELSGURU.COM

she got in with her bags and went to greet Khwezi's parents.

Khwezi went outside and Nkosie's porch was parked right outside, the window rolled down.

Khwezi: you like putting me in trouble

Nkosie: I missed you and I wanted to see you

Khwezi: you have seen me now leave, my mother and father will kill you if they see you here

Nkosie: let then kill me baby I don't care

Khwezi: you willing to die for me?



NOVELSGURU.COM

she smiles.

Nkosie: get inside the car and I will show you what else I'm willing to do for you

Khwezi rolled her eyes and got inside the car, immediately as she got in she smashed her lips on his and he responds.

they a small conversation while they were kissing.

Khwezi pulls out.

Nkosie: sthandwa Samii

Khwezi: how are you Mvelase?

Nkosie: I'm good and you guys?

he places his hand on Khwezi's baby bump.

Khwezi: we are food though these craving be playing with me



NOVELGURU.COM

Nkosie: I know my women so I bought you few delicious things in my way here even though Zizi ate some

Khwezi: I'm gonna kill her

Nkosie: and I will help you baby



NOVELSGURU.COM

he leans for a kiss and Khwezi pushes his face while giggling.

Khwezi: behave yourself abhuti

Nkosie: make me baby...

he looks at her in the eyes and she blushes.

Khwezi: baby ad much ad I would love to stay but I have to go, I need to take care of a lot of things

Nkosie: I know and ohh use this

he took out his black card.

Khwezi: I can't accept that nor even use it baby, it's your card

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: and I want you to use it, you can buy everything you want, it has no limit

Khwezi: but baby I want to do this with my money

Nkosie: I know you do but for once baby, just take the card

Khwezi looks at the card then back at Nkosie, she sighs.

Khwezi: fine

she took the card and Nkosie smiled.

Nkosie: look at me



NOVELSGURU.COM

she does as she is told, she looks at him.

Nkosie: I know I don't say it much or maybe I don't say it as much as you want me to say it but Mashiy'amahle ngyakthanda mina ngenhliziyo yamii yonke and angikboni kushitsha lokho (Mashiy'amahle I love you with all my heart and I don't see any of that love I have for you change)

Khwezi started crying.

Khwezi: baby...

she wipes the tears and Nkosie cups her face.

Nkosie: mama you do know what your tears do to me, those tears are my weakness and I don't like seeing you cry sthandwa sami

NOVELSGURU.COM

he wipes her tears with his thumb, while she pulls her self together.

Khwezi: I'm sorry, I just got emotional and these hormones are not making any easy for me

she laughs a little, Nkosie smiles.

Khwezi: Mvelase ngyakthanda nami soka lami *smiles*

Nkosie gave her a kiss, as they were kissing the kiss got passionate and he could feel his cock twitch a little and he groans in between the kiss.

he pulls out and looks down at his hard manhood.

Nkosie: you should leave before I make up reason for you to not leave



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi giggles and pecks him on the lips.

Khwezi: travel back safe and thank you for the food

Nkosie: anything for wena sthandwa sami

Khwezi Smiles and walks back to her yard, she passes a few groups of girls and they whisper to each other.

Girl 1: she is with a sugar daddy there is no way a girl like her can get a man with such expensive cars

Girl2: she offered her pussy to the guys there is no way he would have fell for a farm girl like her

Girl3: ain't no way, I can't wait to see what will happen when they arrive

NOVELSGURU.COM

they laugh, Khwezi shook her head and walks inside the yard.

she went inside and Zizi was having a nice chat with Khwezi's mother.

Mom: you friend here is a very nice girl

Khwezi: I chose perfectly when it came to her

Zizi smiles.

Zizi: you made no mistake at all

Khwezi: not even a single one



NOVELSGURU.COM

she smiles.

they decided to go to town to get some things, well at the village they have to travel a very long distance to go to town and buy things.

the driver drove them and they bought all the things they needed for the guest.

they drove back home and it wasn't that late, the church members children mostly girls were there to help at the kitchen.

they started to cook and after a few hours they were done, Zizi and Khwezi went to freshen up, they got dressed into their attire which Zizi insisted on wearing them.

- .
- .
- .

FOREVA YENA

NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 121

NARRATIVE.

The Mthembu family arrived each family member drove in their very own car. they park their BMW's, Mercedes Benz, Lamborghini's right outside.

the weather was very hot even at that situation the neighbours stood outside watching what was happening.

the Mthembu brothers followed their father who stood outside, he was neatly dressed and had his shades on.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mr M: syakhuleka ekhaya kaNgcobo (we greet to Ngcobo family)

the elders just sat outside watching what was happening without saying a word, some were gossiping.

Mr M: Syakhuleka boNgcobo (clan names)

Mapholoba, Fuz'afulela njengemvula, Mashiy'amahle sengathi azoshumayel, Nyuswa, Sidinane, Qadi elikhulu, Mabhala ngoziph abanye bebhala ngempnsela, Mavul 'inkungu kuvulek 'ilanga, Mthabathe, Ngongoma, Vumezitha

he said but they did not come to the gate or do anything.

Sandile: the sun is toasting us, let's just go back I mean these people don't want to hear us out

he says with his hand on his forehead as he continued to talk Nkosie's black Mercedes Benz G-wagon drove in.

he did not come out but he stayed in his car.

Sandile: or maybe not, awu boMapholoba guys kanti yini

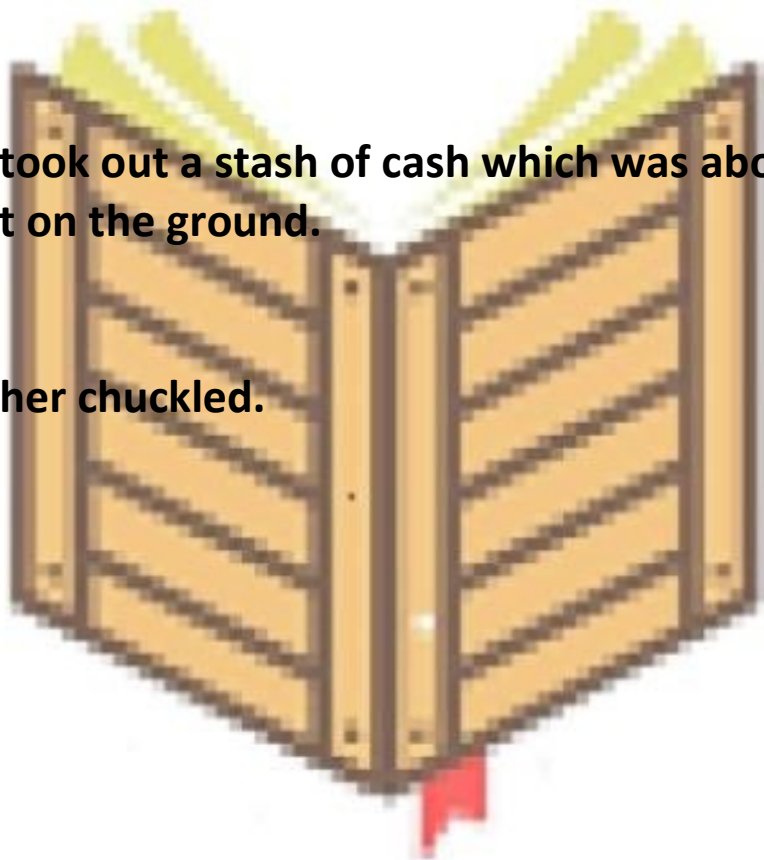
he shouts and his father gives him a side eye.

Nkanyezi: shut up Sandile

Mthokozisi who is Khwezi's father just set there having his beer.

Syathokoza took out a stash of cash which was about R1000 and placed it on the ground.

Khwezi's father chuckled.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mthokozisi: boy go open the gate for these people

he says and they little boy goes and opens the gate, he takes the money and he leads the Mthembu family.

Mr M: Nyuswa...

Mthokozisi doesn't say anything he stands up and walks inside, the gentlemen follow.

they set down at the living room and Khwezi's father set with his wife and other uncle's.

Mr M: the bottle Sandile

Sandile: really though?

Sandile places the bottle of Hennessy on the table and then another bottle of Jamesons.

Mthokozisi smiles.

Mthokozisi: oh thank you and you say you are?



Mr M: we are the Mthembu's

Mthokozisi: awu Mvelase, what brings you here tell me?

Mr M: we actually came here to fix the damage that one of my son's caused by that I mean one of my son's entered your kraal and cause a very huge damage

Mthokozisi nods.



NOVELSGURU.COM

they talk about the damage.

Mthokozisi: who is this boy? is he present here?

Mr M: no his not here, we will do whatever you say and after that we would like to talk about the lobola

Mbali: just like that?

Khwezi's mother asks.

Mr M: I'm not sure I follow

Mbali: so you gonna come here just like that, you not gonna apologise for your sons doings? you not gonna apologise for breaking my daughter's heart and making her cry? you not gonna do that huh?

NOVELSGURU.COM

Mr M: my apologise, how about I call in my son to come do the apologising himself

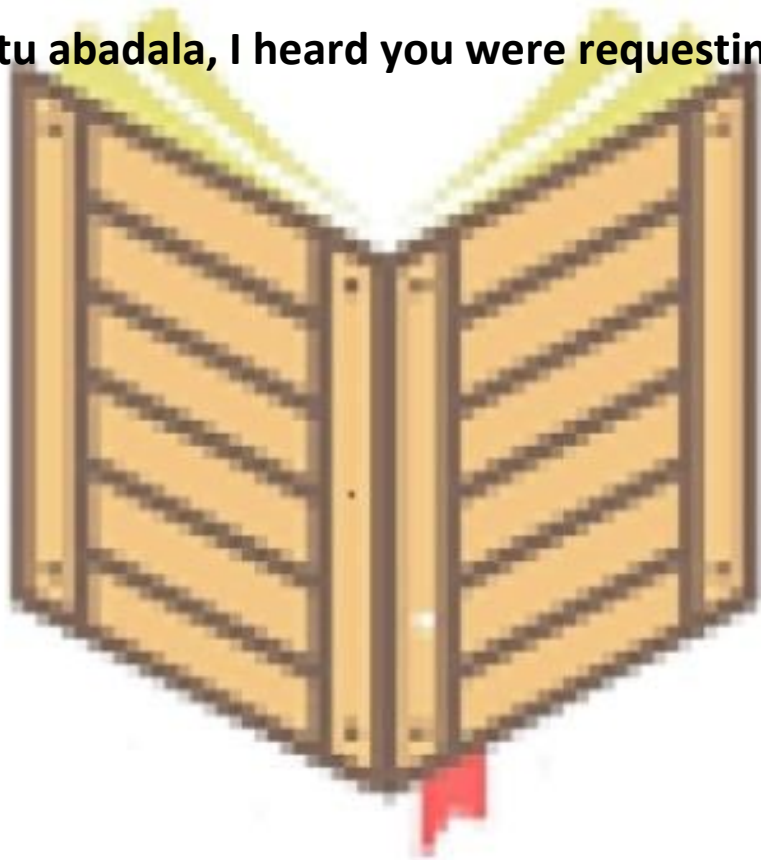
Mbali folds her arms looking the other direction.

They called Nkose.

he walks in all dressed in a beautiful attire, the colours are complementing with his skin tone, he looked really yummy.

Nkosie: Bantu abadala, I heard you were requesting for me

he says.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mr M: yes son. take a sit

Nkosie sits down.

he could feel Mbali's eyes on him.

he clear his throat.

Nkosie: Mapholoba I'm really sorry for hurting you daughter and Baba?

he looks at Khwezi's father.

Nkosie: I'm really sorry for entering you kraal and stealing all your cows from you, it really wasn't my intention for all this to happen. I love you daughter deeply that why I'm willing to do anything to make sure that everything is right for her and our babies. I also want to make her my wife cause I can't imagine a life without her and ngifuna ukuvusa umuzi kababa *smiles* ngingathanda ukuba kube nguye Mashiy'amhle engizobambisana naye kulolu hambo

there was silent in the room.

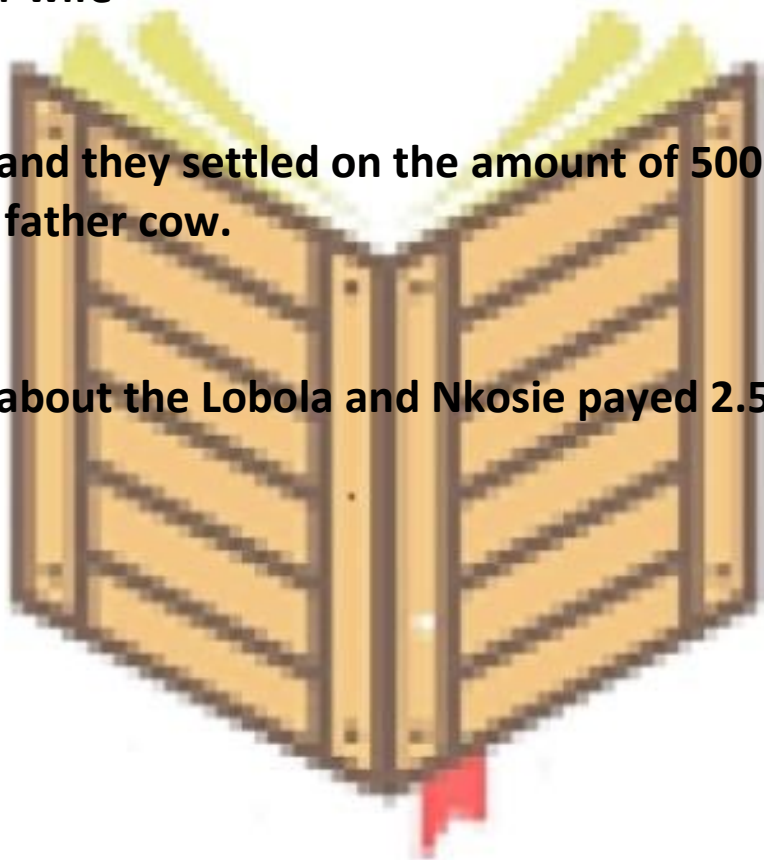
Mbali: I hear you son

Nkosie: Sbonge

Mthokozisi: let's get on with the damages then we will go to the lobola and we will ask the girls to come down so you can identify your wife

they talked and they settled on the amount of 500K, with the mother and father cow.

they talked about the Lobola and Nkosie payed 2.5 Million to the family.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Mbali: so much money?

Nkosie: my wife deserves better and thus amount suits here perfectly

he smiles.

Mthokozisi: so if we call the girls will you be able to pick your wife?

Nkosie: yes sir

Mthokozisi: you do know that if you pick wrong that's a problem for you right?

Nkosie: I'm aware of that



NOVELSGURU.COM

they called in the five girls who were covered in blankets, Nkosie and his family look at them, they discussed.

Sandile: nah number three? that's her Sya: how do you know that?

Sandile: she's my wife of course

Nkanyezi rolls his eyes.

Mr M: Son?

he looks at Nkosie who is still looking at the first.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: that's my wife over there

he points at number four.

Mthokozisi: girls reveal yourselves

they remove the blankets and Nkosie's heart started pounding, indeed number four was Khwezi.

she smiles looking down.

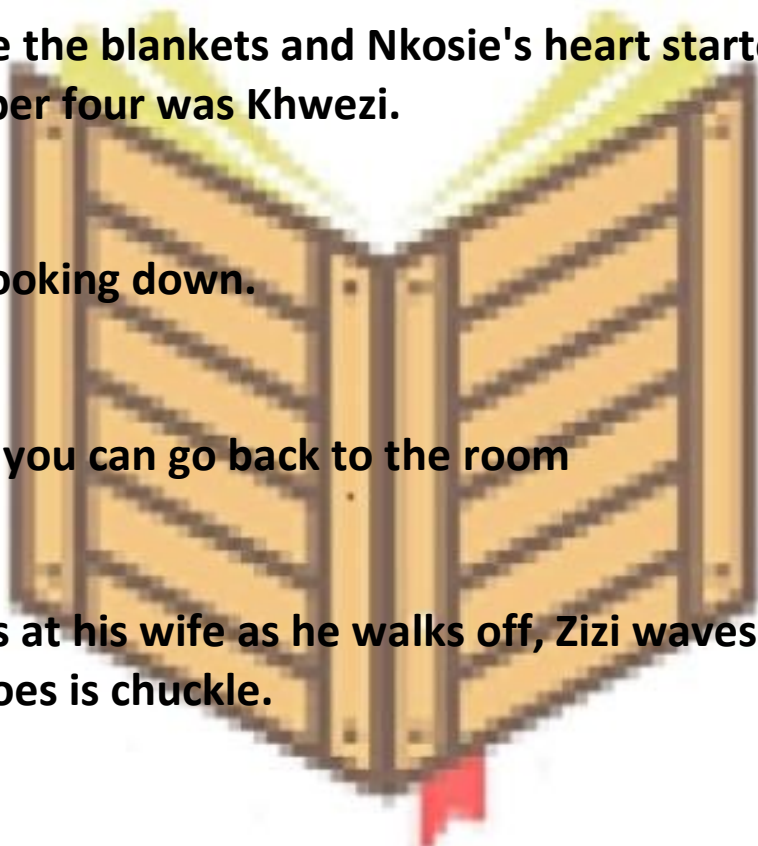
Mthokozisi: you can go back to the room

Nkosie looks at his wife as he walks off, Zizi waves at Nkosie and all he does is chuckle.

the negotiations ended and Khwezi had to serve her in laws, she served them the food and offered them water to wash their hands.

Nkosie couldn't keep his eyes off her.

he notices Khwezi going out and he gulps down his juice.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I need to use the bathroom

Sya: but brother we are still eating

Nkosie: excuse me

he stood up and went outside following Khwezi, she stops as she notice that someone is following her.



NOVELSGURU.COM

she turns and she smiles when she saw Nkosie.

Khwezi: Mvelase wami

Nkosie smiles.

he got closer to her and held her by the waist.

Khwezi: you do know that there are aunties and elders in this yard right

Nkosie: you mine and whoever has a problem can kiss my ass

Khwezi: nah baby that as is on my mind to kiss

Nkosie: you nasty!

NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi giggles, they shared a kiss.

she pulls out and looks into his eyes.

Khwezi: there us no going back now

Nkosie: so you had a thought of going back?

Khwezi: I was just saying hawu

Nkosie: I know...

Khwezi: i thought you said you weren't allowed to be present at the negotiation



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: well your mother wanted me to apologise

Khwezi: what? and you did?

Nkosie: yes I did and I think she's super cool with me

Khwezi: let's hope so

Nkosie: I'm glad this day was a success

Khwezi: now we start planning for our wedding

Nkosie: who proposed?

Khwezi: you did

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: when? I don't remember

Khwezi: *rolls eyes* you said "marry me" even though I didn't say yes but still we gonna get married



Nkosie: shame I feel sorry for you, someone is gonna get married alone

Khwezi: you wouldn't do me like that phela wena you love me to much

Nkosie kisses her on the cheek.

Nkosie: the things I'm gonna do to you tonight



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: hold your horses mister

Nkosie: *smiles* God I love you

Khwezi: you love God or me?

they laughed.

**.
.**

I wanna drop another but my break is over meaning back to studying♡

**.
.
.**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 122

NOSIPHO.

NOVELSGURU.COM

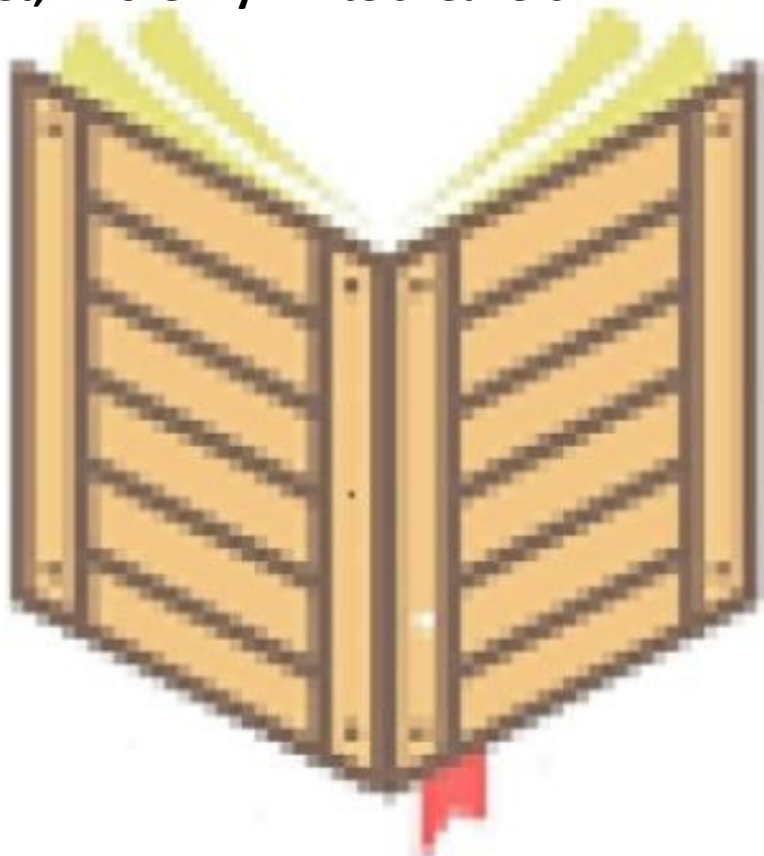
I haven't been feeling myself lately, I feel like an empty water bottle. I'm so tired my brain hurts from all the overthinking.

how can he do me like that? after all we have been through, I drag myself out of bed and I went to take a shower.



I need to go to work and it has been two days since I have been absent. I got done showering and I dried my body.

I lotioned my body and got dressed, I wore a pair of plain boyfriend jeans, a white long sleeve tight poloneck, a black leather jacket, I wore my white sneakers.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I went to make myself some breakfast, I ate and i went out, I drove to the hospital.

the eyes I got, God I just left for a few days and already they got something to gossip about me.

I went to my office and I set down, I released a heavy sigh.

Nosi: Nosipho put your head in the game, you can do this

I mumble and open my laptop, there was a knock on the door.

Nosi: come in

I say focused on the laptop, I look to see who it was and it was my boss.

NOVELSGURU.COM

I quickly stood up.

Nosi: uhm sir...

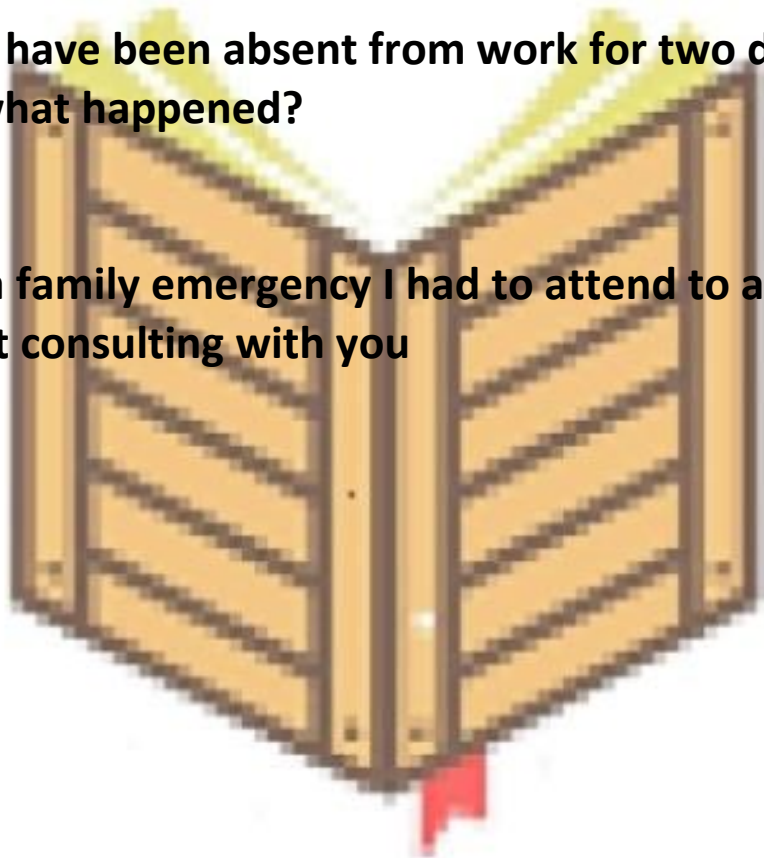
Him: no need to stand up, please sit down

he said taking a seat and I do the same.

I clear my throat.

Him: so you have been absent from work for two days, mind telling me what happened?

Nosi: I had a family emergency I had to attend to and I'm really sorry for not consulting with you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: *sighs* that seems personal, look next time such situations come up please contact me and tell me you be available

Nosi: I will do just that sir, I'm so sorry it with happen again

Him: I hope it doesn't, well I have to leave now since all of this is sorted

he stood up and buttoned his jacket.

Him: good to have you back Miss Mhlongo

he says and walks out.

I sigh in releaf, I continued with my work.

it was my lunch break and I was starving, I went to the cafeteria to get something to eat.

I walk while busy on my phone not want to talk to anybody actually.



NOVELSGURU.COM

"look she disappears for days and the boss does not say anything, I told you she is sleeping with the boss" one of my nurses says

I held my head high and continued to walk not minding them.

Nosi: can I have two chocolate muffins and one vanilla muffin and some coffee with extra milk

"sure" she went to pack up my order.

she gave it to me and I paid, I walk back to my office and ate alone.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I wouldn't be eating alone bored if Sya was here, quilt ate me up as I remembered the way I talked to him.

I took out my phone and called him.

it rang and rang until it was answered.

"hello?" it was a girls phone

Nosi: oh hey uhm can I talk to Sya?

"sorry his busy taking a shower how about you call later huh?"
the girl says annoyed.

Nosi: okay I will do that, thank you

I hung up and I frown.

I knew he wasn't you g to talk to me, I ate my food and continued with my work.

- .
- .

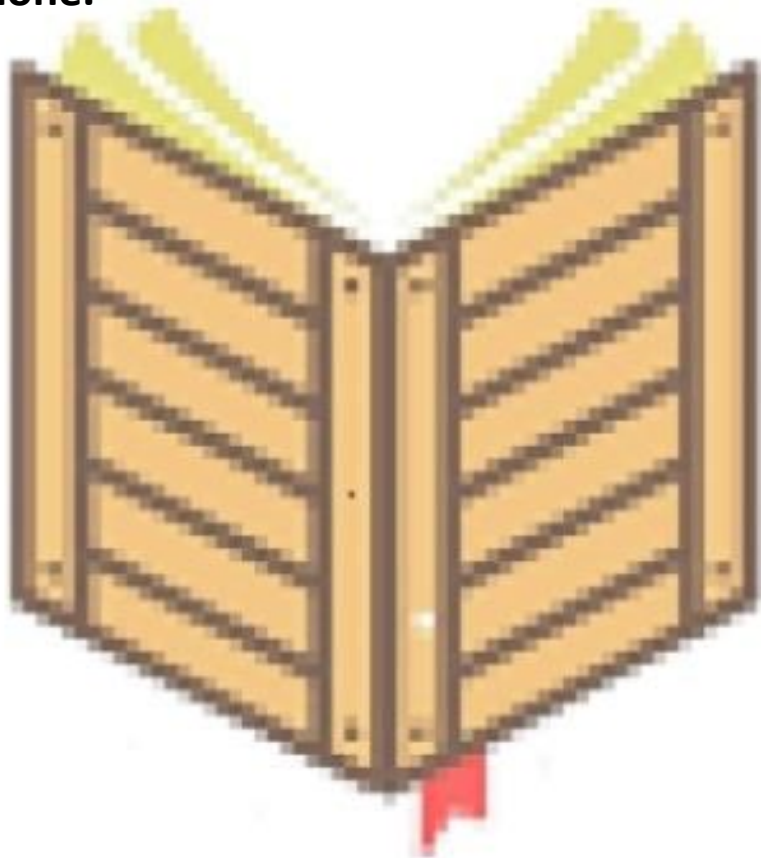


NOVELSGURU.COM

. SYATHOKOZA.

I just had a steaming session with this girl, I don't even know her name though her pussy was sure damn good.

I turn off the shower tap and I wrap a towel around my lower body, I went to the main room and I found the girl putting down my phone.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: what are you doing?

Her: your phone rang and I answered it, it was some girl who wanted to talk to you

Sya: did you just say you answered my phone?

I went and looked at my call logs, it was Nosipho, I boiled in anger.

Sya: who gave you the right to answer my phone?

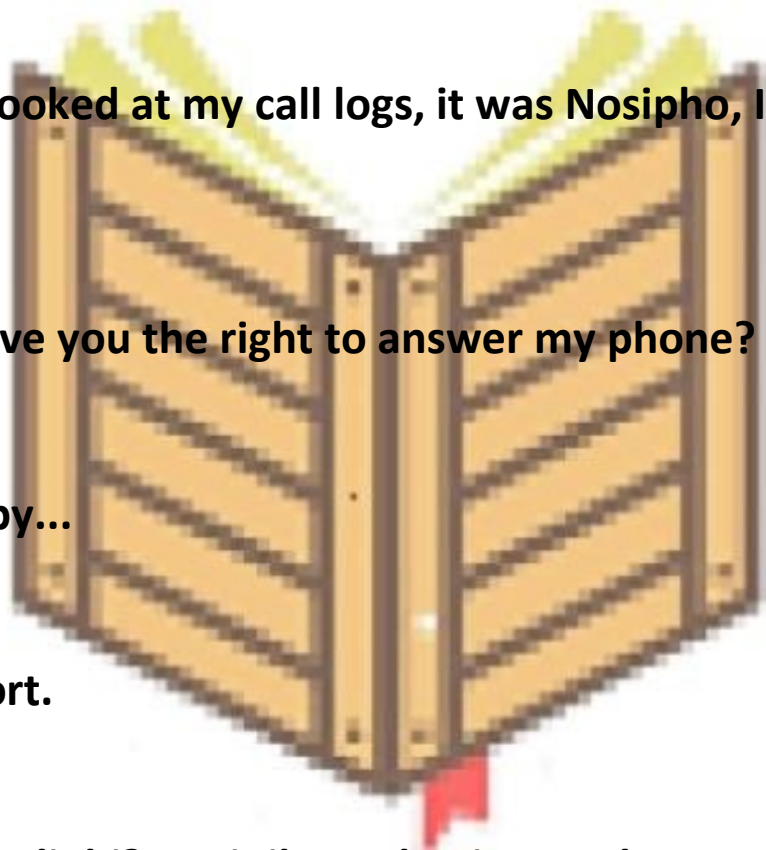
Her: but baby...

I cut her short.

Sya: baby ngaliphi? unginikwe uba, just grab your shit and get the fuck out, I don't want to repeat myself vaya

I click my tongue and she sighs, she got dressed and left.

I lotioned my body and I got dressed, I never got dressed so fast in my life, I was rushing. what if she called to tell me something



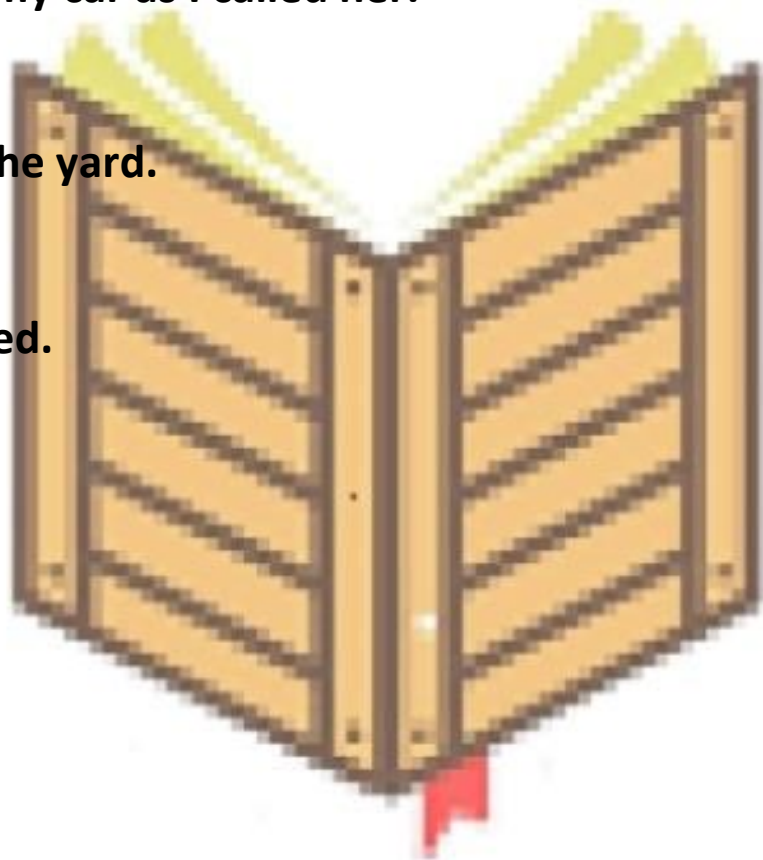
important?

what if she was killing herself and she wanted to talk to me, I mean she looks depressed to me and you know depressed people have suicidal thoughts.

I got inside my car as I called her.

I drove off the yard.

She answered.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: MaNjomane

Nosi: what is it?

Sya: you called, I was busy

Nosi: don't bother your girl told me all about it

Sya: that wasn't my girl

Nosi: whatever Syathokoza, what do you want?

Sya: I want to see you, I missed you so much

Nosi: you can't see me

NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: I know you at your work place so I'm coming there

Nosi: don't bother I'm leaving right now

Sya: Nosipho...

she hung up.

Sya: fuck! I'm gonna kill that bitch

I hit staring wheel while thinking about the girl that answer my phone, who did she think she was? just cause I had my penis inside her doesn't mean she has a right to answer my phone.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I'm fudging right now.

I drove to Nosi's apartment, the drive was long, I got there and she was already parking outside her apartment.

she got out of her car and she rolls her eyes when she sees me.

Sya: Nosipho wait up

I went to her and she stops, she turns to face me.

the girl is very short shame marn.

Nosi: and?

Sya: why ungikwatele? (why are you angry at me?)

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: I'm not Sya

Sya: then? why you were talking to me like that?



she remains silent.

Sya: look I understand that you going through some deep shit but I don't like it when you talk to me in whatever way you like, mina ngiyindoda not yakho koda kumele unghloniphe ungavedane ungingaphaze ngazuthi awungiboni(I'm a man not yours but you have to respect me, don't leash out on me as you I'm just a thing you don't even see)

she looks at me in the eyes and bites her lower lips, she really looks cute right now.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: uyangizwa MaNjomane? (do you hear me?)

she nods.

Sya: ngikhuluma ngedwa yini?(am I talking alone)

Nosi: yebo ngyakuzwa Sya (yes I hear you)

I smile.

Sya: now tell me why you called? you have been pushing me away so why call now?

Nosi: I was eating alone and missed having your company

Sya: really? that's cute

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: I know but I thought i was gonna talk to you but that girl! answered your phone

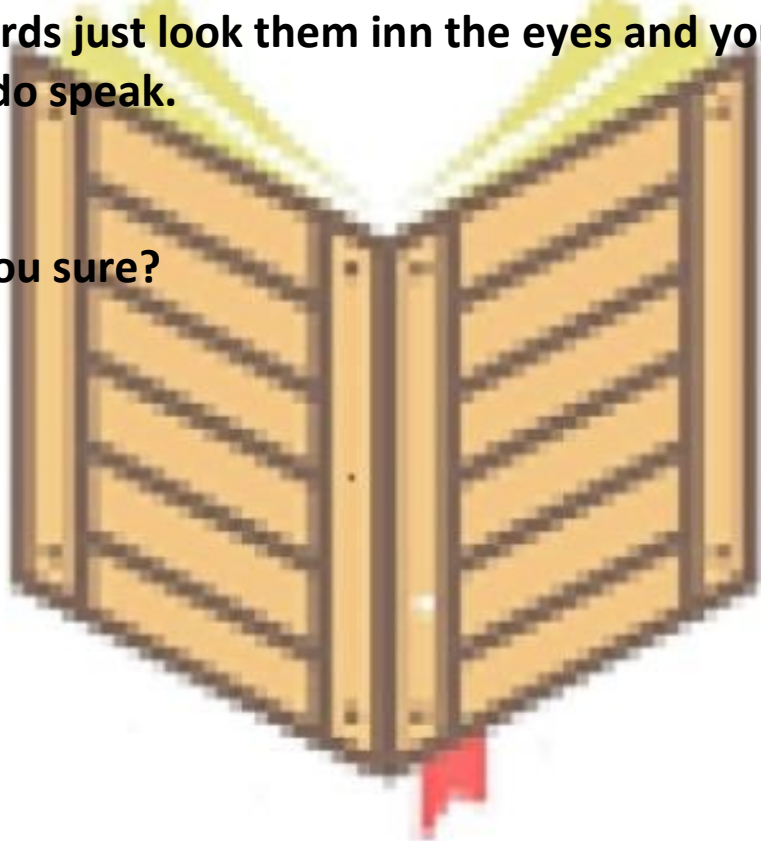
I knew she wasn't going to let the girl part go, I smile.

Sya: just admit you jealous

Nosi: I ain't jealous

I look at her in the eyes, she's lying, if you ain't believe the person's words just look them inn the eyes and you will see the truth. eyes do speak.

Sya: mhm you sure?



NOVELSGURU.COM

I pull her closer by the waist and she grins.

Sya: you wouldn't mind hearing from her again right?

Nosi: Sya!

she hits my chest.

Sya: I'm sorry I know you don't like that, I wa just joking

she rolls her eyes.

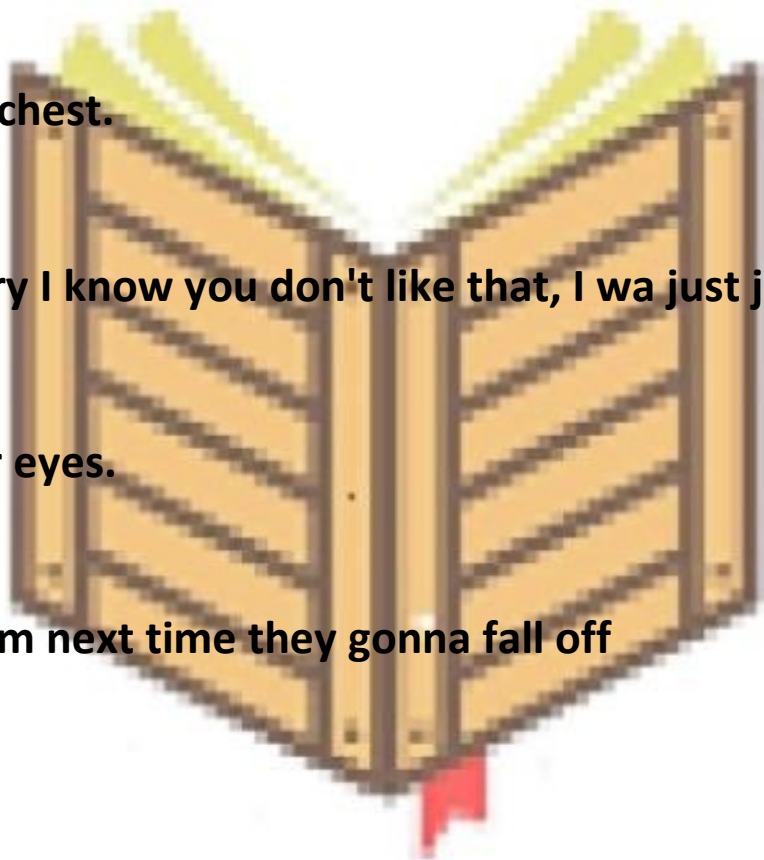
Sya: roll them next time they gonna fall off

she laughs.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nosi: tsek, I missed you

Sya: I missed you more then you can imagine



I gave her a hug, I pull her closer and she buried her face on my neck, I could feel her slow breath and that brought shiver to my spine, my penis started twitching at feeling of having her breath on my neck.

I start to imagine the things I want to do to her, I could feel my penis poking wanting to be unleashed.

she pulls out from the kiss and clears her throat.

Nosi: let's go inside its really cold



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: great idea

Nosi: and sort that out please

she pouts at my bulge.

Sya:help me sort it out

Nosi: not happening

she walks to the apartment door and I watched her ass, this cute little penguin of mine.

damn.

I smile.

**.
. .
.**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 123 NOSIPHO.

We made our way inside the house the house, he followed behind me and I went to place my beg on the counter. He went



NOVELSGURU.COM

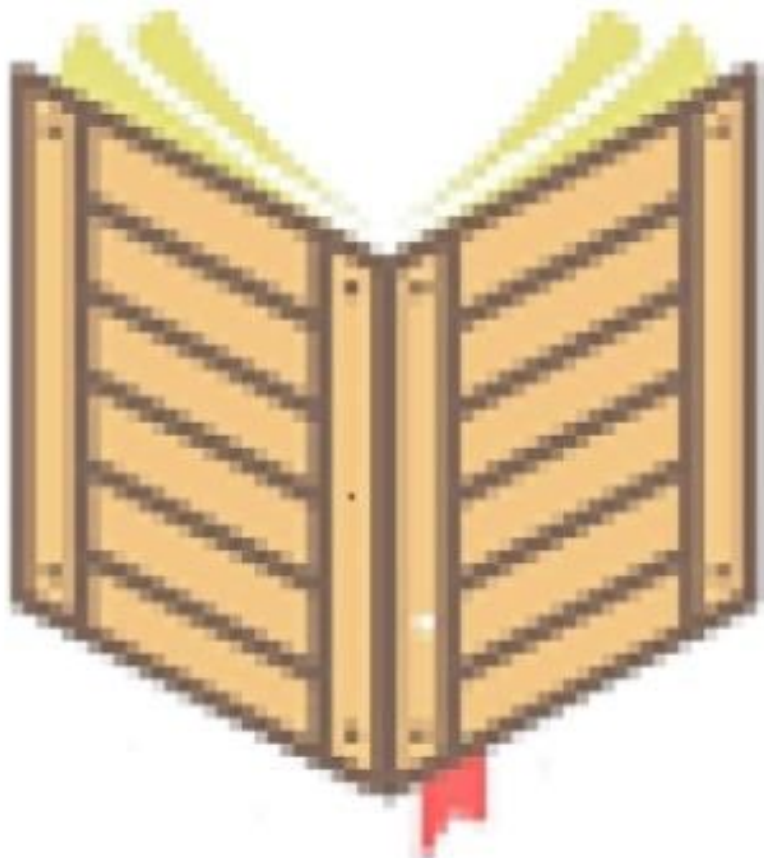
and set on the couch taking the remote and opening the TV, I can see he just made himself at home.

Me: let me go take a shower and I will join you in a few

Sya: and you want me to stink alone, come here I missed you

He pouts, I roll my eyes.

Me: I really need to shower



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: I came all this way to see you and all you thinking about is taking a shower, awungiboni yazi wena (you don't see me)

Me: you being dramatic about the whole thing now Sya: woza hawu (come)

I sigh.

I know he is not gonna stop asking me, I might as well go to him.

I walk to him and he pulls me to sit on top of him , I wrap my hands around his necka and looked at him in the eyes.

Sya: how are you?

Me: as you can see I'm fine

I smile.

Sya: you know what I meant, the last time I saw you Nosi you did not look fine so please tell me what happened

Me: I don't want to talk about it Sya: MaNjomane...

He cups my face with his hand and brushes my cheek looking straight into my eyes, I felt my insides melt as if I was some ice cream placed right were there is heat.

Sya: I know you and that was not you Me: Sya I just don't want to talk about it Sya: but I want to talk about it

I sigh.

Sya: I care about you Nosipho more then you know

Me: I know you care about me and I also care about you, I just don't want to talk about it

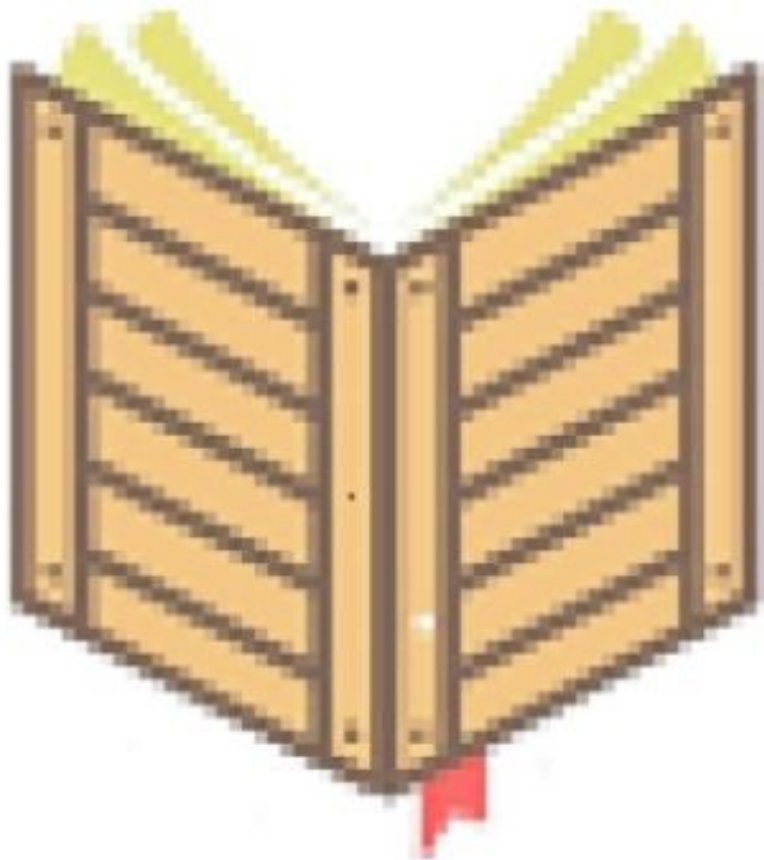
He looks at me in the eyes for a while and he flashes me a smile, I giggle.

Sya: I will not push it, now let's cuddle and watch a movie

He pulls me to his chest as he lays down, he wraps his hands around my waist. Me: mister I need to shower unlike you I love bathing

Sya: sorry but we gonna have to stink together in this couch

unless you have another plan in mind Me: what plan?
Sya: we bathe together



NOVELSGURU.COM

I look up at him and he has this smirk on his face, I know what that means and there is no way I'm gonna shower with this naughty motherfucker. Me: not happening let me go take a shower

I remove his hands from my waist and I got up from the couch.

Sya: you not gonna find me here when you return

Me: hawu Siya

I pout looking at him, he bursts into laughter.

Sya: I'm joking, you can go take your bath

I smiled and I went to take a shower, I stayed there for a while cause the water felt really nice.

I switch off the taps and I step out of the shower, I wrap a towel around my wet body and made my way back to the main room.

As I was about to let go of the towel Sya barges in. Me: Sya dammit!!

Sya: sorry damn

He covers his eyes and I roll my eyes, he saw what he wanted to see though it's not completely what his eyes wanted to see.

Me: I'm not naked relax, you can uncover your eyes Sya: if I uncover them I won't be able to control myself Me: what are you doing here vele?

Sya: you were taking long

He uncovers his eyes and his eyes land on mine.

Me: you really impatient, I'm nearly done

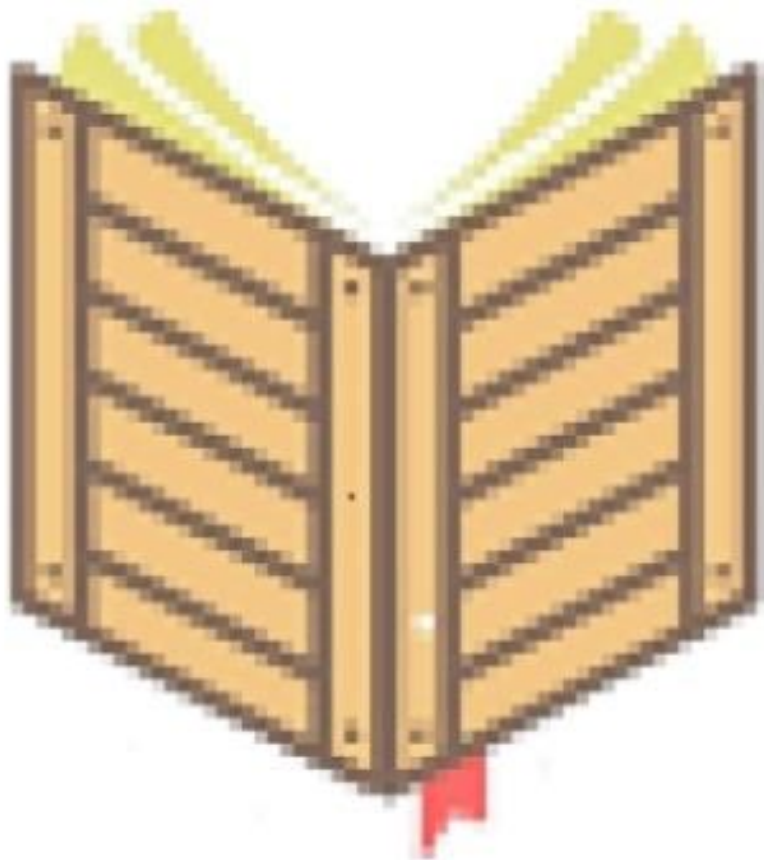
Sya: mmh

Me: you can leave now

I turn to face the mirror and he just stood there by the door, I look at him through the mirror and our eyes locked.

He slowly walks up to me and my heart starts racing. Me: what are you doing?

**Sya: can I see
He held me by the waist.**



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: see what?

Sya: what's hidden by this towel

He smirks, I'm sure I'm comfortable with that.

I could feel him breathing on my neck and my breathing slowly changed, my chest moving up and down and I breathe. He held my hand that was gripping tight on the towel and he looks at me through the mirror.

Sya: do you trust me?

Me: no I don't

That came out as a whisper and he chuckled.

Sya: I won't do anything, I promise

He kisses me on the neck and I felt this electric spark right up my spine, I let go of the towel and it drops down to the floor, he groans.

His fingers travelled from my neck to my chest, he took both my twins and he squeezes them, I close my eyes as I let him do whatever his heart desired. He presses on my nipple and a moan escapes my mouth, he presses on it very hard and that made me feel crazy things.

His hands travel down to my waist and he brushes my hairy stomach, he moves his finger in circular motion on my stomach and I could feel his breathing change, I felt his dick poking my ass.

His hands go to my ass and he grabs it another moan escapes my mouth, what is he doing to me? He smacks my ass.

Me: Sya!!

He turns me around to face him and i open my eyes, I look at him in his eyes which were now small and red.

Sya: you are so beautiful

He says in a deep tone, his voice was never like this, it is deep trust me but not this deep. Me: thank you

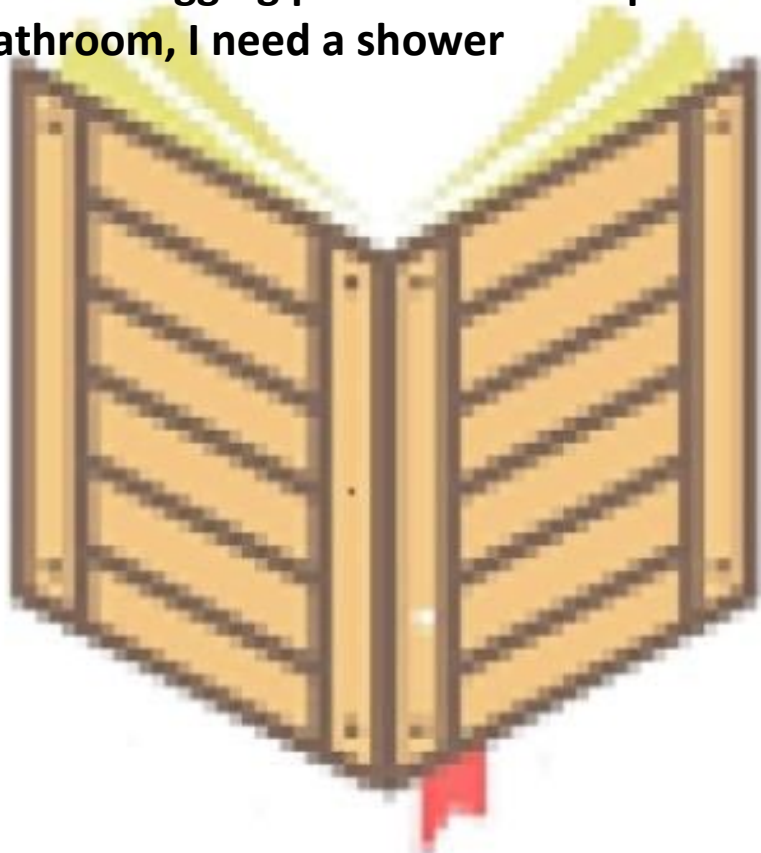
Why does my voice sound so small? I look at his eyes then

down at his lips, I could tell how much he wanted me as his hand grib on my ass, I can't help it, I want to taste his lips so bad.

I took my lips onto mine and wrapped my arm around his neck as he held me by the waist responding to my kiss, he slides his tongue inside my mouth and I suck it, the kiss was intense and his dick grew became harder and harder.

I pull out from the kiss and he groans.

We stayed in that hugging position until he pulled out. Sya: can I use your bathroom, I need a shower



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: sure

He walks to the bathroom and I touched my coochie, I'm dripping wet.

Me: fuck!

I took a towel and wiped myself, I started to lotion my body and I wore a nightdress.

I went to start with the pots, few minutes later he walks out only dressed in his sweat pants.

He passed by the kitchen and grabbed my ass, he took out some juice and poured it for himself. Me: the food is gonna be ready in a few

Sya: sure

He set on the high chair and he looked at me.

Me: you really gonna watch me cook? You can go watch some TV Sya: and leave this beautiful view? Never I smile.

Me: so tell me more about yourself Sya: I thought I did njena

Me: well there's always more to know

Sya: like?

I roll my eyes.

I stir the pots and closed it, I poured myself a glass of wine. Me: so what are your pet peaves?

Sya: uhm...I don't think I have any though

He did the thinking face, he took my wine and gulped it down, I fold my arms.

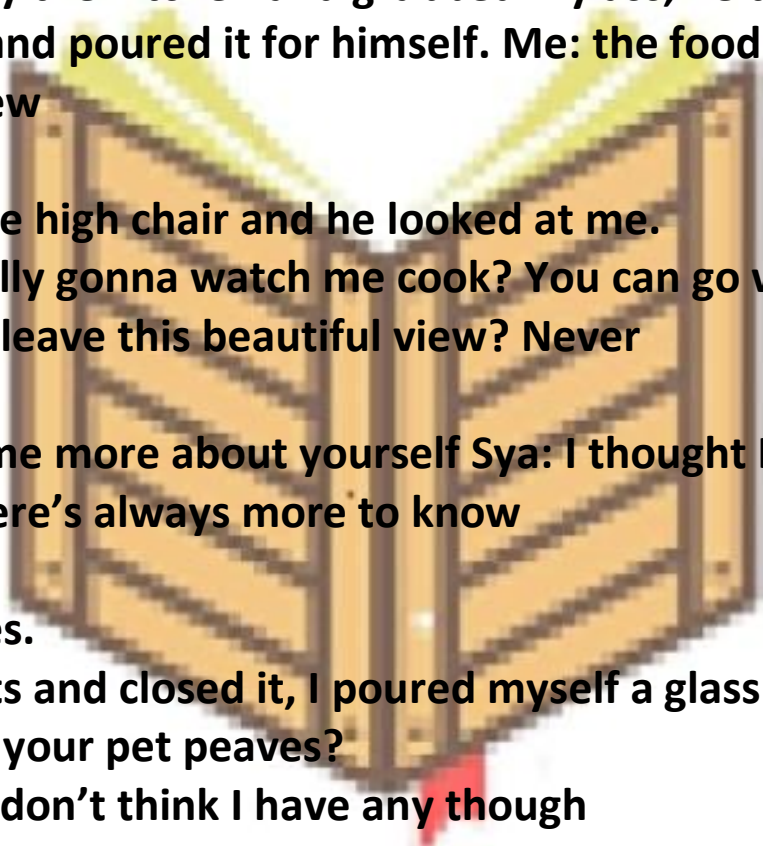
Sya: I don't like a person who doesn't have any respect

Me: you should have asked you know He blows a kiss.

I took another glass and I poured wine for the both of us. Sya: and you?

Me: I don't like a person whose not neat, who doesn't smell nice, who thinks only for themselves Sya: ohh I see

Me: yeah



NOVELSGURU.COM

We continued to have a chat and I dish up for the both us, we set down and had dinner together. He sucked his fingers after he was done with his meal and I set there watching him.

Sya: that was delicious Me: I know

I stood up to take the plate from him but he pulled me to sit on his lap, he kisses me on the cheek. Sya: can I take you out on a date?

Me: you really love going out on dates Sya: with you yes I do He smiles.

Me: when?

Sya: is that a yes?

Me: maybe, when are we going? Sya: it's more like a date vacation Me: Sya!

Sya: don't be scared we will be back in three days

Me: where are we going exactly?

Sya: it's a surprise

Me: I hate surprises

Sya: not those made by me, so you gonna go out with me? Me: I will have to talk to my boss first

Sya: great then

He pulls me in for a kiss, we really did a lot of kissing throughout the whole night and I enjoyed it.

.

.

.

FOREVA YENA

Insert 124 KUNGENTANDO.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Life has been hard for me, I miss my family and not to mention my wife, she might be a pain in the ass but I wouldn't marry someone I don't love. I regret what did to Nkosie even though he kinds deserved it but I also did no mean to hurt Khwezi. I was walking in the streets with my head looking down, hands inside my pocket while thinking about everything I did. Remembering all the good memories I had with my siblings, as I was walking a black car stops in front of me and three guys came out stated to shoot on the air.

Everyone scam and ran away, I was about to run when someone hit me with something behind my head. I fell on the floor and my vision got blur, I touched the back of my head even though it was painful. I saw blood and someone dressed in black walking towards me.

"we got him boss" says a unknown voice.

[Lights off]

.

.

. NKOSINATHI.

I was woken up by something moving closer to me, I open my eyes and it's this beautiful creature that captured my heart. I smile looking at her as she slept peacefully, I play with her hair and she slowly opens her eyes.

God I wish I could wake up to this beautiful face forever.

Khwezi: Nkosie?

NOVELSGURU.COM

She looks at me and rubs her eyes. Me: sawbona Sthandwa sami

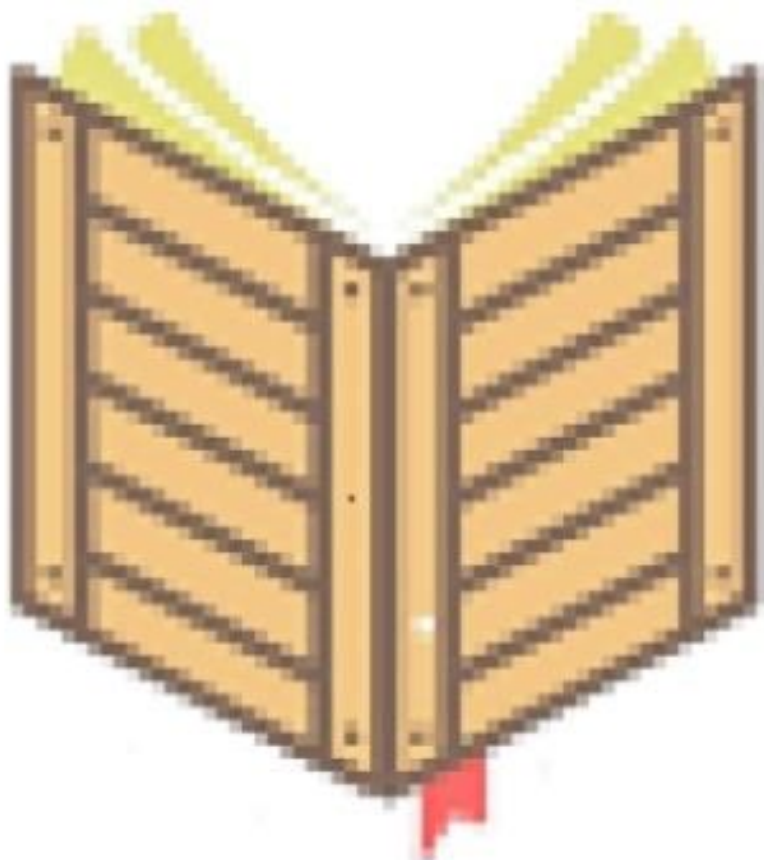
She blushes.

Khwezi: sawbona Mvelase *smiles* why you up early?

Me: I got work today sorry though I did not mean to wake you up

Khwezi: it's okay, can we stay in bed for the whole day?

Me: cannot happen, I got a very busy day today
Khwezi: you still remember that we have a doctors
appointment today right? Me: yes baby I remember, I will be
there I promise



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: I know you gonna be there

She pecks me on the lips and I pull her closer for a way serious kiss not this teasing she's doing to me.

She pulls out from the kiss. Me: ngyakthanda Khwezi

Khwezi: ngyakthanda name Nkosinathi She smiles looking at me.

She comes back in for a kiss and she got on top of me, ohh god she is heavy. I groan and pull out from the kiss.

Khwezi: what is it? are you okay?

Me: I love you baby but you are so heavy damn Khwezi: I knew it

She tried to get off me but I stop her.

Me: angishongo ukuthi suka (I did no say get off) She folds her arms and looks at me.

Khwezi: I'm not heavy Nkosie uwena ungadli kahle (you the one that's short of healthy food in your body)

Me: angidli kahle?

Khwezi: mhm

Me: ngipha phela kuze ngizoba namandla

My hand makes it's way inside her night dress and I start rubbing her clit, she bites her lower lip. She let's out a moan. I smile.

I apply more pressure and she lets out a moan, I stop once I see she I about to release. She opens her eyes and I lick my finger.

Khwezi: baby why? Me: why what?

Khwezi: I was almost there

Me: I know that's why i stopped

Khwezi: Nkosie

Me: Mapholoba

She looks at me for a while.

Khwezi: you gonna carry me to the bathroom then, I got classes to attend I just laughed.

I carried her to the bathroom, I can't say no to my wife, I turn on the shower water and she got inside. I won't give in a lot details but I gave her loads of organisms while we were in there.

We got dressed together and we went downstairs, she made breakfast and we ate. I drove her to her first class, Zizi was there waiting for her friend.

She walks to our car. I look at Khwezi.

Me: I will see you at the doctor okay? She nods.

Me: what's wrong now?

Khwezi: nothing baby

Me: why you nodding pho? Your mouth can't work now?

She just smiles and leans in for a kiss.

We were disturbed by Zizi's hard knock on my window.

We both pull out from the kiss and look at Zizi, I roll down the window. Me: you gonna pay for that

**Zizi: you love me loads so you won't do that
I smile.**

Me: take care of my women Zizi: relax, she is in safe hands

Khwezi: I'm right here hello? Me: have a great day

I kiss her on the cheek and she smiles, she got off the car and went to her first class.

I drove to check on my businesses then I went to the warehouse, we got a very huge job this week.

I arrived first and I set down counting the money we made, I distributed the money inside each and everyone of us then distributed each to every business we made.

Now you know how that having multiple business comes in handy cause in such situations you can't just deposit a huge amount, you gonna get arrested and it's over for you.

My idiot siblings walk in. Nkanyezi: early bird

Me: I take my job seriously not like some few monkeys I won't mention

Sandile: you calling us monkeys now? Sya: uyahlanya lona (this one is crazy) I give him a dead stare and he laughs. Sandile: so we stealing cars this week? Me: yes sir

Sya: I have been waiting for this one

Nkanyezi: and I already got an area were we gonna do the job

Me: mom gave birth to you for a reason

Nkanyezi: don't involve mom in this, she will beat your ass if she hears you say that

We laugh.

Me: so we gonna steal three cars each just for now since I need to run back to the hospital for the doctors appointment

Sya: can't wait to see my nieces Sandile: nephews Syathokoza

Sya: ngeke ngizwa ngawe Mseti Sandile: whatever

Me: I just hope I have a baby boy, a little Nkosie

Nkanyezi: let's wait and see

Only if he knew I don't have much time on this earth that maybe I might not get to see my babies once they are born.

I sigh.

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: so it's gonna be a quick in and out job, no physical contact with anyone got it?

Them: fede fede

Me: great then, lets get into this shit

Nkanyezi took out his laptop, we got dressed and took our weapons just in case things go sideways.

We drove out in one car and we went to our first location, the place was not crowded so we got out of the car with balaclava on and we went to the car we were supposed to take. Sya took an Audi R8, Sandile took a Lamborghini URUS, I took an Audi RS 5.

We drove off and we went to different locations so we don't get caught, I arrived at the location and they started removing the tracker on the car.

A guy was given the car keys so once they were done in removing the tracker and repainting it which won't take even an hour, the guy will take the car to the warehouse.

I walk out and a car was out waiting for me, it drove me to my second location.

I got out and I went to pick another expensive car of my choice, I drove off with it and went to another location to drop it off..

.
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 125 NARRATIVE.

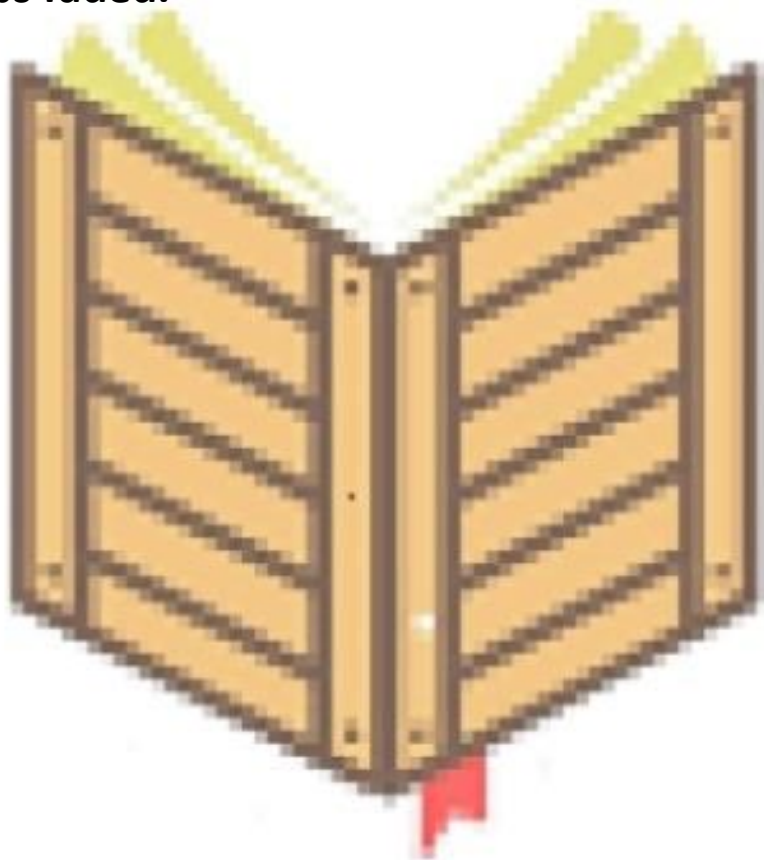
The job was going smoothly for the Mthembu brothers and they had no problems, Sandile was on his way to deliver his third car and it was a success. He had his car waiting for him, he got inside the car and drove to the warehouse where he will be meeting with his brothers.

Sya also delivered the car and he drove to the warehouse.

Nkosie just arrived at the location which was at the underground parking at a club, he got out and he saw a black Bugatti La Voiture Noire parked all alone, he went to the car.

Nkosie: Nkanyezi I'm near the car now do your thing Nkanyezi: damn that's a beauty

There was some footsteps of someone walking to the direction Nkosie is in. Nkosie: stop that and open the damn car, fuck! He quickly went to hide under a car as the footstep got closer. “who is there?” the male voice said. Nkosie was sweating and he took out his gun which had a silencer on. “I thought I heard someone talking” the male voice said once again, “dude I’m just doing my job, okay I’m heading back”
The footsteps faded.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie came out from under the car, he sighed and someone came from behind and started to strangle him.

“You trying to steal my bosses car, who are you?” the guard said.

Nkosie couldn't breathe, he used his left hand and he hit the guy with the back of his elbow three time and the guys loosens the grib around Nkosie's neck.

Nkosie turned and gave the guy a punch on the face which he gladly returned, Nkosie took out his gun but the guy kicked his hand which had the gun and it fell down on the floor, Nkosie made his way to try and pick up the gun but the guy grabbed him by the shirt pulling him back to him.

He punched Nkosie on the face. Nkosie: fuck!!

He took out a knife and he threw it to the guy as he was approaching Nkosie, the knife landed on the guys shoulder.

Nkosie went to get his gun and he shot the guy between his eyes. Nkosie: why did you not tell me that there are guards?

Nkanyezi: well I did not think they would be around or even

notice you Nkosie: fuck off, you better pray that the car is open

He walked the car and grabbed the handle, the opened and Nkanyezi chuckled behind the call.

Nkosie got inside the car and he inserts a device were the key is supposed to enter, he pressed the start button.

He drove off the building.

He drove to the location but there were cars following him.

Nkosie: why the fuck are they following me

He checked the time. Nkosie: fuck dammit fuck He curses.

Nkanyezi: there is an open route take a left

Nkosie did what he was told and the guys kept on following him. They started shooting at him but the bullets did not go through. Nkanyezi: it's bullet proof motherfuckers

He says through the device. Nkosie: they not stopping

Nkanyezi: relax I'm still thinking of a way to loose them

Nkosie: think of the way fast then

He says as continued to drive not knowing what will happen next. [AT THE HOSPITAL]

Khwezi and Zizi just arrived, they went in the doctors room waited for the doctor. Khwezi checked her phone but there was no text or call from Nkosie.

Zizi: don't stress he is on his way

Khwezi: I told him not to be late but here he is being late She sighs placing her phone down.

Zizi: he must be held up somewhere Khwezi: let me try and call him

She calls Nkosie but it goes straight to voicemail. Khwezi: Voicemail!

She says frustrated placing her phone down. Zizi: let me try then

Khwezi: you think he would leave me unanswered and answer you?

Zizi doesn't say anything. Silence...

Khwezi sighs.

Khwezi: I'm sorry for talking to you like that, I'm stressed and I'm angry at the same time Zizi: you know stress is not good for the babies, take a few breaths and try to calm down Khwezi closed her eyes and breaths.

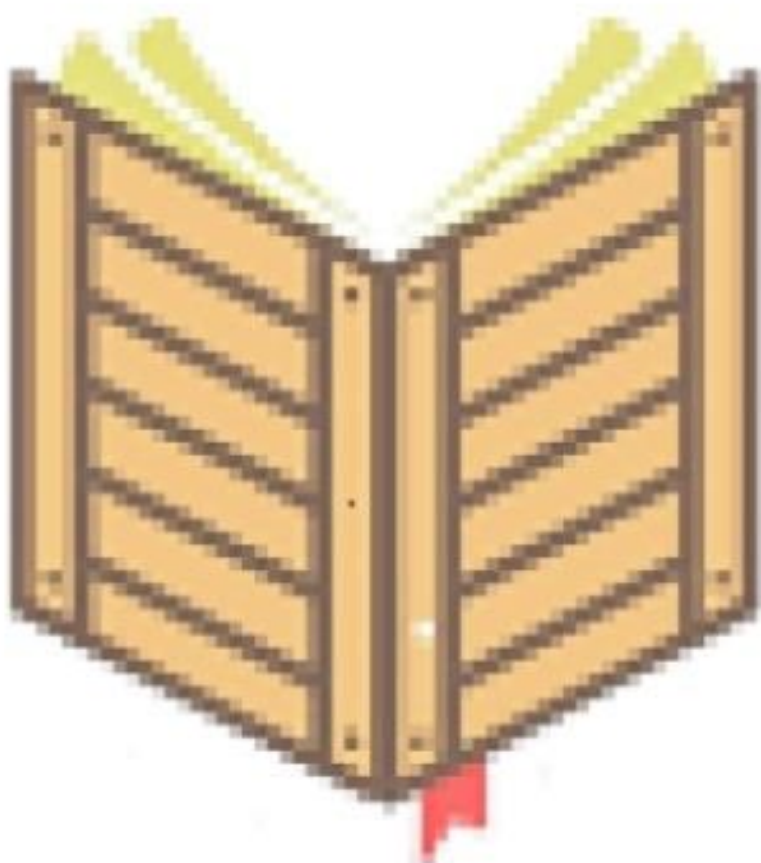
Khwezi: I feel a little bit better

Zizi: you see, I'm sure he will walk in that door soon

[BACK TO NKOSIE]

He was able to loose the drivers and he parked at some garage of an old friend he knows, he closes the garage door and he sighed.

Nkanyezi: did you loose them?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: I did, disarm the tracker Nkanyezi: okay

Nkosie walks to Mazwi who was standing there enjoying his kota.

Mazwi: it's been long hey

He took another huge bite at his kota. Nkosie: yah, thanks for helping me out Mazwi: it's nothing, no need to thank me.

Nkanyezi: I'm done

He says through the device. Nkosie: sure thing

Nkanyezi: but we have a problem Nkosie: what is it?!

Nkanyezi: we can't get driver to come pick you up because the men that were hunting you down are all over the city which also means you can't leave that places until it's dark

Nkosie: are fucking kidding me?

Nkanyezi: I'm sorry bro

He clicks his tongue and took out the communicating device, he looked at the time on his watch and he was already late for the appointment.

Mazwi: trouble in paradise? Nkosie looks at him.

Nkosie: can I use your phone? Mazwi: I'm low on airtime

Nkosie: I will callback

Mazwi: you know how to call back?

Nkosie: at situations like this? Yes I do know how to fucking call back now give me the damn phone Mazwi: hade (sorry)

He took out his phone and gave it to Nkosie, he callbacked

Khwezi and he set down waiting for her call. Mazwi: here

He gave Nkosie a beer which he took and drank.

Mazwi: so how have you been?

Nkosie: I'm not here for chit chats

Mazwi: I see you still the same, there's no change at all

Nkosie: mmh

The phone rang and it was Khwezi. Nkosie answered immediately.

Nkosie: Sthandwa samii

Silence...

Nkosie: baby it's me Nkosie

He says but still no answer even though he could hear her breath. Nkosie: talk to me

Khwezi: you did not come Nkosie: I was held up

Silence...

The next thing Nkosie heard was Khwezi's sobs which made his heart ache. Nkosie: Sthandwa samii sukhala (my love don't cry)

Khwezi hung up.

Nkosie looks at the phone and tries to call again but no answer.

Mazwi: is everything okay?

Nkosie: does shit look okay to you? He shouts in anger.

Mazwi: I did not mean to make you mad King

Nkosie: *sighs* hade bra yaka it's just that yonkinto ihlangahlangene (sorry my bru it's just that everything is messed up)

Mazwi: I heard, is it your girlfriend? Nkosie: my wife

Nkosie deleted Khwezi's number from Mazwi's phone and he gave it to him.

Mazwi: *Laughs a little* you are married? Nkosie: I will be soon

Mazwi: this means I'm invited

Nkosie: you are not

Mazwi: come on don't be that Nkosie again Nkosie: maybe I can do a couple of things or two He smirks and Mazwi smiles.

Mazwi: I knew you wouldn't ditch me like that

Nkosie shook his head.

He stayed there till it was dark, he drove off and went to the warehouse. He found his brothers waiting for him.

Sya: are you okay?

Nkosie doesn't say anything, he took his phone which he left and he saw the number of missed calls from Khwezi.

He took his car keys and walked out without saying a word.

He drove to his place and he parks out, he walks in and the house was dark but there was light coming from the living room.

He places his car keys on the counter and went to the living room.

He found Khwezi sitting there watching a movie while eating some ice cream. He went and set next to her and she shifts.

Nkosie: MaMvelase...

Khwezi: I'm watching a movie and you disturbing

Nkosie releases a sigh.

He held her hand but she yanked it away.

Nkosie: ngyaxolisa Sthandwa sami (I'm sorry my love) Khwezi doesn't even look at him.

Nkosie: please talk to me, I did not mean for all that to happen *sighs* the mission went wrong and I had to stay hidden

Still no word from Khwezi.

Nkosie: Baby?

He sighs giving up, he saw the baby scans on the table and he took them. He looked at his triplets and he smiled.

Nkosie: they are growing really fast

Khwezi: you should have heard their heart beat but of course you weren't there

She rolls her eyes.

Nkosie: it wasn't my intention Silence...

Nkosie stood up and he went upstairs.

He took a long shower and he got dressed once he was done.

He went downstairs and went to look for food which he found inside the microwave. He warms it up and he set down on the high chair eating.

He washed his plate once he was done. He saw Khwezi heading upstairs.

He turns off the lights in the kitchen and he went upstairs.

Khwezi was in bed.

Nkosie went to join her and he pulled her closer but she removed his hands from her, she moved away from him and she slept.

Nkosie turned and he slept.

**.
.
.**

FOREVA YENA

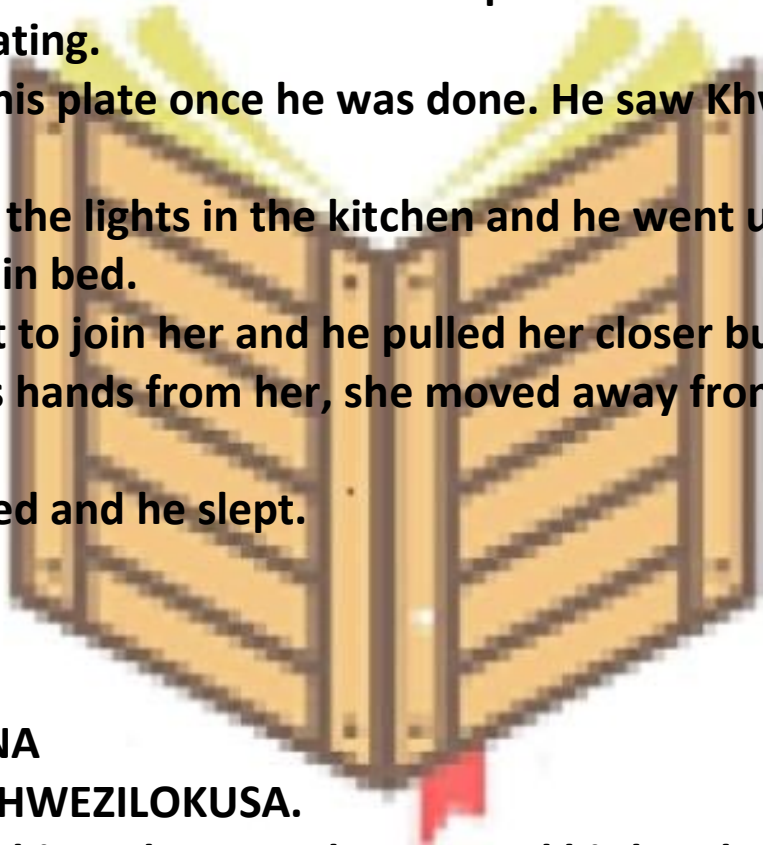
Insert 126 KHWEZILOKUSA.

I woke up in his embrace and I removed his hands, I might be over reacting about this whole thing but I'm really angry at him.

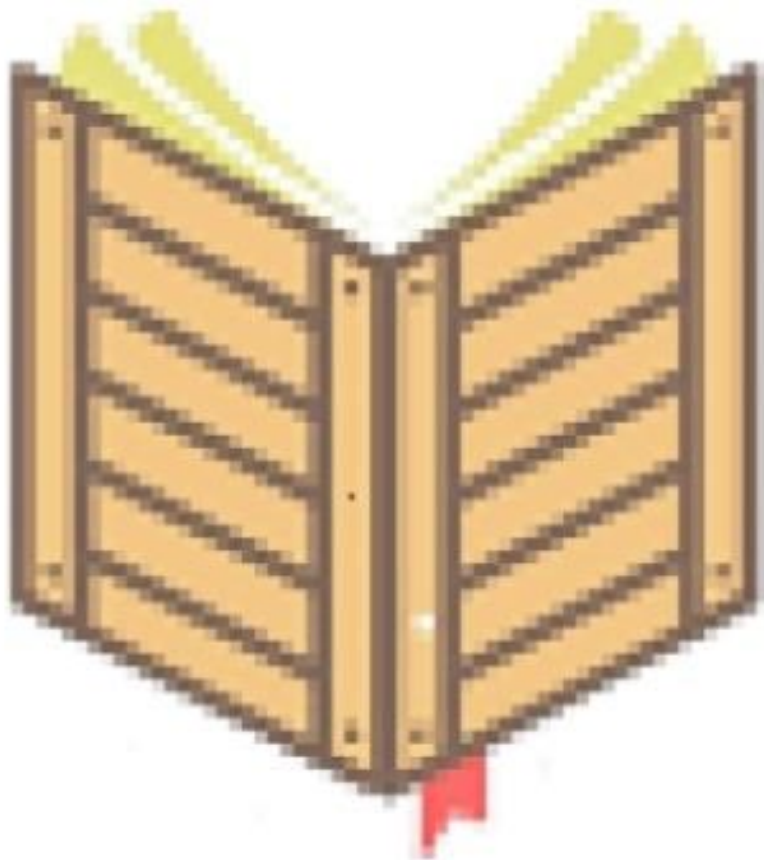
Even though it wasn't his fault that he became late or in other words he ended up not coming but I'm very very angry at him.

I walk to the bathroom and I wash my face then brushed my teeth.

When I was at the doctor, I saw my babies and Zizi was there holding my hand through the whole check-up even though I would have liked it even more if it was Nkosie.



I wanted to experience all that with him, I wanted him to feel what I felt but unfortunately that did not happen.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I stripped naked and I went inside the shower.

I bathed and the shower glass opens, Nkosie steps in. Khwezi: can I have some privacy?

Nkosie: Khwezi can we just talk about it, I'm tired of this back and forth we are doing

Khwezi: I don't want to talk Nkosie: I said I'm sorry

Khwezi: okay then thank you for being sorry I roll my eyes. He chuckles.

He has time to chuckle at this situation? Wow Nkosie:

Mapholoba ngibuke mama (look at me) She sighs and turns to look at me.

Khwezi: What?

Nkosie: indoda iyaxolisa njena mama (your man is sorry)

Khwezi: Ngiyizwile nje (I heard)

Nkosie: musa ukuba kanjena (don't be like this)

He makes me looks at him in the eyes, he brushes my chin with his thumb and looks down at my lips then back at my eyes.

Nkosie: ngyaxolisa Mashiy'amahle I blush.

Nkosie: buka nje umuhle kanjani mese uhleka (look at how beautiful you are when smiling)

Khwezi: okay okay let's bath

I dismiss him.

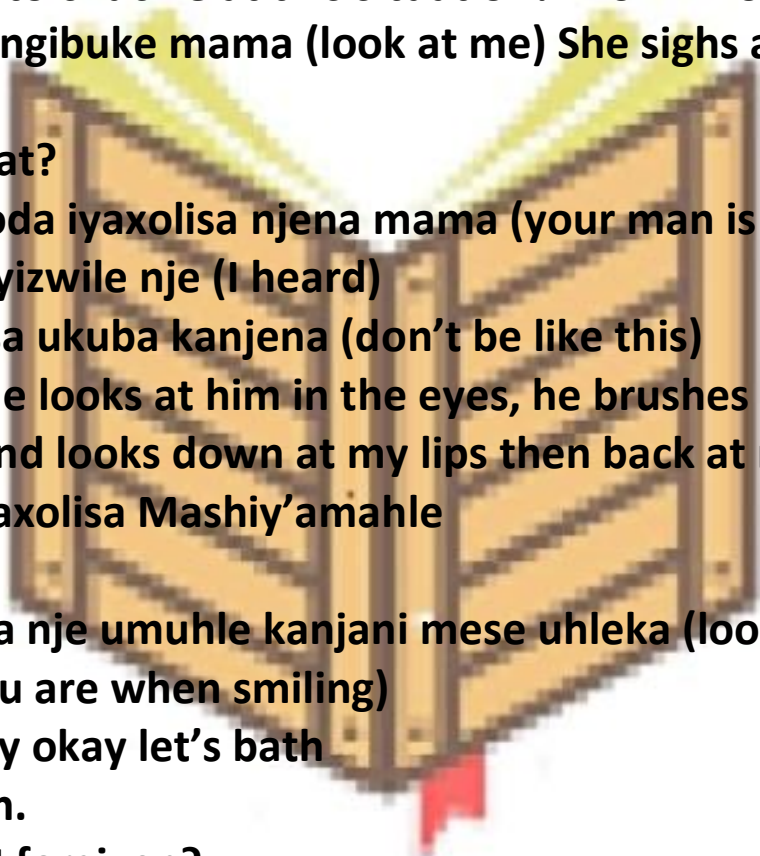
Nkosie: am I forgiven?

Khwezi: no you not

Nkosie: what should I do then to earn your forgiveness?

Khwezi: nothing

He groans, I know he is frustrated. Nkosie: yini manje iNothing?



I laugh a little.

Khwezi: can we bath in piece?

Nkosie: no ngifuna ungitshene ukuthi ufunani Ntokazi (I want you to tell me what you want)

Khwezi: haaa kanje angifuni (I don't want to)

Nkosie: uzofunake

I saw a smirk on his face, God my man looks really good.

Khwezi: ngi...

He silences me with a mind blowing kiss. I could feel him get hard.

He pulls out from the kiss with a smile, I peck his lips. **Nkosie:** uzongitshena ke? (are you gonna tell me now?) **Khwezi:** maybe I giggle.

Nkosie: maybe ini?

I roll my eyes and kissed him.

We took a very innocent shower and we went to get dressed once we were done. Once we were done we went downstairs to have breakfast.

Nkosie: how far are you on the wedding plans?

Khwezi: I haven't started

Nkosie: why not?

Khwezi: it's our wedding right?

Nkosie nods while he sips on his coffee.

Khwezi: that means we have to do the wedding planning together, I want our wedding to be what we both want do you get me?

Nkosie: I do but I'm very busy baby you know that

Khwezi: work is important then your wedding huh? That's what you are saying? **Nkosie:** no that's not what I'm saying

Khwezi: it sounds so to me He sighs.

Nkosie: I will spare sometime

Khwezi: thank you, I will come by at your office once I'm done with my classes so we can look at the decorations

Nkosie: okay, when are you gonna be done with your classes?

Khwezi: at one o'clock

Nkosie: cool

We finished and he went to drop me off.

.
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 127 KUNGENTANDO.

I was woken up by someone pouring cold water at me, I open my eyes and I was breathing heavily.

My head hurts and I don't even know where I am.

"Wake up handsome," a women dressed in a black jamsuit says as she walks in. She stood in front of me.

Me: who are you?

"Your saver," she chuckles.

Me: I'm not joking man, who are you and what do you want?

"Why so many questions?" she sighs and they brought a chair for her to sit. "I have been watching you for a while now,"

Me: watching me?

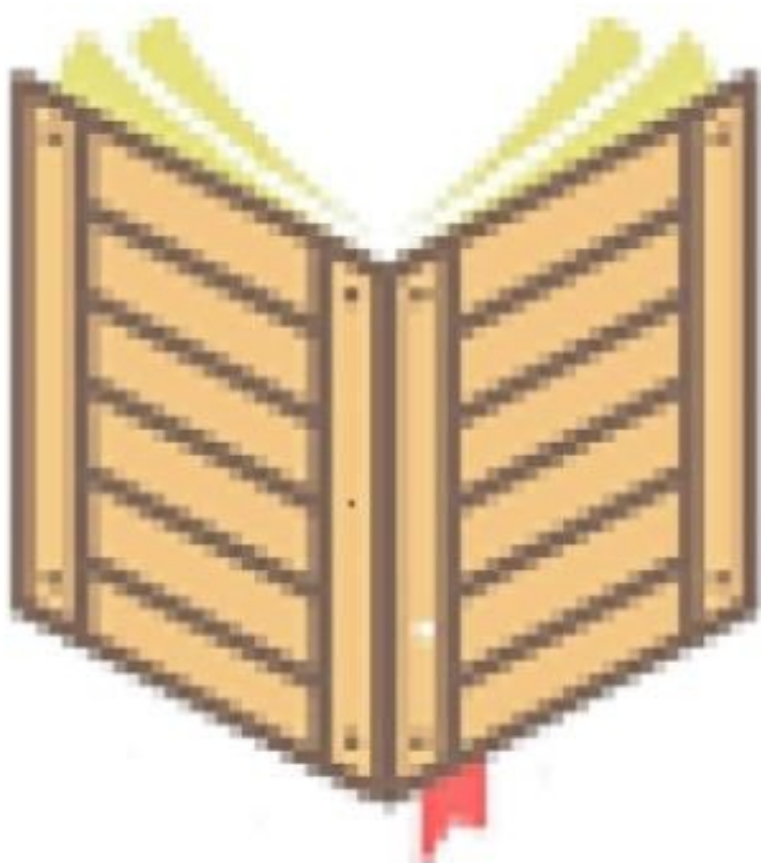
"Are you deaf or you just can't believe it?" she asked with an annoyed facial expression.

I don't respond.

"Tell me who you are? I just want to know if I have the right person."

Me: why would you have the wrong person? Don't you know who you are looking for? "we are looking for Kungentando Mthembu," she says with a smirk on her face.

Me: you got the wrong person, my name is Themba



NOVELSGURU.COM

They all burst into laughter in the room. The women looks at me.

“Don’t play that silly game with us, like I said we have been watching you.”

Me: what do you want?

“Your partnership with us would mean the world.” Me: why do you want me to be parteners with you? “Isn’t that obvious?” she chuckles.

She stood up from the seat and she walked around the room. “my name is Sinovuyo and I believe that we can help each other out in pretty good ways,” she turn sto look at me with a smile.

Me: how can I help you?

Sino: your brother King has something I want and you gonna help me get it

Me: hold up what? No way I’m not going back there

Sino: you have to, I mean there is a vailid reason for you to go back

Me: I don’t think there is any, What does Nkosie have that you want so bad?

Sino: diamonds that he stole from a friend of mine which belong to me

Me: I’m not gonna help you

Sino: your wife? *chuckles* you really love her don’t you? Me: don’t bring my wife into this

Sino: I asked you a question Me: I do love her

Sino: you loved her

Why is she saying it in past tense. Me: I love her not loved her

Sino: you loved her *smiles* your wife is dead and your brother whom you so dearly want to protect killed her

Me: what? No Nkosie wouldn’t do that

Sino: he did do it, now are you in?

Me: I don't believe you



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sino: how about we call your wife then, if she answers I'm lying and you can kill me if you want but if she does not answer you know what that means Me: what?

Sino: you will do as I say

I have been wanting to call Amahle but the problem was that I did not have any phone to call her nor did I know anyone in this place.

Sinovuyo took out her phone and gave it to me, I dialled Amahle's number and it rang. "You have reached the voicemail line service off 0..." the white lady spoke on the phone. I felt my blood boil.

Me: let me try again maybe she is busy Sino: do as you please She smiles and I called but it went straight to voicemail.

Me: fuck! She's not dead, she can't be Sino: I'm sorry but she is dead

Me; No no no no no!! She sighs.

Sino: you need a shower and some food, untie him and take him in They untie me and I set there crying.

How can Nkosie do such? I know I tried to hurt Khwezi but she is alive right? Why would he bring my wife into all of this? She is innocent and...dammit I'm gonna kill that motherfucker.

I got up from my seat and I headed inside.

I was taken to a room and I took a shower, I cleaned up really nice and shaved the beard. I was given clean clothes to wear and I went downstairs for some food.

Sino: your brother is getting married, I heard

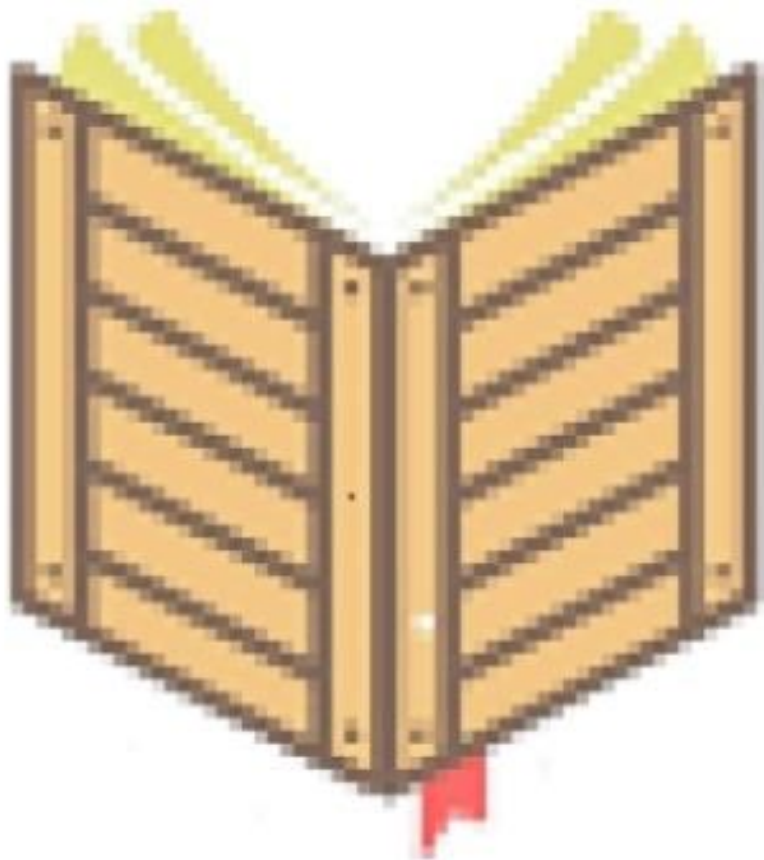
Me: that wedding won't happen while I'm alive

I took a bite on my sandwich and Sino smiles, I'm gonna murder Nkosie with my own hands.

.

.

•
FOREVA YENA



NOVELSGURU.COM

Insert 128 NOSIPHO.

I just finished up attending to my patients, I walk around checking on them to see if they are okay after the surgeries. I walk to the Bosses office and I knock.

“come in,” he said and I walked inside.

He was seated in his very huge chair with his reading glasses and had a file in his hand, he raises his head and looks at me.

Him: ohh Miss Mhlongo what did I do to get a visit from you?

He smiles.

Me: nothing at all sir, I just need to ask for a favour from you sir

Him: I don't do favours Ms

Me: hear me out first

He sighs taking off his reading glasses and placing the file he had in hand on his desk, he looks at me. Me: can I take a four days off

I cross my fingers behind me.

Him: a four days off? That's a lot you are a doctor and the hospital needs you to be available twenty four seven, it's not happening

Me: but sir I have never asked for a day off before, I just got a family emergency I need to attend to Him: emergency? Are your parents okay?

Me: yes they are but the situation at home is not *sighs* will you allow me? Him: go sign the form and bring it to my office as soon as you done

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: thank you sir

He doesn't say anything but he continues with what he was doing when I walked in.

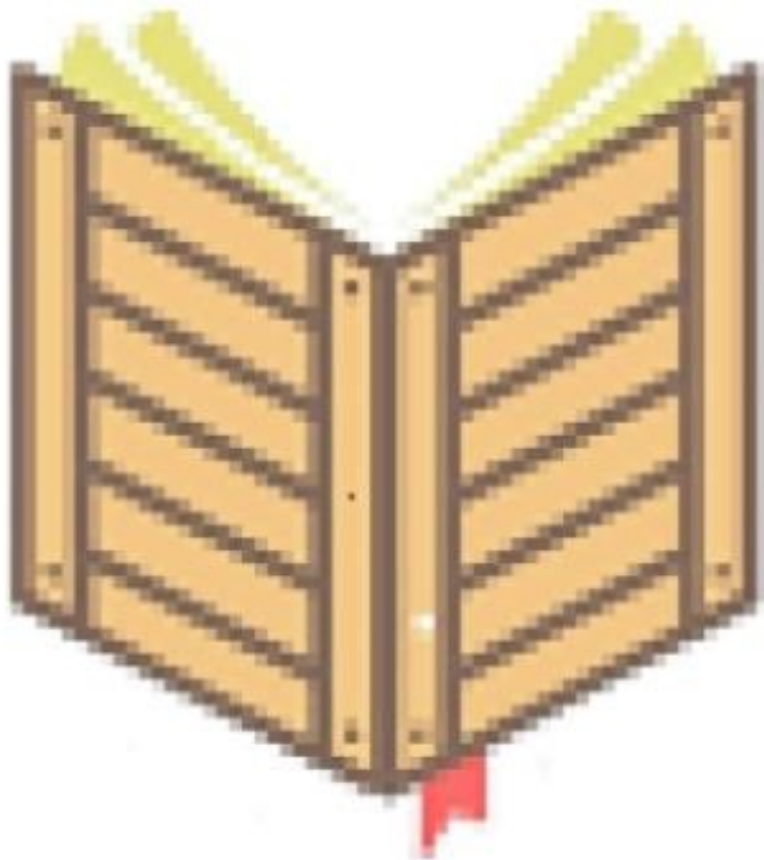
I walk out and made my way to my office. Me: Jesus Christ!!

I jumped when I saw Syathokoza sitting on one of my couches with a bouquet of red roses. I rolled my eyes, this guy is gonna give me a heart attack one day.

Sya: I did not mean to scare you

Me: yeah right you didn't, what are you doing here?

Sya: am I not allowed to come see you now? If not tell me and I will stop



NOVELSGURU.COM

He stood up and came to me, I just stood there folding my arms and charmed at the same time. He bought me flowers!!!

Me: I did not mean it like that, how did you even get in here?

Sya: don't worry about that I missed you

He embraces me and I inhale his scent, he smells so good. Me: I missed you too

I hold on to him tight and so did he. He kissed me on the forehead.

Sya: these are for you

He pulls out and hands me the flowers, I held them and giggled. I smelled them and they smell amazing, I place them down on the couch and I turned back to him.

He stood behind me with his arms folded and he was staring at me, I walk up to him and I stood in front of him looking straight into his beautiful eyes.

Me: you came all this way to give me flowers

Sya: I came all this way to see the women who I can't stop thinking about and for this...

He held me by the waist and pulls me closer to him, his lips touch with mine and we kiss.

I held the back of his neck with my hand slowing moving it on his hair, he squeezes my ass and I gently bite his lower lip trying to not moan, pulling it gently then letting it go and I continue with the kiss. He does not remove his hands from my ass but he keeps rubbing it, he had his one hand on my ass and the other slowly travelled to my private part and he pressed his fingers on it which brought this unknown feeling to my body.

I moan.

He does stop doing that and it feels so good, I could his boner and the way his breathing started to change. This was no longer an innocent kiss, this might lead to something which I would love but I don't want to give in that easily.

Even though he is making me feel all sorts of ways but I just can't not so soon.

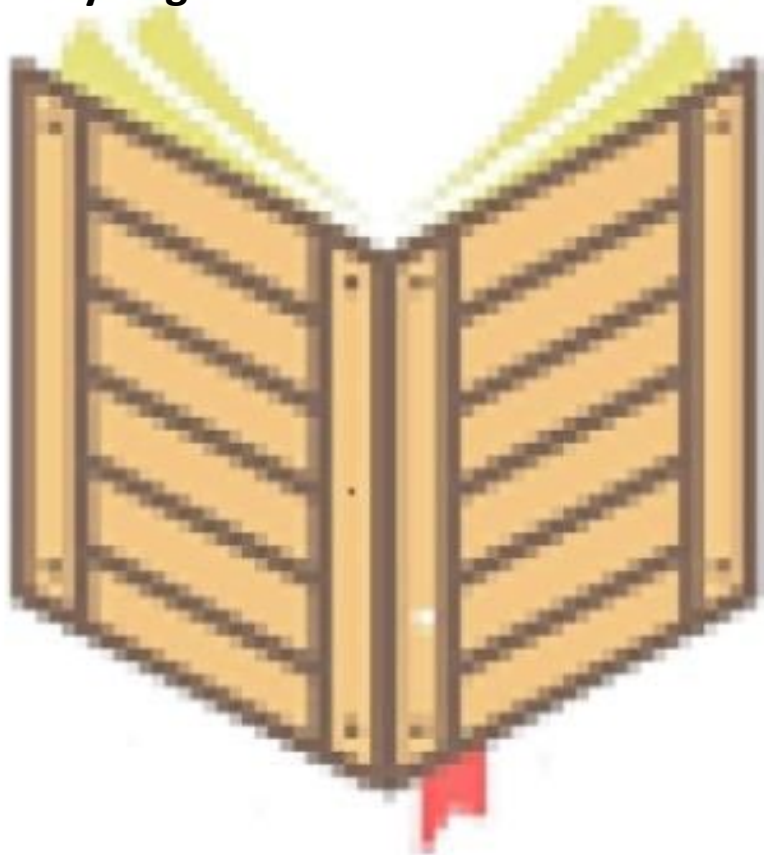
I pull out from the kiss and he squeezes my ass with both his hands, I bite my lower lip.

He has his eyes closed and his lips are now really pink making me want to kiss him even more.

I look at his hard dick and God it's so big.

Me: I need to get back to work

Sya: *chuckles* you gonna leave me like this?



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: we in my office and anyone can walk in Sya: let them walk in baby,I want you

He whispers to my ear.

Me: I also want you...

I pause, did I just say that out loud, God I sound like a hoe.

Sya: what's stopping you from having me then? Me: I'm at work

He sighs.

Sya: It's okay

It's not okay I can feel it, why is he clenching his jaw if it's okay?

Nosipho why can't you just give it to him? It's not like it's gonna be your first time...argh

Me: I'm sorry

Sya: what are you apologising for?

Me: for leading you on then leaving you like that Sya: ohh that *smirks* I'm going to get you for that Me: haaaa.

Sya: let me leave you to your work then

Me: don't leave now, stay for a while

Sya: if I stay I'm gonna end up fucking which you don't want

Me: you can hold your self Sya: after feeling that

He touches my coochie, I smack his hand.

Sya: ain't no way

Me: please

I look into his eyes.

Sya: Nosipho uyazi kubuhlungu kanjani ukuqhanyelwa ujike ungatholi lutho emva kwalokho? (Nosipho do you know how painful it is to have an erection and not get to fuck?)

I just laugh, this Zulu man though. Me: ngyakucela Mvelase

He looks into my eyes and he pecks my lips. Sya: fine I will stay

Me: thank you thank you

I jump on him and gave him a hug he held me making sure I don't fall.

I gave him a kiss on the neck and he turns around with me playing me on the table. Sya: you so heavy penguin

Me: do I look like a penguin to you? Don't talk nonsense Imma knock you out with one slap

He laughs and he kisses me.

I seem to be getting a lot of kisses these days, he squeezes my boobs and I moan. He pulls out.

Sya: fuck I promised to be at my best behaviour At least he remembered.

I laugh.

I got off the table and we went to the couch, I laid on his chest while he rubs my booty. This guy loves my booty.

Me: so where are we going tomorrow?

Sya: I said it's a surprise

Me: come on I just want to know, what if you taking me there so you can kill me

Sya: I wouldn't do anything to hurt you

Me: I believe you

I snuggled closer to him.

Sya: so where is you silly little boyfriend? Me: we broke up

Sya: ohh I'm really sorry

I raise my head to look at his face, he is not sorry.

Me: don't lie to me I know how happy you are to hear these news Sya: trust me I'm not

He chuckles.

I laid back to his chest.

Me: he broke up with me right after our double date Sya: why did he break up with you?

Me: he uhm...*clears throat* he told me that he never had any feeling for me and that he was using me all this time so I can financially support him meaning I was just an ATM all along and here I thought the nigga loved me.

I felt my cheeks hurt and the next thing I'm crying, I really hate Mvelo for what he did.

He set up straight and he gave me a hug.

Sya: I'm really sorry to hear that, he is such a jerk and a sore loser

Me: I feel like a fool, all these years spent with him, loving him and giving him my all only to be broken by few words coming from his mouth

Sya: don't cry ngyakcela (please)

He wipes my tears and he kisses both my cheeks, he smiles looking at me.

Sya: you are so beautiful and you don't deserve all that he did to you, don't let whatever words he said

get to you all in all you did not lose anything from all this he is the one who lost in all this Me: I should cry often so you can comfort me

Sya: I don't like seeing you cry

Me: thank you

I gave him a hug. NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: thank you for always being there for me when I needed you, you are the best Sya: I will always be there for you

We stayed in that hugging position for a long time exchanging nice words to each other. I pull out.

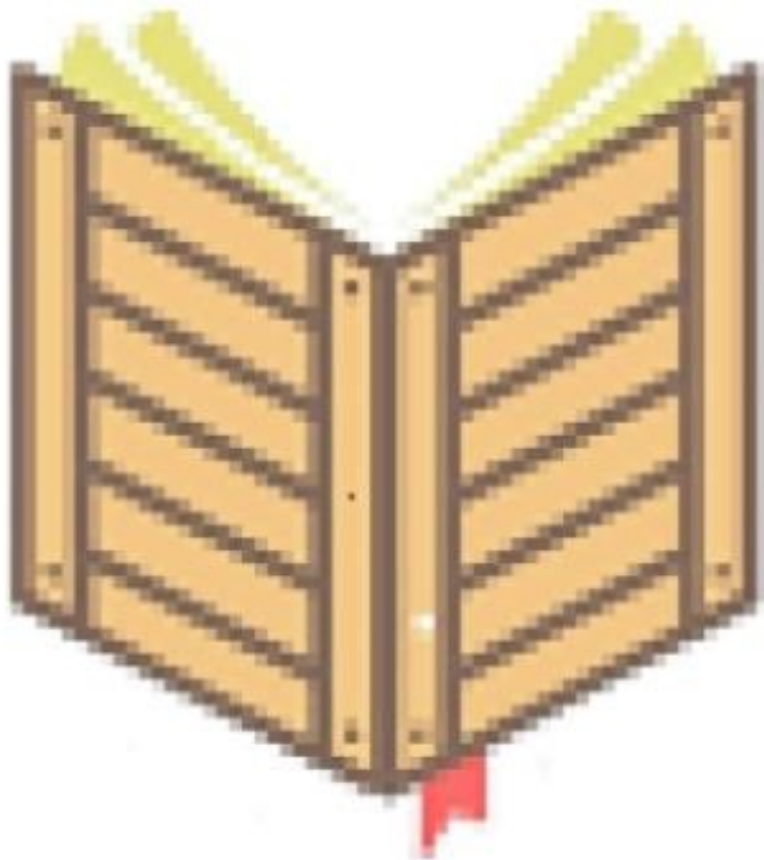
Me: thank you for staying with me

Sya: and thank you for finding it right to open up to me and tell me what was bothering you I smile and got off him.

The boner is gone now.

He stood up and fixes himself before walk to me and giving me a kiss on the lips. He pulls out.

Sya: I will see you tomorrow okay? Me: you not coming over



NOVELSGURU.COM

Sya: sorry but I'm not I got some work I need to take care of before I leave

Me: mhm

Sya: ungabi kanjalo hau (don't be like that) Me: it's okay

He kisses my forehead and he walks out. I went and continued with my job.

.
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 129 KHWEZILOKUSA.

The driver drops me off at Nkosie's work place, I head to the reception and I greets her. I made my way to Nkosie's office and he was not there. I place my bed down and I decide to go on a tour in the building.

I walk out and I start looking around, the place is huge and beautiful.

"Mrs Mthembu" it was a male voice shouting at me.

I don't even recognise the voice, I don't like it when people shout at me. "Mrs Mthembu please wait..." he shouts once again.

I stop and turn to see who it was, it was a white guy with glasses. He finally reaches me.

Him: I'm so sorry I just...

Me: who are you? NOVELSGURU.COM

Him: I'm Freddie

Me: how may I help you? He laughs a little.

What's funny? He is starting to annoy me. Freddie: ohh I'm sorry

He clears his throat.

Freddie: the boss is looking for you

Me: where is he? Freddie: in his office Me: thank you
I walk back to his office and I found him finishing up with his call.
Nkosie: Sthandwa Sami
He walks up to me and he gives me a hug. Nkosie: how are you guys doing?
He places his hands on my baby bump and he kissed me on the lips. I giggle.
Me: we are okay, just hungry Nkosie: what do you want to eat?
Me: pizza, chicken wings, ribs and some sprite Nkosie: I will order that for you baby
He went to make the order and I went to sit down on his office chair. He looks at me and he smiles.
He set opposite me.
Me: "good day sir, please take a seat and tell me how can I help you"
I imitate him and he laughs.
Nkosie: I don't sound like that nor talk like that
Me: you are more rude I know
Nkosie: that's me
Me: why are you rude anyways?
Nkosie: I don't owe anybody my kindness plus me being rude makes everyone to get their job done
Me: you know tables can turn on day right Nkosie: how so?
Me: you might lose everything that you have right now, the money and you gonna have to start from scratch and you gonna need peoples help the same people who are being rude towards
Nkosie: that won't ever happen, I'm quite good at turning the tables back around
Me: and you are stubborn to

Nkosie: come here

He calls me to come sit on his lap.

I stood up from my seat and I sat on his lap.

Nkosie: the only time I will lose everything I have right now is when I'm dead Me: *sighs* let's not talk about that

He shouldn't have brought that up, now I want to cry cause the thought of losing him just came back and I don't want to lose him.

Nkosie: I love you Me: I love you more

He pecks me on the lips.

Nkosie: so where do you want our wedding to take place? Me: I was thinking of getting married at my village and you? Nkosie: home affairs

I burst into laughter and he joins me. Me: really though?

Nkosie: I'm kidding baby but as long as there is going to be a traditional wedding

Me: you really are a man of tradition

Nkosie: I love my culture but the village idea is cool with me

Me: Zizi once told me you stayed in a huge village in Guateng

Nkosie: yeah I used to stay there

Me: I have never went there

Nkosie: I don't want you to go there, my family that side is chaos

Me: family drama?

Nkosie: something like that I just don't want you nor my babies near that place

Me: hate it that much?

Nkosie: you have no idea

Me: but I will have to go there one day

Nkosie: I don't see that happening

Me: the babies are gonna have to be introduced to their ancestors and we can't do it here

Nkosie: yes that's true but...

Me: so let's have the wedding there

Nkosie: that's not a good idea plus it's been long since we went there

Me: it sounds like a good idea. Come on

Nkosie: i don't like your idea Me: please...

He does not respond.

I smile and peck his lips.

Nkosie: I will discuss it with father first Me: sounds promising

Nkosie: you very stubborn I must say

Me: I guess we got something in common He shook his head laughing a little.

Me: so I brought in a couple of designs I showed them the designs.

Nkosie: this one looks good Me: yeah it does

Nkosie: but?

Me: it's not what I had in mind actually

Nkosie: tell me what you had in mind actually Sthandwa Sami

He looks at me with a smile

Me: but baby you also have...

Nkosie: this is my first time getting married and I never saw myself getting married, I got nothing planned in my head but you do and whatever you want to do baby I got you, we gonna work on it and do it together

Me: but...

NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: not but's my love just summarise it all for me

I smile.

The assistant walks in with the food.

Me: thanks

She smiles and walks out.

We went to sit down on the couch and we ate while I told him all about what I had in mind and how I imagined my wedding when I was a baby.

I took my last sip on the sprite and set back, he wipes his hands while his eyes were focused on me.

Nkosie: I will let you talk to the wedding planner anything you want for the wedding she will make it happen

Me: really?

Nkosie: yes I will do anything for you if it has to be making your dream wedding come true then it shall be like that

I gave him a hug. Me: thank you baby

Nkosie: don't thank me, so what else do we have left?

Me: a lot actually I giggle.

Nkosie: home affairs will be a very good idea though Me: you will be getting married there alone shame He laughs.

Nkosie: you would abandon me Sthandwa Sami? Me: I would never

Nkosie: so what do we have left?

Me: the cake, dress and the invitations

Nkosie: Zizi will deal with the invitations I know she is going to do a great job Me: I trust her to, I will talk to her about it

He pulls me closer to him and he gives me a kiss on the lips. I smile in between this kiss and I got on top of him.

I pull out from the kiss. Nkosie: I love you

Me: I love you too

I gave him a kiss once again and one thing led to another.

- .
- .
- .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 130 NOSIPHO.

I deep in my sleep enjoying the piece and quite when I was woken up by a knock on the door, who could it be? I got of the bed and I went to check the door. I opened and Sya stood at the door looking at me as if I have gone crazy.

Or maybe it's what I'm wearing but nothing is wrong with what I'm wearing.

Sya: you not ready yet? Me: ready for what?

I'm so lost right now why would I be ready, it's my day off and...wait a second his here to pick me up for our vacation date, shit!!

Sya: don't fucking ask me that

Me: I'm sorry I over slept and it slipped my mind

I could see that he is frustrated. Me: I will get ready as quick as I can

He did not say anything but he passed me and went to the living rom.

I quickly went to my room and I made my bed. I took a shower and I got done, I did my routine and I got dressed.

I wore something simple which is a pair of baggy jeans which are more like a skinny jean cause I'm thick so they are only baggy at the buttom.

I wore a hoodie crop top and some white air force.

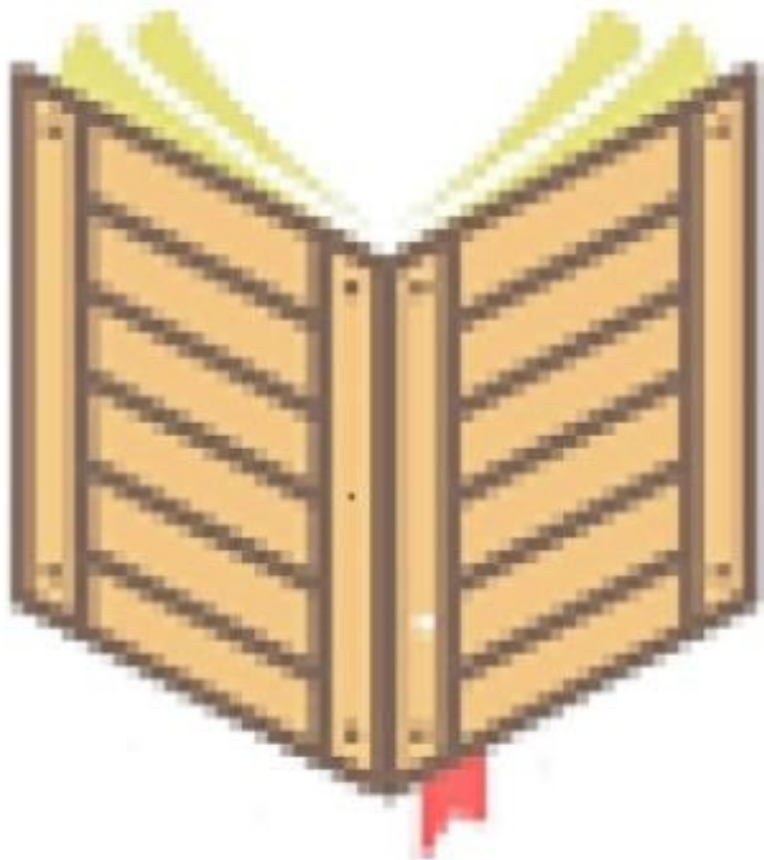
I had packed my beg last night so I'm sorted on that, I drag my luggage out of my room and I found him

in the kitchen having some juice which he was drinking straight from the bottle. Me: you know there are glasses which you can use right?

Sya: I don't

He took another sip just to piss me off, I roll my eyes and I went out with my suitcase. I watch him lock my apartment door as I stood next to his car with my arms folded.

He walks to me so slowly I was getting irritated.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: you know you wasting time right Sya: now you know how I feel

He says and opens the door for me, I got inside and he took my luggage to the boot. At least he is still being a gentle man. He got inside the car and he drove to the airport.

I was busy on my phone throughout the whole drive, I don't want to talk to him and I feel like going back after what he did.

Don't get me wrong but who drink from the bottle whereas there are glasses which were invented for such reasons and yena he chose to drink right from the bottle, I could feel my blood boil as I kept on thinking about what he did.

He stops and ohh I did not know he owns a private jet.

One of the security came to open the door for me while Sya got out to talk to the captain who will be driving the jet.

My begs were taken inside the jet and I made my way inside. It's was so beautiful inside.

I felt his hands brushing on my ass and him breathing right on my neck. Sya: ungicasukele yini MaNjomane? (are you angry at me?)

With you touching me like that the anger I had for you is washing away, damn he smells really good.

Me: angicasukanga (I'm not angry)

Sya: manje pho kwenze njani mama? (so what is the problem?)

Me: there is no problem Sya

Sya: I feel like there is a problem

I felt his boner on my ass, I inhale some air.

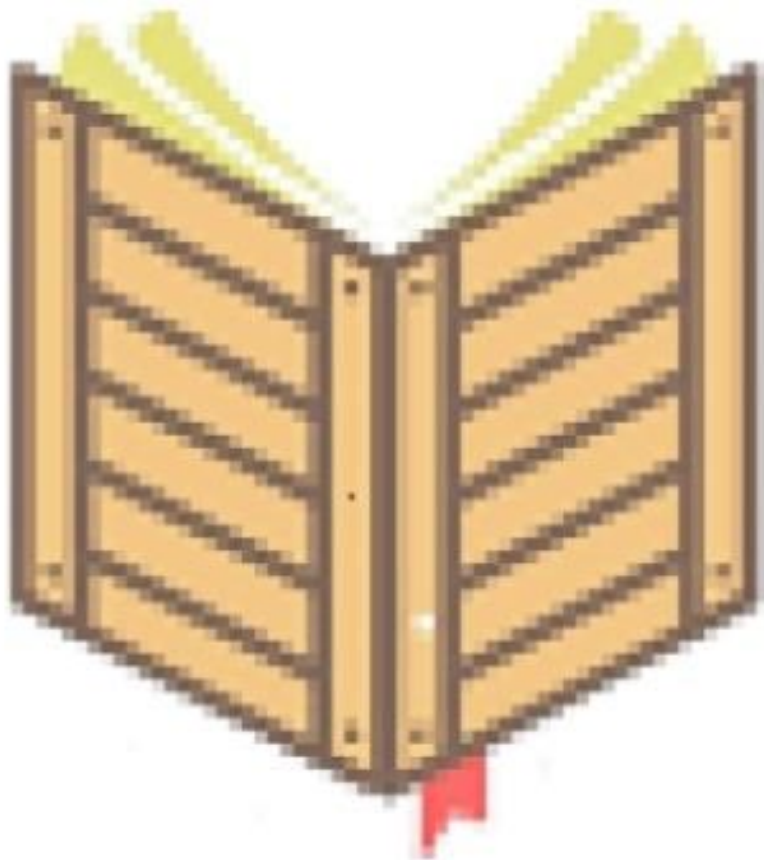
Me: the only problem we have right now is that beast poking on my ass Sya: *chuckles*

His chuckle just sent this electrocuting feeling right up my spine and I could feel my knees getting weak. Me: are we leaving now right?

Sya: yes

He kiss my neck and he moves back.

**I love how his not forcefully demanding me to give it to him,
though I would love it is he tried to.**



NOVELSGURU.COM

I love a man who knows what he wants and of course who knows how to get what he wants. We went and set down together.

I took off my sneakers and I places my feet on his lap, he plays with my toes. A lady walks in and she serves us wine.

Me: there are people here?

Sya: it's just her only

Me: who is she?

Sya: I don't know who she is

Me: mmh

He chuckles and continues to play with my toes. Sya: jealousy

Me: me jealous? Have you seen all this Sya: I have

He smirks.

I playfully hit him on the shoulder and he laughs. Me: so where are you taking me?

Sya: you going to see when we get there

Me: I don't like this at all

Sya: you going to like it trust me

Me: so what are we gonna do in here? Is there a TV Sya: there is me

He looks into my eyes.

Me: I know there is you but...

He pulls me to sit on top of his with my arms on his shoulder and his hands on my waist. Sya: I mean baby i can be useful in

different way

NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: like?

Sya: I can please in lots of ways Me: ohh really?

His hands make its way to the inside of my crop top hoodie and he squeezes my nipples, I bite my lower lip. He lifts up my crop top hoodie and he sucks on of my boobs, the feeling of his warm tongue rolling on my nipple is sending the wrong message to my body.

He sucks, sucks and sucks till I felt my panties getting wet. Me: someone is gonna walk in on us

Sya: I told them not to disturb us

Me: but...

Sya: shhh! Relax let me He looks into my eyes.

I nod slowly and he smiles.

He gives me a kiss and throughout the kiss I could tell how much he wants me and I can't help but put in all the emotions of how I want him. I want him to do all the crazy things he has been wanting to do to me ever since we met, I let out a moan and he groans.

His hands make their way to my jeans and he unbuttons it lowering the zip after wards, he slowly slides his hand inside my jeans and I shiver when he starts rubbing my clit. I grab the back of his neck as he made me feel the pleasure, he cups my face with his other hand pulling me in for a kiss.

Me: ahhh

I moan unable to handle all that he is doing with his finger, he tries to kiss me but I struggle throughout the kiss and I felt his mouth forming a smile, ohh so he like show miserable his making me feel.

Me: ahhh fuck!

I curse closing my eyes and letting him do his job, I felt the urge to pee and him pressing on my clit making the situation worse for me and causing my whole body to vibrate before I felt this huge relief.

I open my eyes and he is looking at me, I smile and peck him on

the lips.

He pulls me as I moved away from his lips for a passionate kiss and while we were still on the deep kissing phase he slides in a finger inside me.

Me: Sya...ahhh

I moan as his fingers dig inside me touching each and every right place their meant to touch, I move my waist a little as he fingered me.

Me: shit yes right there Sya: right here?

He says and I could feel his eyes on me as he touched that spot inside me. Me: ahhhhh ahhh



NOVELSGURU.COM

I moan.

He stirs inside my honey pot bring out all the sweet juices out of me and leaving me famished, yearning for more and wanting to feel not only his dick under my coochie but his dick inside me.

Sya: you good?

Me: I feel good

I lay on his shoulder.

Sya: you see I'm useful ain't i?

Me: bloody useful I giggle.

I excused myself and I went to clean myself up.

I went back to him and we cuddled while watching a movie on his ipad. I fell asleep.

.
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 131 SYATHOKOZA.

My cute little penguin whose beautiful even when asleep, not to mention when she is angry. That's the reason why I enjoy annoying her but I don't overdo it, we just landed and I don't want to wake her up.

She looks so beautiful and peaceful at her sleep.

I kiss her on the forehead and I woke her by shaking her. She opens her huge beautiful sexy eyes and looks at me. Nosi: we are here?

Me: yes we are

Nosi: I'm so tired

Me: I know Sthandwa sami

She got off me and she fixes herself, I pick up her small bag and my phone. I follow her outside and walk with her to the car. She got inside and she dozed off.

I turn on the heat so it can be warm for her and I drove to one of the houses my brother Nkosie owns. I got there and I went to her side.

I lift her up and carried her to the house, I lay her down on the couch and cover her with a throw. I went to unload our bags and took them to the room we will be using.

When I came downstairs she was getting up from the couch.

Me: you finally decided to join me my love, you even missed the whole ride to this place Nosi: where are we?

Me: you would know but no wena uthanda ubuthongo (you love sleep)

Nosi: it's those organisms you gave me at the plane that are making me to feel sleepy I smile making my way to her, I held her by the waist and looked into her eyes.

The way my fingers felt so warm while they were inside her are making me to imagine how I would feel if I was inside her and those moans of hers are gonna make me cum the second I start fucking her.

My dick twitches. Me: you hungry

Nosi: nope, where are we?

Me: you gonna find out in the morning

Nosi: hell no that's not happening just tell me

Me: we are in Paris happy? Nosi: what! You lying?

Me: I'm telling you

Nosi: I have never been to Paris

Me: well that's a relief

Nosi: let's go for a swim, there is a pool here right?

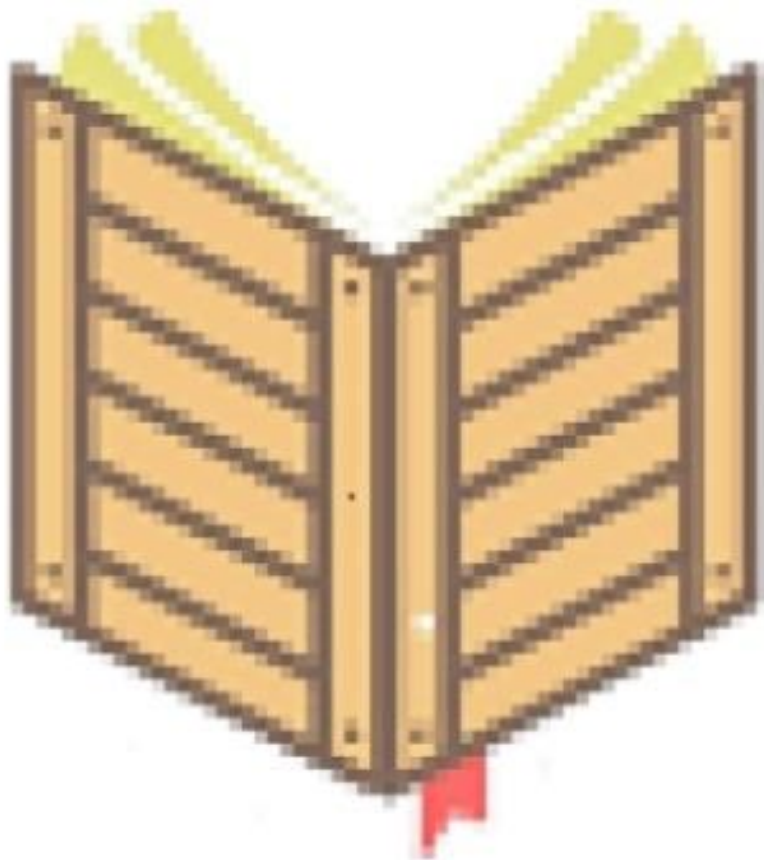
Me: what do you take me for?

Nosi: I don't know

She giggles making her way upstairs.

I changed into some shorts and I set down waiting for her to come out.

Me: kanti what is...



NOVELSGURU.COM

She came out wearing a black bikini though I could only see the bra and her small yet good looking boobs since she decided to wear a towel below.

I sucked those boobs for the record and I could do it all over again. Me: taking you so long

Nosi: let's go

She giggles.

Me: lead the way and why are you wearing a towel? Nosi: for privacy

Me: I don't bite

Nosi: just shut up

She led the way as we went to the pool side, the air was kind hot not what I expected.

She slowly removed the towel from her and her well shaped ass was exposed, she looks so good.

Me: okay quickly get inside the water and let's head back inside so I can have some of that

She giggles and got inside the water.

Me: koda boMvelase I swear if she gets pregnant it's not my fault cause damn

I mumbled.

I got inside the water and she slashes me with the water.

Me: ohh you don't want to play that game with me

She slashes me with the water once again.

She asked for it, I slash her back and she does the same.

As I was about to slash her back she disappeared beneath the water. Me: what are you doing?

She comes back up with a smirk. Me: and then?

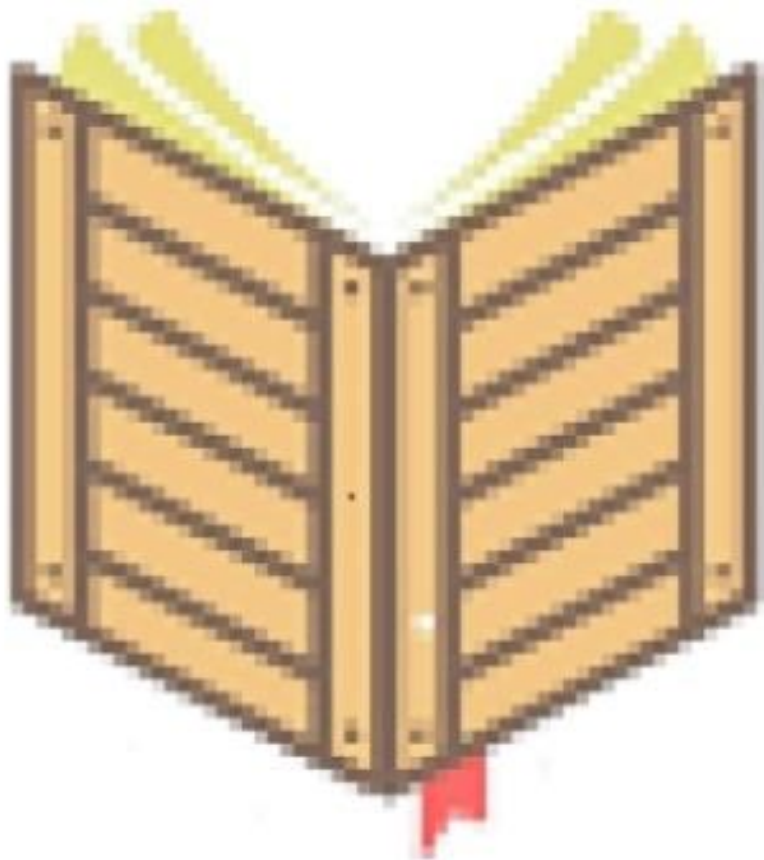
Nosi: I have had enough

She says and she walks past me handing me something.

I look at what is in my hand and it's her panty, I look at her as she steps out and she doesn't have any

panty on.

She pick up her towel and she heads inside.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I got out of the pool and followed her, I found her in the kitchen looking for something to eat. I went and stood behind her, her breathing changes.

Me: who do you think you hiding from? Nosi: who said anything about hiding? Me: then what are you doing?

Nosi: looking for something to eat I chuckle.

I squeeze her behinds and she shuts the fridge turning to look at me.

Nosi: I need to take a shower she says and she heads upstairs to our room.

I follow her and found her trying to untie the bra. Me: how did you put that on in the first place?

Nosi: I have my ways

I shook my head and place her pant down.

I went to help her and as she was trying to walk away on me once again I gently grabbed her by her wrist.

Me: quit the game Nosi: what game?

She looks into my eyes.

I pull her closer to me and I smash my lips onto hers, she responds immediately and I lift her up taking her to the bed. I laid her down pulling out from the kiss, I look at her naked body and my dick twitches.

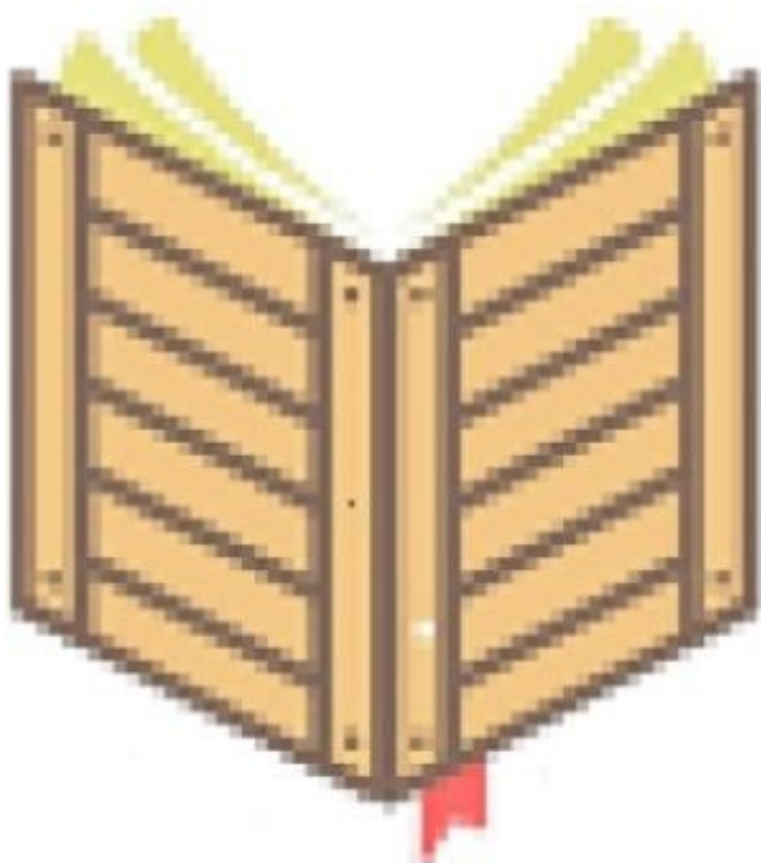
I went down on my knees and I pulled her to the edge of the bed, she opens wide for me and God she is dripping wet. I plant a kiss on thigh and I went down to her coochie started to muff her, I ate her up.

She held my head as my tongue moved in circles on her wet coochie. Nosi: ahhh ahhh

She moans and I press on her clit with my tongue, she goes crazy once again and while licking her clit I slide a middle finger inside her and I pull it out immediately she jumps.

She moans.

I press on her clit once again and I slide two fingers inside her entrance and she cums.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I don't stop but I continue to fuck her with my finger and watch her beg me to not stop, she moans out

load and I could feel her body vibrating, she releases and I stood up. I went to the bathroom and came back with a towel to clean her up. She pecks me on the lips and laid on my chest.

Me: so what happened to the shower you wanted to take?

Nosi: shut up

I laugh and she buries her face on my chest.

We stayed like that for a while and then we went to take a shower.

I can see that she wants me so bad and I want her so bad too but I don't want her to feel like I flew with her all the way to Paris just to have sex with her, I want to spend some time with her and make her feel happy and appreciated.

.
. .
. .
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 132 ZIZIPHO.

I was woken up by a smell of bacon and toast, I got up from the bed and I went to the kitchen only to find my man making breakfast in the kitchen.

He smiles when he saw me. Lindani: my queen good morning

Me: morning, what with the breakfast?

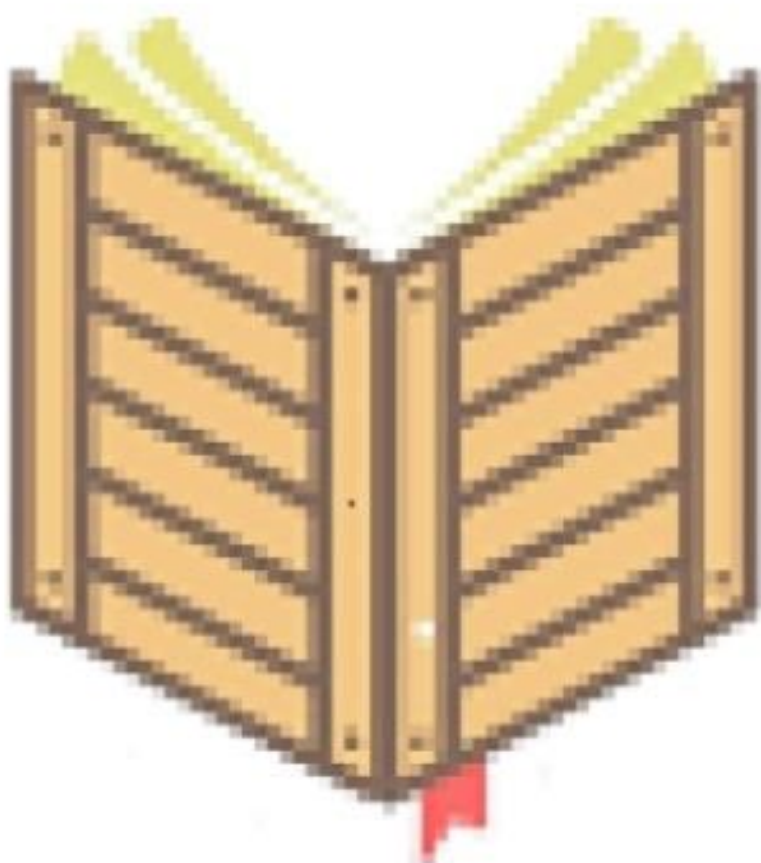
Lindani: I wanted to make something for you before heading to work
Me: you know if Khwezi finds you here she will kill us both

Lindani: and I will continue to love you in heaven
Me: in Hell not heaven

He laughs and approaches me for a kiss, I move away.

Me: I haven't brushed my teeth

Lindani: I don't care baby just give me some love



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: let me go brush my teeth first Lindani: ohh come on
He pulls me by the waist and he stole a kiss from me. Lindani:
see I did not die, I love you okay?

Me: I love you too

I peck him on the lip and I head back to my room.

I made the bed we slept on and I went to brush my teeth not to
forget washing my face. I went back to the kitchen and we ate
breakfast together.

We went to take a shower and we had a quickie inside there.

We got dressed together and he pulls me for a kiss once he is
done. Me: dude let me finish jeez

I push him away.

He laughs and he pulls me closer to him, I end up giving in and
we kissed. I pull out and looked into his eyes.

Lindani: I hate that I have to leave every time after spending
some time with you Me: it sucks but I still love us

Lindani: I love us too and I don't want to lose us

Me: that will never happen baby He smiles and pecks me on the
lips.

Lindani: I will see you tomorrow okay? Me: okay

He takes his stuff and he walks out.

I finish up in getting dressed and I went out, the driver took me
home since I'm meeting with the mom
and prettyface.

He parks outside and I got out making my way inside the house.
I found my brothers in the living rom.

Me: my ugly siblings

Sandile: we are the words most handsome guys Me: you wish
only baby is the handsome one

Nkanyezi: you got a boyfriend

Shit I wasn't supposed to say that

**Me: I meant Nkosie is the handsome one, he is my baby
I said the last part in a low tone cause I wasn't even sure at
what I was saying.**

Khwezi: Nkosie is your baby?

**She says walking in looking beautiful as ever with her huge
baby bump which doesn't seem to stop
growing.**

Nkosie: I'm whose baby now? He walks in looking confused.

Me: my baby

I went to him and gave him a hug. Nkosie: and then?

Me: save me

I whisper to him.

**Khwezi: your sister here my best friend says that you are her
baby, is that right baby? She looks at Nkosie while folding her
arms.**

**Okay the mood swings chose to come out at the wrong time, is
it mood swings right? Nkosie: yes she is my baby**

**He says giving me the most dangerous side eye. Khwezi: stay
with your baby then**

Me: friend we are just playing

**Khwezi: let me go see my mother in law She heads to the
kitchen.**

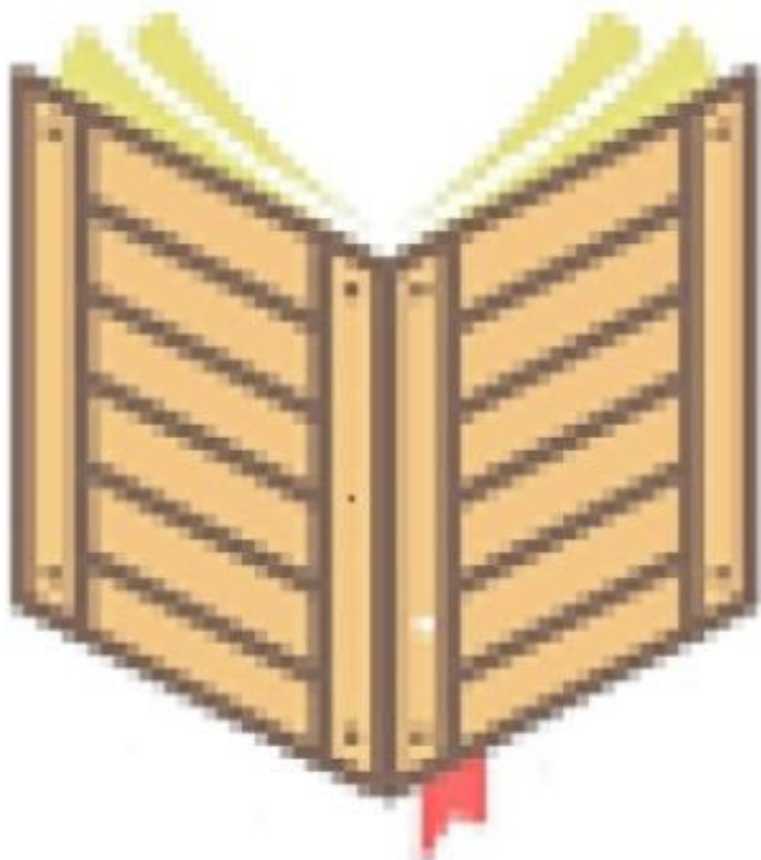
**Nkosie: you see what you got me into? Do you know how bad
those hormones are playing around with her moods?**

**Me: well I couldn't let my secret come out just like that, entlek
it's our secret**

**Nkosie: don't involve me I ain't the one who directed you into
dating your friends ex boyfriend**

**Me: I can't control my feeling just like you were unable to
control your feelings for my best friend Nkosie: don't put me in**

**your ridiculous circle and just deal with your shit cause if this
blows up don't
fucking utter my name**



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: but bhut...

Nkosie: no buts

Sandile: hold on you are dating Lindani?

He says standing right next to us with a glass of juice in his hand. Me: sshhh! Khwezi can't hear you

Nkanyezi: Khwezi can't hear what?

Ohh no this is not happening, not today. Me: I need a drink

Sandile: Khwezi is gonna unfriend you if she hears this, how could you do her like this? Nkanyezi: do her like what? What are you guys on about?

I look at Nkosie who just decided to walk away, he is not a fan of drama I know. I sigh.

Me: Mseti you heard nothing

Sandile: ohh I heard something, you know this shows how much of a bad friend you are Me: I did not chose for it to happen

Sandile: just pray she does not find out cause hell is going to freeze He walks out sipping on his juice.

Nkanyezi: what's going on?

He follows Sandile wanting some of the tea, mxm my brothers are such gossipers. Where the hell is Syathokoza?

I walk to the kitchen and found Khwezi sitting on the high chair having some breakfast. Nkosie: ohh so she gets to eat while we wait?

He looks at Khwezi who is eating her fills. Mom: I can't let my grandchildren starve She smiles.

Nkosie: eat all you want baby

He kissed her on the cheek and he went upstairs.

They all came down and we had breakfast as a family, prettyface was on her second plate having breakfast. Once we were done the man of the house left us ladies to do the dishes, they said they have some important work they need to attend to.

I did the dishes which were not that much and I went to join my ladies. Me: so how is the wedding plan going?

Khwezi: a few things are done and I talked to the wedding planner

Mom: I'm so happy that you guys are getting married

Khwezi: he did not propose yet here we are We burst into laughter.

Me: that's Nkosinathi for you

Khwezi: proposing ring or not I still love my man and I'm so happy that we will be tying the knot Mom: my son really loves you

Khwezi smiles and we start making the invitation list followed by the invitation cards which were all fancy.

The time passed and we met with the gents for the cake tasting. Khwezi: I love the chocolate one

Me: of course you gonna like the chocolate one phela chocolate is your favourite Khwezi pouts.

Nkosie: not everyone like chocolate

Khwezi: they gonna like it ngoba they attending my wedding

Nkosie laughs looking at his wife who is busy arguing with everybody about the cake flavour. We came to a decision which it that the cake flavour will be vanilla.

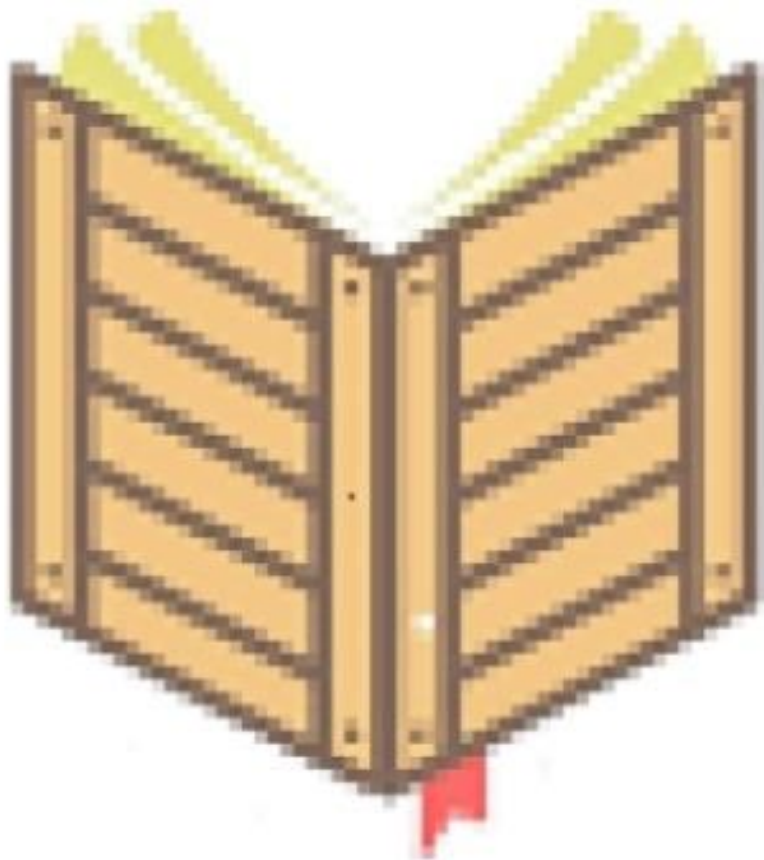
We then met with the designer and they measured us. Dad: firstly where is Syathokoza?

Sandile: he is out of the country Mom: haybo out of the country?

Nkanyezi: yes he went out with his a girlfriend Me: a girlfriend?

***laughs* Sya does not date**

**Nkosie: well this out kinds stole his heart just like my darling
over there stole mine**



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi looks down blushing. Mom: maybe he is lying Nkosie: he is not lying trust me Dad: when is he coming back? Sandile: after three days

Dad: so he is missing all this?

Khwezi: he left us his measuring so he is sorted

I can't believe this, Syathokoza the player of the family now has a girlfriend. I'm gonna love this one.

.
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 133 NOSIPHO.

I woke up early in the morning and I set up straight rubbing my eyes, Sya is not in bed, where is he? I got off bed and I went to the bathroom to wash my face and brush my teeth I went out back to the main room and I started to make the bed which we slept in.

I wore my slippers and I went downstairs only to find him making breakfast for the both of us. I set on the high chair and watched him make the breakfast.

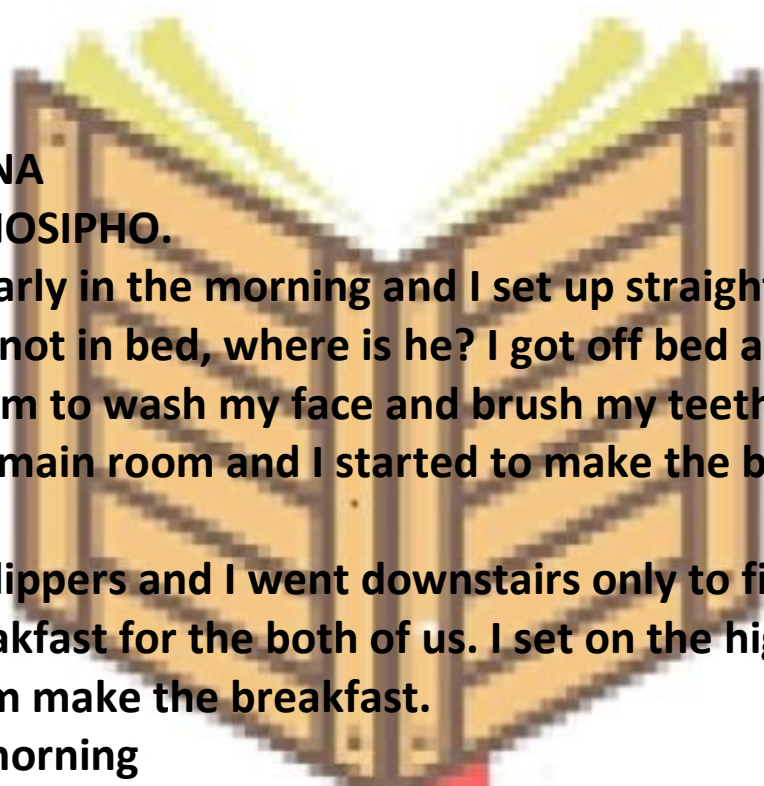
Me: Good morning

Sya: sawbona ntokazi, ulale kahle? Zuu man, zulu man mmh mmh mmh. Me: I slept great and you?

Sya: nami ngilale kahle

Me: kuhle ke, you making breakfast? Sya: njengoba ubona Sthandwa sami

He smiles and continues to fry the bacon.



Me: so what plan do you have for us today?

Sya: firstly we gonna go explore the place and we gonna come back late...

He pours me some juice and he gave it to me. Sya: you going to cook

Me: of course there is cooking I roll my eyes and laughed.

Sya: we gonna have a movie night then fall asleep which looking at the stars Me: that sounds fun

Sya: I got a lot of plans for us trust me sweetheart He smiles.

Sya: your breakfast

He hands me some breakfast and he came to sit next to me.

We had our breakfast and I did the dishes after we were done, I went to prepare a bath for myself and I got inside the sink.

While I was enjoying some time alone Mr over here decided to join me and I had no problem with him joining me.

Sya: you know I have dreamt of such day though I have never thought they would ever happen since I'm the person I am

Me: what person? What do you mean by that?

Sya: not that I'm scared but I really never thought I would find myself deeply in love with another soul apart from myself

Me: until? What changed that cause there is a past tense in all that

Sya: I met you...

NOVELSGURU.COM

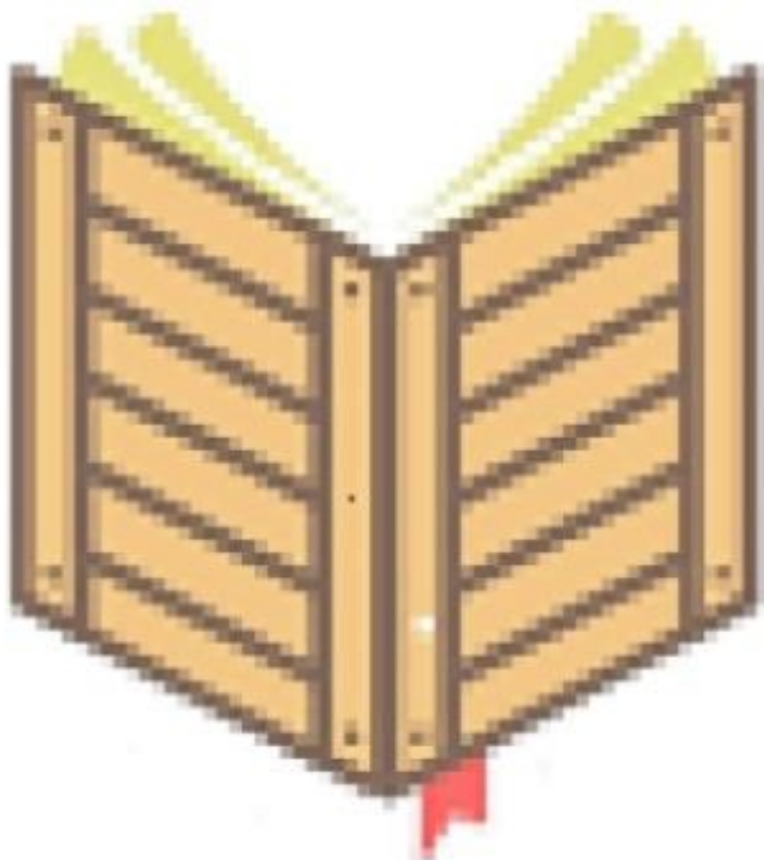
He pauses and I slightly lift my head up turning my head to look at him and God I swear when our eyes met I felt something, that look he always gives me as if I'm the only thing in this world he deeply cares about.

My heart started beating so fast as if it's going to pop out of my chest, the fear of getting played crawled inside my mind poisoning all the lovely thoughts and the kindness this man has

been showering me with.

Me: Sya i...

Sya: let me finish



NOVELSGURU.COM

I move my eyes away from him and I laid my head back on his shoulder continuing to cover my body with the foam.

Sya: I know I'm not the type of man you had hopes on falling in love with not that I'm saying you in love with me I don't want to rush into it or put words inside of your mouth no *sighs* I'm not perfect at all and god I have never committed to any relationship not to mention the fact that I have never been in a relationship before

I could feel his heart beating at the same phase as mine, how cute

Sya: I have never loved any girl nor have I ever treated a girl the way I treat you, I'm a player not by choice but because I'm scared to fall in love, I have seen plot twisting in everybody who thought their relationship would last for years and that kinda scared me cause they just lost a person they had a future planned with a person who knows them like the back of their palm a person...

He exhales some air.

Sya: I might sound like a stupid idiot but I am scared to fall in love but all that fear seems to go away every second, every motherfucking time I spend with you. You bring the best in me the best I never thought I had, you make me wanna believe in this thing called love, you make me wanna give it a try cause when I'm with you everything makes sense, you just different from all this other hoes, you love genuinely and you give your all despite that I have never experienced a time were by I felt unloved by you

My cheeks hurt and I'm literally crying my eye balls out. Sya: don't cry, I did not mean to make you cry

He looks at me and I laugh a little wiping my tears.

Me: damn did you practice all that cause boy you need to be a poet He laughs.

Sya: trust you to ruin everything

Me: ohh please continue, don't mind my tears

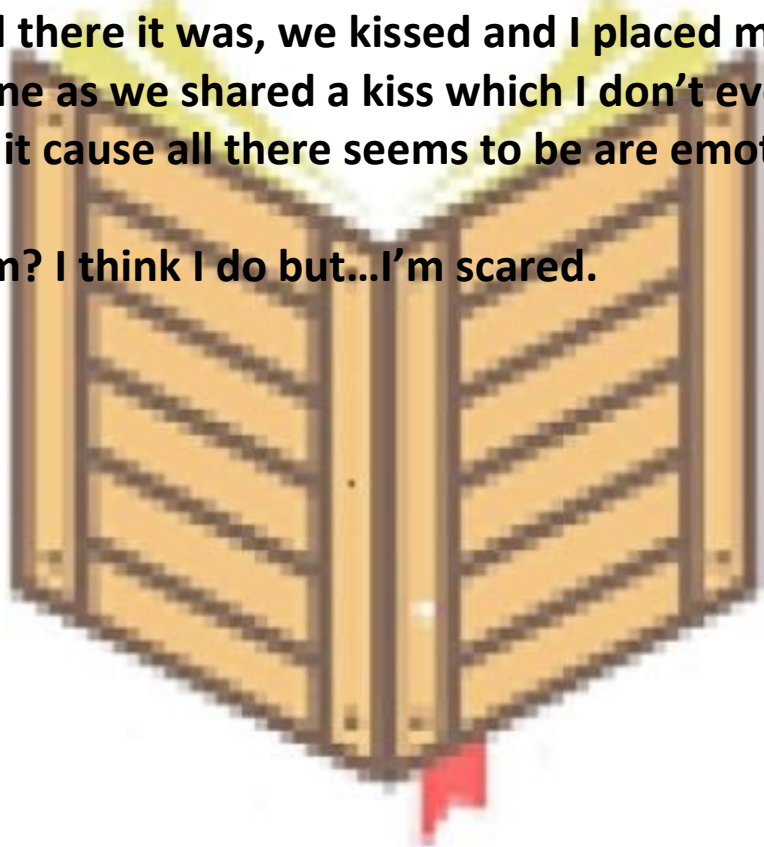
He smiles and gives me a forehead kiss.

Sya: all I'm saying MaNjomane is that I would love to go on this commitment journey, this love journey with cause I don't see anyone else who will capture my heart the way you have

Me: Syathokoza

With my head laying on his shoulder and his eyes looked with mine our lips move closer to each other and he captures mine onto his and there it was, we kissed and I placed my wet hand on his jaw line as we shared a kiss which I don't even know what to call it cause all there seems to be are emotions floating in the air.

Do I love him? I think I do but...I'm scared.



NOVELSGURU.COM

We both pull out from the kiss. Me: can I think about it
I look into his eyes then down to his lips. Sya: I can sense some rejection in all that
Me: come on don't say that, I just need to think Sya: well either way I know you won't reject me Me: why you say that?
Sya: you love me Me: no I don't He pecks my lips.
Sya: actions speak louder than words darling Me: well so far no I have done no action
I felt his finger inside my honey both, I pull him by the neck closer to me and I had my mouth open as I tried not to moan as he fingered me.
Sya: you can tell me stop if you don't want all this Me: don't stop
I bite my lower lip and close my eyes.
He starts kissing my neck while his fingers did wonders inside me and all I felt was pleasure, I'm on cloud nine.
After a few minutes of having his fingers digging inside me I released. Sya: like I said action speak louder than words
Me: its sex you idiot Sya: I know
He starts tickling me and I laughed.
We got out of the water because it was now cold, we went to get dressed.
I wore a dark green short dress, it was above my knees. I wore some sandals which had white pearls, I went for a green small bag trust me I love matching so everything in my bag that I packed has its own matching partner.
Speaking of matching partner, Sya wore a white tshirt with a green graphic design, he wore a green plain shirt and a pair of green cargo pants. He wore his green and white sneakers finishing the look with a white cap and a diamond chain.

I looked at him through the mirror while he applied some cologne. Sya: staring is rude

Me: I'm not staring

I say focusing on applying a black lip liner on my lip followed by some lipgloss which looked super cute on me.

I wore some earring and a necklace.

I took mirror pictures of myself and he joined in.

I posted one on my status whereby I had his back facing the mirror and me popping with my head and camera on his shoulder not to forget my other hand on his neck.

He took my small beg.

Sya: million picture lady let's go

Me: I will be down in two minutes I promise Sya:

Mantombazane nokushutha yeses

He says walking out and I laughed.

I spray some perfume and I look at his cologne then checked if his is not coming. I giggle.

I applied his cologne and I giggle happy that I smell like him though I still smelled like me but it had an addition of him which I liked.

I went downstairs and he was standing there waiting for me. He pulls me in for a hug and plants a kiss on my neck.

Sya: you look so good

Me: thank you and you look so handsome He smiles widely.

Sya: wait why do you smell like me?

Me: no I don't smell like you, maybe it's because I was hugging you I shrug, he does not take his eyes off me.

Sya: penguin!

He warns.

Me: okay fine I just applied a little tiny bit

I showed him with my fingers how tiny I applied his cologne.

He shook his head and he walks away with a smile. Me: wait who are you calling penguin?

I follow him and he laughs. Sya: wena nje Smoli

Me: hayboh I'm not...stop

I fold my arms and he kisses my nose. Sya: I like it when you mad

Me: I hate it when you call me Penguin Sya: okay smoli

I kinda smiled and he carried me to the car.

We drove to the city and he couldn't stop brushing my ties.

We parked at the parking lot since we decided to take the small journey to the mall by foot. He held my hand as we walked.

I spotted an ice cream shop, I look at him and he nods. I feel like a baby right now.

Me: can I have one caramel ice cream and baby what do you want to get?

I look at him and it's the way he smiled for me.

Sya: imma have what you having Me: okay

I smiled and we were given the ice cream, he paid and he walked which having our ice cream. Me: this place is beautiful

Sya: indeed it is beautiful, come let me take a picture of you

I smile and he took a picture of me, we ended up taking a selfie.

We went to the mall and when I say this dude took me for shopping in every store I mean it, we went to every clothing store even bought some clothes for him.

We are walking back to the car and it's kinda getting dark.

We load the begs inside the car and god I starving. Sya: I want to show you something

He held my hand and we took the longest walk till we were at the Eiffel Tower.

Me: no way

I shook my head and he held my hand.

Sya: isn't it beautiful Me: it's magnificent

I cuddle up his arms as we watch the beautiful tower. Me: thank you for taking me here

Sya: you welcome, yow can you take a picture of us

He asked this guy who smiled and took Sya's phone.

He took the pictures and Sya held me by the waist, I looked into his eyes as I grib his neck pulling me closer to him, we shared a kiss.

I pull out from the kiss and the guy hands us the phone. Sya: these ones are going to my IG

I giggle taking the phone to look at the pictures.

We walk back to the car and he drove us back to the place we live in. We decided to order in since I was so fucking tired.

We took a shower together and got dressed, he went down to get the food since he was done getting dressed, I went downstairs to join him while he ate.

I decided to put on a movie and we ate watching a movie, I place both our plates on the small table once we were done eating the food.

We cuddle on the couch while enjoying the movie. Me: Sya?

Sya: mama I melt.

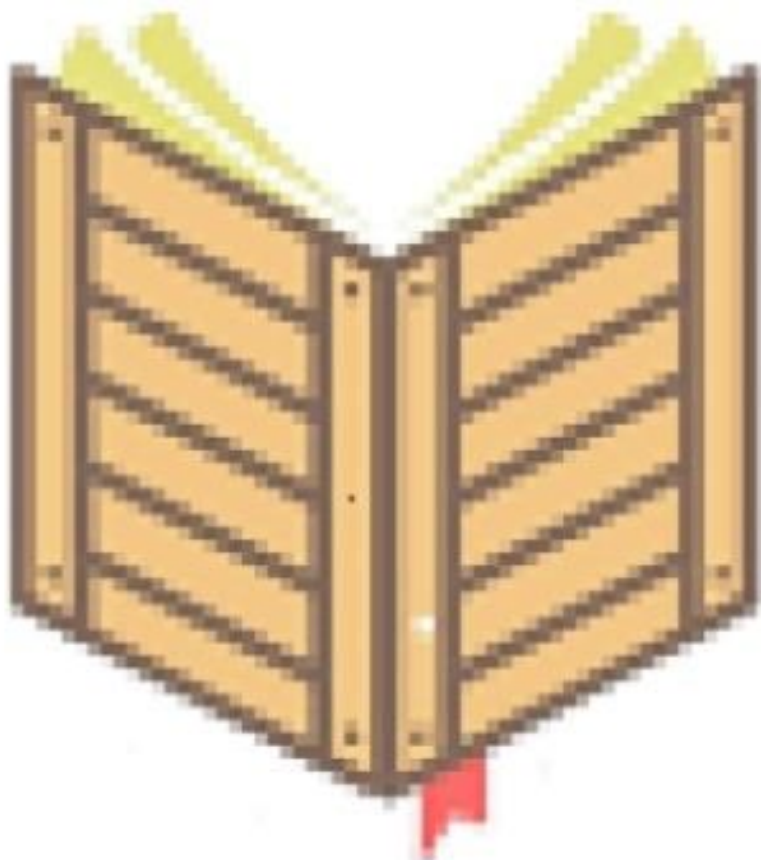
I set up straight on top of him while he laid down.

Me: I have been thinking about the talk we had this morning

Sya: and?

Me: look I really do enjoy spending time with you and the very same moment you came into my life you just changed everything, I just don't want to find myself getting played once again, I can't handle another heart break and just know if you do something that will cause us to break up don't expect me to come back, once I'm out there is no going back cause I ain't

about to mess my mental health
Sya: so you going to be mine



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: I'm not done

Sya: well I thought you...

Me: you talk to much

I roll my eyes pulling him by the shirt and we kissed, he grabs me ass and he pulls me to sit right on top of his dick.

I slowly grind on him moving my waist slowly while he had his hands on my ass. Me: ahh

I moan in between the kiss. Me: take me upstairs

I say in between the kiss and he does not hesitate but lifts me up taking me upstairs while I wrap my arms around his neck.

When we got to the room he placed me down pinning me against the door, I look into his eyes.

He held my waist with his one hand and he leaned closer for a kiss, I look away and he squeezes my ass, I placed my hands on his chest and slowly pushed him to the bed.

He laid on the bed and I got on top of him, I kissed him for a few seconds and then I pulled out taking off my t-shirt throwing it on the floor, he was pleased at the sight of my breast and he touches them, squeezes my nipples.

I could feel his hand between my thighs and I removed it, I looked at him in the eyes with a smirk. I went down to his ear and whispered.

Me: let me please you tonight daddy

The way he grabbed my ass after saying that God I wanted to spread them wide open for him but no, I want to be in control tonight.

I started off by kiss him on the neck and he kept on releasing those low groans followed by a smack on the ass I could feel his hard boner between my legs which meant he was so close on demanding what he wants.

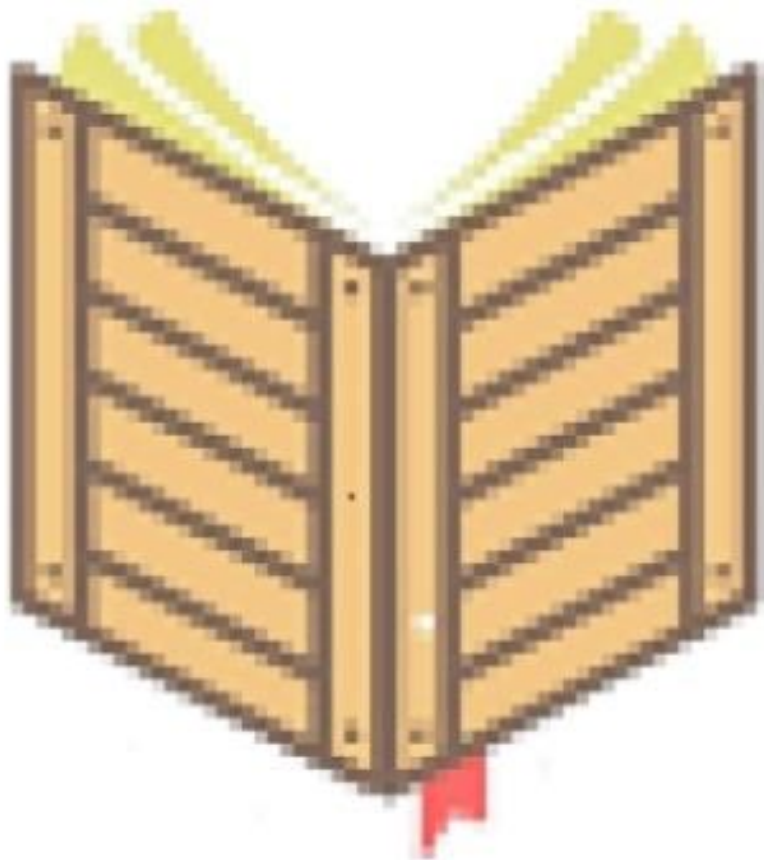
I kissed him once again and his hands were all over me, I removed them and he groans. I help him take off his shirt in

and I continued to kiss him.

I pull out from the kiss and I went down to his pants, I slide my hand inside his pants. Sya: fuck!

He curses and I smile.

I took out his hard dick and I took it into my hand, it's so big I mean it's very very big and it has veins and...enough about my meal.



NOVELSGURU.COM

I gave him a hand job and he kept on cursing while I did it, I spit on it and continue to move my hand on his hard dick, moving it up and down.

Sya: Nosi baby fuck...

He says as I rub my tongue on the tip of his dick, I took him into my mouth and God he was so big. I suck him so God he kept on calling my name begging me not to stop, his hand on my head pushing me down making me to gag on him and he released inside me.

I swallow and I got on top of him. I look into his eyes.

Me: I love you Sya: I love you too

I smile and I smash my lips on his, he responds back and pins me to the bed he is now on top of me, it's crazy how I was in control few minutes ago but it's okay.

He gave me a mind blowing kiss and he went down to duck my boobs, I have noticed he does that every time. He kisses in between my boobs and I could feel his warm tongue on my body, tracing down till he reached my belly.

He remove the shorts I'm wearing and I could feel his warm breathing in between my thighs, my breathing changed as I felt this slight warm touch only for a few seconds. He slides two finger inside me and he digs inside me so good.

I moan.

He presses on my clit with his tongue while he had his fingers inside me, I went crazy and grabbed the bed sheets as he did wonders on my honey pot. I let out a loud cry as I released all my juicies right on his face and he did not seem to be frustrated.

Instead he puts both my legs on his shoulder and the only part of my body that's touch the bed is my head and shoulder the rest it's in the air, the nigga took me to muff town.

Me: Sya!

I plead at that moment what he was doing felt so good, I don't know if I pleading for him to stop or to continue but I could feel this weird feeling on my honey pot, the feeling is kinda making me bladder to feel or in other words get heavy but ohh God what he is doing down there is making me want to scream out his clan names and praise his mother for raising such a well mannered boy who eats his food so fucking...argh.

I cum.

Sya: you taste so good

I can't help but blush as I was catching my breath thinking this man is done with me, he removes my legs for his shoulder and he took out his dick, he rubs himself right at my entrance.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: faka (put it in)

I beg but he does not do anything instead he enters inside me then he pulls out and he does the thing over and over again and all I did was just squirt all over the bed.

Sya: you making a beautiful mess

Me: I'm sorry?

That is more like a question cause I don't know if I should apologise or not.

He chuckles.

He enters slowly inside me and I felt my vagina walls expanding welcoming this huge vainy motherfucker inside me.

Me: Mvelase!!

I call onto him and he responds by strutting inside me, strut after strut and he goes in deeper making me to moan out loud as the pleasure was beyond measure.

He groans as he increases the phase going in faster making my whole body to vibrate and damn I cummed, so fast? I knew I was weak dear God.

He does not stop, I did not want him to stop.

He lifts up on my legs and places it on his shoulder and the feeling of having him fully inside me fucking me so good made me to moan out in pleasure.

We both reached our climax and he pulls out collapsing next to me. Sya: aiii umnandi marn nawe

I giggled catching my breath.

While i laid there catching my breath the guy flips me over making me to lay on my belly, he lifts up my butt and he makes me to bend over.

Me: Sya?

Sya: uba othe ngiqedile? (who said I was done?)

He says entering me from behind pounding inside me so fast with my moans filling the room, the sound of our flashes

meeting and he started decreasing the phase.

Me: ahhh shit...ahh fuck

He went in hand on me.

He fucked me so good until we both reached our climax. He pulls me to his chest.

Sya: I could do this all day



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: uyahlanya ke

Sya: your pussy is so tight baby and I keep on wanting to be inside you Me: let me sleep

He kisses me on the forehead as I drift off to sleep.

**.
. .**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 134 NARRATIVE.

The date vacation had to be cut short since the brothers needed Sya for the last job so they flew back to SA the following day, Nosi was sad but he was yet grateful for the nice time she spent with Syathokoza.

They land in SA and Sya drops Nosi at her apartment. Sya: I will see you tonight okay

Nosi: I don't have a good feeling about this early meeting your family thing Sya: my mom can't stop asking about you

Nosi: what time are you picking me up? Sya: around eight

Nosi: meaning I got enough time to sleep Sya: but slept

Nosi: you did not allow me to sleep

Sya: she didn't, what you have down there is so irresistible He touches her honey pot.

Nosi: aren't you going to be late?

Sya: *Chuckles* ngyakthanda neh Themba lami? Nosi:

Ngyaktahnda name

He pecks her on the lips and he left. She went to bed.

The brother finished their last job which went smoothly and they got all the cash they needed.

They set down celebrating the successful jobs they had.

Sandile: to more money in our banks

Nkanyezi: to life

Sya: to my brother who is getting married Nkosie: to my family
“Cheer,” they said all together and took a sip on their drinks.

Sya: so we having a bachelor party right? Sandile: of course we are

Nkanyezi: for the memo Sandile it ain't you whose getting married

Sandile: I know idiot He rolls his eyes.

Nkosie: I don't want no damn party

Sya: nigga for sure Khwezi will have her own party Nkosie: my wife won't have such a party Nkanyezi: but her friend will throw her one Nkosie: Zizi knows I would kill her

Sandile: think about it though, it's gonna be your last night as a single man come on, it's gonna be fun cause I'm the host

Sya: think about it

Nkosie: fine but no strippers

Sya: I know you mean more strippers right?

Nkosie: don't fuck with me Sya

Sya raises his hands up in the air surrendering. They continued to chat up a storm.

.

.

.

FOREVA YENA

Insert 135

NOVELSGURU.COM

NARRATIVE.

It got late and the Mthembu family gathered together for dinner, Sandile walks in with Nkanyezi because they have no date neither do they have anyone in their lives.

Zizi is in the kitchen helping her mother out. Sandile: look who decided to be chef for the day

He looks at Zizi who rolls her eyes and shows him a middle finger. Mrs M: not in my house

She says and Sandile walks away.

Nkosie and Khwezi walk in, Zizi quickly wipes her hands and she goes to her friend. Zizi: hey prettyface

They shared a hug.

Khwezi: hey baby, it smells nice in here

Zizi: of course you gonna compliment the food

She pulls out and folds her arms, Nkosie kisses Khwezi on the cheek and he excuses himself. Zizi: you know I think food has replaced me shame

Khwezi laughs.

Khwezi: you will forever be dramatic, you look beautiful

Zizi: thank you *smiles* and you don't look like you pregnant with triplets

Khwezi looks at her baby bumps and she brushes it.

Khwezi: yeah right but thank you for the super nice compliment my lady They both laugh heading to the kitchen.

Mrs M: Mrs Mthembu to be

Khwezi: ma come on you gonna make me blush now She went to give her mother in law a hug.

Mrs M: you look gorgeous Khwezi: thank you ma

Zizi helps Khwezi sit down on the high chair. Mrs M: help me take this to the table Khwezi: I can also help

She got off the kitchen high chair with a smile. Mrs M: no darling you sit there and relax

Khwezi: I have been relaxing all day I also want to help Zizi: my brother would kill us if he saw you lifting anything Khwezi chuckles.

Khwezi: he is not the boss of me plus I'm not disable but I'm pregnant

Mrs M: take this to the table

Khwezi smiles taking the chicken to the table.

Zizi: when is Sya getting here? I want to see his girlfriend

Sandile: we have been waiting for a long time

Mr M: speak of the devil

He says sipping on his whiskey as Sya walks in with Nosipho who looks stunning. Mrs M: ohh my god you are so beautiful

She says going to Nosi and Sya, Mrs M gave Nosi a hug. Sya:

Mom you doing to much

He says.

Mrs M: hush boy *Smiles* you must be Nosipho

Nosi: yes ma'am that's me and thank you so much for welcoming me into your beautiful home

Mr M: the pleasure is ours He looks at Syathokoza.

Mr M: you chose well son Sandile: introduce us already He says and everyone laughs.

Sya: well firstly that's my little brother Sandile

Sandile: nice to meet you Nosi smiles.

Sya: that is Nkanyezi and that over there is the second born of the family Nkosinathi

Nkosie doesn't say anything but he stood there with his hand on Khwezi's waist and he was whispering something to Khwezi that made her blush.

Sya: that next to him is his girlfriend Nkosie: wife you mean
He corrects him.

Sya: and that over there is my cute little sister Zizipho who has
been wanting to meet you Zizi: firstly you look so beautiful girl

Nosi: thank you, you also look gorgeous

After the introduction they went to sit down and they had
dinner. Mr M: so Nosipho what do you do for a living?

Sya: Dad I told you...

Mr M: I'm not talking to you boy

Mrs M: Mpendulo

Nosi held Sya's hand under the table and she cleared her
throat. Nosi: I'm a surgeon

Mr M: ohh that's a nice job

Nosi: it sure is

Sandile: my brother is treating you good right?

Nosi: yes he is treating me good I mean why wouldn't he

Sandile: mmh

Zizi: how did you guys meet?

Sya: it's a funny story actually

Nosi: we bumped into each other at the hospital were I work at
and we met each other once again then it all started

Nkanyezi: I though you said you aren't the type to fall in love
He looks at Sya.

Sya: I guess she changed my mind

Mrs M: I'm so happy for you

They continue eating while having a chat.

Khwezi: have you thought about uhm...having my wedding in
Gueteng

Nkosie sips on his whiskey.

Mr M: you want to have your wedding in Gauteng?

Khwezi: yes I do, didn't Nkosie talk to you about it?

Mr M: he didn't but I'm sorry we can't have the wedding there

Khwezi: why not?

Mrs M: you won't understand sweetheart

Khwezi: well make me understand

Mr M: we haven't contacted our family back in Gauteng ever since we moved to jozi

Khwezi: so you prefer travelling to another country rather than to have your son's wedding in you homeland, that's what you want?

Mr M: it's best for all of us

Khwezi: I don't quite get who is "all of us"

She imitates her father in law who does not look pleased at the way Khwezi is responding. The rest of the dinner silence and all you could hear was forks and knives.

Khwezi stood up with her plate and Nkosie followed her.

Nkosie: what was that about?

Khwezi: I don't know you tell me

Nkosie: you ruined the whole evening for us

Khwezi: well I'm sorry that I kinda wanted all this to be cleared up and I thought you talked to your father about this

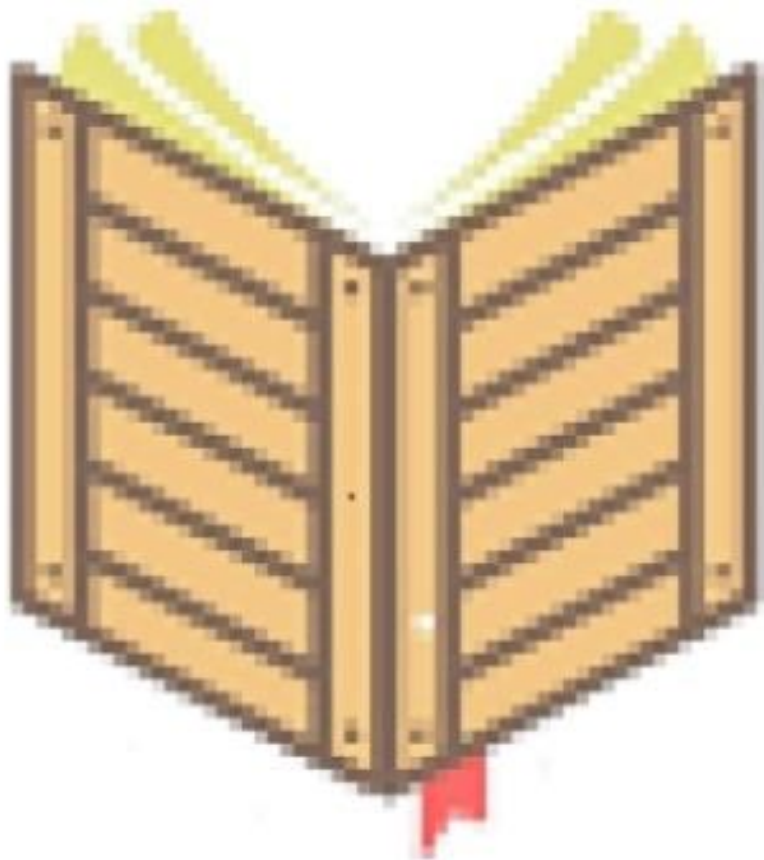
Nkosie: I was gonna talk about it, look why don't we forget about this wedding in Gueteng thing Khwezi: but baby...

Nkosie: please, we have fought so hard to separate ourselves from that family drama and I don't want you involved in any of it so let's just pick another location and stop fighting about this Khwezi sighs.

Nkosie: I don't like fighting with you Khwezi: I don't like it either, I'm sorry She gave him a hug.

Nkosie: no need to apologise baby She nods and pulls away

from the kiss.



NOVELSGURU.COM

They enjoyed the rest of the evening and decided to have their wedding here in johanesburg so they don't have to waste their money on travelling expenses.

.
. .

FOREVA YENA

Insert 136 KHWEZILOKUSA.

He has his arm around my neck and I was laying on his chest while his driver drove the car, he plants kisses all over my face and I giggle.

Nkosie: I can't believe you going to be Mrs Mthembu

Me: Khwezilokusa Mthembu Nkosie: suka nini madoda

He starts whistling and I laugh.

Nkosie: honestly baby I'm so happy that you going to be mine fully

Me: foreva mina nawe Mvelase He pecks me on the lips.

The car stops and I could see Nosi and Zizi waiting for me.

Nkosie: are you sure I can't come with you? Me: and get you to see my dress? Soze Nkosie: I wanted to be with you all day today

Me: sorry for ruining your plans but your wife has some erans to run

Nkosie: I love how you said "your wife..."

Me: mina ke I love you Nkosie: I love you too

He gives me a kiss and I got out of the car. He drives off.

Zizi: and here we are waiting for you and your man to finish making out Me: jealousy

Nosi: you guys are cute though Zizi: too cute

We have been hanging out with Nosipho and she is a very ncah soul with a great personality, I'm starting to see why Sya loves her.

We walk inside to check on our dresses. Me: hey Ciri We shared a hug.

Ciri: it's good to see your pretty faces once again. You here to check on your dresses

Zizi: yes we are

Nosi: bring mine out first Zizi: chaa bring mine first

I roll my eyes laughing a little. Me: just bring them all together They both look at me and I just laugh sitting down.

My feet are hurting really bad and I don't think I will be able to walk with heels.

Ciri came back with our dresses.

Ciri: I got good news for you guys, your dresses are gonna be done tonight

Me: tomorrow is my wedding so I don't want things to get messed up so please be there on time

Zizi: or you will be on heaven on time if you know what I mean She shows her fist to Ciri who just laughed.

Ciri: I promise, I'm very good with my work

We view our dresses and I'm kinda happy at how the dress came out the way I wanted it to be. Nosi: I can't wait for babe to see me in this dress

Zizi: I know my brothers they gonna go crazy when they see you two Me and Nosi giggle.

Ciri took our dresses back in and we went to check on the cake followed by the people in charge of the decoration.

Zizi had the invitation sent out and I I will be seeing my parents tomorrow morning.

Me: god I'm so tired

Nosi: let's get something at steers

Zizi: whuu let me take off these heels ngeke phela I'm going to die

She took the off and she walked bare foot. We went to steer and we ordered our food.

While we were sitting Ovelile walks in and she walks to us.

Ovelile: hey you guys, I haven't seen you in a while Zizi: that's because we are not friends

Me: Zizi

I look at her.

Zizi: what I gotta give it to her cash, I ain't got time to play around

Me: how are you?

Ovelile: I'm good and you? Me: I'm perfectly fine Nosi: I need to take this

She stood up answering her phone. Ovelile: congratulations on your baby Me: babies but thank you

Ovelile: you having twins? Me: no triplets

Ovelile: wow that is...

Zizi: non of your business can we help you with anything else? My friend is one mean person but I like her like that.

Ovelile: Zizi I know I'm not your favourite person Zizi: you sure ain't

Ovelile: and I'm really sorry for how I treated you Khwezi I really did not mean all that I did to you, actually me and my sister are sorry Amanda has been keeping her distance and she no longer cares about you and Nkosie, she even feels bad for all the bad words she said to you

Me: I forgive you guys but that won't change nothing, we not friends we just cool

Zizi: get that?

Ovelile: it's okay I just feel good that you finally forgave me

Me: you know what, Zizi is hosting my bachelorette part and I would love to have you and your sister come over

Ovelile: you do? Zizi: wait you what?

Me: come on Zizi I can't keep on holding grudges on things that are in the past plus I got no beef with

Amanda

Zizi: you really don't know Amanda

She mumbles.

Ovelile: I will be there

Me: sure, Zizi will send you the location Zizi: I will?

Me: yes you will, I will see you later then Ovelile smiles and walks away.

Zizi: dude you know that those two will never change Me: stop expecting the worst from people

Zizi: you surely don't know Amanda Nosipho came back with our orders. Nosi: what did I miss?

Zizi: our friend here decided to invite my brother ex to her party tonight and her sister

Nosi: she did what? Nah girl that's a bad move

Zizi: you see at least she gets me Me: whatever

We ate in a light conversation and I got a text from Nkosie.

"I'm on my way to fetch you."

Me: I will see y'all tonight my man is on the way to get me

Zizi: girl you are leaving with us

Me: but Nkosie he...

Nosi: he is gonna see you tomorrow during the wedding day

Me: hayboh we did not talk about this, I want to be with my man Zizi: not happening he is gonna manipulate you to stay and not leave I pout.

She took her phone and texted Nkosie to not come a second did not even pass and my phone rang. I answered.

Me: Mvelase

Nkosie: what is this nonsense I'm hearing from Zizi?

Me: they want to kidnap me, they want to keep you away from me I wanted to cry.

Nkosie: I will murder Zizi

Zizi: you have had her for far to long now it's our turn to have her

Nkosie: shut up, sthandwa sami **Me:** baby?

Nkosie: ngyakthanda

Me: uthandwa yimi Mvelase

Nkosie: be safe okay? If anything happens just give me a call

Me: I will same applies to you

Nkosie: I can take care of myself **Me:** and I can't take care of myself He chuckles.

Nkosie: I did not mean it like that

Me: I know I'm just pulling you leg darling

Nkosie: see you tomorrow then **Me:** okay bye

He hung up.

Zizi: yohh you two are so in love

Me: shut up and get yourself a boyfriend **Nosi:** and make sure you pick a right guy **Zizi:** let's go I got a hotel booked for us

We got up and we left the mall, we got inside the car which drove us to a hotel which we signed in and we went to our room.

I laid on the bed.

Me: can I give birth already I say and Nosi laughs.

Nosi: I feel for you, three babies?

Me: I'm never having one after this

Zizi: my brother would want more babies I know him Me: he will have them himself whuu shame

They laughed at me.

We took a shower (separately) I used what was provided for us in the hotel and our dress were delivered to our room.

We got dressed and did each others make up.

Once we were done we took snaps and we ordered in some pizza.

There was music playing and they were having champagne while I was sipping on some juice. Me: mxm I want to go home now and cuddle with babe

Zizi: he is also having his party so you gonna have to chill and wait till tomorrow Me: hhayi ngeke ngikwazi

I fold my arms.

Nosi: this is just the beginning we still got a wild ass party we going to host Me: you invited people?

Zizi: nope it's just us and of course those two devils you invited She laughed, okay she is getting drunk.

Nosi: let's get naked

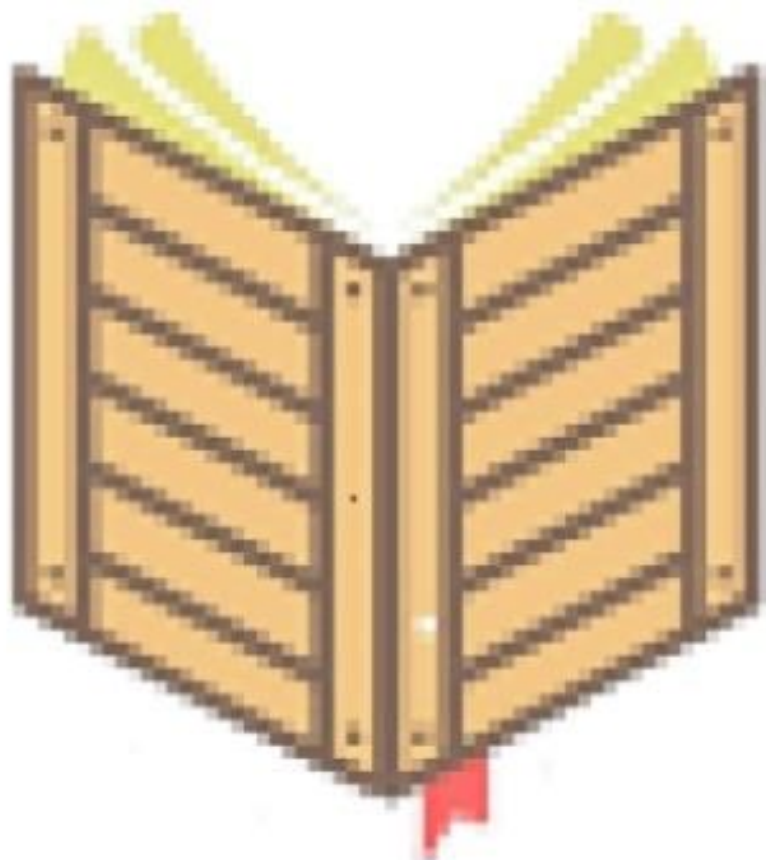
Me: ntate Zwide two point o

We laughed as we left the hotel room.

Zizi had a bottle of champagne in her hand and she was live, we had a SUV waiting for us outside. We got inside and we went to this boat which was decorated beautifully.

We got inside and we found some dark skinned half naked man

wearing masks on their faces.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: ohh hell no

Zizi: girl relax they don't bite

"unless you want us to," this one stripper says.

Nosi: these man got nothing on my nigga She went and set down.

Me: I don't want anyone to die so if you still want to stay alive gentle man please don't touch me "hello bitches," Amanda shouts walking in with her sister.

Ovelile: ouu snacks

She bites her lower lip looking at the guys who were seated down. Zizi: well I knew the cat was about to drag something in She mumbles rolling her eyes. Me: you came guys thank you

Amanda: congratulations

Me: thank you

The party started and there was music playing, we danced and god I was being touched by other man, not inappropriately though.

I felt tired and I set down, the girls continued to dance and I saw Amanda kissing one of the guys. It was getting late and it was twelve in the morning and they are still dancing, the strippers left.

Amanda: text me She shouts.

Zizi: god I can't feel my feets Me: I'm hungry

Amanda: let me order

Nosi: make sure you order a lot of food Amanda left.

Ovelile: this is so much fun Me: I want to sleep now Nosi: you are such a cry baby

Me: easy for you to say you not the one carrying three humans inside

Nosi: apologies

-
-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 137 NARRATIVE.

Amanda came back with food and she unpacked it putting it inside plate, she checked if no one is coming then she spiked something on Khwezi's burger and then she took the food to everyone.

She took her burger and she set down joining the other. Ovelile stood up to use the bathroom.

Khwezi: ohh Amanda can you please get me some juice in the fridge She smiles.

Amanda: sure watch my food for me

She stood up and at that moment Khwezi switched her burger with Amanda's.

Zizi: I knew you did not trust her

Me: why would she unpack the food instead of giving it to us just like that Nosi: you got a point

Amanda came back with the juice and handed it to Khwezi.

Khwezi: thank you

She places it down and she started eating her burger, Amanda couldn't stop watching her as she ate.

Zizi: friend can I have that juice? Khwezi: ohh sure

Zizi took the juice and went with it to the kitchen. She poured it inside the sink.

Zizi: fucking hoe

She clicks her tongue.

She went back to the ladies.

Amanda: I'm really happy for both you and Nkosie

Khwezi: you are?

Amanda: yes I am, I mean why wouldn't I be happy?

Khwezi: he is your ex Amanda: feelings fade Khwezi

Zizi: my brother never liked you anyways

Amanda's smile fades.

Ovelile: you don't have to be mean Zizi

Zizi: I'm not, I'm just telling the truth and sorry if it hurts

Amanda: it doesn't hurt, how is your relationship with Lindani?

You guys sure do look good together Zizi froze.

Khwezi: Zizi and Lindani are not dating, Right friend? Zizi: yeah

She says in a low tone.

Amanda: your tone says other wise Nosi: who is Lindani?

She looks confused.

Zizi: Amanda you should learn to mind your own business

Khwezi: Lindani is my ex boyfriend

Amanda: that is dating your friend Zizipho Zizi: shut up Amanda

Khwezi: okay what the hell is going on? What are you saying

Amanda? She is telling you that she is not dating Lindani why do you keep on bringing it up?

Amanda: because she is lying

Ovelile: a lying bitch with a huge mouth Zizi looks down.

Khwezi: is it true? Are you dating him?

Zizi: prettyface i...i...

Khwezi: answer the question

Zizi: I'm sorry

She looks into her eyes.

Khwezi: that's messed up

Zizi: I'm really sorry I did not mean to fall in love with him, we just talked and...

Khwezi: so you were nursing my broken heart and fucking the same boy who broke my heart Amanda took a sip on her wine.

Zizi: we did not plan for it to happen... Khwezi held in her tears and she stood up. Khwezi: I'm leaving

Zizi: but the party

Khwezi: dammit you ruined the fucking party yerrr She shouts taking out her phone and calling Nkosie.

Amanda on the other side started shaking and white foam came out of her mouth, she fell down on the floor.

Ovelile: sister!! No no no please...this is...

She kneels down.

"baby please come pick me up...I'm fine...no I'm not crying...okay," Khwezi spoke on the phone.

Nosi: oh my god

She covers her mouth looking at Amanda taking her last breath.

Khwezi just stood there not knowing how to act.

Ovelile: you killed my sister She points at Khwezi.

Khwezi: she killed herself, tables always turn darling She walk out leaving them there.

Nkosie went to Khwezi who broke down the minute she was in his arms. Nkosei: let's get you to the car, its cold

He helps Khwezi walk while she cried her eye balls out. Nkosie: talk to me

He says as soon as he got inside the car.

Khwezi: she is dead Nkosie: who is dead?

Khwezi: Amanda I killed her

Nkosie: Amanda? Woah hold up how did she even get here?

Khwezi: I sort of invited her and her sister

Nkosie: where is everyone else? Khwezi: they are inside

Nkosie: how did she die?

Khwezi: she ate my burger which she spiked, I switched them and I took her burger Nkosie: serve her right, are you okay?

Khwezi: nope I also found out that my friend has been dating my ex behind my back Nkosie clear his throat and sighs.

Khwezi wipes her tears and looks at Nkosie,

Khwezi: you knew didn't you?

Nkosie: baby just...

Khwezi: y'all are fucking liars

Nkosie: it wasn't my place to tell Khwezi: *sighs* just take me home Nkosie: I'm sorry

Khwezi: can you please let me think for a second

Nkosie does not say anything, he starts the car and he drove to his place. He got out and helped Khwezi out of the car.

She just went upstairs to take a shower.

Nkosie walks in while Khwezi was getting dressed. Nkosie:

MaMvelase

Khwezi turns to look at him.

Nkosie: I don't want you stress okay so please stop crying

Khwezi: I'm fine know

Nkosie: you sure?

She nods and slowly walks to Nkosie, she gave him a hug.

Khwezi: I just need you to hold me

Nkosie: woza embhedeni ke (come to bed) He pulls her to the bed and they cuddled. The babies started kicking.

Khwezi: you felt that? Nkosie: what?

Khwezi places Nkosie's hand on her belly, he smiles.

Nkosie: thank you Sthandwa sami

Khwezi: isizukulwane sakho Mnis" wemvula

Nkosie plants a kiss on her cheek and they slept.

**.
. .**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 138 NARRATIVE.

THE DAY OF THE WEDDING.

Today is a big day for both the Mthembu family and the Ngcobo family, Mr and Mrs Mthembu are happy that their son will be getting married despite the condition he has and it's hard for Khwezi's parents to take all this in as Khwezi is their only daughter and you know how parents tend to be about their first born.

Zizipho was in charge of the decoration.

Zizi: work people work this is my friends wedding and I want everything to be perfect She shouts and the workers move around making sure that everything is in order.

Zizi's eyes searched for Khwezi but there is no sign of her, she has been wanting to talk to her ever since what happened at her party.

Syathokoza was briefing the security and cars which will be picking up the invited guest drove in.

Khwezi was in her dressing room and they were busy doing her hair and make up, she was feel nervous about the whole wedding thing but she had hopes that everything will go well. She decided to combine both traditional and white wedding, the place was decorated with flowers and looked fancy though it had a little touch of tradition there and there, the idea Khwezi had in mind was coming to life and so far it is look beautiful.

Nkosie is in the dressing room with his brothers. Sya: so this is it huh? You finally getting married Nkosie: the day I have been waiting for all my life Sandile: the question is are you sure? He wiggles his eye brows.

Nkosie: I have never been so sure about something in my life

Nkanyezi: I'm really happy for you and please treat her well

Nkosie: I will trust me I will

They continued to get dressed.

[KHWEZI'S CHANGING ROOM]

Khwezi's mother Mbali walks in with her husband Mthokozisi and Khwezi stood up, she gave her parents a hug.

Khwezi: you guys made it

Mbali: well our son in law made sure we get here safe

Mthoko: he is such a good boy and I hope he is treating you well cause I would hate it if you got yourself in a marriage you not happy about

Me: he treats me real good and I love him just like he loves me

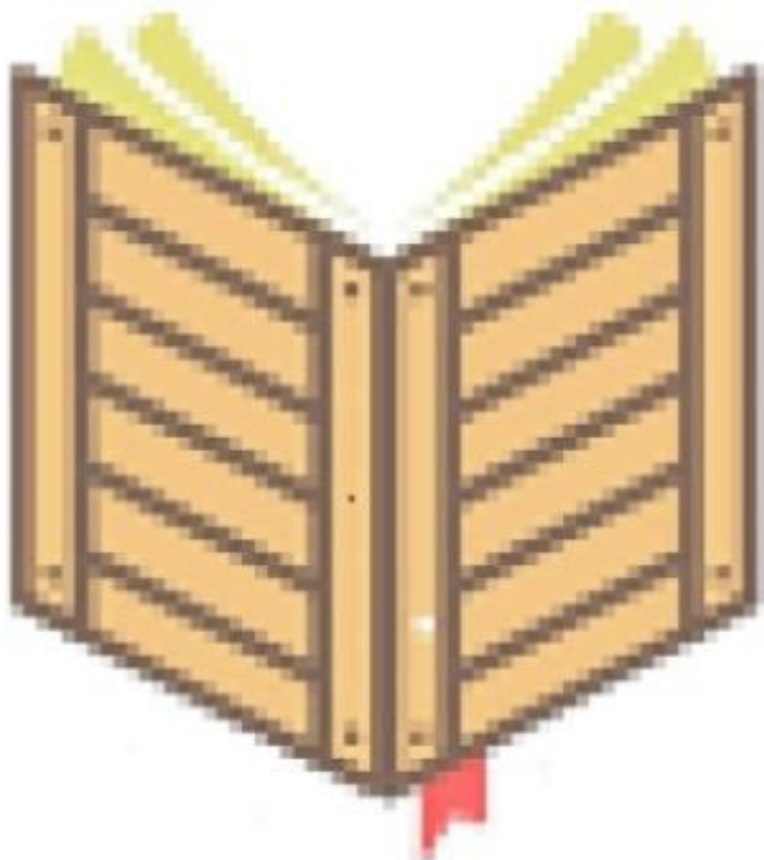
Mbali: thank god I got to live to see this moment

Mthoko: how rich are these people? Khwezi: Dad!

We laugh.

Mbai: let us not take your time, we will see you once you

outside Khwezi: did you get your clothes?
Mthoko: yes it's in the changing room we using



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: perfect thank you for coming

Mbali: I wouldn't miss this for the world

She smiles and kissed Khwezi on the forehead.

The parents left and Khwezi got dressed into her wedding dress.

It's a two shouldered dress that had traditional patterns on the top with white pearls on the shoulder, at the button it was huge and open, while in colour and had some diamonds at the buttom end of the dress. She wore a huge red Nhloko which matched with the patterns on her dress. The Nhloko had white feathers with a little touch of some bead on the top.

She had a beaded stick on her hand and she was finishing getting dressed Zizi walks in fully dressed. Zizi: oh my god, you look incredibly beautiful

Khwezi: can you excuse us for a moment

She says and the ladies dressing her walk out of the room.

Zizi: prettyface I'm...

Khwezi: no need to apologise, I'm the one who is sorry for acting the way I did. You and Lindani really do deserve to be together he is my ex after all and I don't care about him cause I got Mvelase *smiles* If he makes you happy then who am I to stand in your way, you also deserve happiness

Zizi: you mean it?

Khwezi: I mean it you are my best friend and i would hate to lose all that friendship just because of a boy

Zizi: thank you so so much She gave Khwezi a hug.

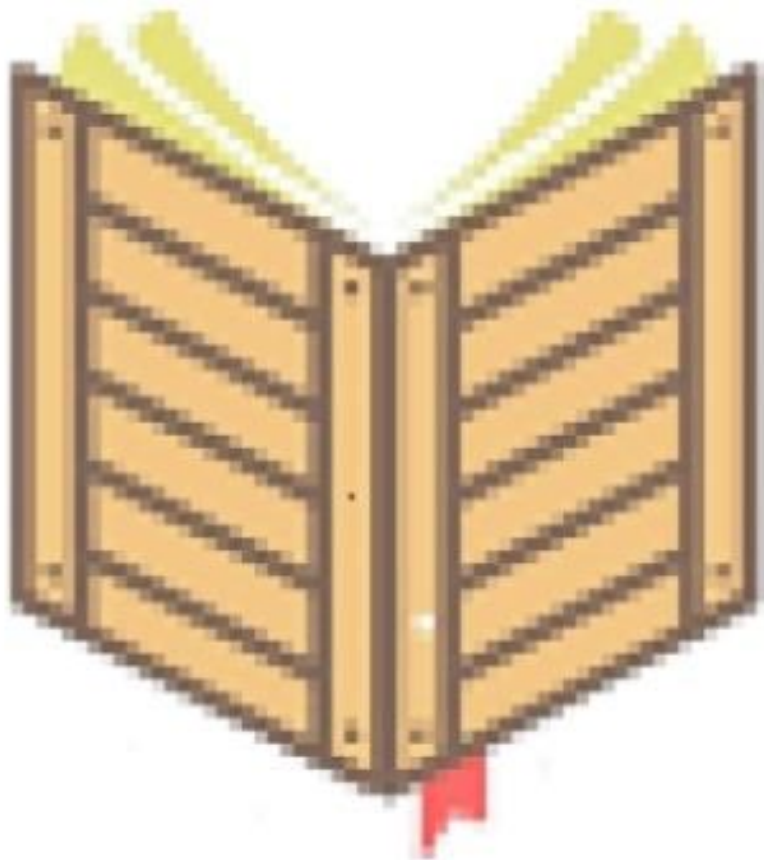
Khwezi: I love you Zizi Zizi: I love you too

They pull out from the hug. Khwezi: have you seen Nosipho?

Zizi: yeah she is with my brother Khwezi: and the Amanda situation

Zizi: Nkosie handled it even though Ovelile is putting the blame on us Khwezi: *sighs* I hope nothing bad happens

**Zizi: don't even think of such, nothing bad will happen trust me
Khwezi smiles.**



NOVELSGURU.COM

Zizi called in the ladies and she went to do a last minute check before the wedding starts, People were now arriving and taking their seats, taking some content and admiring the decoration. Nkosie was inside his changing room and he was fixing his tie when some one walked inside the room covering their face with a mask, Nkosie did not notice the person entering the room but he felt a gun being pointed at him.

“don’t do anything stupid it’s your wedding and you don’t want any drama,” the person says. To Nkosie the voice sounded familiar but he couldn’t add up as to who it was.

Nkosie: sure

He says calmly and the person walks out with him, nobody was around so they were able to sneak out. The person took Nkosie to this one room far away from the wedding venue.

The person locks the door and Nkosie turns to look at the person.

Nkosie: what do you want...Ntando

He had this shocked look on his face as Ntando took out the mask he had on his face. Ntando: missed me?

Nkosie: no, what the fuck are you doing here? I told you that if...

Ntando: shut the fuck up

He says and man start walking inside the room with guns which they pointed at Nkosie. Nkosie chuckles.

Nkosie: I see you made some friends

Ntando: sorry to break it to you but we got a score to settle

Nkosie: I don’t have time for your games I got a wedding to attend to in a few minutes

Ntando: you not attending that wedding Nkosie: udakiwe, what do you want?

Ntando: you such a heartless fucker dude how can you kill my wife? Nkosie: I did not kill your wife

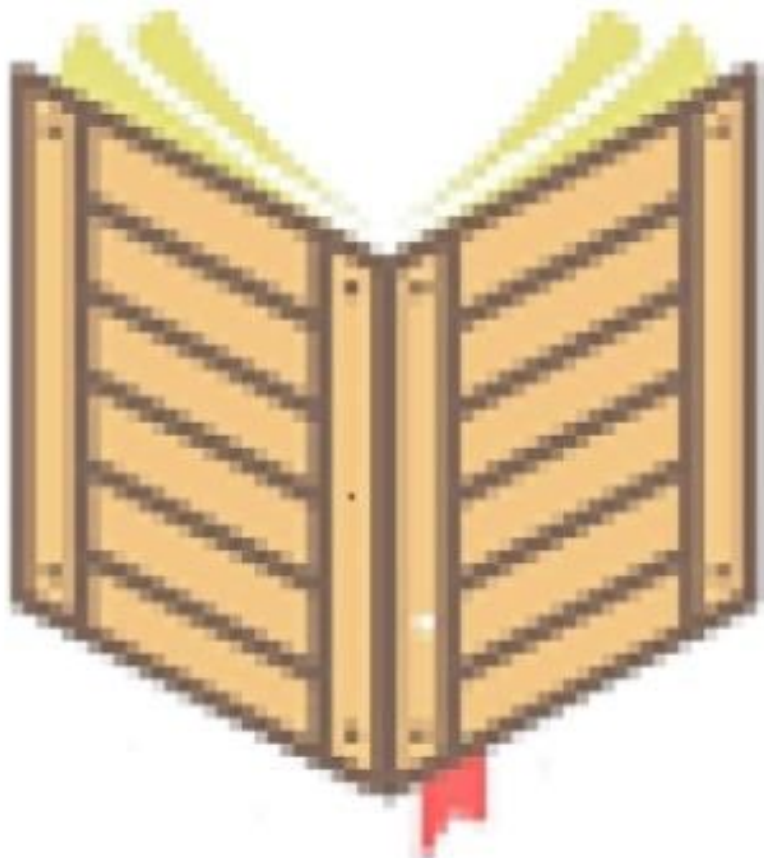
Ntando: you lying to me

Nkosie doesn't say anything.

Sinovuyo walks in.

Ntando: you fucking murdered my wife and I'm going to kill you

Nkosie: I don't have that bitches blood on my hand but his brother does



NOVELSGURU.COM

Ntando: Sakhile killed her

Sino: he is lying he is the one who killed her, you made Sakhile kill his family Nkosie: *chuckles*

Ntando: you are such a bitch

Nkosie doesn't say anything.

Sino: and where are my diamonds?

Nkosie: see I don't have time for these games of yours can't you reschedule your shit for some other day cause I'm fucking busy at the moment

Sino: we don't care all your shit ends today King Nkosie: wow I'm so scared.

Ntando punched Nkosie on the face then punched him on his stomach.

They started fighting with Nkosie throwing back punches and Ntando doing the same. [INSIDE THE VENUE]

Five minutes left for the wedding to start and Nkosie is nowhere to be seen, Sya walks around looking for him but he couldn't find him. He went to his brothers and signalled them telling them that there is a problem.

They met outside. Nkanyezi: what is it? Sya: Nkosie is missing

Sandile: missing how?

Sya: I went to check on him but he was not in the room

Nkanyezi: this is really bad and the wedding is about to start

Mr Mthembu walks out and the wedding venue since he wanted some air when he saw his sons talking. He walks to them.

Mr M: aren't y'all suppose to be inside already

Sya: eish

He scratched his head.

Mr M: eish wani? Talk what is happening? Sandile: Nkosie is missing

Mr M: he fled

Sya: nah he wouldn't do that, he loves Khwezi dad he is missing Mr M: then what are you standing here for find him, I will try to buy you some time The brothers nod and they started looking around.

The guards alert the brothers telling them that they saw some people going to some room with guns.

Nkanyezi: and why the fuck did you not stop them? The fuck this ain't what we paying for "sorry boss we thought...."

Sandile: save it, give me your gun The guard gave Sandile his gun. [BACK TO THE ROOM]

Dead bodies of guards were laying on the floor, Nkosie looked really bad as he had blood on his face and some coming out of his mouth. Ntando was on the floor wounded on the leg and Sinovuyo stood far away scared for her life.

Nkosie: this is what you wanted right? Sino: I want my diamonds

Nkosie: you will get them in hell

He shot her two times and it's good thing that the guns have a silencer on them cause if they had no silencer, people would have left the wedding and police would get involved. Ntando: you never loved me did you?

Nkosie: I did actually but once you come for what's important to me you become a stranger to me Ntando: fuck you, it's a good thing you going to die anyway

Nkosie: see that is your fucking problem

Ntando saw a gun and he picks it up, he aims at Nkosie who was turning around scratching his head with the gun as he was about to pull the trigger.

(a gun goes off)

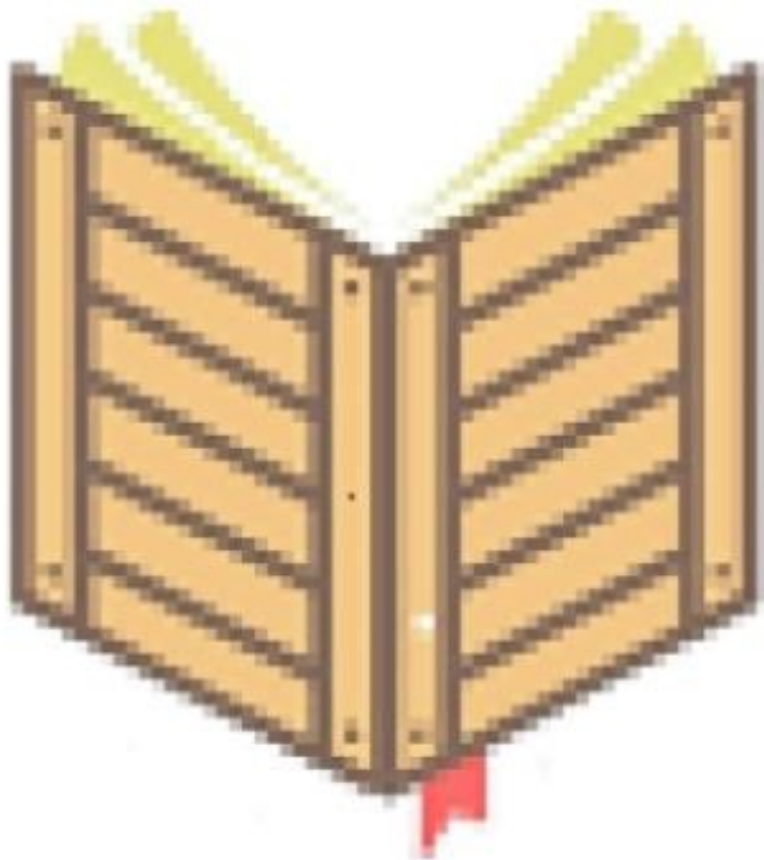
Nkosie stood there looking at him gun and then looks at his brother who had a bullet between his eyes.

Someone who was standing outside the door peaking to see

what was happening with a phone in hand recording everything.

“I knew he was the devil, you going down for this and your family will surely hate you for this,” the person says and stops the recording when she saw The Mthembu brothers walking to the direction the unknown person was in.

The person quickly went to hiding.



NOVELSGURU.COM

The brothers walk in on Nkosie who was down on his knees with a gun in his hand. Sya: what happened in here?

Sandile: Ntando? Hayboh uNtando...

He went to Ntando's dead body which was laying on the floor when he saw the bullet hole on his skull

he started crying. Sandile: no no no no He shook his head.

Nkosei: I'm sorry but he was here to kill me

Nkanyezi: what the fuck?

He went to Ntando.

Sya looks at Nkosie and he steps back, he points a gun at Nkosie. Sya: how could you man?

Nkosie: I did what I had to do

Sya: fuck that man he is your brother

Nkosie: who was here with his army to fucking kill me on my wedding day, if this was you in my shoes what would you do?

Sya: fuck that you killed our brother

Nkosie: that's all you care about? You care about me killing him but you don't even care that he was

here to kill me, you know he has been after me Syathokoza you out of all of them should get this Nkanyezi was calming Sandile.

Sya lowers his gun.

Nkanyezi: can we deal with this later, we got a wedding to attend

Nkosie doesn't say anything Sandile: I'm not going

Sya: Sandile just pull yourself together right now let's focus on getting over and done with this wedding

then we gonna sort this out later Nkosie: thank you

He tries to touch Sya but he steps back.

Sya: don't touch me

He walks out.

Nkanyezi walks out with Sandile. Nkosie: look what you made me do

He look at Ntando and he sighs walking out. He had the place locked and guarded.

He went to his changing room and he changed into a clean shirt and pair of pants since he asked that they bring him an extra. He had a cut wound on the edge of his buttom lip but he looked fine on the face.

He was finally dressed and he went out with his brother whom he ain't even sure that they will forgive him for what he has done but he hopes that they will forgive him and understand the whole situation. Nkosie stood there waiting for his bride.

He had a lots of thoughts in his head and everyone stands up. 24 hours by Kaylow starts playing, Nkosie smiles remembering the last time he had a dance with Khwezi on this song.

The doors opens and there she was look breath taking with her arm locked with his fathers arm, with flowers in her had, everyone in the room smiled.

She was looking down nervous like crazy, her father noticed and he whispered. Mthoko: umuhle ngane yami

She smiles and looks up only for her eyes to meet with Nkosie's eyes.

No one in the world that looks like you Everything you do it looks so good

In my eyes I see nothing better than you Many girls they tried non are better than you

From the bottom of my temple up I'm crazy about you

Everything that I want I see in you Hey baby, umuhle ngempela Uuuuu, umuhle ngempela

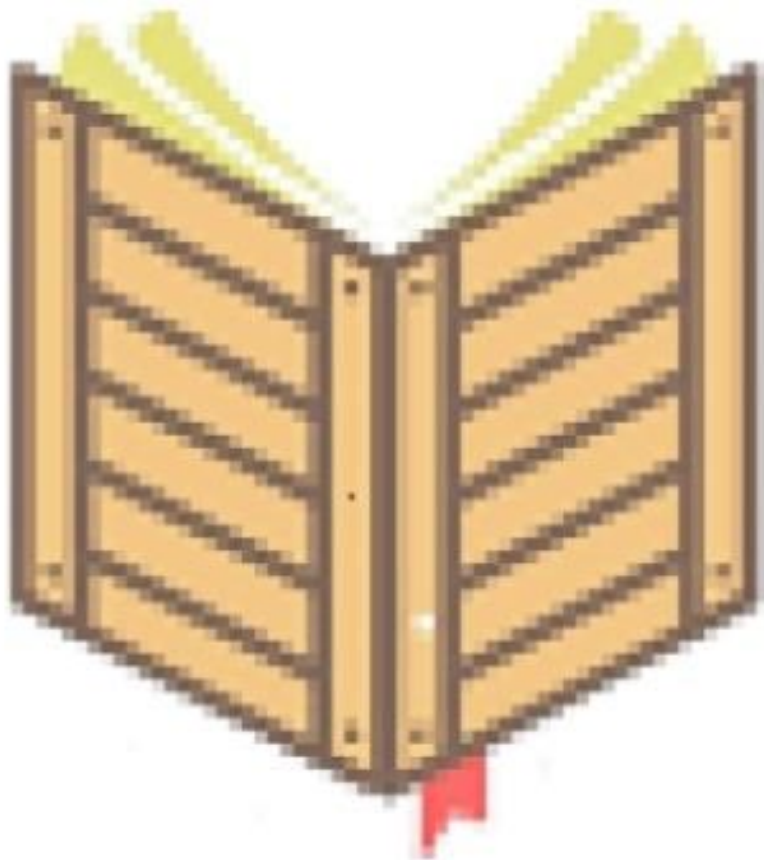
Indeed she was beautiful the song wasn't lying at all.

Nkosie had tears in his eyes as he watched his women walk

down the aisle, he turn around and he wipes his tears.

Sya: you got this man

Nkosie nods and Khwezi smiles seeing how cute it is for her husband to cry.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: damn...

He says and smiles, the song continues.

**From the beginning of the day till the sun goes down
The feeling of your skin is like your emotions**

I feel the love from the inside, I'm crazy about you

They stop in front of Nkosie. Mthoko: take care of my daughter

Nkosie: you have my word sir Mthoko hands Khwezi to Nkosie.

**Instead of holding her hand he pulls her by the waist and looks
into her eyes. Nkosie: umuhle Sthandwa sami**

Khwezi blushes.

Khwezi: ngyabonga Mvelase She notices the cut on his lips.

Pastor: we are gathered here to...

The pastors voice fades away and Perfect by Ed Sheeran

**(instrumental) slowly places in the background. Nkosie: I love
you**

Khwezi: I love you more now behave yourself Nkosie: I will try

Khwezi giggles.

Pastor: take the ring and say your vows

**Zizi shows up with the rings and Khwezi took Nkosie's ring. She
slowly slides it on his ring finger and looks into his eyes.**

Khwezi: Mvelase...

The people cheer and she laughs a little.

**Khwezi: you and I have went through a lot of stuff which I'm
actually grateful that I got to go through them with you, falling**

**in love with you was unexpected but here we are together still
pushing Sthandwa sami**

Nkosie chuckles.

Khwezi: I'm not perfect but I promise that I will be with you through thick thin, I promise to support you every step of the way, in sickness and in health baby I will love till my heart stops beating...even though it hurts to know that I won't be with you forever but you will forever be in my heart whether dead or alive, I love you Nkosinathi Mthembu, Mvelase, Mnis'wemvula She fully slides the finger on his finger.

Nkosie takes Khwezi ring and he does the same, he looks into his eyes.

Nkosie: I have never thought I would find myself so deeply in love but here I am in love with this beautiful women standing in front of me, I wasn't a good person to you from the start and I still apologise for all the bad that I did you cause I did not mean all that

Khwezi: Awww baby She starts crying.

Nkosie: you changed me and made me become a better person I could stand here a praise you for all the good you have done for me, you have been patient with me indlela onesineke ngayo Sthandwa sami iyamangalisa, you gave me the chance to love you even though I did not know that much about love, I cannot promise you a happy ever after but I can promise you that I will love you forever, in my current like and in my after life baby ngzokuthanda ingunaphakade...ngyakthanda MaMvelase

Pastor: I pronounce you husband and wife, you may...

They kissed and everyone cheered.

They went to get some refreshments and the couple walked around thanking everyone who came and also taking pictures with whoever that want and take pictures.

They went and set down.

Khwezi: what happened to your lip?

She whispers sitting down and Nkosie looks at her. Nkosie: I was attached

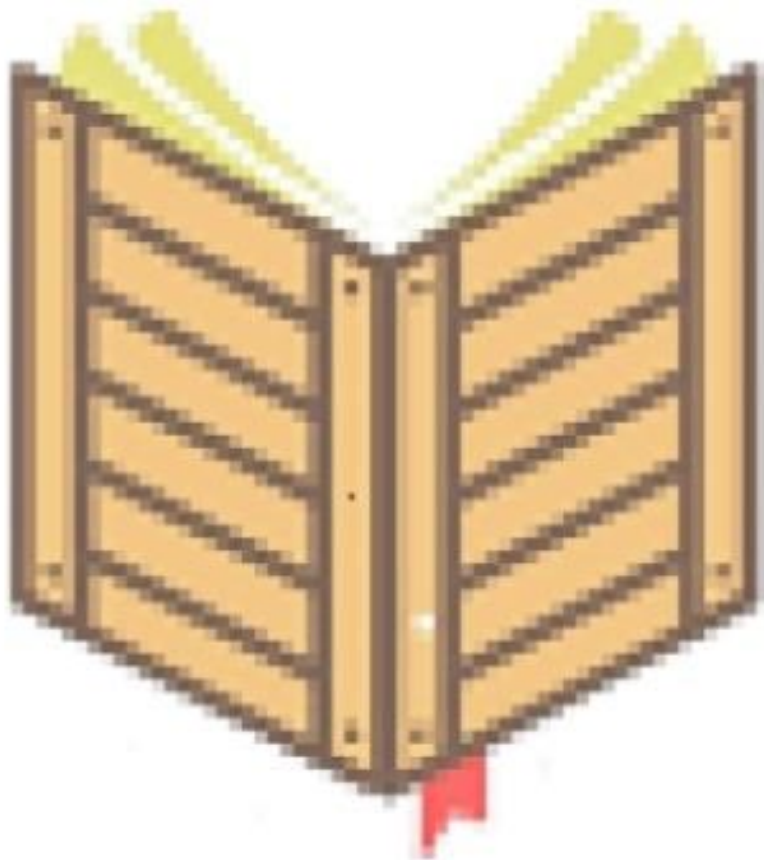
Khwezi: what? Why did you not... Nkosie: I did not want to stress you Khwezi: are you okay?

Nkosie: I'm okay don't worry

He looks into her eyes.

Zizi: attention attention everyone She says on the mic.

Zizi: firstly I would love to compliment my bestie over there who looks really gorgeous



NOVELSGURU.COM

Khwezi: thank you Nkosie: mina?

Zizi: kahle Everyone laughs.

Zizi: I'm really happy for you guys and yinhle nkos'yam into yenu

Everyone in the crowd agrees.

Zizi: Nkosie you are my brother but if you dare do anything to hurt my pretty friend I will murder you Nkosie laughs.

Everyone came and said whatever nice words they wanted to say.

They had their food and Khwezi cuts the cake, everyone was served and the couple started dancing to ungowami by Sha sha Everyone in the room joined it. Nkosie: come with me

Khwezi: why?

Nkosie: just come hauw

They sneaked out and once they were out Nkosie smashed his lips on hers, she responds to the kiss and pulls him down by the neck so she can reach him.

They kissed for a while and they both pulled out. Khwezi: you love sneaking me out don't you Nkosie: can we go home?

Khwezi: and leave my wedding? Soze bhuti Nkosie: but I want you

Khwezi: and I want some food Nkosie: Sthandwa sami Khwezi: hhayi Nkosie

She giggles and walks away.

.
. .

NOVELSGURU.COM

FOREVA YENA

Insert 139 KWEZILOKUSA.

We are on our honeymoon and the guy is spoiling me rotten, he serves me breakfast in bed and gives me a quickie every morning even though the doctor said I shouldn't have no more but we don't go into it that deep.

He takes me out on dates and we cuddle every night, it's been four days spent in Dubia and it's luxury. We are leaving tomorrow and I'm not happy at all, I could stay here forever but ke the man said it and you gotta listen to the man.

Nkosie is out to get me some food and I'm seated on the couch scrolling on my phone, a lot of people loved my wedding.

Some tags me on some video. I clicked it.

"You are married to a monster, who kills their own brother?" The comment says and I view the video, my heart starts beating very fast as I look at it once again.

This can't be real, Nkosie can't kill Ntando I mean they are brothers.

My cheeks started hurting and the next thing I was crying.

Nkosie walks in.

Nkosie: baby I'm back

He tries to kiss me on the cheek and I move away.

Nkosie: what's wrong? Me: you killed Ntando? Nkosie: who told you that? He is not denying.

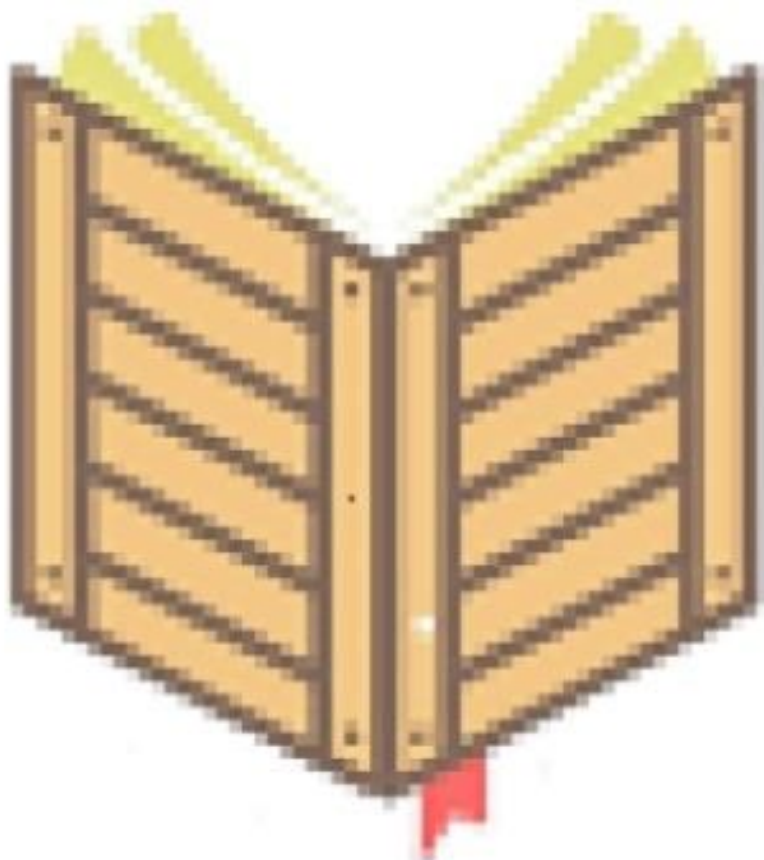
Me: so you killed him?

Nkosie: baby...

Me: when are you gonna stop doing this shit you do? Nkosie: who told you?

Me: it's all over the internet dammit, now people are saying I'm married to a monster Nkosie: fuck fuck fuck, this wasn't

suppose to happen



NOVELSGURU.COM

Me: which thing wasn't suppose to happen? The killing your brother think or the truth getting revealed

Nkosie: both actually

Me: how can you kill your own brother?

Nkosie: he was the one who came after me on my wedding day and I had no choice Me: so this happened on my wedding?

Nkosie: baby please relax okay

Ohh he is telling me to relax how fucking cute, the room starts spinning. Me: Nkosie!!

I scream as I felt some sharp pain on my belly.

Nkosie: what's going on?

Me: it hurt

I say holding my belly as the pain did not go away.

Nkosie: okay just breathe okay? I'm going to take you to the doctor

He lifts me up and carries me to the car, the pain started to get extreme.

He drove me to the hospital and when we got there they took me in which he explained what was happening.

Nkosie: is she going to be okay? Doc: please leave the ward sir They tell him and he keeps on fighting them. My eyes got heavy and if I could just close them for a little while maybe I will...(light off)

.

.

.

FOREVA YENA

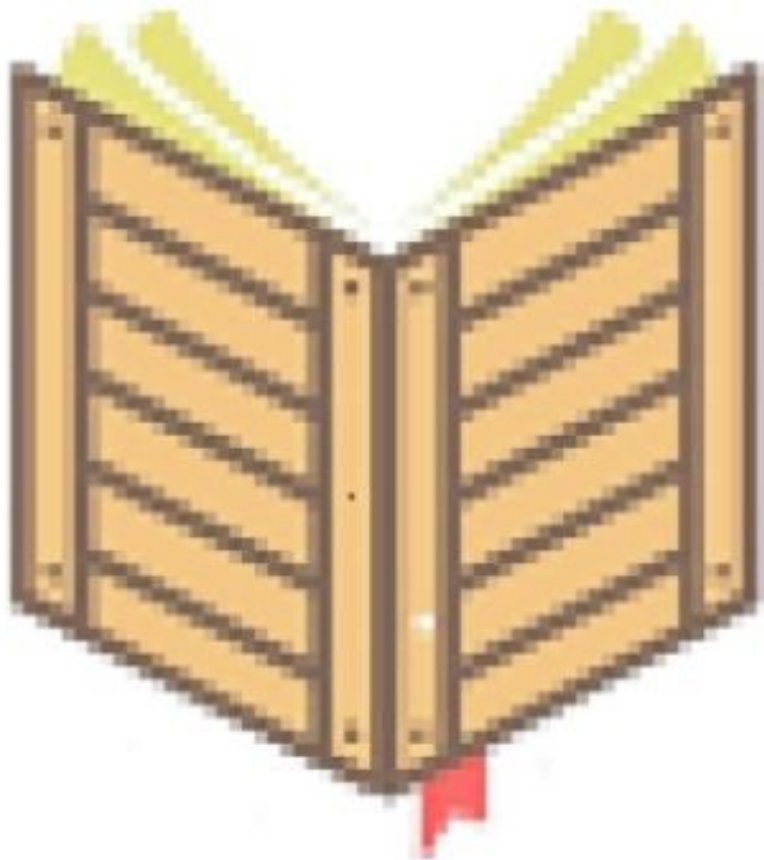
Insert 140 NKOSINATHI.

They chased me out and I curse, I held my head and set down. This hospital is very busy and how the hell did I not notice that someone is recording me. Who would do all this?

People in the hospital were giving me stares which made me so

NOVELSGURU.COM

uncomfortable. My phone rang and it was my mother.



NOVELSGURU.COM

Nkosie: Nozala

Mom: get your ass back here and explain this shit that's on the internet which I pray to fucking God it's not true cause boy...

She pause and laughs a little bit. She hung up.

Okay I am fucking crewed.

The doctor came out after a few minutes of waiting. Nkosie: how is she?

Doc: she is alright but she I under a lot of stress which is not good for the babies Nkosie: Is she going to be okay?

Doc: I don't if she will be but this might lead to early birth if she doesn't calm down Nkosie: will I be able to travel back with her to Jo'burg?

Doc: there is a slight risk but I bet she will be okay

Nkosie: get her ready for me cause we going to the airport Doc: yes sir, please sign here

Nkosie: what is this? Doc: medical expense

Nkosie: I will read it and sign it on my way to the airport Doc: okay sir

I called in one of my guys to peck our begs and meet us at the airport.

I drove to the airport while going through the document I need to sign, everything sounds good and there is no scam in it.

I signed the papers and sent them the money. We flew back to South Africa.

We arrived at the morning and Khwezi was taken wide awake though she did not look fine, why did I have to put her through this? Fuck

The drive to my parents house was silent as she did not want to talk to me. The gate was filled with the media.

We drove inside and when the car stopped Khwezi got out, I sighed getting out of the car. When I walked inside the house a hot slap landed on my face.

I look up only to see my mother with her blood shot eyes.

Nkosie: Nozala?

Mom: you killed my son Nkosie: let me explain

Mom: how could you do this? You killed my first born

My siblings were seated on the couch, Zizi did not even want to look at me. Dad: let him explain darling

Mom: no he needs to be arrested

Khwezi: No please don't get him arrested

Dad: calm down my love

He hugs my mother who couldn't stop crying.

We went and set down.

Me: he came to my changing room and he pointed a gun at me, I was not armed so I had to do what he said and I did not want any drama, he took me for questioning about his wifes death

Khwezi: Amanda is dead?

Me: yes I made Sakhile kill all his family member and I finished of with him I had to tell the truth.

Mom: I did not raise such a monster

Me: you can call me all you want mom but I'm not a monster, I was protecting myself Ntando was going to kill me

Mom: you chose to shoot his head and not his shoulder or stomach? Me: everything was happening really fast

My mother whales.

Zizi: he was not my favourite but he was my brother, I really did not expect this from you She stood up and went upstairs.

Me: pumpkin

Khwezi: so what happens now? Y'all gonna divide just like that

Mom: he murdered my son and I'm not ever going to forgive him Me: mama?

**Mom: she doesn't deserve you and she never did
She is referring to Khwezi.**

My mother stood up and she left.

Dad: I will talk to her, how many days are left? Nkosie: three days

Dad: do the surgery, she needs you

Khwezi looks at me after my father stood up. Khwezi: you going to do the surgery?

Sandile: what surgery?

Me: I'm dying and no I'm not doing anything

Sya: what do you mean?

I never told them anything about my sickness Me: just that, baby?

Khwezi: I'm staying here

Me: okay

I can feel the devil crawling back inside me, I really don't want to go back to that Nkosie but here they are pushing back to that edge.

I stood up and left without saying a word.

I drove to my place and I took a shower, it's a good that three days are left for me to have a chance of living again, the doctor called me yesterday telling me he found the right donor but I don't want to do it. I'm in a lot of pain emotionally from killing my very own brother and having my mother hate me for trying to protect myself, I will get over and done with this life thing.

**.
.
.**

FOREVA YENA

Insert 141 KHWEZILOKUSA.

I watch as he walks out without even looking at me, I know he

is in pain and all but I need to be next to him. The fact that he has a second chance but does not want to use it really hurts me.

Nkanyezi: what does he mean he is dying?

Me: he didn't tell you?

They shook their heads.

Me: he has a heart diseases and had a year to leave, looking into it only three days are left for him to do the surgery the possible chance he might get to live again but he doesn't want to do it

Sandile: what? I sigh.

I don't want to stress and putting my babies in danger.

I went upstairs to his room and I slept. I was woken up by Zizi shaking me.

Me: what?

I say in a sleepy voice.

Zizi: we need to go to the hospital **Me:** why do we need to go there? **Zizi:** it's Nkosie

Me: is he okay?

Zizi: they did not say

I asked no further questions and I got off the bed.

I took my forth step heading to the door and I felt some liquid between my legs.

I looked down and I don't know if my eyes are playing games with me or what but I think my water just broke.

Me: Zizi!!

That came out as a scream.

Zizi: ohh my God, the baby is here? Is it not early? **Me:** fuck!!

I screamed as I felt some pain. **Zizi:** okay let me call mom

She rushes out leaving me standing holding my stomach as I felt more intense pain. Mrs M walks in followed by her husband

and the three brothers.

Me: Ouuuu!!

I rub my belly.

Mr M: Sya help her to the car

Sya does as he is told, he helps me walk out, can't he just carry me?

Me: carry me dammit

I say and scream in pain.

He carries me to the car and he helps me sit properly. Zizi and he mother set with me at the back seat.

Me: what happened to Nkosie? Mom: he decided to do the surgery

Me: ohh great and I'm having a lot of pain here

Zizi: you going to be okay She kisses my hand.

We arrive at the hospital and Nkosie was standing there waiting for us. Me: baby we have babies

Nkosie: as in like now?

I nod, the nurses took me inside a wheel chair and they took me inside the ward. The doctor walks in.

Doc: good evening what do we have here?

Me: I'm having a babies can't you see

Nkosie laughs at me.

Doc: how far are you?

Me: 5 months

Doc: let me guess you are having triplets I nod.

Doc: great, I would like to do some checks on you

Can't this women see that I'm in pain? Can she please take these babies out. She started checking on me.

Doc: you BP is very high and that's the reason your water broke, the babies are not in the right position so you can't push them out now cause you might lose them, we gonna have to wait until tonight

Nkosie: and the pain?

Doc: it will fade away but she will be fine Me: yeah right

The doctor walks out. Nkosie: are you okay?

Me: no I'm in pain and you decided to do the surgery

Nkosie: I figured out that I still got a lot a I need to live for, I want to see my soccer team Me: who said they are boys?

Nkosie: me of course Me: we are having girls Nkosie: but I want a boy Me: mxm

The Mthembu family walks in and I could feel the tension between Nkosie and his mother. It got late and I was left with Zizi and Nkosie.

Nosipho walks in.

Nosi: I heard you were here, is everything okay?

Me: nope I thought I was giving birth but I have to wait for a few hours and at that point I'm in so much pain

Nosi: you are strong you gonna over come this Me: thank you

Nosi: Nkosinathi it's time for the surgery

Nkosie: can't we wait for a while I want to be there when my wife gives birth

Nosi: I'm sorry but the more we delay the lower the possibility of the surgery being success

Nkosie sighs.

Me: it's okay baby I will come visit you once you are done

Nkosie: okay Ngyakthanda yezwa Me: hhayi you not dying

He smiles and pecks me on the lips.

-
-
-

FOREVA YENA

Insert 42

NARRATIVE.

Nkosie was taken to a ward where he changed out of his clothes, he laid down on the bed and they covered his nose and mouth with a mask which intoxicating air came out which made him fall asleep.

They took him in and they started with his surgery. Khwezi was busy playing a game on her phone.

Khwezi: I'm craving some ice cream

Zizi: I think I saw an ice cream truck outside, I will go get it for you Khwezi: you know why I love you

Zizi: mxm hlala lapho with your pain

Khwezi showed her a middle finger and Zizi laughed.

She went to get the ice cream, Khwezi continued to play her game and the sharp pains came back this time they were giving her a hard time cause she couldn't stop screaming.

Zizi walks in with the ice cream. Zizi: the results of loving sex

Khwezi: you are Such a fake
friend Zizi: I love you too

Khwezi rolls her eyes and she ate her ice cream and the pain got worse. The ice cream she had in hand fell down on the floor.

Zizi: you making a...blood

She panics when she saw Khwezi's bed sheet full of blood which was coming out of her vagina.

Zizi: nurse phuthumani!

She shouts and the Nurse walks in. Nurse: let me go call the doctor

Zizi: make it quick my friend is in pain Me: Fuck! *shouts in pain*

The doctor walks in and she tells the nurses to take her to the Labour ward. They took her and the doctor attends on her and the bleeding stops.

Doc: okay the babies are in the right position all I need you to do is to push

Khwezi: I can't...I don't want to kill my babies Doc: you won't just breath in and out then push Khwezi inhales and exhales, she starts pushing. Khwezi: *screams*

Doc: you doing very great, 1, 2, 3 and push She pushes and she starts sweating.

(baby cries) Zizi: you did it Khwezi smiles.

One of the nurse took the baby and they took the baby on life support since this was an early birth. Doc: you can do this two more babies to go, push!

She says and Khwezi pushes (baby cries)

They have cut him and they are doing the transplamt, Nkosie is laying there and so far there is complications. They are stitching him up.

The machines start making a loud sound. "doctor his blood pressure is dropping" Nosi: doctor we are loosing

Doc: fuck prepare dose 1

He says as he continues to stitch Nkosie.

Everything from his blood pressure and heart beat was dropping

Khwezi on the other hand she is struggling to push her third baby, she is getting weaker each moment she tries to push out the baby.

Doc: you can do this

Khwezi: I can't, I'm thirsty and tired

Zizi: Prettyface you have not come all this way to give up
Khwezi closes her eyes and she thought of Nkosie, she could hear the doctors voice as she told her to push the baby and Khwezi did just that.

(babyces ies) Me: I did it? Zizi: you did it

Doc: congratulations you got two baby girls and one baby boy

Me: a boy?

She smiles. [Machines beeping]

Nkosie took his last breath and all the lines on the machine were straight, the doctors remained quite and Nosipho sighed.

Doc: time of death 23:00pm

“we tried”

They walk out.

Nosipho covers Nkosie’s body with the sheets. Nosi: I’m so sorry

She says and she walks out.

She went to wash her hands and she walks out of the ward, the Mthembu family was waiting to hear what happened.

Sya: he is okay right?

She looks into his eyes trying to hold her tears. She slowly shook her head and Sya just froze. Nosi: I’m sorry he did not make it

Mr M: not my son

He set down and Mrs Mthembu collaps. Sandile: he is gone?

Nosi: I’m sorry

NOVELSGURU.COM

They all start crying, Nosi gave Sya a hug as he lets all his tears out.

Zizi walks out of the ward Khwezi is in and she was confused as to why everyone is crying. Zizi: what happened? Where is mom?

She looks at her father who couldn't say anything.

Zizi looks at Nosipho.

Zizi: where is my brother? Nosi: he did not make it Zizi: what? Nosipho sighed.

Zizi starts crying.

I guess destiny was already decided. [2 YEARS LATER]

Khwezi stood in front of Nkosie's grave with her some flowers in hand, she places them down and she kneels down.

Khwezi: Sthandwa senhliziyo yami mina ngiyakukhumbula (my love I miss you) She smiles.

Khwezi: and your kids are troubling me shame *laughs a little* I will forever be grateful for the chance God gave me to love you, despite knowing that you were going to leave me but I stayed because I loved you and I still do, I guess it was really you and me till the end...

She smiles wiping her tears. Khwezi: FOREVA WENA MVELASE

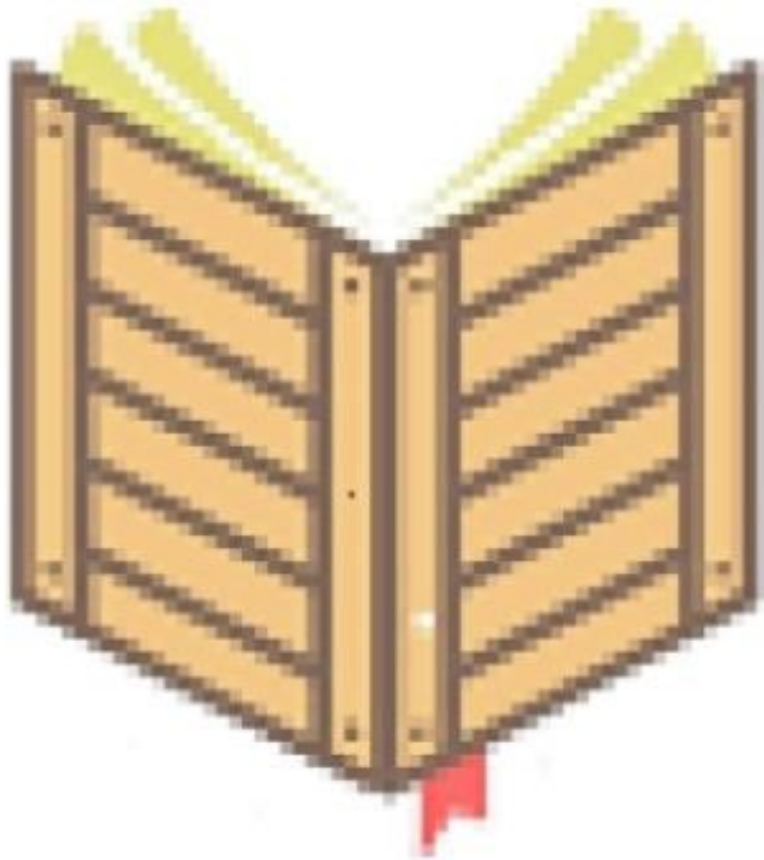
.....THE END.....

NOVELSGURU.COM

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site

ple ase keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.



NOVELSGURU.COM